

1683

HISTORY
of

King's County,

INCLUDING

BROOKLYN,
N.Y.

1884.

F

127

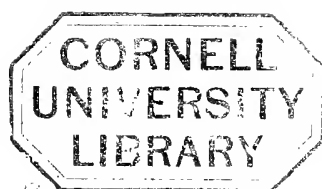
K 5585++

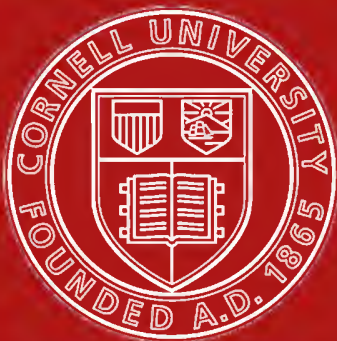
v. i

CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

3 1924 088 998 046

JAN 4 - 58		
JAN 18 1960 M T		
FEB 2 1960 W		
FEB 10 1960		
MAR 1 1960		
MAR 10 1960		
MAY 21 1971 M		
DEC 1 1975 S		
DEC 31 1988		
JUL 20 1998		





Cornell University Library

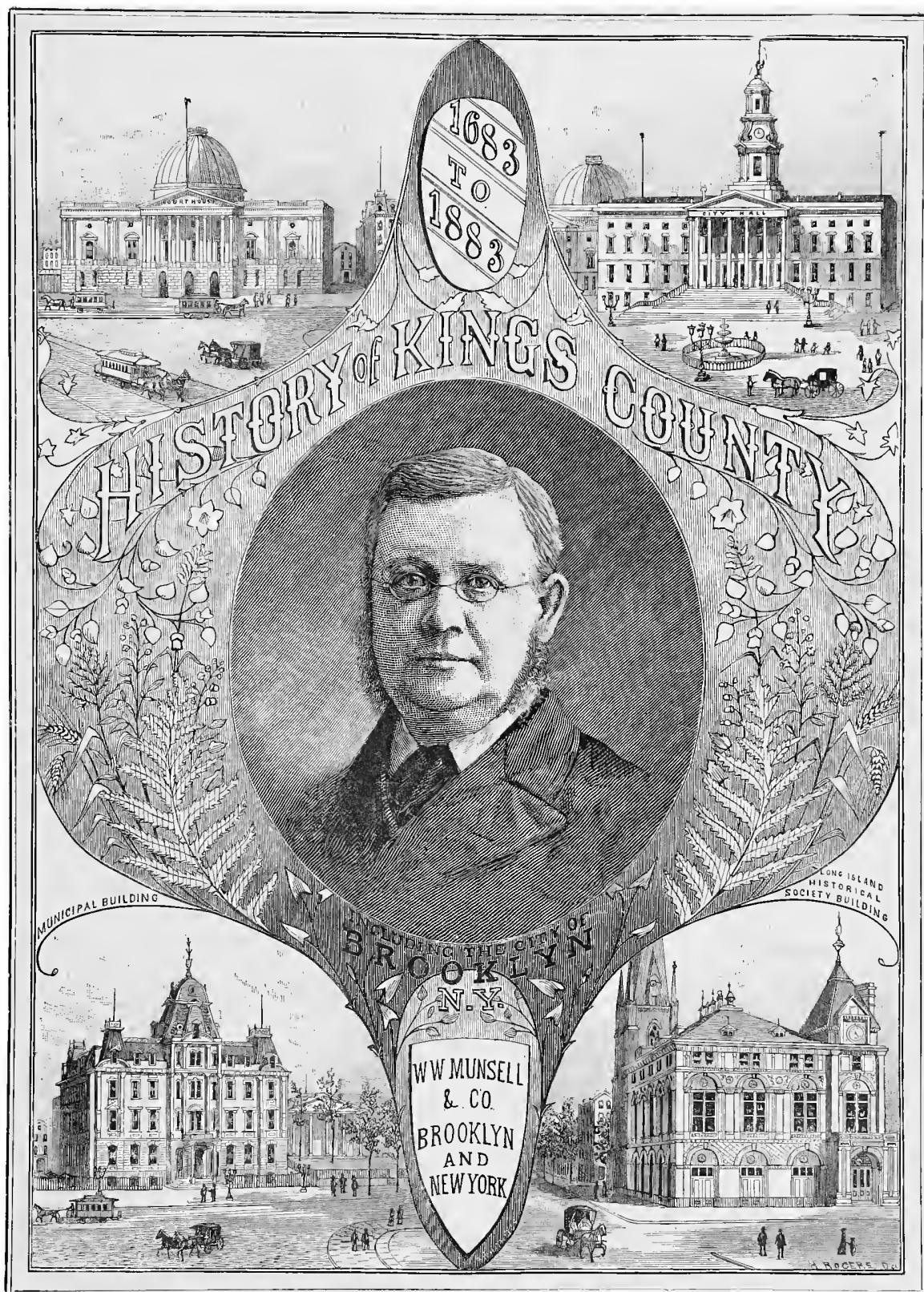
The original of this book is in
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in
the United States on the use of the text.

<http://www.archive.org/details/cu31924088998046>

Presented to
Cornell University Library,
by Mrs A. E. Sumner,
Ithaca, N. Y.
January 12, 1885





*Henry R. Files, A.M., M.D.
Editor-in-Chief*

THE
Civil, Political, Professional and Ecclesiastical
HISTORY

AND
COMMERCIAL AND INDUSTRIAL RECORD

OF THE
COUNTY OF KINGS
AND
THE CITY OF BROOKLYN, N. Y.

FROM 1683 TO 1884.

BY
HENRY R. ^{sed}STILES, A.M., M.D., Editor-in-Chief,

Formerly Librarian of the Long Island Historical Society; Member of the N. Y. Genealogical and Biographical Society, the American Ethnological Society, etc., etc.; Author of the "History of Brooklyn," "The Wallabout Prison Ship Series," the "History and Genealogies of Ancient Windsor, Conn.," and other Historical Works.

ASSISTED BY

L. B. PROCTOR, Esq.,

and

L. P. BROCKETT, A.M., M.D.,

Author of "Bench and Bar of the State of N. Y.," "Lives of the State Chancellors of New York," "Lawyer and Client," "Life and Times of Thomas Addis Emmett," "Lives of Eminent American Statesmen," etc., etc.

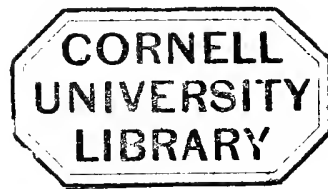
Author of "Our Western Empire," "Our Country's Wealth and Influence," "Geographical History of N. Y.," and Geographical and Statistical Editor of "New American" and "Johnson's Cyclopædia," and the "American Supplement to Encyclopædia Britannica," etc., etc.

WITH PORTRAITS, BIOGRAPHIES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

VOLUME I.

NEW YORK:
W. W. MUNSELL & CO.
PUBLISHERS.

A. 12533



Copyright, 1884.
W. W. MUNSELL & CO.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
EDITOR'S PREFACE	vi., vii.
OUTLINE HISTORY OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK	9
GENERAL HISTORY OF LONG ISLAND	18
GENERAL HISTORY OF KINGS COUNTY	43
HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF FLATLANDS	By <i>Rev. Anson Dubois, D. D.</i> 64
HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF BROOKLYN	By <i>The Editor.</i> 80
AS A VILLAGE, 1817-1834	139
THE FIRST CITY OF BROOKLYN, 1834-1854	145
HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF GRAVESEND	By <i>Rev. A. P. Stockwell.</i> 156
HISTORY OF CONEY ISLAND	By <i>Wm. H. Stillwell, Esq.</i> 189
HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF FLATBUSH	By <i>Rev. R. G. Strong.</i> 212
HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF NEW UTRECHT	By <i>Hon. T. G. Bergen.</i> 255
HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF BUSHWICK	By <i>The Editor.</i> 270
HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF WILLIAMSBURGH	By <i>J. M. Stearns, Esq.</i> 293
HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF NEW LOTS	By <i>C. Warren Hamilton, Esq.</i> 306
THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF KINGS COUNTY, 1628-1800	By <i>The Editor.</i> 327
THE BENCH AND BAR OF KINGS COUNTY, 1668-1832	By <i>L. B. Proctor, Esq.</i> 338
LIST OF COUNTY OFFICIALS	366
LEGISLATIVE OFFICERS FROM KINGS COUNTY	372
THE HISTORY OF THE BOARD OF SUPERVISORS OF KINGS COUNTY	By <i>L. B. Proctor, Esq.</i> 377
THE HISTORY OF EDUCATION IN KINGS COUNTY, 1644-1822	By <i>The Editor.</i> 409
TRAVEL AND TRANSIT IN KINGS COUNTY	419
STAGES AND RAILROADS	By <i>L. P. Brockett, M. D.</i> 419
BROOKLYN FERRIES AND FERRY RIGHTS	By <i>The Editor.</i> 425
THE NEW YORK AND EAST RIVER BRIDGE	447
THE HISTORY OF THE SUPERINTENDENTS OF THE POOR	By <i>L. B. Proctor, Esq.</i> 463
HISTORY OF THE COMMISSIONERS OF CHARITIES	By <i>L. B. Proctor, Esq.</i> 494 ^a
ANNALS OF THE CONSOLIDATED CITY OF BROOKLYN, 1855-1883	By <i>The Editor.</i> 484
THE BROOKLYN OF TO-DAY, 1883	By <i>L. P. Brockett, M. D.</i> 522
THE MUNICIPAL HISTORY OF THE CITY OF BROOKLYN, 1834-1884	By <i>L. B. Proctor, Esq.</i> 528
DEPARTMENT OF POLICE AND EXCISE	By <i>The Editor.</i> 557
DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH	" " 563
DEPARTMENT OF FIRE AND BUILDINGS	" " 569, 580
DEPARTMENT OF CITY WORKS	By <i>Van Brunt Bergen, Esq.</i> 584
DEPARTMENT OF PARKS	595
(CEMETERIES)	By <i>The Editor.</i> 602
DEPARTMENT OF PUBLIC EDUCATION	By <i>Hon. T. G. Bergen.</i> 609
BANKING (By <i>The Editor</i>), and INSURANCE	By <i>C. H. Dutcher, Esq.</i> 619

LIST OF PORTRAITS.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Ammerman, Albert.....	511 ^a	Miller, Francis D., M. D.....	323
Bauer, Paul.....	198	Murphy, Henry C.....	364
Broach, John.....	304	Murtha, Hon. William H.....	562
Beekman, A. J.....	626	Patchen, Jacob.....	115
Bergen, Hon. Teunis G.....	268	Peck, Edgar F., M. D.....	40 ^a
Boerum, Henry.....	290	Pierrepont, H. B.....	129
Bowne, Samuel.....	439	Perry, Joseph A.....	606
Campbell, Hon. Felix.....	415 ^a	Pierrepont, Henry E.....	443
Conselyea, William.....	290	Polhemus, H. D.....	632
Delmar, John.....	370	Powell, S. S.....	514
Driggs, Edmund.....	512 ^a	Ridley, Edward.....	210
Elliott, Charles B.....	371	Roebbing, John A.....	458
Engeman, William A.....	206	Roebbing, Washington A.....	458
Fisher, Francis B.....	519	Schroeder, Frederick A.....	512
Freeman, Rev. Bernardus.....	334	Schenck, Isaac.....	324
Gaylor, William H.....	580	Sheldon, Henry.....	514 ^a
Hazzard, William H.....	591	Sprague, William E.....	579
Howell, James.....	513	Stranahan, James S. T.....	598
Hunter, John W.....	511	Stegman, Lewis R.....	369
Humphreys, A. W.....	515 ^a	Suydam, A. M.....	291
James, Hon. Darwin R.....	416 ^a	Tanner, James.....	521
Kalbfleisch, Martin.....	504	Thomas, William M.....	582
Kiernan, Hon. John J.....	418 ^a	Tuttle, Sylvester.....	305
Kingsley, William C.....	463 ^a	Vanderveer, Stephen L.....	321
Low, Seth.....	513 ^a	Vanderveer, Charles B.....	322
Low, Hon. Seth.....	517	Van Sinderen, Rev. Ulpianus.....	336
Lowe, Rev. Peter.....	336	Wallace, James P.....	507
McKane, John Y.....	209	Williams, John.....	625

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Map of Battle of Brooklyn.....	51	Autograph—Catalyntie (Trico) Rappelye ..	87
Battle Pass (Prospect Park).....	53	“ Hans Hansen Bergen.....	87
Old Jersey Prison-Ship.....	57	“ Adam Brouwer.....	87
Map of Wallabout Bay, 1776-83.....	57	“ Teunis Gysbertse Bogaert.....	89
Tomb of the Prison-Ship Martyrs.....	60	“ Michael Hansen.....	91
Plan of Brooklyn Fortifications, 1814.....	60	“ Jacob Hans Bergen.....	91
Autograph—Wolfert Garretse Van Cowenhoven.....	66	“ Claes Barentse Blom.....	91
“ Elbert Elbertse Stoothoff.....	67	View of Brookland, 1766-7.....	93
“ Roelof Martense Schenck.....	67	Cornell-Pierrepont Mansion (river front).....	94
“ Pieter Claesen Wyckoff.....	67	Map of Old Ferry, 1766-7.....	95
“ Steven Koers Vorhees.....	67	British Fort in Brooklyn, 1776.....	97
Map of Brooklyn Settlements, 1646.....	81	British Camp Hut, 1776.....	98
Map of the Bennett and Bentyu Patent.....	82	View of Bedford Corners, 1776.....	99
The De Hart, or Bergen House.....	83	View of Brooklyn, 1798.....	102
The Vechte-Cortelyou House.....	83	Map of Old Ferry District, 1816.....	109
The Schermerhorn House.....	84	Middagh House and Barn.....	111
Autograph—Cornelis Cornelisen Cool.....	84	Guy's Brooklyn Snow Scene.....	113
“ Frederick Lubbertse.....	85	“ Key to the same.....	113
“ Joris Jans Rappelye.....	87	Old Ferry Road between Prospect and Sands ..	115

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.—Continued.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Cornell-Pierrepont Mansion (rear view).....	129	Autograph—Cornelis Barentse Van Wyck.....	254
The Fleet Mansion.....	133	“ Jacques Cortelyou.....	257
Map of Old Brooklyn and Jamaica Turnpike....	134	“ Nicasius De Sille.....	258
Map of Bedford-Corners, 1766-7.....	136	Residence of Nicasius De Sille.....	259
Map of Yellow Fever District, 1822.....	141	The Miller Homestead.....	272
Map of Burned District, 1848.....	151	Autograph—Boudwyn Manout.....	276
Autograph—Henry Moody.....	158	Map of “Het Dorp,” Bushwick.....	282
“ Anthony Jansen (Van Salee).....	158	Old Bushwick Graveyard.....	283
Ancient Plot of the town of Gravesend, 1645....	161	The Devoc Houses.....	284
Autograph—George Baxter.....	164	The Boerum House.....	286
“ James Hubbard.....	164	Autograph—Johannes Schenck; Private and	
“ John Tilton.....	164	Official Seals of; Silver Marks of.....	324-325
“ Mattenoah (Indian).....	187	Autograph of Johannes Schenck, Jr.....	325
“ Gutta Quoah (Indian).....	187	Schenck Family Arms.....	325
The Stillwell House, Gravesend.....	187	Autograph and Seal of Rev. Henricus Selyns...	331
The Stryker House, Gravesend.....	188	The Second Brooklyn Church, 1766.....	332
The Johnson House, Gravesend.....	188	Autograph of Rev. V. Antonides.....	335
Residence of Rev. A. P. Stockwell.....	188	The Old Bushwick Church.....	337
Fac-simile of old map of Gravesend and Coney		The Third County Court-house, Flatbush.....	341
Island.....	190	Autograph—Carel De Bevoise.....	409
Sea-Side Home for Children, Coney Island.....	197	Old Ferry House, 1746.....	429
Paul Bauer's West Brighton Hotel, Coney Island	198	First Steam Ferryboat.....	434
Feltman's Oriental Pavilion, Coney Island.....	199	Fulton Ferry, 1865.....	438
Mrs. Vanderveer's Bathing Pavilion, Coney Island	201	Atlantic Street or South Ferry House.....	440
Depot P. P. & C. I. R. R.....	202	The Hamilton Avenue Ferry House.....	441
Observatory at West Brighton, Coney Island. . .	202	The Montague Street Ferry House.....	441
Sea Beach Palace Hotel, Coney Island.....	203	The Old Grand Street Ferry, Williamsburgh...	445
Bay Ridge Landing—Sea Beach R. R.....	203	The First Brooklyn Ferry Master.....	446
Brighton Pier, Coney Island.....	204	Sectional View of East River Bridge.....	453
Ocean Pier, Coney Island.....	204	Elevation of Bridge.....	454
Hotel Brighton, Coney Island.....	205	Plan of New York Approach to the Bridge....	454
Brighton Beach Bathing Pavilion, Coney Island.	205	Plan of Brooklyn Approach to the Bridge. . . .	454
Bathing Pavilion, Coney Island.....	207	The Bridge as seen from the Brooklyn side. . . .	457
The Manhattan Beach Hotel, Coney Island.....	208	The <i>Brooklyn Eagle</i> Office and Bridge Tower...	459
The Oriental Hotel, Coney Island.....	208	View in Remsen Street, looking Westward...	462
Residence of Edward Ridley, Gravesend.....	212	Kings County Hospital.....	467
Old Ridley Mansion, Gravesend.....	212	“ “ Penitentiary.....	476
Autograph—Hendryck Reycke.....	217	“ “ Almshouse.....	477
“ Cornelis Janse Vanderveer.....	217	“ “ Lunatic Asylum.....	485 ^a
“ Jans Strycker.....	217	Soldiers' Medal.....	502
“ Leffert Pietersen.....	217	“ “ (Reverse).....	502
“ Adrian Reyerse.....	218	Sailors' Medal.....	502
“ Peter Lott.....	218	“ “ (Reverse).....	502
“ Adrian Hegeman.....	220	Lincoln Monument, Prospect Park.....	508
“ Willem Jacobse Van Boerum.....	220	City Seal of Brooklyn.....	564 ^a
“ Jans Sueberingh.....	220	Brooklyn's First Fire Engine.....	568
“ Jan Snedikor.....	220	Fireman's Monument in Greenwood Cemetery...	578
“ Jans Aertse Van der Bilt.....	222	Modern Steam Fire Engine.....	583
“ Aucke Jans Van Nuyse.....	222	Northern Entrance to Greenwood Cemetery....	602
“ Dirk Jans.....	223	Entrance to Greenwood Cemetery, 1845.....	603
“ Michael Hainelle.....	224	Gardener's Lodge, Battle Hill, Greenwood.....	603
“ Jacob Stryker.....	225	Western Entrance to Greenwood Cemetery....	605
Melrose Hall, Flatbush, 1883.....	228	The Canda Monument, Greenwood Cemetery...	605
Flatbush Church, 1842.....	242	Williamsburgh Savings Bank.....	621
Erasmus Hall Academy, 1850.....	251	Kings County Savings Institution.....	623
“ “ “ 1883.....	252	Continental Insurance Building.....	630

EDITOR'S PREFACE.

IN presenting to the public this HISTORY OF KINGS COUNTY AND THE CITY OF BROOKLYN, a few words of explanation and acknowledgment are due. The preparation of so large a mass of historical, biographical and statistical information as is contained in these pages (equivalent to nearly 4,000 pages octavo) was undertaken by the publisher in a spirit of enterprise and liberality, before unequalled in works of this character. By myself, the charge of its editing was accepted in a spirit of loyalty to the best interests of a city in which, for many years, I was a resident, and of which I had formerly been the historian. My long familiarity with the ground, and my acquaintance with its leading citizens, encouraged me to believe that such a work would be most acceptable to them, and would secure their general interest and personal co-operation. The result has more than justified my anticipations.

From the moment of my entrance upon the work, I have been cheered by a renewal of the same generous response to my requests for information, and by the same personal encouragement from all classes of citizens, which attended my former efforts in behalf of the History of Brooklyn.

The co-operative plan of authorship, as exhibited in the present volume, has this undoubted merit: that it secures, in each special department, the services and knowledge of those who are, or are naturally supposed to be, best qualified, by their peculiar aptitude in, or acquaintance with it, to present it in its fullest and best light. Thus we have, in this volume, the important subject of THE BENCH AND THE BAR, both of the County of Kings and of the City of Brooklyn; the History of the Boards of COUNTY SUPERVISORS, the SUPERINTENDENTS OF THE POOR, and the COMMISSIONERS OF CHARITIES, as well as the complicated details of Brooklyn's MUNICIPAL organization, traced with careful exactitude by the legally qualified mind and pen of L. B. PROCTOR, ESQ., the accomplished historian of the New York State Bar. The immense, but greatly underrated (and, by the U. S. Census authorities, greatly misrepresented) MANUFACTURING and INDUSTRIAL interests; the COMMERCE; the vast REAL ESTATE and BUILDING interests of Brooklyn and Kings County, have here their first elaborate and honest setting forth, by DR. L. P. BROCKETT, whose high reputation as a statistician and economist writer is widely recognized. The wonderful development of the DRAMA, MUSIC and ART, with their associate interests, are for the first time displayed in these pages, with true artistic enthusiasm, by GABRIEL HARRISON, ESQ., the well-known dramatist, author and artist. And so in other departments of our History—such as the PRESS, the MEDICAL PROFESSION, the PARKS, WATER SUPPLY, etc., etc., of Brooklyn, and in the histories of the several COUNTY TOWNS—the reader will find that we have enlisted the aid of the best informed minds in our midst. To all these gentlemen—and to that still larger number whose names do not appear on our pages, but who have cordially assisted us in every way—are due not only our thanks, but those of the reading public; thanks, indeed, which must assume a deeper meaning as Time adds value to the work which they have helped to make.

There have been but two disadvantages, or difficulties, in the completion of this history. One (and which, indeed, affects the Editor mostly) is due to the fact that to each writer his SPECIAL topic is apt to shut out all else from his view; he writes as if, and, indeed, is apt to think, his own subject is THE most important in all the book. Like the private soldier in battle, engaged in a hand-to-hand struggle, he can only see what is in his own immediate vicinity; all else being shut out of view by cloud and smoke. But the general in command, from some eminence, surveys the whole field, and comprehends at a glance the relative movements and positions of his different divisions, and the results of his preconceived combinations. So the Editor, constantly bearing in mind the general scope of the work, and the relations of its several parts to each other, must bend his energies to maintain those relations and to secure that harmony of detail which are so necessary to the unity of the completed whole.

It is in this spirit that the Editor-in-Chief has endeavored to conduct this History to its completion, and if, here and there, he has been obliged to contract in one part, or change somewhat in another, he has the satisfaction of feeling that his associates have, as a rule, yielded cheerfully to his wishes. He esteems himself particularly fortunate that, from the inception of the work to its close, the whole staff—both of writers and of those connected with other departments of the enterprise—have seconded his every effort with the greatest alacrity, and have undertaken their several parts with a genuine enthusiasm and esprit du corps which has subordinated all personal feeling in one common purpose to secure the success of the History.

The other, and, in fact, the greatest difficulty under which the Editor and his associates have labored, has been the impossibility of keeping abreast of the growth of both County and City. Within the thirteen years which have elapsed since the History of Brooklyn was published, the growth in all departments of material interest has been at a rate almost unexampled by that of any other American city; and, during the progress of this work through the press, it has been almost beyond our power—even with the facilities and the large force of workers at our disposal—to record the improvements, changes and unforeseen developments which are daily occurring in this community. At this rate, the next History of Kings County will have to be dictated and written by electricity.

It only remains to say, in this connection, that the originally well-digested plan and arrangement of this History has suffered somewhat during its progress through the press. This has been occasioned, not only by the unexpected amount of material, but by the equally unforeseen development of certain industries and interests which called for far more space than had been allowed; and which could, in some cases, only be accommodated by recourse to certain expedients known to book-makers. Among these was the use of inserted pages, lettered as well as folioed. Of these there are no less than 70 pages, which may be considered as so much additional gain to the subscribers. The work is also especially rich in biographies, containing a mass of personal and family history which sheds an inestimable light upon that of the County and of the City for over two hundred years. The portraits (embracing representatives from various departments of governmental, professional and industrial interests) with which these pages are embellished, coming as they do from the burins of the most eminent engravers of the day, will commend themselves to all who see them, not only as admirable likenesses, but as choice works of art; and the illustrations plentifully scattered through the volume possess the highest antiquarian, historical and artistic merit. Finally, to the Printing, Messrs. C. A. COFFIN & ROGERS, of 85 and 87 John street, New York, and to the Binding, Messrs. A. S. BARNES & CO., Liberty, corner of Nassau street, Brooklyn, have given that careful attention which bespeaks their love for the City and County in which they are honored residents.

And now—over three years' labor ended—the Editor, conscious that this, in a measure, falls short of the IDEAL history which he had proposed to himself, may well say, as did valiant Capt. John Mason, in his introduction to his History of the Pequot War: "I wish [this task] had fallen into some better hands, that might have performed it to the life. I shall only draw the curtain, and open my little casement, that so others, of larger hearts and abilities, may let in a bigger light."

*Henry R. Files. A.M.; M.D.
Editor-in-Chief*



OUTLINE HISTORY

OF THE

STATE OF NEW YORK.

CHAPTER I.

DISCOVERY OF NEW YORK—THE INDIANS OF THE FIVE NATIONS.

IN 1524 John de Verazzano, a Florentine navigator in the service of Francis the First of France, made a voyage to the North American coast, and, as is believed from the account which he gave, entered the harbor of New York. No colonies were planted, and no results followed; and the voyage was almost forgotten.

Though discoveries were made by the French north from this point, and colonies planted by the English farther to the south, it is not known that New York was again visited by Europeans till 1609, when the Dutch East India Company sent Hendrick Hudson, an Englishman by birth, on a voyage of discovery in a vessel called the "Half Moon." He reached the coast of Maine, sailed thence to Cape Cod, then southwesterly to the mouth of Chesapeake Bay, then, coasting northward, he entered Delaware Bay on the 28th of August. From thence he proceeded northward, and on the 3d of September, 1609, anchored in New York Bay. On the 12th he entered the river that bears his name, and proceeded slowly up to a point just above the present site of the City of Hudson; thence he sent a boat's crew to explore farther up, and they passed above Albany. September 23d he set sail down the river, and immediately returned to Europe.

In 1607 Samuel Champlain, a French navigator, sailed up the St. Lawrence, explored its tributaries, and on the 4th of July in that year discovered the lake which bears his name.

At the time of the discovery of New York by the whites, the southern and eastern portions were inhabited by the Mahican or Mohegan Indians; while that portion west from the Hudson River was occupied by five

confederate tribes, afterwards named by the English the Five Nations, and by the French the Iroquois, and by themselves called Hodenosaunee—people of the Long House. The long house formed by this confederacy extended east and west through the State, having at its eastern portal the Mohawks, and at its western the Senecas; while between them dwelt the Oneidas, Onondagas, and Cayugas; and, after 1714, a sixth nation, the Tuscaroras, southeast from Oneida Lake. Of these Indians, Parkman says that at the commencement of the seventeenth century, "in the region now forming the State of New York, a power was rising to a ferocious vitality, which, but for the presence of Europeans, would probably have subjected, absorbed or exterminated every other Indian community east of the Mississippi and north of the Ohio."

"The Iroquois was the Indian of Indians. A thorough savage, yet a finished and developed savage, he is, perhaps, an example of the highest elevation which man can reach without emerging from his primitive condition of the hunter. A geographical position commanding on the one hand the portal of the great lakes, and on the other the sources of the streams flowing both to the Atlantic and the Mississippi, gave the ambitious and aggressive confederates advantages which they perfectly understood and by which they profited to the utmost. Patient and politic as they were ferocious, they were not only the conquerors of their own race, but the powerful allies and the dreaded foes of the French and English colonies, flattered and caressed by both, yet too sagacious to give themselves without reserve to either. Their organization and their history evince their intrinsic superiority. Even their traditionary lore, amid its wild puerilities, shows at times the stamp of an energy and force in striking contrast with the flimsy creations of Algonquin fancy. That the Iroquois, left under their own institutions, would ever have developed a civilization of their own, I do not believe."

These institutions were not only characteristic and curious, but almost unique. Without sharing Morgan's

almost fanatical admiration for them, or echoing the praises which Parkman lavishes on them, it may be truly said that their wonderful and cohesive confederation furnished a model worthy to be copied by many civilized nations ; while, so long as they were uncontaminated by the vices of civilization, they possessed, with all their savagery, many noble traits of character, which would adorn any people in their public, social or domestic relations.

They made themselves the dreaded masters of all their neighbors east of the Mississippi, and carried their victorious arms far to the north, the south, and the east. Their dominance is thus eloquently pictured in Street's "Frontenac" :

"The fierce Adirondacs had fled from their wrath,
The Hurons been swept from their merciless path ;
Around, the Ottawas, like leaves, had been strewn,
And the lake of the Eries struck silent and lone.
The Lenape, lords once of valley and hill,
Made women, bent low at their conqueror's will.
By the far Mississippi the Illini shrank
When the trail of the TORTOISE was seen on the bank ;
On the hills of New England the Pequod turned pale
When the howl of the WOLF swelled at night on the gale ;
And the Cherokee shook in his green, smiling bowers,
When the foot of the BEAR stamped his carpet of flowers."

It will hereafter be seen that the Iroquois acted an important part in the early history of the State.

Space will not permit a description of their league, or confederation, a sketch of their tribal relations, and their religious, social and domestic customs, or a history of their warlike achievements.

Only an allusion can here be made to the many dim and shadowy records of a pre-existing people of whom even a faint tradition scarce remains. These records consist of stone, or bone weapons, terra cotta implements or ornaments, that are occasionally discovered, and of the remains of defensive works found here and there through the State. Many of these works have been levelled by the plough, and those that remain are slowly crumbling and passing to oblivion. Some of them, though they would not be regarded as models of military engineering at the present day, give evidence of an adaptation to the circumstances probably existing at the time of their building, and of skill in construction, which are not discreditable to their builders.

CHAPTER II.

NEW YORK UNDER THE DUTCH—ENGLISH GOVERNORS
TO 1765.

IN 1610 another vessel was sent from Holland to trade with the natives, and in 1612 two more, soon after followed by others ; and a small fort and a few rude buildings were erected at the southern extremity of Manhattan Island, and the place was named New Amsterdam. In 1614 the States General of Holland granted a charter to the merchants

engaged in these expeditions, giving exclusive privileges of trade for four years. The Hudson River had been ascended by Hendrick Christiansen, and a fort and trading house erected near the present site of Albany, which was named Fort Orange.

In 1621 the Dutch West India Company was chartered, and in 1623 settlers were sent thither. In 1626 Peter Minuit, as director-general or governor of the province, arrived with other settlers, and purchased the island of Manhattan from the Indians for trinkets of the value of about \$24. In 1629 the company offered grants to patroons who should found settlements in the province (which had been named New Netherlands) of fifty or more adults, and several availed themselves of this offer. In 1633 Minuit was recalled and Wouter Van Twiller appointed in his place. During his administration the controversey concerning jurisdiction was commenced between the Dutch and the English, who claimed the country on the ground of prior discovery by Cabot and the grant of James I. covering the territory.

In 1638 Van Twiller was succeeded in the government of the colony by William Kieft. By reason of hostilities which occurred with the Indians on Long Island in 1643-44, for which Kieft was censured, he was recalled, and succeeded by Peter Stuyvesant in 1647. The controversey concerning jurisdiction continued during his administration, till, in 1664, Charles II. of England, regardless of the claims of the Dutch to New Netherlands, granted to his brother, the Duke of York and Albany, afterwards James II., the whole country from the Connecticut to the Delaware, including the entire Dutch possessions. A fleet was sent under Colonel Richard Nicolls by the duke to enforce his claim, and on the 3d of September, 1664, the province was surrendered without bloodshed, and the government of the colony passed into the hands of the English.

Colonel Nicolls at once assumed the functions of governor ; the name New Amsterdam was changed to New York, and Fort Orange to Albany, laws for the government of the province were prescribed, and courts for the administration of these laws established. In 1668 Governor Nicolls resigned, and was succeeded by Colonel Francis Lovelace. England, at about this time, became involved in a war with Holland, which government sent a squadron to repossess its province in America. This squadron arrived July 30th, 1673, and the fort at New York was surrendered without resistance by Captain John Manning, who was in command. Captain Anthony Colve became governor ; but his reign was short, for on the conclusion of peace between the two powers, February 9th, 1674, the province reverted to the English. A new patent was issued, confirming the first, and Sir Edmund Andros was commissioned governor. The despotic agent of a despotic ruler, he was unpopular with the people, and became involved in difficulties with the neighboring colonies. He was recalled,

and his successor, Thomas Dongan, arrived on the 22d of August, 1683. In the autumn of the same year the first Colonial Assembly was convened, many needed reforms were instituted, and better times than the colonists had ever known appeared to have dawned. The most important act of this Assembly was the adoption of a charter of liberties and privileges, or bill of rights. The hopes thus raised were soon disappointed. On the accession of James II. to the English throne he refused his confirmation of the privileges which had been granted while he was Duke of York, prohibited the Assembly, forbade the establishment of a printing press in the colony, and filled the principal offices in the province with Roman Catholics.

In 1687 a war broke out between the Iroquois and the French. The country of the former was invaded by the French, under De la Barre and M. de Nonville successively; and, in retaliation, the Iroquois, twelve hundred strong, fell upon the French on the south side of the island of Montreal, "burnt their houses, sacked their plantations, and put to the sword all the men, women and children without the skirts of the town. A thousand French were slain in this invasion, and twenty-six were carried into captivity and burnt alive." Shortly afterward, in another attack, the lower part of the town was destroyed, and in all this the assailants lost only three.

In 1688 New York and the Jerseys were annexed to the jurisdiction of New England, and Sir Edmund Andros was made governor of all. Governor Dongan was removed, and Francis Nicolson succeeded him. The government was vested in a governor and council, who were appointed by the king without the consent of the people.

In 1689 William and Mary ascended the English throne. Sir Edmund Andros was seized at Boston, and Jacob Leisler seized the fort at New York, under the pretence of holding it for the new sovereigns. During the two years of Leisler's usurpation the French and Indians made a descent on Schenectady, February 8th, 1690, and massacred about sixty of the inhabitants. The danger by which they were threatened induced the people,—who, though favorably disposed toward William and Mary, were opposed to Leisler—to submit to his authority for the time. On the arrival, in March, 1691, of Colonel Sloughter, who had been commissioned governor in 1689, Leisler at first refused to surrender the government to him. For this he was tried by a special commission, and sentenced to death. The governor, who refused to sign his death warrant, was persuaded, while intoxicated, to do so, and he was executed before the governor had recovered from his intoxication. Governor Sloughter died in July, 1691, after a weak administration of only a few months.

The colonial Assembly was again established during this year, and the oppressive laws which had been imposed on the colony repealed. In the interim between

the death of Sloughter and the arrival of his successor the chief command was committed to Richard Ingoldsby. In August, 1692, Benjamin Fletcher arrived with a commission as governor. He was narrow, violent, avaricious and bigoted, and his administration was a continual exhibition of these qualities.

In 1693 the French and Indians under Count Frontenac invaded the country of the Iroquois, killed some, and took three hundred prisoners. In 1696 he made another incursion, and ravaged a portion of the country. The Indians retaliated by hostile incursions among their enemies, but the peace of Ryswick, between France and England, terminated these hostilities.

Governor Fletcher was succeeded in 1698 by Richard, Earl of Bellemont, who died in 1701, and John Nanfan, the lieutenant-governor, succeeded him till the arrival of the next governor, Lord Cornbury, in 1702. The administration of this governor was chiefly distinguished for religious intolerance; and he received the unenviable distinction of being the worst governor under the English regime. He was succeeded, December 18th, 1708, by Lord Lovelace, who died on the 5th of the following May. Under Lieutenant-Governor Ingoldsby, who administered the government after his death, an unsuccessful expedition against Canada was undertaken. Gerardus Beekman succeeded him as governor *pro tem.*, till June 14th, 1710, when the next governor, Robert Hunter, arrived. In 1711 another disastrous expedition against Canada was made, but in 1713 the treaty of Utrecht terminated the war between England and France, and put an end to Indian hostilities. In 1719 Hunter returned to England, and Peter Schuyler was governor, *ad interim*, till the arrival of William Burnet in 1720. On the accession to the throne of George II. Burnet was transferred to the government of Massachusetts, and succeeded, April 15th, 1728, by John Montgomery, who died July 1st, 1731. Rip Van Dam, by virtue of seniority in the council, was his successor till the arrival of William Cosby, the next governor, finished his administration and began one rendered memorable for its arbitrary proceedings and tumult, rather than for striking or important events. Cosby died March 10th, 1736, and was succeeded by George Clark, senior counselor after Van Dam, whom Cosby had caused to be suspended. Clark was commissioned lieutenant-governor in the following October. An antagonism had been growing during some time between the democratic and the aristocratic parties in the colonies. Clark at first sought to conciliate both, but in the end had the confidence of neither, and his retirement, on the arrival of his successor, Admiral George Clinton, September 23d, 1743, was but little regretted. The administration of Governor Clinton was characterized by a continual conflict with the people, represented in the provincial Assembly. Unable by repeated prorogations and dissolutions to coerce them into submission, he resigned after an ad-

ministration of ten years, and was succeeded, October 10th, 1753, by Sir Danvers Osborne. He was charged with still more stringent instructions than his predecessors, and met with still firmer resistance from the people. After an administration of a few days he committed suicide by hanging, probably because of the embarrassment by which he was surrounded, and grief for the death of his wife. He was succeeded by Lieutenant-Governor James De Lancey till the arrival, in September, 1755, of Sir Charles Hardy, who, though nominally governor, surrendered the duties of the office into the hands of De Lancey. Governor Hardy resigned in 1757 and De Lancey became governor. He died on the 30th of July, 1760, and Cadwallader Colden, president of the council, took charge of the government. He was commissioned lieutenant-governor in August, 1761, and in October of the same year General Robert Moulton, who had been appointed governor, assumed the gubernatorial functions; but on the 13th of the following month he left the administration of affairs in the hands of Colden, and went on an expedition against Martinique. Colden's administration continued till 1765.

CHAPTER III.

WAR WITH FRANCE AND COMMENCEMENT OF THE REVOLUTION.

AS early as 1722 a trading post was established at Oswego by Governor Burnet, with the view of establishing others farther west on the lakes, and securing the trade of the western Indians. To intercept this, and secure this trade for themselves, the French established a post and erected a fort at Niagara, with the design of extending a chain of military posts to the Ohio River, and thus limiting the English trade.

In March, 1744, war was declared between France and England, in which the colonies of New York and New England participated. During its continuance the country north from Albany was frequently ravaged by parties of French and Indians. Saratoga was burned, and nearly all the inhabitants either killed or made prisoners, and the village of Hoosic taken.

In 1746 an unsuccessful expedition against Canada was undertaken, for which the colony of New York furnished sixteen hundred men. Peace was concluded at Aix La Chapelle in 1748, and a period of nominal tranquility followed, though the frontier was desolated by savage parties, encouraged by the French.

In 1755, with the view of checking their encroachments, four expeditions were sent against them, two of which were in the colony of New York. One of them, that against Niagara, was unsuccessful, but the other,

against Crown Point, achieved a success, which was not, however, followed up.

It was not till 1756 that the English ministry aroused from its imbecility and formally declared war. In the campaign of 1756 the English and colonial forces met with no success, but the two forts at Oswego were lost, with 1,600 prisoners and much war material. The campaign of 1757 was equally unsuccessful and disastrous. Fort William Henry, on Lake George, with 3,000 men, fell into the hands of the French under Montcalm.

On the accession of William Pitt to the head of the British ministry in 1758 new energy was infused into their measures, and a fresh impulse given to the colonies. Success soon turned in favor of the English, and, with few exceptions, continued till Canada was subdued. Ticonderoga, Crown Point, Niagara and Quebec fell in 1758, and Montreal, Detroit, Michilimackinac and all other Canadian posts in 1760. A great obstacle to the prosperity of New York was removed by the conquest of Canada, which prevented further hostile incursions of French and Indians into its territory.

In 1763 a controversy arose between the colonies of New York and New Hampshire concerning the jurisdiction over the territory between Lake Champlain and the Connecticut river, now comprising the State of Vermont. Proclamations and counter proclamations were issued, but the matter was finally referred to and settled for the time by the crown.

During many years the government of Great Britain had attempted to make encroachments on what the colonists regarded as their rights, but without success. The taxation of the people without their consent was sought to be accomplished in some insidious manner, and was steadfastly and watchfully guarded against by the colonists through their representatives in the colonial Assembly. In 1764 the notorious stamp act was passed and its enforcement in the city of New York attempted. It was resisted by the populace; the effigy of Governor Colden, who was charged with its execution, was hanged and burned in the streets, and finally a quantity of the stamped paper was seized and consumed in a bonfire.

Through the influence of London merchants, whose colonial trade suffered by reason of the act, the odious law was repealed in 1766; but its repeal was followed by a declaration by Parliament of the right "to tax the colonies in all cases whatsoever." Troops were quartered in New York city, really for the purpose of enforcing the laws that Parliament might enact. Collisions occurred between these troops and the people, and the Assembly refused appropriations for their support. Parliament declared the legislative powers of the Assembly annulled till compliance was had with the demands of the government. In June, 1767, a bill was enacted by Parliament imposing duties on certain articles imported into the colonies. This was followed

by a revival of the non-importation agreement that had previously been entered into by the colonists, and again the influence of the English merchants procured the repeal of all these duties, except that on tea, which was retained by reason of a determination to assert and maintain the right of taxation.

Sir Henry Moore succeeded Governor Colden in 1765, and his administration continued till his death, in 1769, when the government again devolved on Cadwallader Colden. Between the soldiers and those colonists who were known as the Sons of Liberty, animosities continued to exist, and finally, on the 18th of January, 1770, five years previous to the battle of Lexington, a collision occurred at Golden Hill, in New York city, in which several of the citizens were wounded.

In October, 1770, Lord Dunmore superseded Colden in the government of New York, and in 1771 he was transferred to the government of Virginia and succeeded in New York by William Tryon, who was rendered independent of the people by a royal decree that his salary should be paid from the revenue.

The non-importation agreement was continued so far as related to tea, and the East India Company suffered severely in consequence. Doggedly determined to maintain the assumed right of taxation, the British government abolished the export duty on such tea as was shipped to the colonies, thus enabling the company to sell it there cheaper than in England, and appointed consignees in the colonial ports for its sale. Regardless of this appeal to their cupidity, the people made such demonstrations of resistance that the consignees in New York resigned, and when an attempt was made to land a quantity of tea clandestinely, it was thrown overboard by the vigilance committee, and the vessel sent out of the harbor.

It is hardly necessary to say that in the other colonies the oppressive acts of the King and Parliament met with as firm resistance as in New York. The battle of Lexington was the signal for a general rush to arms throughout the colonies.

In New York city the arms in the arsenals were seized and distributed among the people, and a provisional government for the city was organized. Ticonderoga was seized on the 10th of May, 1775, by Connecticut patriots under Colonel Ethan Allen, and two days later Crown Point, both without resistance, and thus the command of Lake Champlain was secured.

The Continental Congress assembled on the 10th of May, and on the 22d of the same month a Provincial Congress assembled in New York.

In August an attack was made by the British ship of war "Asia" on a party who were engaged in removing some cannon from the battery in New York, and considerable damage was done to the buildings in the vicinity, but the guns were removed. In the autumn an armament was collected by General Schuyler at Ticonderoga, and an expedition went against Canada. The

forts at Chambly, St. Johns and Montreal were taken, and Quebec was assaulted, but the colonial force was here repulsed and driven out of Canada.

CHAPTER IV.

REVOLUTIONARY EVENTS IN NEW YORK—THE STATE GOVERNMENT ESTABLISHED.

EARLY in 1776 General Lee, with a force of twelve hundred men, occupied the city of New York. General Schuyler, with a small force, had disarmed the tories of the Mohawk valley, and a like service had been rendered on Long Island by the New Jersey militia. About the first of July General Howe, who had previously evacuated Boston and sailed for Halifax, appeared off Sandy Hook with his army, where he was soon afterward joined by his brother, Admiral Howe, with a force of British regulars and Hessians, and Clinton and Parker, on their return from an unsuccessful attack on Charleston, making an aggregate force of about 30,000 men.

The Provincial Congress of New York adjourned to White Plains, where it convened on the 9th of July, and ratified the Declaration of Independence by the Continental Congress.

On the 22d of August a British force landed on Long Island, and on the 27th a battle was fought, resulting in the defeat of the Americans, who, on the night of the 29th, favored by a thick fog, retreated to New York. The plan had been formed to capture New York, ascend the Hudson, effect a junction with a force from Canada under General Carlton, and thus cut off communication between the patriots of New England and those of the middle and southern colonies; but the precautions of Washington and the failure of Carlton frustrated the plan.

On the 15th of September General Howe took possession of New York, and the Americans retreated to Harlem Heights. General Howe sought to gain their rear, but Washington's movements frustrated his designs.

Opposed to General Carlton at the north was General Gates, who abandoned Crown Point and concentrated his forces at Ticonderoga. A small squadron was formed and placed on Lake Champlain under command of Arnold in August. An action took place in October between this squadron and the fleet which Carlton had prepared at St. Johns, in which the Americans were defeated and fell back on Ticonderoga. Not deeming it prudent to attack them there, General Carlton withdrew to Canada.

On the 21st of April, 1777, a State constitution was adopted, and under it George Clinton was elected governor, and he assumed the duties of the office on the 31st of the following July.

The principal object of the British in the campaign of 1777 was to carry out the cherished design of separating the eastern from the southern colonies by controlling the Hudson River and Lake Champlain. Lieutenant-General Burgoyne, who had superseded General Carlton, was to force his way from Canada, and meet Sir Henry Clinton at Albany, while Colonel St. Leger was to ascend the St. Lawrence, and, with a force of loyalists and Indians, sweep through the Mohawk valley from Oswego and Rome, and join them at Albany.

In June Burgoyne moved on Ticonderoga, which the American commander, General St. Clair, evacuated. As the American army retreated some fighting took place, without decisive results, till at Bennington the Americans, under General Stark, achieved a victory over a detachment of the enemy under Colonel Baum, who was slain.

Colonel St. Leger advanced and invested Fort Schuyler, otherwise called Fort Stanwix, now Rome. The battle of Oriskany was fought, soon after which St. Leger abandoned his undertaking and returned to Canada.

General Burgoyne advanced to Saratoga, where he was surrounded, and on the 17th of October was compelled to surrender.

While operations were in progress in the vicinity of Saratoga Sir Henry Clinton sought to make a diversion in favor of Burgoyne. He proceeded up the Hudson, captured Forts Montgomery and Clinton, devastated the settlements along the banks of the river, burnt Kingston, and, on learning of the surrender of Burgoyne, returned to New York.

In the campaigns of 1778 and 1779 no very important operations were carried on in New York. The Indians of the Six Nations (except the Oneidas and a few others) were induced to carry on against the Americans their savage and cruel warfare, and devastation, slaughter and massacres were the result. To arrest these depredations General Sullivan, in the summer of 1779, with an army of 3,000 men, ascended the Susquehanna to Tioga Point, where he was joined by General Clinton with a thousand men. With these forces they penetrated the country of the savages, destroyed their towns, and laid waste their cornfields and orchards. Though not subdued by this punishment, they were so crippled that their inroads were less frequent and destructive afterward.

During the years 1780 and 1781 the Mohawk valley was the scene of devastation by the savages of the Six Nations, particularly the Mohawks, under their celebrated chief Brant; but, aside from these, New York was not the scene of important hostile operations. The year 1780 was made memorable by the treason of Arnold. This gallant officer had, for some irregularities in Philadelphia in 1778, been court-martialed and sentenced to be reprimanded by the commander-in-chief. He apparently acquiesced in the sentence, but his pride was deeply wounded, and he thirsted after revenge. He

solicited and obtained command of West Point, and entered into negotiations with Sir Henry Clinton for the delivery of that fortress into the hands of the British. In the course of these negotiations Major Andre, of the British army, met General Arnold on the banks of the Hudson. In attempting to return he was captured, about thirty miles from New York, by three militiamen named Paulding, Williams and Van Wert, who refused his offered bribes, and delivered him to their commander. He was tried, condemned and executed as a spy.

The Revolutionary war virtually closed with the surrender of Cornwallis and his army at Yorktown on the 19th of October, 1781. A treaty of peace was entered into on the 3d of September, 1783, and on the 25th of November in the same year the British troops evacuated New York.

After the United States had achieved their independence, it was early perceived that the confederation, which had been established for a particular purpose, lacked that cohesive force which was requisite for an effectual national government. Measures were accordingly instituted, first for a revision of the Articles of Confederation, but finally the formation of a national constitution was determined on; and such constitution was formed by the convention in Philadelphia in 1787. After its adoption by the requisite number of States, it was ratified in convention by the State of New York, by a close vote, on the 26th of July, 1788, but with the recommendation of several amendments, which, however, were not adopted.

The difficulties arising out of the conflicting claims of New York and New Hampshire to the territory now comprising Vermont, which had been held in partial abeyance during the Revolutionary struggle, were finally settled by the admission of the disputed territory into the Union as a State, in 1790, under the name of Vermont.

By reason of indefiniteness and confusion in the original grants, Massachusetts claimed a portion of the territory of New York. This claim was settled by the cession to Massachusetts of all rights, except that of political sovereignty, over about one-fourth of the State. The largest tract of these lands, embracing what has been known as the Genesee country, was sold by Massachusetts for the sum of one million dollars.

CHAPTER V.

THE WAR OF 1812 BETWEEN THE UNITED STATES AND GREAT BRITAIN.

AT the commencement of the present century difficulties arose between this country and Great Britain concerning the rights of neutrals on the seas, and the aggressions of the British became a subject of bitter animosity. In addition to other en-

croachments, the English government claimed the right to search American vessels and impress into their service such of their crews as they chose to regard as British subjects. Outrages were committed in the enforcement of this pretended right, and for the suppression of the practice, and the vindication of the national honor, war became necessary; and it was declared on the 19th of June, 1812. To this measure there was a strong opposition, both in New England and New York, and this opposition embarrassed the government to some extent in the prosecution of the war. An invasion of Canada was determined on, and for that purpose forces were collected in the vicinity of Plattsburg, on Lake Champlain, under General Dearborn, and at Lewiston, on the Niagara River, under General Van Rensselaer. A naval force was fitted up on the lakes, and Commodore Chauncey was placed in command of it. Unsuccessful attempts were made by the British fleet on Sackett's Harbor and Ogdensburg, while, on the other hand, the British vessel "Caledonia" was captured at the foot of Lake Erie. An attack was made on the heights at Queenston, on the Canadian bank of the Niagara, and though at first the Americans were successful, they were finally compelled to surrender. Nothing beyond slight skirmishing occurred in this quarter during the remainder of the year.

Early in the spring of 1813, a successful expedition to Canada was made from Ogdensburg, and in retaliation an attack was made on that place, some stores taken, several vessels destroyed and the property of citizens injured. In April a successful expedition was sent by General Dearborn against York, now Toronto. In May the British were driven from Fort George, on the Niagara River, near Lake Ontario, and the enemy's post on that frontier evacuated. Sackett's Harbor was attacked by the British, who were repulsed, and an unsuccessful attack was also made by them on the village of Black Rock.

The brilliant victory of Commodore Perry, on Lake Erie, was achieved on the 10th of September in this year, but the operations on Lake Ontario were less decisive. Late in the autumn an unsuccessful attempt was made to invade Canada under General Wilkinson. The American generals Izard and Hampton were repulsed near the border of Franklin county. In December the British took Fort Niagara, and massacred a large part of the garrison and even hospital patients. Lewiston was burned, and the villages of Youngstown, Manchester, Schlosser and the Indian village of Tuscarora were devastated by the enemy. The village of Black Rock and Buffalo were also burned, and thus the desolation of the Niagara frontier was completed.

Early in 1814 an attempt was made by the British to capture some military stores at Oswego Falls, but without success. On the 3d of July, 1814, Fort Erie was taken by the Americans, and on the 25th a battle was fought at Lundy's Lane. In August Fort Erie was

besieged by the British, who were compelled to retire about the middle of September.

The plan of a dismemberment of the Union, by possessing Lake Champlain and the Hudson River from the north, and capturing New York, was again formed, and it was hoped that discontent and opposition to the war in New England, and possibly in New York, might lead to the conclusion of a separate peace with these States. The people, however, were fully aroused, and the defenses of New York were strengthened and strongly garrisoned. An invasion was undertaken from Canada, and a descent was made on Plattsburg by an army of 11,000 men under Sir George Prevost, but after a severe engagement on the 11th of September this army was compelled to retire with great loss. The British fleet, under Commodore Downie, was on the same day captured on Lake Champlain by Commodore Macdonough. No further invasion of this frontier took place. On the 24th of December a treaty of peace was concluded at Ghent.

No other interruption of the peaceful relations between this country and England has occurred. Some infractions of the neutrality laws have been attempted by people on the Canadian frontier, the chief of which took place during the Canadian rebellion, commonly known as the "Patriot war," in 1837-38.

What were known as the "anti-rent disturbances" commenced as early as 1839, and were not terminated till 1846. Laws were enacted to modify the process of collecting rents and to extend the time for "re-entry" on lands where rents were in arrears. Participators in outrages were pardoned, and quiet was finally restored.

The annexation of Texas to the United States led to hostilities between Mexico and this nation, and on the 11th of May, 1846, Congress declared that, by the acts of the Mexicans, war existed between the two nations. The Americans were victorious in all important engagements with the Mexican army, and the part taken by the troops from the State of New York was conspicuous and highly creditable to their valor.

From time to time the Legislature enacted laws concerning slavery, down to the year 1819. A law passed in 1799 provided for the gradual extinction of slavery in the State. "In 1817 a further act was passed decreeing that there should be no slavery in the State after the 4th of July, 1827. Ten thousand slaves were set free by this act."

The recognition of slavery in the territories of the United States was earnestly resisted during many years, and the controversy finally resulted in a gigantic civil war. On the election of Abraham Lincoln to the presidency, in 1860, on the platform of avowed hostility to the extension of slavery, and the failure to effect a compromise by which the institution should be recognized or tolerated in any of the territories, the southern States determined to secede from the Union and establish a separate government. The attack by the Con-

federates, as these States styled themselves, on Fort Sumter, was the first overt act of the Rebellion, and its occurrence, in April, 1861, was the commencement of active hostilities. Before the close of that year the State of New York had placed in the field one hundred and fifteen regiments.

In July, 1863, during the execution of a draft ordered by Congress, an alarming riot occurred in the city of New York. The police were unable to check its progress, and during several days the city was convulsed with lawlessness, rapine and murder. The outbreak was finally quelled by military force, but not until a large amount of property had been destroyed and many lives sacrificed. The war was prolonged till the spring of 1865, when it terminated with the complete success of the Union arms, and peace has since prevailed.

CHAPTER VI.

INTERNAL IMPROVEMENTS—CONSTITUTIONAL AMENDMENTS—SCHOOLS—STATISTICS.

IN 1791 the Legislature ordered an exploration and survey to ascertain the most eligible method of removing obstructions from the Mohawk and Hudson rivers, with a view to improve their navigation by the construction of canals. The following year two companies were incorporated, styled the Northern and Western Inland Lock Navigation Companies, for the purpose of facilitating navigation by connecting Lake Ontario with the Mohawk and Lake Champlain with the Hudson by canals.

In 1810 a provision was made by the Legislature "for exploring the route of an inland navigation from Hudson's River to Lake Ontario and Lake Erie." It was at first proposed to solicit aid from the general government to carry out this work, but in 1812 a commission reported to the Legislature that sound policy demanded that this should be done by the State. War with Great Britain interrupted the project.

On the termination of the war the project was revived ; and notwithstanding the formidable character of the undertaking, and the difficulties in its way, through the untiring energy and perseverance of De Witt Clinton, an act prepared by him was passed in April, 1817, authorizing the construction of the work. This—the Erie Canal, as it is called—was commenced on the 4th of July in that year, and on the 26th of October, 1825, the first flotilla of boats left Buffalo for New York. The departure of the flotilla was communicated to New York in one hour and twenty minutes, by the discharge of cannon stationed within hearing of each other. This was then regarded as a rapid transmission of intelligence.

The first railroad in the State, that between Albany and Schenectady, was chartered in 1826 and completed

in 1831. Other roads through the central portion of the State were soon constructed, and railroad connection between the great lakes and Hudson River established. In 1851 these different roads were consolidated into the present immense New York Central Railroad ; and, subsequently, connection was established, through the Hudson River Railroad, with the city of New York. In 1833 the New York and Erie Railway was commenced, but it was not completed till 1852. The enlargement of the Erie Canal to its present capacity was commenced in 1835 and completed in 1862. These constitute the main avenues of travel and transportation through the State, between its eastern and western extremities ; but connecting routes in every direction have come into existence, and the facilities for transportation and travel in this State are not excelled by those of any other. It is hardly necessary to call attention to the telegraph lines that ramify through all parts of the State.

It has already been stated that a State constitution was adopted in 1777. Several amendments to this constitution were adopted in a convention held for that purpose, and the new constitution was adopted early in 1822, at a popular election held for that purpose, by a majority of more than 33,000 in a total vote of 116,919.

On the 1st of June, 1846, another constitutional convention met at Albany, and it continued in session more than four months. The amendments to the constitution adopted by that body were ratified by the people in the following November by a majority of more than 20,000 votes.

In 1867 another constitutional convention assembled, on the 4th of June, and continued its session, except during an adjournment of two months, several weeks into 1868. The amended constitution framed by this convention was submitted to the people in November, 1869, and resulted in its rejection, except the article making changes in the judiciary, by a majority of more than 66,000. The judiciary article was accepted by a small majority.

In 1872 a commission of thirty-two persons was appointed to propose to the Legislature amendments to the constitution. In 1873 several important amendments were recommended, and ratified at the election in 1874. It is a notable fact that, as changes have been made in the constitution of the State, the right of the elective franchise has been extended ; till now complete manhood suffrage is established.

In 1787 a law was enacted incorporating the Regents of the University of New York, and in their report for 1793 they called attention to the importance of instituting a common school system. At different times, from 1787 to 1795, Governor Clinton called the attention of the Legislature to the same subject, and in that year an act was passed appropriating \$50,000 annually for five years for the encouragement of schools. In 1805, after attention had repeatedly been called to the subject by the different governors, the Legislature passed an

act laying the foundation of the present common school fund. In 1812 the first common school system was adopted, comprising substantially the features of the system as it existed up to 1840. Changes in this system have from time to time been made, till now the free school system of this State is believed to be, with scarcely an exception, the most nearly perfect of any in existence.

The State Agricultural Society, which has been productive of such great benefit, was organized at a convention in Albany in 1832. It was reorganized in 1841, and measures were adopted for raising funds and holding annual fairs.

In 1836 the Legislature ordered a scientific survey of the State for the purpose of developing a knowledge of its geology, mineralogy and natural history. The published reports of this survey are of very great value.

The following list of the governors, lieutenant-governors and presidents of the council who have administered the government of the Colony and of the State of New York from 1629 to the present time, will be found convenient for reference.

UNDER THE DUTCH REGIME—*Directors General*.—Adriaen Joris, 1623; Cornelis Jacobsen, May, 1624; Willem Verhulst, 1625; Peter Minuit, 1626; The Council, 1632; Wouter Van Twiller, 1633; William Kieft, 1638; Peter Stuyvesant, 1647.

UNDER THE ENGLISH REGIME—*Colonial Governors, etc.*, 1664–73—Richard Nicolls, 1664; Col. Francis Lovelace, 1667.

UNDER THE DUTCH AGAIN, 1673.—Cornelis Evertse, Jr., Jacob Benckes, and Council of War, August 19; Anthony Colve, Sept. 19, 1673.

UNDER THE ENGLISH REGIME—*Colonial Governors, etc.*—Maj. Edmund Andros, 1674; Anthony Brockholles (Commander-in-Chief), 1677; Sir Edmund Andros, 1678; Anthony Brockholles, 1681; Col. Thomas Dongan, 1682; Sir Edmund Andros, August 11, 1685; Francis Nicholson (Lt. Gov.), October 9, 1688; Jacob Leisler, 1689; Col. Henry Sloughter, March 19, 1691; Major Richard Ingoldsby, July 26, 1691; Col. Benj. Fletcher (Commander-in-Chief), 1692; Richard, Earl of Bellemont, 1698; John Nanfan, (Lt. Gov.) 1699; Earl of Bellemont, 1700; William Smith (eldest Councillor), 1701; John Nanfan (Lt. Gov.) 1701; Lord

Cornbury, 1702; John, Lord Lovelace, 1708; Peter Schuyler (Pres.), May 6, Richard Ingoldsby (Lt. Gov.), May 9, and Peter Schuyler, May 25, and Richard Ingoldsby (Lt. Gov.), June 1, 1709; Gerardus Beeckman, April 10; Brigadier Robert Hunter, June 14, 1710; Peter Schuyler (Pres.), 1719; William Burnet, 1720; John Montgomerie, 1728; Rip Van Dam (Pres.), 1731; Col. Wm. Cosby, 1732; Geo. Clarke (Pres.), 1736; Admiral Geo. Clinton, 1743; Sir Danvers Osborne, October 10, and James De Lancey (Lt. Gov.), October 12, 1753; Sir Charles Hardy, 1755; James De Lancey, (Lt. Gov.), 1757; Cadwallader Colden (Pres.), 1760; Major-General Robert Monckton, October 26, and Cadwallader Colden (Lt. Gov.), November 18, 1761; Major-General Robert Monckton, 1762; Cadwallader Colden, 1763; Sir Henry Moore, 1765; Cadwallader Colden, 1769; John, Earl of Dunmore, 1770; William Tryon, 1771; Cadwallader Colden (Lt. Gov.), 1774; William Tryon, 1775; James Robertson, 1780; Andrew Elliott (Lt. Gov.), 1783.

Governors of the State: George Clinton, 1777; John Jay, 1795; George Clinton, 1801; Morgan Lewis, 1804; Daniel D. Tompkins, 1807; De Witt Clinton, 1817; Joseph C. Yates, 1822; De Witt Clinton, 1824; Martin Van Buren, 1828; Enos T. Throop, 1830; William L. Marcy, 1832; William H. Seward, 1838; William C. Bouck, 1842; Silas Wright, 1844; John Young, 1846; Hamilton Fish, 1848; Washington Hunt, 1850; Horatio Seymour, 1852; Myron H. Clark, 1854; John A. King, 1856; Edwin D. Morgan, 1858; Horatio Seymour, 1862; Reuben E. Fenton, 1864; John T. Hoffman, 1868; John A. Dix, 1872; Samuel J. Tilden, 1874; Lucius Robinson, 1876; A. B. Cornell, 1880; Grover Cleveland, 1883.

The population of the colony and State of New York was in 1698, 18,067; 1703, 20,665; 1723, 40,564; 1731, 50,824; 1737, 60,437; 1746, 61,589; 1749, 73,348; 1756, 96,790; 1771, 163,337; 1790, 340,120; 1800, 586,756; 1810, 959,049; 1820, 1,372,812; 1830, 1,918,608; 1840, 2,428,921; 1850, 3,097,394; 1860, 3,880,735; 1870, 4,382,759; 1880, 5,083,173.

Of the total population there were in 1790, 21,324 slaves; in 1800, 33,343; 1810, 15,017; 1820, 10,088; 1830, 75; 1840, 4.

GENERAL HISTORY OF LONG ISLAND.

CHAPTER I.

A SKETCH OF THE TOPOGRAPHY, GEOLOGY AND NATURAL HISTORY OF LONG ISLAND.

THE time has long since gone by when a belief in the sudden creation of the earth in its present form was generally prevalent. Once it was considered not only heterodox but almost blasphemous for a man to avow his conviction that he saw, on the surface of the earth, indications of changes that occurred at a period previous to about six thousand years since. That continents, or even islands, should rise from the sea, become submerged, and emerge again in the lapse of immense time, was not deemed possible. Within the limits of historic time no record was given of more than slight changes ; and men had not learned to read the record which is written in the strata beneath the surface, and which science has made legible on the edges of those strata where they are visible. The man who ventured to assert that Long Island was once submerged, and that its emergence was of comparatively recent date, would have been regarded by some as impious and by others as mad. That period of ignorance has passed, and people have come to recognize the fact that, as far as the records of the past can be deciphered, the earth has been steadily changing, in the midst of its changing environments, and that, as far as science is able to peer into the future, changes will continue to succeed each other.

An inspection of the map of Long Island shows that it, as well as the coast south from it, had its birth from the sea, in what, geologically speaking, may be termed modern times ; and there are evidences of vertical oscillations of the surface here which may have caused a succession of partial or complete submergences and emergences.

The island extends from east to west about one hun-

dred and twenty miles, and has an average width of about fifteen miles. Along the northern coast an average elevation of about one hundred feet is found, though there are places where the hills are much higher. On this coast numerous "necks" of land and inlets or estuaries of the Sound are seen ; and the water along this shore is deeper than on the southern coast. Between the heights along the Sound shore and the irregular range of hills which extend lengthwise through the island near the middle, for most of its length, and which are termed the backbone, the surface is in many places much broken. Harbor Hill, in North Hempstead, one of the highest points on the island, was found by actual measurement to be three hundred and eighty-four feet in height.

The northern coast of the island is indented by eight principal bays, or fiords, which extend inland from three to six miles and have a width of from half a mile to a mile and a half. In some places in these the water has a depth of from thirty to fifty feet, and the average depth is about twenty feet. South from this central range the surface slopes to the coast gradually, and so evenly as to have the appearance of a level plain.

Along the south shore are numerous shallow bays and inlets, especially toward the western extremity of the island. Along this shore also is a narrow sand beach, which incloses a bay, or rather a succession of narrow bays, for most of the length of the coast. This beach is crossed at different points by inlets, formerly called "guts" (Dutch "gat," or gate), which connect these bays with the ocean, and divide the beach into a succession of long narrow beaches ; as narrow necks of land connect these beaches with the mainland and divide the long narrow bay into a succession of bays, some of which do not communicate with the ocean. Outside these long narrow beaches is a shifting sand bar, and inside the bays are extensive salt marshes, or meadows. About forty miles of the eastern end of the island is divided by a succession of bays into two peninsulas, each having an average width of about five miles

and the southern extending some twenty miles further east than the northern, though the last seems to be continued to about the same distance by a succession of islands.

When the geological survey of the State was made—nearly forty years since—it was believed that the formation of the island was due to the action of opposite and resultant currents, and probably its foundation on the primary rock which underlies it was thus laid, in a pre-glacial period. The Gulf Stream from the south, as it is believed to have flowed; the Arctic current from the north, and the action of the tides in the Atlantic, all combined to bring hither and deposit the materials of which this foundation consists.

It is believed by geologists that the strata of rocks here were formerly from three hundred to one thousand feet lower than they now are. Then the southeastern shore of the United States was farther inland, and the Gulf Stream swept from the south parallel with and nearer to the base of the primary Atlantic chain of mountains than at present. Along the course of this stream, from Georgia to Maryland, extended a broad belt of primary rocks. These rocks, which were various in their character, were remarkably prone to disintegration, and the results of their wearing down were extremely various.

These debris were borne northward beneath the surface by the equatorial current, and deposited, as in its course northward this current became less rapid; hence the deposits of various kinds that are found in Virginia, Maryland, Delaware and New Jersey. At this period the basin of the St. Lawrence and Hudson valleys was occupied by an inland sea, through which came the Arctic current, bringing its freight of debris to be deposited when circumstances favored its subsidence. The effect of the oblique meeting of those currents in the region of Long Island, when the force of both was partially spent, was to arrest their northward and southward flow, and to produce a gentle resultant current toward the east, with eddies that were influenced by the form of the sea bottom where the currents met, by storms that swept over the surface here, and by other storms at the north or south, which temporarily deflected, retarded or accelerated these currents. Thus, it was believed, were the materials of the strata which underlie Long Island, brought hither; and thus in the resultant comparatively still water and eddies were they deposited; hence the lignite and the bones of marine and terrestrial animals that are found at great depths when wells are sunk and excavations made.

After the process of piling the foundation of the island on the sea bottom had gone on, in the way indicated, during indefinite time, the upheaval took place. Previous to the adoption of the glacial theory it was believed that icebergs floated hither, bringing the boulders, etc., that they had torn from their beds in the north, and dropped them, one by one, as they slowly melted

while circulating in the eddies here; and that at a later period they became stranded or ran aground in shallow water, and there melted, leaving their entire cargoes to constitute the hills on the island as the surface was further upheaved. The researches of modern geologists seem to show that subsequent to the period spoken of, but in pre-glacial times, an upheaval occurred which carried the surface here from three hundred to four hundred feet higher than it now is, and that it remained thus elevated during the glacial period.

It is believed that during this time of elevation the Hudson River had its mouth eighty miles further to the southeast than at present, and that its course and the former littoral plain through which it ran, as well as the old coast lines, are traceable by soundings. During the time of elevation the ice period occurred, and it is thought that the terminal moraine of the glacier extended lengthwise through the island and far to the east along the New England coast, as well as west across New Jersey; and that the drift material of the Island was brought by this agency from the regions to the north and west, where it existed in place. Thus were brought the deposits of clay, sand and gravel which are found especially on the north half of the island, and which often vary so greatly in their character, though separated only by short distances. Thus, too, were brought hither the boulders, some of which are of immense size. Kidd's Rock and Millstone Rock in the town of North Hempstead, Queens county, may be mentioned as examples.

The primary rock which underlies the Island comes to the surface at Hell Gate and Hallett's Cove, on its northwestern extremity, and here the drift deposit lies directly on this rock. Elsewhere it is superposed on older deposits.

It is certain that since the glacial period a subsidence of the surface has taken place, and it is not considered impossible that several vertical oscillations have occurred. Mr. LEWIS says: "If a depression of two hundred feet should take place, all of Long Island that would remain above the water would be a broken range of hills. With an elevation of two hundred feet Long Island Sound would be converted to dry land. The Connecticut and Hudson Rivers would roll along deeper channels, and discharge their waters many miles seaward; while Brooklyn and New York would be inland cities." It is believed, as before stated, that the vertical oscillations in past time have carried the surface of the land here more than two hundred feet higher as well as lower than its present elevation. At present the surface is subsiding, though at the rate of only a few inches in a century. Evidences of this subsidence are found in abundance where excavations or borings are made, and in some instances where the bottom of the sea at some distance from the coast is explored. The stumps of submerged or buried forests are thus found, as well as other products of the former surface. Evi-

dences of a former subsidence, much greater than at present, are found in the occurrence of marine deposits at points in the higher parts of the island.

It is believed that every rood of the space from the central range of hills "has been the shore line of, first an invading, afterward of a receding ocean, and the scene of those great coast changes which waves produce." These changes, which occur from time to time now as the results of storm and ocean currents, it is hardly necessary to detail. As the swell rolls obliquely from the eastward along the coast the beach is modified by the deposit or the washing away of the sand; inlets to the bays are choked up and obliterated, and others break out at other points; sand pits and beaches form, and southerly winds drift the sands on the island, to be again washed away by the waves.

Along the northern coast changes have taken place, and they are still going on, by shore erosion and the transportation of the detritus by storms and tidal currents. Portions of the main island have been thus cut off and have become islands, and the material washed away has been deposited, sometimes at considerable distance, to form shoals, beaches, or necks connecting what had thus been made islands with the shore again. Beaches have thus been formed and obliterated, inlets and channels have been excavated and again filled up, islands have been cut off and joined again to the island, or washed away, and changes, many of which are now difficult to trace and doubtless others that cannot now be traced, have in the lapse of time occurred. Some of the more recent of these may, however, be easily discerned, and people whose lives have been spent here have been able to note many that have gradually occurred, or to remember others that were effected by violent storms.

The species of animals which were found on Long Island when it was first discovered did not differ from those on the main land. Of course its insular condition prevented the annual or occasional migrations which occurred elsewhere by reason of climatic changes or other causes, and the complete extinction here of many of those species took place earlier by reason of that condition. With the long stretch of sea coast which the island has, of course it was the habitat of all those species of aquatic birds which are found in this latitude. The island was annually visited, also, by those migratory land birds that frequent regions in this latitude; and at the present time it is the annual resort of many species that attract hither sportsmen during each season. The museum of the Long Island Historical Society has specimens of many of these species of animals and birds, and in this department it is proposed to make it quite complete.

By reason of the prevailing character of the soil, the botany of the island does not embrace as wide a range of species as are sometimes found on equal areas in the same latitude. Of the trees formerly covering large

portions of the island, the oak, pine and chestnut were the most abundant and valuable; and it is said that the quality of this timber was far superior to that of the same species found elsewhere. Among the most valuable species of timber growing on the island at present the locust occupies a prominent position. It is thought that Captain John Sands, who came to Sands Point about 1695, introduced this tree, from Virginia, about the year 1700. Since that time it has spread extensively here. The quality of this timber grown here is greatly superior to that of the same species in the region whence it was brought. A few gigantic specimens of this tree are standing on the lawn at the residences of Mr. Bogart, of Roslyn, and of the late Elwood Valentine, at Glen Cove. Says Lewis: "It is believed that those on Mr. Bogart's ground, several now or recently at Sand's Point, and two in the dooryard of the old Thorne mansion, at Little Neck, now occupied by Eugene Thorpe, Esq., are of the first imported and planted on Long Island." About eighty species of forest trees—indigenous and those that have become acclimated—are growing without cultivation on the island. Specimens of many of these species are now in the Historical Society's museum, in which a competent and energetic member of the society proposes to place a complete set of specimens of the flora and fauna of the island. An interesting article on the forest trees of Long Island will be found in the *Brooklyn Advance*, May, 1883, from the pen of Elias Lewis, Esq.

CHAPTER II.

THE INDIANS OF LONG ISLAND—TERRITORY, CHARACTERISTICS AND RELATIONS WITH THE WHITES.

By the late Alden J. Spooner, Esq.

BEFORE the settlement by the Dutch were the dark ages of island history. The wampum or wampum belts give no record of the red men's origin, migrations, wars or loves. Immense heaps of the broken shells of the quahog, or periwinkle, are their only monuments.

Every locality where one or more families were located had a name which gave designation to a tribe. The authorities on this subject have recognized thirteen tribes, as follows:

The CANARSIE tribe claimed the whole of Kings County and a part of the town of Jamaica. They included the Marechawicks at Brooklyn, the Nyacks at New Utrecht, and the Jamecos at Jamaica. Their principal settlement was at the place called Canarsie, which is still a famous place for fishing and fowling, and was doubtless the residence of the sachem and a great portion of the tribe. In 1643 the name of the sachem was Penhawitz. In 1670 the deed of that part of the city

of Brooklyn constituting Bedford was signed by Peter, Elmohar, Job, Makagiquas, and Shamese, sachems. In 1656 the deed of Newtown was signed by Rowcroesteo and Pomwaukon, sachems, supposed to have been of Canarsie. A confirmatory deed of land at Gravesend, in 1684, was signed by Cakewasco, Areunapoech, Armanat and Muskhesk, sachems, who called the Indian name of the place Makeopaca.

The ROCKAWAY tribe was scattered over the southern part of the town of Hempstead, which with a part of Jamaica and the whole of Newtown constituted their claim. The greater part of the tribe was at Near Rockaway. Part lived at the head of Maspeth Creek, in Newtown, and deeds for land there were executed by the Rockaway sachem. This tribe had also a settlement of several hundred acres on Hog Island in Rockaway Bay. The first Rockaway sachem known to the Dutch was Chegonoe. Nowedinah was sachem in 1648, Eskmoppas in 1670, Paman in 1685, and Quaquasho or "the Hunter" in 1691.

The MONTAUK tribe had jurisdiction over all the remaining lands to Montauk, probably including Gardiner's Island; and there seems to be evidence that to the sachem of this tribe was conceded the title and functions of grand sachem of Paumanake, or Long Island.

The MERRICK, Meroke, or Merikoke tribe claimed all the territory south of the middle of the island from Near Rockaway to the west line of Oyster Bay, and was in all probability at some former period a part of the Marsapequa or Marsapeague tribe. A part of the land in the town of Hempstead was bought from this tribe. They had a large settlement on Hick's Neck, and occupied the other necks between that and their principal site, where the village of Merrick now stands. Their sachem in 1647 was Wantagh.

The MARSAPQUA or Marsapeague tribe had its principal settlement at Fort Neck, in South Oyster Bay, and thence extended eastward to the bounds of Islip and north to the middle of the island. Here were two Indian forts, the larger of which was stormed by Captain John Underhill, in the service of the Dutch, in 1653, with great slaughter of the Indians. The remains of the fort have been encroached upon and covered by the waters of the Great South Bay. Tackapousha was sachem of this tribe in 1656; also chief sachem of the western chieftaincies of the island, after the division between the Dutch and the English.

The MARINECOCK tribe claimed jurisdiction of the lands east of Newtown, as far as the west line of Smithtown and probably to the Nissequag River. This was a numerous tribe, and had large settlements at Flushing, Glen Cove, Cold Spring, Huntington and Cow Harbor. A portion of the tribe took part in the war of 1643, under Gunwarrowe; but their sachem at that time remained friendly to the Dutch, and through his diplomacy succeeded in establishing peace. Whiteneymen (one-eyed) was sachem in 1643, and Assiapam in 1653.

The NESAQUAKE or Missaquogue tribe possessed the country from the river named after them to Stony Brook and from the sound to the middle of the island. The extensive shell banks near the village of Nissequag show that it was the site of a considerable settlement, and it was probably the residence of the sachem. Coginquant was sachem in 1656.

The SETALCAT or Setauket tribe claimed from Stony Brook to the Wading River and was one of the most powerful. Its members inhabited Strong's Neck and the banks of the different creeks, coves and harbors. Warrawaken was sachem in 1655, and Gil in 1675.

The CORCHAUG tribe owned the territory from the Wading River to Oyster Ponds, and was spread along the north shore of Peconic Bay and over the necks adjoining the sound. It probably claimed Robin's Island also. There is reason to believe that it was a numerous and powerful tribe. Momometon was sachem in 1648.

The MANHASSET tribe peopled Shelter Island and probably Hog Island. This tribe, although confined to about 10,000 acres, could, if tradition is reliable, bring into the field at one time more than 500 warriors. Pog-gattatuck, brother of Wyandanch, was sachem in 1648, and Yokee or Youghco in 1651. His residence was on Sachem's Neck.

The SECATOGUE tribe adjoined the Marsapequas on the west and claimed the country as far east as Patchogue. The farm of the Willets at Islip is called Seccatogue Neck, and here is supposed to have been the principal settlement and probably the residence of the sachem, who in 1683 was Winnequaheag.

The PATCHOGUE tribe extended its jurisdiction east from Patchogue to Westhampton, and as some think to Canoe Place. The main settlements were at Patchogue, Fire Place, Mastic, Moriches and Westhampton. Tobacus was sachem in 1666.

The SHINNECOCK tribe claimed the territory from Canoe Place to Easthampton, including Sag Harbor and the whole south shore of Peconic Bay.

The Indians of Long Island were designated on the Dutch maps Mohegans, and have been so called by historians. This is but a sub-title under the general term Algonquins, covering a great race of savages scattered over Connecticut, Rhode Island, Delaware and other States.

The Indians of the island were tall and straight, muscular and agile, with straight hair and reddish-brown complexion. Their language was the Algonquin, the highly descriptive tongue in which the apostle Eliot wrote the Indian Bible, and which was used by other missionaries. It was the language that greeted the colonists at Roanoke, and the Pilgrims at Plymouth. It was spoken through twenty degrees of latitude and sixty degrees of longitude. Strange that a language which a century ago was spoken so widely and freely between the aborigines and the settlers should have so perished that it is doubted whether a man is living who can speak

it, or read the Indian Bible, so laboriously prepared by the apostolic John Eliot.

The Indian names of Long Island are said to be Sewanhacky, Wamponomon and Paumanake. These names, or at least the first two, seem to have arisen from the abundance of the quahog or hard clam, the shell of which furnished the wampum or sewant, which in the earlier times was the money of the country, as well as the material for the embroidery and the record symbols of the Indian belts. Matouwacs is the name given the island on the earliest Dutch maps. The deed to the settlers at Easthampton styles it Paumanake. Rev. William Hubbard, of Ipswich, in his history of New England, called it Mattamwake. In books and deeds it bears other names, as Meitowax, Metoac, etc. Sewanhacky and Wamponomon both signify "the island, or place, of shells." Of Mattamwake, Judge Furman says: "In the Narragansett language *mattan* was a term used to signify anything fine or good, and *duke* or *ake* meant land or earth; thus the whole word meant 'the good or pleasant land,' which was certainly highly characteristic of Long Island, even at that period of its early settlement."

The religious notions of the Long Island Indians are described in a communication from the Rev. Samson Occum, published in the collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society. His words are: "They believe in a plurality of gods, and in one great and good being, who controls all the rest. They likewise believe in an evil spirit, and have their conjurors or paw-waws." The ceremony performed by these characters was so odious, in the opinion of the whole people, that the Duke's Laws of 1665 enacted that "no Indian shall be permitted to paw-waw or perform worship to the devil in any town within this government." It is evident, however, that they still kept up their devil-worship at the visit of the Labadists in 1679-80. They also had divinities in the winds and waters. It is surprising how few tokens are found, in the shape of idols, or carvings of any kind, to signify a reverence for their gods. The only thing which has attracted particular attention is "the foot-prints of the evil spirit"—the impression of a foot on a boulder, now in the possession of the Long Island Historical Society, which had lain upon Montauk Point from the earliest English knowledge, and probably for centuries before, and which was always an object of Indian veneration.

The lodges or wigwams of the Long Island Indians were fifteen or twenty feet wide, having a frame of two rows of poles bent together and covered with rushes, except along the ridge, where an opening was left for smoke to escape. This frame of poles was interlaced with the bark of trees, and continued to a length of 180 feet or more, as the families conjointly occupying the wigwam might require. Fires were built along the floor, each family having its own for cooking and for comfort in cold weather. The principal household

utensils were earthen pots and gourds for holding water.

The original fur and feather clothing of these savages gave place to cloth after the advent of Europeans. At first a blanket about the shoulders and a cloth hanging from a belt about the waist composed their costume, but they afterwards imitated the dress of the whites. All were fond of decoration. In early deeds from them there is a peculiar reservation of "the trees in what eagles do build their nests," doubtless in order to secure to them the feathers of the royal bird, which were among their valued adornments.

Their canoes were of different sizes, from the light shallop to those of sixty feet in length. They were wrought out of logs with stone axes, with the help of fire. Their pottery, of which specimens are found in the shell heaps, is of clay, mixed with water, hollowed out by the hand and baked. Most of the specimens are very inferior. Private collections abound in arrow-heads, stone axes, and the pestles and mortars which served them for mills. The Long Island Historical Society has a collection of Indian relics, in which the only metallic instrument is an ax of native copper, unearthed a few years ago at Rockaway, together with a few stone axes and a quantity of spear heads, apparently buried for preservation.

Long Island was the great source of the supply of wampum or sewant—the Indian shell money, as well as the beads which they wore as ornaments or fastened to their clothing. Along the shores of the island immense deposits of shells once existed (some of which yet remain), from which the blue portion forming the eye was carefully removed for making blue beads; these were worth three times as much as the white, which were made from the inner pillars of the conch shell or periwinkle.

Long Island will always be a monumental point in history as the place to which Hudson and his mariners first came as the key to open a world in commerce and civilization, to which the discoveries of Columbus were but the vestibule. The earliest account of the Indians of the island is that given by Hudson in the narrative of his voyage in 1609. On the 4th of September of that year he came to anchor in Gravesend Bay. He says the Canarsie Indians came on board his vessel without any apprehension and seemed very glad of his coming. They brought with them green tobacco and exchanged it for knives and beads. They were clad in deer skins, well dressed, and were "very civil." On a subsequent visit some of them were dressed in "mantles of feathers" and some in "skins of diver sorts of good furs." Hudson states that "they had yellow copper and red copper tobacco pipes, and ornaments of copper about their necks;" also that they had currants and "great store of maize or Indian corn, whereof they made good bread." They also brought him hemp. Some of his men landed where is now the town of Gravesend and met many men, wo-

men and children, who gave them tobacco. They described the country to Hudson as "full of great tall oaks, and the lands as pleasant with grass and flowers and goodly trees as they had ever seen."

Doubtless the natives presented their very best festal appearance to the great captain of the "big canoe;" though when, seventy years after (in 1679-80), they were visited by the Labadist agents, Dankers and Sluyter, after contact with the early settlers, they had sadly degenerated; and the best collection that has been made of their utensils and adornments fails to show any of the yellow copper ornaments.

The Dutch and English found the river Indians and the Long Island tribes greatly reduced by their conflicts with the more warlike Iroquois or Five Nations, who had laid them under tribute. The powerful Pequots of Connecticut did the same before their own extermination. After the coming of the Dutch, under a promise of protection by them, the Canarsies neglected to pay their tribute to the Mohawks, representing the Five Nations, and in 1655 the latter made a descent on Staten Island, where they killed 67 of the natives, and going thence to Gravesend, Canarsie and other places made a thorough butchery. A bare remnant of the Canarsies escaped to Beeren Island, and Mrs. Abraham Remsen left the statement that she made a shroud for the last individual of them. The consistory of the Dutch church at Albany, thereafter, for many years acted as agent for the Indians down the Hudson in the payment of their tribute to the conquerors.

The settlers at the east end of the island found Wyandanch, the grand sachem, at war with Ninigret, the sachem of the Narragansetts of Rhode Island. There had been retaliatory massacres on both sides. Ninigret struck the finishing blow on the occasion of the marriage of a daughter of Wyandanch to a young chieftain of his tribe, at Fort Pond, on Montauk. Knowing that all precaution would be overlooked in the revelry of the festive occasion, Ninigret came down in force upon his unprepared enemy; slaughtered half the tribe, including the bridegroom, and bore away the bride as his captive to the mainland. This blow broke the power and the spirit of Wyandanch, who then, by a cession of Montauk, came under the government and protection of Easthampton.

Hereby hangs a romance which can not be done away with by any captious objectors, like those who have sought to resolve the story of Pocohontas into a myth. It is secured by deed. On a square bit of paper, written plainly in the old English character, framed and placed in the noble building of the Long Island Historical Society, is a conveyance to Lion Gardiner, then lord of the Isle of Wight or Gardiner's Island, of the great part of Smithtown, as a consideration for his services in regaining from Ninigret the captive daughter of Wyandanch; the last named signed the deed, as also did his son Wyancombone, and the latter's wife.

Thompson ascribes the war between the Montauks and the Narragansetts to the refusal of the Montauk monarch to join in the plot for exterminating the Europeans. Roger Williams traced the war to the pride of the contending sachems. The Long Island chief, he said, was "proud and foolish;" Ninigret, "proud and fierce."

Lion Gardiner, in his notes on Easthampton, says the Block Island Indians, acting as allies of the Narragansetts, attacked the Montauks during King Philip's war and punished them severely. The engagement took place on Block Island, whither the Montauks went in their canoes, and the latter on landing fell into an ambuscade. He says: "The Montauk Indians were nearly all killed; a few were protected by the English and brought away; the sachem was taken and carried to Narragansett. He was made to walk on a large flat rock that was heated by building fires on it, and walked several times over it, singing his death song; but his feet being burned to the bones he fell, and they finished the tragical scene as usual for savages."

The Long Island Indians joined the neighboring mainland tribes in the hostilities between them and the Dutch, which grew out of the murder of an Indian at New York in 1641. In 1643 some Dutch farmers on the island ventured to seize and carry off two wagon loads of corn belonging to the Indians; the owners attempting to defend their property, two of them were killed.

The Long Island and Hudson River Indians burning to avenge such outrages, more than two thousand of them rose in open war and made the greatest possible destruction of the property and lives of the settlers. A transient peace was patched up, the Canarsie chief Penhawitz being one of an embassy to New Amsterdam for that purpose. In a few months war broke out again, this time, it is said, on account of Governor Kieft's embezzling the presents for the natives by which the treaty should have been ratified. The savages, crossing to the island from Westchester county, destroyed the settlement of Mespat, now Newtown; also the first house built in Brooklyn, that of William Adriance Bennett, near Gowanus. They then fell upon the settlement of Lady Moody at Gravesend, but were beaten off by a company of forty men, who had been recruited and disciplined by Nicholas Stillwell, and who were concealed in Lady Moody's log house. From the neighboring villages more than a hundred families flocked to New Amsterdam for protection. From these was raised a company of fifty men, who, under the famous John Underhill, participated in the massacre of over five hundred of the Indians in March, 1644, at Strickland's Plain, on Horse Neck, near Greenwich, Conn. As one of the results of this decisive blow, several of the Long Island chiefs went to New Amsterdam and made a treaty of peace.

In 1655 Hendrick Van Dyke, the late "schout fiscal"

of New Amsterdam, shot and killed a squaw who was stealing peaches from his garden. He was soon killed by the Indians in revenge. At the same time they perpetrated terrible massacres on Staten Island and in New Jersey, and spread terror on Long Island, though doing no damage there. Governor Stuyvesant ordered all persons living in secluded places to gather and "form villages after the fashion of our neighbors of New England," but little attention was paid to his command.

On the division of the island in 1650 between the English and the Dutch, the English taking the eastern, and the Dutch the western part, the jurisdiction of Grand Sachem Wyandanch was nominally divided, Tackapousha being elected sachem of the chieftaincies in possession of the Dutch, namely, those of the Marsapeguas, Merricks, Canarsies, Secatagues, Rockaways and Matinecocks. In the winter of 1658 the smallpox destroyed more than half the Montauks; while Wyandanch lost his life by poison. The remainder of the tribe, to escape the fatal malady and the danger of invasion in their weakened state, fled in a body to their white neighbors, who entertained them for a considerable period.

Wyandcomb succeeded his father in the sachemship, and, being a minor, divided the government with his mother, who was styled the squaw sachem. Lion Gardiner and his son David acted as guardians to the young chief by request of his father. At Fort Pond—called by the Indians Konkhongank—are the remains of the burial ground of the chieftancy, and here once stood the citadel of the monarch Wyandanch.

From the numerous array of tribes mentioned on a preceding page it is evident that the island was in the earlier periods of its history thickly settled by the Indians, who found support and delight in its ample resources of hunting, fishing and fowling; but their position exposed them to invasion, and their stores of wampum tempted the fierce tribes of the mainland. They were evidently in constant fear of aggression, and at two points—Fort Neck, at Oyster Bay, and Fort Pond, Montauk—forts were built, capable of sheltering five hundred men. Governor Winthrop in 1633, referring to Long Island, which had just been reconnoitred by his bark, the "Blessing," says, doubtless upon mere report: "The Indians there are very treacherous, and have many canoes so great as will carry eighty men."

But the natives soon dwindled in numbers and power upon contact with the whites. The Dutch at the western end of the island, coveting their corn lands, soon found means to purchase and appropriate them; while at the east end the Narragansetts drove the tribes into the arms of the English. All over the island their lands were bought at a nominal price from the too easy owners.

Their inordinate fondness for "fire-water" had a large share in their ruin. Rev. Azariah Horton was a

missionary to the Long Island Indians in 1741-44. He states that in 1741 there were at the east end two small towns of them, and lesser companies settled at a few miles distance from each other through the island. Up to the close of 1743 he had baptized 35 adults and 44 children. He took pains to teach them to read, and some of them made considerable progress; but, notwithstanding all this, Mr. Horton in 1744 complained of a great defection by a relapse into their darling vice of drunkenness, to which Indians are everywhere so greatly addicted that no human power can prevent it.

In 1761 the Indians had so diminished on Long Island as in some places to have entirely disappeared; and the once powerful Montauks could muster but 192 souls. This number was reduced by the withdrawal of many who went to Brotherton with Rev. Samson Occum. This celebrated Indian preacher went, about 1755, to Montauk, where he preached and taught some ten years. He went to England and raised £1,000 for establishing schools among the Indians.

Rev. Paul Cuffee was another Indian preacher on the island. He was buried about a mile west of Canoe Place, where the Indian meeting-house then stood, and a neat marble slab has been erected to his memory by the Missionary Society of New York, which employed him. The writer has conversed with persons who gave testimony to his piety and the fervor of his eloquence.

The Indian kings at Montauk have, for a century and more, borne the name of Pharoah or Pharo. This was doubtless conferred upon them by the first missionaries, who are also responsible for Solomons, Tituses and other Christian and classic names. A squaw who died recently at Easthampton, at a very advanced age, was named Hannah Hannibal. One of the Montauk Pharoahs died about three years ago and his brother succeeded him. He bore the traits of pure blood in the sallow complexion and long straight hair of his race. With the advance of settlements on the island the Montauks have faded away, till but a remnant of scarcely a dozen pure bloods remains on the reserved "Indian fields" on the promontory of Montauk. Subject to their reservations the whole promontory was recently sold in partition sale of the property to Arthur W. Benson, of Brooklyn, for \$151,000.

The influence of their friends at Easthampton kept these Indians from taking part in King Philip's and other wars, and from being violently blotted out like most of their brethren. Elsewhere many of them have succeeded in whaling enterprises, and they have been ingenious in basket making. Some of those remaining around Montauk are useful sailors or domestics.

The Shinnecock tribe, much modified by negro intermarriages, still cluster about Southampton to the number of about 200. They are in general a worthy and industrious people, with a good school and much pride of character. Many will recollect the mourning which went abroad on the loss, in the wreck of the

"Circassia," of that fine corps of sailors of the Shinnecock tribe, whose courage and manliness were of a high heroic type.

CHAPTER III.

DISCOVERY AND SETTLEMENT OF LONG ISLAND—HISTORY OF COLONIAL TIMES.

THE names by which Long Island was called by the Indians were various. Among them were Matanwake, Meitowax, Sewanhacky (Island of Shells), Paumanake, etc. By reason of its form the early settlers applied to the island its present name. The Colonial Legislature in 1693 changed it to Nassau, in honor of William of Nassau, Prince of Orange, and required that all legal instruments should recognize that name. It never acquired more than a partial use, and though the act is unrepealed the name is obsolete.

It has been thought that this island was visited by John de Verazzano, in 1524, and from some of his descriptions it is surmised by some that he entered the harbor of New York, while others insist that his journal gives no foundation for such a belief. The first absolute discovery of Long Island by Europeans was made early in September, 1609, by Henry Hudson, an Englishman in the employ of the Dutch East India Company. He had sailed in the "Half Moon," from Amsterdam, on the 25th of the preceding March, in search of a northwest passage to India. After touching at various points on the coast north he sailed south to the mouth of Chesapeake Bay; then, passing north, entered Delaware Bay, from which he again sailed northward and entered New York Bay on the 3d of September. During the week that he remained there a boat's crew, engaged in making explorations, landed at Coney Island—the first portion of Long Island pressed by the foot of a white man. On the 6th, John Colman, of a party that was sent up the river to sound and explore, was killed and two others were wounded by a party of twenty-six savages in two canoes. The next day Colman's body was buried on the shore, and the place of his interment was named Colman's Point. By some this is believed to have been Sandy Hook; by others, Coney Island. After the discovery of the island by Hudson the region was visited by private adventurers to trade, but in 1614 a decree of the States General forbade this and gave to the East India Company monopoly of this trade. In that year Adrian Block and Hendrick Christiaance visited this region under the East India Company and built a fort and some dwellings on the island of Manhattan or Manhattoes, as it was called by the Indians. Captain Block passed with his vessel through Hell Gate and sailed through the sound, and first discovered the insular condition of Long Island. Block Island, which was called

by the Indians Manissees, was named in honor of him. It is said that his vessel was accidentally burned, and that he built another on or near Manhattan in the summer of 1614. If so, it was the first vessel built in the United States.

When English settlements were made in New England a rivalry at once sprang up between the English and the Dutch, each power striving to strengthen its authority by extending its settlements. Under these circumstances the settlement of the western end of the island by the Dutch commenced. It is not known who was the first actual settler on Long Island. Settlements were made in Flatlands, Kings county, as early as 1636, possibly earlier. It is not probable that any settlement was made at the Wallabout prior to 1636. The name of this bay is corrupted from "Wahle Bocht" or "Waale Boght," which, according to the late Hon. Tenuis G. Bergen, means "the Beach or Shore of the Cove;" Samuel Ogden renders it "the Bend of the Inner Harbor." Settlers came and located as caprice or circumstance seemed to dictate, without any provision for local government. At nearly the same time permanent settlements were made on the west of the island by the Dutch, and on the east by the English. Both purchased their lands from the Indians; the English directly, and the Dutch through their governors, who first extinguished the Indian title, then parceled out the land to individuals in various ways, or gave permits to purchase from the Indians.

On the west end of the island the Dutch in 1636 settled Brooklyn, first named Breuckelen after a town of that name in the province of Utrecht, in Holland; Flatlands, first New Amersfort, after a place of the same name in Holland, also in 1636; Flushing, or in Dutch Vlissingen, also after a place of the same name in Holland, 1645; Flatbush, originally Midwout, after Midwout in Holland, 1651; New Utrecht in 1657, and Bushwick, or Woodtown in 1660.

English immigrants were permitted to settle on territory claimed by the Dutch on taking the oath of allegiance to the Dutch government. Of the English towns under the jurisdiction of the Dutch, Hempstead was settled in 1643; Gravesend in 1645; Jamaica, originally Rusdorp, in 1655, and Newtown, first called Middlebury, in 1656. The jurisdiction of Oyster Bay, which was settled in 1653, was not during many years determined, but it finally came under Connecticut.

The Dutch towns appear to have been wholly under the control of the governor, whose will in all matters—general and individual, civil and ecclesiastical—was absolute. The English towns under Dutch jurisdiction were allowed to choose their own officers, subject to the approval of the governor, to hold their town meetings, and manage their own matters as nearly like the eastern towns as circumstances would permit.

It was hardly to be expected that, in the exercise of power so nearly absolute, the representatives of their

High Mightinesses, as the States General was termed, should not at times yield to their caprices, their sympathies or antipathies, and do arbitrary and oppressive acts. In the case of Governor Stuyvesant, his tyrannical disregard of the people's rights led to the assembling (1653) of delegates from N. Amsterdam, Brooklyn, Flatbush, Flatlands, Gravesend, Newtown, Flushing and Hempstead, and the adoption of an address to the governor and council and States General, setting forth their grievances, and asking that they be redressed. To this no reply was given, though a protest was entered on their minutes against the meeting. When, in the same year, a second meeting assembled, the governor ordered them "to disperse and not to assemble again on such business."

A line had, in 1650, been established between the Dutch towns on the west and the English on the eastern end of the island, by four commissioners—two from the Dutch government and two from the united colonies of New England, although the New England colonists had at that time no jurisdiction on the island. This line ran southward across the island from the "westernmost part of Oyster Bay." Notwithstanding this arrangement, the Dutch governor continued to claim jurisdiction over Oyster Bay.

The people at about this time were sorely troubled by what were known as "land pirates" or outlaws, who had been banished from New England, and against these the Dutch governor failed to afford them protection.

It may here be remarked that the administration of Governor Stuyvesant, from about 1656 to the conquest in 1664, was disgraced by a degree of religious intolerance, and especially by persecution of the Quakers, which rivaled, but which did not equal, that of the Puritans of New England, of whom it may truly be said that the principle of religious liberty never dawned on their minds. For this persecution he was rebuked by the authorities in Holland. These persecutions were renewed about the commencement of the eighteenth century under the administration of Lord Cornbury, who in religious intolerance was fully equal to Peter Stuyvesant.

In 1662 a new charter was granted to Connecticut, and this charter was interpreted to include the whole of Long Island. The eastern towns gladly availed themselves of this interpretation, and in 1663 the English towns under Dutch jurisdiction resolved to withdraw from it and place themselves under that of Connecticut. Soon afterward two commissioners were appointed by Connecticut to organize the government of that colony in these towns; but it does not appear from history that they fulfilled their mission, and this unsatisfactory condition of things continued till the conquest in 1664.

As has been stated, the settlements of the Dutch were limited to the western end of the island, and their

jurisdiction to a comparatively small portion of that end. The eastern end was settled by English immigrants, under different auspices, and its settlement commenced a few years later.

In 1620 King James I. of England granted to the Plymouth Company a charter for all the land between the 40th and 48th degrees of north latitude, extending from "sea to sea," which territory was termed New England. In 1636, at the request of King Charles I., the Plymouth Company conveyed by patent to William Alexander, Earl of Stirling, the whole of Long Island, and the adjacent islands. Earl Stirling appointed James Farret his attorney for the sale of his real estate, and authorized him to select for himself twelve thousand acres of the territory. Farret selected Shelter Island and Robbin's Island in Peconic Bay, and in 1641 sold these to Stephen Goodyear, of New Haven. Soon after the death of Earl Stirling and his son in 1640, the heir of the latter, grandson of the earl, for a consideration of three hundred pounds, surrendered to the crown the grant from the Plymouth Company, and it was embodied in the grant to the Duke of York, April 2d, 1664, which thus described it: "And also all that island or islands commonly called by the several name or names of Meitowacks, or Long Island, situate, lying and being toward the west of Cape Cod and the narrow Higansetts, abutting upon the mainland between the two rivers, there called or known by the several names of Connecticut and Hudson's River."

In 1662 the Connecticut colony claimed Long Island under that clause in their charter of that year which included the "islands adjacent," and in 1664 sent a commission to the island to assert jurisdiction. The conquest in that year put an end to their proceedings. With this exception no claim was made by any power to the eastern portion of the island between the years 1640 and 1644.

The eastern towns were settled by the English as follows: Gardiner's Island (annexed in 1680 to Easthampton) in 1639. It was purchased in that year by Lion Gardiner from the attorney of Lord Stirling. Mr. Gardiner had previously purchased it from the Indians. This was the first English settlement, and Mr. Gardiner was one of the first English settlers in the State of New York. Southampton and Southold were settled in 1640, Easthampton in 1648, Shelter Island in 1652, Huntington and Oyster Bay in 1653, though the latter was claimed by the Dutch, Brookhaven in 1655, and Smithtown in 1663.

Most of the settlers in these towns were previous immigrants in New England, who crossed the Sound in larger or smaller companies and established independent settlements; which, as their numbers increased, came to be little republics, completely independent of all other powers. Although there were differences in the details, there was a general similarity among the governments of the different towns. Each had its legislative, exec-

nitive, and judicial department. The people, assembled in town meeting, constituted the legislative department, and, in important cases, the judicial also. In that case the assembly was sometimes termed the General Court of the town. Two or three magistrates, a clerk, and a constable, constituted usually the ordinary judicial and executive functionaries of the town. Of course the people required no bill of rights or constitution to protect them from oppression by their rulers, for they were their own rulers. They organized companies of citizen soldiers, erected and garrisoned forts when necessary, enacted and enforced laws to regulate, not only civil, but also social and religious, matters; and, to guard against threatened vices, as well as to restrain existing evils, churches were erected, schools were established, and ministers and teachers were supported, by taxes on the property of the citizens, imposed by the people themselves in their legislative character.

It is hardly necessary to say that these original settlers were Puritans, and that, although they were not guilty of such manifestations of bigotry and intolerance as disgraced the Puritans of New England, they jealously guarded against the introduction among them of innovations which would exert what they deemed a deleterious influence. They required of those who proposed to settle among them a probation of from three to six months, and if at the end of that time they were not satisfactory to the people they were notified to leave within a specified time. They were thus able to prevent undesirable people from coming among them, and to maintain their religious faith free from contamination by those holding heterodox opinions. To guard against the evils of intemperance, the sale of intoxicating liquors was restricted under heavy penalties. The profanation of the Sabbath, lying, profane cursing and slander, were penal offences in most of the towns, and the whipping post, the stocks, pillory, etc., were in common use. Thus, each town managed its own affairs, without any combination with neighboring towns, till the island came to be a part of New York in 1664.

In view of their exposed situation, and the difficulty of defending themselves against hostile attacks by the Indians or invasions by the Dutch, these towns, one by one, placed themselves under the protection of the New England colonies, without, however, subjecting themselves to taxation by those colonies, or relinquishing to the slightest extent their self-government. Southampton did this in 1644, Easthampton in 1657, Brookhaven in 1659, and Huntington in 1660. These came under the protection of Connecticut. Southold and Shelter Island assumed the same relation to New Haven in 1648. Connecticut and New Haven became united under a new charter in 1662, and these towns became a part of the new colony of Connecticut, sent representatives to the Colonial Assembly, and contributed toward the expense of the government. In the same year Oyster Bay also assumed this relation.

The oppression to which the people in the towns under the jurisdiction of the Dutch were subjected has been spoken of. The inhabitants of both the Dutch and English towns had submitted to the tyranny of their rulers because they saw no way of escape. In November of 1663 the people of the English towns held a mass meeting at Jamaica to consider their condition and devise means for their relief; but, although no attempt to disperse them was made, no results were accomplished. They were therefore ready to welcome anything which promised relief.

Early in 1664 Charles the Second of England granted to his brother James, Duke of York, territory which included New Amsterdam and all of Long Island. An expedition was at once fitted out and sent under Colonel Richard Nicolls, who was commissioned deputy governor, to take possession of the colony. On his arrival at New York in August of that year he demanded of Governor Stuyvesant the surrender of his possessions, which was refused. Colonel Nicolls and the commissioners, Robert Carr, George Cartwright and Samuel Maverick, who had been sent with him to assist in the government of the colony, landed at Gravesend; and, at a meeting held for that purpose, consulted with the people, and with Governor Winthrop, of Connecticut, and exhibited to them the royal grant to the Duke of York. He also issued a proclamation promising protection and all the privileges of English subjects, and sent officers for volunteers in the western towns of the island. After consultation with his burgomasters and the people, Governor Stuyvesant, finding that the current of popular opinion set strongly in that direction, reluctantly consented to a surrender, and thus, without bloodshed, the government passed to the English.

The people of the towns on the west end of the island acquiesced in the change, relying on the promise of Governor Nicolls and the commissioners that they should enjoy all the privileges of English subjects—a promise which was not fulfilled. The eastern towns, however, which had been independent, and which were then a part of Connecticut, were not willing to sever their political relations with that colony and become subject to the Duke of York, and Connecticut at first maintained her claim to them. Governor Winthrop, who had been one of the commissioners to arrange the terms of surrender, “informed the English on Long Island that Connecticut had no longer any claim to the island; that what they had done for them was for the welfare, peace and quiet settlement of his Majesty’s subjects, they being the nearest organized government to them under his Majesty. But, now that his Majesty’s pleasure was fully signified by his letters patent, their jurisdiction had ceased and become null.”

In March, 1665, a convention of delegates from the towns assembled at Hempstead, in accordance with a proclamation of Governor Nicolls, “to settle good and known laws within this government for the future, and

receive your best advice and information at a general meeting." At this convention the boundaries and relations of the towns were settled and determined, and some other matters adjusted. New patents were required to be taken by those who had received their patents from the Dutch authorities, and it was required that patents should be taken by those who had never received any, as was the case with the eastern towns. These required a quit-rent—a relic of feudal customs—which was the source of much trouble, and the subject of abuse afterward. A code of laws for the government of the province was also promulgated. These, which had been compiled at the dictation of the governor, were termed the Duke's Laws. They contained many of the provisions which had been adopted by the eastern towns, and many of the enactments would be looked on at the present day as curiosities. With some modifications they were continued in force till 1683, when the first Provincial Assembly held its session. THOMPSON says: "In addition to other matters which occupied the convention at Hempstead in 1665, Long Island and Staten Island (and probably Westchester) were erected into a shire, called, after that in England, Yorkshire, which was in like manner divided into separate districts, denominated ridings: the towns now included in Suffolk county constituted the East 'Riding,' Kings county, Staten Island, and the town of Newtown, the West 'Riding,' and the remainder of Queens county the North 'Riding,' of Yorkshire upon Long Island." The word "riding" thus used is a corruption of "trithing"—a third. The original names of some of the towns were changed to the present ones at this meeting, it is supposed. So highly pleased were the delegates at this convention with the prospect before them, under the assurances of the governor, that they adopted and signed an address to the king, pledging loyalty and submission in terms that were not pleasing to the people and that were criticised with such severity that the Court of Assize issued an edict forbidding further censure of these deputies, under penalty of being brought before the court "to answer for the slander."

Under the Duke's Laws the justices—one in each town—were appointed by the governor, as was also the high sheriff of the shire, and a deputy sheriff for each riding. Each town elected at first eight and afterwards four overseers and a constable, who constituted a Town Court, with jurisdiction limited to cases of £5 or less. They also assessed taxes and regulated minor matters. Each riding had a Court of Sessions consisting of the justices, with whom the high sheriff, members of the council and secretary of the colony, were entitled to sit. It had criminal jurisdiction, and in civil cases its judgments were final in cases less than £20. The Court of Assize, which consisted of the governor, council, and an indefinite number of magistrates, had appellate jurisdiction in cases from inferior courts, and original jurisdiction in suits for demands above £20.

No provision was made for a legislature; and, while this Court of Assize was nominally the head of the government, the governor, who appointed the members of it, and who could remove most of them at his pleasure, really possessed unlimited legislative, executive and judicial authority. THOMPSON says: "In this court the governor united the character of both judge and legislator. He interpreted his own acts, and not only pronounced what the law was, but what it should be."

Although the people on the western end of the island became aware that the government under the Duke of York was framed on no better model than that under the Dutch governor, and those in the English towns that they were shorn of all their former privileges, Governor Nicolls exercised his powers so carefully and judiciously as to allay their discontent.

He relinquished the reins of government in 1667 and was succeeded by Francis Lovelace, who during his administration acquired the almost unanimous ill-will of the people. When, in 1670, a levy was made on the towns to raise money for repairing the fort at New York, nearly all of the English towns, by vote, refused to obey the order for the contribution or levy unless "they might have the privileges that other of his Majesty's subjects have and do enjoy." THOMPSON says: "The English colonists on Long Island brought with them the doctrine that taxes could only be imposed with the consent of the people by their representatives in a general assembly." It is not known that this tax was ever collected in those towns. This was the first open manifestation in this country of a spirit of resistance to the invasion of this right—a resistance which led, a century later, to the American Revolution.

The resolutions of refusal were laid before the governor and council, and were by them ordered to be publicly burned before the town house of the city. It is said of Governor Lovelace, that in 1668 he wrote to Sir Robert Carr in New Jersey, that to keep people submissive the best method was "to lay such taxes upon them as may not give them liberty to entertain any other thoughts but how they shall discharge them."

Had not the administration of Governor Lovelace come to an end by a sudden and unexpected event, he would probably have suffered the full consequences of the popular indignation which his disregard of the people's rights aroused. "The country, which had now been nine years governed by the Duke of York's deputies, and experienced in very full measure the ill effects of ignorance and indiscretion in the conduct of its rulers, came once more under the government of their ancient masters, the Dutch."

Between 1672 and 1674 the English and Dutch were at war, and in the latter part of July, 1673, a small Dutch squadron entered New York harbor, and Captain Manning, the commandant of the fort, surrendered it without resistance. For this act he was afterward sentenced to have his sword broken over his head.

Captain Anthony Colve was, by the commanders of the squadron, appointed governor of the colony, and he at once set about the re-establishment of the authority of the Dutch government. In the towns that had before been under the Dutch regime submission was readily made, but in the towns of the East riding his task was more difficult. Huntington and Brookhaven yielded after a time on certain conditions, but Southold, Southampton, and Easthampton, rejected all overtures, and petitioned for admission to the colony of Connecticut. They were accepted, and when Governor Colve attempted to reduce these towns to submission by force, Connecticut sent troops to their assistance, and the Dutch were repulsed. In November, 1673, the New England colonies declared war against the Dutch, and made preparations for active hostilities. The conclusion of peace, early in 1674, between the English and Dutch, of course arrested their proceedings. On the restoration of the duke's government, these towns were unwilling to become subject again to a rule under which they had been oppressed. Resistance was unavailing, however, and they were compelled to submit to a repetition of the former despotic sway of the duke's governors.

Sir Edmund Andros became governor on the restoration of the duke's authority, and his administration, which continued till 1681, was even more despotic than that of Governor Lovelace. Colonel Thomas Dongan succeeded Governor Andros. On his arrival, in 1682, he at once issued orders for summoning a general assembly. This was the result of a petition to the duke by the grand jury of the Court of Assize in 1681.

At the first session of this Colonial Assembly, in 1683, they "adopted a bill of rights, established courts of justice, repealed some of the most obnoxious of the duke's laws, altered and amended others, and passed such new laws as they judged that the circumstances of the colony required." At this session the "ridings" were abolished, and the counties of Kings, Queens, and Suffolk, organized. Another session was held in 1684, at which, among other acts, the court of assize was abolished, and another Assembly was summoned to convene in the following year.

"Charles II. died February 6th, 1685, and the Duke of York succeeded him by the title of James II.; as he determined to have as little to do with parliaments as possible, so it is probable that he revoked the power which he had given to his governors to call assemblies, and determined that they should rule the colony by his instructions alone, without admitting the people to any participation in the public councils." Under the government of James no other session of the Legislature was ever held.

On the occurrence of the revolution in England which placed William and Mary on the throne, a party of sympathizers with that revolution, led by Jacob Leisler, seized the government of the colony, and during two

years matters here were in an unsettled condition. Long Island gave only a partial support to Leisler; and when, in 1690, he summoned a general assembly, no members from Suffolk attended and one from Queens refused to serve. It appears that Leisler attempted to use force against some portions of Long Island, which he declared to be in a state of rebellion, but that his efforts proved entirely unsuccessful.

The fate of Leisler is briefly recounted in the outline history of the State on preceding pages, together with the succession of Colonial governors who followed him. After the revolution of 1689-90, the Colonial government settled down on a basis, which continued, with but few changes, till the American Revolution. It is thus stated by Wood :

"The executive power was vested in the Governor, and the legislative power in the Governor, Council and Assembly, subject to the revision of the King, to whom all laws were to be sent within three months after their passage.

"The Council at first consisted of seven members (which number was afterwards increased to twelve), who were appointed by the King.

"The Assembly was composed of delegates from each county, chosen by the freeholders. Their number was regulated by law. The term of service was indefinite till 1743, when it was limited to seven years.

"The Governor could suspend members of the Council and appoint others, subject to the King's approbation. He had a negative on the acts passed by the Assembly and Council. He had power to summon, prorogue, or dissolve the Assembly, to appoint all public officers, and, with the consent of the Council, to establish courts of justice, to dispose of the public lands, and to disburse the public moneys raised for the support of the government."

It will be seen, at a glance, that this system of government offered an open door for great abuse of power. The land sales, fees for new patents, and quit-rents, afforded revenues on which many of the governors grew rich; and the absolute negative possessed by the Governor and the Crown rendered the Assembly almost powerless for the adoption of any measure not pleasing to them. The abuses of power, and the oppressions of the people which led to the American Revolution, are portions of the history of the whole country that it is not necessary to repeat here.

CHAPTER IV.

PRIMITIVE CUSTOMS, INSTITUTIONS AND INDUSTRIES—
CAPTAIN KIDD.

THE customs of the early Dutch settlers on the west end of Long Island differed, in many respects, from those of the people who settled its eastern portions. Those of the former will be more particularly spoken of in our general history of Kings County, which was distinctively Dutch in all its characteristics. The customs of the latter (Queens and Suffolk

Counties), modified by the changes which two centuries have brought, and by the increasing cosmopolitanism of the American people, are yet, to a great degree, in vogue among their descendants, and still sufficiently indicate their Yankee origin. We touch then, in this brief chapter, only upon those features of social life, etc., which were in some measure common to the whole island; premising that the peculiar circumstances by which these settlers were environed led to the adoption of some customs which have quite passed away, as these surroundings have given place to others.

Since very early times the species of gambling that is designated as *turf sports* has been very prevalent on Long Island, and files of old newspapers abound with notices of races that were to take place, or accounts of those that had occurred. *Lotteries*, also, were not only tolerated, but were often instituted to raise money for erecting churches, or founding religious or benevolent associations. The latter form of gambling is now prohibited by law, but whether or not the moral sense of the people will ever frown down the former is an unsolved question.

During many years *whaling* was an important industry on the southeastern coast of the island, and, at intervals along the shore, whaleboats were kept for launching whenever whales were sighted. FURMAN, in describing a tour around Long Island in old times, says that there might be seen "occasionally, at long intervals, small thatched huts, or wigwams, on the highest elevations, with a staff projecting from the top. These huts were occupied, at certain seasons, by men on the watch for whales, and, when they saw them blowing, a signal was hoisted on this staff. Immediately the people would be seen coming from all directions with their whaling boats upon wagon-wheels, drawn by horses or oxen; launch them from the beach, and be off in pursuit of the great fish. You would see all through this region these whaling boats turned upside down, lying upon a frame under the shade of some trees by the roadside, this being the only way in which they could keep them, having no harbors; four or five families would club together in owning one of these boats and in manning them." So much a standard industry was this that shares in the results of the fisheries were sometimes made portions of the salaries or perquisites of clergymen. In July, 1699, it was said "Twelve or thirteen whales have been taken on the east end of the island." In 1711, it was reported that four whales were taken at Montauk, eight at Southampton, two at Moriches, two and a calf at Brookhaven, two at Islip, and one drift whale that yielded twenty barrels of oil. In 1721, it was said that forty whales had been taken on Long Island; but, in 1722, only four were reported. In 1741, they were reported as being more abundant. The whales that formerly frequented this coast have long since been exterminated or driven away, though occasionally stragglers have been seen in comparatively recent times.

The *New York Times*, of Feb. 27, 1858, published the following from a correspondent in Southampton: "At noon to-day the horn sounded through the streets, which is the signal to look out for a whale. In a few minutes tough old whalemens enough had mustered on the beach to man several boats and push out into the surf in chase of three whales which were leisurely spouting in the offing. After an exciting but brief chase the lance touched the life of one of the three, who spouted claret and turned up dead. He was towed to the shore and will make—the judges say—forty barrels of oil."

The taking of shell-fish in the bays and on the coast has been an important and increasing industry; and the capture of fish for the expression of oil and the manufacture of fertilizers has come to be a business of some importance.

It was the custom of the Indians on this island, before its settlement by the whites, to annually burn the herbage on large portions of it, which were thus kept free from trees and underbrush. This enabled the early settlers to enter at once on the cultivation of the land, and to convert large tracts into common pastures. The arrest of the annual fires permitted underbrush to spring up in such profusion that the male inhabitants of the towns, between the ages of sixteen and sixty, were called out by the Court of Assize during four days of each year to cut away this growth. On the wooded portions of the island the timber was cut and converted into staves so rapidly by the early settlers that, within the first twenty years, the towns instituted rules regulating or prohibiting the cutting of trees.

At first the scarcity of circulating medium compelled people to make exchanges in various kinds of produce, and this method necessitated the fixing of the value of produce, either by custom or law. The Indian sewant, or wampum, was very much used in place of money, and both it and produce were used not only in business transactions but in the payment of taxes, fines, etc. By reason of the facility with which the material could be procured, the manufacture of wampum was sometimes engaged in by the whites, within the memory of some now living. John Jacob Astor employed men to manufacture it here, that he might send it to the northwest and exchange it with the Indians there for furs. The following schedule of the value of produce in the middle and latter part of the seventeenth century, when this custom prevailed, is taken from Wood: "Pork per lb., 3 pence; beef, 2; tallow, 6; butter, 6; dry hides, 4; green hides, 2; lard, 6; winter wheat, 4s. to 5s. per bush.; summer wheat, 3s. 6d. per bush.; rye, 2s. 6d. to 3s. 6d. per bush.; Indian corn, 2s. 3d. to 2s. 6d. per bush.; oats, 2s. per bush." Stock in 1665 was legally valued as follows: "Colts, one to two years, £3 each; two to three, £4 each; three to four, £8; horses four years or more of age, £12; bullocks, bulls or cows four years or upward, £6 each; steers and heifers, one to two years, each £1 10s.; two to three, £2 10s.; three to four,

£4; goats, one year, 8s.; sheep, one year, 6s. 8d.; hogs, one year, £1. These were the prices fixed for the guidance of the town authorities in receiving produce, etc., in payment of taxes. Produce in place of a circulating medium continued in use till about 1700, when money had become sufficiently abundant for the requirements of trade. Board was 5s. per week; meals, 6d. each; lodgings, 2d. per night; beer, 2d. per mug; pasture per day and night, 1s.; labor per day, 2s. 6d.

Previous to 1793 no *post office* was established on the island and no mail was carried on it. A Scotchman named Dunbar rode a voluntary post as early as about 1775. This was in violation of the law, but the necessity of the case caused the offense to be winked at. The people on the west end of the island were supposed to receive their letters from the post-office in New York, and those on the east end from New London. Even as late as 1835, FURMAN says, the mail stage left Brooklyn for Easthampton no oftener than once a week, and mail packages were often left and taken at designated places, such as a particular rock or a box nailed to a tree. Hotels were few then, and the hospitalities of the people living along the route through the island were always readily extended to the few travelers who passed over it.

During the last decade of the seventeenth century, the seas of the Indies were infested with pirates, who preyed upon the commerce of all nations. In 1695, the celebrated Captain William Kidd, an Englishman, was commissioned by the King of England, and furnished by an association in that country with a ship and crew, to go in quest of the pirates. He sailed in 1696, and came to the coast of America, where for a time he did good service. At New York he took an addition to his crew, sailed to the East Indies and turned pirate. After ravaging the eastern seas he returned to the coast of South America, and pursued his piratical course to the West Indies; and thence, after a career of robbery and piracy, came to the shores of Long Island. In 1699 he landed at Gardiner's Island (Easthampton), and in the presence of the owner, John Gardiner, under injunctions of secrecy, buried a large amount of treasure, which was afterward recovered by the commissioners of the Earl of Bellemont, one of the association, who sent Kidd forth. The freebooter was apprehended, sent to England, tried, convicted of murder, and hung in chains at Execution Dock.

His career has been the subject of much romance and more superstition. It was believed that he buried much treasure besides that which was recovered; and the shores of Long Island have, again and again, been thoroughly searched and excavated by curious people, often with absurdly ridiculous ceremonies, but no treasure was ever known to reward their labors.

CHAPTER V.

BEGINNING OF THE REVOLUTION—POLITICAL ATTITUDE OF THE THREE LONG ISLAND COUNTIES.

IT was on Long Island that the first protest against taxation without representation was made. In 1691 the first permanent Assembly of representatives of the people was established, and this was the first step in the direction of a free government in the colony of New York. The Colonial governors had possessed very large—almost absolute—power, and that power had sometimes been arbitrarily exercised. The people's money had been used at the discretion of the governors, and, it was believed, had often been misapplied and embezzled. On application, in 1706, to Queen Anne, the Assembly was authorized to appoint a treasurer to receive and disburse all money which was raised under its authority, and it accordingly "assumed general control of all the finances by making specific appropriations." In 1711 the Assembly denied the right of the Council (which was claimed) to alter revenue bills, asserting that the power of the Council flowed from the pleasure of the prince, personified by the commission of the governor; but that the power of the Assembly, in relation to taxes, flowed from the choice of the people, who could not be divested of their money without their consent.

From this time forward there was almost constant struggle between the crown, through its representatives the governors, on one side, and the people, through their representatives the Assembly, upon the other. The governors sought to vex and coerce the Assembly into compliance with their demands, or to punish what they considered contumacy and contempt by frequent prorogations and dissolutions. Under the absurd pretext that the colony had been planted and sustained in its infancy by the mother country, the right of almost absolute control over it afterward was claimed. The conflict continued, with the result of constantly calling the attention of the people to the subject, and leading them to investigate the principles which lie at the foundation of just government, and the sources whence the powers of so-called rulers are derived. Thus they came to know and appreciate the value of their rights, and thus was nurtured and developed the spirit of resistance to the exercise of a power which they had come to believe had no just foundation. This conflict, between the spirit of liberty and the encroachments of arbitrary power, culminated in the resistance, on the part of the colonies, to the oppressive acts of the Crown and Parliament of Great Britain that inaugurated the Revolution.

It must be remembered that, during all this conflict the inhabitants of Long Island constituted a large proportion of the colony; and, even in 1787, more than one-fifth of the tax of the State was assessed to the counties

of Kings, Queens and Suffolk. The people of Long Island were as strongly opposed to the encroachments of the Crown as were those of other portions of the Colony ; but, by the force of circumstances, many were, or pretended to be, loyalists during the revolutionary struggle. Some, through fear of personal hardship, or loss of property, were induced either to remain inactive or to join the British cause. Others, and in no inconsiderable number, found, in their assumed loyalty, the opportunity of despoiling their neighbors and of benefiting themselves. The part taken by each of the three counties was singularly characteristic of the national traits and affiliations of those by whom they were respectively settled. The Suffolk County people, descendants of the original Puritans, in whom resistance to oppression was an instinct, promptly presented a rebellious front to the invader. Says FIELD: "Out of its whole population of freeholders and adult male inhabitants, numbering 2,834 between the ages of sixteen and sixty, only 236 were reckoned as being of loyalist proclivities. The enrolled militia of the county exceeded 2,000, of whom 303 officers and privates were in the ranks of Colonel Smith's regiment, the best disciplined and armed on the island. It was the only one which could be considered in any form to have survived the shock of the 27th of August, and only a small part even of this body ever did service after that fatal day." In Queens County, with its mixed Dutch and English population, the loyal sentiment was always largely in the ascendant ; though there is but little doubt that the rebel feeling would have become dominant had circumstances favored. "The whole force of the Whigs which could be mustered under arms was insufficient to overawe their loyalist neighbors. Seventeen hundred and seventy able-bodied men among her citizens were enrolled on the roster of her militia, while only 379 were by the most stringent measures induced to appear in arms." Meetings were held in the different towns and districts, at which resolutions were adopted expressive of sympathy with the popular cause ; and committees of correspondence, as they were termed, were appointed to represent them in county conventions and to devise such measures as the welfare of the country seemed to demand. After the Declaration of Independence by the Continental Congress and the approval of this action by the Provincial Congress, the enthusiasm of the Whigs in this part of the island rose to a high pitch. Public demonstrations were made ; and, in one instance at least, the effigy of George III. was publicly hanged and burned.

But the Dutch population of Kings County were very averse to engaging in the rebellion, which, from the first, promised to entail upon them serious consequences and probable ultimate failure. At a meeting of committees from the several towns of the county, held at Flatbush, in April, 1775, for the purpose of appointing delegates to a General Provincial Convention, the town of Flatlands desired to "remain neutral ;"

and the subsequent attendance of the delegates of some of these Kings County towns was so irregular, and their zeal so lukewarm, that the Convention felt obliged to request their more regular attendance.

CHAPTER VI.

THE BRITISH OCCUPATION OF LONG ISLAND—RAIDS FROM THE MAINLAND—SMUGGLING—SERVICES AND DEATH OF GENERAL WOODHULL.

ON June 11th, 1776, the British army, which had a short time previously evacuated Boston, where it had been closely besieged by the Americans, sailed from Halifax for New York harbor. The strategic importance of this point had long been apparent to the British commander, and it had been foreseen by Washington that this would be the next point attacked. The plan of the British campaign was to possess New York and Long Island with an army of about 35,000 men ; then to ascend the Hudson river and effect a junction with an army of some 13,000 that was to pass the lakes, penetrate to the Hudson and descend that river. The eastern provinces were thus to be divided from the middle and southern, and active operations were at the same time to be carried on at the south, and thus the rebellion was to be crushed in a single campaign. The failure of the southern campaign before the arrival of Howe at New York and the interruption of the Canadian army at the lakes, frustrated the British commander's plan for the speedy subjugation of the rebellious colonies.

(A brief account of the Battle of Brooklyn, Aug. 27, 1776, may be found in the *General History of Kings County*.)

The defeat of the American forces in this battle removed the restraint which had kept in check the strong feeling of loyalty in Kings and Queens counties, and in the following autumn about fourteen hundred inhabitants of the latter county signed a declaration of loyalty and petition for protection. And when the people of Kings County found the island—and especially that portion of it which they occupied—abandoned by the American forces, it was not strange that they eagerly accepted the opportunity of withdrawing from a struggle in which they had no heart, and of seeking the mercy and protection of the now dominant power of England.

STILES says: "On the 7th November, 1776, a large number of the freeholders and people of the county—availing themselves of Lord Howe's recent proclamation of security of person and property to those who should remain peaceably upon their farms—submitted a very humble and loyal address to his Lordship, wherein they state that, 'reflecting with the tenderest emotions of gratitude on this instance of His Majesty's paternal goodness, and encouraged by the affectionate manner in which His Majesty's gracious purpose hath been conveyed to us by your Excellencies, who have thereby

evinced that humanity is inseparable from that true magnanimity and those enlarged sentiments which form the most shining characters,' they beg leave to represent that they have all signed the oath of allegiance.

"The submission of the rank and file was soon followed by that of a majority of the leaders; and the militia of the county, in January, 1777, further testified their 'loyalty to their sovereign and zeal to the constitution' by voluntarily contributing the sum of £310 8s. toward the expense of a new battalion, at that time recruited by Colonel Fanning.

"After the evacuation of Brooklyn, the British, Hessians, Tories and refugees had unlimited range over Long Island, and were quickly joined by 'neutrals' and 'fence gentry.' Most of the Whigs were absent with the army; their wives, children and aged people alone remained at home, and their dwellings became the prey of these wretches who robbed friend and foe alike. The negroes, also, became their willing aiders and abettors, and frequently guided them in their predatory expeditions. The loyalists were all ordered to attend at British headquarters, at Bedford, to be registered; after which they were directed to wear a red badge in their hats, as a protection and token of loyalty. They obeyed with ludicrous alacrity, and straightway the loyal badge flamed from every hat and cap in the county. Many ladies wore scarlet ribbons, while all the negroes, of course, were royalists and bedecked their hats with scarlet rags: and females even dispensed with their flannel petticoats to supply the unprecedented demand for cloth of the requisite hue.

"The protection afforded to the people by the royal authorities was paternal only in its severity. Long Island and the vicinity of New York City were kept under the most rigorous military rule. Elections, except annual town meetings, were not allowed; the civil courts were suspended; and their functions arbitrarily dispensed either by a king's justice or a military officer. A sort of police court was opened in New York at the Mayor's office; and, in 1780, a similar one at Jamaica, for the greater convenience of the Long Island people. The ferry at both the New York and Long Island side was placed under military guards; every market boat had to have a yearly license from military headquarters; and no farmer or other person could transport any provisions or goods to or from the city without a written pass either from the Mayor's office or from the colonel in command at Flatbush. The prices of wood and of all commodities and farm produce was regulated by proclamation; and the farmers, their wages and servants, were liable, at any time, to be impressed into the King's service, at a stipulated price. Woodland and brushwood, and even fences, were remorselessly cut down by the British to be used for fuel and the building of fortifications; and, when the wood was at length exhausted, and the inhabitants began to be straitened for want of it, the Hessians dug up the meadows for peat, despite the expostulations of the astonished and indignant Dutch farmers, who before long, however, had to admit that their unwelcome guests had, in this respect, rendered them a great service. The whole district occupied by the troops in Kings County was a common, and most of the land remained unfenced until the British left the country. In the winter season every village was filled with British soldiers, wagons, etc., billeted most summarily in private houses or cantoned in temporary huts."

ONDERDONK says concerning this: "*Billeting of Soldiers.*—During the summer British troops were off the island on active service: or, if a few remained here, they abode under tents; but in winter they were huddled on the sunny side of a hill, or else distributed in farmers' houses. A British officer, accompanied by a justice of the peace,

or some prominent loyalist, as a guide, rode around the country, and from actual inspection decided how many soldiers each house could receive, and this number was chalked on the door. The only notification was: 'Madam, we have come to take a billet on your house.' If a house had but one fireplace it was passed by, as the soldiers were not intended to form part of a family. A double house for the officers, or single house with a kitchen for privates was just the thing. The soldiers were quartered in the kitchen, and the inner door nailed up so that the soldiers could not intrude on the household. They, however, often became intimate with the family and sometimes intermarried. The Hessians were more sociable than the English soldiers, and often made little baskets and other toys for the children, taught them German and amused them in various ways; sometimes corrupting them by their vile language and manners. Any misconduct of the soldiers might be reported to their commanding officers, who usually did justice; but some offences could not be proven, such as night-stealing or damage done the house or to other property. As the soldiers received their pay in coin they were flush, and paid liberally for what they bought, such as vegetables, milk, or what they could not draw with their rations. These soldiers were a safeguard against robbers and whaleboat men. Some had their wives with them, who acted as washerwomen, and sometimes in meaner capacities.

"From a perusal of the orderly book of General Delancey, it appears that he used every means to protect the persons and property of the inhabitants of Long Island from the outrages of British soldiers. They were not allowed to go more than half a mile from camp at daytime (and for this purpose roll was called several times during the day), nor leave it under any pretext after sundown without a pass; but now and then they would slip out and rob. On the 11th of June, 1788, Mr. John Willett, of Flushing, was assaulted at his own house, at 11 o'clock at night, by persons unknown but supposed to be soldiers from having bayonets and red clothes, who threatened his life and to burn his house. The general offered a reward of \$10 to the person who should first make the discovery to Major Waller; and a like reward for the discovery of the person who robbed Mr. Willett on the 9th of June of two sheep, a calf and some poultry, as he was determined to inflict exemplary punishment and put a stop to practices so dishonorable to the King's service. Again, March 9th, 1778, Mrs. Hazard, of Newtown, having complained that the soldiers of the guard pulled down and burnt up her fence, that was near the guardhouse, the general at once issued an order to the officer that he should hold him answerable thereafter for any damage done the fences. So, too, if a soldier milked the farmers' cows, he should be punished without mercy; nor should he go in the hayfield and gather up new mown grass to make his bed of. Generally the farmers were honestly paid for whatever they sold. For instance, April 23d, 1778, they were notified to call on Mr. Ochiltree, deputy commissary of forage at Flushing, with proper certificates and get payment for their hay."

In January, 1777, the American prisoners in New York were paroled and billeted on the people in Kings County. One of these, Colonel GRAYDON, writes:

"The indulgence of arranging ourselves according to our respective circles of acquaintances was granted us, and Lieutenant Forrest and myself were billeted on Mr. Jacob Suydam, whose house was pretty large, consisting of buildings which appeared to have been erected at different times. The front and better part was occupied by Mr. Theophilus Bache and family from New York. Though we were generally

civilly enough received, it cannot be supposed we were very welcome to our Low Dutch hosts, whose habits were very parsimonious, and whose winter provision was barely sufficient for themselves. They were, however, a people who seemed thoroughly disposed to submit to any power that might be imposed on them; and whatever might have been their propensities at an earlier stage of the contest, they were now the dutiful and loyal subjects of King George III. Their houses and beds we found clean, but their living extremely poor. A sorry wash made up of a sprinkling of *bohca* and the darkest sugar, on the verge of fluidity, with half-baked bread (fuel being very scarce) and a little stale butter, constituted our breakfast. At our first coming, a small piece of pickled beef was occasionally boiled for dinner, but to the beef, which was soon consumed, there succeeded *clippers* or clams; and our unvaried supper was *suppaan* or mush, sometimes with skimmed milk, but more generally with buttermilk blended with molasses, which was kept for weeks in a churn, as swill is saved for hogs. I found it, however, after a little use, very eatable, and supper soon became my best meal. Their religious, like their other habits, were unostentatious and plain; and a simple, silent grace before meat prevailed at the table of Jacob Suydam. When we were all seated he suddenly clapped his hands together, threw his head on one side, closed his eyes, and remained mute and motionless for about a minute. His niece and nephew followed his example, but with such an eager solicitude that the copied attitude should be prompt and simultaneous, as to give an air of absurdity to what might otherwise have been very decent."

Officers and soldiers "lorded it" over the people; and, as a natural consequence, insubordination arose among the slaves, who ran away or became less respectful to their masters whom they saw so humbled before the British officers. When we add to this the carousing, gambling, profanity and other camp vices which were introduced into the hitherto quiet villages by the presence of large bodies of troops, we can see that the people of Long Island were not to be envied. It is true that farmers flourished on British gold, obtained for such of their produce as had been spared them by marauders; but, with few opportunities for its investment, they were obliged to keep it by them and were often robbed. The churches, also, except those of the established faith, were freely occupied as prisons, hospitals, storehouses, and barracks for troops; some were even wantonly destroyed.

During the remainder of the Revolution, in order to insure the doubtful loyalty of a portion of the inhabitants, British troops, whose ranks were increased by enlistments from among the tories, were stationed at different points on the island, and against the lawlessness of these there was no protection. Robbery was still carried on by marauding gangs under the guise of Whig or tory partisanship; and frequent raids were made by parties of Continental troops from the Connecticut shore of the Sound, although nothing occurred which can justly be dignified by the name of a battle. A few of these affairs may be mentioned here. In November, 1776, three or four hundred troops crossed from New Haven to Setauket, where a sharp skirmish was had with a detachment of General Howe's troops. Eight or ten of the British troops were killed, and 23 prisoners and 75 muskets taken.

In April, 1777, an expedition was planned by General Parsons, the object of which was to destroy a quantity

of forage and provisions that had been collected at Sag Harbor. For that purpose a party of two hundred men, under Colonel Meigs, crossed the Sound from New Haven on the 23d of May, in whaleboats. They secreted their boats about three miles from Sag Harbor, marched to the village, arriving at 2 a. m.; impressed guides, by whom they were conducted to the quarters of the commanding officer, whom they captured; forced the outpost by a bayonet charge and proceeded to the wharf, where in three-fourths of an hour, although under the fire of an armed schooner, one hundred and fifty yards away, they burned twelve brigs and sloops, one hundred and twenty tons of hay, and a quantity of grain, and destroyed ten hogsheads of rum and a quantity of merchandise. They also killed six of the enemy, took ninety prisoners, and returned after an absence of a little more than twenty-four hours without the loss of a man. For this service Congress presented a sword to Colonel Meigs, and General Washington in a letter complimented General Parsons.

In August, 1777, General Parsons organized an expedition of about one hundred and fifty men to break up a British outpost at Setauket, where a Presbyterian church had been fortified by surrounding it with an embankment six feet in height, and placing swivels in four of the gallery windows. After an engagement of two or three hours, with the loss of only four men, General Parsons withdrew, fearing his retreat might be cut off by the capture of his sloop and boats. It is a notable fact that one of the volunteers in this expedition, Zachariah Green, was twenty years after installed as minister of this same church.

In the autumn of 1780, Major Benjamin Tallmadge planned and successfully executed one of the most audacious exploits accomplished on the island during the war. At Smith's Point, Mastic, on the south side of the island, an enclosure of several acres had been made, triangular in form, with strongly barricaded houses at two of the angles, and a fort, ninety feet square, protected by an abattis, at the other. The fort was completed and garrisoned by about fifty men, and in it two guns were mounted. On the 21st of November Major Tallmadge embarked at Fairfield, Conn., with eighty dismounted dragoons, and landed at 9 in the evening at Mount Sinai, where the boats were secured. They attempted to cross the island, but a rain storm drove them back to their boats and kept them till 7 the next evening, when they again set out. At 3 the next morning they arrived within two miles of the fort (which was called Fort George), and arranged to attack it simultaneously at three points, which was done. A breach was made, the enclosure entered, and the main fort carried at the point of the bayonet, without the firing of a gun, the two other attacking parties mounting the ramparts at the same time with shouts. They were fired on from one of the houses, but they forcibly entered it and threw some of their assailants

from the chamber windows. With none killed and only a few slightly wounded, they destroyed the fort, burned a vessel and took fifty-four prisoners and a quantity of merchandise, with which they returned. A party of ten or twelve, with Major Tallmadge, visited Coram and burned some four hundred tons of hay. For this exploit Major Tallmadge was commended in a letter by General Washington.

A year later Major Tallmadge sent a party of 150 under Major Trescott to destroy Fort Slongo, in the northwestern part of Smithtown. The force crossed from Saugatuck River in the night, attacked and destroyed the fort, which was garrisoned by 140 men, burned the blockhouse, destroyed two iron guns, killed four and wounded two of the enemy, took twenty-one prisoners, one brass field piece and seventy muskets, and returned with none killed and but one seriously wounded.

In 1778 a fort was erected on Lloyd's Neck by the British for the protection of wood cutters and defense against raiders from the mainland. An unsuccessful attack was made on this fort on the 12th of July, 1781, by a force of French under Count de Barras, assisted by American volunteers. In this affair a few of the assailants were wounded and one or two killed.

During the British occupation of Long Island, illicit trade was carried on between the people and in Connecticut, by means of many ingeniously devised plans.

Previous to the separation of the colonies non-importation associations had existed, and the patriotic colonists had accustomed themselves to drinking sage and sassafras tea and wearing homespun. After the separation no motive of patriotism stood in the way of indulgence in the use of British goods, and with the facilities which the long stretch of the north coast, with its numerous estuaries, inlets and harbors, and the narrow Sound beyond, afforded for smuggling, it is not surprising that Yankee shrewdness should elude the sleepy vigilance of government officials, and the people of Connecticut come to be well supplied with goods that had been brought from New York ostensibly to supply the wants of loyal Long Islanders. All the ordinary devices of smuggling were resorted to, and even collusions were entered into with the so-called piratical whaleboat men, and stores were robbed and the goods taken across the Sound, the owners, of course, sharing the profits of the adventure. In many cases government officials winked at this trade, because it supplied necessities that were difficult to procure otherwise. In some instances it was believed they were secretly interested in the transactions. By reason of the long Sound-coast of Suffolk county, and the secret rebel sympathies of many of its inhabitants, a large share of this trade was done through that county.

The self-sacrificing patriotism, the meritorious services, the pure, unselfish life and the tragic death of General NATHANIEL WOODHULL, together with the fact that

events identified him with *all* the counties on Long Island, render a brief sketch of him appropriate here. He was born in 1729 at Mastic, in Brookhaven, received a sound education and early displayed those mental traits that qualified him for public usefulness. In 1753 he entered the army, and in the French and Indian war of 1754-60, held the position of Major. He was at Ticonderoga under General Abercrombie, and was with General Bradstreet in the expedition against Fort Frontenac and the reduction of that fortress. He did important service in the expedition from Schenectady to the Oneida's carrying-place in the same summer; and in 1760, having been promoted to the rank of colonel, he went in command of the 3d regiment of New York troops in the expedition against Canada. On the termination of hostilities he was discharged with the troops of the province, and returned to private life. In 1769 he was made a member of the Colonial Assembly from Suffolk county, and he continued a member of that body till the dissolution of the Colonial government in 1775. He was chosen a delegate to the Provincial Congress in May, 1775; and in August of the same year was made president of the Congress, and acted in that capacity till August 10th, 1776. He was, also, in August, 1775, appointed brigadier-general of the militia of Suffolk and Queens counties. On the 10th of August, 1776, he obtained leave of absence from the Provincial Congress. On the 24th, two days previous to the battle of Long Island, he was ordered by the Convention to take command of a force of militia and "use all possible diligence to prevent the stock and other provisions from falling into the hands of the enemy." He discharged this duty to the best of his ability with his meager force, driving beyond the reach of the enemy all the cattle that could be collected, at the same time making known to the Convention his inability to maintain himself with the force at his command. The unfortunate issue of the battle of Long Island, and the impracticability of sending the desired reinforcements, will be remembered. In the hope of sending these, however, and in accordance with his sense of honor and duty, he did not make a final retreat; but, on the 28th, ordered his troops to a point four miles east of Jamaica, where, in the afternoon, he attempted to join them. A thunder storm arrested him some two miles from this town, at the tavern of Increase Carpenter, and he was overtaken by a party of dragoons and infantry, guided by some Tories. Wood says: "The general immediately gave up his sword in token of surrender. The ruffian who first approached him (said to be a Lieutenant Huzzy), as is reported, ordered him to say 'God save the King.' The general replied 'God save us all'; on which he most cowardly and cruelly assailed the defenseless general with his broadsword, and would have killed him on the spot if he had not been prevented by the interference of an officer of more honor and humanity (said to be Major De Lancey of the dragoons), who arrested

his savage violence." He was removed to Jamacia, his wounds were dressed, and with other prisoners he was confined till the next day in a stone church. He was then sent to Gravesend, and confined with eighty others, in a vessel that had been used for the transportation of live stock, with no provision for comfort or health. Thence he was removed to a house in New Utrecht. Here it was found his injuries necessitated amputation of his arm. Previous to the operation he sent for his wife, and made arrangements for the alleviation of the suffering of the American prisoners at his own expense. Mortification soon succeeded the operation, and on the 20th of September he died. Wood says of him: "With personal courage he possessed judgment, decision and firmness of character, tempered with conciliating manners, which commanded the respect and obedience of his troops, and at the same time secured their confidence and esteem."

CHAPTER VII.

THE WAR OF 1812—NAVAL OPERATIONS ABOUT LONG ISLAND.

ON the 18th of June, 1812, a formal declaration of war against Great Britain was made by the United States.

In the latter part of 1812 and early in 1813 British cruisers were stationed on the American coast. From the files of a paper called *War*, which was published in New York at the time, it appears that, on the 19th of January, 1813, a British 74, two frigates and a gun brig were stationed off the entrance to New York harbor, and on the 26th it was stated that this fleet had been augmented, and several prizes taken. Commodore Lewis, in command of the flotilla in New York harbor, attempted to go down, but was prevented by the ice. It was not till the 20th of March, 1813, that the entire coast of the United States, with the exception of Rhode Island, Massachusetts, and New Hampshire, was declared in a state of blockade.

In April of that year, it was stated that a British 74 and several privateers were cruising in Long Island Sound, that they had captured a number of coasting vessels, and that "the naval force now in this harbor is sufficient either to capture or drive them off, but for some unaccountable reason the 'United States' and 'Macedonian' have been suffered to lie upward of three months at the navy yard entirely dismantled; our enemy when occasion requires can fit out a ship of war in three weeks, or even less time."

In June, 1813, the daring privateer, "Governor Tompkins," of New York, came through the Sound. Off Fisher's Island she was chased by the enemy's squadron cruising there, but escaped.

PRIME relates, that "in June, 1813, while a British

squadron under Commodore Hardy lay in Gardiner's Bay, a launch and two barges with 100 men attempted to surprise Sag Harbor in the night. They landed on the wharf, but, an alarm being quickly given, the guns of a small fort were opened upon them with such effect that they had only time to set fire to a single sloop, and retreated with so much precipitation as to leave a large quantity of guns, swords and other arms behind them. The flames were speedily extinguished, and no other injury sustained."

In September of the same year a flotilla of thirty gun-boats, under Commodore Lewis, passed through Hell Gate to Sands Point, in quest of some armed vessels of the enemy that were cruising in the Sound. The weather was not favorable for close action, and after a few shots at long range the flotilla anchored; a frigate, which had drawn away from its consorts returned, and the enemy's ships retired eastward.

November 16th, 1813, Admiral Warren, commanding the blockading squadron, issued a proclamation in which he declared a blockade of "all that part of Long Island Sound being the sea coast lying within Montauk Point, or the eastern point of Long Island, and the point of land opposite thereto, commonly called Plack Point, situated on the sea coast of the main land; together with all the ports, harbors, creeks, and entrances of the East and North rivers of New York, as well as all the other ports, creeks, and bays along the coast of Long Island and the State of New York," etc.

In 1813, the "Amazon," Captain Conkling, of Huntington; the "Sally," Captain Akerly, of Cow Harbor; and the "Arago" and "Juno," Captain Jones, of Brookhaven, were captured in the sound by the British vessels "Acasta" and "Atalanta." During the same year a British fleet entered and remained some time in Gardiner's Bay.

In May, 1814, the sloop "Amelia," bound for Rhode Island, laden with rye, pork and flour, was made a prize by a barge from the British ship of war "Bulwark." One of the owners of this sloop was, with two or three other men, suspected of treason. They were tried and acquitted.

In August of the same year a small schooner was chased on shore at Rockaway by the boats of the blockading squadron, and set on fire. The fire was extinguished, though those engaged in extinguishing it were several times fired upon.

In 1814 the British vessels "Pomona" and "Dispatch," arriving off Setauket harbor, sent seven barges into Drown Meadow Bay, where they captured the vessels "Two Friends," "Hope," "Herald," and "Mercantile," and burned the "Oneida," which were all anchored in the bay.

Boat crews from the blockading squadron entered through Rockaway Inlet, and committed depredations on the inhabitants near the shores of Jamaica Bay; and to protect against such attacks a block-house was erected

at the inlet. In the *General History of Kings County* an account is given of the erection of defensive works in Brooklyn.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE CONSTRUCTION OF WAGON ROADS AND RAILROADS ON LONG ISLAND.

AT first, highways were established in the different towns according to the apparent necessities of the dwellers in those towns, without reference to the convenience of the people elsewhere. No thoroughfares were projected till a long time afterward, and the irregularity of the roads was such that guides were necessary, in some places, to conduct strangers from place to place. These roads were often facetiously termed "cow-paths," because of their irregularity, which is still a noticeable feature of the ordinary highways.

In view of the urgent necessity which had come to be felt for better facilities for travel, the Legislature in 1704 enacted a law, by which three commissioners in each of the counties on the island were appointed to lay out a road four rods in width, from Brooklyn ferry to Easthampton. Twenty years later, by another act of the Legislature, commissioners were appointed "for better clearing and further laying out of the roads on the island." By action of these commissioners the direct road from Brooklyn to Easthampton was established. This road ran through the center portion of the island, and during many years it was the main thoroughfare between New York and the "east end." As time went on, parallel roads were opened, both north and south, from this, and turnpikes were established between different localities.

As late as 1764 the first post-route was established through the island, and it was called "the circuit." The mail was carried (on horseback) once in two weeks eastward through the north part of the island, returning along the south shore.

About the year 1847 what has been termed the Plank Road mania began to prevail through the country, and it reached its height about 1850 or 1851. The level surface of Long Island afforded better facilities for the construction of these roads than existed in many regions, and within three or four years after the first was built they had greatly multiplied in all parts of the island, and a new era of travel was thought by some to have dawned. The impracticability of these roads, however, soon became apparent, and here as elsewhere the mania subsided almost as rapidly as it had arisen. The projection of new roads ceased, and those which had been constructed were abandoned or converted into turnpikes and then into common highways. Of the many that came into existence none remain as plank roads.

Long Island has a railroad system that fully meets the wants of its inhabitants and affords ample facilities for pleasure seekers from abroad to visit the seaside resorts along its southern shore. The sole reliance of the roads on the island for support is on local patronage; none of them are parts of thoroughfares that open into regions beyond, though the Long Island Railroad has established ferries to New London, Conn., to Block Island and to Newport, connecting thus with Boston and the Eastern States. These ferries have not proved very profitable, as they could not be maintained in the winter, and the route was liable to other serious objections.

The first railroad constructed on Long Island was that from South ferry in Brooklyn to Jamaica. This was opened for travel April 18th, 1836. In the same year the Long Island company commenced the extension eastward of this road, and in 1837 it was in operation to Hicksville. In 1841 it reached Suffolk Station, and on the 25th of July, 1844, the first train of cars passed over it to Greenport, a total length of ninety-five miles.

From Hicksville a branch was opened to Syosset in 1854, and an extension completed to Northport in 1868, and thence a road was completed to Port Jefferson in 1872. Branches were also constructed from Mineola to Hempstead and to Locust Point, and from Jamaica to Far Rockaway.

In 1869 the Sag Harbor branch was built, diverging from the main line at Manor Station, passing through the Hamptons and terminating at Sag Harbor. The road from Hunter's Point to Flushing was opened in 1854, and it was subsequently extended to Manhasset. A road was also constructed from Hunter's Point to Whitestone.

On the south side a road was opened from Jamaica to Babylon in the autumn of 1867, and extended to Patchogue in 1868. Branches of this road were also built. A. T. Stewart constructed a road to Garden City, and this was extended to Babylon. Other roads and branches sprang into existence, and a competition arose that was not conducive to the prosperity of the roads.

A consolidation of these roads under the control of the Messrs. Poppenhusen by leases and otherwise was effected. Lavish expenditures were made and much business was done, but the management was not successful, and in 1877 Thomas R. Sharp was appointed receiver of the consolidated corporation.

In the latter part of 1880 a controlling interest in the Long Island Railroad passed into the hands of a syndicate of Boston and London capitalists, at the head of which is Austin Corbin, under whose management the road has come.

Within a comparatively recent time several roads for the conveyance of passengers to and from the summer resorts on the south coast of Long Island have come into existence.

All of the roads before mentioned, as well as the Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad, the Long Beach Railroad, the Manhattan Beach Railroad, roads to Rockaway Beach and to Woodhaven, and new branches or extensions to Babylon, and to Montauk Point, where an immense hotel is now in course of construction, to connect with a line of very fast ocean steamers, intended to make the European voyage in five days, are now under the control of the Corbin Company. Some of the branch roads have been discontinued and others extended. The main track is laid with the best steel rails, and the running time of the fast trains will be about two and a quarter hours.

CHAPTER IX.

THE AGRICULTURAL CAPABILITIES AND DEVELOPMENT OF LONG ISLAND.

WHATEVER may be the general impression of the value and fertility of the lands of Long Island, they do and will command a price far in excess of soils equally fertile but which are not situated near a great market. Easy, cheap and uninterrupted water communication with a center of trade aggregating a population of nearly two millions, will always make Long Island a place of peculiar interest to tillers of the soil. The vast and increasing demand of the city of New York for vegetables and fruits of a perishable nature, as well as the peculiar adaptation of the soil for their culture, has already made Kings and a large portion of Queens county one immense garden. Previous histories of the island are nearly silent upon this, the chief business of its inhabitants.

The early settlers of Long Island, coming as they did chiefly from the New England colonies, naturally followed the same system of tillage and rotation of crops to which they had been accustomed. Probably the first settlers found sufficient cleared land for their purpose; as, according to early traditions, there was much cleared land, or land not covered with timber, besides the great plains. They very soon discovered that success depended upon the application of manures. As early as 1653 the first settlers, by the terms of the patent from the Dutch governor for the lands they occupied, were required to pay to the government one-tenth of the revenue arising from the ground manured. This tax for the town of Hempstead amounted in 1657 to one hundred schepels of wheat (the Dutch bushel of three pecks). In 1651 Hempstead produced from the proceeds of the servants' labor, corn, beef, pork, butter, tobacco and staves, which were exchanged for liquor and merchandise.

Cattle were imported for breeding as early as 1625, and a cow in New York was worth £30. The abund-

ant grass on the plains doubtless turned the attention of the early settlers to the raising of stock. But as yet there were few or no fences; so herdsmen were hired by the town to take care of the cattle from the 11th of May till the 23d of October, when the Indian harvest would be wholly taken in and housed. In 1667 the town of Hempstead hired Abraham Smith to keep the cattle from destroying the corn planted in the plain called "the field," and he was to have one and a half bushels per acre paid him for this service. So important was this office deemed that the conditions of agreement were entered at large on the town book. A half hour after sunrise, at the blowing of a horn, the owners of cattle drove them from their several pens into one common herd, when they were taken under the care of the cow-keeper and his dog, and driven on the plains. He was to keep them from going astray, or wandering in the woods, or getting on tilled land; to water them at some pond at reasonable hours; to drive them weekly to the south meadows, and then bring them home half an hour before sunset, that they might be milked. For this service (in 1658) the hire was twelve shillings sterling per week in butter, corn and oats. The calves were cared for by another keeper, who was required to water them twice a day, drive them to the salt meadows once in two weeks, and put them in an inclosure at night to protect them from the wolves. After a while cow-herds were dispensed with, and it was found necessary to fence the pasture lands. Thus, Cow Neck in 1669 was fenced from Hempstead Harbor to Great Neck, as the turnpike now runs. Rockaway had, in 1690, a fence running from the landing across to Jamaica Bay. Each proprietor had the right to put cattle in the pasture ground in proportion to the length of fence he had made. At that time cattle were sold to butchers in New York, and exported alive to the West Indies. In 1658 cattle were bought on the great plains to be shipped to the colony of Delaware. In 1678 the city of New York consumed only four hundred beeves.

Sheep were not introduced until a later date; in 1643 there were not over sixteen in the whole colony of New York. In 1670 sheep were pastured on the plains, under the care of a shepherd, who had directions not to let them go over half a mile in the woods, for fear of their being lost or destroyed by wolves. Each proprietor had an ear-mark for his own sheep, which was recorded in the town book. In 1737 the *New York Gazette* says: "Vast losses have been sustained in this colony, and those adjacent, by the death of cattle for the want of fodder, and many persons have been almost ruined thereby. We hear from Long Island that five thousand head of cattle have been lost this winter, besides sheep and lambs innumerable."

Corn, wheat, rye, oats, flax, wood for fuel, fat cattle and sheep were for nearly two hundred years; or until the beginning of the nineteenth century, the staple pro-

ducts of the island, and the chief source of income. During the Revolutionary war, a tory advised the British ministry to land forces destined for the subjugation of the colonies on Long Island; "for," said he, "it is one hundred and thirty miles long, and is very fertile, abounding in wheat and every other kind of grain, and has innumerable black cattle, sheep, hogs, etc.; so that in this fertile island the army can subsist without any succor from England. It has a fertile plain twenty-four miles long, with a fertile country about it, and is twenty miles from New York; and from an encampment on this plain the British army can, in five or six days, invade any of the colonies at pleasure. The spot I advise you to land at is Cow Bay." The suggestion was acted upon. The English army occupied Long Island, with New York city as its headquarters, for nearly seven years; and drew its supplies of fresh and salt hay, oats, straw, wheat, rye, corn, buckwheat and firewood from our island. For an encouragement to farmers to raise plentiful supplies of fresh provisions, vegetables and forage for the army, the British commandant forbade all persons from trespassing, or breaking down or destroying fences, or carrying away produce from the owners. In 1780 the requisition on Queens county was for four thousand five hundred cords of wood.

Since the advent of the present century, and within the memory of many now living, radical changes have been made in the system of agriculture, in the crops produced, fertilizers applied, machinery employed, domestic manufactures and manner of living. There are many localities in Suffolk and a few in Queens county, in which, from their peculiarity of position, primitive farming is still followed—that is, corn upon old sod, followed by oats the second year, which is succeeded in the fall by either wheat or rye, with which clover and timothy seed are sown. Then good crops of hay are cut for from three to five years; it is then pastured one or two years, and the same routine repeated.

With the growth of New York and Brooklyn arose the demand for vegetables, milk, hay, straw and such articles of a perishable and bulky nature as cannot be profitably transported long distances. Hence we see that the area necessary for their production has extended, not only eastward, over nearly two counties, but the country for miles around, every harbor which indents the shores of Long Island, as well as near every depot of its railroads, has been put under contribution to supply the demand. Consequent upon this change, the product of cereals is greatly reduced, and stock-raising is mostly abandoned as a source of profit.

Nearly all the produce raised within twenty-five miles of New York is carted in with teams by the proprietors, in the night. The largest part is sold at wholesale to dealers or middle-men, between midnight and daylight, chiefly in the vicinity of Washington market, which until recently was the center of the

retail as well as the wholesale trade. A few years ago, in consequence of the great throng of market wagons, which for years had greatly impeded business in the lower part of the city, a market was established in the vicinity of West Twelfth street and Tenth avenue. Those who do not sell at wholesale remain until daylight, when the retail trade begins. The grocers then come for their daily supply. Produce sent by water or rail is consigned to commission dealers.

Twenty-five years ago all the milk supplied by Long Island was produced within so small a distance from the city that it was taken in in wagons. Market gardening becoming more profitable, the area of milk production was gradually extended eastward along the lines of railroad; until, at the present time, it has assumed immense proportions. Swill milk is still produced largely in the suburbs of Brooklyn; but that industry is by common consent ruled out as an agricultural pursuit.

The selling of hay was the first innovation upon the old system of stock raising as a source of income. The old theory that unless the hay and corn were fed upon the land its fertility would be reduced, was soon exploded; and the wisdom of the new enterprise was demonstrated by the fact that the returns from the sale of hay were so much greater than from the sale of stock, that the farmer could afford to buy stable manure, street sweepings, lime and ashes from the city to apply to his land. The benefits of liberal expenditures for these fertilizers in market gardening are still more apparent. Guano and artificial or manufactured fertilizers have been largely used with good results; but stable manure is the great staple manure for market gardeners, for they raise double crops each year, a draft no land can endure without constant manuring.

On the margins of creeks along the south side of the island are immense shell banks left by the Indians; these clam, or quahaug, shells have been burnt and the lime used profitably. The fish called menhaden, however, has been most largely employed. THOMPSON, in his history of Long Island, published in 1839, estimated that a hundred million were annually taken for that purpose. He says: "The profusion of this species of fish and the consequent cheapness of the article will probably always insure its use in those parts of the island where they abound." But the establishment of factories for extracting oil from them has long since precluded their use; although the refuse is dried and sold under the name of fish guano.

Montauk Point is about 20 miles long and contains nine thousand acres. It has been owned in common by about forty individuals in shares. It has never been tilled or used for any purpose other than pasturage of cattle, horses and sheep; each owner being entitled to place upon it seven cattle, or forty-nine sheep, per share. About two years since the entire area was sold to Arthur Benson, Esq., of Brooklyn.

There are more than one hundred square miles, or seventy thousand acres, of salt meadows bordering the bays and harbors of Long Island. From these marshes immense quantities of hay are taken, which, with corn stalks, is largely used for wintering young stock and dry cattle. There are three kinds of grasses growing upon them, distinguished by the names of sedge, salt and black grass.

The scarcity and advance in the price of farm labor, as well as the advantages attending their use, have caused the introduction of the best farm implements and agricultural machinery. Stones are used to some extent as fencing material where they are available, but by far the largest part of the island is entirely destitute of stones large enough for the purpose. Chestnut timber is abundant on all the rolling woodlands, and furnishes the material for about all the farm fences.

The cranberry has recently been introduced in many parts of Suffolk county, with great success. The soil and the conditions are favorable, and this industry promises, in a few years, to become an important one.

The Hempstead Plains, which, through a mistaken policy, have until recently been held as public domain, are susceptible of remunerative cultivation. The soil is a dark, rich vegetable mould or loam from one to three feet in depth. The hollows which cross the tract at regular intervals appear to have been ancient water-courses. There is another and still more extensive tract extending eastward from the Plains, reaching to the head of Peconic Bay, which, like Hempstead Plains, has hitherto suffered from an entirely unwarrantable and mistaken aspersions of the character of its soil and consequent adaptation to cultivation.

As all previous histories of Long Island have* wittingly or unwittingly perpetuated this erroneous impression, we take pleasure in presenting an ample refutation of the same, in the form of an autobiographical sketch of Dr. EDGAR F. PECK, who speaks *ex cathedra* on this subject, and who represents the enlightened sentiment of the present day, as regarding these much-abused Long Island lands.

The central and northern portions of the island have a soil rich in the mineral elements and phosphates essential to plant growth. In many places, particularly at Brentwood and Central Islip, there is a fine

substratum of clay that holds the moisture and prevents leaching, the rich yellow loam being almost entirely destitute of sand. These clay deposits are frequently of a quality not excelled by any in America for building-brick; and abundant strata, fully equal to the best grades of Europe for pottery, have recently been discovered in Suffolk County. Hence wheat, potatoes, cabbage and other strong growing crops are more successfully grown than on the alluvial portions of the island.

EDGAR FENN PECK, M.D.

Edgar Fenn Peck, M.D., was born September 20th, 1806, in the town of Amenia, Dutchess County, State of New York. His father, Henry Peck, was a native of Milford, Conn., and son of Michael Peck, a descendant of Joseph Peck, who came over with Davenport's colony to New Haven in 1638, and after residing awhile at New Haven, settled in Milford about 1641. The house he built and lived in in Milford stood two hundred years, and was occupied by his descendants until it was taken down; his descendants are in Milford now, on the paternal land. The mother of Dr. Edgar Fenn was Juliana Chapman, daughter of Zervia Strong and Nehemiah Chapman, of Sharon, Conn., and a direct descendant by his English wife of Elder John Strong, of Northampton, Mass.

The parents of Dr. Edgar Fenn removed from Amenia, when he was very young, to the northern part of the State of New York, to Washington County, and were there during the war of 1812, and were in Salem in 1816, '17, and '18; and Edgar went to school in the Washington Academy, one of the most distinguished academies in the State; he was in the English department under T. N. Allen. George W. Bethune, the "Yorker Boy," as he was called in school, was in the classical department in the Washington Academy; he was also in the sabbath school with John and Mary Williams, who became the wife of Dr. Bethune. He attended the church and sabbath school of the Rev. Dr. Alexander Proudfit, God bless his name and memory. Early in 1818 the family returned to Sharon, Conn., near his grandfather Chapman's, in the eastern part of the town.

I now propose to change the form of narrative, and to speak and write in the first person. I was twelve years old when we returned, and here among kindred and friends of great merit, of religion, learning and good schools, which I attended in the winter, and worked in the summer mostly upon the farm; and here I acquired a most thorough knowledge of farming, for which I had a great desire.

I always thought a farmer's life was the most useful and most happy. The immortal Washington said that "Agriculture is the most healthful, the most useful, and the most noble employment of man." The first work of the Lord, after the great creation, was to plant a garden, to the east of Eden. I would have been a farmer, but I had no means to buy a farm, and my kind father had none to give me; but I acquired great skill for a youth upon the farm. I learned to plough and to hoe, to plant and to sow, to reap and to mow; I learned to bud and graft when fourteen years old; I learned to raise trees from tree seed, acorns, hickory nuts, and keys from the great sugar maple; I learned by observation and analogy when a boy, by seeing or finding acorns and hickory nuts under the trees, in the spring, sprouted, and seeing the young tree-plants under the sugar maple, and the apple seeds, sprouted under the apple trees; it occurred to me if those nuts and tree seeds were planted, they would grow; I tried it, and they did grow. I had never heard or read anything about planting tree seed; the only thing I had ever read was that "Tall oaks from little acorns grow." There was nothing said about planting them.

* We make but one exception, viz., that of Mr. JAMES B. COOPER's brief History of the Town of Babylon, contained in the *History of Suffolk County*, recently published by Munsell & Co., the publishers of this work, and which is as follows:

"With the exception of the sand dunes which border the Atlantic Ocean, and a narrow ridge of hills known as the Half-way Hollow Hills, the surface of the town is remarkably level." "The center portion, consisting of level plains, up to forty years ago was covered with pine forests. Since railroads have been operated through these pine-lands numerous fires have occurred, mostly kindled by sparks from locomotives, causing great destruction to the timber, and there are now only found thick tangled scrub oaks and stunted pines. Only a small portion of this kind of land is under a good state of cultivation. The soil is mostly a sandy loam. The land is easily cleared, and is adapted to the growing of grain and root crops, and probably in a few years large tracts will be cleared and cultivated."



Edgar F. Tucker M.D.

I had a very strong desire from my childhood for knowledge and learning, a thirsting after knowledge, and I spent all my time, when not at work, with my books and studies, and wondered if I would ever become a learned man, and be good and useful. It was seldom that I ever spent any time in play and pastimes; I had no time to spare. I never played a game of cards, or checkers or chess, never saw a game of billiards played in my life, was never in a theatre but twice, and then not to see the play through. I adopted total abstinence in 1824, two years before Dr. Beecher preached his immortal sermons against intemperance in Litchfield in 1826. I knew Dr. Beecher well in my youth. There were two men then in Connecticut who were my *beau ideals* as men and divines—Lyman Beecher, of Litchfield, and the Rev. Joel Hawes, of Hartford. My pious and excellent mother used to think that boys ought not to drink cider after it had fermented, and in compliance with her wish I abandoned it. I had never heard any temperance speech, or read any temperance paper; I had read but one book on temperance, the Bible; that I had learned from childhood by the teaching of my mother. She had instructed me on the great sin of drunkenness and its terrible punishments, declared by the Lord.

In 1826 I commenced the study of medicine, in the office and under the tuition of a relative, my cousin Dr. Clark Chapman, a man of learning and great skill as a physician. Dr. Chapman is now living, at the age of eighty-six, in Groton, Tompkins County, N. Y. I had a task before me, one that required great industry, prudence and self-denial, to pursue my studies and to support myself, which I did by teaching school a part of the time.

As a medical student, I took up the subject of intemperance, and the effect of alcohol on the human system, as opened by Dr. Beecher. I read everything that I could find on the subject, and gave special attention to diseases directly resulting from strong drink, particularly to delirium tremens, which was not then well understood—nor its treatment. I soon had the reputation of being very successful with hard cases of alcoholic disease in the different medical offices I was in during my studentship, as I was in more than one, and the hard cases were handed over to me, particularly delirium tremens, “the trembling delirium,” and I was very successful in treating it. My first medical lectures were attended in the College of Physicians and Surgeons. I was licensed to practice, at Fairfield, January 30th, 1830; and I immediately entered practice in my native County of Dutchess, at Hyde Park, as a partner with the late Hunting Sherrill, M.D., then President of the Dutchess County Medical Society, and one of the principal physicians and surgeons of the county. My thorough study and under practice whilst a student had qualified me for full practice. That able, eminent Professor, David Hosack, M.D., whose country seat was at Hyde Park, showed me great kindness by giving me access to his extensive medical library, and instruction on any question I asked.

In 1831 I removed to New York, and took an office at No. 96 Duane street, near Broadway, so as to be between the Hospital (then on Broadway, between Duane and what is now Worth street) and the College of Physicians and Surgeons, then in Barclay street near Broadway, that I might have access to, and the advantages of both of these great medical institutions. The situation or position, was central and most advantageous. I soon found myself in practice, and made the acquaintance of the leading medical men of the city, the President and professors of the College, from whom I received great kindness and attention.

On the approach of the Asiatic cholera I revived my reading on that terrible disease, to make myself thoroughly acquainted with all that could be known about it. I had five years before read all that could be found of its history in the foreign and American medical journals, and as it came to New York consternation and dismay fell upon the city; all business was suspended, and multitudes fled to the country.

“Come when the blessed seals,
That close the pestilence are broke,
And crowded cities wait its stroke;
Come in consumption’s ghastly form,
The earthquake shock, or ocean storm,
And thou, oh! Death, art terrible.”

A special medical council was formed by the city authorities, consisting of twelve of the most eminent physicians of the city, with Dr. Alexander H. Stevens, the President of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, at its head; and I received an appointment under this council to take charge of the medical stations in the Twelfth Ward, and the hospital formed on Eighth street; and I had the care of all the stations from the old almshouse, which stood where the Worth monument now stands, to King’s Bridge, with the exception of the Bloomingdale station, which was under the care of Dr. Williams.

I entered immediately upon the work assigned, and the terrible scenes of suffering and death I cannot here describe. Those at the Yorkville hospital on Eighty-sixth street were horrible. It was filled with the dead and dying, equal to those scenes described by old Defoe, in his history of the Great Plague in London.

One day I had six dead bodies laid out in the hospital, as the fear and dread upon the people was so great that no one could be found to take away or remove the dead. These did not all die in the hospital; some were brought in dead, others speechless and dying. The records were, “name and age unknown.” I roomed in the hospital, and was there day and night.

On the death of Dr. Arnold, of Harlem, I left the Yorkville hospital at the request of Dr. Stevens, and went to Harlem where the cholera had been extremely fatal. Whole families were swept away. The fate of the family of the Rev. Mr. Hinton, the Episcopal clergyman, was terrible. They all died in one night—father, mother and children. I believe there were two children. They died in the house on the southerly side of One Hundred and Twenty-seventh street, about one hundred and fifty feet west of Third avenue. At evening they assembled at the supper-table; when the morning came they were all dead and buried. Dr. Arnold, the physician who owned the house, lived with them, and he was smitten with the fell disease early the next morning, and fled to a neighbor’s house, where he died before 12 o’clock. He had been daily to the Yorkville hospital. He called there the afternoon before his death, and I had a full talk with him on the state of the pestilence in Harlem. He was greatly excited and anxious. The next morning, when Dr. Stevens arrived with me in Harlem, we found Dr. Arnold in a state of collapse and speechless. He died in less than half an hour. I held his hand when he breathed his last.

To show with what suddenness and fatality the fell disease took its victims, on Dr. Stevens’ return to the city he sent a young physician, Dr. Heston, who was from Pennsylvania, to take my place at the hospital. I remained in Harlem. About 1 o’clock in the morning, after I left the hospital, a messenger came to me in great haste to go immediately to Yorkville—that Dr. Heston was sick; and, as soon as a horse could be harnessed I drove there, and as I arrived at the house of John G. Kip, on Third avenue, near Eighty-sixth street, where I had taken my meals, and where Dr. Heston was; his dead body was being brought down-stairs in a rough board box as a coffin. Consternation and dismay fell upon all the people on that part of the island of New York. The house of the dead where death had left not one, “no, not one,” was an object of fear and dread. No one dared to open it, and after several days I went to the house with the Rev. Dr. C. D. Westbrook, who was Health Warden of Harlem. Dr. Westbrook standing at the gate, I opened the house and went in alone and threw open the doors and windows. The house was silent—the silence of death. What a picture! Everything in disorder; table standing with dishes in confusion, unwashed, as if left before the meal was finished; beds in con-

fusion, ladies and children's hats and garments hanging on chairs or on the floor, as if the inmates had suddenly fled in fright.

I continued my medical labor on that part of the island for more than two years, and at the request of the Mayor and prominent citizens, I examined all that part of the island to Kings Bridge. There were places of low and wet ground where malarious diseases prevailed, and on these places and localities the cholera was most fatal, and all these places I examined specially with a view to their sanitary condition.

The Harlem flats had the reputation of being unhealthy, and intermittent fevers were common, and fevers of a high and fatal grade often prevailed. It was said by medical men that these Harlem fevers more nearly resembled yellow fever than fevers in any other locality around New York.

I attended the late Judge D. P. Ingraham through a very serious illness of fever, a high grade of bilious fever with typhoid symptoms. I gave him the most prompt and constant attention, for I was doubly interested in him, not only as my patient, but as my friend. The late Dr. John C. Cheesman, of New York, said he believed that my prompt and careful attention, under Providence, saved Mr. Ingraham's life; because Dr. Cheesman knew the obstinate and fatal character of those Harlem fevers. I was in practice all this time under a license, which gave the full privileges and power of the profession, and I had the most able advisers, such as Dr. Alexander H. Stevens, President of the College, and all the professors, Dr. Valentine Mott, Dr. John B. Beek, Dr. Hosack, and Dr. J. C. Cheesman. These eminent men were always ready to render me any aid or advice in practice.

In the session of 1832-3, I graduated and received the degree of Doctor of Medicine from the old Barclay street College of Physicians and Surgeons of the City of New York. I also received an honorary degree of M. D. from Rutgers College.

On the 2d December, 1834, I married Margaretta, daughter of the Rev. John F. Jackson, of Harlem, N.Y., a lady of great personal beauty and merit. With her I lived forty-one years. I was always a domestic man. My heart was in my wife and children and in my home. We had two dearly beloved and deeply lamented daughters. The youngest, Emma Louisa, died young; the eldest, Julia Anna, a child of great promise, lived until her seventeenth year. My blessed wife died in 1875, aged sixty-six. I am childless and unmarried. "Nor wife nor children more shall I behold."

In the spring of 1841, at a time of serious illness in my family, I went to Long Island. One of my daughters had died and the other was extremely low, and my wife's health greatly impaired. Medical friends advised this removal to the country as the only chance for my daughter's recovery. My attention was directed by friends to Long Island, and to the village of Smithtown Branch, Suffolk County—forty-five miles from New York City.

There I found a pleasant rural place, that had been occupied by the Rev. Ithamar Pillsbury, a Presbyterian minister, as a parsonage. Mr. Pillsbury was a New England man, and had carefully cultivated the garden and grounds of four acres around the house, and had filled the garden and orchard with choice fruit and ornamental shrubbery. He was a man of great learning and ability as a divine. Rev. Dr. Prime, in his History of Long Island, published in 1845, says of Mr. Pillsbury that, in 1834, "he, with a chosen company, formed in good old Puritan style, emigrated and settled in the town of Andover, Illinois. Mr. Pillsbury is deservedly regarded as the patriarch of this new settlement, and a worthy example of future emigrants." The Rev. Mr. Pillsbury founded a college at Andover, Ill., and was president of it during the remainder of his life. There, at Smithtown, on this Old Parsonage Place, as it was called, we found a pleasant and happy home. The society was excellent, and here I was induced to remain, as the health of my daughter improved to recovery. I knew much generally of Long Island.

I knew it was the oldest settled part of the State, that it was called the "Garden of America," and I supposed it was all settled throughout; that all the lands on it that could be cultivated had been cultivated, I had never been any further east on the Island than from Flushing across to Jamaica, and to Rockaway. I had never heard of the great "barrens" of Hempstead Plains. When I went to Smithtown to look at the place, I took the cars of the Long Island Railroad, then completed as far as Hicksville, twenty-five miles from Brooklyn (it was a pleasant day in March), and soon after passing Jamaica we opened on to Hempstead Plains, a vast and beautiful country, which I thought was the handsomest tract of land I had ever beheld. That was my first impression of it then, and it is my opinion of it now. It was covered with cattle and sheep as far as the eye could see. Hempstead Plains is a great and beautiful prairie, an upland meadow. The old historian, Denton, who wrote in 1670, more than two hundred and ten years ago, whose book is called the "Gem of History," says: "Towards the middle of the Island lieth a plain, sixteen miles long and four miles broad, containing sixty-four square miles, or more than forty thousand acres, upon which there is neither stick nor stone, and it produces very fine grass which makes exceeding good hay, which is no small benefit to the towns which own it."

The soil of Hempstead Plains is a fine, dark and perfect loam, of an average depth of three feet over the centre surface of the whole plains, and is of the most productive kind. It is in its native and natural condition exactly such a soil as a lady would seek to fill her flower-pots with.

A. T. Stewart, the merchant prince of New York, purchased of the town of Hempstead, by which it was owned as common land, on September 13th, 1869, 7,000 acres, at \$55 an acre, and paid in checks, one of \$200,000, and two of \$100,000 each, and founded and laid out Garden City on Hempstead Plains, and put under cultivation a farm of 2,500 acres, surrounding Garden City.

The work on this great farm was done by W. R. Hinsdale, a farmer, and general superintendent of the Stewart property at Garden City. Mr. Hinsdale is a highly intelligent agriculturist and practical farmer. The land of Garden City, on Hempstead Plains, is more than 100 feet high above tide water, an elevated table-land, sloping to the south; the climate is perfectly healthy and the water of the purest kind, and inexhaustible. The turf is so thick and strong on the Plains that it is necessary to use a team of three horses to turn a furrow through it. This is the tract of land so long stigmatized by Long Islanders, and by Hempstead men in particular, as being barren and utterly worthless.

Omitting details of culture and cost of fertilizers used, I will give the production of the farm of 2,500 acres for the year of 1880, from Mr. Hinsdale's report. All of these large crops were raised at a profit:

Of corn, there were 450 acres, with an unusually heavy yield of at least seventy bushels of shelled corn to the acre.

Of oats, 588 acres, thirty-five bushels per acre (this was a better yield than on the old farms in the country).

Of rye, 495 acres.

Of meadow, or grass, 485 acres; 100 acres of this was in Hungarian grass, which yielded two tons and a half per acre. The native grass of Hempstead Plains is the blue grass of Kentucky.

Of buckwheat, 250 acres, 20 bushels per acre.

Of wheat, 30 acres, 20 bushels per acre.

Besides these, large crops of every kind of vegetables ever raised.

The following table has been made of the total yield of several crops for the year 1880:

Oats.....	20,580 bushels.
Indian Corn.....	31,500 "
Buckwheat.....	5,000 "
Wheat.....	600 "

Mr. Hinsdale says the lands of Hempstead Plains are the finest and most productive of any lands between here and San Francisco; and he knows, as he has been all over the country, in Ohio, Illinois, the Hockhocking and the Sciota flats, and resided in California.

At Hicksville there was only a lonely station-house, the end of the railroad route—twenty-five miles from Brooklyn. Here I took the stage, from Hicksville to the north over the Plains to Jericho, an old and most beautiful and highly cultivated settlement; then turned eastward on the old country north-side road to Smithtown, a distance of twenty miles, passing through a fine farming region, which had been settled and cultivated for more than 200 years.

Arrived at Smithtown Branch, I found the village pleasant and desirable, but I objected to the twenty miles' stage ride, and was told that work was to be immediately resumed on the Long Island Railroad, and cars would soon run to Smithtown.

On my return I went to the office in New York of the Long Island Railroad Company, and saw the President, Mr. Fiske, and he said that work on the railroad would be immediately resumed, and the road would be completed through the Island as soon as possible; that Boston men were to aid; that disasters on Long Island Sound had recently been so great that it was desirable to get a more safe route, which he thought would be over Long Island. I then determined to go to Long Island, and I rented the Pillsbury Parsonage house, in Smithtown Branch, for \$100 a year, and which I afterwards purchased, with fifty acres of land adjoining, which made my little farm there.

I removed my family there. Soon after I arrived I met an acquaintance that I knew in New York, and he said he had a posse of about 100 men at work on the railroad opposite Smithtown, and wished I would go down and see them, as there were several among them that needed medical aid, having received accidental injuries. Up to this time, I had not heard of the great Barren Plains, extending eastward from Hempstead Plains to the head of Peconic Bay, so entirely composed of sand and gravel as to be unsusceptible of cultivation by any process known.

This is the black and false record made by "THOMPSON and PRIME, the historians of Long Island," and which has held that great part of the Island in wilderness.

The next day I started for the railroad, and I went down through Hauphagues, and the last house before entering the woods, I met a man at his wood pile; I asked if he could direct me to where the railroad men were at work? He said I must keep down the road into the woods and then turn to the right, on the road to Islip. I soon struck into the dog path, completely overhung with trees and bushes, and so narrow that my wheels would not run in the tracks (one of them had to go on the bank). After a drive of about two miles I found the railroad camp, at where Suffolk Station was afterwards made. The woods through which I had gone were very dense.

There I found my friend and his men, shanties and cabins scattered around, and the men were grading the railroad bed; they had cut through the woods about three rods wide, and opening a long and beautiful vista, as far as the eye could see. Tall and lofty trees, that stood on each side of the railroad bed, as thick as they could stand, and there I found myself in the midst of a vast, magnificent, primeval forest. I was astonished; and then I learned that this great forest and wilderness was forty miles long and eight miles wide—four miles each side of the railroad—extending from the east end of Queens County about thirty-one miles, from Brooklyn to Riverhead seventy miles; the trees were large and lofty, and so thick and dense that a horse could not go through the woods. Along the line of the railroad, the trees and the timber were mostly yellow pine—*Pinus rigida*—of large and most thrifty growth, from eighteen inches to two feet in diameter, many much larger, perfectly sound and solid; they would square up from twenty to thirty feet in length, and

the timber about equal to the best Georgia pines. A little to the north of the railroad line, there were oaks in variety, chestnuts, hickory and locust, all of large growth. These woodlands extended four miles each side the railroad. I am always impressed with wild woodlands, "when among the trees and wilds where sunshine, birds sing and flowers bloom."

There were no scrub oaks there then, in these woods; thick forests overshadowed them, and they die out or disappear, but ready to come back again as soon as they can get possession of the ground. The scrub oak, of which the Long Islanders have such a dread and hatred, is the best friend of the Island; for, when the wood and trees are all destroyed, this little fellow comes in and takes possession of the lands, and protects them from becoming a barren, by being dried up by the sun and the elements. It is a shrub; can never be a tree in any soil, no more than a lilac bush. It is indigenous, i. e., a native, to the Island, and grows all over the Island, from and in Brooklyn to Montauk Point.

Judge Lefferts', of Bedford, famous Cripplebush farm, in Brooklyn (and willed by him to his beloved daughter, Elizabeth Dorothea, the wife of Mr. Brevoort), is "Scrub Oak Farm," for Cripplebush means "scrub oak;" Cripplebush road is "Scrub Oak road."

It is set down in books of science and natural history as the nineteenth variety of the oak, as the "*Quercus Illicifolia*." It is called Bear oak, from the great abundance of acorns that it produces, upon which the bears feed.

I was very greatly surprised at the soil I found there. It was three feet deep in the railroad cuttings, of the very finest yellow loam, in every way suited to culture—not a particle of sand or gravel or a stone in it. From that time I took a great interest in the railroad, and in the uncultivated lands on its borders. I was so weak and foolish as to think a railroad would be of great benefit, and a very convenient and handy thing to have on Long Island, and I did my uttermost to promote it. There was a very strong opposition to it on the Island; the people opposed it with the utmost violence; they tore up the track and burned its bridges; and yet the road went on by force of right and might, until its completion, as it penetrated into the woods and wilderness of Suffolk County. Then came the conflict of fire and destruction; the people refused to do anything to protect those woodlands from fire, and the railroad company could not, and destruction and desolation of those woodlands were swift by fire and the axe.

The woods were set on fire, and burned with great fury every spring and fall. One of those fires, in 1848, burned for two weeks night and day; "a pillar of fire by night, a cloud of smoke by day." It burned over seventy-five square miles; it broke out in the woods, about a mile south of the railroad, a little to the east of Connetquot River, or Liff Snedicator's Brook, and it run fifteen miles east and five miles wide, extending, in some places, to the water's edge of the Great South Bay. Buildings were often burned by these fires, as they have been during the past year. Great difficulty was experienced in keeping the villages from being burned up. After the opening of the railroad, those woodlands were made common plunder ground by cordwood men and charcoal burners, and the wood and timbers destroyed in the most wanton and wasteful manner. The revenue or chief freight business of the railroad for years was in carrying off what could be got off the land. Charcoal burners bought the wood, or large tracts, at a mere nominal price, and turned an army of men into their coal bush, and whole trees of the large pines were brought to Brooklyn and driven in as spiles all along the shore and docks of Brooklyn.

James B. Cooper, Esq., a prominent citizen of Babylon, L. I., says the damages by fire in the woodlands of Suffolk County, in the past forty years, are three millions of dollars.

On my return from my first visit to the wilderness on the plains, I asked what was the reason that those lands were not

cultivated, and every man that I saw or met in Smithtown replied that the land was worthless; that nothing would grow on it.

I said it was covered with trees, and any land that will produce a large growth of trees has an element in the soil that will, with a little variation, produce a hill of corn or a blade of wheat. I asked if it had ever been tried? No; they said it was not worth trying. Now, all this did not satisfy me, nor remove the impression that was so firmly fixed upon my mind from what I had seen. I did not believe it possible that I could be mistaken; for my knowledge of lands and soil was so full and complete by practical experience in my boyhood and youth (for I had had the most thorough, practical farming "edification" ever a youth had), I did not believe I was or could be mistaken. I determined to make inquiry as a matter of truth and general knowledge; to examine the geology, soil and natural productions, for these are what indicate a country suitable for civilization and use. In the summers of 1841, '42, and '43, I examined more than fifty square miles of the plains with spade in hand, all the way from Farmingdale to Ronkonkoma Lake, and also the lands from East New York to and around Jamaica, that I might compare the old settled land with the new. I had then no intention or thought of purchasing or buying an acre of the woods, and my first purchase at Suffolk Station was made at the earnest request of Mr. Fiske, the president of the railroad.

I felt and believed that these vast woodlands could and ought to be settled and cultivated, as a great public good, and as a special benefit to the Long Island Railroad, to give it business. Mr. Fiske, who was in full accord with me, unfortunately lost his health and left the railroad, and soon after died. The railroad was made through the Island by him and his great energy.

Subsequently, at the request of the president and directors of the railroad, I undertook the herculean task to bring into use, and before the public, these lands for settlement—and by an agreement in writing, a bargain with the officers, president and directors of the road, defining what they should do and what I should do. By this contract the company agreed to do all the carrying trade and freight for the settlement, free of cost or charge; all freight, lumber and building material, manure and fertilizers, and all products were to be carried free, for one year, to each and every settler, and the head of the family to have a free pass to and from the city for two years. This was to encourage and promote settlement, and these privileges were to be given to every actual settler, during the settlement of the ten thousand acres. The settlement was to be an agricultural, or farming, and garden settlement; no village lots were offered.

I purchased ten thousand acres of land of the Nicoll Patent (adjoining Ronkonkoma Lake, and extending south more than four miles, at from five to thirty dollars per acre), of William H. Ludlow, and his wife Frances Louisa Nicoll, six thousand nine hundred and fifty acres, in one tract, adjoining the railroad, at five dollars an acre; two hundred acres north of the railroad and extending to the lake, thirty dollars per acre; one hundred acres next to this, twenty dollars an acre; and a thousand acres next this, extending to the lake, at ten dollars an acre; and of William Nicoll, two thousand acres at five dollars an acre.

All these great tracts of land were purchased on a cash basis, cash and mortgage (the Death (Grip or) Gage), bearing six per cent. interest. There was no trade or sham about it. It was the largest price ever given for those lands. This tract was selected as being the most advantageous and beautiful tract for settlement, of good and excellent soil.

The situation and soil of the land were good in every particular for the settlement. I proposed to call it Lakeland, and Governor King, of Jamaica, approved of it, for he said it was "The Land of the Lake." The lake was not in sight of the railroad; the station there was first called Lakeroad Station. Gov. John A. King was my friend, and rendered important assistance;

he obtained the establishment of a post-office there, and my appointment as postmaster; and he took great interest in my work for the settlement of the lands. I proceeded to erect buildings and to cultivate the land; I opened roads, laid out and opened Ocean avenue—one hundred feet wide from the lake for three miles south—cleared the lands by the plough (without previous grubbing); obtained the best plough, made by Ruggles, Nourse & Mason, of Worcester, Mass., made with a locked cutter, and purchased three yoke of oxen, and ploughed the ground, laid out a beautiful garden by a gardener from Brooklyn, and raised the finest crops of wheat and corn and garden products ever seen on the Island. My crop of Australian wheat was the admiration of every one that saw it.

The *Boston Cultivator* of June 20th, 1850, gave this account of the place:

LAKELAND AS IT WAS IN 1850.

We call the attention of our readers and the public at large to the following record and evidence of the successful cultivation, more than thirty years ago, of the new and neglected lands of Long Island.

The work of settlement and culture of the lands was broken up by the unfortunate failure of the Long Island Railroad in 1851, by nothing else, and from no other cause, for the railroad then passed into the hands of men who were bitterly opposed and hostile to the lands.

We publish an account of a visit to Lakeland, from the *Suffolk Union*, Riverhead, Suffolk County, Long Island, made by a party of gentlemen from Brooklyn, New York and other places, showing that the settlement was then considered as prosperous and successful. The settlement and culture of the lands in that vicinity were then regarded as a complete success, and had the place fallen into honest hands after Dr. Peck left it, there would have been no trouble or difficulty whatever in making it one of the pleasantest inland places on the island, for everything at Lakeland was then in a prosperous condition; the buildings and fences were new, complete, and in good order; the garden and grounds under good culture, and everything had been done by Dr. Peck to make the settlement and cultivation of the then hitherto "Barrens of Long Island" successful. His titles were all good, precisely what they were represented to be, as may be seen by the records of the County Clerk's office at that time.

We subjoin from the *New-Yorker* an account of the visit to Lakeland, which is not left to "speak for itself," being backed by a host of such witnesses as are absolutely not to be found again, as one might say. In justice to them, and particularly to Dr. Peck, whose exertions would at length appear to have been crowned with success the most perfect, we publish the following account of an excursion to Ronkonkoma Lake and to Lakeland, on the Long Island Railroad:

"Moses Maynard, Esq., of the Long Island Railroad Co., with a party of gentlemen from New York and Brooklyn, took a trip on Thursday over the Long Island Railroad to the new village of Lakeland, and to Ronkonkoma Lake. The object was to examine the road, to view the famous Lake Ronkonkoma and the surrounding country, and also to see what progress had been made in the settlement and cultivation of the wild or new lands of the Island, through the midst of which the Long Island Railroad runs. The day was extremely fine, and nothing could exceed the rich and luxuriant fields of grain and grass to be seen on each side of the road through the counties of Kings and Queens. Arrived at Lakeland depot, the party examined the buildings and gardens at this place, where are now to be seen growing in great perfection wheat and rye, garden vegetables, and fruits and flowers of great variety. This is a new settlement in the very midst of the great wilderness of the Island, a region hitherto regarded by the Island people and others on their authority as wholly unfit for cultivation; but the crops now growing at that place are equal to any others on the Island, and exhibit the most incontestable evidence of the powers of these lands to produce. Indeed, nothing can be more completely successful than have been the efforts of Dr. Peck to cultivate these Island lands, as may now be so fully seen at Lakeland, where a few years since all was wild and desolate.

The party were highly surprised and gratified at the great change made there by the hand of improvement; all admitted that the evidence of the fertility in the soil was complete, and that there can be no doubt of the entire practicability of easily and profitably cultivating all those lands on the borders of the Long Island Railroad, and in this subject the directors and stockholders of the Long Island Railroad Company have a deep interest, for the settlement and population of these lands on the im-

mediate line of this road will add greatly to the business of the road.

From Lakeland the party proceeded, some on foot, through the woods and fields, and some in carriages, to the famous Ronkonkoma, of the Indian name and memory, one of the most beautiful sheets of water that can be found anywhere. It was the unanimous opinion of the whole party that they had never seen any lake or sheet of water of its size more perfectly beautiful. It is a sort of miniature sea or ocean, being about three miles in circuit, with a clear and pearly beach or shore, two or three rods wide, formed of pure white silicious sand, inlaid with beautiful white and variegated pebbles, the waters over which glittered and sparkled like the fish-pools of Heshbon. The shores and bottom are perfectly solid and hard. There is neither rock or quicksand or miry places, no sudden deep places into which a child at play in its tiny waves could by any possibility fall, but a gradual deepening of the water from the shore to the center, which is about 80 feet deep. The land around the shore of the Ronkonkoma is beautifully diversified, and much of it elevated and bold, and the cultivated farms and orchards give to the whole scene a most delightful and pleasing effect. The pure fragrant air that blows around the lake, and the cool and delicious shades offered by the large and beautiful trees that fringe its borders and line the surrounding fields, render it a most delightful resort for summer. Returning to the hotel at Lakeland, a bountiful dinner was prepared in time to take the cars on the return train to Brooklyn, where they arrived at 5 o'clock P. M.

Among the party were Moses Maynard, Esq., of the Long Island R. R. Co.; Elihu Townsend, Esq., Dr. Brewer, R. L. Allen, Hon. Henry Meigs, of the American Institute; Geo. S. Riggs, Esq., of Baltimore; D. J. Brown, Messrs. Saxton and Blanchard, S. Holmes, Esq., and others, directors and stockholders of the L. I. R. R.; Alden J. Spooner, Esq., Rollin Sandford, Esq., G. A. Brett, Esq., Dr. E. F. Peck, and James B. Stafford, Esq.

All expressed their highest gratification at the evidence of improvement which they saw at Lakeland and its vicinity, and were unanimous in the opinion that the successful cultivation of these new lands, on the borders of the railroad, will result in great benefit to the road as well as to the Island, and, from all they saw, were of opinion that the prospects of the Long Island Railroad for a good and profitable business were never better than at present, and that a more desirable and pleasant retreat for summer residence cannot be found within fifty miles of New York, in any direction, than in the vicinity of Ronkonkoma."

N. B.—The above described visit was made the year before the Long Island Railroad Company failed, in 1851.

I had had full experience in cultivating the lands on what I purchased at Suffolk Station, under the advice of Mr. George B. Fiske, president of the railroad company. I there, in 1845, held plough, and turned the first furrow ever ploughed on the plains; I raised wheat and corn there on the despised lands, with complete success.

The settlement was complete and prosperous; sales of land were making, and men of means and reputation were purchasing and preparing to settle there. I advertised the lands extensively in this country and in Europe, as "farming and garden lands," in Boston, in New York, Albany, and in Rochester, in the *London Times*, and in the *Mark Lane Express*, and in Holland; and people came in great numbers to view it. At this juncture, in 1851, the Long Island Railroad Company failed, suddenly and unexpectedly; the failure came not only with most disastrous and ruinous effect upon the railroad, but upon everything connected with it. I stopped all my work entirely; men who had purchased of me, and agreed to purchase, abandoned their purchase and left the place, for it was rumored and believed that the railroad was to be abandoned and the rails taken up. The fate of the Catskill and Canajoharie Railroad was held up as the fate of the Long Island Railroad (the Catskill and Canajoharie Railroad was torn up, and the rails, that cost \$100,000, were sold as old iron for \$4,000). Emissaries were sent out all along the railroad, who reported that the rails were to be taken up and the road abandoned. A suit was brought against the railroad, and judgment entered, and it was put into the hands of a receiver, Moses Maynard, who was the treasurer of the Long Island Railroad Company, and the

road was advertised to be sold at public auction—"all the right, title, and interest of the Long Island Railroad, franchises, real estate, rolling stock of every kind." Under this state of ruin the stock of the company fell as low as seven dollars a share. The plaintiff in this case was the Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad Company, that owned twelve miles of railroad between Brooklyn and Jamaica. The Long Island Railroad owned eighty-three miles; both companies had distinct organizations; the Brooklyn and Jamaica road was made first, and the Long Island Railroad Company foolishly leased for forty years, at a yearly rent of \$31,500 a year, in monthly payments. Whilst this state of confusion and ruin was going on, the stock of the railroad was being bought up from seven to ten dollars a share. I was in daily attendance in Maynard's office, and saw and heard all that passed. In comes a stockholder: "Well, Alderman, is the road to be sold, and what will it bring?" "Oh, yes, it is to be sold, and it will probably bring enough to pay some of the immediate debts; it may bring twenty-five per cent. of the cost of the railroad—two millions." "Then it is a pretty poor lookout for the stockholders?" "Yes." "I have a little stock, and can get a little something for it." "How much have you?" "I have ten shares." "How much can you get for it?" "Ten dollars a share." "Then you had better sell it." So the stockholder, whose money had built the railroad, goes out and sells his stock. This is literally a true statement of what I saw repeatedly; for I was anxiously waiting to know what my fate would be, since they had repudiated the written agreement made by the company with me, and on which depended the value of my property of more than sixty thousand dollars (\$60,000).

After these parties had obtained a majority of the stock sufficient to control the road, they withdrew all proceedings against it, and reinstated it; made William E. Morris, of Philadelphia, president, and turned Maynard out. Then a great flourish of trumpets was made over the resurrection of the Long Island Railroad, and great things were promised, and the stock, that had been trampled on and hawked at ten dollars a share, increased marvellously. I then made every effort to have my contracts with the road completed, but this they positively refused. I felt wearied and discouraged, and sold the entire property. In this I made a mistake; I could and ought to have held it, but I thought I had done enough. I sold the property to Charles Wood and his associates, of New York. Mr. Wood was recommended as a fair and honest man by Moses Y. Beach, Alfred Beach, and Moses S. Beach, owners and editors of the *New York Sun*, and they sustained and aided him very greatly. I sold mostly on credit, and I continued to do all I could to promote the settlement of the lands, and have done so to the present day. Mr. Wood went on to sell and improve, but ultimately got into difficulty and failed. He was victimized by others, and Lakeland never recovered from the failure, and is now blotted out; while it is called Ronkonkoma Depot, by an act of gross injustice to me, and to the settlement, the pioneer settlement, in the wilderness.

I have done with my journey in the wilderness, though I am not out of it. I propose to introduce some of my witnesses. I wrote to B. F. Thompson, of Hempstead, the author of the *History of Long Island*, and quoted his strange libel upon the lands eastward of Hempstead Plains (at page 29, vol. 1st), and asked him to tell me upon what that passage was founded? if any attempt had ever been made to cultivate the lands? if so, by whom, when, and where? and wherein the soil differed from the soils in other parts of the Island? if the soil had ever been chemically examined? He answered that when he wrote that passage it was "the generally received opinion" on the Island that the soil could not be cultivated; that he knew no facts, and encouraged me to go on, and kindly offered to aid, and became my friend as long as he lived. I wrote to the Rev. Mr. Prentiss, author of another *History of Long Island*, and sent him a copy

of my letter to Mr. Thompson (see Prime's description of the lands, where he says, "About forty miles from the west end [this is where Brentwood now stands] the sand approaches to fluidity in fineness [for there is no soil].") Mr. Prime wrote me a letter of four pages of special pleading to show that he was right, and I was wrong. I have both of these letters yet.

Now, I am satisfied that all the miserable drivel about and against these lands, which have been published in the past forty years in every history, book or gazette, originated from PRIME and THOMPSON, and from nobody else (for there is not a word found in all the previous history of the Island of any barren lands); and that monstrous wrong was inflicted upon Long Island by these histories. I have never met with a man on the Island who knew the first thing about the land or soil, no matter how much he said against it. Cross-examine him, and he utterly failed.

Now let us hear what men of great intelligence, learning, and ability, men learned in agriculture and soils, who personally went on to the lands with spade and ink-horn to record the result. In 1847 a party of 170 of the most distinguished men in the city and State went expressly to examine the soil as to its fitness for culture. This was on the 22d of July, 1847. The party spent two days there. Among them were the Hon. Messrs. Ogden Edwards, John Lawrence, Professor Renwick, of Columbia College of New York, Hon. Henry Meigs, T. B. Wakeman, Gen. Chandler, of the American Institute, &c. Every one of these pronounced the soil to be good and perfect. Dr. Underhill, of Croton Vineyard, declared it was in every way suited to grape culture. They made an extended report in favor of these lands of more than twenty-four pages: see *Transactions of the American Institute*, vol. for the year 1847, page 678; also *The New York State Agricultural Society Transactions*, published 1859; also the address of Gov. John A. Dix, delivered at Saratoga before the State Fair at Saratoga Springs; also (in the same vol., 1859), an exhaustive report on the *Lands of Long Island*, of 40 pages, by Winslow C. Watson, of Port Kent, of Essex County, N. Y. Mr. Watson is the State geologist for the northern counties of the State, and is one of the most able and learned agriculturists of the State. He came to Long Island twice, and made careful examination of the lands. This kind of evidence can be multiplied to any extent, and no acre of the ground has failed to produce. See the Suffolk County Almshouse farm, at Yaphank, on the plains, where they cut last year two hundred tons of the finest hay from 45 acres. See, also, the splendid stock farm of the Hon. August Belmont, of 1,000 acres, two miles north of Babylon, L. I. I propose, in conclusion, to give the figures of uncultivated lands in Suffolk County, which is one hundred and ten miles long by about ten miles wide, containing 640,000 acres. These figures are from the United States census for 1845, and if these lands were there then they are there now, for no thousands of acres of these lands, as I have heard of, have been since cultivated.

The town of Huntington, 50,968 acres uncultivated. Huntington has lately been divided, and the town of Babylon set off. Islip, 63,984 acres uncultivated; Smithtown, 27,960 acres uncultivated; Brookhaven, 117,360 acres uncultivated; Riverhead, 25,000 acres uncultivated; Southold, 29,000 acres uncultivated; Shelter Island, 6,000 acres uncultivated; Southampton, 68,395 acres uncultivated; Easthampton, 52,672 acres uncultivated, making 447,953 acres of uncultivated lands in Suffolk County. There are in Queens County 90,000 acres of uncultivated lands. These figures include only good arable land, no marshy land.

I purchased in 1848, of F. M. A. Wicks, four hundred acres, at two dollars and seventy-five cents an acre, without the wood, which he retained, and this is the land on which the village of Brentwood now stands. As I did not intend to keep this land, or any part of it, I did not take the "deed for it," as I purchased it for the express purpose of getting it into the hands of those who would improve it; and I employed my friend, the late Samuel

Fleet, then the editor of the *New York Artisan* (not the paper by that name now), and he negotiated the sale of it to Nathan Stephens, Christopher Wray, Uel West, J. Agate, and others; and it was conveyed, on my order, under my contract with Mr. Wicks, to these parties. Most of these purchasers intended to improve the land, but were prevented by the stories that it was worthless and unfit for culture.

Mr. Fleet, who was a worthy and intelligent man, had full confidence and full faith in the productive quality of the land, and he rendered important and valuable aid in bringing it before the public; and after these first purchasers had abandoned the idea of improving the land, Mr. Fleet sold it to Stephen Pearl Andrews, of New York, who laid out and made the settlement of Brentwood upon it. My friends think, and say, if I had not purchased the land and put it into the market, at great trouble and considerable cost, it would have remained unsettled to the present time, and no Brentwood there; for all the surrounding region that I did not put into the market is yet a wilderness—for they know of nobody else who would have purchased it.

I bought and put into the market all the land that Mr. Wicks sold east of his house—the old Thompson station.

I settled Mr. Richardson, the nurseryman at Brentwood, about twenty years ago; he came from Massachusetts under my advertisements in the *Boston Cultivator*, came to my house in Brooklyn, and I went with him to examine the lands; he did not buy any land of me.

There are now ten new and prosperous villages and settlements, made in the past thirty years, along the line of the Long Island Railroad, and on what was thirty years ago a wilderness, in a distance of thirty miles from Farmingdale to Yaphank, including Farmingdale and Yaphank—viz.: Farmingdale, Deer Park, Brentwood, Central Islip, Lakeland, Holbrook, Waverly, Medford, Yaphank, Bohemiaville and Edenvale—the settlement of William J. Spence.

Bohemiaville and Edenvale are not in sight of the railroad, but between the railroad and the old south side country road, not far north of Blue Point and Patchogue. Mr. Spence settled there thirty years ago, in what was then the darkest part of the Island. Men went to him from the old settlements and warned him off, lest he might become a town charge; he cleared and cultivated the land, has lived there thirty years, supported himself and family from the land by farming, and has now a beautiful farm. Go and see his farm. Mr. Spence is dead. These new settlements have churches, schools, comfortable homes, some splendid buildings, fields of wheat, corn, clover, grass, and the finest fruit gardens and fruit orchards that can be found on the Island, and all produced by ordinary culture, without extra cost or extra means; and these ten villages and settlements, with their fields and gardens, over a space of thirty miles, settle the question of the productive quality of the land so long despised, and put to shame its traducers and maligners. It is rather a curious and interesting fact, that six of these new settlements, Brentwood, Central Islip, Lakeland, Holbrook, Bohemiaville and Edenvale, are on the land brought into the market and sold by me—bought and sold expressly for settlement and culture, and for no other purpose—bought and sold, or rather given away, in most cases, for less than the actual cost to me of titles and transfer.

I never purchased an acre of land on the Island for anything that I expected to make on the land by a re-sale of it, but I expected and hoped to receive my reward by what I might be able to retain when the settlements were made. I cast in my lot with the settlements and settlers, having full faith in the intrinsic value of the land and the country. It is the finest and most productive garden land, with the best markets, the most healthy and pleasant climate, in the State of New York.

October 14, 1879.

E. F. PECK.

Mr. Slater's fine buildings at Central Islip are on land that I bought of William Nicoll in 1848.

E. F. PECK.

THE CITY OF HEALTH. BY EDGAR F. PECK, M.D.

Dr. B. W. Richardson, of London, not long ago set forth the admirable advantages which would accrue to a city founded on strictly sanitary principles—a city which should comprehend in full all the benefits which pertain to the best chosen situation with regard to climate, soil, drainage, water supply, house construction, food supplies, disposal of refuse, public buildings, churches, schools, hospitals, places of amusement, factories, fire-stations—all the appurtenances and avoidances necessary to the promotion and maintenance of the highest standard of human health. But the great merchant prince of New York, A. T. Stewart, even before the appearance of Dr. Richardson's paper, had the sagacity to found a city—a "Garden City"—on a tract of land which had remained utterly neglected from the first settlement of this country by Europeans, on account of a singular belief or fatuity that it was barren or unfit for culture. Yet, strange to say, this tract of land, on which Garden City is situated, possesses all the natural advantages suited to Dr. Richardson's ideal "City of Health ;" and, with the required sanitary skill in the construction of this new city, Long Island will ere long exult in possessing the veritable City of Health so graphically though fancifully depicted by Dr. Richardson.

The great Hempstead Plains, which Mr. Stewart "took, held, and possessed," is a remarkable tract of country. An old historian, who described it more than two hundred years ago, says : "Toward the middle of the Island lyeth a plain, sixteen miles long and four miles broad, upon which plain groweth very fine grass that makes exceeding good hay, and is very good pasture for sheep and other cattel."

There were about sixty thousand acres in this wonderful piece of land ; it was, in fact, a prairie—a great and beautiful upland meadow, producing "very fine grass that makes exceeding good hay." I will try in a few words to describe the situation, surface, soil and geological structure of this celebrated spot. The westerly part of the "Plains" is about fifteen miles from Brooklyn, and can be seen from the spires and "high house-tops" of Bedford. Starting from the South Ferry, where the rails of the old L. I. R. R. were seven feet above tide-water ; and at Bedford, two and a half miles, seventy-three feet ; at the watering-place formerly called Howard's Woods, on the high ground this side of East New York, eighty-three feet ; thence descending to Jamaica Depot, where the rails are forty feet above tide-water ; thence easterly, the grade is uphill all the way to Hicksville, twenty five miles from Brooklyn, or South Ferry, where it is one hundred and fifty feet above tide-water. This is the summit level of the L. I. R. R., and is near the north-easterly border of Hempstead Plains, which extends north of Hicksville to the southerly edge of the hills of Jericho. At Hempstead Branch, or Mineola, about a mile north of Garden City Hotel, the rails are 103 feet above tide-water. These distances or heights are given to show the situation or position of this great tract. It is an elevated table-land with a southern aspect, with a descent of about twenty feet to the mile. It is bounded on the north by the high grounds or ridge of hills running through the Island from west to east ; with this regular and gentle descent to the southern shore of the Island, the under drainage is most complete and perfect. Then the surface of the "Plains," from west to east, is gently undulating, in long swells ; elevations and depressions, looking southwardly, have exactly the appearance of the dried beds of streams ; and following them down towards the south borders of the Plains, streams of purest water are found in many of them.

These rollings or undulations of the land present, in fact, three drainage surfaces on each of them, one southerly of about twenty feet to the mile, and one on each side, gently sloping to the west and to the east from the center of these elevated sections, thereby presenting a most wonderful natural drainage. The surface soil is a dark loam from fifteen inches to two feet in depth. It looks just what a lady would select to fill her flower-pots with, and is

highly productive, and which grew and grows the "very fine grass that made exceeding good hay," according to the old chronicler ; and what is remarkable, this grass never runs out—it is always fresh and green. And it may here be remarked that the natural grasses of Hempstead Plains are the most nutritious grasses that can be found in the Northern States.

The turf upon this upper and dark soil is so thick and strong as to require a team of three horses with a strong plough to turn a furrow through it. Under this layer of dark loam is a layer of yellow loam, of about equal thickness, in many places a clay loam or clay ; and under these, generally at a depth of about two feet and a half or three feet, is the firm, compact gravel and sand that everywhere form the main body of Long Island, for it is literally a "child of the ocean."

These undersands and gravels are firm and compact (there are no quicksands), and intermingled with fine silicious sands, comminuted, almost levigated, forming the most complete and perfect filter that can possibly be made ; and the water found under this whole region, and flowing out of it, is of the purest and sweetest kind, and never fails. It has been claimed recently that a great subterranean river flows under Hempstead Plains, or such is the inference from the inexhaustible flow that is found from twenty to thirty feet under the surface.

The climate is the finest in the State of New York, most healthful and pleasant. There are no stagnant waters nor malarious land within miles of this highly favored and most interesting region.

There is no place like it for the foundation of a City of Health—the great work has been done by nature. There are not men and horses enough in this, the great Empire State, to form such a foundation for a City of Health ; and if Mrs. Stewart will improve these great natural advantages and found the first City of Health in America, she will become a benefactress to her race, and gain immortal honor.

EDGAR F. PECK.

I desire also to say something about the share which I have had in the great discoveries in science and the arts of the age in which I have lived, especially that most wondrous of all, the uses of electricity. I only propose to say what I have seen and known as a matter of science, and connected with my professional study. I took a great interest in the study of electricity and magnetism, from the time of Professor Oerstadt's (of Copenhagen) discovery of motion and electro-magnetism, which from that time took a prominent place with scholars and men of science to the present time. Omitting dates and particulars, I would say that Professor Joseph Henry, of Albany, was the American pioneer in the science and use of electricity and magnetism, and it became the pursuit of his lifetime. In 1831 he delivered a lecture in Clinton Hall, before the New York Mercantile Library Association, on "Electricity and Magnetism," in which he showed the great power of the magnet, when produced by a coil of wire, charged with electricity, around the iron, and this produced motion in the magnet.

At the conclusion of this lecture, in speaking of the velocity of the electrical fluid, he said, if it was possible to put a wire around the globe, twenty-four thousand miles, the electrical current would make the circuit of 24,000 miles whilst a swallow, in its ordinary flight, would make three dips of his wing. I was present at the lecture.

The immediate result then sought from electro-magnetism was *motion*, that it might be applied to machinery ; and this was discovered and obtained by Mr. Davenport, an unlearned blacksmith, of Brandon, Vt. He had seen for the first time, at the Crown Point Iron Works, the separation of iron from the pulverized iron ore by means of an electro-magnet. Going home, he made an electro-magnetic machine, which turned a wheel with great velocity. This was the first electro-magnetic machine ever made. He obtained a patent for it, and associated with himself Ransom Cook, an ingenious mechanic of Saratoga Springs, and

they organized a company, under the firm name of Cook & Davenport; they came to New York, and their invention was brought extensively before the public, and attracted great attention. The late Edward Williams, author of *Williams' Register*, became associated with them. He was a man of great intelligence and enterprise, one of the founders of the American Institute, New York, and it was through him and for him that I undertook to furnish material aid in this work. Mr. Williams soon saw the difficulties in the way of a private company in bringing out this great invention. He thought the company should have a charter to define its legal rights and powers, and went to Rhode Island (its Legislature being then in session), where he had friends, and by the aid of two eminent citizens, E. J. Mallett and Charles Jackson, he obtained a charter from the State of Rhode Island for an *Electro-Magnetic Company*, whose object was to develop the power and uses of electro-magnetism. Thus to Rhode Island belongs the honor of granting the first charter ever granted for that purpose, out of which came the telegraph which now surrounds the world. A company was organized under this charter, and opened an office and rooms at No. 58 Gold street, New York, where it set up machinery moved by electro-magnetism. A wheel was constructed five feet in diameter, which made three hundred revolutions a minute and power sufficient for a turning lathe. Large galvanic batteries were constructed, the largest and most powerful, I believe, ever constructed in this country. Large globules of electricity were produced by these batteries—liquid fire—so much so, that the neighbors said "they make lightning over there." Great publicity was given to this work, and the rooms were visited by the most eminent scientific men in the country: Professor Renwick, of Columbia College, New York; Professor Morse, the inventor of the telegraph, which had not then been put in use or practice; Professor Silliman, of Yale College, and Professor Hare, of Philadelphia. These distinguished men made several visits there, at all of which I was present, for I found it necessary for me to take the supervision of the work there, in order to protect my interest in it, having furnished money to build the batteries and make most of the apparatus used there. Mr. Williams I had also furnished with money for most of his personal expenses to Rhode Island and to Albany, where he also went. The learned professors, whose names I have given, seemed to doubt if sufficient electricity could be produced by batteries to reach distant points—that it might waste on the wires. I contended that it could be obtained in sufficient quantity and force.

On one occasion, when these professors were present, an earnest argument arose on the power of galvanic batteries, I contending for my theory of its power, and they doubting. Mr. Chilton, of New York, a manufacturer of electrical machines and chemicals, was present, and he told one of my friends that he considered it was very great impudence in Dr. Peck to dispute with such men as Silliman and Hare on any matter of science.

There were some objections to the Rhode Island charter, as it involved a personal liability; and it was thought best to obtain a charter from the State of New York. At the next session of the Legislature, Mr. Williams made application for a charter, which, by the aid of Professor Henry and others, was obtained. Meanwhile, at the laboratory in Gold street, Professor Morse was in almost daily attendance, and anxious to raise means to put into practical operation his great invention. I, with Mr. Williams, negotiated with him for the purchase of one-half of his patent for the United States. He was to have \$50,000 in money, to be paid in installments, and \$500,000 in the stock of the Electro-Magnetic Company. To this the machine men, who held patents for electro-magnetic machinery, would not consent. At this time it was thought by Professor Morse that his wires must be laid under ground, and the wires be insulated by being wound with cotton thread like suspender wires; and Ezra Cornell, a plough-maker in one of the towns of Central New York, and a native of Westchester County, proposed to Professor Morse to

make a plough to do this work. This plough was to have two shares, one in front to open the furrow, in which the wires were to be laid from a large spool of wire in the center between the shares, and the rear share to turn the furrow back on the wires. This project brought Professor Morse and Ezra Cornell together. The affairs of the Electro-Magnetic Company did not prosper; the machine inventors differed among themselves, and about 1839 my interest in it ended with loss.

Truman Cook made these large galvanic batteries at No. 58 Gold street, which did so much to aid Professor Morse. Truman Cook was the brother of Ransom Cook. They were men of ability and great mechanical skill, and they did more than any other men to develop and promote the success and the use of electro-magnetism, out of which so great and wonderful results have come. Justice has not been done to their names and memory, as the pioneers of the great work and wonder of the world—the telegraph—which has come from their labor. Ransom and Truman Cook were natives of Saratoga Springs, N. Y.

During my residence from 1841 to 1847, I was extensively engaged in the practice of medicine, and earnestly in the cause of temperance, and cultivated my little farm at Edgewood. I left Smithtown in 1847, and went to the village of Jamaica, for the purpose of giving my daughter the advantages of Miss Adrain's school, in Union Hall. Then I took up a permanent residence in 1849 in State street, Brooklyn, which has been my home to the present time. I selected this place as being convenient to the railroad, as accessible to my property and business on the Island, and to New York City, where I had large property interests and was connected with various institutions. I am one of the oldest members of the *American Institute*. I attended the first Fair, in 1831, in the old Masonic Hall, on Broadway, near Pearl street; the Hon. Edward Everett delivered the address in the evening in the Lutheran Church, in Walker street, between Broadway and Elm street. I have attended every Fair of the American Institute for fifty-two years, the first and the last Fairs. I was one of the founders of the *Farmers' Club*, of the American Institute, and a member of the *Kings County Medical Society*, a member of the *Long Island Historical Society*, and a life member of the *New York Agricultural Society*, and keep up my interest in my life work. I am now engaged in many other important improvements, which I trust will be of great use and benefit. This—from the *Signal*, Babylon, L. I., February 16th, 1884—I wish to put on record here:

A SHIP CHANNEL AROUND HELL GATE.

Millions of dollars have been spent in blasting out the rocks of Hell Gate, and yet the work is only begun. It is somewhat singular that it never occurred to any of our prominent engineers to avoid this dangerous reef altogether by opening a new cut. It has been left for Dr. Edgar F. Peck, of Brooklyn, to make the suggestion, which he does in the following letter, and it is to be hoped his ideas will be tested at an early day. It would seem as though the better policy would have been to open a canal as proposed, and then obstruct the gate rather than seek to open it, which would force the water through the canal, and thus keep it open and navigable for the largest ships. Such a work would make the Sound the safest as well as the shortest outlet for the commerce of New York. The following is the Doctor's letter:

"OPENING OF HELL GATE BY A SHIP CHANNEL.—A great deal has been said, but very little done, about removing the obstructions to navigation in Hell Gate—that being about the burden of the talk. Now, I propose to cut this Gordian knot by opening a ship channel from Hallett's Cove to Pot Cove, from 500 to 800 feet wide and 40 feet deep. This would cut off the elbow of Hallett's Point, that causes all the whirls and tumult and dangers in the roaring waters of Hell Gate. This ship channel would have to be made only about a half a mile long, from 86th street to 96th street, and will remove all obstructions to the full and free navigation of Long Island Sound, and all ships and vessels coming from the eastward would take the Long Island Sound route to New York. The whole State of Connecticut is deeply interested in this important work, as it would open for it free and clear navigation into New York. I am greatly surprised that it has not been done long ago—that the very door

and gate to the city have been left closed by the raging waters and rocks of Hell Gate for more than two hundred years. The island of Manhattan bears an Indian name which signifies 'roaring water,' and this term the Indians applied to the waters of Hell Gate, and afterwards to the island itself. Let General Newton stop his useless and costly work of digging under the rocks to try to blow out the bottom of Hell Gate; let him come out of his dark dens and work in the open day, by means of coffer-dams around the rocks he wishes to remove. All that work can be done by coffer-dams for less than half the cost now made in his useless work, and he would leave a clean bottom, not filled with broken and spiculated rocks, as he now leaves it. So let us have the ship channel to avoid the dangers of Hell Gate.

EDGAR F. PECK, M.D.

"BROOKLYN, January 26th, 1884."

[From the *Christian at Work*, November 9th, 1882.]

THE GOVERNMENT RESPONSIBLE.

BY EDGAR F. PECK, M.D.

To the *Christian at Work*:

I beg to express to you my earnest thanks, in behalf of humanity and Christianity, for your able and interesting article on tobacco in your last week's paper. I have been for a long time trying to rescue childhood and youth from the tobacco fiend, and am now in the midst of the conflict against the two great dragons, the most stupendous curses of mankind, *rum* and *tobacco*. I have fought these enemies all my life, and now in my old age am moved to enter the field once again, though I have been out of active service for some time. Public attention seems to be waking up to the evils of tobacco. I have been and am now endeavoring to concentrate forces and efforts against it, and I think some progress has been made. My view is, that if ministers of the Gospel and medical men would abandon the use of tobacco, and use their influence against it, the evil could be greatly abated, if not entirely abandoned.

Now as to strong drink. I differ with some of the temperance men of the present day on their plan of action. I want you to publish this plan, and I want some of your able writers to take up the subject on a "new departure;" to put the axe to the root of the great Upas tree; to stop making the infernal stuff by—prohibition. I mean, to prohibit the making of the deadly thing. I claim that our government is responsible for all the drunkenness in the land, because it allows all the drink of the drunkards to be made. This is a plain truth, and cannot be denied. I want some able speaker or writer to present this subject to the people, and let the whole question be discussed on the merits of the case from this standpoint. The government is represented by Congress, headed by the President, and I charge that he and they are the responsible parties, for their fiat or authority lights all the lurid fires that blaze and flame in the ten thousand distilleries and breweries that burn perpetually night and day, and pour out their streams of liquid death all over the land. The government is the great manufacturer in this infamous work; it seizes the lion's share of the plunder; it keeps an army of men on guard to hunt "crooked whiskey." Those grim, fiend-like creatures that went to Deacon Giles' distillery and offered to do the work of the devil on the Lord's day are quartered in battalions in every city, town, village and hamlet, and sixty millions of money is seized by them as *revenue*! Sixty millions from the blood and bones of the poor drunkard! And in this horrible and atrocious work more than a hundred millions of bushels of golden grain a year—enough to feed and clothe the naked nations of the earth—millions of loaves of bread, the staff of life—are beaten, bruised, burned and transmuted into the deadly curse—and all by government. And if this be not a national crime, I fail to see what can be. This money seized by government is *blood money*, and it is a disgrace to a Christian people to take it or to touch it. The cry of this blood money goes up to heaven and calls aloud for vengeance. Let the whole nation be aroused to the enormity of this crime; let all the churches pour out their indignation against the great sin. It is a great national crime. The capital of the nation is the great Gibraltar of intemperance. Washington is the great golden bowl from which the nation is made drunk. The White House is a whited sepulchre; it is full of extortion and dead men's bones. Let the temperance army march upon it with banners and battle down its walls. I am not a reformed man. I began my work in my youth. I adopted total abstinence in 1824, two years before Dr. Beecher preached his immortal sermons against intemperance in Litchfield, in 1826. I knew Dr. Beecher. I lived then a few miles from Litchfield. I entered the study of

medicine about that time, and I took up the whole subject, and for nearly forty years did my utmost in the cause. I am much like the aged prisoner released from the Bastille. The men among whom I moved and worked two generations ago have passed away and gone; they are nearly all dead. I can scarcely recall the name of a single one living; and, without boasting, perhaps there is no man living who has had a better opportunity to thoroughly understand the whole history of the temperance cause. I wish to do what I can to roll back the burning floods of intemperance, but I feel that my earthly work is about done. I feel humbled, humiliated, that I have done so little in proportion to what I ought to have done for my Lord and Master's service. My lease of life is out—the lease of the house I live in, my body, is out—and I am only holding over, a tenant at will—holding over on sufferance, liable to be ejected with or without notice when the great Lord of the Manor calls for His possession, and all I have to do is to keep myself and my house in order for the coming of the King. May the Lord bless you and your Christian work!

BROOKLYN, N. Y.

I have always been a temperance man, often writing and speaking for the cause. In politics I was one of the earliest and staunchest abolitionists. I voted for John Quincy Adams in 1828, and supported Fremont in 1856, warmly espousing the Republican party and principles through the war. I joined the Reformed Dutch Church in 1828, and for the past 30 years have been a member of the Old Reformed Dutch Church, near the City Hall. I have always been blessed with excellent health of body and mind through my life-long, arduous labors.

[We have been kindly furnished by Mr. ELLIS LEWIS, Jr., with some notes on Long Island, which corroborate the foregoing statement of Dr. Peck, and which we here present.—EDITOR.]

The general form of Long Island is indicated by its name. Its extreme length is about 115 miles, and its average width scarcely more than 12 miles. Almost its entire mass is a glacial deposit or moraine, part of the vast deposit of similar material which abounds at intervals from the Island of Nantucket westward and northward to beyond the Mississippi River. This, geologically considered, is known as the terminal moraine of the ice sheet of the glacial age. In its structure, Long Island comprises the material peculiar to such deposits—sand, gravel, clay, with boulder in every condition of intermixture. The surface soil is to a large extent a sandy loam, fertile and easy of cultivation. It is especially adapted to the growth of grass, grains, and garden products. Much of the western part of the Island is being converted into a garden for the supply of the great cities near. Agricultural industry is being rapidly developed, and nowhere else is it more successful or profitable. The so-called sandy tracts of Suffolk County, concerning which a great deal of thoughtless and idle remark has been made, are found to yield a profitable return for intelligent labor. Long Island is fairly well wooded. Its forests are of oak, hickory, chestnut, locust, with many other species of deciduous trees. The evergreens indigenous to the soil are almost entirely of the yellow or pitch pine, *Pinus rigida*. At an early period of its history, the forest growth of the island was doubtless heavier than now. There were oaks, chestnuts, tulip trees, and others of great age and of immense size; a few of these survive. The fox oaks at Flushing, no longer existing, were historic trees and justly celebrated. A white oak at Greenvale, near Glen Gove, is 21 feet in girth, and is probably 500 years old; another nearly as old is at Manhasset, in the Friends' meeting-house yard; others similar are at Smithtown and vicinity. A tulip tree at Lakeville, on the elevated grounds of S. B. M. Cornell, impaired by age and storms, is 26 feet in girth near the ground, and was a landmark from the ocean more than a century ago. The famous black walnut at Roslyn, on grounds of the late W. C. Bryant, is probably the largest tree on Long Island; it measures 29 feet in girth at the ground, and 21 feet at the smallest part of the trunk, below the spread of its enormous branches. Chestnut trees in the neighborhood of Brookville and Norwich, in the town of Oyster Bay, are 16, 18, and 22 feet in girth. The growth of hard-wood trees on Long Island is rapid. The few large trees standing indicate what they may have been, or what they might be if undisturbed. The evergreens grow with equal luxuriance. A century and a half ago pitch pines were abundant from 20 inches to 36 inches in diameter.

Nowhere on the coast does the locust flourish as it does on Long Island; nor can it be found elsewhere of equal quality.

Notwithstanding insect attacks, young forests quickly spring up. (See page 20.)

When the island was first settled by white people, a great variety of wild animals were common, which are now extinct. Among these were the black bear, wolf, wild-cat, beaver, porcupine, opossum and gray fox, also several species of smaller quadrupeds. The deer was plenty, and is not uncommon now in Suffolk County. It is probable that the moose and elk were once found on the island, as one of these species was found on Fisher's Island, a part of the town of Southold, a century and a half ago.

Of birds, Long Island is the *habitat*, or resting-place, of about three hundred and twenty species. Of the species once common here, many no longer visit us, or have left this portion of the coast altogether. A descriptive catalogue of the birds of Long Island was published by Giraud, and a very complete catalogue was issued by Geo. N. Lawrence, of New York, about ten years since. The fishes of the coast are catalogued by Professor Theodore A. Gill, formerly of Brooklyn, and included in a more general catalogue of the fishes of the Atlantic border of the United States. The species number about one hundred and ninety. In the Museum Department of the Long Island Historical Society, an effort is being made to present a collection which shall represent the *fauna* and *flora* of the island, of both living and extinct species.

The physical aspects of the island are of rare beauty. Hills, plains, valleys and vast stretches of meadow occur throughout its length, toward the west, and a ridge of hills, which rise at Brooklyn to the height of 190 feet, extends eastward, attaining at Roslyn a height of 384 feet. This is the highest elevation on the island, and commands a view which for extent, rarity, and picturesque beauty is not surpassed on the Atlantic border of the United States. Jane's Hill, one of the West Hill group, is 383 feet high. Other hills in Suffolk County are Ruland's, near Coram, 340 feet; Osborn's, southwest of Riverhead, 293 feet; Shinnecock Hill, 140 feet. Montauk Point is 85 feet above tide. Throughout the western portion of this line of broken hills the unmodified glacial drift prevails at the surface, making a soil of rich, clayey loam. The "plains," which lie southward of the hills extending from Fort Hamilton to Shinnecock, consist of what is known as "modified drift," a deposit in which the great glacial moraine beds have been distributed and assorted by moving water. A coarse gravel is frequent on the north side of the island, and some of the richest soils of the island lie upon a deep gravelly deposit.

Boulders of immense size occur on the north side of the island throughout its entire length, also along the central hills. The largest one is in Manhasset, in the town of North Hempstead. Its extreme length is 54 feet, width 45 feet, and the thickness about 16 feet, a portion lying below the surface; others at Wading River, in Suffolk County, are 100 feet in circumference, and 15 feet high, 78 feet circumference and 25 feet high; and one lying 180 feet above tide measures 15 feet in height above the surface of the ground, and 109 feet around.

These enormous boulders are of gneiss, as are nearly all the very large ones found on the island. Deposits of excellent clay occur on many parts of the island, and are profitably worked. The most extensive workings are by the Messrs. Crossman and by the Messrs. Jones, on the east side of Cold Spring harbor. These mines, worked or bored to a depth of 100 feet or more, are practically inexhaustible. These outcrops of clay are evidently part of a vast deposit, which can be traced from the head of Little Neck Bay to beyond Port Jefferson, a distance of fifty miles. Extensive excavations are at Glen Cove, the deposit being clay, kaolin and fire sand, extending apparently beneath the elevated promontory on which the village of Sea Cliff is built. What the geological age of the great clay beds may be, is not determined. They are evidently pre-glacial, as they are deeply covered by glacial drift. They may, therefore, extend as a layer far beneath the island. The deposits of clay named are not to be confounded with others found in various parts of the island, which are merely local deposits. Many occur upon the surface, as at Farmingdale, others underneath deep beds of stratified gravels and sands, as at Barnum Island, near Long Beach, in Queens County. At this place, 75 feet below the surface, a bed of fine compact blue clay 48 feet thick was passed through in an artesian boring in 1876.

The north side of the island is penetrated by a series of fiord valleys, eight in number, forming excellent harbors. In these the water is of sufficient depth for coasting vessels, but is 40 feet deep in some instances. These fiord valleys have their source at the central hills.

There is evidence that the coast, of which Long Island is a part, has not always maintained its present position, with respect to the level of the ocean. During the glacial age, it has been shown that the coast was 200 feet or more higher than

now; the coast line was from 80 to 100 miles southward of the present one, and the Hudson discharged its waters into the ocean 100 miles southeastward of Sandy Hook. The last vertical movement appears to have been one of subsidence. Meadow formations, several feet thick, with shells of the present period, are found 50 feet below the surface of the waters at the Narrows, near Fort Lafayette, and submerged swamps with stumps of large trees occur at many points around the shore. The only formations independent of the drift are the clay bed already noticed and a narrow expanse of gneiss at Astoria and vicinity, of the same general character as that of the main land opposite.

CHAPTER X.

FORMATION AND GROWTH OF THE LONG ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

THE first steps toward the formation of the Long Island Historical Society were naturally taken by a native Long Islander, ALDEN F. SPOONER, who had affinities by birth, marriage and residence, with each of the three counties. He prepared and caused to be widely distributed the following circular:

BROOKLYN, February 14th, 1863.

DEAR SIR:—The time has arrived when the city of Brooklyn should found and foster institutions—religious, historical, literary, scientific, educational and humanitarian—beyond the scope of former undertakings. As one of these, a historical society, associated with our peculiar geographical position, naturally suggests itself. We propose to establish

THE LONG ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

The threefold Indian, Dutch and English history of the island is full of interest, and there are doubtless concealed treasures in each department, which will be developed by research and inquiry. By calling out the recollections of the living who will soon pass away, drawing public records and private writings from their concealment, having a fit place for the collection and deposit of trophies, memorials and historical materials, and also for conventions and lectures upon historic topics, it cannot be doubted that much valuable knowledge will be saved and communicated, which would otherwise be irretrievably lost.

It is proposed to establish, first, a library and repository of books, documents and manuscripts, memorials, trophies and pictures. For this purpose all persons are requested to favor us with any appropriate material in their possession, either by gift or on deposit.

It is also proposed to encourage lectures upon historic and kindred topics.

Without further developing our plans and objects in this circular, we invite your attendance at the rooms of the Hamilton Literary Association, Hamilton Building, corner of Court and Joralemon streets, Brooklyn (the door nearest the corner), on the evening of Tuesday, March 3d, 1863, at 8 o'clock, to take measures to organize the society.

HENRY C. MURPHY,
ALDEN J. SPOONER,
JOHN GREENWOOD,
JOHN WINSLOW,
JOSHUA M. VAN COTT,

} Kings County.

R. C. McCOORMICK, JR.,
HENRY ONDERDONK, JR.,

} Queens County.

HENRY P. HEDGES, Suffolk County.

This met with a prompt response from Brooklyn's educated and progressive citizens. The society was resolved upon; appropriate committees appointed to prepare an act of incorporation under the general law, and a constitution and by-laws, and to provide the requisite rooms. The organization being effected, rooms were secured in the Hamilton Building, on the corner of Court and Joralemon streets.

The first election of officers took place in these rooms in May, 1863, the following full board being elected:

President, James C. Brevoort; *First Vice President*, John Greenwood; *Second*, Charles E. West; *Foreign Corresponding Secretary*, Henry C. Murphy; *Home Corresponding Secretary*, John Winslow; *Recording Secretary*, A. Cooke Hull, M. D.; *Treasurer*, Charles Congdon; *Librarian*, Henry R. Stiles.

DIRECTORS.—Charles Congdon; Roswell Graves; Thomas W. Field; A. C. Hull, M. D.; J. M. Van Cott; Ethelbert S. Mills; R. S. Storrs, Jr., D.D.; Henry R. Stiles, M. D.; A. N. Littlejohn, D. D.; Charles E. West; LL. D.; A. A. Low; George W. Parsons; Alden J. Spooner; John Winslow; S. B. Chittenden; Hon. John Greenwood; George A. Stephenson; Hon. Henry C. Murphy; William Poole; Henry Sheldon; J. Carson Brevoort; W. I. Buddington, D. D.; Elias Lewis, Jr.; Theodore L. Mason, M. D.; Henry E. Pierrepont.

COUNSELLORS.—*Kings County*: Hon. John A. Lott; Francis Vinton, D. D.; T. G. Bergen; F. A. Farley, D. D.; Benjamin D. Silliman; Hon. James Humphrey. *Queens County*: William Cullen Bryant; Hon. John A. King; Richard C. McCormick; John Harold; L. B. Prince; Solomon D. Townsend. *Suffolk County*: Hon. Selah B. Strong; Hon. J. L. Smith; William S. Pelletreau; James H. Tuthill; Rev. E. Whitaker; Henry P. Hedges.

EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE.—R. S. Storrs, Jr., D. D. (chairman); J. M. Van Cott; Alden J. Spooner; E. S. Mills; George W. Parsons; Henry Sheldon; Simeon B. Chittenden; Henry R. Stiles (secretary).

The first annual meeting (second year) was held May 5th, 1864, at which all the above officers were re-elected; and the first annual report was presented, which exhibits a beginning of great vigor and hopefulness. In this report Dr. HENRY R. STILES, the librarian, says:

"The nucleus of a library, with which we commenced our operations on the 4th of June last, comprised about 800 bound volumes and 1,000 unbound volumes and pamphlets. This collection, consisting chiefly of works relating to Long Island and American local history, family genealogies and newspapers, was contributed mainly by Messrs. J. C. Brevoort, A. J. Spooner, E. B. Spooner, Henry Onderdonk, Jr., and Henry R. Stiles. We then occupied two apartments, one used as a lecture room; the other and smaller of the two was shelved as a library room, having, as we then modestly thought, ample accommodations for the next two years. We soon found, however, that we had quite under-estimated the liberality of our friends; for so large was their sympathy, so active their co-operation, and so steady the influx of their gifts—never intermitting for a single day, it might almost be said for a single moment—that it soon became evident we

should need more book room. At this point in our history (in September, 1863), the receipt of nearly 1,100 valuable volumes from the trustees of the former City Library fairly overwhelmed our slender accommodations, and obliged us to extend our borders by securing three large and commodious apartments adjoining the library."

These claims for additional space made by the natural history and museum department, as well as the library, soon compelled the occupation of the entire third story of the large building fronting on Court and Joralemon streets, comprising eight ample and convenient rooms, there being one reading room especially for ladies, with cosy alcoves for books and appropriate spaces for a large collection of valuable pictures. In these rooms the collections remained until removed to the Society's own building. For the annual courses of lectures, the large lecture room of the Packer Institute, and, at times, the Athenæum on Atlantic avenue, were used. For additional space for the lectures, the Society for several years latterly has occupied the Second Pres. Church, and the beautiful auditorium of the First Baptist Church on Clinton street.

The Society having been greatly favored in the accumulation of materials of history, a spirit sprang up, among the members, of individual and mutual labor on works of local history. The principal of these were:

A History of Brooklyn (in three volumes), by Henry R. Stiles, M. D.

The Wallabout Series of Memoirs of the Prison Ships, with annotations (in two volumes), by Henry R. Stiles, M. D.

Journal by two Lbadists, Dankers and Shuyter, of a voyage to New Netherlands, from Holland, in 1670-80, by Henry C. Murphy, Esq. (Vol. I. of the Society's Collections).

History of the Battle of Long Island, by Thomas W. Field, Esq. (Vol. II. of the Society's Collections).

The Campaign of 1776 around New York and Brooklyn, including particulars of the battle of Long Island, by H. P. Johnson. (Vol. III. of the Society's Collections).

Sketch of the first settlement of Long Island, by Silas Wood; reprinted with biography and annotations, by A. J. Spooner, Esq.

History of Brooklyn, by Gabriel Furman; reprinted with biography by A. J. Spooner, Esq., and notes by H. R. Stiles, M. D.

Revolutionary Incidents in Kings, Queens and Suffolk, by Henry Onderdonk, Jr., of Jamaica.

Dr. Stiles, having resigned his office of librarian, was succeeded by George Hannah, who has served since July 1st, 1865.

The collections in books and objects of art and curiosity increased so largely as to call imperatively for a new building, and an active committee was appointed, which prosecuted the work with zeal and success. In November, 1877, it was reported that \$100,000 had been subscribed. Plans were solicited, and those of George B. Post, a New York architect, were preferred. Under his care the edifice was completed; and it was formally taken possession of with appropriate ceremonies and speeches, Wednesday, January 22d, 1881, in the lecture room of the new building. Samuel McLean was chairman of the building committee.

The number of subscribers to the building fund was exactly 300. The amount subscribed was \$137,684. The cost of the building was \$121,250. The three lots on which it stands cost, in 1867, \$32,500, on which \$20,000 was then paid by subscribers, leaving a mortgage of \$14,500; this was paid off on the delivery of the building, and a balance of \$2,000 paid to the society. The society, like the Academy of Music and the Mercantile Library, has demonstrated the high-toned intelligence and liberality of the "City of Churches" in whatever concerns its religious, moral or social welfare. Among the benefactors of the society (much too numerous to permit of the mention of all, or even the leading contributors) should be named Miss Caroline and Miss Ellen Thurston, who gave \$2,000 for a department of the History of Egypt, the Holy Land and Greece; and the late Mrs. Maria Cary, who subscribed \$2,500 to found a department of American Biography. An unknown giver donated \$2,000 as the nucleus of a permanent fund for increasing the library. The principal addition to this fund has been Mr. Geo. I. Seney's gift of \$50,000; while he also gave \$12,000 for immediate expenditure in books, and \$25,000 for binding books. The late Hon. Henry C. Murphy, in 1881, presented 250 exceedingly valuable volumes relating to the history of Holland; which Mr. J. Carson Brevoort, himself one of the most persistently generous donors to the Society since its first inception, supplemented by many rare and interesting and valuable works in the same line. There are other invested funds for special departments.

The Society is now established and fully equipped in its new and superb building, Clinton and Pierrepont streets, Brooklyn. The library now contains over 35,000 volumes, exclusive of pamphlets, many of which latter will soon become books, through the simple process of binding, with nearly an equal number of pamphlets. To these there have been constant large additions of rare and valuable books in every department, from the funds subscribed for such purpose.

The establishment of a Museum of Local Natural History and Ethnology, engaged the attention of the society, as early as June, 1864; and in the following year, through the enthusiastic and unwearied efforts of Elias Lewis, Jr., and others, a "Department of the Natural History of L. I." was founded; regular special meetings of those members who were interested in Natural History studies were held in the Society's rooms; and the rapid influx of contributions of value soon assured the success of the project. Among the most

prominent in this department of labor were, Elias Lewis, Jr., Charles Congdon; J. Carson Brevoort; Charles E. West; Henry E. Pierrepont; Wm. Goold Leveson; C. H. Baxter; John Ackhurst; Alfred Young, and others, both in Brooklyn and throughout the island. The especial object of establishing a Museum, local in its scope and characteristic, has found its fullest development in the Society's new building; where the well arranged collection illustrating the Natural History and productions of Long Island; the relics of its aboriginal inhabitants; and many unique and interesting ethnological specimens from every part of the world, are admirably displayed, and form a most attractive feature of the society's operations.

For all the privileges of the library, museum and lectures the fees are \$5 for initiation and the same amount annually; life membership \$100. There are over 1,300 annual and life members.

OFFICERS, 1882-3.—Rev. Richard S. Storrs, D. D., LL. D., *President*; Hon. Henry C. Murphy, LL. D., *First Vice-President*; Joshua M. Van Cott, *Second Vice-President*; Hon. Benjamin D. Silliman, *Foreign Corresponding Secretary*; Rev. Charles H. Hall, D. D., *Home Corresponding Secretary*; Chauncey L. Mitchell, M. D., *Recording Secretary*; John S. Ward, *Chairman of the Executive Committee*; A. W. Humphreys, *Treasurer*; George Hannah, *Librarian*; Elias Lewis, Jr., *Curator of the Museum*.

DIRECTORS.—Rev. Richard S. Storrs, D. D., LL. D.; Hon. Henry C. Murphy, LL. D.; Samuel McLean; Alfred S. Barnes; Rev. Charles H. Hall, D. D.; James R. Taylor; Henry E. Pierrepont; Geo. I. Seney; A. Abbot Low; Alexander M. White; Henry Sheldon; Walter T. Hatch; Hon. Simeon B. Chittenden; Hon. Benjamin D. Silliman; J. Carson Brevoort, LL. D.; Joshua M. Van Cott; Alexander E. Orr; Joseph C. Hutchison, M. D.; Rev. Alfred P. Putnam, D. D.; Elias Lewis, Jr.; John S. Ward; A. W. Humphreys; Henry D. Polhemus; Bryan H. Smith; Chauncey L. Mitchell, M. D.

COUNCILLORS.—*Kings County*.—Peter C. Cornell; Rt. Rev. A. N. Littlejohn, D. D.; Hon. J. S. T. Stranahan; Abraham R. Baylis; David M. Stone; Thomas E. Stillman; Hon. John Greenwood; Rev. Frederick A. Farley, D. D.; Prof. Darwin G. Eaton; George L. Nichols; Rev. N. H. Schenck, D. D.; Hon. Joseph Neilson. *Queens County*.—Henry Onderdonk, Jr.; William Floyd Jones; John A. King; Benjamin D. Hicks. *Suffolk County*.—James H. Tuthill; Hon. J. Lawrence Smith; Rev. Ephraim Whittaker; William Nicol; Hon. John R. Reed.

HISTORY OF KINGS COUNTY.

CHAPTER I.

FIRST LAND PURCHASES AND SETTLEMENTS—THE PRIMITIVE GOVERNMENT—KINGS COUNTY.

THE territory now included in Kings county is bounded on the north by the East River and Queens county, on the east by Queens county, on the south by the Atlantic Ocean, and on the west by the East River and New York Bay. It includes Plum Island, Barren Island, Coney Island, and all the other islands south from Gravesend. It scarcely exceeds ten miles in extent in any direction, and has only an area of about 76 square miles.

The first spot on Long Island pressed by the foot of a white man is within the limits of this county. For, even if the "most beautiful lake," said to have been penetrated by Verazzano in 1524, and which he described in glowing colors to his Royal Master the King of France, was indeed the bay of New York, yet his visit, according to his own account, was little else than a traveller's hurried glimpse, totally unproductive of results, either in respect to exploration or occupation. Early in September, 1609, a boat's crew from the "Half Moon" landed on Coney Island; and when the good ship came to anchor at the mouth of the "Great River of the Mountains," then, undoubtedly, the eyes of white men rested for the first time upon the Isle of "Mannahata," the green shores of "Scheyichbi," or New Jersey, and the forest-crowned "Ihpetonga," or "Heights" of the present city of Brooklyn. During many years subsequent to that time, while trade between the Dutch and the natives was carried on, and while settlements for the prosecution of this trade were made at New York, Albany and elsewhere, no regular settlements are known to have been made on the western end of Long Island. Visits for the purpose of trade were made by individuals; and, without doubt, temporary residences for this purpose were established. It is said,

by some historians, that a family of French Protestants settled at the Wallabout in 1623; and that there the first white child native on Long Island, Sarah Rapelje, was born, on the 9th of June in that year. Later investigators have shown this tradition to be incorrect; that George Jans Rapelje could have made only a brief temporary stay, if any, there at that time; and that his daughter Sarah was, in fact, born at Albany.

The earliest recorded grant of lands in this county was made by the Indians to Jacob Van Corlaer, in June, 1636. On the same day Andries Hudde and Wolfert Gerritson purchased land contiguous to this; and, soon afterward, the director, Wouter Van Twiller, also purchased adjoining lands. These purchases formed the site of "New Amersfoort," now *Flatlands*. It is believed that a settlement and improvements had been made here prior to these purchases.

In the same year was made the Bennet and Bentyen purchase, from the Indians, of 930 acres at Gowanus, and the occupation and improvement of this land followed close on its purchase. In 1637, Joris Jansen de Rapalie bought, from the Indians, some 335 acres on the Wallabout Bay. These purchases were the foundation of the present City of *Brooklyn*.

The settlers here were emigrants from the low lands in Holland, and their choice, of the flat untimbered lands along the shore of the bay and river, was doubtless directed by their acquaintance with the methods of agriculture in similar regions in the Fatherland. From this beginning the settlement of Kings county, as well as of the rest of Long Island and the adjacent regions, spread, though not with the rapidity of modern times.

All the towns in the county were originally settled by the Dutch except Gravesend, which, as well as some of the towns in Queens county, was settled by the English, on condition of taking the oath of allegiance to the States General and to the Dutch West India Company.

The first purchases of land in this county were made by the settlers from the Indians and afterward con-

firmed by the Dutch authorities ; but, in 1638 and 1639, Director Kieft secured by purchase from the Indians the title to nearly all the land in the counties of Kings and Queens. The Director and Council of New Netherland were directed to furnish every emigrant, according to his condition and means, with as much land as he and his family could properly cultivate ; a quit rent of a tenth being reserved to the company, thus assuring legal estates of inheritance to the grantees. Each colonist availing himself of this privilege was required to sign a pledge of obedience to the officers of the Company, acting in subordination to the States General, and promising in all questions and differences, which might arise, to abide by the decisions of the Colonial courts. Free passage and other inducements were also offered to respectable farmers who wished to emigrate to the new country. Thus were the titles to the land here originally acquired.

As nearly as can be ascertained, the towns in Kings county were settled in the following order: FLATLANDS, 1624; BROOKLYN, 1636; GRAVESEND, 1645; FLATBUSH, 1651; NEW UTRECHT, 1657; BUSHWICK, 1660. Under the Dutch *regime* there were no territorial divisions corresponding with what are now counties. The simple government of the towns was in part administered by magistrates, nominated by the people and confirmed by the governor. Practically, however, the power of the governor was almost absolute, and it appears that the rights of the people were held to be quite subordinate to his personal preferences; for it is said that he sported with these rights by wantonly rejecting such magistrates as they had chosen, merely to gratify his humor or caprice. Laws which were obsolete, and illy adapted to the circumstances by which the people were surrounded, were enforced among them, and were badly executed; grants were withheld from actual settlers and bestowed with a lavish hand on particular individuals; magistrates were appointed without the consent of the people, and the government of these towns exhibited at the same time tyranny and imbecility on the part of those entrusted with its administration. It is elsewhere recorded that, in 1653, conventions were held, and remonstrances on the subject of the many grievances of the people were addressed to the Governor and Council, with no result except a peremptory order from the irritated governor, to disperse and not to again assemble on such business. Some of the towns in Kings county were represented in these conventions.

It will be remembered that several of the towns in Queens county, though under the jurisdiction of the Dutch, were settled by English immigrants. These became anxious for a change; and the Dutch in the towns of Kings county, who had become disgusted with the government, were not averse to it. This was the state of feeling here when, by the revolution of 1664, the Colony of New Netherland was surrendered to Great Britain.

One of the first important acts under the English regime was the erection of Long Island, Staten Island, and probably the town of Westchester, into a "shire," called *Yorkshire*; and the division of this into "ridings," of which Staten Island, the town of Newtown, and the present county of Kings, constituted the *West riding*. A deputy sheriff or high constable was appointed for each riding, and a justice of the peace for each town.

This system of county government continued till 1683, when, by an act of the first colonial Legislature, the counties were organized. Staten Island was detached from the West riding in 1675 ; and, by the act of 1683, Newtown was made a part of Queens county, leaving Kings county with its present boundaries.

The expectations which had been entertained of improvement by a change of masters were disappointed. The English governors were invested with powers as nearly absolute as those possessed by the directors under the Dutch regime. Governor Nicolls exercised these powers with such caution as to excite but little alarm; but the weaker Governor Lovelace, by his disregard of the people's rights, aroused such a feeling among the inhabitants of Kings county, that, although they were less demonstrative in their indignation than their English neighbors, they were ready to welcome the restoration of the authority of their countrymen in 1673. This, however, was of but short duration, for in 1674 the rule of the Dutch in the colony ceased forever.

CHAPTER II.

THE SYSTEM OF FAMILY NAMES AMONG THE DUTCH SETTLERS.

THE following letter, descriptive of Dutch family nomenclature, was written by the late Hon. HENRY C. MURPHY during his residence as U. S. Minister at the Hague. It is so replete with information concerning names and families in Brooklyn and Kings County, that it cannot fail to be of interest :

"The great body of Netherlanders who settled permanently in America belonged, without exception, to the industrial classes. The most distinguished families, those whose ancestors filled the most important positions in the new settlement, as well as others, were from the great body of burghers. The only Governor who remained in the country, Peter Stuyvesant, was the son of a minister of Scherpenzeed, in Friesland ; and the only patroon who settled upon his estates, Kiliaen Van Rensselaer, was a merchant of Amsterdam. Although the Republic confirmed no titles, it protected the old nobility in their estates, and they and their families were content to leave the distant enterprises in the hands of the other classes, and remain in the province.

"In the consideration of names, in order to show what difficulties the peculiar systems adopted in Holland and continued by the settlers in their new home throw in the way of tracing genealogies, it is to be observed that the first of these, in point of time, was the patronymic, as it is called, by which a child took, besides his own baptismal name, that of his

father, with the addition of *zoon* or *sen*, meaning son. To illustrate this: if a child were baptised Hendrick and the baptismal name of his father were Jan, the child would be called Hendrick Jansen. His son, if baptized Tunis, would be called Tunis Hendricksen; the son of the latter might be Willem, and would have the name of Willem Tunissen. And so we might have the succeeding generations called successively Garret Willemsen, Marten Garretsen, Adrian Martensen, and so on, through the whole of the calendar of Christian names; or, as more frequently happened, there would be repetition in the second, third, or fourth generation, of the name of the first; and thus, as these names were common to the whole people, there were in every community different lineages of identically the same name. This custom, which had prevailed in Holland for centuries, was in full vogue at the time of the settlement of New Netherland. In writing the termination *sen* it was frequently contracted into *se*, or *z*, or *s*. Thus the name of William Barrentsen, who commanded in the first three Arctic voyages of exploration, in 1594, 1595, and 1596, is given in the old accounts of those voyages, Barentsen, Barentse, Barentz, Barents, sometimes in one way, sometimes another, indifferently. Or, to give an example nearer home, both of the patronymic custom and of the contraction of the name, the father of Garret Martense, the founder of a family of that name in Flatbush, was Martin Adriaense, and his father was Adriæ Ryerse, who came from Amsterdam. The inconveniences of this practice, the confusion to which it gave rise, and the difficulty of tracing families, led ultimately to its abandonment both in Holland and in our own country. In doing so the patronymic which the person originating the name bore was adopted as the surname. Most of the family names thus formed and existing amongst us may be said to be of American origin, as they were first fixed in America, though the same names were adopted by others in Holland. Hence we have the names of such families of Dutch descent amongst us as Jansen (*anglice*, Johnson), Garretsen, Cornelisen, Williamsen or Williamson, Hendricksen or Hendrickson, Clasen, Simonsen or Simonson, Tysen (son of Mathias), Aresend (son of Arend), Hansen, Lambertsen or Lambertson, Paulisen, Remsen (son of Rembrandt, which was shortened into Rem), Ryersen, Martense, Adriance, Rutgers, Everts, Phillips, Lefferts and others. To trace connection between these families and persons in this country, it is evident, would be impossible, for the reason stated, without a regular record.

"Another mode of nomenclature, intended to obviate the difficulty of an identity of names for the time being, but which rendered the confusion worse confounded for the future genealogist, was to add to the patronymic name the occupation or some other personal characteristic of the individual. Thus Laurens Jansen, the inventor of the art of printing, as the Dutch claim, had affixed to his name that of *Coster*—that is to say, *sexton*—an office of which he was in possession of the emoluments. But the same addition was not transmitted to the son; and thus the son of Hendrick Jansen Coster might be called Tunis Hendrickson Brouwer (brewer), and his grandson might be William Tunissen Bleecker (bleacher). Upon the abandonment of the old system of names, this practice went with it; but it often happened that, while one brother took the father's patronymic as a family name, another took that of his occupation or personal designation. Thus originated such families as Coster, Brouwer, Bleecker, Schoonmaker, Stryker, Schuyler, Cryger, Snediker, Hegeman, Hofman, Dykman, Bleekman, Wortman and Tieman. Like the others, they are not ancient family names, and are not all to be traced to Holland as the place where they first became fixed. Some of them were adopted in our own country.

"A third practice, evidently designed, like that referred to, to obviate the confusions of the first, was to append the name of the place where the person resided—not often of a large city, but of a particular, limited locality, and frequently of a particular farm or natural object. This custom is denoted in all family names which have the prefix of *Van* *Vander*, *Ver* (which is the contraction of *Vander*), and *Ten*—meaning, respectively, *of*, *of the*, and *at the*. From towns in Holland we have the families of Van Cleef, Van Wyck, Van Schaack, Van Bergen, and others; from Guelderland, those of Van Sinderen, Van Dyk, and Van Buren; from Utrecht, Van Winkel; from Friesland, Van Ness; from Zeeland, Van Duyn. Sometimes the *Van* has been dropped, as in the name of Boerum, of the province of Friesland; of Covert, of North Brabant; of Westervelt, of Drenthe; of Brevoort and Wessels, in Guelderland. The prefixes, *Vander* or *Ver* and *Ten* were adopted where the name was derived from a particular spot; thus: Vanderveer (of the ferry); Vanderburg (of the hill); Vanderbilt (of the bilt—i. e., certain elevations of ground in Guelderland and New Utrecht), Vanderbeck (of the brook), Vanderhoff (of the court), Verplanck (of the plank), Verhultz (of the holly), Verkerk (of the church), Ten Eyck (at the oak), Tenbroeck (at the marsh). Some were derived, as we have observed, from particular farms; thus: Van Couwenhoven (also written Van Cowdenhoven—cold farms). The founder of that family in America, Wolphert Gerritsen Van Cowenhoven, came from Amersfoort, in the province of Utrecht, and settled at what is now called Flatlands, in our county, but what was called by him New Amersfoort. Some names in the classification which I have attempted, have undergone a slight change in their transfer to America. Barculo is from Borculo, a town in Guelderland; Van Anden is from Andel, in the province of Groningen; Snediker should be Snediger; Bonton, if of Dutch origin, should be Bonten (son of Bundwijn or Baldwin), otherwise it is French. Van Cott was probably Van Catt, of South Holland. The Catti were the original inhabitants of the country, and hence the name. There is one family which has defied all my etymological research. It is evidently Dutch, but has most likely undergone some change, and that name is of Van Brunt. There is no such name now existing in Holland. There are a few names derived from relative situations to a place: thus Voorhees is simply *before* or in front of *Hess*, a town in Guelderland; and Onderdonk is *below Donk*, which is in Brabant. There are a few names more arbitrary—Middagh (mid-day); Conrad (bold counsel); Hagedorn (hawthorn); Bogaert (or hard), Blauvelt (blue field), Rosevelt (rose field), Stuyvesant (quicksand), Wyckoff (parish court), Hoogland (highland), Dorland (arid land), Opdyke (on the dyke), Hasbrook (hare's marsh)—these afford a more ready means of identification of relationship. The names of Brinkerhoff and Schenck, the latter of which is very common here, may be either of Dutch or German origin. Martin Schenck was a somewhat celebrated general in the war of independence. Ditmars is derived from the Danish, and Bethune is from a place in the Spanish Netherlands, near Lille. Lott is a Dutch name though it has an English sound. There is a person of that name, from Guelderland, residing in the Hague. Pieter Lots was one of the schepens of Amersfoort in 1676, and I infer from the patronymic form of his name that Lott is a baptismal name and is derived from Lodewyck or Lewis, and that Pieter Lots means Peter the son of Lodewyck or Lot, as the former is often contracted. Some names are disguised in a Latin dress. The practice prevailed, at the time of the emigration to our country, of changing the names of those who had gone through the University and received a degree, from plain Dutch to sonorous Roman. The names of

all our early ministers are thus altered. Johannes or Jan Mecklenburg became Johannes Megapolensis; Evert Willemse Bogaert became Everardus Bogardus; Jan Doris Polheem became Johannes Theodorus Polhemius. The last was the founder of the Polhemus family of Brooklyn. The records here show that he was a minister at Meppel, in the province of Drenthe, and in 1637 went as such to Brazil, under the auspices of the West India Company, whence he went to Long Island. Samuel Dries (who, by the way, was an Englishman, but who graduated at Leyden) was named Samuel Drisius. It may, therefore, be set down as a general rule, that the names of Dutch families ending in *us* have been thus latinized.

"Many persons who emigrated from Holland were of Gallic extraction. When the bloody Duke of Alva came into the Spanish Netherlands in 1567, clothed by the bigoted Phillip II with despotic power over the provinces, more than 100,000 of the Protestants of the Gallic provinces fled to England, under the protection of Queen Elizabeth, and to their brethren in Zeeland and Holland. They retained their language, that of the ancient Gauls, and were known in England as Walloons, and in Holland as Waalen, from the name of their provinces, called Gaulsche, or, as the word is pronounced, Waalsche provinces. The number of fugitives from religious persecution was increased by the flight of the Protestants of France at the same time, and was further augmented, five years later, by the memorable massacre of St. Bartholomew. When the West India Company was incorporated, many of these persons and their descendants sought further homes in New Netherland. Such were the founders of the families of Rapelye, Cortelyou, Dubois, De Bevoise, Dur-yea, Crommelin, Conselyea, Montague, Fountain, and others. The Waalebocht, or Walloon's Bay, was so named because some of them settled there.

"In regard to Dutch names proper, it cannot fail to have been observed that they are of the simplest origin. They partake of the character of the people, which is eminently practical. The English, and, in fact, all the northern nations of Europe, have exhibited this tendency, more or less, in the origin of family designations, but none of them have carried it to so great a degree as the Dutch. We have in America, both in Dutch and English, the names of White (De Witt), Black (Swart), and Brown (Broom); but not, according to my recollection, the names of Blue, Yellow, and Red, which exist in Holland."

CHAPTER III.

HOUSES AND FURNITURE AMONG THE DUTCH PIONEERS.

THE domestic history of Kings county can hardly be said to have commenced earlier than about 1636, when the first land was purchased from the Indians. Between 1623, when the ship "New Netherland" brought thirty families to Manhattan Island, and 1636, when the settlement of Kings county was commenced, isolated families may have established residences there, but no record of the fact remains.

The earliest Dutch traders led an unsettled and semi-savage life. The restraints of civilization did not reach them. They found native concubines wherever

they went, and these were changed with every temporary change of location; while the children were left to be reared by their savage mothers.

A different life was led by the pioneers who came with their families. They had left the Fatherland and crossed the ocean to make this their permanent home, and they at once entered on the realities of the life before them. Their first dwellings were of the rudest kind. Some were constructed of saplings, covered with bark; and some were cellars excavated in the sides of hills, lined with bark and thatched with reeds. As soon as improving circumstances permitted, better dwellings were built. The earliest saw-mills furnished the timber for these, which were small, one-story buildings, with straw-thatched-roofs, stone fire-places, and ovens, and chimneys of boards plastered inside with mortar or mud. Each of these houses was protected against the attack of Indians by a surrounding of palisades. These dwellings were fitted with furniture of the simplest form, and of domestic manufacture. Rough shelves served instead of cupboards or pantries, and "slaap bancks," sleeping benches, or bunks, were used for bedsteads. Though unpretentious in appearance, these houses were the abodes of comfort. After the lapse of some years they were succeeded by larger and more substantial edifices, modeled, of course, after the houses in the Fatherland, with only such modifications as the change of circumstances demanded. After the establishment of a brick-yard at N. Amsterdam, in 1666, brick houses became the fashion with the few who could afford the expense. But the best edifices of that day were very cheap, rarely exceeding \$800 in value; while the cost of an ordinary house ranged from \$200 to \$500 of our present currency, and rents varied from \$25 to \$100.

STILES says of the farm-houses of Long Island, which succeeded the first rude cabins of the settlers on the shores of the Waale-boght, and at "the Ferry," "that they were generally constructed in a rough but substantial manner of stone, lighted by narrow windows, containing two small panes of glass—and protected against the "overloopen" or escalading of any savage foe, by strong well-pointed palisades; snugness, economy, safety, were the characteristics of these country dwellings." But little change occurred in the style of architecture here during many years, for the Dutch were slow to adopt innovations.

An interesting description of the manner in which the old farmers of Breuckelen lived, is given by the Labadist travellers, who visited this country in 1679. Among others, they visited Simon de Hart, whose old house is yet standing near the Gowanus Cove, at the foot of the present 38th street:

"He was very glad to see us, and so was his wife. He took us into the house and entertained us exceedingly well. We found a good fire, half-way up the chimney, of clear oak and hickory, of which they made not the least scruple of burn-

ing profusely. We let it penetrate us thoroughly. There had been already thrown upon it, to be roasted, a pail full of *Gowanus* oysters, which are the best in the country. They are fully as good as those of England, and better than those we eat at Falmouth. I had to try some of them raw. They are large and full, *some of them not less than a foot long*, and they grow sometimes ten, twelve, and sixteen together, and are then like a piece of rock. Others are young and small. In consequence of the great quantities of them, everybody keeps the shells for the purpose of burning them into lime. They pickle the oysters in small casks, and send them to Barbadoes and the other islands. We had for supper a roasted haunch of venison, which he had bought of the Indians for three guilders and a half of *seewant*, that is fifteen stivers of Dutch money (15 cents), and which weighed thirty pounds. The meat was exceedingly tender and good, and also quite fat. It had a slight aromatic flavor. We were also served with wild turkey, which was also fat and of a good flavor, and a wild goose, but that was rather dry. Every thing we had was the natural production of the country. We saw here, lying in a heap, a whole hill of water-melons, which were as large as pumpkins, and which Simon was going to take to the city to sell. They were very good, though there is a difference between them and those of the Carribby islands; but this may be owing to its being very late in the season, and these were the last pulling. It was very late at night when we went to rest in a Kermis bed, as it is called, in the corner of the hearth, alongside of a good fire."

They also visited Jacques Cortelyou, in New Utrecht, who had just built an excellent stone house, the best dwelling in the place. "After supper," they say, "we went to sleep in the barn upon some straw spread with sheepskins, in the midst of the continuous grunting of hogs, squealing of pigs, bleating and coughing of sheep, barking of dogs, crowing of cocks, cackling of hens, and especially a goodly quantity of fleas and vermin, of no small portion of which we were participants, and all with an open barn-door, through which a fresh north wind was blowing. * * We could not complain, since we had the same quarters and kind of bed that their own son usually had, who now, on our arrival, crept in the straw behind us."

STILES says (*History of Brooklyn*) that "most of the later dwellings of the Dutch on Long Island were of wood, shingled on the side, as well as the roof; some few of brick; and, here and there, a substantial stone house. These were all one-story edifices, with either an 'overshot,' or projecting roof, forming a piazza both on the front and rear; or the 'overshot' in front, with the roof extending on the rear until within a few feet of the ground. The low-browed rooms were unceiled, showing overhead the broad, heavy oak beams, upon which the upper, or garret floor was laid. The lower half of the wall inside the houses was wainscoted, the upper half plastered. The fireplaces were usually very large, generally extending, without jambs, to a width sufficient to accommodate the whole family with seats near the fire. The chimneys were capacious, and in them the meat was hung for roasting, or to be 'cured' by smoking. They were usually kept clean by 'burning out' during a rainy day, to avoid danger from fire. The jambs, when the fireplace had any, were usually set around with glazed blue delft-ware tiles, imported from Holland, representing scenes and Scriptural subjects, a never-failing source of amusement and instruction to the children, who frequently gained their first Bible instruction from these tile-pictures, aided by the explanations of the elder members of the family. Huge andirons and heavy fire-shovel and tongues were necessary for these fireplaces. The 'front stoop' was an important

feature in these houses. In some a seat ran the length of the 'stoop,' but in others there were seats at each end. It was, in good weather, the common gathering place of the family and their visitors.

"Before the English conquest of the Netherlands, the domestic habits and customs of the Dutch were simple and democratic in their character. All had come hither in search of fortune, and had brought little with them in the beginning. Some, indeed, through industry or peculiar sagacity, had attained positions of wealth, and of increased influence, yet it might justly be said of the Dutch, that their social circles were open to all of good character, without regard to business pursuits, or any factitious considerations. Rich and poor mingled together with a freedom and a heartiness of enjoyment which can hardly be expected to exist, except in the formative stage of society. The advent of the English, many of whom had high social connections at home, and corresponding habits, etc., brought change into the social life of the colony, and necessarily developed an aristocratic state of society previously unknown.

"In the 'best room' of every house, whether of the wealthy or humbler class, the high-posted, corded, and unwieldy *bedstead* was a principal object, and, with its furniture and hangings, formed the index of the social standing of its owner. Upon it, according to the old Dutch fashion, were two feather beds—one for the sleeper to lie upon, and another, of a lighter weight, to be used as a covering. The pillow-cases were generally of check patterns; and the curtains and valance were of as expensive materials as its owner could afford; while in front of the bed a rug was laid, for *carpets* were not then in common use. Among the Dutch, the only article of that sort, even up to the time of the Revolution, was a drugget cloth, which was spread under the table during meal-time, when, upon 'extra occasions,' the table was set in the parlor. But even these were unknown among the inhabitants of the neighboring Long Island towns. The uniform practice, after scrubbing the floor well on certain days, was to place upon the damp boards the fine white beach sand (of which every family kept a supply on hand, renewing it by trips to the seashore twice a year), arranged in small heaps, which the members of the family were careful not to disturb by treading upon; and, on the following day, when it had become dry, it was swept, by the light and skillful touch of the housewife's broom, into waves or other more fanciful figures. Rag carpets were unknown in Kings County until about the middle of the present century. The capacious *chest*, brought from Holland, occupied a prominent place in the house, for several generations: as was also the trundle (or 'Kermis') bed concealed under the bed by day, to be drawn out for the children's couch at night. *Chairs*, straight and high backed, were mostly of wood, sometimes covered with leather and studded with brass nails, but more frequently seated simply with matted rushes. *Tables*, except for kitchen use, were unknown to the earlier Dutch, and for many years to their successors. In the principal room, which held the fine bed, and was, also, tea and dining room on special occasions, was generally a round tea-table, with a leaf which could be dropped perpendicularly when not in use, and a large square table, with leaves, for use at tea-parties. *Looking-glasses*, in the early days, were generally small, with narrow black frames; and *window-curtains* were of the simplest and cheapest description, being no better in the best apartments than a strip of ordinary cloth run upon a string. *Clocks* were rare, and most families marked their time by the hour-glass;—the great eight-day clock, which we sometimes see as heir-looms in our oldest families, being first introduced in this country about

1720. *Earthenware*, until about 1700, was but little used in ordinary table service, wooden and pewter being then universally in use by all classes and preferred because it did not dull the knives. The few articles of china, kept by some for display upon the cupboard, were rarely used; and, though earthenware came into partial use about 1680, *pewter* was still the most common up to the period of the Revolution. Among the wealthy, blue and white china and porcelain, curiously ornamented with Chinese pictures, were used 'for company.' The teacups were very diminutive in size, for tea was then an article of the highest luxury, and was sipped in small quantities, alternately with a bite from the lump of loaf-sugar, which was laid beside each guest's plate. Sometimes china plates were used as wall-ornaments, suspended by a strong ribbon passed through a hole drilled in their edges. *Silverware*, in the form of tankards, beakers, porringers, spoons, snuffers, candlesticks, etc., was a favorite form of display among the Dutch, inasmuch as it served as an index of the owner's wealth, and was the safest and most convenient form of investment for any surplus funds. Of *books* our ancestors had but few, and these were mostly Bibles, Testaments and Psalm-Books. These Bibles were quaint specimens of early Dutch printing, with thick covers, massive brass, and sometimes silver, corner-pieces and clasps. The Psalm-Books were also adorned with silver edgings and clasps, and on Sabbath, hung by chains of the same material to the girdle of matrons and maidens. Merchants who kept school-books, psalm-books, etc., as a part of their stock, about the middle of the last century, were provided with an equal number of books in the Dutch and English language; showing that, even at that late period after the termination of the Dutch power, the greater part of the children of Dutch descent continued to be educated in the language of the Fatherland. *Spinning-wheels* were to be found in every family, many having four or five—some for spinning flax and others for wool. A Dutch matron, indeed, took great pride in her large stock of household linen (then cheaper than cotton); and it was the ambition of every maiden to take to her husband's house a full and complete stock of such domestic articles. *Light* was furnished only by home-made tallow 'dips.' "

The wealthier Dutch citizens had highly ornamented brass hooped casks in which to keep their liquors, which they never bottled. Holland gin, Jamaica rum, sherry, Bordeaux wines, English beer, or porter, beer from their own brewers, and cider, were common drinks in early times. When a wealthy young man among these settlers was about to be married, he usually sent to Madeira for a pipe of the best wine, a portion of which was drunk at his marriage, another portion at the birth of his first son, and the remainder was preserved to be used at his funeral.

CHAPTER IV.

PRIMITIVE INDUSTRIES—DOMESTIC AND SOCIAL CUSTOMS
—SLAVERY—EDUCATIONAL BEGINNING.

THE common means of *travelling*, were the lumber-wagons, and in winter the sleigh, running upon split saplings, and drawn, at a uniform dog-trot pace, by pot-bellied nags. During the early part of the 17th century, the two-wheeled one-horse

chaise came gradually into use, and was the fashionable vehicle up to the time of the Revolution. In riding horseback, the lady was mounted upon a pillow or padded cushion, fixed behind the saddle of the gentleman or servant, upon whose support she was therefore dependent; and this was the common mode of country travel for ladies at that day, when roads were generally little else than bridle paths. Side-saddles only came into partial use in the 18th century.

The *manners* of the people were simple, unaffected, and economical. Industry was cultivated by all; every son was brought up to the exercise of some mechanical employment, and every daughter to the knowledge of household duties. In those days, farmers made their own lime, tanned their own leather, often made their own shoes, did their own carpentering, wheelwrighting, and blacksmithing; while the females spun wool and flax, frequently taking their spinning-wheels with them when they went abroad to spend an afternoon with a neighbor's wife.

The Dutch were rather given to *nicknaming*—even in the public records we find such names as Friend John, Hans the Boore, Long Mary, Old Bush, and Top Knot Betty, evidently applied as expressing some individual peculiarity of person or character.

The *agriculture* of the country, during its earlier years, was probably equal to that of the "Fatherland" at that day, all due allowance being made for the novel and peculiar circumstances which surround the settler in a new and unimproved country. At the period of the Revolutionary War, the farmers of Kings County were in the habit of raising their own *tobacco*; and during the century previous it was extensively exported—some of the best tobacco sent to Europe from the American colonies being raised on the Dutch tobacco plantations around the Wallabout, in the town of Brooklyn. The farmers of this vicinity, also, for some time previous to the Revolution, were in the habit of raising *cotton*—although to a very limited extent, and solely for the domestic uses of their own households. FURMAN says in 1836: "We have now a bedspread in our family, made of cotton and wool, colored blue and white, and woven in neat and handsome figures, the *cotton* of which, as well as the wool, was raised on my grandfather's farm in Kings County, L. I., in the year 1775, and which was cleaned, colored, and woven by the women of his family. It is now in use, and in good condition, and is one of the best fabrics I ever saw."

Slavery was a feature of domestic history, which existed from an early period, and formed a considerable branch of the shipping interests of the Dutch. The mercantile value of a prime slave, both under the Dutch and English dynasties, was from \$120 to \$150, and when, from time to time, by natural increase and by importation, the number of slaves accumulated beyond the demand, the slave-trade decreased. Almost every domestic establishment of any pretensions in

city or country was provided with one or more negro servants. These did the most of the farm labor, and their number was considered as a significant indication of the relative wealth of different families. They were, as a general thing, kindly treated and well cared for. The institution of slavery, however, commended itself to the Dutch mind rather as a necessity than as a desirable system. In the city, the association of so many blacks gave rise to much trouble, and even to several outbreaks during the half century preceding the Revolution, seriously affecting the public peace; and in the rural districts, especially on Long Island, the intercourse of the city negroes with their own house and farm servants, was strongly deprecated and discouraged. After the Revolution, and under the beneficent influences of a more enlightened State legislation, slavery gradually disappeared. The last public sale of human beings in the town of Brooklyn is believed to have been that of four slaves belonging to the widow Heltje Rappelje, of the Wallabout, in the year 1773. It occurred at the division of her estate, and was, even at that time, considered an odious departure from the time-honored and more humane practice, which then prevailed, of permitting slaves who wished to be sold, or who were offered for sale, to select their own masters. Indigent immigrants, also, sold their services for definite periods, during which they were as much the subject of purchase and sale as veritable slaves.

As to some of the peculiar *funeral customs* of the Dutch, FURMAN says:

"Among our Dutch farmers in Kings County, it has been from time immemorial, and still is a custom for all the young men, after becoming of age, to lay up a sufficient sum of money in gold to pay the expense of their funerals. In many families the money thus hallowed is not expended for that purpose, but descends as a species of heir-loom through several generations. I have seen gold thus saved from before the Revolution, and now in the hands of the grandson, himself a man of family, having sons grown up to manhood, and which consisted of gold Johannes or Joes (\$16 pieces), guineas, etc."

Another practice was to lay aside for each member of the family a linen shirt, handkerchief, etc., and never suffer them to be worn, but keep them clean to be buried in. In case a woman died in childbed, a white sheet, instead of a black pall, was spread over her coffin as she was taken to the grave. At funerals, wines, pipes and cold collations were provided for the guests, and often linen scarfs, funeral cakes, etc., were distributed among them.

REV. P. VAN PELT, in a sketch of Dominie Schoonmaker of Brooklyn, thus describes a Dutch funeral:

"It was in 1819 that I last heard, or recollect to have seen, the venerable old dominie. It was at the funeral of one of his old friends and associates. A custom had very generally prevailed, which, though then very rarely observed, yet in this instance was literally adhered to. The deceased had, many years before, provided and laid away the materials for his own coffin. This one was of the best seasoned and smooth-

est boards, and beautifully grained. Other customs and ceremonies then existed, now almost forgotten. As I entered the room I observed the coffin elevated on a table in one corner. The dominie, abstracted and grave, was seated at the upper end; and around, in solemn silence, the venerable and hoary-headed friends of the deceased. All was still and serious. A simple recognition or a half-audible inquiry, as one after another arrived, was all that passed. Directly, the sexton, followed by a servant, made his appearance, with glasses and decanters. Wine was handed to each. Some declined; others drank a solitary glass. This ended, and again the sexton presented himself, with *pipes* and *tobacco*. The dominie smoked his pipe, and a few followed his example. The custom has become obsolete, and it is well that it has. When the whiffs of smoke had ceased to curl around the head of the dominie, he arose with evident feeling, and in a quiet, subdued tone, made a short but apparently impressive address. I judged solely by his appearance and manner; for, although boasting a Holland descent, it was to me speaking in an unknown tongue. A short prayer concluded the service; and then the sexton, taking the lead, was followed by the dominie, the doctor, and the pall-bearers, with white scarfs and black gloves. The corpse, and a long procession of friends and neighbors, proceeded to the churchyard, where all that was mortal was committed to the earth, till the last trumpet shall sound and the grave shall give up the dead. No bustle, no confusion, no noise nor indecent haste, attended that funeral."

It was a custom of the Dutch families in this county to bury their dead in private or family burial grounds, without monuments. Many such, especially Bushwick, have been obliterated, within a few years, by the extension of the city.

It seems to have been customary, also, among the Dutch, about the close of the last century, to designate a widow as "the last wife" of her deceased husband, and a widower as "the last man" of his deceased wife.

J. M. STEARNS, Esq., of Williamsburgh, remarks: "that the old Dutch wills seem not to trust the widow in a second marriage." The restraints placed upon remarriages, by wills, were generally in favor of the children of the first marriage; and the widows thus restricted generally signed consents to accept the bequests in lieu of dower, for the good reason that propriety did not allow them to refuse so soon after the death of their first husband; and, because the devises and bequests in lieu of dower vested an estate for life, or three-thirds of the estate subject to a contingency in their own control, instead of one-third absolutely. The will of Cornelius Van Catts, of Bushwick (1726), expressed in a sort of half Dutch dialect, devises to his wife, Annetjie, his whole estate to her while she remains his widow—both real and personal.

"But if she happen to marry, then I geff her nothing of my estate, neither real or personal. I geff to my well-beloved son, Cornelius, the best horse that I have, or else £7 10s., for his good as my eldest son. And then my two children, Cornelius Catts and David Catts, all heef [half] of my whole effects, land and movables, that is to say, Cornelius Catts heef of all, and David Catts heef of all. But my wife can be master of all, for bringing up to good learning my two children (*offetten*) school to learn. But if she comes to marry

again, then her husband can take her away from the farm, and all will be left for the children, Cornelius Catts and David Catts, heeff and heeff."

So also, John Burroughs, of Newtown (1678), devises to his son John his then dwelling-house, barn, orchard, out-houses, and land, etc.

"But not to dispossess my beloved wife during the time of her widowhood. But if she marry, then her husband must provide for her, as I have done."

They took special care to provide for the *education* of their children. Teachers were appointed only on the recommendation of the Governor, and their duties were very accurately prescribed. This subject, however, will be more fully treated in our chapter on *Education in Kings Co.*

What was termed "somp porridge" (from the Indian *searump*—pounded corn) was made by long boiling the corn that had been pounded in a wooden mortar, a process that was learned from the Indians. What was known as *suppaan* was made, in the same way, from more finely ground meal. These mortars or "pioneer mills," as they have sometimes been called, were at first the only means the settlers possessed of converting their corn into coarse meal, and the process was called "niggering" corn, because the work was usually done by negro slaves.

Tea drinking was a custom of later date. The practice of interchanging visits on Sunday afternoons was prevalent, but the clergy and some of the strictest of the laity, influenced by the views of their New England neighbors, came to regard it as an evil and it was gradually discontinued. FURMAN says:

"It seems more like puritanical rigor than an exhibition of Christian feeling, to break up such kindly and social meetings as these after the religious services of the day have been performed."

Under the colonial government, nearly all *marriages* on the island were under license from the governor—a practice which increased his income and added to the expense of entering the matrimonial state. Marriage by publication of the bans seems to have been held in disrepute. In 1673 there was an officer in New York whose duty, which extended to Long Island, was to hear and determine matrimonial disputes. He was styled "the first commissary of marriage affairs." Such an officer at the present day would lead a busy life.

Many of the *amusements, sports, and fireside enjoyments* of the people here, as well as their religious customs and superstitions, were transplanted from the native countries of the original settlers. The origin of many of these in the remote past is lost; but customs often outlive the ideas which gave birth to them. On the annual return of Christmas the yule-log and Christmas candles were burned among the English settlers as in ancient times in "Merrie England," and the Dutch celebrated the holiday with still greater zest, after the

manner of their forefathers in the Netherlands. St. Nicholas, or "Santa Klaas," was regarded among the Dutch children as a veritable personage, and they had a hymn in the Dutch language which they sang on the occasion of their Christmas festivities, the first line of which was "Sanctus Klaas goet heyligh man" (St. Nicholas, good holy man). The practice, which was introduced by these Dutch settlers, of having their children's stockings hung up to be filled by Santa Klaas, is far from being extinct. New Year's eve and the first of January were formerly celebrated in a noisy way, by firing guns at the doors in a neighborhood, when their neighbors thus saluted were expected to invite their friends in to partake of refreshments, and then join them to thus salute others till all the men were collected together, when they repaired to a rendezvous and passed the day in athletic sports and target firing. It was finally deemed necessary to arrest, by legal enactments, this practice of firing guns on these occasions. When the style was changed, the Dutch here at first refused to recognize the change in their celebration of these festivals. New Year was never celebrated with greater cordiality and hospitality than by these people, and their old customs are plainly traceable in the manner of keeping the day still in vogue here.

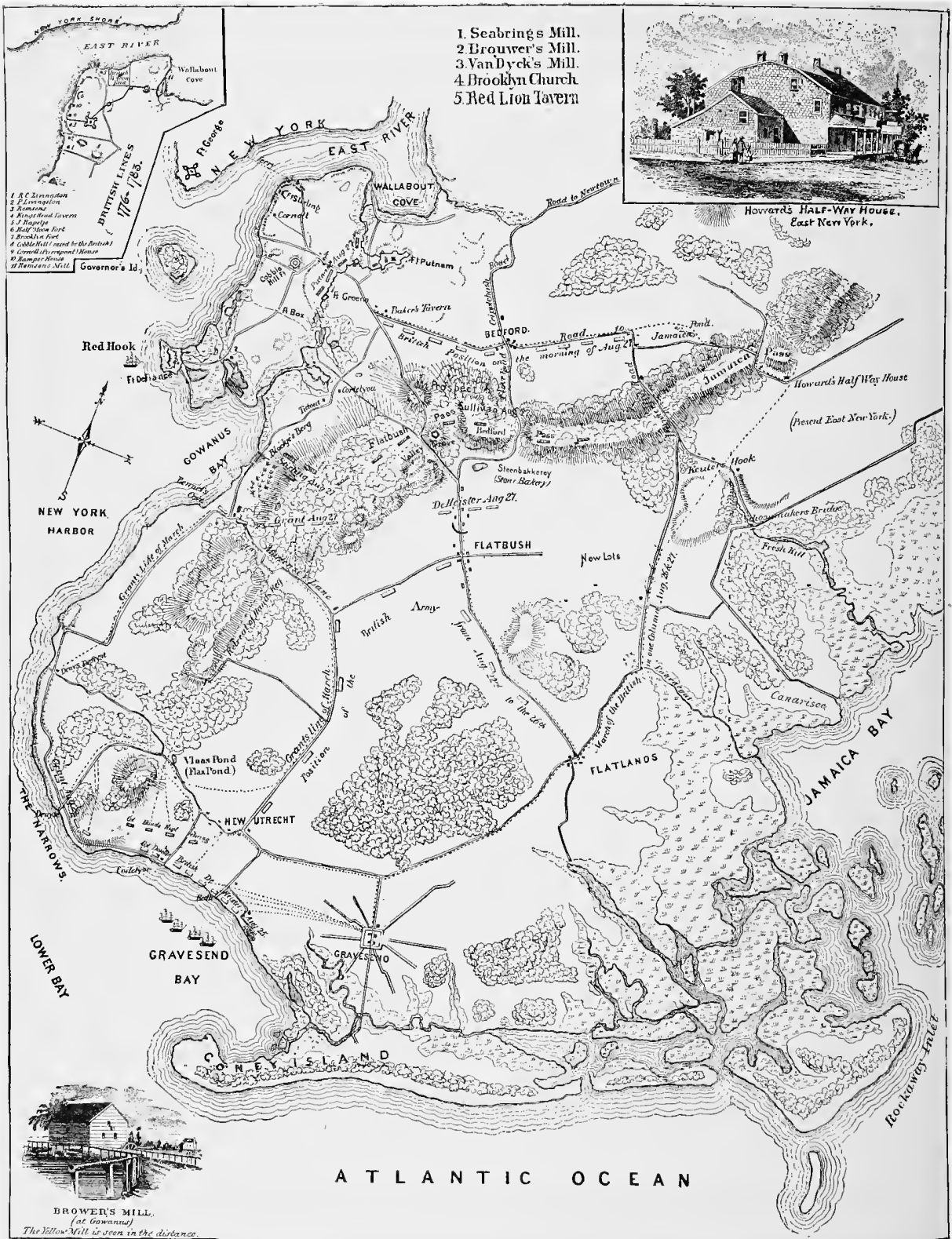
St. Valentine's day, called among the early Dutch here "Vrouwen dagh" or women's day, was a time of great hilarity among the young people. One peculiarity in their manner of celebrating it is thus described by FURMAN:

"Every girl provided herself with a cord without a knot in the end, and on the morning of this day they would sally forth, and every lad whom they met was sure to have three or four smart strokes from the cord bestowed on his shoulders. These we presume were in those days considered as 'love taps;' and, in that light, answered all the purposes of the 'valentines' of more modern times."

Easter day, or "Pausch" (pronounced Paus), was observed by religious services as well as merry-makings, and these continued through Easter week. Among their customs was that of making presents to each other of colored eggs, called Easter eggs, and this still prevails among some of their descendants.

"Pinckster dagh," or Pentecost, was once celebrated by the Dutch here on the first Monday in June, by good cheer among neighbors, and the use of soft waffles was peculiar to this festival.

Among the Dutch people in the days of slavery the custom prevailed of presenting the children of their female slaves, at the age of three years, to some young member of the family of the same sex; and the one to whom the child was presented at once gave it a piece of money and a pair of shoes, the event being often followed by strong and lasting attachments between these domestics and their destined owners.



MAP OF THE BATTLE OF BROOKLYN, AUGUST 27, 1776.

CHAPTER V.

KINGS COUNTY IN THE REVOLUTION.—FORTIFICATIONS
ON THE SITE OF BROOKLYN.

AT the outbreak of the Revolution the Dutch inhabitants of Kings County, as we have already stated, were very little in sympathy with the patriot cause. In them, the fear of personal inconvenience and pecuniary loss outweighed the impulses of patriotism, and they looked at the approaching storm with regret. A few, however, became imbued with the spirit which pervaded the country. In the spring of 1775, action was taken in the several towns of Kings County (except Flatlands, which chose to remain neutral) for the appointment of delegates to a convention. The Provincial Congress was soon afterward organized, and in this all the towns were represented. The representatives from this county soon exhibited a want of zeal, which, with the evident signs of disaffection to the American cause in other parts of the Island, disheartened the friends of that cause, and encouraged the loyalists. This was the state of feeling in Kings County in 1776.

Washington, who was in command at the siege of Boston, became convinced that warlike operations were to be transferred to this point. General Charles Lee also foresaw this, and quickly raised in Connecticut a force of twelve thousand men, with which he arrived in New York February 3d. Early in March, Washington ordered the fortification of Brooklyn; and when, after the sailing of the British fleet from Halifax, it became certain that this was to be the next point of attack, the work was pushed with the utmost vigor.

Brooklyn, at that time, was no more than an agricultural village. In the vicinity of "the ferry" stood some fifty dwellings. Groves of cedars crowned the "Heights," on which were a few residences. The space between the East River and Joralemon and Fulton Streets was covered with pastures, orchards and market gardens. Farm houses of the Dutch citizens were scattered along the shore of the East River to Gowanus, and of the Wallabout to Bushwick, while the village of Brooklyn proper was a mile from the ferry, on the Jamaica road, and a mile and a quarter further was Bedford—then consisting of a few farm houses.

The defensive works were originally planned by General Lee, who, being soon called southward, was succeeded, March 7th, by Lord Stirling; and he in May by General Greene, under whom the works were completed. Space will not permit a detailed account of these works. In their construction, and in the disposition of the forces that were to man them, the American officers found it necessary to provide against different possible plans of attack; and, in so doing, the

effective American force of 20,000 men (the nominal force was 27,000) was extended from King's Bridge, on Manhattan Island; and, on Long Island, from the Wallabout Bay to Gowanus meadows—a line many miles in length. It is proper to say that the plan of these fortifications has since been made the subject of much and diverse criticism. JOHNSTON, the latest, and probably the most accurate historian of this subject, locates them as follows:

Premising that "the topography of this section of Long Island was peculiar, presenting strong contrasts of high and low land. Originally, and indeed within the memory of citizens still living, that part of Brooklyn looking south and west of the line of Nevins Street, was practically a peninsula, with the Wallabout Bay (present Navy Yard) on one side of the neck, and on the other, a mile across, the extensive Gowanus Creek and marsh, over which now run 2d, 3d and 4th Avenues. The creek set in from the bay where the Gowanus canal is retained, and rendered the marsh impassable at high water as far as the line of Baltic Street. Blocks of buildings now stand on the site of mills that were once worked by the ebb and flow of the tides. The lower part of what is known as South Brooklyn was largely swamp land in 1776. Here, the peninsula terminated in a nearly isolated triangular piece of ground jutting out into the harbor, called Red Hook, which figured prominently in the military operations. From this projection to the furthest point on the Wallabout was a distance of three miles."

This Red Hook, and Governor's Island opposite, were the first points occupied and fortified by the Americans, under orders of General Putnam, who had assumed the chief command April 4th, and who was quick to observe their strategic importance. His sagacity was justified by the alacrity with which the British ships-of-war took themselves out of gun-shot.

"The occupation of these two points, clearly necessary for a more effective defence of the East River, resulted in a modification of Lee's plan of fortification; and the adoption of a new line on Long Island. It was now decided to hold the B. peninsula with a chain of works thrown up across the neck from Wallabout Bay to the Gowanus marsh." By the recent "fortunate recovery of General Orders of the day, and of original sketches of the site, it has become possible to locate this line, and name the various works with almost entire accuracy. To defend the approach between the bay and the marsh, the engineers laid out three principal forts and two redoubts, with breastworks connecting them. The site occupied was a favorable one. On the left was the high ground, now known as Fort Greene, or Washington Park, 100 feet above the sea level; and on the right, between the main road and marsh, were lower elevations on lands then owned by Rutgers Van Brunt and Johannes Debevoise. The flanks were thus well adapted for defence, and near enough each other to command the ground between them."

Extending from the right to the left of the line of defence, the works erected were:

1. On the right of the line, *Fort Box* (so named after Major Daniel Box, Gen. Greene's Brigade-Major), nearest to Gowanus Creek. It was of diamond shape, and located on, or near, the line of Pacific, just above Bond street.
2. Three hundred yards, or so, to the left of Fort

Box, a short distance above Bond street, between State and Schermerhorn, was *Fort Greene*, star-shaped, mounting six guns, provided with well and magazines, and named, of course, after Gen. Greené. Its guns commanded the Jamaica highway, and it was garrisoned by a full regiment.

3. Still further to the left, on the other side of the road, was a small circular work, called the *Oblong Redoubt*. It stood on a rising ground at corner of De Kalb and Hudson avenues, commanded the road directly, and was, with Fort Greene, the centre of the line of defence, which, ascending northeasterly to the top of the hill (Washington Park), connected with

4. *Fort Putnam*, star-shaped, somewhat smaller than Fort Greene, but mounting four or five guns. It was probably named after Col. Rufus Putnam, the chief engineer.

5. At the eastern end of the hill, not far from Fort Putnam, and on a lower grade, was a small affair, called *the redoubt on the left*. It was on the line of Cumberland street, about midway between Willoughby and Myrtle avenues.

"Each of these works was a complete fortification in itself, being surrounded with a wide ditch, provided with a sally-port, its sides lined with sharpened stakes, the garrison armed with spears to repel storming parties, and the well supplied with water and provisions against siege. The greater part of the line was picketed with abattis, and the woods cut down to give full sweep to the fire of the guns."

Outside of this line of defence, there were other fortifications, viz: (1), A redoubt on the crest of a conical hill, near the corner of Court and Atlantic streets, known to the Dutch inhabitants as *Punkiesberg*; but named by the Continentals, *Cobble Hill*, from its resemblance to a hill of that name which was one of the fortified points in the siege of Boston, whence they had lately come. Its trenches ascended spirally to the top, where a platform was laid for the cannon, from which circumstance it derived, also, the nickname of "Corkscrew Fort." Its occupancy "would have prevented the enemy from getting a foothold on the peninsula in rear or flank of the main line, in case they had effected a landing back of Red Hook, or had crossed Gowanus Creek above." (2), Near the corner of present Degraw and Bond streets, a small redoubt,—in form, a right angle,—mounting one gun, and covering the narrow passage over a mill-dam which there crossed G.-Creek: (3), The water-battery on *Red Hook*, mounting 4 18-pounders, *en barbette*, to keep the enemy from landing at the southern extremity of the peninsula, and to cover the passage between this and Governor's Island. This—*Fort Defiance*—was a "small, but exceedingly strong" work; (4), on the corner of present Clark and Columbia streets, a strong, inclosed work, of 8 guns, called *Fort Stirling*, and commanding the East River channel.

In the digging and strengthening of these works, the tedious but necessary performance of camp duty, and in occasional expeditions to suppress the latent Toryism

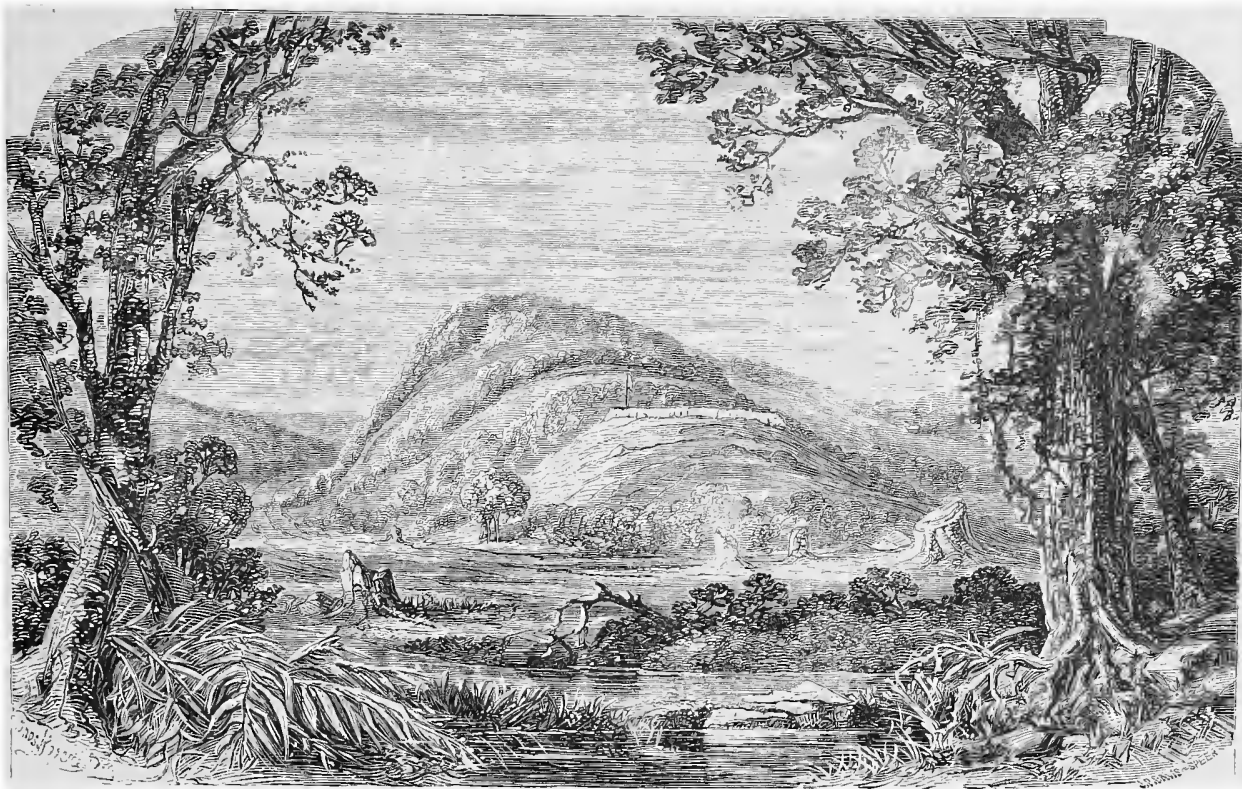
which, ever and anon, would break out in both Kings and Queens counties, the spring of '76 slipped away—until (June 1st) the fortifications were so far advanced as to admit of the mounting of the guns, and the assignment (17th) of the various regiments to their respective positions. And by the middle of summer the American army was fairly entrenched upon the Brooklyn peninsula, with lines which, though yet unfinished, "were still of very respectable strength." These fortifications on L. I., it must be remembered, were but part of a formidable line of defensive works which may be described in a general way, as beginning again on New York Island, at Corlaer's Hook; passing around the lower end of present city, and up on the North River side to corner of present Washington and Harrison streets; while another line of defence ran across New York island, above the (then) city, from a redoubt, corner of Monroe and Rutger streets, along the line of Grand street to Bayard's Hill, corner Grand and Mulberry streets, where was a strong redoubt having the range of the city on one side, and the approach by the Bowery on the other. Other available points on the island, as far as Harlem Heights, were, also, more or less fortified, and the city itself was full of barricades.

CHAPTER VI.

ARRIVAL OF THE BRITISH ARMY—THE BATTLE OF BROOKLYN.

ON the 29th of June, the British fleet, from Halifax, entered the lower bay of New York. It had been Gen. Howe's first intention to land at once on Long Island, but he was deterred from so doing by what he learned, from spies, of the character of the defences. On the 9th of July the British troops were landed on Staten Island, where they remained a month and a half, receiving re-inforcements almost daily. The naval forces were commanded by Admiral Sir Richard Howe, brother to Gen. William Howe, who was in command of the land forces. Both were brave, skilful and experienced officers, and the plan and conduct of the battle which followed fully sustained their good reputation.

The transfer of the British, from Staten to Long Island, was begun on the morning of the 22d of August; and by noon, 15,000 men and 40 pieces of artillery had been landed at Denyse's dock (now Fort Hamilton), at what is now Bath, in the town of New Utrecht. Hitherto, Washington's chief anxiety had been, to know at which of the many and widely separated points open to the British commander, he would be attacked. Would the British descend upon New Jersey, from Staten Island; would they make a direct attack upon the city with the fleet, and land troops in his rear by way of the Hudson; would they cross to L. I., and fall



THE BATTLE PASS (IN PROSPECT PARK), BROOKLYN. (From a Sketch by G. L. BURDETTE, taken in 1792.)

upon Gen. Greene in force ; or, would they make feints of landing at different points, as their water carriage enabled them to do, and suddenly strike at his weakest point? But all uncertainty as to the intentions of the British commander being thus dispelled, troops were hurried across from New York, to re-inforce those holding the defences at Brooklyn.

JOHNSTON (from whose accurate pages the following account is mainly condensed) thus sketches the position:

"The section of L. I., which the enemy now occupied, was a broad, low plain, stretching northward from the coast from 4 to 6 miles, and eastward, a still further distance. Scattered over its level surface were four villages, surrounded with farms. Nearest to the Narrows, and nearly a mile from the coast, stood *New Utrecht*; another mile S. E. of this was *Gravesend*; N. E. from Gravesend, nearly 3 miles, the road led through *Flatlands*, and directly N. from Flatlands, and about half way to Brooklyn Church, lay *Flatbush*. Between this plain and the Brooklyn lines, ran a ridge of hills, extending from New York Bay midway through the island to its eastern extremity. The ridge varied in height from 100 to 150 feet above the sea, and from the plain it rose somewhat abruptly from 40 to 80 feet, but fell off more gradually in its descent on the other side. Its entire surface was covered with a dense growth of woods and thickets, and to an enemy advancing from below it presented a continuous barrier, a huge natural abatis, impassable to artillery, where, with proportionate numbers, a successful defense could be sustained. The roads across the ridge passed through its natural depressions, of which there were four within a distance of six miles from the harbor. The main highway, or *Jamaica Road*—that which led up from Brooklyn Ferry—after passing through

Bedford, kept on still N. of the hills, and crossed them at the "*Jamaica Pass*," about 4 miles from the fortified line. From this, branched three roads leading to the villages in the plain. The most direct was that to Flatbush, which cut through the ridge a mile and a half from the works.

Three quarters of a mile to the left, towards the Jamaica Pass, a road from Bedford led also to Flatbush; and near the coast ran the Gowanus road to the Narrows. Where the Red Lion Tavern stood on this road, about 3 miles from Brooklyn Church, a narrow lane, known as the Martense Lane, now marking the southern boundary of Greenwood Cemetery, diverged to the left through a hollow in the ridge and connected with roads on the plain. Clearly to understand succeeding movements on L. I., it is necessary to have in mind the relative situation of these several routes and passes."

The entire effective force of the American army in and about New York, which now awaited the approach of Howe's 24,000 veterans, may be estimated at not far from 19,000, mostly levies and militia. The British, however, did not attempt an advance for three days, although skirmishing occurred in front of Flatbush. On the 24th, Sullivan, attacked by severe illness, was superseded in the chief command on Long Island by General Putnam. On the 26th, additional regiments were sent over from New York, among them the gallant Marylanders and Delaware battalion, raising the force on Long Island on the night of the 26th to a total of about 7,000 men fit for duty; and the same night the British columns began their forward movement. Three of the passes, which we have described, were well guarded by the American forces, viz.: the *Flatbush Pass*

(near the junction of which with the narrow Post Road, was a breastwork, with felled trees in its front); the *Coast Road*, near the Red Lion tavern, and the *Bedford Pass*; while between there was a chain of sentinels. But, though the best possible disposition had been made of the limited force that could be spared, and though at the passes themselves a stout resistance could have been offered, it was still an attenuated line, over four miles long, not parallel, but oblique, to the line of works at Brooklyn, and distant from it not less than one-and-a-half, and at the farthest point nearly three miles. Unfortunately, the fourth or *Jamaica Pass*, far over to the left, and four miles from the lines, was left without any permanent guards. Its distance and isolated position, together with the scarcity in force, especially in cavalry, to a certain extent compelled its neglect; except such watching as the few mounted patrols could give it. The British forces were now moving on the American lines in three columns; General Grant's division from the Narrows, along the Shore road; De Heister's Hessians by the way of Flatbush Pass; and Generals Clinton, Cornwallis and Percy, with Howe himself, with the main body as a flanking force, around the Americans' left by way of Jamaica Pass, which they had found to be neglected.

Grant's advance guard, marching from the Narrows, struck the American pickets near the Red Lion, about 2 a. m. of the 27th, and, when met by General Stirling, who had promptly responded to the alarm with two or three regiments, were on the full march toward the Brooklyn lines. As there were still good positions which he could occupy, Stirling immediately disposed his force so as to make as effective resistance as possible. The road wound along on the line of present 3d avenue, only a little distance from the bay; and, at the present crossing of the avenue by 23d street, there was a little bridge on the old road crossing a creek, which set back from the bay to a low and marshy piece of ground on the left, looking south; while just beyond the bridge, the land rose to quite a bluff at the water's edge, called by the Dutch, "Blockje's Bergh." From the bluff the hill fell away gradually to the marsh, the road being between them. On the crest of the slope, which rose northerly from the marsh and low land around Blockje's Berg, on the line of present 20th street, Stirling formed his brigade. On the right next the road he posted Smallwood's Marylanders; further up the hillside, the Delaware troops; on their left, in the woods above, Atlee's Pennsylvanians, with the Pennsylvania riflemen along the hedges near the foot of the hill. Seeing his path thus blocked, Grant drew up in line, as if for attack; but really (it was now 7 a. m.) to keep Stirling where he was until the other movements of the day were developed. In the skirmishing and by-play which ensued, the Americans troops displayed nerve and ability, standing firm under feints of attack and the galling fire of British artillery, and inflicting

upon their foes a greater loss than they themselves sustained.

Meanwhile, 9 a. m., De Heister had made no determined attack either on the Flatbush or Bedford roads; his Hessians were comparatively quiet at the foot of the hills, though sometimes exchanging shots with the American pickets.

While Stirling, on the lower road, was, as he supposed, stubbornly holding back the British from the Brooklyn lines; and all was quiet but vigilant at the Flatbush and Bedford passes, the web which the enemy had been silently weaving around them during the night, was almost completed. At nine p. m. of the 26th, the British division under Howe had been set in motion. Sir Henry Clinton led the van of the advance with dragoons and light infantry. Cornwallis followed with the reserves; and after him came the First Brigade and 71st Regiment with 14 pieces of field artillery. Lord Percy and Howe himself followed with the 2d, 3d and 5th Brigades, the Guards and ten guns; while the 49th Regiment with four twelve pounders, and baggage, etc., brought up the rear. This column, 10,000 strong, with the Flatbush guides, headed "across the country" towards the Jamaica Pass, moving cautiously along the road from Flatlands until it reached Schoonmaker's bridge, over a creek emptying into Jamaica Bay, when the column struck over the field to the Jamaica Road, and halted in the open lots a little southeast of the pass and directly in front of Howard's Halfway House. Here they captured a small unmounted patrol of young American officers, from whom the unguarded state of the pass was ascertained; and the British advance then recommenced its march, cautiously, however, reaching the Jamaica Road on the other side of the Pass by a round-about lane known as the Rockaway Path, and led by innkeeper Howard and son, who were forcibly compelled to act as guides. At half-past eight a. m., after a slow, circuitous and difficult night's march of nine miles, from Flatlands, the van reached Bedford and found itself directly in the rear of the left of the American outposts, while its approach was as yet unknown in the camp at Brooklyn. And when the alarm did reach the camp, swift upon its heels came the enemy. Hemmed in between the Hessians in front and the British in rear, all along the hills from the Flatbush Pass to their extreme left, the Americans were, by 10 a. m., in full retreat, toward the Brooklyn lines; hurrying through the wood, down the slopes and across the fields, some singly, some in groups, some keeping together in companies, some in battalions; fighting light infantry, broken by dragoon charges, intercepted by Hessians, a hand-to-hand fight, but with less loss of life than might have been expected; though General Sullivan was captured about noon, and the day was lost on the left and center.

On the right, Stirling, warned about 10 a. m. by the sound of firing in his rear, that the lines were flanked,

still fought stubbornly, until between 11 and 12 o'clock, he found his retreat on the Gowanus road cut off by Cornwallis with the 71st Regiment, and 2d Grenadiers. But one way of escape, and that a desperate one, was left, viz.: to cross the Gowanus marsh and creek, where both were at their broadest, toward the near Brooklyn lines. And as his soldiers, under his orders, struggled across the difficult morass, he faced around with half of Gist's Maryland Battalion, and threw himself upon Cornwallis. The British posted themselves in the old Cortelyou house, above the upper mills, near the intersection of the Post and Gowanus roads, but were nearly dislodged by the brave Marylanders, who, after repeated and heroic efforts, which have covered them with highest honor in the events of that day, were finally routed, broken into small parties and forced to save themselves as best they might. Nine only escaped across the creek, and Stirling, making vain efforts to escape, fell in with the Hessian corps, which had now reached the scene of action, and surrendered himself to De Heister. The rest of the command succeeded in crossing the creek and marsh, with but trifling loss. By 2 p. m. the battle, which had commenced at 3 a. m. and had swept over a range of five miles, closed in defeat to American arms. But it was not a disgrace, for "*the British and Hessians suffered a loss in killed and wounded equal to that inflicted upon the Americans.*" The British casualties were 377 officers and soldiers; while the Americans lost 800 (including 91 officers) taken prisoners, not over 6 officers and 50 privates killed, less than 16 officers and 150 privates wounded. "It was a field where the American soldier, in every firm encounter, proved himself worthy of the cause he was fighting for."

From the moment that the passes were lost, Washington realized the danger, and took prompt measures to avert further disaster. During the night of the 27th he brought over from Harlem Heights two well-drilled Pennsylvania and a Massachusetts regiment, with some others; and when the morning of the 28th dawned, it found him within the Brooklyn line, with all the troops that could be spared from other points—some 9,500—prepared to resist the British should they attempt to carry his position by storm. The 28th and 29th were exceedingly rainy days, and the duty of guarding their lines in this deluge, without tents or baggage, and almost without victuals and drink, fell heavily upon the dispirited but yet heroic American soldiers. Skirmishing occurred between the forces; and one affair (on the high ground between Vanderbilt and Clinton Avenues, on the line of De Kalb), in which the British entrenched themselves, probably had great influence, in connection with the other unfortunate circumstances of his situation, in determining Washington in favor of a retreat, since it fully developed the enemy's intention to advance by trenches and parallels. Within 24 hours they would have been within short range, and this would have imposed upon the Ameri-

cans the necessity of driving them out of their works by storm. In view of the great disparity of numbers and the condition of his troops, this could not be risked; and, at a council of war held at the old Cornell-Pierrepont house (on line of Montague Street, near the little iron foot-bridge which spans the carriage-way) late on the afternoon of the 29th a retreat was decided upon. Meanwhile, through Washington's foresight, Gen. Heath and Asst. Q. M. Hughes, on New York Island, were already impressing into the service every sloop, boat and water-craft of any description between Spuyten Duyvel, on the Hudson, and Hell Gate, on the Sound; which, manned largely by the Salem and Marblehead (fishermen) troops of Glover and Hutchinson's regiments, were speedily collected on the Brooklyn shore. The final withdrawal of the troops from the Island was effected under a General Order, in which the sick and wounded, as being an incumbrance, were ordered to be sent over to the hospitals in New York; and the army was informed that, in view of the expected arrival that evening of fresh troops from New Jersey under Gen. Mercer, it was proposed to relieve a portion of the Long Island regiments and make a change in their situation; and, as it was yet undetermined which regiments could be relieved, all, or the greater part of them, were directed "to parade with arms, accoutrements and knapsacks, at 7 o'clock, at the head of their encampments, and there wait for orders." Thus, in a plausible and natural manner, not calculated to excite suspicion or alarm, the army was prepared for the final move. At dark, the retreat began. As one regiment moved towards the ferry—present Fulton Ferry—another extended its line so as to fill the gap. All was done busily, quietly, and without confusion. Between 7 and 8 P. M. the boats manned by Glover and Hutchinson's men began their trip, taking off first the militia and new levies. About 9 o'clock wind and tide and pouring rain made the navigation of the river very difficult, a north-easter sprang up, sloops and sail-boats became unmanageable, and row-boats only could be used, and the prospect of getting all across before daylight looked dubious. Fortunately, about 11 p. m., the north-easter was replaced by a southwest breeze, and the passage became "direct, easy and expeditious," the boats loaded almost to the water's edge, which was "smooth as glass." Meanwhile, a serious blunder had occurred at the lines, by which the regiments covering the retreat had left their post and started for the ferry; but met by Washington, who was alarmed at the possible consequences of the mistake, they promptly faced about and reoccupied their station until dawn of the 30th, when, just as they were about to attempt the hazardous feat of withdrawing in clear daylight, in face of the enemy, a fog settled upon Long Island so dense that it obscured them from the view of British pickets. When the final order, therefore, came for their retreat

—"after it was fair day," they quietly withdrew from their lines, distinctly hearing the sound of pickaxe and shovel in the British works. By 7 a. m. the entire force was safely in New York, the last man to cross being General Washington himself, whose foresight and skill had thus wrested victory from defeat. With the subsequent retreat of the American Army through Westchester, it is not the purpose of this history to deal.

Long Island was represented in this affair by two militia regiments and two small companies of horse. The Kings County regiment was commanded by Col. Rutgert Van Brunt. The militia, especially in disaffected Kings and Queens counties, had been mustered with difficulty; and the troops raised by a draft, especially ordered by the New York Provincial Congress, in August, were commanded by Col. Jeronimus Remsen, of Queens, with Nich. Cowenhoven, of Kings, as Lieut. Colonel, and Richard Thorne, of Queens, as Major. This regiment, together with that from Suffolk County, Col. Josiah Smith, did not report to General Greene until August 15th, and after, and together mustered scarcely 500 men. By desertions, the Kings County regiment was soon reduced to about 200 men, and, after the battle, was still further reduced by the same cause, to about 150 men. This remnant left the island with the rest of the army, and under command of Major Barent Johnson (father of the late General Jeremiah) marched to Harlem, where they dispersed without leave and returned to their homes, many of them being subsequently captured by Tories and imprisoned in New York. Major Johnson accompanied the army to Jersey, where he was captured by the British, and was paroled by Howe, in January, 1777. The troopers, less than 50, were from Brooklyn, under Captain Adolph Waldron and Lieut. Wm. Boerum; with a few others from the county at large, under Captain Lambert Suydam.

CHAPTER VII.

LIFE AND DEATH IN THE PRISON-SHIPS—THE BURIAL OF THE VICTIMS.

NO chapter in the history of the American Revolution is more appalling, or revolting to every human feeling, than that which records the sufferings of the prisoners who fell into the hands of the British. In all cases of this kind the account which prisoners themselves give of their treatment should be taken with many grains of allowance, for they were very prone to exaggerate; but if the half of that which was related by American prisoners is true, the inhumanity of their keepers was truly shocking. The capture of New York in September, 1776, and of Fort Washington in November of the same year, threw into the hands of the British a large number of prisoners, which, added to those already in their hands,

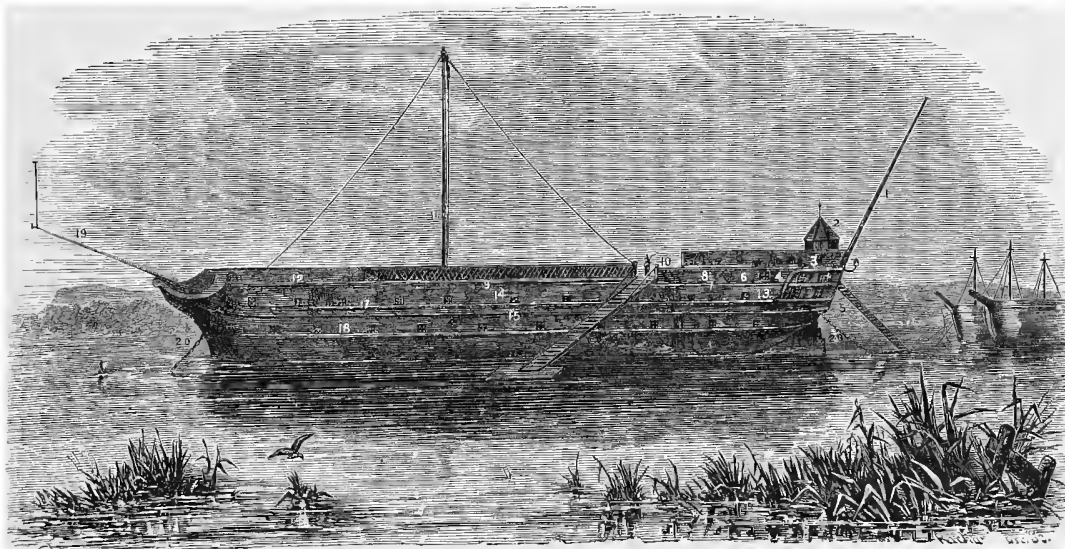
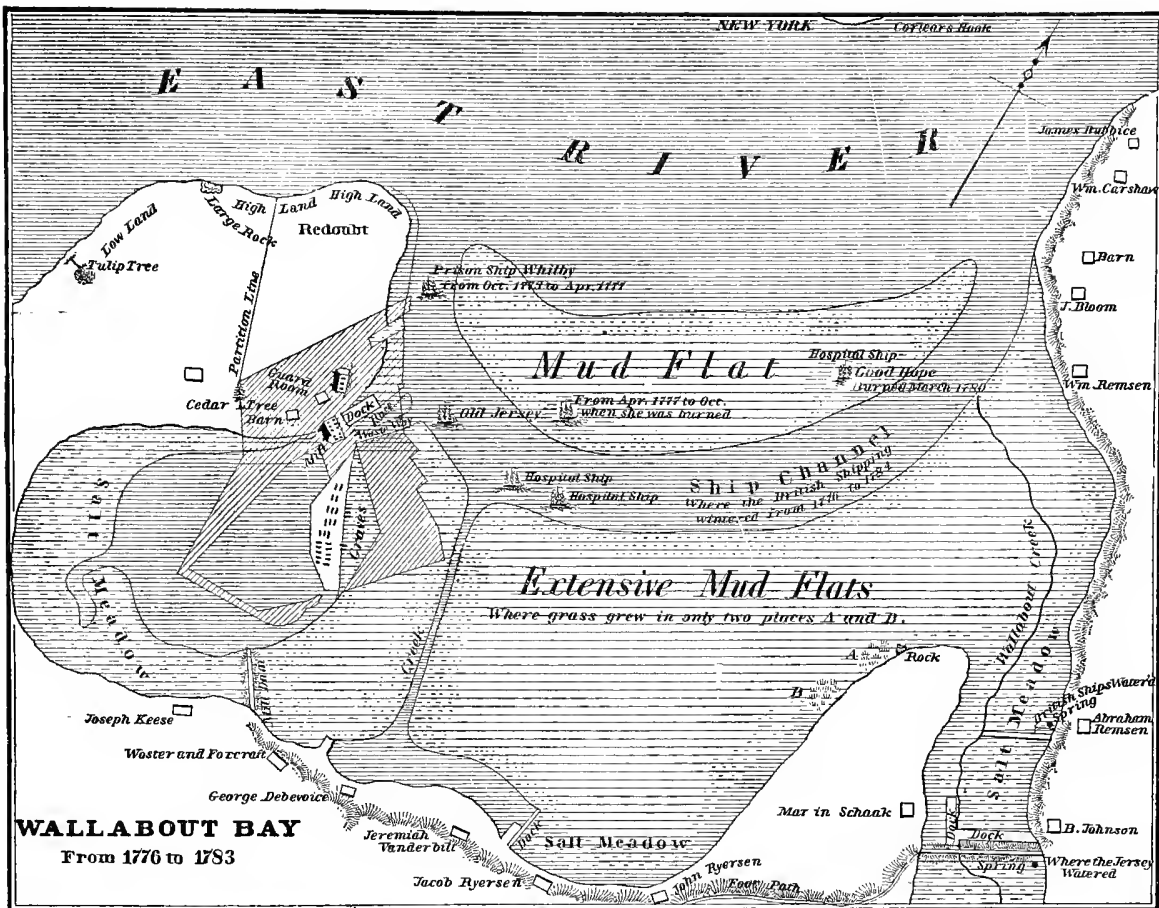
swelled the aggregate to about 5,000 in the city of New York. To the confusion and embarrassment which this sudden accumulation of prisoners necessitated, were added the negligence of the British commander, and the brutality of Provost Marshal Cunningham and his subordinates.

But, if the condition of the prisoners in New York was pitiable, that of the seamen confined in the prison-ships at the Wallabout was horrible. The crowding together of many human beings in the hold of a ship, even with the best means of ventilation and the utmost care for their cleanliness and comfort, is disastrous to the health of those so situated. If then, as was the case of these prisoners, they are compelled to breathe over and over again the pestilential emanations from their own bodies and from the filth by which they are surrounded, and to subsist on food insufficient in quantity and almost poisonous in quality, it is not a matter of wonder that, as was the case with those confined in these ships, few survived their imprisonment.

From the autumn of 1776, when the British came in possession of New York, during six years, one or more condemned hulks were stationed at the Wallabout, in which were confined such American seamen as were taken prisoners by the British. The first of these was the "Whitby," which was moored in the Wallabout in October, 1776. In May, 1777, two other large ships were also anchored there, one of which was burned in October of the same year, and the other in February, 1778. In April, 1778, the old "Jersey" was moored there, and the "Hope" and the "Falmouth"—two so-called hospital-ships—were stationed near. Up to the time when these hospital-ships were stationed there, no physicians had been in attendance on the sick in the prison ships.

Rev. THOMAS ANDROS of Berkley, Mass., was a prisoner on the old "Jersey," and relates his experience and observation as follows:

"This was an old sixty-four gun ship, which through age had become unfit for further actual service. She was stripped of every spar and all her rigging. After a battle with a French fleet her lion figurehead was taken away to repair another ship; no appearance of ornament was left, and nothing remained but an old, unsightly, rotten hulk. Her dark and filthy external appearance perfectly corresponded with the death and despair that reigned within; and nothing could be more foreign from truth than to paint her with colors flying, or any circumstance or appendage to please the eye. She was moored at the Wallabout Bay, about three-quarters of a mile to the eastward of Brooklyn ferry, near a tide-mill on the Long Island shore. The nearest place to land was about twenty rods; and doubtless no other ship in the British navy ever proved the means of destruction of so many human beings. It is computed that not less than eleven thousand American seamen perished in her. After it was next to certain death to confine a prisoner here, the inhumanity and wickedness of doing it was about the same as if he had been taken to the city and deliberately shot in some public square; but, as if mercy had fled from the earth, here we were doomed to dwell. And never, while I was on board,



THE "OLD JERSEY" PRISON-SHIP. (From DAWSON's edition of DRINO's "Old Jersey Captive.")

EXTERIOR VIEW OF THE "OLD JERSEY."

1. The Flag-staff, which was seldom used, and only for signals.
2. A canvas awning or tent, used by the guards in warm weather.
3. The Quarter-deck, with its barricade about ten feet high, with a door and loop-holes on each side.
4. The Ship's Officers' Cabin, under the Quarter-deck.
5. Accommodation-ladder, on the starboard side, for the use of the ship's officers.
6. The Steerage, occupied by the sailors belonging to the ship.
7. The Cook-room for the ship's crew and guards.
8. The Suter's room, where articles were sold to the prisoners, and delivered to them through an opening in the bulkhead.
9. The Upper-deck and Spar-deck, where the prisoners were occasionally allowed to walk.
10. The Gangway ladder, on the larboard side, for the prisoners.
11. The Derrick, on the starboard side, for taking in water, etc., etc.
12. The Galley, or Great Copper, under the fore-castle, where the provisions were cooked for the prisoners.
13. The Gun-room, occupied by those prisoners who were officers.
- 14, 15. Hatchways leading below, where the prisoners were confined.
- 17, 18. Between-decks, where the prisoners were confined at night.
19. The Bowsprit.
20. Chain cables, by which the vessel was moored.

did any Howard or angel of pity appear, to inquire into or alleviate our woes. Once or twice, by the order of a stranger on the quarter deck, a bag of apples was hurled promiscuously into the midst of hundreds of prisoners, crowded together as thick as they could stand, and life and limbs were endangered by the scramble. This, instead of compassion, was a cruel sport. When I saw it about to commence I fled to the most distant part of the ship.

"On the commencement of the first evening we were driven down to darkness, between decks secured by iron gratings and an armed soldiery, and a scene of horror which baffles all description presented itself. On every side wretched, desponding shapes of men could be seen. Around the well-room an armed guard were forcing up the prisoners to the winches to clear the ship of water and prevent her sinking; and little else could be heard but a roar of mutual execrations, reproaches, and insults. During this operation there was a small, dim light admitted below, but it served to make darkness more visible, and horror more terrific. In my reflections I said this must be a complete image and anticipation of hell. Milton's description of the dark world rushed upon my mind:—

‘Sights of woe, regions of horror doleful.
Shades where peace and rest can never dwell.’

"If there was any principle among the prisoners that could not be shaken, it was their love of country. I knew no one to be seduced into the British service. They attempted to force one of our prize-brig's crew into the navy, but he chose rather to die than to perform any duty, and was again restored to the prison-ship.

"When I first became an inmate of this abode of suffering, despair and death, there were about four hundred prisoners on board; but in a short time they amounted to twelve hundred, and in proportion to our numbers the mortality increased. All the most deadly diseases were pressed into the service of the king of terrors, but his prime ministers were dysentery, small-pox, and yellow fever. There were two hospital ships near to the old 'Jersey,' but these were soon so crowded with the sick that they could receive no more. The consequence was that the diseased and the healthy were mingled together in the main ship. In a short time we had two hundred or more sick and dying lodged in the fore part of the lower gun deck, where all the prisoners were confined at night. Utter derangement was a common symptom of yellow fever; and, to increase the horror of the darkness that shrouded us (for we were allowed no light betwixt decks), the voice of warning would be heard, 'Take heed to yourselves! There is a madman stalking through the ship with a knife in his hand!' I sometimes found the man a corpse in the morning by whose side I laid myself down at night. At another time he would become deranged and attempt, in the darkness, to rise, and stumble over the bodies that everywhere covered the deck. In this case I had to hold him in his place by main strength. In spite of my efforts he would sometimes rise, and then I had to close in with him, trip up his heels, and lay him again upon the deck. While so many were sick with raging fever there was a loud cry for water; but none could be had except on the upper deck, and but one allowed to ascend at a time. The suffering then from the rage of thirst during the night was very great. Nor was it at all times safe to attempt to go up. Provoked by the continual cry for leave to ascend, when there was one already on deck, the sentry would push them back with his bayonet. By one of these thrusts, which was more spiteful and violent than common, I had a narrow escape of my life. In the morning the hatchways were thrown open and we were allowed to ascend, all at once, and remain on the upper deck during the day. But the first object that met our view

was an appalling spectacle—a boat loaded with dead bodies conveying them to the Long Island shore, where they were slightly covered with sand. I sometimes used to stand and count the number of times the shovel was filled with sand to cover a dead body; and certain I am that a few high tides or torrents of rain must have disinterred them, and had they not been removed I should suppose the shore even now would be covered with huge piles of the bones of American seamen."

Captain DRING, who assisted on one occasion of this sort, thus describes the burial, which will afford a correct idea of the general method of interment:

"After landing at a low wharf, which had been built from the shore, we first went to a small hut which stood near the wharf, and was used as a place of deposit for the hand-barrows and shovels provided for these occasions. Having placed the corpses on the hand-barrows, and received our hoes and shovels, we proceeded to a bank near the Wallabout. Here a vacant space having been selected, we were directed to dig a trench in the sand of a proper length to receive the bodies. We continued our labor till our guards considered that a proper space had been excavated. The corpses were then laid into the trench without ceremony, and we threw sand over them. The whole appeared to produce no more impression on our guards than if we were burying the bodies of dead animals instead of men. They scarcely allowed us time to look about us; for no sooner had we heaped the earth above the trench than the order was given to march. But a single glance was sufficient to show us parts of many bodies which were exposed to view; although they had probably been placed there, with the same mockery of interment, but a few days before. Having thus performed, as well as we were permitted to do it, the last duty to the dead, and the guards having stationed themselves on each side of us, we began reluctantly to retrace our steps to the boat. We had enjoyed the pleasure of breathing for a few moments the air of our native soil, and the thought of returning to the crowded prison-ship was terrible in the extreme. As we passed by the water's side we implored our guards to allow us to bathe, or even to wash ourselves for a few minutes; but this was refused us. I was the only prisoner of our party who wore a pair of shoes; and well recollect the circumstance that I took them from my feet for the pleasure of feeling the earth, or rather the sand, as I went along. It was a high gratification to us to bury our feet in the sand and to shove them through it, as we passed on our way. We went by a small patch of turf, some pieces of which we tore up from the earth and obtained permission to carry them on board for our comrades to smell them. * * * Having arrived at the hut we there deposited our implements and walked to the landing-place, where we prevailed on our guards, who were Hessians, to allow us the gratification of remaining nearly half an hour before we re-entered the boat.

"Near us stood a house, occupied by a miller; and we had been told that a tide-mill, which he attended, was in the immediate vicinity; as a landing place for which the wharf where we stood had been erected. It would have afforded me a high degree of pleasure to have been permitted to enter this dwelling, the probable abode of harmony and peace. It was designated by the prisoners by the appellation of the 'Old Dutchman's,' and its very walls were viewed by us with feelings of veneration, as we had been told that the amiable daughter of its owner had kept a regular account of the number of bodies which had been brought on shore for interment from the Jersey and the hospital ships. This could easily be done in the house, as its windows commanded a fair

view of the landing place. We were not, however, gratified on this occasion, either by the sight of herself or of any other inmate of the house. Sadly did we approach and re-enter our foul and disgusting place of confinement. The pieces of turf which we carried on board were sought for by our fellow-prisoners with the greatest avidity; every fragment being passed by them from hand to hand, and its smell inhaled, as if it had been a fragrant rose."

Says ANDROS, another survivor of the "Old Jersey":

"There were probably four hundred on board who had never had the small-pox. Some perhaps might have been saved by inoculation, but humanity was wanting to try even this experiment. Let our disease be what it would, we were abandoned to our fate. Now and then an American physician was brought in as a captive, but if he could obtain his parole he left the ship; nor could we blame him for this, for his own death was next to certain and his success in saving others by medicine in our situation was small. I remember only two American physicians who tarried on board a few days. No English physician, or any one from the city, ever, to my knowledge, came near us. There were thirteen of the crew to which I belonged, but in a short time all died but three or four. The most healthy and vigorous were first seized with the fever and died in a few hours. For them there seemed to be no mercy. My constitution was less muscular and plethoric, and I escaped the fever longer than any of the thirteen except one, and the first onset was less violent."

A very serious conflict occurred with the guard on the 4th of July, 1782, in consequence of the prisoners attempting to celebrate the day with such observances and amusements as their condition permitted. Upon going on deck in the morning they displayed thirteen little national flags, which were immediately torn down and trampled under the feet of the guard, which on that day happened to consist of Scotchmen. Taking no notice of them, the prisoners proceeded to amuse themselves with patriotic songs, speeches and cheers, avoiding whatever could be construed into an intentional insult to the guards, who, however, at an unusually early hour in the afternoon, drove them below at the point of the bayonet, and closed the hatches. Between decks, the prisoners continued their singing, etc., till about 9 o'clock in the evening. An order to desist not having been promptly complied with, the hatches were suddenly removed, and the guards descended among them, with lanterns and cutlasses in their hands. Then ensued a scene of horror. The helpless prisoners, retreating from the hatchways as fast as their crowded condition would permit, were followed by the guards, who mercilessly hacked, cut and wounded every one within their reach; then, returning to the upper deck, fastened down the hatches upon the victims of their cruel rage, leaving them to languish through the long, sultry summer night, without water to cool their parched throats, and without lights by which they might have dressed their wounds; and, to add to their torments, it was not until the middle of the next forenoon that the prisoners were allowed to go on deck and slake their thirst, or to receive their rations of food, which that day they were obliged to eat uncooked.

Ten corpses were found below on the morning of the day that succeeded that memorable 4th of July, and many of the survivors were badly wounded.

Equal to this in fiendish barbarity is the incident related by SILAS TALBOT, as occurring on the "Stromboli," where he was a prisoner. The prisoners, irritated by their ill treatment, rose one night on their guard.

"The commander, being on shore, and several in attempting to escape, were either killed or wounded. The captain got on board just as the fray was quelled, when a poor fellow, lying on deck, bleeding, and almost exhausted by a mortal wound, called him by name, and begged of him, for God's sake, a little water, for he was dying. The captain applied a light to his face and directly exclaimed: '*What! is it you, d—n you? I'm glad you're shot. If I knew the man that shot you, I'd give him a guinea. Take that you d—d rebel rascal!*' and instantly dashed his foot in the face of the dying man."

SHERBURNE mentions the sad case of two brothers, John and Abraham Fall, who lay sick upon a cot near his own. One night, when thus left to suffer in the darkness of this foul and miserable ship, Abraham Fall plead with his brother John to get off from him, and the sick around swore at John for his cruelty in lying on his brother; but John made no reply—he was deaf to the cries of his brother, and beyond the curses of the suffering crowd. In the morning he was found dead; and his brother Abraham, whose exhausted strength had given way under the pressure of the corpse, was in a dying state. The sick were unable to relieve them and the nurses were not there.

Captain DRING thus describes the last of a poor boy, only twelve years old, confined with him on the old "Jersey," and who had been inoculated for small-pox:

"He was a member of the same mess with myself, and had always looked upon me as a protector, and particularly so during his sickness. The night of his death was a pretty wretched one to me; for I spent almost the whole of it in perfect darkness, holding him during his convulsions; and it was heart-rending to hear the screams of the dying boy, while calling and imploring in his delirium for the assistance of his mother and other persons of his family. For a long time all persuasion or argument was useless to silence his groans and supplications. But exhausted nature at length sunk under its agonies; his screams became less piercing, and his struggles less violent. In the midnight gloom of our dungeon, I could not see him die, but knew, by placing my hand over his mouth, that his breathings were becoming shorter; and thus felt the last breath as it quitted his frame. The first glimmer of morning light through the iron grate fell upon his pallid and lifeless corpse."

ALEXANDER COFFIN, Jr., who was twice a prisoner on the old "Jersey," has related some of his experiences there. Of the firmness and patriotism of the American prisoners, even under these circumstances, he said:

"Although there were seldom less than 1,000 prisoners constantly on board the 'Jersey'—new ones coming about as fast as others died, or were exchanged (which, by-the-bye, was seldom)—I never, in the two different times that I was on board, knew of but one prisoner entering on a British ship of war, though the boats from the fleet were frequently there and the English officers were endeavoring to persuade them to

enter; but their persuasions and offerings were invariably treated with contempt, and even by men who pretty well knew they should die where they were. These were the men whose bones have been so long bleaching on the shores of the Wallabout; these were the patriots who preferred death in its most horrible shape to the disgrace and infamy of fighting the battles of a base and barbarous enemy against the liberties of their country; these were the patriots whose names suffer no diminution by a comparison with the heroes and patriots of antiquity."

The bodies of those who died on these ships were buried in the sand along the shore, on the slope of a hill, in a ravine and in several other localities. The bones of many were washed out of the sand and were seen lying along the shore. In 1803 some societies began to agitate the subject of awarding funeral honors to the remains of these martyrs, but nothing was accomplished till 1808. The Tammany Society, which then embraced many Revolutionary patriots, took the lead in the work, and the corner stone of a monument to these heroes was laid April 13th of that year, on land donated by John Jackson, Esq., adjoining the Brooklyn navy-yard. Their bones, to the amount of about twenty hogsheads, were collected, placed in thirteen capacious coffins, and on the 26th of May, 1808, each coffin, in charge of one of the Tammanial tribes and escorted by eight Revolutionary soldiers as pall bearers, was born to the place of sepulture, and all were, with solemn and imposing ceremonies, deposited in a common tomb.

After the interment of these remains, steps were taken toward providing funds to erect a suitable monument to the memory of these martyrs; but the interest which was at first felt in the matter subsided, and at length the lot on which the vault was constructed was sold for taxes. It was purchased by Benjamin Romaine, who, to prevent its further desecration, fitted it up as a burial place for himself and family; and there, at his death, in 1844, he was entombed.



THE TOMB OF THE MARTYRS, 1837-73.

In the year 1845, public attention was again called to the neglected condition of these remains, and the matter was also brought to the attention of Congress, by a report of the Military Committee of the House of Representatives, drawn up by the Hon. Henry C. Mur-

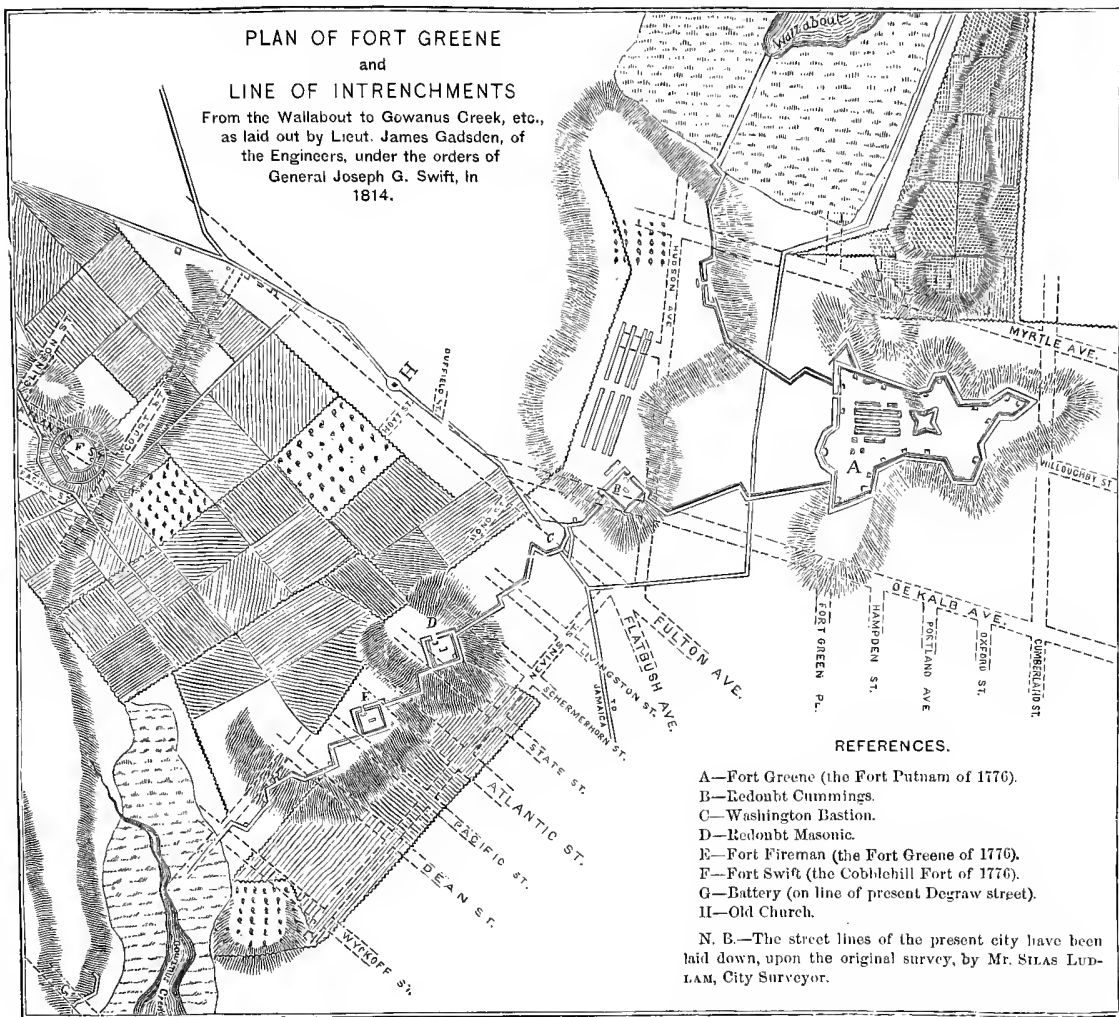
phy of Brooklyn, recommending an appropriation of \$20,000 for the purpose of affording a secure tomb and fitting monument to the Martyrs. This also failed of its object, and the matter slept for ten years. At the expiration of that period, in 1855, a large and influential meeting of the citizens of Brooklyn was held, at which it was resolved, "that the time has arrived when the cities of New York and Brooklyn cannot, without criminality, longer delay the necessary efforts for rearing the monument to the Martyrs of the Prison-Ships," and an organization was formed for the purpose, entitled "The Martyrs' Monument Association," in which each Senatorial District in the State of New York, and each State and Territory was represented. The association set to work with commendable activity, procured a fitting site at Washington Park, secured plans for the proposed monument, agitated the subject publicly and privately, solicited donations, etc.

It was not, however, until 1873, that the new site was utilized. In that year a brick vault, 25 by 11 feet, was completed in the side of the hill facing toward the junction of Myrtle avenue and Canton street. In the meantime the receptacle in Hudson avenue had been so neglected and became so dilapidated that the remains there deposited were in a very exposed state. Many of the old coffins were broken or defaced. New boxes were prepared, and in these boxes, numbering twenty-two, the old coffins with their contents were placed. On the 17th of June, 1873, they were quietly removed to the vault at Washington Park, containing, it is supposed, all the remains preserved of nearly 12,000 victims of prison-ship captivity. The vault was covered with asphalt and the surface restored. The base work has been constructed of the intended ornamental stone superstructure; which, including an elegant monumental shaft, will be a worthy memorial to the heroes and martyrs whose long-neglected remains rest beneath.

CHAPTER VIII.

KINGS COUNTY IN THE WAR OF 1812—THE CONSTRUCTION OF FORTIFICATIONS.

EARLY in the War of 1812 it was believed that New York, then, as now, the commercial metropolis of the nation, would become a point of attack, and that the western end of Long Island might become, as it had been in the Revolution, the theater of active hostilities. In view of this possible danger, bodies of citizen soldiery were organized and drilled to meet such emergencies as might arise. Among these were the company of horse, or flying artillery, under Captain John Wilson; the Artillerists, Captain Barbarin; the Riflemen of Captain Stryker, and the Fusileers of Captain Herbert. The Rifles were nick-



named "Katy Dids" because of the green frock with a yellow fringe which was a part of their uniform.

Beyond the formation of these companies, Kings county did not become the scene of warlike preparations till the summer of 1814. A large British fleet was then concentrating near the Bermuda Islands; and, in view of the possibility that New York might be its objective point, it was deemed expedient to take such measures as would prevent a repetition of the disaster of August, 1776.

That such an attack was intended, became known by a letter from Lion Gardiner, of Gardiner's Island, to Jonathan Thompson, Collector of Internal Revenue of New York. By land, the attack might come, as in the Revolution, from the southern shore at Gravesend, or from a point above Hell Gate, both of which approaches were unprotected; and by either of which a position that would command the city could be taken.

The people awoke from the lethargy into which they had been lulled by their hope of a favorable termination of the pending negotiations for peace. A Committee of Defence which had been constituted, recom-

mended measures for the protection of Brooklyn against attack by land, and issued an address calling on the citizens to organize and enroll for resistance to hostile attacks; and to aid by voluntary contributions of labor and material in the construction of defensive works at Brooklyn and elsewhere. The response to this appeal was made with alacrity. Citizens and associations, without distinction of party or social condition, at once offered their services. The rich and the poor offered their aid and mingled their labors on the same works, in the purest spirit of patriotic emulation. Those who, from any cause, were unable to give their personal labor to the common cause, voluntarily and liberally contributed of their means for the employment of substitutes; while many both gave and worked. Even the women and school-boys caught the inspiration of the hour, and contributed their quota of labor on the work; and the people of the interior towns in the neighboring States of New Jersey and Connecticut hastened to offer their assistance in averting what was felt to be a common national danger. The defensive fortifications, planned by Gen. Joseph G. Swift, U. S. Engineer, commenced

at Mt. Alto, on the Hudson; thence, by McGowan's Pass, a line of redoubts and block-houses ran along the Heights of Harlem, to and across Hell-Gate, including a block-house on Mill Rock and another on the high ground of Long Island.

The defenses erected on Long Island commenced at the Wallabout, overlooked by Fort Greene, and extended across to Bergen's Heights, to Fort Lawrence, including several redoubts commanded by Forts Greene and Lawrence; and there was also an earthwork on Red Hook. From the papers of that time it appears that these works were commenced on the 9th of August, 1814, by a military company, aided by volunteers from New York. On the 10th, the tanners and curriers and plumbers assisted the military force. On the 12th, a military association of young men, the Hamilton Society, Students of Medicine, sixty hands from the wire factory at Greenwich, and forty from the Eagle Foundry; on the 13th, numerous citizens and the journeymen Cabinet Makers of New York; on the 15th, military companies; on the 16th, military and fire companies; on the 17th, citizens of Bushwick, headed by their pastor, and about 200 citizens of New York, among whom was an old man who said he had worked on fortifications on the same spot during the Revolution, and who, with his four sons, labored earnestly; on the 18th, the people of Flatbush; on the 19th, the people of Flatlands and about five hundred carpenters from New York; on the 20th, the citizens of Gravesend, a party of about 70 from Paterson, N. J., some 200 Irishmen and several ununiformed companies of militia from the interior of the State; on the 22d, the people of New Utrecht and a thousand colored citizens of New York; on the 23d, the Mechanics' Society of Kings County, the military exempts, and Fire Companies Nos. 1 and 2 of Brooklyn; on the 24th, the free colored people of Kings County.

On this day the Committee of Defense published a card asking their fellow citizens for a "second tour of duty," to which ready response was made. August 25th, several military companies worked; on the 26th, military and fire companies; on the 27th, the people of Bushwick; on the 29th, the people of Flatbush, also the Albany Rifles, Trojan Greens and Montgomery Rangers; on the 30th, the people of Flatlands and Gravesend; on the 31st, the Grand Lodge of Free Masons, to the number of seven hundred and fifty, headed by their Grand Master, De Witt Clinton, constructed a fort which was called Fort Masonic, south from the Flatbush road, the parole of the day being "The Grand Master expects every Mason to do his duty." Some two hundred ladies also formed a procession and marched to Fort Greene, where they labored during a few hours; and the Tammany Society and Columbian Orders, to the number of one thousand one hundred and fifty, turned out. September 1st, the Mechanics' Society of Kings County, Fire Companies Nos. 1 and 2, Exempts, and Fortitude Lodge of Masons; September 3d, about eight hundred

citizens of Newark, N. J., came in a long line of wagons, with bands, and flags and hats labeled, "Don't give up the soil;" September 7th, one hundred and eighty-four inhabitants of Hanover township, Morris County, N. J., headed by their pastor, Rev. Mr. Phelps; and on the 23d, the members of the Mulberry Street (N. Y.) Baptist Church, under the lead of their pastor, Rev. Archibald McClay, labored.

At one time the Committee of Defense announced their want of several thousand fascines, and stated that patterns were left at Creed's tavern in Jamaica, and at Bloom's in Newtown. The answer to this appeal was the bringing to Fort Greene of a hundred and twenty loads of fascines, averaging twenty-five bundles to a load, by the citizens of Jamaica, headed by the Rev. Mr. Schoonmaker. Mr. Eigenbrodt, the Principal of the Academy, with his pupils aided in cutting these fascines.

The works were completed in September. They were at once occupied by a large force from different localities, including a brigade of Long Island militia, one thousand seven hundred and fifty strong, under the command of General Jeremiah Johnson, of Brooklyn, subsequently well known as antiquarian and historian. In addition to these, other fortifications were erected along the coast below Brooklyn. A block-house was located half or three-fourths of a mile north from Fort Hamilton, near the shore of the bay, on land then owned by Mr. Barkuloo.

On the site of Fort Hamilton was an earthwork, and on that of Fort Lafayette was a log-fort. A block-house was located on the shore of New Utrecht Bay, about midway between Fort Hamilton and Bath, near the residence of the late Barney Williams. From the fact of this block-house having been located there, the place was long known as "Gun Field." This block-house stood several years after the termination of the war. About one-fourth of a mile southeast from Bath, also on the shore of New Utrecht Bay, stood another block-house, on land owned by the late Egbert Benson, and now the property of his heirs. In August, 1776, the forces of General Howe landed in the vicinity of where these last two block-houses stood, and they were probably erected in view of a possible similar attempt to land troops here during this war. Each was armed with a large barbette gun. They were built in the fashion of the block-houses of those times, with a projection of some feet—about twelve or fifteen feet—above the ground, from which assailants could be fired on through the loopholes from directly above.

Several regiments of militia were encamped in and about the works in the vicinity of Bath and Fort Hamilton during the continuance of hostilities.

It is not known that any hostile vessels came within Sandy Hook. The storm of war was averted, however, and Long Island was saved from again becoming the scene of hostilities such as had desolated it in 1776. The news of an honorable peace was received Feb. 11, 1815,

and the joy of the people was testified by illuminations, bonfires, etc. New York was illuminated Feb. 20th; and Brooklyn followed the example in handsome style on the evening of the 21st, when the band of the Forty-first U. S. regiment, stationed at Brooklyn, serenaded the citizens of that village.

A more detailed account of these events will be found in *Stiles' History of Brooklyn*.

Kings County Soldiers of 1812.

This County furnished the Sixty-Fourth Regiment, composed of five companies, of one hundred men each, officered as follows: *Major* Francis Titus, *Commanding*; *Second Major*, Albert C. Van Brunt; *Adjt.*, Daniel Barre; *Q.-Master*, Albert Van Brunt; *Surgeon*, — Schoonmaker.

NEW UTRECHT COMPANY.—*Capt.*, William Denyse; *Lieuts.*, Barcalo, Vanhise; *Ensign*, — Suydam.

BROOKLYN COMPANY.—*Capt.*, Joseph Dean; *Lieuts.*, Chas. J. Doughty, John Spader; *Ensign*, Wm. A. Mercein.

WALLABOUT AND BUSHWICK COMPANY.—*Capt.*, Francis Skillman; *Lieuts.*, Joseph Conselyea, Daniel Lott.

GOWANUS COMPANY.—*Capt.*, Peter Cowenhoven, afterward John T. Bergen; *Lieuts.*, John Lott, Adriane Van Brunt.

GRAVESEND AND FLATBUSH COMPANIES.—*Capt.*, Jeremiah Lott; *Lieuts.*, Robert Nicholls, Charles Rapelye; *Ensign*, Jeremiah Johnson.

There were, also, in camp, and in the Queens Co. Regiment, also under command of Brig. Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, a *Flatlands* Company, under command of Capt. John Lott, Jr.; also the Flushing, Jamaica and Newtown companies.

This regiment was mustered into service at Bedford, Sept. 2, 1814; and were mustered out 13th of November ensuing. The *alarm-post* of the regiment was the house of John R. Duryea.

Other interesting details relating to these soldiers of 1812 will be found in *Stiles' History of Brooklyn*, vol. i, p. 408-410; also in Appendix XI. (p. 452-454) of same volume. From this latter we extract the following names of those in *actual* service:

(EXPLANATION).—*Wall.*, Wallabout; *Bush.*, Bushwick; *Subs.*, served as substitute for others.

In the BROOKLYN COMPANY.—Joseph Dean, *Capt.*;

John Spader and Chas. J. Doughty, *Lieuts.*; Wm. A. Mercein, *Ens.*; Garrett Duryea, Michael Vanderhoof, David Storms, Thos. Chadwick, Wm. R. Dean, *Orderly Serpts.*; James Gildersleeve, Joseph Pettit, Wm. Kirkpatrick, Wm. Bennet, *Corporals*; John Smith, (Gow.); Jas. C. Provost (Bush.); Uriah Ryder; Joseph Butler (Subs.); Michael Mapes; Benj. J. Waldron; Luke Covert (Subs.); Samuel Vail; Thomas Lain; David Hillyard (deserter from British Army in Canada, and Subs.); John Sharpe; Wm. Thomas; Jacob Coope; Sam. Hart; Nathan Furman; Jas. McFarlan; Sam. McGrady; Joseph Stringham; Joseph Robinson; Gilbert Reid; Elijah Raynor; John Swinburn; John Thurston; John Ward; John Rogers; Nich. Covert; Stephen Austin (Subs.); Thos. Furman; Zach Clevenger (Bush.); David Craven; Josiah Applegate; Francis Meserole (Bush.); Peter Colyer (Bush.); Jas. McDonough; Stephen R. Boerum (Wall.); Philetus Fleet (Subs.); Henry Dezen-dorf (Subs.); John Applegate; Cornelius Van Horne; Abraham Bennett, Jr.; John Hulst; Michael Gillen; Jacob W. Bennett (Bush.); Enoch Elbertson; Francis Blaise (Subs.); John Kaler; Jesse Waterbury (Subs.); Rich. M. Bouton; Abm. Blauvelt (Subs.); Sam. Goldsmith (Subs.); Isaac Devoe; Henry Wiggins; Abraham Bennett; Peter Snyder; John Hagerty; Jas. Strain; Richard Hunter; Jesse Coope; Jacob Furman; Aaron Swain Robbins; Jas. Lynch (Subs.); Peter Chatterlon (Subs.); Israel Rimmels; Sam. Pettit; Sam. Nostrand; Abraham Bogert; Michael Harvey (Irish cook); Peter Bennett; William Jackson; John Fitch; Abm. Thompson (colored); Ed. Higbie (drummer).

Pioneer Corps.—Wm. N. Kettletas, *Sgt.*, and Jaques W. Cropsy, *Corp.*; Privates, Henry Van Dyke, Wm. G. Verity, Jacob Denyse, John Van Brunt, Wm. Johnson, Henry Cropsy, Joseph Wardle, David Denyse, Jas. Wallace.

In the BUSHWICK and WALLABOUT companies, consolidated under Capt. Skillman, were (*all substitutes*) Thos. Gardner; David Capron, John Thursby, Joseph Goldsmith, Joseph Russell, Wm. Boerum, Daniel Bevoise, John Wheaton, Simon Denyse, Joseph Deshay, Jas. Van Loo, David Weed, Wm. Turner, Jos. Miller, Jas. Redding, Sam. Conklin, Jas. Wallis, Jas. Kellahan, John Van Pelt, Zeb. Whitman, John Simpson, John H. Curtis, Francis Morgan, Hugh Smith, Oliver Place, David Stewart, Dan. Everitt, James Smith, Wm. Conklin, Hamilton Carr, John Van Tassel, Moses Griffing Geo. Sagors, Jonah Raymond, John Torrey.

HISTORY

OF THE

TOWN OF FLATLANDS.

BY REV. *Auson DuBois*, D.D.

SITUATION. The Township of Flatlands lies upon the northwesterly shore of Jamaica Bay, and includes a number of islands within the Bay.

It is described, in ancient patents, as "lying between the Bay of the North River and the East River;" the former designation being applied to Jamaica Bay, inasmuch as the North River was regarded as discharging into the ocean at Sandy Hook. The principal islands within the bay, belonging to the town, are: *Barren Island*, at the extreme south; *Bergen Island*, mainly in the salt meadows; and *Ruffle Bar*, at the eastward. Flatlands contains some 9,000 acres of land, about one-third of it arable, under high cultivation.

Names. The name *Flatlands* is descriptive, and applied, originally, to the whole of the flat country eastward from Prospect Park Ridge, all the way from the Narrows to Hempstead. Gov. STUYVESANT says: "I found on my arrival [1647] the Flatland so stripped of inhabitants that, with the exception of the three English villages, Hemstede, New Flushing and Gravesend, 50 boweries and plantations could not be enumerated."

The first plantation established in the town was called Achtervolt, because it lay *after*, or *beyond* the "Great Flats," *the field*, in approaching it from New Amsterdam. This name, however, did not attach to the township, which was designated by its early inhabitants *New Amersfoort*, after the city of that name on the river Eem in the province of Utrecht, in the Netherlands, whence Wolfert Gerretse, one of the patentees, and several others of the early settlers, immigrated. Colloquially it was termed "The Bay"—or, in Dutch, "*de Baije*"—from its situation upon Jamaica Bay, and it is so named in many local documents.

The terms New Amersfoort and Flatlands were, for awhile, interchangeable; but in course of time the descriptive word became here localized as a proper name.

Aboriginal Inhabitants. The subdivision of the great Algonquin family of Indians inhabiting Long

Island, living in this town, was the Canarsie, with its principal village at the place still bearing that name. Extensive banks of broken clam-shells at Canarsie and Bergen Island attest both their numbers here, and the great extent to which the manufacture of wampum, or Indian money, was carried on here.

Their social condition must have been very low at the settlement of the town. Verazzano, who, in the service of Francis I, in 1524 entered a large bay in latitude 41° North, supposed by some to have been the Bay of New York, gives a very flattering description of the natives of the adjacent shores; and that of Capt. Hendrick Hudson, in 1609, is not unfavorable. These men, however, could hardly have known them so well as Rev. Jonas Michaelis, the first clergyman of New Amsterdam, who says: "They are as thievish and as treacherous as they are tall, and more inhuman than the people of Barbary."

The Dutch travelers, Dankers and Sluyter (1679), give us a description of an Indian house at New Utrecht, which was probably a type of their dwellings elsewhere.

It was sixty by fifteen feet, the frame rough posts and poles, and covered with reeds and bark. An open space the whole length of the roof, at the ridge, allowed the smoke to escape from fires built upon the earthen floor for the six or eight families inhabiting it. It had no windows, but was furnished with a low narrow door at each end. Their implements for domestic use, agriculture, and fishing, were few, and one of our travelers gives us a pen-and-ink sketch of an Indian woman of that period, drawn from life. It is not a pleasing picture, and gives the impression that intercourse with the whites had debased rather than elevated their character.

There is no evidence, however, of unjust or oppressive treatment of the Indians by the whites in this town. Their lands were taken only by purchase, and no title was considered good until the Indian right had been legally extinguished. The two races lived peacefully together; and, when the murder of inoffensive savages

took place at Pavonia, and Corlaer's Hook, in 1643, the people "dwelling at the Flatland" gave evidence of humane sentiments by "immediately expressing dissatisfaction at this sudden and unexpected slaughter." But the white race grew stronger, and the Indian weaker, until about 1830, when *Jim de Wilt*, or "Jim the wild man," died in his wretched hut at Canarsie, the miserable remnant of the once proud possessors of these fertile lands.

Settlement of the Town by the Dutch. At its settlement by the whites, Flatlands was divided into salt meadows, forest lands and prairies. The prairies, or open plains, were peculiar to this town, and doubtless account for its very early settlement. BERGEN says: "The most tempting locality on the west end of Long Island, for natives of the low and level lands of Holland or Belgium, who were inexperienced in the clearing of forests, were the flats in Flatlands and Flatbush; miniature prairies, void of trees, with a dark-colored surface soil, similar to that of the western prairies; which had been subject to the rude culture of the natives, and were ready without much previous toil and labor for the plow."

The early patents refer to "The three flats of Long Island." These were *Van Twiller's* (central at Ave. B and 5th street), *Van Corlaer's* (central at Ave. C and Troy Ave.), and a third called "*The Little Flats*" and described as "The westernmost of the three flats on Long Island." This "Little Flats," Dr. T. M. STRONG locates at the intersection of Flatbush ave. and the town line. But, while that locality was so called, the true locality of the "Little Flats" referred to in the Land Patents, as distinct from the Township Patents, was, without doubt, at the point where Hudden and Van Kouwen-Hoven formed their settlement, near the Flatlands Reformed Church, at the intersection of Flatbush and Flatlands avenues. Beside these three flats there were maize lands, under rude Indian culture, at Canarsie Point and Bergen's Island. Finally, there were the "Great Flats," or "Flatlands Plains," covering a large portion of the western part of the town. Probably, most of the Great Flats was under more imperfect Indian cultivation than the other maize lands; but they were destitute of trees, and we have reason to think that considerable portions of it were made to yield the scanty crops of savage agriculture. The extent of the Great Flats would be roughly described by a line drawn from the *Puerdegat* westward, to near the intersection of the Manhattan Beach railroad and Ocean avenue; thence to the residence of Jeremiah Ryder, near Nostrand and Ave. M; thence to a point on Mill Lane, some three hundred yards beyond the Methodist Church; thence to the Neck road at the Dutch Church, and along said road to Ave. I and 45th street, and thence to the place of beginning. The "Indian path" from Fulton Ferry to Bergen Island passed through the centre of this great plain, and is

shown by the old line of Flatbush ave. and Mill lane. As a rule, the black soil shows the portions of the town originally open, while the gray soil shows that part covered by the forests.

There can be no doubt that the earliest whites in Flatlands located at, or near, the point where the southerly course of the Kings highway bends suddenly westward at J. B. Hendrickson & Son's store. Uniform tradition, the language of early patents, the *debris* of Holland brick, and the proximity of burial-place, church and school, all prove this spot to have been earliest occupied by Europeans. It was probably called "The Little Flats," because separated from the "Great Flats" by a belt of timber along the low ground, a little northeasterly of the Church. This elect prairie was particularly eligible, because it lay close upon the salt meadows (much depended on in those early times for cattle-feed); and, still more, because it was convenient to "the Bay," whose fish, oysters, and wild fowls, afforded our primitive inhabitants so valuable a part of their year's provisions.

Some rude settlement was probably formed here as early as 1624. In evidence of this we find Brooklyn and Amersfoort are mentioned as Dutch settlements, in 1649, along with the statement, "Our freemen have resided on that Island down from the very first." In 1660, the West India Company say, "Long Island was taken possession of by planting Amersfoort," and other places are named after it. In all the early enumeration of Long Island towns, Amersfoort is placed first, doubtless from its priority of settlement. Gov. Stuyvesant gives important testimony as to its settlement in 1624, by speaking, in 1664, of Long Island as "Now peacefully possessed some 40, some 30, and the least 20 years." If we accept this statement, and recede forty years from 1664, we shall find Amersfoort "planted," and "peaceably possessed" by its white inhabitants in 1624.

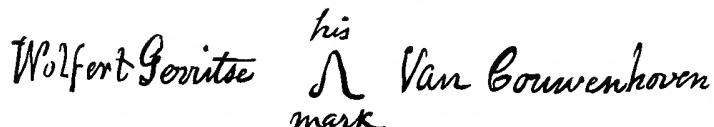
Our early people were themselves fully aware of their seniority, in this county, and are interesting witnesses of it. In a statement before the County Court, at Gravesend, 1666, in a certain dispute with Flatbush, they say:

"You may be pleased to take notice that much we might plead before them with respect to antiquity and the first settlers and settlement of this place; the great brunt of troubles, and loss of goods, and lives of men that was gone through with and lost, as some of the English who shared therein with us can testify."

These statements, taken in connection with the attractive conditions of the lands and waters of this township, are deemed sufficient to fix the date of settlement by the whites as early as 1624.

Early Land Patents.—The first recorded purchase of lands in this town took place June 16th, 1636, when Andries Huddie (or Hudden) and Wolphert Gerretse (Van Kouwenhoven) bought of the Indians, and obtained the next year from Gov. Van Twiller a

patent for, the westernmost of the three flats on Long Island, called by the Indians *Caskatewo* (or *Kaskutenu*). "Van Corlaer's" and "Van Twiller's Flats" were purchased the same day. On this purchase, according to



TUNIS G. BERGEN, "a plantation called 'Achtervelt' was established, on which, prior to July 9, 1638, when an inventory was taken, they had a house set around with long round palisades, the house being 26 feet long, 22 feet wide, 40 feet deep, with the roof covered above and around with plank; two lofts, one above another, and a small chamber at their side; one barn 40 feet long, 18 feet wide, and 24 feet deep; and one *bergh* with 5 posts, 40 feet long. The plantation was stocked with 6 cows, old and young, 3 oxen and 5 horses." The lands of Hudden and Van Kouwenhoven are described as extending "From a certain meadow, or valley, westward to and into the woods." That is, as we understand it, the patent covered all the western portion of the town, from the Paerdegat and its outlet, westward across the "plains" to, and into, the woods beyond them, or to the Gravesend line. We have another description incidentally given, when, in 1652, the Company directs the Governor to annul parts of certain land claims, and among them "The Great Flat, otherwise the Bay, on Amersfoort Flat, with the lands adjacent claimed by Wolfert Gerretse and Andries Hudde, containing full 1,000 morgens, not a fiftieth part of which they are able to occupy." Hudde and Van Kouwenhoven, however, never relinquished possession, though the freeholders endeavored to compel them to do so under this forfeiture. By the account of the contest which thus grew up between the patentees and the town, we are able to locate most of the original bounds of the patent very definitely. A jury of the Court of Sessions, at Gravesend, in December, 1679, sustained the patentees; but disputes as to where the patent-lines really were, continued until 1695, when the heirs of Elbert Elbertse (who had acquired the original patentee rights), and the freeholders of the town, mutually bound themselves to accept as final the decision of a commission to locate the lines. These commissioners say: "The westernmost bounds or limits of said Elbert's patent joins to the easternmost lines or limits of Gravesend, one patent comprehending in it the lands of Jan Albertse (Terhune), Jan Van Dyckhuysen, and Thomas Willet, and so from the northward corner of the said Willet, joining to Gravesend, along the westernmost side of the Flats of Flatlands." A still later commission—for this old difficulty was hard to settle—carries the last-mentioned line "Northerly till it cuts the line which runs westerly from the meadow or valley on the east side of Flatlands town, including the said

meadow; being bounded north by Flatbush land and west by Gravesend line." It is probable that the Wyckoffs and a few others in the southerly part of the town held directly from the Government; but it is clear from the above that the patent of Hudden and Van Kouwenhoven covered all the lands from the Paerdegat and its outlet to Gravesend, and northward to the Flatbush line.

Hudde never resided here, and sold portions of his patent right to Wolfert Gerretse until September 16th, 1647, when all his remaining interests were thus disposed of.

Achtervelt had assumed the appearance of a village. The residence of the elder Van Kouwenhoven, with his barns, &c., stood near where J. B. Hendrickson's store now is. The house was large, with two stories in the roof, in thorough Holland style. Van Kouwenhoven's second son, Gerret Wolfertse, lived near by, in a clapboard house, with his young family, Wellem Jan, Neeltje, and Marritze. This important centre of the settlement was inclosed by stout palisades and furnished with a guard of soldiers. We have no evidence that any hostile attack was ever made upon it, but there was always more or less danger from the large number of Indians in the immediate vicinity. At the time of which we speak, the Wyckoffs, the Stoothoffs, the Van Nostrants, the Teunessens, and some others, were permanently located here, and by the time the Dutch church was organized, in 1654, there were prominent in the town the families of the Schencks, the Ammermans, the Strykers, the Van Sigelens, the Romeyns, the Bruynses, the Davises, the Van Dyckhuysens, the Van Arts Daalens, and doubtless others.

The estate called Achtervelt fell, after Wolfert's death, to his second son, Gerret Wolfertse, who married Altje Cool of Gowanus, and died about 1645. His widow married Capt. Elbert Elbertse (Stoothoof), whose name is the most prominent of all in the early history of the town. Elbert gained possession of the whole of Gerret's estate by agreeing with the guardian of Gerret's children to pay the debts on the estate, bring up the children, teach them to read and write, and pay them each 200 guilders, except Jan, who, being lame, was to receive 300. This agreement did not include the separate interest of Gerret's widow; for, by his will, made after her death, Capt. Elbert directs 2,000 guilders to be paid to Jan, and an equal amount to be divided among the other children of Gerret (*viz.*: Willem, and Neeltje, wife of Roeloff Martense Schenck, and the children of Marritse, deceased, who had married Capt. Stevense Voorhees) as "due them from their mother's and grandmother's estate."

Town Government.—In the early settlement, when all were surrounded by savages and the families were mutually dependent on each other for protection and comfort, no precise form of municipal government was needed. The laws and habits of Hol-

land regulated the affairs of this feeble offshoot. Titles of land were derived from the Governor and Council in New Amsterdam; and cases in law, did any arise, were adjudicated by the same authority. The time came, however, when local courts were necessary. Gravesend, settled by Lady Moody early in 1643, received from Governor Kieft a charter in 1645; and, in it, authority to form a body politic and a local court of three magistrates, with final jurisdiction in the amount of fifty guilders. Flatbush had been settled by direction of the Governor in 1651, and three years later, March 6th, 1654, was favored with a local court of six magistrates in connection with Flatlands, sitting three-fourths of the time at the former place and one-fourth at the latter. But this quarter of a loaf, tardily given, the people of Flatlands thought little better than no bread, and requested the Governor and Council to give them a court of their own. One was accordingly established, March 31st, 1661, to consist of three magistrates, the first being Elbert Elbertsen, Pieter Cornelissen, and Simon Jansen. These officers were elected annually by the freeholders and confirmed by the Governor. They were called Schepens, and the constable was called a schout.

There existed in this town, for one hundred and fifty years, a close intimacy between Church and State. The civil magistrates must be of the Reformed religion, and the officers of the church were *ex-officio* officers of the town; the elders being trustees of the school of the town and of the lands held for the use or benefit of the school and the church; while the deacons had charge of the poor, and of all the funds collected by tax, or by contribution, for their support.

Flatlands grew into a municipality without formal legislation or authorization of any kind, except in its land grants. It was thirty years after its settlement before it enjoyed any privileges of a local court, and then only in connection with its more favored neighbor, Flatbush; and thirty-seven years before it could boast one of its own, of the most primary jurisdiction. Its charter as a township was even longer in coming. An English Governor, Nicolls, did its people this tardy justice, October 4th, 1667, without assuming to create a municipality, but expressly recognizing its existence. Omitting verbiage, the charter is as follows:

"Whereas, there is a certain town in this government, situate in the west Riding of Yorkshire of Long Island, commonly known by the name of Amersfoort, *al's* Flatlands, which is in the occupation of several freeholders and inhabitants who heretofore have been seated there by authority. * * * Now for a confirmation. * * * I, Richard Nicoll, Esq., * * * have granted and do grant unto Elbert Elberts [Stoothoff], Govert Lockermans, Ruelof Martense [Schenck], Pieter Claes [Wyckoff], Wellem Garrits [Van Kouwenhoven], Tho. Hillebrants, Stephen Coertsen [Voorhees], and Coert

Stephens [Voorhees], as Patentees, for themselves and their associates * * * all that tract * * * and other parcels purchased of the native Indian proprietors, or others, within these limits, viz.: From their western bounds, which begin at a certain creek called the Stromme Kill [Garretsen's Mill Pond] they stretch to Filkin's or Varken's Hook on Hog Point, which is also included within their limits. [This Point was about the intersection of Avenue J and East 83d street, and had the meadows belonging to New Utrecht township northeasterly on to Vischer's Hook, or Canarsie Point.] Then from the limits of Middlewout *al's* Flatbush * * * beginning at a certain tree standing upon the Little Flats, marked by commissioners, October 19th, 1666, a line stretching southeast to Canarsie. It includes within its bounds several parcels of land, particularly a tract granted by Governor Petrus Stuyvesant to Jacob Steendam and Welken Jans, November 12th, 1652, and transferred to Flatlands November 30th, 1662. Also lands at Canarsie heretofore manured and planted by consent of the Indians, and on April 16th, 1665, bought for a valuable consideration by the inhabitants of Flatlands, together with the meadow or valley at Canarsie, divided April 20th last year from the town of Flatbush by a line half a point northerly from the mouth of the [Fresh] Creek. To have and to hold, * * * and that the place of their present habitation shall continue, and retain the name of Amersfort *al's* Flatlands. * * *

Given * * * at Fort James, New York, October 4th, 1667.

MATTHIAS NICOLL, Sec'y.

RICHARD NICOLL.

Elbert Elbertson . 1660

Facsimile of Elbert Elbertsen Stoothoff's signature.

Roelof Martense Schenck . 1680.

Facsimile of Roelof Martense Schenck's signature.

*mark
Gif it is juf van pieter
clausen.*

Facsimile of Pieter Claesen Wyckoff's signature.

Steven Koers Voorhees . 1675.

Facsimile of Steven Koers Voorhees' signature.

The indefiniteness of this charter immediately occasioned difficulties as to boundary lines at Canarsie; and early the next year (February 3d, 1668), Governor Lovelace issued another charter, confirmatory of the preceding, and granting certain provisions in the purchase of lands at Canarsie. Still another charter was granted by Governor Dongan, March 11th, 1685, to Elbert Elbertse (Stoothoff), Roelof Martense (Schenck), Pieter Claesen (Wyckoff), Willem Garretsen (Van Kouwenhoven), Coert Stevensen (Voorhees), Lucas Stevensen (Voorhees), and John Teunissen, for themselves and associates, according to the tenure of East

Greenwich, they paying annually 14 bushels of good wheat in New York. But none of the charters defined the town boundaries intelligibly, and acrimonious disputes leading finally to litigations, in 1661, between Flatlands and Flatbush, in regard to the Canarsie meadows, continued for the long period of thirty years. After the matter had occupied the attention of successive courts, and of several commissioners, and of the Governor, a joint commission from the two towns, in May, 1677, agreed on and staked out a line across the Canarsie meadows, adding to their report this important item: "All manner of difference between them to this day to be forgotten and forgiven." But the miasma of the marsh must have soured the temper of the people; for, two years later (June, 1679) the Flatlanders prosecuted their Flatbush brethren for trespass at Canarsie, and obtained judgment in £10 damages. In 1691 the judgment was still unpaid, and was then reaffirmed and execution ordered. Flatbush thereupon appealed to the Governor and Council. We have no evidence that the judgment was reversed; and, if not, there must be now due to this town from Flatbush the original £10, with costs, and some two hundred years' interest.

Flatlands was recognized by the State as a town, March 7th, 1788. The *Supervisors*, for the last hundred years, have been the following: 1783, 1785, 1786, Ulpianus Van Sinderin; 1784, Abram Voorhees; 1787-98, Capt. Nicholas Schenck; 1799, 1800, Hendrick I. Lott; 1801-15, Johannes Remsen; 1816-39, Gerrit Kouwenhoven; 1840-43, Andrew Emmans; 1844-53, John A. Voorhees; 1854, John A. Wyckoff; 1855, to the present time, John L. Ryder.

Thus, for a century past, the highest political office of the town has been held by ten men, some of them through terms of 9, 14, 23, and the present incumbent, 27 years. Our people are contented when they are well served, and the civil service in Flatlands is not in need of "Reform."

Early Inhabitants.—The following names are from the list of those who took the Oath of Allegiance to the British crown, in 1687; with the date of arrival in this country of the foreign-born:

Pieter Claesen Wyckoff, 1636; Gerret Pieterse Wyckoff, Claes Pieterse Wyckoff, Hendrick Pieterse Wyckoff, Jan Pieterse Wyckoff, *natives*; Elbert Elbertse (Stoothoff), 1637; Gerret Elbertse (Stoothoff), Hans Janse (Van Nostrandt), 1640; Roelof Martense Schenck, 1650; Jan Martense Schenck, 1650; Jan Roelof Schenck, Martin Roelof Schenck, Derick Janse Ammerman, 1650; Jacob Stryker, 1651; Ferdinandus Van Sickelin, 1652; Christoffel Janse Romeyne, 1653; Ruth (or Rut) bruynsen, 1653; William Davies, 1653; Jan theunis Van duyckhuys, 1653; Simon Janse Van Arts Daalen, 1653; Cornelius Simonen Vanarsdalen, Pieter Cornelius Luyster, 1656; Thys Pieter Luyster, 1656; Pieter Pieterse Tall, 1657; Jan Brouwer, 1657; Dirck Brouwer, Hendrick Brouwer, Dirk Stoffelse, 1657; Stoffel Dirckse (Langstraet), Adriaen Kume, 1660; Court Stephense Van Voorhees, 1660; Albert Courten Van Voorhees, Luycas Stephense (Van Voorhees),

1660; Jan Stephense (Van Voorhees), 1660; Abram Williamse, 1662; Johannis Williamse, 1663; Evert Janse Van Wickelen, 1664; theunis Janse Van Amach, 1673; Gerret hansen (Van Nostrandt), Gerret Hendrickse bresse, Wellim Gerretse Van Couwenhoven, Gerret Williamse Van Couwenhoven, Anthony Warnshaer, William Williamse borcklo, Jan Albertse Terhune, Pieter Nevins, Pieter Manfoort.

Residents in 1687, and previously.—Gathered from Town and Church records:

Gerret Seerjersy, Hendrick Freemensen (here in 1670); Gerret Gerretsen, Abram Joeresy (Brinkerhoff), Jan Cornelis, Jan Barrentsen (Van Driest), Albert Albertse (Terhune), died 1672, and Vaereyck Flielsen, all here in 1672; William Iobbertse, Wm. Williamse (Wyckoff), Gerrit Remers, Barent Jureyaensy, Thunis Helebrantsy, here in 1673; Klaes Kornelesen, Barent the Tailor, Sawaern Jans, Hans Janse (Van Nostrandt), Hendrick Hermanze, Widow of Frederick Ebbcott, here in 1674; Widow of Gerraen Keest, Willem Gansen Van Barkelo, Klaes Smit, Widow of Geromus Boeck, Willem Kuyken, Jan Snedeghyer, here in 1675; Abraham Jorissen (Brinkerhoff), Fookie Hansen, 1679; Cornelius Barentsen, Simon Jansen (Romeyne), Simon Jorisen, 1680; Albert Terhune, Jr., Lawrence Koeck, Hendrick Aswerus, 1682; Jan Hansen (Van Nostrandt), Johannis Machgilissen, Jan Manfordt, Vls Homes, Jammes Willer, William the Shoemaker, De Fris the tanner, Jacob Fardon, Jan Albert Terhune, 1685; Rut Joosten (Van Brunt), Cornelis Simonsen Van

Rutger Joosten

Facsimile of Rutger Joosten's (Van Brunt) signature.

Arsdalen, Joost Rutjen (Van Brunt), Johannis Holsa, Jan Kilement a mason, Master Toon, the Doctor, here in 1687; also 1677-1685; Bruno Hendrickse, Rutger Brunoos, Tjelletje Reimers (Wizzelpfinnig), Pieter Tull, Jan Poppe, William Stryker, Gerret Remmerts, Jan Kiensen, Dirckye Roelfsen, Pieter Hendricksen, Albert Steven (Voorhees), Steven Coerten (Voorhees), Martin Pieterse (Wyckoff), Luykas (Voorhees), Teunis Jansen, Swaen Jansen, Adam Michilse, Dierckie Williamse, Lourens Cornelise, William Hulett.

The taxable property in Flatlands in 1676 amounted to £3,966, 13s., and the taxes were about £20 yearly. The number of acres of land under cultivation in 1683 was 1,661.

The following names appear in the **Census of 1698**. The first figure following a name is the number of *whites* in the family, and the second figure shows the number of *negro slaves*:

Gerret Elbert Stoothoff, 7, 4; Jan Teunis Dykhuys, 5, 5; Roelif Martense (Schenck), 6, 4; Coert Stevense, 5, 2; Gerret Wyckoff, 5, 2; Hend* Wykof, 2, 2; Dirk Jans Amerman, 9; Adriaen Kenne, 8; Dirck Langstraet, 5; Jan Kiensen, 2, 1; Alexander Simson, 10; Jan Hansen, 5; Pieter Nevins, 9, 1; Jacob Tysse Lane, 6; Helena Aertsen, 5; Simon Jantz Van Aersdaelen, 5, 1; Cornelis Simontz Aersdaelen, 8, 1; Willem Gerrittz Van Couwenhoven, 8; Aernont Viele, 2, 2; Jan Albertz ter hennen, 8, 2; Jan Brouwer, 8, 1; Thunis Jantz Amack, 7; fferdinando Van Sigelen, 7, 4; Claes Wykof, 8; Jan Wykof, 4, 1; Willem Bruynen, 7, 4; Adriaen Langstraet, 1; Lucan Stevense, 12, 4; Pieter Pieterse Wyckoff, 1; Hendrick Brouwer, 1; Albert Amerman, 1; Pieter Van Couwenhoven, 4; Martin Schenck, 5, 2; Jan Stevense (Voorhees), 12, 1; Pieter Monfoor, 8, 1; Steven Caerten (Voorhees), 5; Rutgers Bruyn, 9.

This census gives us 37 families, with 40 men, 39 women, 130 children, and 40 slaves—a total of 256 souls. The entire county then numbered 2,013 souls.

The **Militia Company** of the town in 1715 was as follows :

Roelif Terhunen, *Captain*; John Ameerman, *Lieutenant*; Court Van Voorhees, *Ensign*; John Hansen (Van Nostrant); Martin Schenck; Oka Van Voorhees; William Kouwenhoven; Isaac Amerman; John Van Sekellen; Jacob Amurman; Daniel Nostrant; Cornelis Manford; Jacob Manford; Evers Van Gelder; Roeluf Schenck; Roeluf Van Voorhees; Lucas Van Voorhees; Albert Van Voorhees; John Van Arsdalen; Meanu Van Voorhees; Johannis Boyes; Marten Neves; Cornelius Neves; Peter Neves; Hendrick Von Voorhies; Christofer Qubartus; John Browyer; Albartt Terhunan; Peter Van Voirhies.

The following is a list of the inhabitants of Flatlands forty years later (1738). The spelling and absence of capitals indicate an illiterate officer. The figures, as in the census above, show the membership of families, and the number of slaves :

Johannes Lotts, 5; Marten Schenck, 5, 2; hendrick wickof, 5, 2; Jacobus Amerman, 5; yan Amerman, 6, 1; pieter nevyus, 3; pieter Wickof, jur., 3, 1; yan Stevensen (Voorhees), 7, 2; wijllem koowenoven, 12, 3; Steven Schenck, 8, 1; Gerret hansen (Van Nostrant) 2; 1; pijeter monfoort; wijllem van gelder, 8; Corneleis van voorhees, 6, 3; marten Schenck, 4, 2; koert van voorhees, 5; Luijcas Stevensen (Van Voorhees) 2, 3; cornlus van arsdalen, 8; ijan van voorhees, 12, 1; Aukn van Voorhees, 6, 1; teunys rijennesen, 3; cornelys nefeus, 7; ijaack van voorhees, 6; ijan elbersen (Stoothoof?) 9, 1; pijeter wyckoff, 6, 1; pijter wyckoff, 4; abraham westervelt, 3; ijohannes van sijggelen, 3; ijan ouken, 7; ijan terhunen, 3, 5; wijlhelmus Stothof, 5, 4; cornelus Stevensen (Voorhees) 4; hermanus hoogelant, 11, 1; roelof van voorhees, 5. This list, following the original analysis, here omitted in detail, gives us white males above 10 years of age, 81; under, 21; white females above 10, 70; under, 23. Blacks: males above 10, 24; under, 1; females above 10, 11; under, 6. Total—*Whites*, 195; *Blacks*, 42.

Slaves.—In 1755 there were in the town twenty families in which slaves were held, viz.: those of John Schenck, John V. Der Bilt, Wilhelmus Stoothoff, Jr., Hermanus hooglant, Roelif Van Voorhees, Esq., Wilhelmus Stoothof, Abraham Voorhees, Steve Schenck; John Ditmars, William Kouwenhoven, Esq., Gerret Kouwenhoven, John Amerman, Gerret Wyckoff, Marten M. Schenck, Johannis Lott, Derrick Remsen, Johannis W. Wykof, Pieter Wykof, and Joosh Vannuis. Of these families that of Johannis Lott alone had four slaves; two families had three each; all the rest one or two.

A LIST OF INHABITANTS, OCT. 1, 1796, with dwellings, barns, farms, &c., exceeding in value \$100. Explanation: H, size of house; C, condition of houses; V, value of dwelling with 2 acres; B, size of barn; A, number of acres in farm; V B, value of barns and farm; R, remarks.

Barant Johnson, H 42x32, C new and good, V \$900, B 39x48, A 49, V B \$2,225; Ulpianus Van Sinderin, H 37x33, C very bad, V \$200, B 36x24, 2 barns, A 68, B \$1,600; Hendrick Okey, H 14x18, C good, V \$110, A 4, V B \$100; Jane Okey, H 12x20, C very old, V \$110; Folkert Sprong, H 35x21, Cold

but in middling repair, V \$300, B 46x36, A, 43, V B \$1,075; Abraham Voorhees, H 37x32, C good, V \$600, B 46x48, A 51, V B \$1,275; Johannes Remsen, H 32x28, C new and good, V \$700, B 48x46, A 134, V B \$2,680; Rem Hageman, H 44x35, C good, V \$900, B 36x52, A 123, V B \$3,321; Abraham Stoothoof, H 40x30, C old and bad, V \$101, B 48x50 old, R owned by Johannes Ditmars; Samuel Harris, H 36x32, C new, V \$800, B 46x33, A 20½, V B \$540; Jacob Voorhees, H 28x32, C new, V \$650, B 40x36 new, A 51, V B \$1,275; Simon Voorhees, H 28x32, C new and good, V \$1,000, R 1½ acres; Johannes Stoothoof, H 33x30, C good, V \$500, B 46x36, A 47, V B \$1,175; Johannes P. Lott, H 30x28, C middling, V \$600, B 40x50, A 133, V B \$3,600, R adjoining the Bay and H. Lott; Hendrick J. Lott, H 50x34, C old, V \$600, B 48x52. A 124, V B \$3,600, R adjoining the bay; Isaac Selover, H 29x 34, C old, V \$250, B 33x20 old, A 12, V B \$240; John Baxter, H 18x28, C middling, V \$400, B 44x36, A 91, V B \$2,400, R on road to mill of Martensen; Wilhelmus Stoothoof, H 36x31, C old, V \$500, B 39x50, A 81, V B \$2,187; John Schenck, H 41x22, C good, V \$650, B 44x42 mill 28x28, A 121, V B \$5,600, R owned by Jane Martensen. Flatbush; Johannis Bergen, H 34x34, C good, V \$350, B 36x48, A 82, V B \$2,460, R owner Tunis Bergen, Brooklyn; Garret G. Wyckoff, H 19x30, C good, V 350, A 30, V B \$600. R on road to mill; Barent Wyckoff, H 19x30, C now, V \$250, A 29, V B \$580, R on road to mill; Peter G. Wyckoff, H 33x23, C very old, V \$400, B 40x50 old, A 63, V B \$1,575, R on road to mill; Wm. & Potter Skidmore, H 34x34, C old, V \$550. B 48x52 new shingles, A 102, V B \$2,550, R owner Sarah Wyckoff; Aaron Van Pelt, H 30x23, C new; V \$500, A 4, V B \$350; Peter Vanderbilt, H 21x28, C middling. V \$300, B 36x42, A 32, V B \$640, R on road to Gravesend; Williampte Amerman, H 36x32, C good, V \$550, B 44x44, A 165, V B \$3,520, R on road to Gravesend; Abraham Terhune, H 28x32, C new, V \$900, R owner Albert Terhune; Deborah Wyckoff, H 35x33, C old, V \$300, R on road to Gravesend; Lemmetye Lott, H 45x31, C good, V \$800, B 48x52, A 114, V B \$3,078, R on road to Lott's landing, owner Jores Lott, minor; John H. Lott, H 19x27, C good, V \$450, B 48x50, A 124, V B \$2,480, R in Flatlands Neck; Derick Remsen, H 46x33, C new and good, V \$800, B 46x44, A 156, V B \$3,120, R in Flatlands Neck; Wm. Kouwenhoven, H 42x34, C good, V \$650, B 55x50, A 110, V B \$3,300; Johannes Ditmars, H 42x35, C new and good, V \$900, B shingle two 48x50, A 328, V B \$8,200; Garret Kouwenhoven, H 31x50, C new and good, V \$600, B 48x50, A 118, V B \$2,900, R Flatlands Neck; Johannes Lott, H 36x33, C new and good, V \$750, B 36x44, A 57, V B \$1,254, R Flatlands Neck; Hayltje Wyckoff, H 29x37, C middling, V \$480, B 44x30, A 100, V B \$2,500. R owners heirs of Peter Wyckoff; Nicholas Schenck, H 42x33, C 25 years and good, V \$850, B 40x56 36x46, A 113, V B \$3,390, R Flatlands Neck; John Schenck, H 28x32, C new, V \$570, R Flatlands Neck, Nick. Schenk, owner; Folkert Sprong, H 14x18, C new, V \$150, A 1, V B \$25, R Flatlands Neck; Peter Lake, H 27x30, C new, V \$500; Elias Hubbard, H 45x32, C good, V \$200, B 33x40, A 77, V B \$1925; James Ellsworth, H 34x26, C good, V \$400; Daniel Bremen, H 32x17½, V 200; John Voorhees, H 36x32, C new, V \$700, B 42x36, A 26, V B \$572, R on road to Flatbush; Johannes Van Nuys, H 30x32, C middling, V \$350, B 49x52, A 85½, V B \$1,870; Wilhelmus Van Nuys, H 33x30, C good, V \$500, B 42x33, A 39, V B \$897, R Idea Stryker owner, on road to Flatbush; Michael Stryker, H 45x31, C good, V \$550, R on road to Flatbush; Ben. Bennet, H 39x27, C old, V \$250, R heirs of Johannes Ditmars, owners; Wm. Livingston, H 36x30, C good, V \$600, A 102, V B \$2,550, R owner Johannes E. Lott; Davee Stoothoof, A 6½, V B \$180, R Mill lane near Bay and marsh; Joseph White, A 4, V B \$20, R Mill lane near Bay and marsh; Johannes J. Lott,

B 48x50, A 83, V B \$2,075 ; Jeromas Lott, A 70, V B \$1,750 ; Nicholas Schenck, Jr., A 30, V B \$660, R Flatlands Neck ; Adrian Hageman, A 5, V B, \$100, R house value \$30 ; Cornelius Stoothoff, B 42x50, A 38, V B \$855, R road to Flatbush ; Thomas Ellsworth, B 30x36, A 35, V B \$787½, R road to Flatbush ; Jeremiah Ellsworth, A 14, V B \$315, R road to Flatbush ; Wilhelmus Van Nuys, A 4, V B 150, R road to his own property ; Ben. Bennet, A 16, V B \$280, R road to his own property ; Luke Kouwenhoven, Jr., A 50, V B \$1,250.

Social Condition of the Early Inhabitants.—

The early population of this town consisted of agriculturalists and artisans, plain, thrifty and religious people. The open land of the town attracted settlers nearly as soon as Manhattan Island was permanently occupied, and large numbers of newly arrived immigrants for many years continued to make it a temporary abode. A great many families upon the Hudson and Mohawk and in New Jersey trace their descent through permanent or temporary residents of this township ; and Governor Stuyvesant speaks of this region as the only one which seemed to thrive under the severe trials of those times.

Their dwellings must have been very plain. Two of them survive after a lapse of more than two hundred years, and may serve as examples of the better and the more common sort ; the first is the house at Crook's Mill, and the second the humble cottage in the corner of Theo. Bergen's field, near John L. Ryder's residence. Our people were the people of Holland transferred to Long Island. The salt meadows, the bay, and the level lands suited them. On the marsh the ditches dug by their hands are not yet filled up, and their descendants still go to those marshes for salt hay. On the arable lands the "dikes" may yet be traced along the principal lines dividing farms, once a sort of fond remembrance of their fence against the North Sea. The tiles still remaining upon the chimney pieces, at Crook's Mill and at Peter Remsen's, show, as fishing and Bible scenes, in decidedly Hollandish character. There are, even now, probably fewer changes in manners and habits of thought here, than can be found in any other part of the country. We have an interior view of early Flatlands given in *Dancker's and Stryker's Journal* of 1679–1680, published by the Long Island Historical Society. The picture is not flattered :

"Monday, Oct. 2d, 1679.—We went after breakfast to the Bay. We did not find Jan Theunessen (Van Dyckhuysen) at home, but the father and mother (Elbert Elbertse Stoothoff and wife, whose daughter Jan married) bade us welcome and took us around into the orchards. We found the land in general not so good as at Najack (New Utrecht). Toward the sea is a piece of low flat land which is overflowed at every tide, while adjoining corn lands are dry and barren for the most part. Some of them were now entirely covered with clover in blossom, which we discovered in the atmosphere before we saw the fields. There is here a grist mill driven by the (tide) water which they dam up in the creek, and

hereabouts they go mostly to shoot snipe and wild geese. Behind the village inland are their meadows, now arid."

"Tuesday, 3d.—Nothing but rain ; compelled to sit in the house, which was constantly filled with a multitude of godless people. This Elbert Elbertse being the principal person of the place, and their Captain, and having a multitude of children of his own, there was a continual concourse at his house."

A week later our travelers were again at Capt. Elbert's in the Bay. They write :

"While we were sitting there, Domine Van Sauren came up, to whom the farmers called out as uncivilly and rudely as if he had been a boy. He had a chatting time with all of them. He spoke to us, but not a word about religion. Indeed, he sat prating and gossiping with the farmers, who talked foully and otherwise, not only without giving them a single word of reproof, but without speaking a word about God or spiritual matters. It was all about horses and cattle and swine and grain ; and then he went away."

The surrender of New Netherlands to the English, Aug. 27th, 1664, caused no material changes in the social affairs of Flatlands. The magistrates continued in office until the usual time of elections, when the newly elected took the oath of allegiance to his Majesty of England. The people continued to be free citizens, enjoying their lands and privileges as before ; and the Dutch were to enjoy liberty of conscience in worship and church discipline, as well as their own customs concerning inheritances. The States-General gave Amersfoort, and some other towns near her, a sharp reproof for yielding too far to English blandishments about this time ; and threatened their "severest indignation and displeasure" if they did not remain firm in their Dutch allegiance. The rebuke was scarcely just to this town. The whole of Kings County was perfectly defenceless, though harrassed by daily threats of the English, and the men would not abandon their wives and children to defend those of New Amsterdam.

There was little to disturb the peaceful flow of events in this town for more than a hundred years before the Revolution. There was, indeed, at one period, some excitement in regard to the settlement of the pastors Antonides and Freeman, over the joint Dutch churches of Kings County ; but, finally, all parties became weary of the profitless quarrel and both were accepted by all the churches in a better spirit. In this town the services and care of the church, the interests of children in the schools, and the daily pursuits of a rural population, made up the history of the months and the years. Large and healthy families gladdened parents' hearts and furnished work for their hands. New men from the old families, and with the old names, took the places of those who were laid to rest "in de kerk," or in the burial-ground beside it. In all these years, the people of this town were loyal to the British crown, and continued so, doubtless, to the outbreak of the Revolutionary War. They were not engaged in trade, were not excitable, were not ardent politicians or theorists, and were content with honest gains by the cultivation

NOTE.—Simon Voorhees and Abraham Terhune had houses of two stories, all the rest were of one story, and all built of wood. It is not known that a stone or brick house has ever been built in this township.

of their fields. Two months after the Declaration of Independence they passed under the power of the British army, and so remained until the evacuation of New York.

Flatlands Neck.—It is proper, at this point of our sketch, to speak of that portion of the township of Flatlands lying northward from Bedford Creek and bounded by Jamaica Bay, New Lots and Flatbush. At the time of the settlement of Achtervelt, the "westernmost of the Three Flats of Long Island," the lands of "Van Twillers" and "Corlaer's Flats" were also put under cultivation. It must, however, have been imperfect, as no concentration or settlement seems ever to have been formed in either locality. The Canarsie Indians were still numerous; and, with the exception of their maize lands and the flats above named, all that portion of the town lay in dense forests. The "Canarsie Woods" have been famous even to our day, and must have once contained an immense mass of heavy timber. The farmers of Amersfoort, coming with increasing population to need more land, hired land of the Indians at Canarsie, until from twelve to twenty cultivated portions were under the management of the whites. But this temporary arrangement was likely to cause trouble, though we have no record of any. However, to put matters into a safe position, the Indian title was extinguished and that fine portion of the town opened to the whites under the following contract:

On the 23d day of April was agreed as follows, to wit.: Wametappack, Sachem of Canryssen, and Ramieracy, Minnequahum, Camenuck, Panwangum, and Attewarum, lawful owners of Canaryssen, and the appendages thereunto appertaining, have agreed and sold to the inhabitants of the Town of Amersfoort, a parcel of land lying on Long Island, by and in the vicinity of the Village of Amersfoort, beginning at the west side of the "Muskyttehool" at a certain marked tree, thence stretching to where the end of the Flats comes by the two trees, situate on the north side of the said Flats to a certain marked tree; from thence to the Fresh Kill meadows, stopping at the path from the Great Flats to the Fresh Kill meadows and stretching in the Flats; with all meadows, kills and creeks therein contained, and that for the sum of one hundred fathom of white wampum, one coat, one pair of stockings, one pair shoes, four adzes, two cans of brandy, and one-half barrel of beer; with conditions that the purchasers once for always a fence shall set at Canarissen for the protection of the Indian cultivation, which fence shall thereafter by the Indians be maintained, and the land which becomes inclosed in fence shall by the Indian owners above mentioned all their lives to be used, to wit, by Wametappack, the Sachem, with his two brothers; all done without fraud or deceit. The 6th day of April, old style.

This is the mark of WAME X TAPPACK, Sachem.

This is the mark of & MINNEQUAHUM.

This is the mark of S ATTEWARAM.

This is the mark of A ORAMGSY.

This is the mark of V- RAMMGERAEN.

This is the mark of E PANWANGUM.

This is the mark of V KAMENECK.

This is the mark of S WANACLYCK.

This done by me, the Constable, MINNIE JOHNNES.

The stipulated price was duly paid to the Indians on the day of sale, under the following valuations, viz.: wampum, 600 gl.; stockings, 6 gl.; coat, 60 gl.; shoes, 16 gl.; 4 adzes, 16 gl.; brandy, 8 gl.; beer, 15 gl.; total 721 (\$418.40). The General Patent of the town, issued two years later by Gov. Nicolls (Oct. 4, 1667), includes the Neck, and thus gives a legal sanction to the title now acquired from the Indians. Most of the lands were the undivided property of the freeholders of the town; though small portions, including meadow lots, were in private hands. Nearly the whole of the neck was divided into lots of ten morgens, or 20 acres each, which were called "The New Lots of Flatlands." We have not ascertained precisely how these lots ran, except in a few instances. Stephen Schenck, an early settler at Canarsie Point, purchased a series of these lots running across the Point, and the nearest to the Bay. The lines of property at Canarsie, and especially the farm-lines of the Vanderveers, and Remsens, at the Neck, still give clear indications of this early division of the land into squares.

The equitable benefit to individuals to arise from these common lands when they became something more than pastures for young cattle, and especially when new residents settled in the town, became at length a difficult question. The only escape was to divide the lands in severalty. Accordingly, on April 3d, 1705, a town meeting agreed to divide the common woodlands at Canarsie, and appointed Luykas Stevensen (Voorhees), Jan Terhunen, and Peter Nefius to carry out the management. Gerrit Stoothoff, Justice; Cornelis Van Arsdalen and Jan Amerman, witnesses; Jan Stevensen (Voorhees), constable. Nothing, however, came of this action, and the matter seems to have been left in abeyance until some years later. December 25th, 1718, was issued the following advertisement:

"WHEREAS, There is a certain tract of land * * * commonly called De Baye's Neck or Flatlands Neck, and was given * * * as per grant of Richard Nicolls, Esq., * * * Oct. 4th, 1667, * * * and afterward confirmed * * * by Thomas Dongan, Esq., Mar. 11th, 1685. * * * Therefore, wee William Gerretsen [Van Kouwenhoven], Lukas Stevense [Voorhees], survivors of the above named patentees, and Martin R. Schenck and Koert Voorhees, assignees of full shares of patentees, have mutually contracted and executed in writing * * * for to Divide and Lay out the above said tract of Land * * * on or near the 25th of March next ensuing, * * * and the shares * * * shall be drawn by Lots in the presence of Joseph Hageman, Jeronimus Remsen, and Samuel Gerretsen, indifferent persons nominated by us; * * * and we forbid trespass."

One difficulty in parcelling out the common lands at the Neck to individual owners, arose from certain obligations touching inheritances, and the support of church and school, assumed by the early settlers. How important these were considered, and how necessary to be continued among the new comers, may be seen by the following action:

"Be it known by all persons that it is decreed by Patentees of the Town of Amersfoordt, and by Assignees of full rights of Patentees, that the under named persons will take their lots on the following conditions: 1. That none of them shall have power to sell their lots or any part of the same to any person without at the same time selling to the buyer the house-plot attached to the lot. 2. They shall be held in addition to aid in maintaining the School, to help in the maintenance of the Preacher or Preachers, and School Master, and of bringing of firewood to the Preacher and Schoolmaster, all as may be determined and enjoyed by the congregation of the said Town, each person in proportion to his rights, and in proportion to his neighbors'; under the restriction that if any of the undernamed persons shall refuse or neglect to observe the above Articles or Conditions, and to keep the same, or to bind their assigns to their observance, they shall be deprived of their apportioned lot or lots, and the same shall become the property of the Town."

"Done at Amersfoordt, this 20th of April, A. D. 1719."

The persons named as receiving lots under the above conditions were: Jacobus Amerman, Johannes and Eva Van Seikelen, Josias Drake, Cornelis Van Arsdalen, Abraham Westervelt, Jan Lucassen (Voorhees), Anna Terhunen, Jan Van Nays, Jan Auken, Steven Schenck, Isaac Amerman, and the "Heirs of Kierstede."

In further preparation for the eventful casting of lots, it was agreed that the common woodland, "to wit: the Neck, Fresh Kills Point, and Kanarisse, shall be drawn in three parts," as above, and as appears on the following table. It was added: "The heretics their rights to have on the strip of land that lies in the rear of the Neck dwelling plots." The word *Keuters* here translated heretics is differently rendered. HON. T. G. BERGEN says: "The word Keuters in the original is by some translated 'Mechanics.' The word *Ketter* means 'heretic.' *Keuter* not found in the dictionary. DR. STRONG (*History of Flatbush*) translates the word 'Mechanics.' We are not able to add anything to these authorities. It is certain that "The legal agents of all the patentees" would enforce whatever, in behalf of Church and School was "Determined and enjoyed by the Congregation of the Town;" and if any would not accept their portion on the above terms, it seemed liberal in those times to assign them a place "On the strip of land in the rear of the neck dwelling plots." Keuters' Hook, or, if we follow this translation, *Heretics' Corner*, is now found in the north part of Flatlands, adjoining, and mostly in, New Lots.

The division and assignment, by lot, of the Neck lands to each individual having rights in the patent, took place as follows:

"May 4, 1719.—A showing of the allotment of the divided land in the town of Amersfoordt, to wit.: the Fresh Kills Point, the Neck, and Kanarsingh; numbered and done by the undersigned—Joseph Hageman, Jeronymus Remsen, and Samuel Gerretsen—pursuant to the charge of Lucas Stevensen, Martin R. Schenck, William Couwenhoven and Koert Voorhees, Patentees and assignees of full rights of Patentees, and each individual share in acres of the persons here undernamed, as follows, to wit:—"

	1		2		3		Total Acres to each.
	Fresh Kills Point. Begin in rear of Peter M. Schenck's lot and to the utmost point.	No. of Lot	Great Division, named the Neck. Begin in rear of Martin Roeloff Schenck to No. 2d.	No. of Acres	Kanarsingh. No. begins at Whores' Corner at the woodland to the north and thence to the 2d point of Kanarsingh.	No. of Acres	
Lukas Stevensen (Voorhees)	13	9 $\frac{3}{4}$	7	40 $\frac{7}{10}$	8	4 $\frac{9}{10}$	55
Martin R. Schenck	4	12 $\frac{3}{4}$	24	55 $\frac{3}{4}$	1	6 $\frac{3}{4}$	75
Willem Couwenhoven	10	13 $\frac{3}{4}$	25	59 $\frac{1}{2}$	20	6 $\frac{1}{2}$	80
Koert Van Voorhees	17	13 $\frac{3}{4}$	1	59 $\frac{1}{2}$	9	6 $\frac{3}{4}$	80
Jan Terhunen	11	7 $\frac{3}{4}$	9	32	6	3 $\frac{3}{4}$	43
Martin Schenck	1	6 $\frac{3}{4}$	16	27 $\frac{1}{2}$	10	3 $\frac{1}{2}$	37
Hendrick Wyckoff	12	6 $\frac{1}{2}$	22	25 $\frac{7}{10}$	25	3 $\frac{1}{10}$	35
Pieter Wyckoff	5	7	11	29 $\frac{1}{2}$	7	3 $\frac{1}{2}$	40
Pieter Nevius	8	3	21	12 $\frac{3}{4}$	22	1 $\frac{1}{2}$	17
Albert Terhunen	18	4	23	18	13	2	24
Gerret Stoothoff	25	5 $\frac{1}{2}$	19	22 $\frac{1}{2}$	19	2 $\frac{7}{10}$	30
Dirk Amerman	21	5 $\frac{1}{2}$	20	22 $\frac{1}{2}$	15	2 $\frac{1}{2}$	30
Jan Amerman	16	4	3	18	21	2	24
Roeloff Terhunen	26	3 $\frac{3}{4}$	2	15	18	1 $\frac{3}{4}$	20
Auken Van Nuyse	7	2	10	12	24	1	15
Corn'us Coerten (Voorhees)	19	5 $\frac{1}{2}$	13	22 $\frac{1}{2}$	3	2 $\frac{7}{10}$	30
Cornelis Van Arsdalen	23	9 $\frac{3}{4}$	14	40 $\frac{7}{10}$	16	4 $\frac{9}{10}$	55
Abraham Lott	9	3 $\frac{3}{4}$	17	15	17	1 $\frac{3}{4}$	20
Pieter Monfoordt	14	3 $\frac{3}{4}$	6	15	4	1 $\frac{3}{4}$	20
Gerret Hansen	22	3 $\frac{3}{4}$	12	15	11	1 $\frac{3}{4}$	20
Pieter Wyckoff, Jun.	15	6 $\frac{3}{4}$	18	25 $\frac{7}{10}$	26	3 $\frac{1}{10}$	35
Hermanus Hooghland	6	3 $\frac{3}{4}$	4	16 $\frac{3}{4}$	2	1 $\frac{3}{4}$	22
Jan Lucassen (Voorhees)	3	3 $\frac{3}{4}$	5	16 $\frac{3}{4}$	14	1 $\frac{3}{4}$	22
Jan Stevensen (Voorhees)	20	2 $\frac{1}{2}$	15	12 $\frac{1}{2}$	12	1 $\frac{1}{2}$	16
Gertrude Van Gelderte	2	2	26	12	5	1	15
have 3 lots, each 5 acres.							
Aukenz Janz Van Voorhees	24	1 $\frac{1}{2}$	8	6 $\frac{3}{4}$	12	$\frac{3}{4}$	9
							869

The Period of the Revolution.—When the British forces landed at Bath, in New Utrecht, preparatory to the Battle of Brooklyn, August, 1776, they soon made their presence known, and swarmed up over the country. "Before noon," an old lady, who saw them, used to say, "the Red Coats were so thick in Flatlands you could walk on their heads." They plundered nearly every house, especially those of the Whigs. The maternal grandmother of Supervisor Ryder used to tell of their entrance into her father's house in Gravesend. Her mother sent her ahead to open every chest and closet, so the soldiers would not break into them with their muskets. When, however, they seized her new bonnet, the girl's courage rose equal to the emergency; and, suddenly snatching it from them, she defended it so stoutly against threats and violence that they left the trophy in her hands. The soldiers entered the house of Elias Hubbard (father of the late Judge Hubbard), yet standing on Hubbard's Lane, and were furnished liberally by his wife, Margaret Lake, with milk, bread and butter, and, in fact, with all the edibles of the house. But, when they attempted to drive away her cow, she planted herself at the yard-gate and compelled them to desist.

At evening, after the landing, the British camp-fires were seen all along the road from New Utrecht to Flatbush. The main body passed by way of Gravesend. Earl Cornwallis pushed forward with the Reserves, and a detachment of Hessians also encamped that night at

Flatbush, all having passed through Flatlands. The tradition is, that Col. Kniphausen's horse, and perhaps his whole regiment, occupied the Amerman farm, now Jeremiah Ryder's. With this exception, no troops are known to have encamped here, or to have been quartered upon the inhabitants. A guard was stationed at Captain Nicholas Schenck's, at Canarsie Point, and another at Mr. Wyckoff's, Flatlands Neck, now the residence of John A. Wyckoff. The soldiers occupied the kitchen, and the southwest room of the house was used as a lock-up.

The services of the church, and of the common schools, were carried forward as if nothing unusual was occurring. Seventeen infants were baptized in the Flatlands Dutch Church, in the year 1776. This uninterrupted worship is the more remarkable, from the fact that the pastor was universally regarded as a decided, and sometimes over-zealous, friend of the American cause.

At the close of the war there was a celebration at Flatbush, by Whigs from the county towns. Flatlands was represented by four men; two of them were Abraham Voorhees (father of Hon. John A. Voorhees) and Elias Hubbard (grandfather of A. H. Hubbard). The British had left each of these two men one old horse, and these were each blind of one eye. The two imperfect horses were harnessed together on this jubilee occasion, and drew the patriots to Flatbush.

Reformed Dutch Church of Flatlands.—There are but two Dutch churches in America older than that of Flatlands, viz., the Collegiate Dutch Church of New York, formed in 1628, and the North Dutch Church of Albany, 1642. The churches of Flatlands and Flatbush were formed on the same day, February 9th, 1654, by Rev. Johannes Megapolensis, pastor of the Collegiate Church, and their history will be found in the chapter of this work devoted to *The Ecclesiastical History of Kings County, from 1654–1800*. When, in 1654, a church was completed at Flatbush, at a cost of \$1,800, Flatlands contributed \$48. The first minister, the Rev. Jo. Theodorus Polhemus must have preached in Flatlands, in private houses, or in the school-house, for eight or nine years, until, September 12th, 1662, the people asked for the privilege of building themselves a church edifice, which was granted by the Governor and Council. The next year (1663) saw the enterprise completed. The erection of this early church by the unaided effort of a small community of poor settlers, in the midst of heathenism, was very creditable to them. They chose an excellent location, near their primitive settlement, and gently elevated, and which had been sacred from time immemorial as an Indian burial place. In form, the church was octagonal, with a belfry, and an inclosed portal called the Baptistry, or "Doophuisje;" the whole being covered, on roof and sides, with heavy spruce shingles, which were so durable as to have survived to our day. The people were, at first, summoned to wor-

ship by the sound of a drum, but in 1686 a subscription (which still remains in the archives) was circulated, and 556 guilders were collected for a bell, being more than 100 guilders in excess of subscriptions. The bell was probably imported from Holland, as in September the next year 7 gl. is paid for "a rope for the bell." The appearance of the church in the year of its erection is complimented in the words of Capt. Scott: "This is a handsome place and has a fine church." And this, coming from a violent enemy, we accept as true.

This church continued in use the long period of 131 years, until 1794, when it was torn down and a new church built. The pulpit of the original church was of the "wine-glass" style, had a sounding board, and was furnished with a "bench." The hearers' seats were not luxurious. They were "benches." In 1697 Evert Van Weckelin was paid 150 gl., or \$60, "for making benches in the church," and repairs to the benches were made from time to time long afterward. Chairs were in very moderate use. In 1716, 8 gl. were paid "for 2 chairs in the church," and, in 1785, 18s. for a similar purchase. One of these chairs was for the magistrate, and the other for the *Yef vrow*, or minister's wife. The latter, purchased in 1685, is now preserved in affectionate honor at the Flatlands parsonage.

The church edifice was repaired and enlarged in 1762, after it had been in use 99 years. The enlargement consisted in advancing the three front sections of the original octagon, leaving the new front square and the full width of the building. The original seating capacity must have been 125 or 130. In 1762 the 122 regular sittings, or "places," were held as follows:

Cornelius Voorhees, 5; Steve Schenck, 4; Johannes Lott, 7; Hermann Hooglandt, 5; Wm. Kouwenhoven, 5; Roelof Voorhees, 4; Fammetie Ditmars, 3; Roelof Van Voorhees, 4; John Van Der Bilt, 5; Jeremiah Van Derbilt, 1; Abraham Voorhees, 5; Folkert Sprong, 2; Abraham Dorye, 4; Coustyn Golneck, 1; Peter Wykof, 3; Johannes Lott, Jr., 3; Wm. Van Gelder, 3; Derrick Remsen, 4; Henrick Lott, 4; Jan Schenck, 5; Wilhelmus Stoothoof, 7; Jan Ouke, 1; Marte Ouke, 1; Samuel Garreson, 1; Bernardus Ryder, 3; Albert Terhune, 4; James Holbert, 2; Ferdinandus Van Segelen, 1; Barent Vanderverter, 1; Abraham Schenck, 1; Callyntje Janse, 1; Garrett Wykof, 3; Getore Heyn, 2; Jan Amerman, 6; Annatie Wykof, 5; Petrus Amerman, 3; Jacob Ouke, 1; Helena Ouke, 1; Eisack Selover, 1.

The following are the *new* places:

Pieter Wykof, 2; Derrick Remsen, 1; Abraham Dorye, 1; Christoffer Hoogland, 1; Johannes Lott, 3; Garret Kouwenhoven, 1; Wilhelmus Stoothoof, 2; Garret Wykof, 2; Abraham Voorhees, 1; Coustyn Golneck, 2; Henrick Wykof, 1; Joosh Van Nuys, 2; Nicholas Schenck, 1; Jan Ouke, 1; Folkert Sprong, 2; Roelof Van Voorhees, 1; Evert Seerman, 1; Jan Van Der Bilt, 1; Marten Ouke, 1; Abraham Van Geldrin, 1—28.

It will be seen that the total number of sittings actually taken, in 1762, was 150, by 53 persons. According to a list, in 1767, 41 persons hired 148 sittings. It would seem therefore clear that the first church build-

ing, even when enlarged, would not accommodate many more than 150.

The sittings in church went with the farms, and were often named in deeds; and, so late as the present pastorate, pew-rents have been paid by agents of property where no use was made of the sittings, simply because the pew went with the property. In 1716 it was ordered that a non-resident might hold his sittings by due payment of rent. Otherwise he lost them after "one year and six weeks." He might sell them to a resident of Amersfort, but not to a non-resident. In 1794, at the building of the new church, the limit was reduced to six months.

It became at length apparent that Flatlands needed a new church edifice. Influential families advocated it. The father of Derrick and Johannes Remsen, among others, urged that the church was too small and falling to decay. A town meeting, called March 4th, 1794, resolved to build a new church and to raise money for the work by the sale of the town lots, hitherto held for the benefit of the church. A committee appointed for both purposes inserted the following notice in a New York paper, March 8th, 1794: "Notice is hereby given to carpenters that proposals will be received by Abram Voorhees, Rem Hageman and Wm. Kouwenhoven, for building a church at Flatlands, 60 feet by 40 feet, timber and materials to be furnished by them."

This notice was responded to by Smith & King, builders, who contracted to finish the work according to the specifications for £400. On March 26th, John Baxter, vendue master, sold "the Neck woods, the farm and commons belonging to the church." May 6th, the carpenters began taking down the venerable church, and finished May 27. July 29th and 30th the new church was raised. November 2d the *debris* of the old church was sold. November 12th a town meeting was held, when it was resolved to use the moneys of the Poor Chest to finish the church. The pews were distributed by lot on December 20th, and on the 13th the house was dedicated by Rev. Peter Lowe, one of the pastors, who preached from Ex. xx., 24, last clause. The bell was put into position December 26; and, the next day, the associate pastor, Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker, preached.

"There were 55 pews disposed of, leaving still some for the commons," as was at first proposed. The church of 1794 had a steeple containing a bell (the same now in use). The old bell, bought in 1686, and weighing 22 lbs., was now taken by John Bailey of New York, at £5, 16s. 8d.; in part pay for the new bell of 458½ lbs. which cost £84, 15s. 2d. The building was lighted by five large windows on each side, and had a single entrance in the south side, or point. It was inclosed with a picket fence, a few feet from the building, on three sides; but having a post and rail fence at the rear. The church was painted a dull red color, and sanded while the paint was new. In later years the effort

was made to paint it white. Lombardy poplars were at the front and rear. The interior was ceiled with pine-stuff, rendered famous by the number of knots which showed their dark color through the paint. A relic of olden times, was the *Town Stocks* and *Whipping Post*, which adorned the open space in front of the church near the burial-ground.

This church, like that of 1663, was destitute of heating apparatus until 1825, when 39 persons subscribed \$69, and a large wood stove was introduced. The old style of pulpit gave way in 1827, when 47 persons subscribed \$145.25, "as a New Year's gift toward building a New Pulpit in our church." Of these subscribers one still lingers, Jeremiah Ryder, in honored old age. Not to be outdone by the men, in March, 46 ladies subscribed \$63, "for dressing the New Pulpit." The pulpit was built by Jervis R. Woolsey, for \$132.75.

The church built in 1794 continued in use to 1848. The frame, which had become weakened, began to allow the side-walls to spread in a threatening manner, and strong iron rods failed to afford security. On May 31st, 1847, the consistory resolved to solicit funds for a new church, and \$3,817 were promised. The consistory associated Peter Debaun, John Holmes and Cornelius Kouwenhoven, with themselves as building committee; but, as they declined to serve, the pew-holders, by invitation of consistory, appointed (Feb. 3d, 1848) John Remsen, William Kouwenhoven and Jeromus Van Naysse, the Building Committee. The consistory confirmed this action. The church was built by day's work and principally by Henry J. Eldert. It was 63½ feet by 44½ feet, and was completed, together with the sheds and fences, at a cost of \$5,506.29. This house is still in use. When opened, it contained 66 pews, 58 of which were taken at once by families. In the winter of 1871 and 1872, side galleries were introduced, adding about 100 sittings; and the whole house, outside and inside, was repaired and repainted, at a cost of about \$3,500.

In 1853, Anne Terbune conveyed to the consistory a lot near the south-westerly corner of the church lot, on which to build a house for evening lectures and Sunday-school. This lot was enlarged afterward, by gift from Peter Lott, and Maria, his wife, to about 70 by 40 feet. In 1853 the ladies appropriated funds of the sewing society, and money collected by Mrs. Martha Woolsey, and others, and a building was erected by John S. Brown at a cost of \$1,300. R. Magaw, J. Williamson and T. Garretson (beside the consistory) were the building committee. This building has been added to, and is now 58 by 26 feet. The whole was, in 1881, put in prime order at a cost of \$350.

THE PASTORS of the Dutch Church of Flatlands under the collegiate system, from 1654, are given in the chapter on "*The Ecclesiastical History of Kings County, 1654-1800*." Of these, Mr. Van Sinderin (1746-1784) married, and acquired landed property in this town, and is the only one of the Kings County preach-

ers who resided and was buried here. Peter Lowe, (born in) Kingston, N. Y., 1764, was pastor of the collegiate churches 1787-1808. In the latter year Flatbush and Flatlands formed a union separate from the rest, and Dominie Lowe became pastor of these two churches alone. He died in 1818. Dominie Schoonmaker continued in the pastorate of all the churches till his death; Walter Monteith was called by Flatlands and Flatbush to his first charge in 1819. He remained only a year. The union between Flatlands and Flatbush closed with the departure of Mr. Monteith. In May, 1822, Flatbush called Rev. Thomas M. Strong, D.D. During 1823 a church building was begun in New Lots, and dedicated in July, 1824. The society there was part of the Flatbush congregation; but in August of 1824, the Classis of Long Island organized the New Lots people into a church, and during the following winter they formed a union with Flatlands. In February, 1825, Rev. William Cruikshank was settled as pastor of these united churches. It was during his pastorate that stoves and a modern pulpit were first used in the Flatlands Church. Mr. Cruikshank resigned in 1834, and died in 1854. On Jan. 18, 1836, a call by the churches of Flatlands and New Lots was made upon Rev. J. Abeel Baldwin, a clergyman of the Presbyterian Church, who continued a successful pastorate until June 9th, 1852, when he resigned. Mr. Baldwin still survives. The connection between Flatlands and New Lots Reformed Dutch Churches terminated with this pastorate, Nov. 24, 1852. Flatlands called Rev. John T. M. Davie; and, about the same time, New Lots called Rev. John M. Van Buren. Mr. Davie's pastoral and pulpit excellencies were highly appreciated, and were enjoyed until his sudden death, March 8, 1862. On August 4, 1862, the Church called Rev. T. Sanford Doolittle, who remained two years, when he was invited to a professorship in Rutgers College, which he still occupies. In May, 1865, Rev. Cornelius Brett, then a recent graduate of the New Brunswick Seminary, was called, and he continued the active and useful pastor of the church until Dec., 1869, when he resigned, having accepted a call to a Reformed Dutch Church in Newark, N. J. He is now pastor of the venerable Church of Bergen, Jersey City. Rev. Anson Du Bois became pastor in Dec., 1870, and still retains the position. The church now reports 80 families and 200 members.

M. E. Church of Flatlands.—The Methodist people had public preaching in the school-house of District No. 1 for about a year, when, in 1851, James Engle bought of Rem Hageman, a church site for them on Mill lane; and the present house was built, at a cost of \$2,700, by Mr. Youngs, of Flatbush. Mr. Engle was very active, but the early records of the church were lost, or withheld by his widow. The first preacher [1852-3] was Rev. Thos. H. Burch, now Presiding Elder of the New York District N. Y. East Conference. The parsonage lot was bought from John Corey, who had

purchased of Hageman, and the house was built by John Rumph, for \$2,300, in 1868. The society has been regularly supplied with preachers since its formation; and, though small, has been active and useful. It reports 80 members.

Protestant Methodist Church of Canarsie.—A Sunday-school of 23 scholars was organized at Canarsie in 1840, Ralph Van Houten, *Superintendent*. A Meth. Epis. Church was also constituted that year, of 12 members, and the meetings held in a private house until a small church costing \$500 was built at the corner of Old Road and Church Lane. About 1855 the church became Protestant Methodist, and so remains. The first church building was removed in 1870, and a larger one built upon the same ground. The Protestant Methodist Society has had the following *Pastors*: Revs. Fred. Dickerman, J. J. Smith, Joshua Hudson, John A. Morris, J. Serene, Robert Woodruff, Edwin Jones, R. S. Hulshart, John Painter, H. S. Hall, and J. H. Holden, the present pastor. The good influence of the church has been very marked. It is still growing, with an active pastor and membership.

St. Matthew's Lutheran Church, of Canarsie, of 32 members, was formed in August, 1879, and the corner stone of the church edifice was laid September 11th, 1879. The church cost \$4,000. Pastor Fladt, of East New York, served the new society six months; when Pastor Küver, the present incumbent, took charge. The Sunday-school numbers 70 scholars.

German Evangelical Reformed Church of Canarsie.—In March, 1876, Rev. C. Dickhout, of East New York, labored among the large German population of Canarsie; and, on the 19th of that month, held public worship in the German School-house. An organization was desired, and the South Classis of Long Island, March 29th, 1876, commissioned Revs. A. Du Bois, D.D., J. Hones and C. F. C. Suckow, and Elder John L. Ryder, to constitute a church there if found advisable. On June 5th, 1876, the committee met a large number of Germans, and a church of 72 members was formed. P. H. Koppf and Christian Schreiber were elected *Elders*, and Christian Quaritius and Henry Shumaker *Deacons*. The examination for membership and installation of the Consistory were conducted in German by Rev. Messrs. Hones and Suckow. Rev. C. Dickhout became pastor, and still remains such. The corner stone of a church was laid June 29th, 1877, and the building was dedicated November 4th, 1877, at a cost of \$5,000. There is a Sabbath-school of 60 pupils, with 150 volumes in the library. The pastor has mainly superintended the school. The church is self-supporting, prosperous and growing.

The Common Schools of Flatlands.—The common school in Flatlands probably began with the settlement itself. We have found no records touching it earlier than 1675, when it was evidently in a mature and vigorous career, under the care of the church elders

and was called "The School of the Town." The first notice we have of it is in regard to a supply of books by the deacons; and entries and bills, of elementary and religious books paid for, appear in their accounts from 1675 for a long period of years, along with every variety and order of expenses.

According to the tradition in our town, and the well-known usages of other Dutch settlements, the schoolmaster was, by virtue of his office, Reader in church, Chorister, and commonly Sexton also. If this be true, we are able to name some of the honored leaders of mental progress in Flatlands from very early times.

The first who claims this honor is Wellem Gerretse (Van Kouwenhoven), 1675; the next Jan Brouwer, 1688; the third Pieter Tull, 1691, though the fact that he afterward became a pauper does not argue liberality of salary. Various items were paid "to the schoolmaster," for salary and other services, until 1704, when the incumbent was Martin Schenck, who was also a deacon of the church. Isaac Slover was teacher in 1712; Yan Sudam in 1715 and apparently to 1729; when Yohannes Van Siggelon succeeded him. In 1733 Abraham de Lanoy occupied the place. His name would indicate that he was French, while his receipts for his salary of £6 a year are written in a bold and elegant English hand. He was doubtless able to teach in English. Isaac Voorhees held the place in 1742; Johannes Nevins in 1743; Abram Voorhees, 1744-'47; Luykas Voorhees, from 1748 to 1752; when Derick Remsen served part of a year, and Luykas Voorhees again, 1755-1757. As no new name occurs, it is fair to infer that Voorhees continued to receive the annual salary of £4 from the deacons as chorister, and probably an additional sum from the elders as schoolmaster, until 1768; when he was succeeded by Abraham Voorhees, the same probably who had served in 1744-'47, and who now held the position until 1792. This teacher first introduced a stove into the school-house in June, 1789, costing £12, 15s. 6d. We judge the previous winter must have been uncommonly cold, and they would no longer trust to an open fire, even though they had to bring in the stove in the first month of summer.

We have assumed that the *chorister* was also the school teacher, as was the universal custom of the Dutch. But the practice was now falling into disuse. It seems that Thomas Whitlock was employed during the latter years accredited to Abram Voorhees, and that John Baxter, whose journal of daily events, continued by his son Garret, extends from 1790 to 1840, taught the school about 1790. We have also the following as *Teachers*: Peter Labagh, 1792; Geo. Parker, 1795; Jas. Smith, 1798; Elijah Elwell, 1801; Patrick Noon and Hugh McGarron, 1802; John Burns and Alex. Johnson, 1804; — Cuthbert, 1805; — Cassidy, 1810; Hugh McGarron again 1811-16; Tibbets and Blundel taught a short time; James Bolton some years; Esterbrook, Bledsloe, Kingsley, Topping, and Leach;

Slauson to 1827, when Chas. Leach resumed and taught to 1830; Ed. Berry, 1830, when David Baldwin (whose conversion is recorded by his pastor in a tract of the American Tract Society) assumed charge, but retired from ill health; Albert Smith, 1831; Willis, and the same year H. D. Woodworth, now principal of a public school in Brooklyn; W. S. Webb, 1833; and after him E. S. Johnson and Stephen Voorhees; since whom Messrs. Sutton, Wade, Blake, and Sowles have taught.

The present painstaking and venerated Principal, Voorhees Overbaugh, took charge of this school in 1845. He was then expected to teach from 8 o'clock a. m. to 4 o'clock p. m., with a noon recess, five days each week, without a vacation of any kind during the whole year. He did not receive a stipulated salary, but a fee *per capita* on the scholars, and collected his own bills. But he has lived to see the results of his own toil, and more liberal appointments. His bow still "abides in strength," and his skill in teaching the young ideas is unimpaired. Mr. Overbaugh's assistants have been Miss Sarah M. Hendrickson, Simeon J. Brown, Miss Mary H. C. Lott, Miss Ella L. Overbaugh and Miss Louise Lush.

The original school-house of *District No. 1* probably stood on Hubbard's Lane, opposite John L. Williamson's. On February 3d, 1696-7, the heirs of Elbert Elbertse, viz., Garrett Stoothoof, Thos. Willes and Jan Van Duyckhuisen, deeded to Coert Stevense, Derick Amertman and Claes Peterse, for themselves and others, freeholders, etc., premises described as follows: "All that house and garden spot, as it is now in fence, lying * * * in the town of flatlands, adjoining to the house and land of fferdinanno vasyeklyn, and now used and occupied for a school-house for said town." Van Sickelin lived at the southeast corner of the church-lot, where his son Johannes lived in 1747.

Confirmatory of this view is the fact that on the next day, viz., February 4th, 1697, the Stoothoff heirs, who seem to have been engaged in settling up the estate, conveyed to the same parties, "Elders of the Dutch Church of flatlands," the church-lot and burying-ground, and describe the latter as "Bounded north by Tunis Janse's fence, south by the pound, west by the highway," with the church-lot at the east. Thus the whole of the present school-lot and burial-ground is included, without any mention of the school-house being then upon it, and excluding the Van Syckelen lands from contiguity. The evidence seems conclusive that the original school-house stood east from the residence of John B. Hendrickson.

A new school-house seems to have been built about this time. Between September, 1694, and August, 1697, the Deacons paid "for the school-house" in various items of material and work, no less a sum than \$654.40, which could not have been for repairs. Probably, at this time, the new school-house was placed on an unused part of the burial ground. The lot described

in 1696 as the school-house lot must, soon after this, have fallen into private hands, for, in 1729, it is deeded by Abram Westervelt, and Margaret, his wife, to the Town, together with an acre where the house of B. Stafford now stands. We know that the school-house was near its present location in 1733, for in that year Pieter Wyckoff conveys "a certain piece of land adjoining the school-lot, being in breadth two rods and in length as far as the school-lot runs, bounded southerly by said school-lot, northerly by ground of said pieter Wyckof, westerly by the highway, and easterly by the land belonging to the church." The school-house first placed within the original lines of the grave-yard, in 1699, was extensively repaired about 1765, the work having been begun in 1762, simultaneously with the extensive improvements and enlargement of the church. At this time the sum of \$356 was paid for materials and work "for the school-house." In 1771 "a well for the school-house" cost £1, 11s. 3d.

In April, 1816, the town ordered a new school building. It was completed and occupied two years later, and the old house sold to Nicholas Schenck for \$20. This new building continued to be used by the school until 1861, when it was sold to John L. Ryder for a carriage-house. The school-lot was fenced in by the trustees, as such, in 1861, by advice of counsel. The building of 1861 was enlarged to more than twice its former capacity in 1876, and now affords ample space for four school departments.

District No. 2 is located in Flatlands Neck. The present school-house was built, by subscription, in 1835, but the District was not regularly organized under the General School Law until 1843. A school had been taught, however, in that neighborhood for many years. As far back, indeed, as 1811, it seemed to have been a well established institution, and was then taught by Mr. Dean, licensed by John Baxter, as School Inspector. In 1813 John Kouwenhoven took charge; Mr. Wilson in 1817, Mr. Trumbull, 1818-1821; Messrs. Ephingstone and Wethersby to 1833. In that year Abram Van Keuren took charge, and he remained until 1850. After him were A. C. McLeod, L. C. Weld, W. C. Pilling, Alex. Smith, G. S. Smith, (A. Van) Keuren, G. D. Anderson, S. J. Brown, Geo. Forbes, J. M. Barr, and the present teacher, John L. Williamson.

District No. 3, at Canarsie, was organized August 21st, 1844, and reorganized November 13th, 1860, as a Union Free School District. By permission of the town, the school-house was built on a part of the burying-ground on the road to the shore. This was used till 1875, when a large and commodious school-house was completed. On September 2d, 1875, the school marched with martial music to their new building. The first teacher of this District was Rev. John A. Morris, who also preached on Sabbath. His successors were: C. W. Richardson, 1852; Wm. Clark, 1853; Clement Clark, 1855; F. B. Ladd and Dan. Mansfield for short

periods until 1860; J. A. Morris until 1867; John M. Barr till 1870, and after him Henry A. Harrison and E. L. G. Payne, the present Principal. The assistant teachers have been Miss Mary Abbie Morrison, Mrs. Elizabeth De Groot, Daniel Jepson, Mrs. Brown and Miss Jansen.

The office of *Town Superintendent of Schools*, while in vogue, was held by Wm. Kouwenhoven, Elias Hubbard, Cornelius B. Kouwenhoven, John L. Ryder and Rev. J. T. M. Davie. The office of *County Superintendent* was held the last term but one, next before the present incumbent, by Voorhees Overbaugh, the veteran Principal of the school in District No. 1.

Sons of Temperance.—Early in 1866, and mainly through the efforts of Rev. C. Brett, pastor of the Ref. Church, an application was made to the Grand Division, S. of T., Eastern N. Y., and a charter received as *Suburban Division No. 48, Sons of Temperance*. The charter members were Rev. C. Brett, J. L. Bergen, John Remsen, W. W. Kouwenhoven, Asher Anderson, G. D. Anderson, J. Flemming, P. Kouwenhoven, Jr., J. D. Magaw, S. W. Remsen, G. Schenck, W. K. Remsen, W. H. Cornell, J. V. Brundage, Theo. Bergen and S. W. Stoothoof. The first meeting was held and officers installed May 21st, 1866. The meetings were held weekly and have continued uninterruptedly to the present time. The following have presided in the Division: J. L. Bergen, J. Remsen, G. Schenck, J. V. Brundage, A. D. Selover, L. H. Smith, W. W. Kouwenhoven, H. M. Hitchings, C. Bergen, C. Brett, G. D. Anderson, B. Bryan, H. Paton, G. S. Kouwenhoven, T. B. Woolsey, Miss Sarah Hendrickson, Elias Hendrickson, V. Overbagh, P. Remsen, N. Enmans and J. J. Van Wyck. The membership has steadily increased until it now numbers 60, mostly the young men of the village. The meetings are well attended, and the whole influence has been of an elevating character. When the society organized there were four rum-selling places in this part of the town. Now there is but one.

Barren Island.—The most southerly point of Flatlands is Barren Island, wholly composed of white sand and lying in the inlet of Jamaica Bay. Its length lay formerly north and south, but it now extends in greatest length east and west. The area of the island has very considerably decreased within the memory of persons now living; meanwhile, the point of Rockaway Beach has steadily extended westward several miles. Years ago the island was destitute of trees, producing only sedge, affording coarse pasture. Sixty years ago cedar trees sprung up over the island, furnishing a roosting-place for vast numbers of crows. Few trees now remain.

The Indian title was relinquished, according to the following deed, never before published:

Know all men, &c., that we, Wawmatt Tappa and Kack-a-washke, the right and true proprietors of a certain island called by the Indians Equendito, and by the English Broken Lands, lying, &c., &c., in consideration of two coats, one

kettel, one gun, one new trooper-coat, ten fathoms of wampum prage, three shirts, six pounds of powder, six bars of lead and a quantity of Brandie wine, already paid unto us by John Tilton, sen., and Samuel Spicer, of Gravesend, L. I., Do, &c., sell, &c., the said Island called Equendito, &c., with all our right * * * both of upland and marshes, any way belonging thereto, as the Straun Beach or Beaches, as namely that running out more westerly, with the Island adjoining, and is at the same time by the ocean sea wholly inclosed, called hoopaninak and Shanscomacocke and macuteris, as also all the harbors, &c., to the said John Tilton and Samuel Spicer * * * excepting only to ourselves the one-half of all such whale-fish that shall by wind and storms be cast upon the said Island. In witness whereof we have set our hands this 13 day of the 3 month, called May, Anno, 1664.

mark
BAMBRAS, als *Qy* WAWAMATT TAPPA.

mark
KACHA-WASHKE *Q*

Acknowledged and subscribed in presence of Cawmenorke,

his
M
mark

Orawase, Anascorah, Poundgar, Mawascorhere, John Wil-
son, Obediah Wilkins, Pieter Tilton.

This original Indian deed bears an assignment by Tilton and Spicer, dated "the 2d day of the 3d month, called May, 1681, to Elbert Elbertsonn, his heirs," etc.

The island was of little value for many years, only affording a scant pasture for young cattle and colts. A rude house at the east end, where fishermen and sportsmen were entertained, was occupied about the close of the last century by one Dooley, who was called "The King of the Island." Afterwards this house was kept by Johnson, with whom Gibbs, the pirate, and his associates lodged, in 1830 (after burying a large number of Mexican dollars in the sand), the night before their arrest at Sheepshead Bay. (See History of Town of Gravesend). A Yankee named Cherry, with his large family, lived in a dug-out at the west end for a long time, until he succeeded to the public house, which he kept as late as 1860.

In 1835 the island was held in undivided fifths by the following parties: 1, Peter Voorhees and Eliza Ann Voorhees; 2, Isaac and John Terhune; 3, Geo. Lott; 4, H. I. Lott; 5, Nelson Shaw. Geo. Lott dying in January of that year, the island, in June, was divided in severalty, except the western end, a part of which was known as "Pelican Beach." About 1842 the channel shifted so as to cut off this beach, and by the filling up of the old channel, called "Plum Gut," it became a part of Coney Island, and is now occupied by the Manhattan Beach Improvement Company.

Meantime the fortunes of the island advanced. A bone-boiling establishment was erected on the north side about 1845 by Wm. B. Reynolds. It was occupied afterwards by Frank Swift. To this, dead animals from New York and Brooklyn were brought. This factory was blown down and a new one erected in 1866 by R. Recknagle. A previously built factory near the same

site had been burnt. At the present time, the great *Rendering and Fertilizer Factory of P. White & Sons* is the successor of these establishments. It was built in 1868 and burnt in 1878; hence the five present buildings are new. They cover, with dockage, about four acres. Thirty dead animals are received daily, and render their last service to humanity. Every part of the animal, to the last flake of hair, goes to its appropriate use. About 2,000 tons of fertilizers are produced annually, of four general sorts, viz.: phosphates, bone dust, guano substitutes and combinations adapted to particular crops. Cleanliness and care to prevent offensive smells are constant, and are rewarded with fair success; and, if the success is not all that is desirable, it would be hard to find a better place for doing this necessary work in disposing of dead animals.

The largest concern on the island is *E. Frank Coe's Fertilizer Factory*, at the west end, established in 1877. An immense building, 360x224 feet, with yards and dock, affords ample space. A 160 horse power engine and 80 men (sometimes more) are employed. The materials used in preparing fertilizers for market are Peruvian guano from Curaco, bone dust, in part from the sugar refineries of the cities, Charleston stone, and menhaden scraps from the fish-rendering establishments on this island. One and a half tons of sulphuric acid are consumed daily, and from 40 to 50 tons of phosphates are daily made ready for use. The makers find it difficult to supply their orders, mostly from the south.

The *fish-oil factories* of Barren Island are interesting institutions. There are five of them, though one is idle at present. The first was built by *Smith & Co.* on the north side of the island, about 1860. In 1868 *Vanantine Coon*, who had worked with Smith, built on the east end, and carried on the concern some six years; when it was bought by *Louis C. De Homage, M. D.*, who continues it and has built a new factory near the old one. Steam power is used and about 40 men and three steamers are employed. The establishment can handle half a million of fish daily.

The *Barren Island Menhaden Company* occupies premises near the above. Oscar O. Freedlander, 36 Broadway, N. Y., is managing director. This factory was begun in 1868, by Goodkind Brothers, who, like Coon, had been with Smith. It occupies three buildings, each 100x70 feet; employs three steamers in fishing, an engine of 40 horse power and about 50 men. The company can handle one and a half millions of fish in a single day, but 2,000,000 per week is considered a fair average catch.

The fish-rendering factory of *Jones & Co.*, at the west end, is of about the capacity of the one just described.

The *Hawkins Brothers' Fish Oil, and Fish Guano Factory*, was built at the west end in 1869. Steam power, fifty men and three steamboats are employed

from May 1st to the middle of November. About 20,000,000 fish are worked up annually, producing about 80,000 gallons of oil.

We may here give a brief account of this industry. The fish used are almost exclusively the menhaden or "mossbunker," an oily and bony species unfit for food ; and long used in the natural state for manure. They pass up the Atlantic coast in immense shoals and are dipped into by fishermen with long seines. Formerly sailing vessels, but now steamers, each with a crew of 12 men and two foss boats, each 20 feet long, are used. The net swoops in a vast number of fish, which are hoisted into the vessel's hold ; and when this is full they are brought to the factory wharf, thrown

in a measuring tub and thence into strong wooden tubs for boiling. The boiling is done by admitting steam, and then they are placed in perforated boiler-iron curbs, and the oil is separated by hydraulic pressure. The oil is used by tanners, in making ship-cordage, and in various other ways ; and the refuse fish are dried on board-platforms, of one or two acres in extent, and sold at the phosphate factories on the island.

This industry employs at the island some 350 men and a fleet of 10 steamers. Altogether there are employed in all the works not less than 500 men. A district school is maintained ; a regular ferry connects with Canarsie, and several of the factories are connected with their New York offices by telephone.

HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF BROOKLYN.

BY *Henry R. Stiles. A.M. M.D.*
Editor.

IT is not known that any settlement was made within the limits of the present city of Brooklyn earlier than 1636, in which year William Adriaense Bennet and Jacques Bentyne purchased from the Indians a tract of 930 acres of land at "Gowanus;" upon which, at some time prior to the Indian war of 1643-'45, a dwelling-house was erected, affording presumptive evidence, at least, that absolute occupation and agricultural improvement followed close upon its purchase. The occupation of this farm, over a portion of which the village of Gowanus subsequently extended—and which comprised that portion of the present city lying between Twenty-seventh street and the New Utrecht line—may be considered as the *first step in the settlement of the CITY OF BROOKLYN*. The *second step*, according to the best documentary evidence, was taken about a year later, by Joris (George) Jansen de Rapalie, one of the Walloon emigrants of 1623, who first settled at Fort Orange (Albany), and in 1626 removed to New Amsterdam, on Manhattan Island. On the 16th of June, 1637, Rapalie purchased from its native proprietors a piece of land called "Rennegackonck,"* lying on Long Island "in the bend of Marechkawieck,"† now better known as Wallabout Bay. This purchase, comprising about 335 acres, now occupied in part by the grounds of the United States Marine Hospital, and by that portion of the city between Nostrand and Grand avenues—although it may have been, and probably was, more or less improved as a farm by Rapalie—was not occupied by him as a residence until about 1655. By that time the gradual influx of other settlers, many of whom were Walloons, had gained for the neighborhood the appellation of the "Waal-Bogt," or "the bay of the foreigners." Thus, at two isolated points—offering to the settlers similar agricultural advantages and inducements—were formed the *nuclei* of the present CITY OF BROOKLYN.

This name "Wallabout," corrupted from the Dutch Waal-Bogt, or Wahle-Boght, means, according to the late Hon. T. G. Bergen, "the shore or beach of the cove."

In 1637 also, the island called by the Indians "Pagganck," and by the Dutch, because of its abundance of nut trees, "Nooten," or Nutten Island, was secured for his own use by the Director or Governor, Van Twiller, and it has ever since been known as "Governor's Island."

On the 1st of August, 1638, Governor Kieft, who had succeeded Van Twiller, secured for the West India Company a tract of land adjoining Rapalie's plantation on Long Island, extending from "Rennegackonck" to what is now known as Newtown Creek, and from the East River to "the swamps of Mespaetches." The price paid to the native "chiefs of Keskaechquerem" for this extensive area, which comprised the *whole of the former town of Bushwick, now forming the Eastern District of the city of Brooklyn*, was eight fathoms of duffels cloth, eight fathoms of wampum, twelve kettles, eight adzes, eight axes, and some knives, corals, and awls.

In January, 1639, he purchased another tract, which included a large portion of Queens as well as Kings county. On November 28th of the same year, Thomas Bescher received a patent for "a tobacco plantation," on the beach of Long Island, "hard by Saphorakan," which is supposed to have been at Gowanus, and adjoining to that of William Adriaense Bennet. The next settler, in this vicinity, was Frederick Lubbertsen, who, on the 27th of May, 1640, took out a patent for a large tract lying on the northerly side of Gowanus Cove, and having, also, an extensive water-front on the East River; comprising, with the exception of Red Hook, the largest portion of what is now known as South Brooklyn. There is abundant evidence, also, that the

* "Rennegackonck" (sometimes spelt with an *t* or a *u* in the first syllable) is a small creek or stream of water emptying into the Wallabout Bay.

† The Indian name of the territory of Brooklyn was *Meryckawick*, or

"the sandy place;" from *me*, the article in the Algonquin dialect, *reckwa*, sand, and *ick*, locality. The name was probably applied, at first, to the bottom-land, or beach; and what is now Wallabout Bay, was formerly called "The bought (or *bight*, i.e., 'bend') of Mareckawick."

territory (subsequently forming the town of Bushwick, and now the Eastern District of the city of Brooklyn), purchased from the Indians by the West India Company in 1638, had been more or less cultivated—probably by “squatter right”—by settlers who now began to take out patents for the lands which they had thus occupied. Patents were issued in August, 1640, to Abraham Rycken for a large plantation; and in September, 1641, to Lambert Huybertsen (Moll), for land on the East River previously occupied by one Cornelis Jacobsen Sille. In the same neighborhood Hans Hansen Bergen was already occupying a large tract adjoining that of his father-in-law, Joris Rapalie, and lying partly on the “Waal-Bogt” and partly within the limits of Bushwick; while, along the “bend of the Marechawick” lay the farms and “tobacco plantations” of Jan and Pieter Montfoort, Pieter Cæsar the Italian, and others.

During the years 1640 and 1641, some changes were effected in the regulation of affairs in the province, and an increased prosperity was the result.

A public ferry was, by this time, permanently established between Manhattan and Long Island. The landing-place on the New Amsterdam side was at the present Peck Slip, where was a ferry-house, kept by Cornelis Direksen (Hooglant), the ferryman. The landing-place on this side of the river was at the foot of the present Fulton street, Brooklyn, near which Direksen also owned “a house and garden.” Southwardly from “*The Ferry*,” along the present “Brooklyn Heights” and the East River shore, stretched the farms of Claes Cornelissen Van Schouw (Mentelaer), Jan Manje, Andries Hudde, Jacob Wolphertsen (Van Couwenhoven), and others; while Red Hook had become the property of ex-Governor Van Twiller.

In the years 1643 and 1644, wars between the Dutch and Indians were brought on by the bad policy pursued by Director Kieft. In these wars, which commenced with the river Indians, the Long Island tribes became involved, and the safety of the settlements was at times threatened. As a result of these wars, the western end of Long Island was almost depopulated; but on the establishment of peace in 1645, the settlers returned and others came.

The occupation of land within the limits of the present city of Brooklyn commenced with the Bennet and Benty purchase in 1636; and, by 1646, nearly the whole water front, from Newtown Creek to the southerly side of Gowanus Bay, was in the possession of individuals who were engaged in its actual cultivation. Small hamlets, or neighborhoods, also, seem to have grown up at the original centres of settlement, known respectively as “*The Gowanus*,” “*The Waal-bogt*,” and “*The Ferry*.” About a mile to the southeast of the latter locality, and lying between the “Waal-bogt” plantations and those at Gowanus, was a tract, spoken of in the early patents as “Mereckawieck, on the Kil (or Creek) of Gowanus,” and which was, undoubtedly, the residence of the tribe

of that name. Here were the “maize lands” or planting grounds, which, in 1643, were unjustly despoiled by



MAP SHOWING THE RELATIVE POSITIONS OF THE VILLAGE OF BREUCKELEN AND ITS ADJACENT SETTLEMENTS, IN 1646.

the covetous whites; and of which, during the war which ensued, the Indians were dispossessed. As soon as, and even before, hostilities ceased, the choicest portions of this tract were taken up by the white settlers under patents from the Dutch West India Company. Thus, in July, 1645, Jan Evertse Bout, followed in 1646 by Huyck Aertsen (van Rossum), Jacob Stoffelsen, Pieter Cornelissen, and Joris Direksen, and by Gerrit Wolphertsen van Couwenhoven and others in 1647, established themselves in this vicinity, on either side of the road that led from Flatbush to “*The Ferry*.” The village thus formed, and which was located on the present Fulton avenue, in the vicinity of the junction of Hoyt and Smith streets with said avenue, and southeast of the present City Hall, was called BREUCKELEN, after the ancient village of the same name in Holland, some eighteen miles from Amsterdam. Its founders were the first to avail themselves of the policy recommended by the West India Company’s Chamber of Accounts, in the “Code of General Instructions” which they had prepared for the Provincial Council in the preceding autumn, viz.: “to do all in their power to induce the colonists to establish themselves on some of the most suitable places, with a certain number of inhabitants, in the manner of towns, villages, and hamlets, as the English are in the habit of doing.” And their expressed wish and intention to “found a town at their own expense” was promptly responded to (June, 1646) by the Colonial Council with the following brief or commission:

“We, William Kieft, Director General, and the Council residing in New Netherland, on behalf of the High and Mighty Lords States-general of the United Netherlands, His Highness of Orange and the Honorable Directors of the General Incorporated West India Company. To all those who shall see these presents or hear them read, Greeting:

"Whereas, Jan Evertsen Bout and Huyck Aertsen from Rossum, were on the 21st May last unanimously chosen by those interested of Breuckelen, situate on Long Island, as Schepens, to decide all questions which may arise, as they shall deem proper, according to the exemptions of New Netherland granted to particular Colonies, which election is subscribed by them, with express stipulation that if any one refuse to submit in the premises aforesaid to the above-mentioned Jan Evertsen and Huyck Aertsen, he shall forfeit the right he claims to land in the allotment of Breuckelen, and in order that everything may be done with more authority, We, the Director and Council aforesaid, have therefore authorized and appointed, and do here authorize the said Jan Evertsen and Huyck Aertsen to be schepens of Breuckelen; and in case Jan Evertsen and Huyck Aertsen do hereafter find the labor too onerous, they shall be at liberty to select two more from among the inhabitants of Breuckelen to adjoin them to themselves. We charge and command every inhabitant of Breuckelen to acknowledge and respect the above-mentioned Jan Evertsen and Huyck Aertsen as their schepens, and if any one shall be found to exhibit contumaciousness towards them, he shall forfeit his share as above stated. Thus done in Council in Fort Amsterdam in New Netherlands."

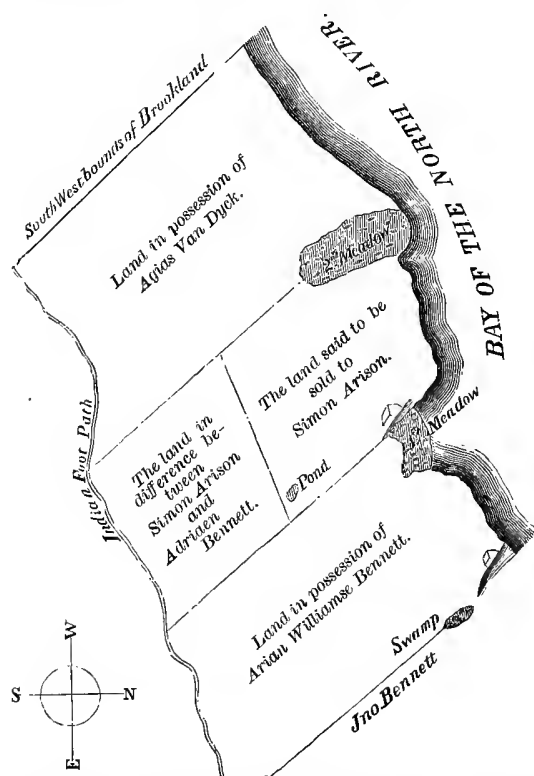
This organization of the TOWN OF BREUCKELEN was further perfected, during the ensuing winter, by the appointment of a schout or constable, as appears by the following commission :

"Having seen the petition of the schepens of Breuckelen, that it is impossible for them to attend to all cases occurring there, especially criminal assaults, impounding of cattle, and other incidents which frequently attend agriculture; and in order to prevent all disorders, it would be necessary to appoint a schout there, for which office they propose the person of Jan Teunissen. Therefore we grant their request therein, and authorize, as we do hereby authorize, Jan Teunissen to act as schout, to imprison delinquents by advice of the schepens, to establish the pound, to impound cattle, to collect fines, and to perform all things that a trusty schout is bound to perform. Whereupon he hath taken his oath at the hands of us and the Fiscal, on whom he shall especially depend, as in Holland substitutes are bound to be dependent on the Upper Schout, Schouts on the Bailiff or Marshal. We command and charge all who are included under the jurisdiction of Breuckelen to acknowledge him, Jan Teunissen, for schout. Thus done in our council in Fort Amsterdam in New Netherland, the first December, Anno 1646."

Thus, more than two centuries ago, the TOWN OF BREUCKELEN was founded, upon nearly the same locality which has since become the political center of the CITY OF BROOKLYN.

The towns on the eastern end of Long Island were generally settled by companies, and in many cases by religious congregations, or societies, who established their own system of government. The Dutch settlements on the western end mostly began as individual enterprises. The new-comers took up such tracts of land as best suited them, and commenced their cultivation. These lands were either selected from those of which the title had been already secured by the West India Company, or were purchased directly from the Indian proprietors themselves. In either case, their occupation was duly sanctioned by a patent or "ground-brief"

from the Company, and confirmatory patents were also granted after the lands had been under cultivation for a certain number of years. Official transcripts of most of these patents yet exist in the office of the Secretary of State at Albany; from which, together with town and county records, we are enabled to locate the farms or "bouweries" of the early settlers with a considerable degree of accuracy. The dates of these patents mostly range from 1640 to 1646, in which latter year the period of incubation may be said to have terminated by the incorporation of the village of Breuckelen.



Copy of a Survey made May 21st, 1696, by Augustus Graham, Surveyor General, of the BENNETT AND BENTYN PURCHASE, of the Indians, containing 330 acres.

As before stated, the BENNET and BENTYN purchase was made in 1636, and included land extending from the vicinity of Twenty-eighth street along Gowanus Cove and the bay to the New Utrecht line.

Within a few years after this joint purchase, Bennet seems to have become the owner of the whole, or nearly the whole, of the entire tract, and to have built himself a house (on or near the site of the present mansion-house on the Schermerhorn farm, on Third avenue, near Twenty-eighth street), which was burned down during the Indian war of 1643, in Governor Kieft's administration. Bennett died about the same time, and probably during his children's minority; and his widow afterward married Mr. Paulus Vander Beeck, "surgeon and farmer."

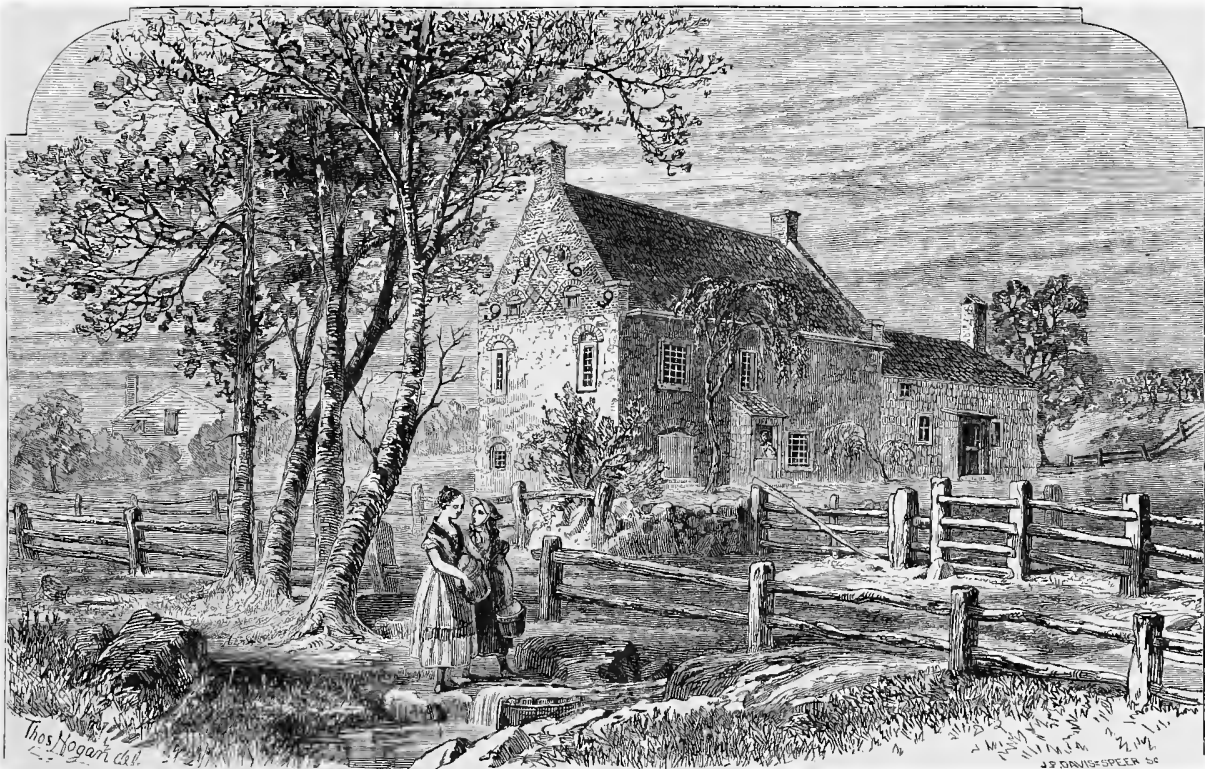
As time went on, this tract was divided and subdivided among purchasers and heirs. The original stone



THE DE HART, OR BERGEN HOUSE.

Simon Aesen . 1675.

Signature of Simon Aesen (Ter Haert.)

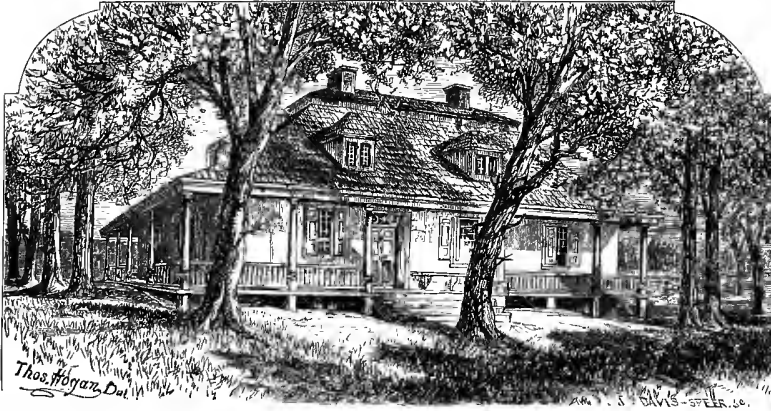


THE VECHTE-CORTELYOU HOUSE, 1699.

Klaes Arents Vecht . 1699

Signature of Klaes Arents Vecht, the builder of the Vechte House.

walls form part of the present building known as the Schermerhorn mansion. The De Hart or Bergen house, on the shore of Gowanus Cove, west of Third avenue, near Thirty-seventh and Thirty-eighth streets, was repaired and newly roofed some sixty years since by Simon Bergen, and it still remains. These houses are



THE SCHERMERHORN HOUSE.

older than the Cortelyou or Vechte house, on Fifth avenue, which was erected in 1699, and which has generally been considered the oldest in Brooklyn.

A patent was granted by Kieft to CORNELIS LAMBERTSE (Cool), April 5th, 1642. This patent extended from

his
Cornelis Lambertse *mark* Cool

the northerly line of Bennet's land, nearly to the head of Gowanus Cove, and included lands between First and Twenty-eighth streets. This, like all other tracts, was divided among many owners, in time. On the Vechte farm, on the west side of Fifth avenue, near Fourth street, stands the old Cortelyou house, erected 1699, probably by Claes (or Nicholas) Adriantse Van Vechten. The land on which the house stands was purchased in 1790 by Jaques Cortelyou.

The "Rooede Hoek," or *Red Hook*, so called from the color of its soil, has almost entirely lost its identity, in consequence of the construction of the Atlantic Docks, and the other extensive and important improvements in that part of the modern city of Brooklyn. Its original form and topographical appearance, however, has been faithfully preserved in Ratzer's map. It may be described, as extending from Luqueer's Mill Creek (about Hicks and Huntington streets), following the indentations of the shore around the cape and headland, to about the western boundary of the Atlantic Docks, on the East River; or, in general terms, as having comprised all the land west of the present Sullivan street. Its history commences with the year 1638, when Director

Van Twiller petitioned for its use, which was granted to him on condition that he should relinquish it whenever the Company wanted it. Van Twiller had previously become possessed of "Nutten" or Governor's Island, several islands in the East River, near Hell-gate, and lands at Catskill and on Long Island, amounting in all to

between three thousand and three thousand seven hundred and fifty acres. These, as well as similar purchases made by other officials, were disapproved by the authorities at home,—who very justly complained that "the whole land might thus be taken up, yet be a desert,"—and finally, in 1652, were declared null and void, and the lands consequently reverted to the Company.

The title of Red Hook being thus vested in the Government, was conveyed and granted to the town of Brueckelen, in 1657, by Governor

Stuyvesant; and was subsequently confirmed by Governors Nicolls and Dongan. It was sold, on the 10th of August, 1695, by the patentees and freeholders of the town, to Colonel Stephanus Van Cortlandt.

A mill was erected on this property, previous to 1689, at the corner of the present Dikeman and Van Brunt streets. The mill has long since disappeared, and the old pond, which, in 1834, contained some forty-seven acres, is filled up and obliterated.

Tradition asserts that Red Hook and Governor's Island were once connected, and that people and cattle waded across Buttermilk Channel. The legend probably originated in statements made by witnesses in a trial which took place in 1741, between Israel Horsfield, plaintiff, and Hans Bergen, defendant, as to the boundaries of their respective farms. The theory, sustained by some in support of this tradition, that the docks erected along the New York shore effected a change, by diverting the currents of the East River toward Buttermilk Channel, is hardly tenable.

May 27th, 1640, a patent was granted to FREDERIC LUBBERTSEN, of a farm comprising the whole neck of land between the East River and Gowanus Creek, northeast of the meadows which formerly separated Red Hook from Brooklyn. This neck, formerly known as the "neck of Brookland" or "Lubbertsen's neck," has now lost its original appearance by the filling in of the Atlantic Docks, the grading of streets, and the various improvements of the modern city; and Lubbertsen's farm can only be defined, in general terms, as bounded by a line drawn between Degraw and Harrison streets, west of Court street, the East River, Hamilton avenue, Gowanus Creek, and by Warren street east of Court.

On this patent, south of the present Harrison street, between Columbia street and Tiffany place, and about

opposite to Sedgwick street, "a water mill for grinding corn," known, from its builder, as Cornelius Seabring's mill, and afterward as Cornell's, or the Red Mill, was built in 1689.

Facsimile of Frederick Lubbertse's Autograph.

On the northeast corner of the present Hicks and Huntington streets was I. Seabring's mill, which was built prior to 1766. On the Lubbertsen patent, also, on the north side of the present Ninth street, between Smith street and the Gowanus Canal, was the mill and mill pond originally built by John Rapalje after 1766, and better known as "Cole's mill."

A canal running from the East River to Gowanus Cove, and separating Red Hook from the mainland, was made, subsequent to 1664, to avoid the difficult and dangerous navigation around Red Hook by row-boats. March 16, 1774, the Colonial Assembly of the State passed an act empowering the people of Gowanus to widen the canal, keep it in order, and tax those who used it. This canal was partially closed, some twenty-five years ago, by improvements at Atlantic Dock; but there are persons yet living who have frequently passed through it with their boats, in going to or returning from New York.

September 30th, 1645, CLAES JANSEN VAN NAERDEN, or Claes Janse Ruyter, received from Governor Kieft a patent of "twenty-one morgens two hundred rods," or about forty-three acres, lying about south by east, a little easterly, over against the fort, on Long Island.

Next to Ruyter's patent, on the East River, lay that of JAN MANJE, granted to him by Governor Kieft, Sept. 11, 1642; and described as "a piece of land, greatly (*i. e.*, of the size of) twenty morgen, lying about southeast a little easterly, over against the fort in New Amsterdam, in Brueckelen." September 12th, 1645, Andries Hudde obtained by patent from Governor Kieft, a tract containing "37 morgen, 247 rods" lying "over against the fort (at New Amsterdam), lying to the southeast of Jan Manje."

The three patents of HUDDE, MANJE and RUYTER comprehended the entire tract lying northeast of Lubbertse's patent—and having a river front (of two thousand six hundred and forty-six feet) extending from about Atlantic to Clarke streets, and from Court street to the East River, being at present one of the most thickly settled portions of Brooklyn. This became, in 1706, the property of Joris Remsen, who was the second son of Rem Jansen Vanderbeeck, the ancestor of the Remsen family in this country. Joris built a mansion near the brow of the heights, which then presented the appearance of a rough and bold promontory of rocky cliffs, rising from a sandy beach, and covered with a

fine growth of cedar-trees, which gave to the place a remarkably picturesque appearance, as seen from the New York side. The Remsen mansion was used for a hospital by the British during the Revolution; was afterwards occupied by William Cutting, the partner of Robert Fulton in the steamboat business, and after his death it was sold to Fanning C. Tucker, Esq. After several years he sold it to ex-Mayor Jonathan Trotter, from whom it passed to Mr. Wm. S. Packer, and its site is now marked by Grace Church. The building itself was launched down the face of the Heights, and now stands on the site of the old Joralemon street ferry-house, on Furman near Joralemon street.

Philip Livingston, Esq., became the owner of an extensive portion of the Remsen estate, prior to 1764. The Livingston mansion-house stood on the east side of the present Hicks street, about 400 feet south of Joralemon street; and, during the Revolutionary War, in consequence of Mr. Livingston's adherence to the American cause, was appropriated by the British, who then occupied Brooklyn, to the purposes of a naval hospital. After Mr. Livingston's death, his trustees disposed of that portion known as the "distillery property," to Daniel McCormick, in July, 1785, and, on the 29th of April, 1803, they sold to Teunis Joralemon the property south of the distillery, and the Livingston mansion thenceforward became known as the Joralemon House. It was taken down at the opening of Hicks street.

On the 14th of November, 1642, CLAES CORNELISSEN (MENTELAER) VAN SCHOUW received from Governor Kieft a patent for land "on Long Island, over against the island of Manhattan, betwixt the ferry and the land of Andries Hudde," containing "16 morgen and 175 rods."

This property, having a water-front of 1,276 feet six inches, probably extended from the north line of Hudde's patent to the ferry at the foot of the present Fulton street.

At "the Ferry" and its immediate vicinity, grants for house or building lots were made to several individuals; and, by the beginning of the last century, there was probably quite a hamlet at this point, having several streets and lanes, with houses clustered closely together.

North of the Ferry, as near as can be ascertained, came, either a patent for a small parcel belonging to CORNELIS DIRCKSEN (HOOGLANDT), "the Ferryman," or that of Jacob Wolphertsen (van Couwenhoven).

On January 24th, 1643, Dircksen sold this property (of which we have been unable to find any recorded patent), then described as "his house and garden, with some sixteen or seventeen acres of land on Long Island," to one William Thomassen, together with his right of ferriage, provided the Director would consent, for 2,300 guilders in cash and merchandise. William Thomassen we suppose to be the same individual as William Jansen, who is known to have succeeded Cornelis Dircksen as ferryman about this time. Dircksen, after retiring from the charge of the ferry, obtained from Gover-

nor Kieft, December 12, 1645, a piece of land "*behind the land by him heretofore taken up*, amounting to 12 morgens and 157 rods."

July 3d, 1643, Governor Kieft granted a patent to JACOB WOLPHERTSEN, (VON COUWENHOVEN), for "a piece of land lying on Long Island, on the East River, bounded north by west by Cornelis Direksen (Hooglandt), ferryman's land." The same land, having a water front of 686 feet, was confirmed by Governor Kieft to Herry Breser, September 4th, 1645, and was said to contain 16 morgens 468 rods."

September 4th, 1645, a patent was granted by Governor Kieft to Frederic Lubbertsen, which included 15 morgens and 52 rods adjoining Breser's.

The patents of Lubbertsen and Breser, previous to the Revolution, became the property of John Rapalje, a great-great-grandson of the first settler. Mr. Rapalje was a person of considerable importance; was the owner of the largest estate in Brooklyn; had occupied, at one time, a seat in the Provincial Assembly, and enjoyed the highest confidence and respect of his fellow-citizens. Upon the breaking out of the Revolution, he adhered to the British cause, and a bill of attainder was passed against him October 27, 1779, and he was banished to New Jersey. After the occupation of Long Island by the British, he returned to Brooklyn, and there remained with his family until October, 1783, when, in company with his son, his son-in-law, Colonel Lutwyche, and a grand-daughter, he removed to England, and settled at Norwich, in the County of Norfolk. All efforts to procure a reversion of his attainder, and the restoration of his confiscated estates in America, having failed, his losses were reimbursed to him by the British government, and he died at Kensington, in his seventy-fourth year, January 12, 1802. Loyalist as he was, it was often said of him by his old neighbors of Brooklyn, that "he had an honest heart, and never wronged or oppressed a Whig or other man."

His lands and other property in Brooklyn were sold by the Commissioners of Forfeited Estates. That portion under consideration, lying between Gold and Fulton streets, was purchased, on the 13th of July, 1784, by Comfort and Joshua Sands, for the sum of £12,430, paid in State scrip. Some ten or twelve years after the war, Rapalje's grand-daughter, who had married George Weldon in England, came, with her husband, to New York, with the intention of prosecuting for recovery of the estate, on the ground that its confiscation had taken place subsequent to the treaty of peace. They brought with them the original title deeds and other documents of the estate; and, it is said, the town records of Brooklyn, which Rapalje carried to England. A number of depositions were made and collected in Brooklyn, relative to the property, and Aaron Burr and other eminent counsel were consulted, whose advice was adverse to the prosecution of the suit. The Weldons, therefore, returned to England, carrying with them all the valua-

able records and papers which they had brought with them.

No further attempt has since been made to disturb the title, and the land was afterwards laid out in streets and lots by the Messrs. Sands.

ALONG THE EAST RIVER.

The "land lying at the west corner of Marechkawieck, on the East River," was granted to EDWARD FISCOCK, whose widow married one Jan Haes. On April 2d, 1647, Haes received from Governor Kieft a confirmation of this property, which was described as extending

"from the land of Frederick Lubbertsen, east, southeast, and southeast by east to the marsh, 80 rods; and along the valley (meadow), northeast, 126 rods, with certain out and in points; further north by east, 45 rods; west northwest, 30 rods; west by north, 80 rods; west and west by south, 67 rods; along the land of Frederick Lubbertsen, and south and south by east, 134 rods, amounting to 38 morgens 485 rods."

This tract, having a water-front of eight hundred and twenty feet and nine inches, was located at the west cape or point of Wallabout Bay, and embraced a part of the present United States Navy-yard. The point formed by the junction of the Waale-bogt with the East River was subsequently called "Martyn's Hook," probably from one Jan Martyn, who is mentioned as a proprietor in that vicinity about the year 1660. At a more modern day, (from a somewhat natural association with memories of the Prison-ship horrors,) the name became corrupted to that of "Martyr's Hook."

HANS LODEWYCK was the patentee of a tract, probably next to the Haes patent, though other lands may have been between them. His patent, of 14 morgens and 494 rods, was dated November 3d, 1645.

MICHAEL PICET, a Frenchman, was, for a time, the owner of the farm next to Lodewyck's, but it was granted to Willem Cornelissen, February 19th, 1645. It contained twenty-five morgens "in the bend of Marechkarrek." In 1668 it became the property of Charles Gabrey, who afterwards fled the country; and the estate, being confiscated, was again granted by the Governor, July 12th, 1673, to Michael Heynall, Dirck Jansen, and Jeronimus Rapalje.

PETER CÆSAR ITALIEN, or Caesar Alberti, received June 17th, 1643, a grant of land adjoining that of Picet. May 1st, 1647, he received an addition to the westerly side of his farm.

These two farms, of Peter Cæsar Italien (which had a river or meadow front of six hundred and ninety-nine feet three inches) and that of Picet, comprised the land now lying between Clermont and Hampden avenues.

PETER MONTFORT received a patent for 25 morgens and eight rods next to Pieter the Italien's, May 29th, 1641, and May 1st, 1647, another patent for land to the westerly side of this, two hundred and seventy rods square, "provided it did not interfere with other grants." This land had a river or meadow front of about nine

hundred feet, and it is now comprised between Hamilton avenue and a line a little beyond Clermont avenue.

JAN MONTFOORT (probably Peter's brother) received also, May 29th, 1641, a grant for 28 morgen between the land of Peter Montfoort on the west and the farm of Rapalje on the east.

In 1647 Montfoort's widow received a grant of an addition to the rear of the above land, of the same breadth, and one hundred and ninety rods in length. The Montfoort land, which had a river or meadow front of about 1,078 feet, was identical with that now located between Hamilton and Grand avenues.

JORIS (George) JANSEN DE RAPALIE, supposed to have been a proscribed Huguenot, from Rochelle in France, came to this country in 1623, in the ship *Unity*, with Catalyntie Trico, his wife, and settled first at Fort Orange, near Albany, from whence he removed, in 1626, to New Amsterdam. About 1655 he probably removed his permanent residence to his farm at the "Waale-Boght." This farm consisted of 167 morgens and 406 rods (about 335 acres), which he had purchased on the 16th of June, 1637, from its Indian proprietors.

Facsimile of Joris Jansen Rapalie's

Autograph, or Mark.

Mark of Catalyntie Trico, wife of

Joris Jansen de Rapalie.

On this tract, which may be described in general terms as comprising the lands now occupied by the United States Marine Hospital, and those embraced between Nostrand and Grand avenues, in the present city of Brooklyn, and on the easterly side of the Waal-boght, Rapalie spent the remainder of his life, dying soon after the close of the Dutch administration, and having had eleven children.

On the 30th of March, 1647, HANS HANSEN BERGEN, or "Hans the Boore," as he was sometimes familiarly called, received a patent for 200 morgens (400 acres) of land on Long Island, being a portion of the extensive purchase made by Governor Kieft, in 1638, from the Indian proprietors. This tract of land extended from the Creek of Runnegaconck to the present Division avenue, which formerly marked the boundary between the cities of Williamsburgh and Brooklyn. Following the direction of this avenue to near its intersection with Tenth street, it there passed over it and stretched in a somewhat southeasterly direction, probably as far as the head of Newtown Creek, in the neighborhood of Vandervoort avenue and Montrose street. This patent, therefore, was situated partly in Brooklyn and partly in Bushwick.


HANS HANSEN BERGEN (or VAN BERGEN), the common ancestor of the Bergen family of Long Island and New Jersey, was a native of Bergen, in Norway, whence he emigrated to Holland, and from there to New Netherland. His wife was Sarah, daughter of Joris Janse de Rapalie, and was reputed to be the first

white child born in the colony of New Netherland. Probably she was the first white female born in the colony.

Hans Hansen  Bergen's Mark.

This completes an account of the early patents along the water front of Breuckelen, between the bounds of New Utrecht and those of Bushwick.

There was also a *second tier of patents* located in the rear of those already discussed, and lying "at Marechkawieck," a name which applied to the whole of the county between the Waale-Boght and the head of the Gowanus Creek. These lands are described as "lying at Marechkawieck on the Gowanus Kill," proving that the name Marechkawieck was used to designate the whole country between the two localities, as well as the shore of the Waale-Boght. On these patents the village proper of Breuckelen, as distinguished from the hamlets of "Waale-Boght," "Gowanus," and "The Ferry," was afterward established. It was undoubtedly the site of the village of the Indian tribe of that name, of which they were dispossessed during the war of 1643. These patents may be briefly noted as those of *Gerrit Wolphertsen* (*Van Couwenhoven*), 1647, fronting on the main road leading through the original settlement of Breuckelen, from Flatbush to "The Ferry"; of *Jacob Stoffelsen*, extending along the present Fulton avenue from Bond to about Smith or Hoyt streets; of *Jan Evertsen Bout*, 1645, covering the land on which, a few years ago, were located Freecke's and Denton's mills. Freecke's, or the "Old Gowanus Mill," the oldest in the town of Breuckelen, as early as 1661, was occupied conjointly by Isaac De Forrest and Adam Brower (the latter partly purchasing the interest of the former); and they were, undoubtedly, tenants of Bout, who afterwards sold to Brower. This mill-pond was formed by damming off the head of Gowanus Kill, and the old mill was located just north of Union, west of Nevins, and between that street and Bond.

his
Adam  Brower. 1680.
mark

Denton's Mill, or "the Yellow Mill," in Gowanus," was also built upon Bout's patent, by Adam and Nicholas, the sons of Adam Brower, in 1709. The mill-pond was formed by the damming off a branch of the Gowanus Kill, and the mill was located on the north-east side of the present First street, about midway between Second and Third avenues. The dwelling house, which was burned about 1852, was in Carroll, midway between Nevins street and Third avenue.

There is some uncertainty regarding the precise limits of these three patents of *Bout*, *Stoffelsen* and *Van Couwenhoven*; but, together they evidently cover that portion of the city included between Fulton avenue, Smith and Nevins streets, and described on later maps as lands of Martense and Gerritsen.

In this second tier of patents, also, were those of *Huyck Aertsen* (Van Rossum), 1646, between the present Fulton avenue, Fourth avenue, Nevins and Douglass streets, afterwards known as Bergen and Powers' property; of *Joris Dircksen*, *Pieter Cornelissen* and *Cornelis Dircksen*, 1646, on the east side of the King's highway (now Fulton avenue) a somewhat triangular section of land which may be described in general terms as at present included between Fulton avenue, Raymond street and a line drawn a little south of and parallel to Tillary street. In all, it amounted to about 46 morgens. Cornelis Dircksen was the ferryman; Pieter Dircksen was a carpenter.

Civil History.—During the Dutch Regime, 1646–1664. The civil history of Breuckelen, from the time of its incorporation in 1646 to the conquest of New Netherland by the English, in 1664, has but little interest or importance. It is mentioned, in 1649, as one of “two villages of little moment,” and its course was simply that of an agricultural community, differing in no respect from the neighboring towns, and inferior to none (except, it may be, to Midwout, now Flathush) in wealth or political influence.

In 1647 Governor Kieft was superseded by Peter Stuyvesant, who did not find the affairs of the colony in a prosperous condition. The commonalty were disorderly and discontented; the public revenue seriously impaired by inefficient or dishonest officials; trade ruined by smuggling; and the general safety weakened by bickerings and disputes with colonial patroons, concerning rights of jurisdiction. The savages, also, brooding over their past defeats, evidently waited only for an opportunity to avenge their losses; and jealous neighbors were secretly plotting against the Dutch rule in America.

With characteristic energy, Governor Stuyvesant entered upon the task of reform; and, within three months, order was restored and trade revived. The governmental powers which he assumed were extensive and often arbitrary; and it is not surprising that in their exercise he developed the imperiousness, impatience of restraint, and disregard of the wishes of the people which characterized him in his gubernatorial career; and which were due, probably, to both his personal character and his previous military life. Though he was at times compelled to yield a reluctant, partial deference to popular sentiment, the history of his government is a record of quarrels with his English and Swedish neighbors, with colonial patroons, and with his own people. So far did his assumption of authority exceed the patience of the commonalty that, in 1653, a convention

of delegates met at New Amsterdam and adopted a remonstrance. Breuckelen was represented in this convention by Frederick Lubbertsen, Paulus Vanderbeeck, and William Beekman. It is unnecessary to say that the remonstrance produced no effect, and that on a second assembling of the convention the Governor ordered them to “disperse, and not to assemble again on such business.”

In 1654 the municipal privileges of Breuckelen, as well as of Amersfoort and Midwout, were enlarged; and, in Breuckelen, two schepens were added to the two already possessed, and David Provoost was appointed the first separate schout or constable. During this year a Reformed Dutch Church, the first on Long Island, was established at Midwout, under the Rev. Johannes Theodorus Polhemus, and morning services were held at Breuckelen and Amersfoort alternately. It was not till 1660 that the people of Breuckelen had a pastor settled among them. In 1665 the magistrates in Breuckelen were permitted to present to the council candidates, from among whom schepens might be selected; and Frederick Lubbertsen, Albert Cornelissen, Jacob Dircksen, and Joris Rapelje were appointed. During this year the fees of the schout were fixed as follows: For copying every judicial act passed by the schepens, or for each apostille, 12 stivers, and 6 stivers for each “extract from the notules.” For a petition which was to be signed by the petitioner, if of a civil nature, 16 stivers; or if it related to a criminal case, injuries, etc., 20 stivers. For procuring a certificate, 24 stivers. Provoost died in January, 1656, and was succeeded by Peter Tonneman, who acted until August, 1660, when he became sheriff of New Amsterdam; and in his stead Adriaen Hegeman was appointed, who enjoyed a salary of 200 guilders per annum, with half of the civil fines imposed by the courts, and one-third of the criminal fines levied by the towns, together with certain clerk's fees for entries and transcripts.

In 1656 the schepens of Breuckelen required the owners of certain vacant building lots to build thereon within a certain specified time, and this action was approved by the council.

In 1657, Thursday of each week was declared a market day in the village of Breuckelen.

In 1660 fortifications, with palisades, etc., were ordered for Brooklyn and New Utrecht. In the same year permission was granted to several Frenchmen to settle at what afterward became Boswick or Bushwick. Permission was also given to Aert Anthonissen Mid-dagh, Teunis Gybertsen Bogart, Jean Le Clerc, Gerrit Heyndrick Backer, Philip Barchstool, Christina Cap-poen, Jacob Kip, and Joris Rapalje, residents of the Waal-boght neighborhood, who had petitioned the Director for permission to form a village “on the margin of the river, between the lands of said Bogaert and Kip, so that,” as they expressed it, “we may be in sight of the Manhatans, or Fort Amsterdam.” The position selected

was, probably, the elevated point of land which jutted into the river about the foot of South Fourth street, in the present Eastern District of the city, and which was known in the ancient time as the "Keike," or "Look-out." On the petition of others, and the discussion of the subject, *pro* and *con*, the decision was reconsidered and the permission denied.

During this year a church was organized in Breuckelen, with Henricus Selyns as pastor. There were in the town, at that time, 31 families, or 134 persons. Church services were at first held in a barn.

In 1661 the schout and schepens of the court of Breuckelen represented to the Director General and Council that they found it "necessary that a Court

Tunis  1664.

Facsimile of Teunis Gysbert Bogart's Autograph.

Messenger was required for the Schepens' Chamber, to be occasionally employed in the Village of Breuckelen and all around where he may be needed, as well to serve summons, as also to conduct the service of the Church, and to sing on Sundays; to take charge of the School, dig graves, etc., ring the Bell, and perform whatever else may be required." In answer to this petition, the Director and Council were graciously pleased to say that they would "pay fifty guilders, in wampum, annually, for the support of the precentor (*voorsanger*) and schoolmaster in the village of Breuckelen," and Carel de Beauvoise was appointed.

In 1663 Indian warfare broke out in the colony, which was also scourged with small-pox. Events also transpired which seemed to foreshadow the revolution of the next year. During this year but few events of particular interest occurred. Petitions were presented for permission to establish villages, or "concentrations," one of which was granted, for a settlement at a place "back of the Waale-Boght, or at Marcus' plantation.

In the month of July, during the Indian troubles which prevailed, the Director proposed that Breuckelen should furnish 8, 10, or 12 men, to be "kept ready for the protection of one or the other place in danger, which may God avert!" A meeting of the inhabitants was forthwith held, at which every person present expressed a willingness to aid in protecting their neighbors on Long Island, but it was deemed that *the town was not strong enough to furnish so many men.*

It is a noteworthy fact that, in 1664, the principle of popular representation was, for the first time, recognized in the colony. At the special request of the Burgomasters and Schepens, the Director convened a General Assembly of delegates from the several towns, to discuss and consider the affairs of Nieuw Nederland. This Convention, in which Breuckelen was represented by Willem Bredembent and Albert Cornelis

Wantanaer, assembled at the "Stadt Huys" (or City Hall), in New Amsterdam, on the 10th of April, 1664.

The revolution of 1664, which transferred the jurisdiction of New Netherland from the Dutch to the English, is elsewhere spoken of. BROADHEAD says of it: "But, whatever may have been its ultimate consequences, this treacherous and violent seizure of the territory and possessions of an unsuspecting ally, was no less a breach of private justice than of public faith. It may, indeed, be affirmed that, among all the acts of selfish perfidy which royal ingratitude conceived and executed, there have been few more characteristic, and none more base."

Under the Duke of York, 1664-1674.—After the revolution of 1664 the colony was reconstructed under the Duke of York, and its name was changed to that of New York. On the 28th of February, 1665, a convention met at Hempstead; and, as elsewhere stated,

adopted regulations for the government of the colony. In this convention Breuckelen was represented by Frederick Lubbertsen and Jan Evertsen Bout.

During the administration of Governors Nicolls and Lovelace, tranquility and prosperity prevailed, and nothing of interest is recorded of Breuckelen.

In the autumn of 1667 Governor Nicolls granted to Breuckelen a full and ample patent, confirming the people in their rights and privileges. Under the Dutch government there was, without doubt, a charter or general patent of the town, which is lost. Such a charter was referred to in conveyances between individuals, and the Nicolls charter is evidently confirmatory of it. The following is the text of this charter:

L. S. "RICHARD NICOLLS, ESQ., Governor-General under his Royal Highness James Duke of Yorke and Albany, etc., of all his Territorys in America, To all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth Greeting—Whereas there is a certain town within this government, situate, lying and being in the West Riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, commonly called and known by the name of Breuckelen, which said town is in the tenure or occupation of several freeholders and inhabitants, who, having heretofore been seated there by authority, have been at very considerable charge in manuring and planting a considerable part of the lands belonging thereunto, and settled a competent number of families thereupon. Now, for a confirmation unto the said freeholders and inhabitants in their possessions and enjoyment of the premises, Know ye, That by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his Royal Highness, I have given, ratified, confirmed, and granted, and by these presents do give, ratify, confirm, and grant, unto Jan Everts, Jan Damen, Albert Cornelissen, Paulus Veerbeek, Michael Eneyl (Hainelle), Thomas Lamberts, Teunis Guysbert Bogart, and Joris Jacobson, as patentees, for and on the behalf of themselves and their associates, the freeholders and inhabitants of the said town, their heirs, successors and assigns, all that tract, together with the several parcels of land which already have or hereafter shall be purchased or procured for and on behalf of the said town, whether from the native Indian proprietors or others, within the bounds and limits hereafter set forth and exprest, viz., that is to say, the town is bounded

westward on the farther side of the land of Mr. Paulus Veerbeck, from whence stretching southeast, they go over the hills, and so eastward along the said hills to a southeast point which takes in all the lots behind the swamp, from which said lots they run northwest to the River and extend to the farm, on the t'other side of the hill, heretofore belonging to Hans Hansen, over against the Kicke or Looke-out, including within the said bounds and limitts all the lots and plantations lying and being at the Gowanus, Bedford, Wallabout and the Ferry.—All which said parcels and tracks of land and premises within the bounds and limits afore-mentioned, described, and all or any plantation or plantations thereupon, from henceforth are to bee, appertaine, and belong to the said town of Breuckelen, Together with all havens, harbours, creeks, quarreys, woodland, meadow-ground, reed-land or valley of all sorts, pastures, marshes, runs, rivers, lakes, hunting, fishing, hawking, and fowling, and all other profits, commodities, emoluments, and hereditaments, to the said lands and premises within the bounds and limits all forth belonging, or in any wise appertaining,—and withall to have freedome of commonage for range and feed of cattle and horse into the woods, as well without as within these bounds and limitts, with the rest of their neighbours,—as also one-third part of a certain neck of meadow-ground or valley called Sellers neck, lying and being within the limits of the town of Jamaica, purchased by the said town of Jamaica from the Indians, and sold by them unto the inhabitants of Breuckelen aforesaid, as it has been lately laid out and divided by their mutual consent and my order, whereunto and from which they are likewise to have free egress and regress, as their occasions may require. To have and to hold all and singular the said tract and parcell of land, meadow-ground or valley, commonage, hereditaments and premises, with their and every of their appurtenances, and of every part and parcell thereof, to the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors, and assigns, to the proper use and behoof of the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors, and assigns forever. Moreover, I do hereby give, ratify, confirm and grant unto the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors, and assigns, all the rights and privileges belonging to a town within this government, and that the place of their present habitation shall continue and retain the name of Breuckelen, by which name and stile it shall be distinguished and known in all bargains and sales made by them, the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors, and assigns, rendering and paying such duties and acknowledgments as now are or hereafter shall be constituted and established by the laws of this government, under the obedience of his Royal highness, his heirs and successors. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James, in New York, on the Island of Manhattat, this 18th day of October, in the nineteenth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, etc., Annoque Domini, 1667.

“RICHARD NICOLLS.

“Recorded, by order of the Governor, the day and year above written.

“MATTHIAS NICOLLS, Sec'y.”

January 4, 1668, one Robert Hollis was granted the exclusive privilege of selling strong drink in Breuckelen. During this year, also, the little village-hamlet of Bedford was honored by the establishment of an inn or “ordinary for man and beast,” kept, under an annual license from the Governor, by Thomas Lamberts.

In the year 1670, the inhabitants of Breuckelen, being

desirous of enlarging the bounds of their common lands, and of extinguishing the Indian title to the same, applied to Governor Lovelace, and obtained from him permission to purchase from the native proprietors a large tract of land in and about the hamlet then, and since, known as Bedford.

In accordance with this permission a purchase was made from the Indians of “all that parcel of land and tract of land, in and about Bedford, within the jurisdiction of Breuckelen, beginning from Hendrick Van Aarnrem's land, by a swamp of water, and stretching to the hills, then going along the hills to the port or entrance there, and so to the Rockaway foot-path, as their purchase is more particularly set forth.” The compensation for this land was 100 guilders seawant, half a tun of strong beer, 2 half tuns of good beer, 3 guns, long barrels, with each a pound of powder, and lead proportionable—2 bars to a gun—4 match coates. The text of this Indian deed, as well as much interesting matter concerning the early history of the Bedford district, will be found on pages 157–160 of *Stiles' History of Brooklyn*.

In 1673 the province passed again under the control of the States General, and the five Dutch towns submitted with alacrity to the authority of their old masters. In Breuckelen, and the adjoining hamlets, fifty-two out of eighty-one men took the oath of allegiance, and the remainder were ordered to do so.

During the brief second rule of the Dutch the people were called on to take measures for protection against a threatened invasion from New England, and the inhabitants of Breuckelen, Boswyck, and the other Dutch towns were not slow to respond.

But another change in the political condition of the country was at hand, and the second epoch of Dutch power was terminated, in February, 1674, by a treaty of peace between England and Holland, by which New Netherlands was given to the English in exchange for Surinam. The new governor, Sir Edmund Andros, arrived at New York on the 31st of October, received a formal surrender of the place, and re-established the English government. The Duke's Laws were reinstated and confirmed, together with such grants and privileges as had been previously enjoyed under his royal highness; all legal judicial proceedings during the Dutch government were pronounced valid, and the inhabitants secured in their lawful estates and property. A special order, also, of November 4th, reinstated in office, for a period of six months, the officials of the several towns who were serving when the Dutch came in power.

The fort, on Manhattan Island, which had been called by the Dutch, in honor of the “Staadtholder,” *Fort William Hendrick*, again became *Fort James*, and “New Orange,” as the city had been rechristened, became again *NEW YORK*.

Under the English, 1675–1775.—During the year 1675 nothing occurred to disturb the equanimity of the

people in Breuckelen, except the apprehension which they shared in common with those of the neighboring towns, that they might become involved in King Philip's war, in which it was feared the Long Island tribes might participate. Proper preventive measures were adopted by the provincial government, the fear in these towns subsided, and a feeling of security followed the defeat of that notorious chieftain.

It appears that Breuckelen had at this time come to be the leading town, in population and wealth, in Kings County. The number of assessed persons in the town was 60; while that of Middlewout, which had hitherto exceeded it, was but 54. Its assessed valuation was £5,204 against £5,079 10s. in its neighbor.

During the same year its importance was enhanced by its appointment as a *market town*. The following is the record concerning this:

"Upon a proposall of having a ffayre or markt in or neare this City (New York); It is ordered, that after this season, there shall yearely be kept a ffayre and markt at Breucklyn, near the fferry, for all graine, cattle, or other produce of the country; to bee held the first Monday, Tuesday and Wednesday in November, and in the City of New Yorke the thursday, ffriday, and Saturday following."

In 1682 Colonel Thomas Dongan succeeded Governor Andros, and reforms were at once inaugurated. The towns were ordered to bring in their patents and Indian deeds preparatory to receiving new charters. Breuckelen and Boswyck at once complied; and, after the settlement of some questions concerning its boundaries, Breuckelen, on the 3d of May, 1686, received from Governor Dongan a patent, from which the following is an extract:

"The said town is bounded westward on the further side of the land of Mr. Paulus Verbeeck, from whence stretching southeast they go over the hills and so eastward along by the said hills to a southeast point, which takes in all the lotts behind the swamp, from which said lotts they run northwest to the River, and extend to the farm on the other side of the hills heretofore belonging to Hans Hansen, over against Keak or Look-out, including within the said bounds and limitts all the lotts and plantations, lying and being at the Gouwanes, Bedford, Wallaboht and the ferry, all which said parcels and tract of land and premises within the bounds and limitts aforementioned described, and all or any plantation or plantations thereupon, from henceforth are to be, appertain and belong to the said town of Breucklyn, Together with all harbor, havens, creeks, quarries, woodland, meadow ground, reed land or valley of all sorts, pastures, marshes, waters, rivers, lakes, fishing, hawking, hunting, fowling, and all other profits, commodities, emoluments and hereditaments to the said lands and premises within the bounds and limitts set forth, belonging, or in any wise appertaining, and with all to have freedom of commonage for range and feed of cattle and horses, into the woods with the rest of their neighbors, as also one third part of a certain neck of meadow ground or valley, called Seller's neck, lying and being within the town of Jamaica, purchased by the said town of Jamaica from the Indians, and sold by them unto the inhabitants of Breucklen aforesaid, as it was laid out aforesaid, and divided by their mutual consent and order of the Governor."

This was a ratification and confirmation of the patent

granted by Governor Nicolls. It was granted to Teunis Gysberts (Bogart), Thomas Lamberts, Peter Jansen, Jacobus Vander Water, Jan Dame(n), Joris Jacobs, Jeronimus Rapalle, Daniel Rapalle, Jan Jansen, Adrian Bennet, and Michael Hanse (Bergen), for and on the

Michael Hansen

Facsimile of Michael Hansen's signature.

behalf of themselves and the rest of the present freeholders and inhabitants of the said town of Breuckelen.

The patent contained the following provision: "Yielding, rendering and paying therefor yearly and every year, on the five and twentyeth day of March, forever, in lieu of all services and demands, whatsoever, as a quit-rent to his most sacred Majesty aforesaid, the heirs and successors, at the city of New York, twenty bushels of good merchantable wheat."

In 1686 the oath of allegiance was signed by the following (the figures indicating the time which the individual had resided in the country):

Thomas Lambertse, 36 years; Jooris Hanssen, native; Hendrick Vechten, 27 years; Claes Arense Vechten, 27 years; Jan Aertsen (Middag), 28 years; Hendrick Claasen, 33 years; Jacob Hanssen Bergen, native; Jooris Martens, native; Hen-

Jacob Hansen

Facsimile of Jacob Hansen Bergen's signature.

drick Thyssen, 21 years; Mauritius Couverts, native; Willem Huijken, 24 years; Thennis Gysbertse Bogaert, 35 years; Willem Bennitt, native; Hendrick Lambertse, native; Jan Fredricks, 35 years; Jan Couverts, native; Luijcas Couverts, 24 years; Frans Abramse, native; Gerrit Aerts Middag, native; Simon Aertsen, 23 years; Matthys Cornelisen, 24 years; Ephraim Hendricks, 33 years; Claes Thomas Van Dyck, native; Jeronimus d'Rapale, native; Jeronimus Remsen, native; Casper Janssen, native; Achias Janse Vandijk, 36 years; Jacob Joorissen, native; Jacobus d'Beauvois, 28 years; Harmen Joorissen, native; Jacob Willemse Bennit, native; Jacob Brouwer, native; Bourgon Broulaet, 12 years; Jan Damen, 37 years; Cornelis Subrink (Sebring), native; Hendrick Sleght, 35 years; Abram Remsen, native; Machiel Hanssen, native; Theunis Tobiassen, native; Pieter Corsen, native; Theunis Janse Couverts, 36 years; Aert Simmons, native; Adam Brouwer, Junior, native; Alexander Shaers, native; Willem Pos, native; Jan gerrise Dorland, 35 years; Johannis Casperse, 35 years; Claes Barentse Blom,

his
Claes Barentse Blom .1682
mark.

Facsimile of Signature of Claes Barentse Blom.

native; Pieter Brouwer, native; Abram Brouwer, native; Jan Bennit, native; Barent Sleght, native; Jacobus Vande Water, 29 years; Benjamin Vande Water, native; Pieter Weijnants, native; Joost Franncsen, 33 years; Hendrick Aaten, native; Jan Janse Staats, native; Claes Simons, native; Anthonij Souso, 5 years; Joost Casperse, 35 years;

Thijs Lubberse, 50 years; Paulus Dirckse, 36 years; Adam Brouwer, 45 years; Josias Dreths, 26 years; Pieter Van Nesten, 40 years; Jan Theunisen, native; Dirck Janse Woertman, 40 years; Daniel D'Rapale, native; Gijsbert Boomgaert, native; Volkert Vanderbraats, native; Jan Buijs, 39 years; Gerrit Dorlant, native; Adriaen Bennet, native; Thomas Verdon, native; Pieter Janse Staats, native.

The abdication of James II., the succession of William and Mary, the career of Jacob Leisler as Governor, and the administration of Governor Henry Slaughter, are elsewhere spoken of. Under the latter the provincial government was reconstructed on a basis which continued to the close of the Revolution.

May 6th, 1691, an act was passed by the General Assembly, confirming to all the towns of the colony their respective grants and patents, by which law both of the patents of Brooklyn were confirmed.

It does not appear that there was here any lack of means for enforcing obedience to the laws; for, at a Court of Sessions, held at Flatbush November 8th, 1692, the following regulation was promulgated:

"The Courte doe order that there be a good pare of stocks and a good pound made in every town within Kings County, and to be always kept in sufficient repairs, and that there be warrants issued to the Constables of every towne to see the order of the Court performed, as they will answer the contrary at their perill."

The town of Breuckelen had, in 1670, acquired a large amount of common land by purchase from the Indians, and it was deemed expedient by the inhabitants to adopt measures for the proper division of their common lands with their other common lands.

Accordingly, "at a Town meeting held the 25th day of February, 1692-3, att Breucklyn, in Kings County. Then Resolved to divide their common land and woods into three parts, in manner following to wit:

"1. All the lands and woods after Bedford and Cripplebush, over the hills to the path of New lotts shall belong to the inhabitants and freeholders of the Gowanis, beginning from Jacob Brewer and soe to the uttermost bounds of the limits of New-Utrecht.

"2. And all the lands and woods that lyes betwixt the abovesaid path and the highway from the ferry toward Flatbush, shall belong to the freeholders and the inhabitants of Bedford and Cripplebush.

"3. And all the lands that lyes in common after the Gowanis, betwixt the limits and bounds of Flatbush and New Utrecht shall belong to the freeholders and inhabitants of Brooklyn, fred. neck [Frederick Lubbertsen's Neck], the ferry and the Wallabout."

From the meagre records of those times it appears that in 1693, and a few subsequent years, there were some disturbances, probably from political causes not now well understood.

An *emeute* of the disaffected people of Kings County occurred about 8 o'clock in the evening of the 14th of September, 1697 (or 6?), when John Rapalje, Isaac Remsen, Jooris Vannesten, Joras Danielse Rapalje, Jacob Reyerse, Aert Aertsen, Theunis Bujs, Garret Cowenhoven, Gabriel Sprong, Urian Andriese, John Willemse Bennett, Jacob Bennett and John

Meserole, Jr.—most of whom will be recognized as inhabitants of Breuckelen and Boswyck—"met, armed, at the court-house of Kings, where they destroyed and defaced the king's arms which were hanging up there."

November 11th, 1697, negroes were forbidden to be brought over from New York on the Sabbath, without tickets or passes. Similar legislation was made in the succeeding years, negroes being forbidden to "run about on the Sabbath," or to purchase liquors. It was further "ordered that no people shall pass on the Sabbath day, unless it be to or from church, or other urgent and lawful occasions, according to act of assembly, upon penalty aforesaid of fine and imprisonment."

"At a towne meeting held this twentieth day of April, 1697, at Bedford, within the jurisdiction of Broockland, in Kings County, upon the Island of Nassau, Resolved by all the freeholders of the towne of Broockland aforesaid, that all their common laud not yet laid out and divided, belonging to their whole patent, shall be equally divided and laid out to each freeholder of said towne, his just proporcon in all the common lands abovesaid, except those that have hut an house and home lott, which are only to have but half share of the lands aforesaid."

By reason of the loss of all the town and county records from the year 1700 to the close of the Revolution, but little material for a history of Brooklyn during that period can be found. Provincial records, stray deeds and documents, newspapers, letters, etc., furnish the only data for such history.

Two bitter controversies agitated the public mind during that period: the first between this town (together with Flatbush and Bushwick) and Newtown, concerning their respective bounds, which ended only in 1769; and the second, between this town and the city of New York, relative to town and ferry rights.

In the year 1703, "Brookland's improveable lands and meadows, within fence," were surveyed, and found to amount to 5,177 acres, the greatest landowner being Simon Aerson, who owned 200 acres.

On the 28th of March, 1704, the main road or "king's highway," now called *Fulton street* and *Fulton avenue*, was laid out by Joseph Hegeman, Peter Cortelyou, and Benjamin Vandewater, commissioners, appointed by act of the General Assembly of the Colony of New York, for the laying out, regulating, clearing and preserving of public highways in the colony. The record of this road, which now forms the chief thoroughfare of the city of Brooklyn, is as follows:

"One publique, common and general highway, to begin ffrom *low water marke* at the ferry in the township of Broockland, in Kings County, and ffrom thence to run ffour rod wide up between the houses and lands of John Aerson, John Coe, and George Jacobs, and soe all along to Broockland towne aforesaid, through the lane that now is, and ffrom thence straight along a certaine lane to the southward corner of John Van Couwenhoven's land, and ffrom thence straight to Bedford as it is now staked out, to the lane where the house of Benjamin Vandewater stands, and ffrom thence straight along through Bedford towne to Bedford

lane, running between the lands of John Garretse, Dorlant and Claes Barnse, to the rear of the lands of the said Cloyse, and from thence southerly to the old path now in use, and soe all along said path to Philip Volkertses land, taking in a little slip of said Philip's land on the south corner, soe all along said road by Isaack Greg's house to the Fflackbush new lotts ffence, and soe all along said ffense to the eastward, to the northeast corner of Eldert Lucas's land, lying within the New lotts of Fflattbush aforesaid, being ffour rod wide all along, to be and continue forever."

In 1706 there were 64 freeholders in the town of Brooklyn, and the personal estates were assessed at £3,122, 10s. In 1707 the real and personal estates were assessed at £3,091, 11s.

In 1721 several people were indicted for encroachments on the "King's highway" (now Fulton street and avenue). Some of these parties procured the passage by the Colonial Legislature of a law to establish the road "forever" as it then was, from the ferry upwards to the town of Breuckland, as far as the swinging-gate of John Rapalje, just above the house and land belonging to James Harding. Providing, however, against a possible "jam" near the ferry—although, perhaps, scarcely anticipating the great thoroughfare which now exists at that locality—the law enacts that, if a majority of the inhabitants of the town should "*adjudge that part of the road near to the ferry* to be too narrow and inconvenient," they might cause the Sheriff to summon a jury of twelve, to appraise the land necessary to be taken in the widening, and that said appraisement should be levied and collected upon the town and paid to the owners. This, however, was never done, and the old lane continued to serve the economical townsfolk of Brooklyn. Its appearance may be understood by a glance at Guy's picture of Brooklyn, which represents it at its passage at Front street, but so narrow as hardly to lead one to suppose that it was a street. The "swinging-gate" here referred to was on the east side of the present Fulton street, about where Sands street now enters, and there commenced the four-foot road. On Ratzer's map, prepared in 1766-7, this road is laid down, with the buildings thereon, showing conclusively that it was then the same as Fulton street before the widening in 1839.

1732, March 27. The *New York Gazette* contained an advertisement by Edward Willet, offering to sell, on reasonable terms, a very good negro woman, aged twenty-seven, with two fine children. She was described as understanding all sorts of business in city or country, and speaking very good English and Dutch.

The following shows Brooklyn's population in 1738, as compared with the other towns in Kings County: Flatlands, 268; Gravesend, 235; *Brookland*, 721; Flatbush, 540; New Utrecht, 282; Bushwick, 302; total in Kings County, 2,348.

The General Assembly of the Province met at the

house of the Widow Sickie, in this town, in consequence of the prevalence of the small-pox in the city of New York, and continued sitting at Brooklyn, by several adjournments, until the 8th day of October.

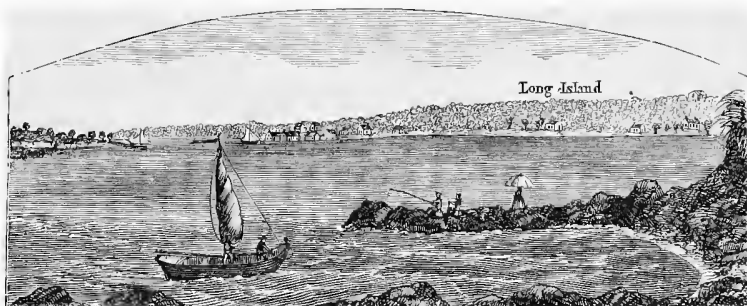
1752. The Colonial Legislature, during the prevalence of the small-pox in New York, held their sessions at Brooklyn in a large building on the west side of Fulton street, just below Nassau. This very ancient edifice was constructed of small brick, said to have been brought from Holland, and was demolished in 1832. At this house, also, on the 4th of June, 1752, 2,541 bills of credit issued by the colony of New York, and amounting to £3,602, 18s. 3d., were cancelled by the Colonial Commissioners. The building was further honored by being made Gen. Putnam's headquarters during the stay of the American Army on Long Island, in 1776.

1758. This year the sum of £122 18s. 7d. was assessed in two assessments, by the Justices of the Peace on this town, towards building "a new court-house and gaol" for Kings County. The whole amount assessed on the county was £448 4s. 1d.

1759, Nov. 26. "On Sunday week last past, a large bear passed the house of Mr. Sebring, Brooklyn, and took the water at Red Hook, attempting to swim across the bay, when Cornelius Sebring and his miller immediately pushed off in a boat after him. The latter fired and missed, on which Mr. S. let fly, and sent the ball in at the back of his head, which came out of his eye, and killed him outright." —*N. Y. Gazette*.

Of course slavery existed in Brooklyn, as in other parts of Long Island. In 1764 Aris Remsen offered a reward of seventy shillings for the apprehension of a runaway negro named Harry. He stated "He is apt to get drunk and stutters. He speaks good English, French, and Spanish, and a little of other languages."

In 1771 Mr. Remsen offered a reward of 20s. for another runaway "negro man, Newport, Guinea born, and branded on the breast with three letters."



View of Brookland, 1766-7. From Ratzer's Map.

In 1768, the house of widow Rapelye, at Brooklyn Ferry, was robbed of money and other valuables. Speedy justice overtook the thief, "Garret Middagh's negro fellow, Cæsar," who was tried on the 1st of September following, convicted, and executed on the 15th of the same month, at Flatbush, the county town.

1774, Feb. 21. "A Ferry is now established from the Coenties Market, New York, to the landing place of P. Living-

ston, Esq., and Henry Remsen, on Long Island, and another from Fly Market, and a third from Peck Slip to the present ferry-house at Brooklyn."—*N. Y. Mercury*.

The "landing place of P. Livingston, Esq., and Henry Remsen," was near the foot of the present Joralemon street. The ferry was called "St. George's Ferry," but was discontinued in 1776, and the ferry-house, together with Livingston's distillery, was burned after the war.

1774, May 9. John Cornell announces, in the *N. Y. Mercury*, that he "has opened a tavern on Tower Hill, Brooklyn, near the new ferry, called 'St. George's.' Companies will be entertained if they bring their own liquor, and may dress turtle, etc., at the said house on the very lowest terms." And, in August following, he advertised that "there will be a *bull baited* on Tower Hill, at three o'clock in the afternoon, every Thursday during the season." "Tower Hill" was a slight eminence on the Heights, on the site of the old "Colonnade Row," on Columbia, between Middagh and Cranberry streets.

Brooklyn during the British Military Occupation, 1776-1783. Of the Battle of Brooklyn, and the subsequent occupation of Long Island, and Kings County in particular, we have already spoken in the *General History of the County*.

We now proceed to relate some of the incidents of that military occupation which most specially relate to the Town of Brooklyn.

At this period, and during the war, the whole of the land embraced between the brow of the Heights on the river and the present Fulton and Joralemon streets, was then under high cultivation. That portion of it nearest to Fulton street was used for pasturage, or was kept, at times, in grain. The middle part was almost entirely occupied by fine and thrifty orchards; and the lower portion by gardens, which furnished an abundant supply of small fruit and vegetables to the New York markets. This tract belonged to several owners, among whom were the Middaghs, Bamper, Colden, Debevoises, Remsens. On the Heights stood the mansion of Philip Livingston, Esq., afterwards known as the "Joralemon House," a large double frame-house, constructed in the very best manner, having costly carved marble mantels imported from Italy, and other furniture at that day unusual to American houses. During the occupation of the island it was used as an hospital for the British

navy; probably as a justifiable retaliation upon its owner, who was a prominent member of the Continental Congress. Attached to the house was an extensive garden, said to be the finest in this part of America, and which—to their credit be it said—was kept in good repair by the physicians and officers of the hospital, who appropriated the mansion-house to their own use; sheds and huts being erected for the sick on the farm (formerly known as the Ralph Patchen property), on the southerly side of the present Atlantic street. In 1780-81, when Admiral Arbuthnot assumed the command of this station, he instituted various reforms, among which was the turning out of the surgeons and physicians from their comfortable quarters in the mansion-house, which was forthwith appropriated to the use of sick sailors. The principal disease among the sick was the scurvy, and they were buried from these hospitals, in the neighboring ground, and that (afterwards) of Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, to the number of twelve and fifteen a day. For many years afterwards, their remains were, from time to time, disinterred by the caving down of the brow of the hill all along the shore.

FURMAN'S MSS. state that the old house (afterwards of Selah Strong, Esq.) which stood in present Strong Place, just behind Christ Church, was built and inhabited by an English Colonel Thornely, at the desire of the Cornells, with whom he had become quite intimate during the Revolution, and who sold him the land on which it



THE CORNELL-PIERREPONT MANSION. (River Front.)

was erected. These Cornells were among the most respectable citizens of old Brooklyn, "all staunch King and Church men."

The fine old house known as the "Four Chimnies," afterwards as the *Pierrepont mansion*, was erected, as is supposed, by a John Cornell. On the wharf, at foot of present Joralemon street, was a brewery, belonging to Livingston, which, during the war, was employed by the British as a "King's Brewery," where they made spruce-beer for the use of the hospitals and fleet on this station. The old people used to call it the best beer that they ever tasted, and said that the hospitals used at the rate of twenty barrels a day for their sick. These patients also had the best of medical attention, with abundant supplies of vegetables and excellent soups, and, when they became convalescent, were allowed to roam about the country, in order to breathe the fresh, pure air, and obtain exercise.

On the edge of the Heights, between the present Orange and Clark streets, was a half-moon fort, garrisoned by Hessian troops, and having a battery of cannon overlooking the harbor. There were then no houses on the Heights, between present Doughty and Clark streets. The first house, a two-story frame edifice south of Clark street, was the residence of Mr. Lodewyck Bamber, an elderly gentleman of fortune, who was supposed to have retired from the Holland trade. He was largely interested in the establishment of a glass factory, on almost the identical spot lately occupied by the glass-works on State street. The first bottle ever made at this factory, having blown on it a seal bearing the name of Mr. Bamber and the date 1754, is still preserved among the curiosities of the Long Island Historical Society. The factory, however, did not have a long career, on account of an insufficient supply of the necessary kind of sand. He had a beautiful garden, and a choice collection of fruit; seldom left his house, and in pleasant weather passed most of his time upon his piazza, which fronted the harbor, or in his garden. He usually dressed with silk breeches, a silk loose-gown, a silk cap upon his head, and carried a gold-headed cane. His residence was then a most retired spot, having no immediate neighbors, except the "Old Stone House," at that time belonging to Gov. Cadwallader Colden, and afterwards owned by Samuel Jackson, Esq. This house, on Doughty street, fronting on Elizabeth street, was occupied by the Hessian troops as a guard-house and prison, and was the place where all persons arrested in the vicinity were detained—the whole island being at that time under a strict military police. It was a long, one-and-a-half-story building, of stone and brick, with a fine large garden in the rear, and was afterwards the residence of Mr. George Hicks. Past this old stone house ran a private lane or foot-path, from Love Lane (which then led from Fulton street to the edge of the hill) along the brow of the hill, and descending its side to a landing on present Furman, near Clark street.

During the war, the British Wagon Department for the army on this station, was located in Brooklyn, occupying an immense yard, with sheds, stables, blacksmith's forges, etc., and extending from the present Main to Jay streets, and west of Prospect street, which was fenced in, the main gateway being near the present junction of Main and Fulton streets. Joseph Fox, an Englishman, and an old and respected citizen of Brooklyn, was for many years one of the principals of this wagon department.

At the foot of, and on the northerly side of, the old road (now Fulton st., near corner of Front), was the "Ferry Tavern," a large and gloomy stone building, about sixty feet square and two stories high, standing in such a way cornerwise, as to leave only $35\frac{1}{2}$ feet for the entire width of the street between it and the houses opposite. From its being owned by the Corporation of

the city of New York, it was known as the "Corporation House;" also, from some incident connected with hoisting a coffin on the flag-staff of the building, called "The Coffin House." It was the successor of the ferry-house, erected in 1746, by the Corporation of the city of New York, on land purchased of Jacob Morris, in 1694; and which was burned down in 1748, as it was supposed, by the Brooklyuites, who were then carrying on a long and bitter litigation with the corporation concerning ferry-rights. Its site is now



REFERENCES.

1. The "Corporation House," or "Ferry Tavern," occupied during the Revolutionary war by Messrs. Loosely and Elms, as the "King's Head Tavern."
2. John Rapelje's house, with garden extending to the river.
3. The "Old Stone Tavern," kept by Benjamin Smith.
4. Mr. Cary Ludlow's house.
5. The Hicks Mansion.
6. The Middagh Mansion.
7. The Middagh barn.
8. The "Whalebone Gate," so called from its being arched over with a whale's rib-bone. It opened at the side of Mr. Thomas Everit's house, into a lane leading up to Mr. Cary Ludlow's house.

(1883) partially occupied by Nos. 19, 21 and 23 Fulton street. At the time of the Revolution, the East River, at high-water mark, came nearly up to Front street. Subsequently to the war, this tavern was kept by Benjamin Smith for many years. It was burned down in 1812 (its walls remaining for many years thereafter), and Mr. Smith removed his stand to a stone building on the opposite side

of Fulton street. It had been noted as a tavern for thirty years previous to the Revolution. Its last incumbent, before the Battle of Brooklyn, was Captain Adolph Waldron, who was also "the ferrymaster." Espousing the cause of the Rebellion, and being active as the commandant of a company of light-horse raised in Brooklyn, he was, of course, compelled to absent himself from Long Island during its occupation by the British. Waldron was succeeded by Charles Loosely and Thomas Elms, thorough loyalists, who named the old tavern "The King's Head," fitted it up in the most complete manner* and catered to the tastes of their military friends and patrons so well that it was much resorted to, during the war, by the officers of the British army and the fashionables of the day, as a place of amusement. Lieutenant Anbury, in a letter to a friend in England, dated New York, Oct. 30th, 1781, refers to it thus: "On crossing the East River from New York, you land at Brooklyn, which is a scattered village, consisting of a few houses. At this place is an excellent tavern, where parties are made to go and eat fish; the landlord of which has saved an immense fortune during this war." We shall have frequent occasion to refer to this head-quarters of royalists and Tories, which subsequently seems to have been known by the name of "Brooklyn Hall." Just off from this old road, on present westerly side of Front street, near Fulton, was the large stone house owned by John Rapalje, the Tory, which was confiscated after the Revolution, and afterwards sold by the Commissioners to Comfort and Joshua Sands, and by them to Abm. Remsen.

1777, September 26th. The loyalists had the pleasure of welcoming Rivington the printer, on his return from England, whither he had been obliged to flee to escape the wrath of the Americans. On this occasion Loosely and Elms' "King's Head Tavern" was "elegantly illuminated, to testify the joy of the true 'Sons of Freedom.'"

1778. During this year, from July to November, and probably through the winter, the following regiments were encamped at or near Bedford, the 37th, 42d, 44th, 46th, and 16th light infantry; between Bedford and Bushwick, the first battalion light infantry; and at Brooklyn ferry, the New York volunteers.

* It is probable that these gentlemen kept hotel "not wisely, but too well" for their own pockets, at least; for, soon after the signing of the Provisional Treaty of Peace, in November, 1782, we find a notice of a "Public Auction of Brooklyn Hall," for "the benefit of the creditors of Charles Loosely," of "all the genuine household furniture, consisting of mahogany and other bedsteads, feather beds and mattresses, chintz and other curtains, blankets, sheets, etc.; mahogany drawers, dining, tea and card tables; an elegant clock in mahogany case; a curious collection of well-chosen paintings and pictures; large pier and other looking-glasses, in gilt and plain frames; table and tea sets of china, plate, etc.; a capital, well-toned organ, made by one of the first hands in London; a billiard table in thorough repair; near twenty globe lamps, fit for hall or passage, etc.; wagons, horses, cows, etc.; two tenements adjoining the house; a flag-staff, with ensigns, pendants; and several hundred transparent and tin lamps, fit for illumination;" landlord Loosely having been profuse of illuminations on every possible occasion.

A correspondent of *Rivington's Gazette*, of January 24th, 1778, gives the following account of the manner in which the Queen's Birthday was observed, by the New York loyalists, at their favorite resort in Brooklyn:

"As the loyalty even of individuals ought, at this time, to be properly encouraged, you will infinitely oblige the public and a number of your readers, by inserting a description of the grand and elegant illumination at the King's Head Tavern, on last evening, in honor of her Majesty's birthday; and it is the desire of the public, as Messrs. Loosely and Elms have ever shown their attachment to the British Government, and a detestation of the present rebellion, that, through the channel of your much-esteemed paper, their conduct may be known and approved of in Europe, as well as by the loyalists in New York. The tavern was illuminated with upwards of two hundred wax-lights. In the centre were the royal arms of Great Britain, and above it, statues of the present king and queen, under a canopy of state elegantly decorated, which shone, like their majesties' virtues, conspicuous to the world. The view of the reduction of Mud Fort (on one side) by his majesty's ships, Roebuck and Vigilant, gave that joy which Britons always feel on the success and honor of their country. On the other side, their generous indignation was roused by a view of those men (the Congress) whose ambition has almost ruined this unhappy country, and reduced its inhabitants to the greatest distress. It was very *apropos* of the painter to place the devil at the President's elbow, who tells him to persevere, with so significant a grin as seems to indicate his having no manner of doubt of their making his house their home in the infernal regions. The statue of Mr. Pitt, without its head, was placed near the Congress, as being one of their kidney, and gave a hint of what ought, long ago, to have been done. The verses over the tavern door were very proper on the occasion, and well illuminated. In short, every thing was well conducted, and the *tout ensemble* had really a fine effect. Much is due to Messrs. Loosely and Elms for their patriotic spirit, which meets the approbation of every man who is a friend to his king and country."

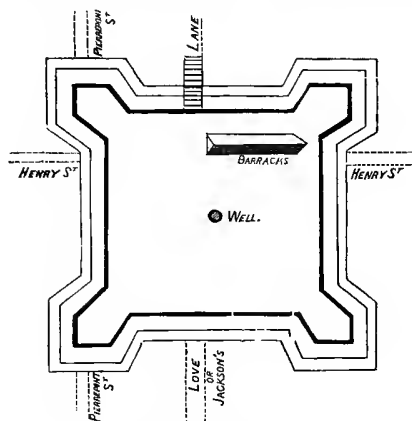
1779. In February of this year, the 33d Regiment light infantry (300), and 2d battalion Highlanders (750), were encamped at Bedford, and the 3d Prince Hereditary (350), and 4th Charles (300), at Brooklyn. *Gain's Mercury*, September 27th, advertises "a cricket match for fifty guineas, to be played this day at Loosely and Elms, 10 a. m."

1780. In May, the newly-appointed Governor Robertson writes to the Home Government that "a large square fort is built on Brooklyn Heights; the season is late; not a blade of grass. The people within the lines begin to repair and build houses, and manure and inclose lands." The fort here referred to was probably the one erected at the junction of Pierrepont and Henry streets, by far the most thoroughly constructed and complete fortification erected by the British during their stay on Long Island. The position was a very commanding one, and the extremely level nature of the

† We learn from Mr. Henry E. Pierrepont, of Brooklyn, that, according to careful survey made for him in 1838, by Alfred Craven, the well-known engineer of the Erie railroad, and afterwards the head of the Croton Water Board, the site of this fort was found to be three feet one inch higher than the level of the land in Washington, near Concord streets, making it the highest, and therefore the most suitable position for such a fortification in that part of the town.

ground rendered the work one of great labor. Two or three thousand British soldiers engaged upon these works at the same time, in digging trenches, and wheeling earth in barrows, to form the walls; in addition to which, all the inhabitants on the island were assessed according to their respective counties for a certain number of days' work.

This fort was 150 feet square, with ramparts rising above the bottom of the surrounding ditch, itself twenty



FROM FURMAN'S MSS.

feet in depth. At the angles of the fort were bastions, on each of which was planted a button-wood tree which grew to a very large size. In front of the fort, on the line of present Fulton, between Pierrepont and Clark streets, stood a row of army-sutlers' huts. The fort was not completed in July, 1781, at which time it had only 18 cannon mounted.

Guine's Mercury, of July 2, 1780, contains the following advertisement, issued by Loosely & Elms: "Pro bono Publico: Thursday next, bull-baiting at Brooklyn ferry. The bull is remarkably strong and active; the best dogs in the county expected, and they that afford the best diversion will be rewarded with silver collars." Such were the elegant and refined amusements with which the aristocracy of the British army whiled away their leisure!

A few days later, July 17th, a fulsome congratulatory address was presented to Gov. Robertson, on the occasion of his accession, in behalf and at the request of the inhabitants of Kings County, signed by Wm. Axtell, Rutger Van Brunt, Richard Stillwell, Jeromus Lott, Ab. Luquere, M. Couwenhoven, Rem Couwenhoven, Maj. Jeromus V. D. Belt, Adrian Van Brunt, Leffert Lefferts, and Jonannes Bergen.

About this time the 43d Regiment were encamped near Brooklyn.

This year was a lively one for the troops quartered here, if we may judge from the following advertisements:

"PRO BONO PUBLICO.—Saturday next being the birthday of His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales, Loosely, agreeable to an honest old custom, wishes to see his royal and constitutional friends—dinner at 3. The evening to conclude

with fireworks and illuminations. A good band of music. REBELS approach no nearer than the heights of Brooklyn."—*Rivington*, Aug. 9, '80.

"Anniversary of the Coronation of our ever good and gracious King, will be celebrated at Loosely's, 22d inst. It is expected that no rebel will approach nearer than Flatbush wood."—*Rivington*, Sept. 20, 1780.

"BY PERMISSION—THREE DAYS' SPORT ON ASCOT HEATH. FORMERLY FLATLANDS PLAIN.—*Monday*, 1. The Nobleman's and Gentleman's Purse of £60, free for any horse except Mr. Wortman's and Mr. Allen's Dulcimore, who won the plate at Beaver Pond last season. 2. A saddle, bridle and whip, worth £15, ponies not exceeding 13½ hands: *Tuesday*, 1. Ladies' subscription purse of £50. 2. To be run for by women, a Holland smock and chintz gown, full-trimmed, to run the best two in 3, quarter-mile heats; the first to have the smock and gown of 4 guineas value, the second a guinea, the third a half-guinea: *Wednesday*. County subscription purse of £50. No person will erect a booth or sell liquor, without subscribing two guineas towards the expense of the race. Gentlemen fond of fox-hunting will meet at Loosely's King's Head Tavern at daybreak during the races.

"God Save the King" played every hour."—*Rivington*, Nov. 4, 1780.

A jockey or racing club was formed in the year 1780, within the British lines. Bryant Connor, of New York, was Chief Jockey. *Flatland Plain*, then called "Ascot Heath," was then a beautiful open plain, well adapted for racing or parades. Public races were held here until October, 1783. The British officers, with the refugees and Tories, ruled the course. The American officers, then prisoners in Kings County, attended these races, and were frequently insulted by the loyalists, which gave rise to frequent fracas. Wherever a fine horse was known to be owned by any American farmer in the county, the refugee horse-thieves would soon put him into the hands of the jockeys, and the course was thus kept well supplied. General Johnson saw a New Jersey farmer claim a horse on Ascot Heath, in October, 1783, which had been purchased by Mr. John Cornell, of Brooklyn, from a refugee, and entered for the race. The owner permitted the horse to run the race; after which, Mr. Cornell surrendered the animal to the owner in a gentlemanly manner. Whether he ever found the thief afterwards is uncertain.

In the early autumn of this year, Lt. Gen. Riedesel was appointed by Gen. Clinton to the command of Brooklyn, a mark of especial confidence; as Long Island, then the great depot of supplies for the British Army in New York, was occupied by the best English troops, but few of the German mercenaries being garrisoned there. Although the British were usually averse to the authority of any of the foreign generals, yet so great was the reputation of this amiable and talented soldier that all, and especially the officers, vied with each other in manifesting their own good-will, as well as their appreciation of his merits. His headquarters were in a small house on the shore, where, early in the spring of 1781, he was joined by his wife and family. His

domestic comfort, however, was much disturbed by his apprehensions of capture by the Americans, who were always on the alert; and to whom the peculiar nature of the country, with its bays, creeks, and inlets, afforded many chances of success. So careful was he, "that he slept only while his wife was awake; the least noise brought him out of his bed." He had sentinels in and about his house, but never trusted entirely to their watchfulness. The detail of guard-service had been much neglected by the English officers previously in command, but Riedesel instituted very thorough and wholesome reforms in this respect.

On the 22d of July, 1781, the general, with his family and attendants, embarked for Canada.

During the winter of 1780-81, the East River was frozen solid, from the Brooklyn shore half-way across, and on the edge of the ice, near the centre of the river, hundreds of cords of wood were piled for the use of the English army. The Long Island farmers, bringing produce to the city, drove on the ice to the middle of the river, where they placed their loads on board the ferry-boats. The English feared lest the Americans should take advantage of the ice to attack New York. The Americans, however, transported some troops and cannon on the ice from New Jersey to Staten Island.—FURMAN MSS.

1781, "*Pro Bono Publico*.—By permission, four days sport, on Easter Monday, on Ascot Heath. Purses of £50, £50, £100, £100."—*Rivington*, Feb. 12.

"*Grand Races at Ascot Heath* postponed until June 6, on account of the King's birthday: on which occasion it is expected that every true subject will so strain his nerves in rejoicing, as to prevent this amusement being agreeable before that time. A hurling match on the ground, June 5, when those who have a curiosity to play (or see) that ancient diversion, will get hurls and bats at the Irish Flag.—*Gaine*, May 30, '81.

"To all who know it not, be it understood
Pro bono publico means mankind's good."

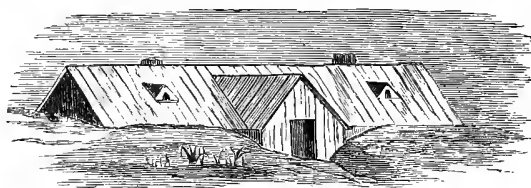
"This day, being Wednesday, the 20th of June, will be exhibited, at Brooklyn Ferry, a bull-baiting after the true English manner. Taurus will be brought to the ring at half-past three o'clock; some good dogs are already provided, but every assistance of that sort will be esteemed a favor. A dinner exactly British will be upon Loosely's table at eleven o'clock, after which there is no doubt but that the song of 'Oh! the Roast Beef of Old England!' will be sung with harmony and glee.

"This notice gives to all who covet
Baiting the bull and dearly love it,
To-morrow's very afternoon,
At three—or rather not so soon—
A bull of magnitude and spirit
Will dare the dog's presuming merit.
Taurus is steel to the back-bone,
And canine cunning does disown;
True British blood runs through his v ins
And barking numbers he disdains.
Sooner than knavish dogs shall rule,
He'll prove himself a true JOHN BULL."

At this time (July 8) Brooklyn Fort, although yet imperfect, having but eighteen cannon mounted, had two bomb-proof magazines and a garrison of two hun-

dred Brunswickers. "Cobble Hill," also in process of repair, was occupied by two companies. The 54th Regiment were encamped at "Ferry Hill," two miles from Brooklyn, and at Bedford were two hundred grenadiers.

The stationary camp at Bedford was located on broken ground, then on the farm of Barent Lefferts, now crossed by Franklin and Classon avenues, Bergen, Wykoff, Warren, Baltic and Butler streets. The huts or barracks were built by throwing out the earth from a trench thirty to fifty feet long and about twelve or fifteen feet wide, with a board roof resting on the bank formed by the excavated earth. A large stone fire-place, or two, were arranged in each one. These huts were irregularly scattered, according to the slope of the ground, so as to have the entrance at the middle of the lower side. The officers were located outside of this



VIEW ON LOWER SIDE.

camp, in the adjacent woods, wherever convenient and pleasant spots tempted them to pitch their tents. Head-quarters were at the Leffert Lefferts house (corner of Fulton avenue and Clove road). See right-hand corner view of Bedford Corners on opposite page. Major John Andre was quartered at this house when called to New York on the interview with Gen. Clinton, which resulted in his being sent up the North River on the mission which terminated in his capture and execution as a spy.

In the *Royal Gazette* of August 8th, 1781, published at New York, Charles Loosely advertises a lottery of \$12,500 to be drawn at "Brooklyn Hall." The same paper contains the following advertisement: "*PRO BONO PUBLICO*.—Gentlemen that are fond of fox hunting are requested to meet at Loosely's Tavern, on Ascot Heath, on Friday morning next, between the hours of five and six, as a pack of hounds will be there purposely for a trial of their abilities. Breakfasting and Relishes until the Races commence. At eleven o'clock will be run for, an elegant saddle, etc., value at least twenty pounds, for which upwards of twelve gentlemen will ride their own horses. At twelve a match will be rode by two gentlemen, Horse for Horse. At one, a match for thirty guineas, by two gentlemen, who will also ride their own horses. Dinner will be ready at two o'clock, after which and suitable regalements, racing and other diversions will be calculated to conclude the day with pleasure and harmony. Brooklyn Hall, August, 1781."

"B. Creed's Jamaica and Brooklyn Hall Stage Machine, 6s. a passage; not answerable for money, plate, and jewels, unless entered and paid for."—*Rivington*, March, 1781.

And again: "Brooklyn Hunt.—The hounds will throw off at Denyse Ferry at 9, Thursday morning. A guinea or more will be given for a good, strong bag fox by Charles Loosely."—*Riv.*, Nov. 14, '81.



BEDFORD CORNERS, IN 1776.

The Anhalt Zerbet Regiment were at this time stationed at Brooklyn.

"A sweepstakes of 300 guineas was won by Jacob Jackson's mare, Slow and Easy, over Mercury and Goldfinder, on Ascot Heath. The two beaten horses are to run for 100 guineas a side, on Wednesday next, on the same ground."—*Rivington*, April 27, '82.

"May 3, on Monday se'nnight the enemy (British) began to break ground to cut a canal on L. I., to run from the Wallabout to the Pond, taking in Cobble Hill Fort. The length of the trench is $2\frac{1}{4}$ miles. The militia are called out in rotation one day in a week, none above 15 being excused from labor."—*Conn. Current*, May 7, '82.

This "canal" is more accurately described by General Jeremiah Johnson as a strong line of intrenchment, extending from the hill of Rem. A. Remsen along the the high lands of John Rapelje, crossing Sands street near Jay street, and thence over the highest land in Washington street, between Concord and Nassau streets, across the Jamaica Road (Fulton street) to the large fort, already described, on the corner of Henry and Pierrepont streets.

June 3d. "The lines drawn between Brooklyn Church and the Ferry, by Clinton, are not likely to be completed by Carlton. They are carting fascines now. On Long Island are now about 3,500 men."

As we have already seen, the enterprising landlord of "King's Head" tavern was not insensible to the advantages of advertising; and this summer, by way of tickling the humors of his patrons, and, perhaps, of aiding a lottery enterprise which he had in hand, he issued

a newspaper. This, the first paper ever issued in Brooklyn, was printed upon a dingy sheet about the ordinary "letter size" now in use, and contained three columns of "close matter," printed on one side of the sheet only. It was named (with Loosely's usual preface, "*Pro bono Publico*"), "*THE BROOKLYN-HALL SUPER-EXTRA GAZETTE*," dated Saturday, June 8th, 1782, and its contents may be characterized as displaying more loyalty and "heavy wit" than literary merit. A copy of this sheet, the only one known to be in existence, can be seen at the Naval Lyceum, in the U. S. Navy Yard, in this city, and was republished in *Stiles' History of Brooklyn*.

"Baron de Walzogen, Capt. Commandant of the combined detachment of Brunswick and Hessian Hanau troops, now at Brooklyn camp, received an address from the inhabitants of New Utrecht, thanking him for the vigilant care, good order, and discipline prevailing among the officers and soldiers under his command at the Narrows, etc."—*Gaine*, Aug. 6, '82.

The crops, at this time, were indifferent in many parts of the country. It was a very dry summer on Long Island.

In December of this year there were stationed at Brooklyn, Hackenbergh's regiment of Hessians, in the large fort back of the Ferry, and in the redoubts a number. At Bedford, also, the garrison battalion of invalids, about one hundred in number, of whom a half were officers, was quartered at the houses of the different inhabitants.

The state of things had changed. No longer did the newspapers teem with festive advertisements and loyalist literature. The war was virtually ended by the Provisional Treaty of Peace, signed November 30, 1782, and the British were about to leave the land where, for nearly seven years, their presence had rested like a hideous nightmare upon the people whom they sought to subdue. The sound of preparation for departure was everywhere heard, and the papers (significant indices of every passing breeze of popular events) were now occupied with advertisements such as the following :

"At auction at the King's Naval Brewery, L. I., 60 or 70 tons of iron-hoops, and 70,000 dry and provision-casks, staves, and heading, in lots of 10,000."—*Rivington*, May 26, '83.

"Auction at Flatbush.—THE WALDECK STORES, viz. : soldiers' shirts; blue, white, and yellow cloth; thread-stockings, shoe-soles, heel-taps, etc., etc."—*Rivington*, July 2, '83.

"Saddle-horses, wagons, carts, harness, etc., at auction every Wednesday, at the wagon-yard, Brooklyn."—*Gaine*, Sept. 8, '83.

"King's draft and saddle horses, wagons, carts, and harness for sale at the wagon-yard, Brooklyn."—*Rivington*, August 27, '83.

Desertions also became frequent among the Hessians, who preferred to remain in this country. Tunis Bennet of Brooklyn was imprisoned in the Provost for carrying Hessian deserters over to the Jersey shore.

At length, after protracted negotiations, a Definite Treaty of Peace was signed at Paris, between the American and British commissioners, on the 3d of September, 1784. And on the 25th of November following, Brooklyn and the city of New York were formally evacuated by the British troops and refugees.

STILES says: "Brooklyn, which, during the war, had been wholly military ground, presented a sadder scene of desolation than any other town in Kings County. In 1786, after its occupation by the British, free range had been given to the pillaging propensities of the soldiery. Farms had been laid waste, and those belonging to exiled Whigs given to the Tory favorites of Governor Tryon. Woodlands were ruthlessly cut down for fuel, buildings were injured, fences removed, and boundaries effaced. Farmers were despoiled of their cattle, horses, swine, poultry, vegetables, and of almost every necessary article of subsistence, except their grain, which fortunately had been housed before the invasion. Their houses were also plundered of every article which the cupidity of lawless soldiery deemed worthy of possession, and much furniture was wantonly destroyed. At the close of this year's campaign, DeHeister, the Hessian general, returned to Europe with a ship-load of plundered property. During the next year (1777), the farmers had cultivated but little more than a bare sufficiency for their own subsistence, and even that was frequently stolen or destroyed. Stock became very scarce and dear, and the farmer of Brooklyn who owned a pair of horses and two or three cows, was "well off." The scarcity prevailing in the markets, however, soon rendered it necessary for the British commanders to restrain this system of indiscriminate marauding, and to encourage agriculture. After the capture of General Burgoyne's army, rebel prisoners were treated with more lenity; and in 1778, the towns of Flatbush, Gravesend, and New Utecht were set apart as a parole-ground, for the purpose of quartering American officers whom the fortunes of war had thrown upon their hands. In these towns, therefore, a greater de-

gree of peace and order prevailed; and the farmers had the twofold advantage of receiving high prices for their produce and pay for boarding the prisoners. Brooklyn, however, remained a garrison town until the peace, and many farms were not inclosed until after the evacuation, in 1783.

When, therefore, the inhabitants returned to their desolated and long-deserted homes, their first efforts were directed to the cultivation of their lands, the re-establishment of their farm boundaries, and the restoration of their private affairs. This being accomplished, their attention was next turned to reorganization of the town—whose records had been removed, and whose functions and privileges had been totally suspended during the seven years' military occupation by the British. On the first Tuesday of April, 1784, was held the first town-meeting since April, 1776. Jacob Sharpe, Esq., was chosen Town Clerk, and applied to Leffert Lefferts, Esq., the previous clerk, for the town records. Lefferts deposed, on oath, that they had been removed from his custody, during the war, by a person or persons to him unknown; and although that person was afterwards identified, the subsequent fate of the records themselves is, to this day, unknown.

These records and papers were taken to England by Rapalje, in October, 1776, and his lands were confiscated, and afterwards became the property of J. & C. Sands. After his death, the papers fell into the possession of his grand-daughter, who married William Weldon, of Norwich, County of Norfolk, England. William Weldon and his wife came to New York about the year 1810, to recover the estates of John Rapalje, and employed D. B. Ogden and Aaron Burr as counsel, who advised them that the Act of Attainder, passed by the Legislature against Rapalje and others, barred their claim. Weldon and his wife brought over with them the lost records of the town of Brooklyn, and offered them to the town for a large sum (according to some, \$10,000), but would not even allow them to be examined before delivery. Although a *writ of replevin* might easily have secured them to the town again, the apathetic Dutchmen of that day were too indifferent to the value of these records, and they were allowed to return to England.—(Ms. Note of Jeremiah Johnson.)

Gradually, under the benign influences of Liberty and Law, order emerged from chaos. The few lawless miscreants who remained were speedily restrained from their mischievous propensities by the whipping-post and imprisonment; angry passions subsided, and those citizens who had hitherto viewed each other as enemies became united.

A Military Execution at Brooklyn.—In the summer of 1782, three men, named Porter, Tench, and Parrot, members of the 54th Regiment, then encamped on the farm of Martin Schenck, at the Wallabout, were arrested and tried for their complicity in a foul murder committed on Bennet's Point, in Newtown, three years before. They were sentenced to be hung, but Parrot was pardoned and sent on board a man-of-war. The execution of Porter and Tench, notable as the only case of capital punishment for injuries done to citizens, was witnessed by the late General Jeremiah Johnson,

who thus describes the scene: "The gallows was the limb of a large chestnut-tree, on the farm of Martin Schenck. About 10 a. m., a brigade formed a hollow square around the tree; the culprits, dressed in white jackets and pantaloons, and firmly pinioned, were brought into the square, and halters, about eight feet long, were fastened to the limb, about four feet apart. Tench ascended the ladder first, followed by Cunningham's yellow hangman, who adjusted the halter, drew a cap over the culprit's face, and, then descending, turned him off the ladder. The like was done to Porter, who ascended the ladder by the side of his hanging companion, in an undaunted manner, and was turned towards him and struck against him. They boxed together thus several times, hanging in mid-air about ten feet from the ground, until they were dead. The field and staff officers were inside the square, and after the execution Cunningham reported to the commanding officer (said to be General Gray), who also appeared to treat him with contempt. The troops then left the ground, and the bodies were buried under the tree."

Military Punishments.—The British soldiers were punished by whipping or flogging with the "cat-o'-nine-tails," executed by the drummers. The regimental surgeons were obliged to attend the punishments, which were usually very severe—sometimes as many as five hundred lashes being given. Citizens were allowed to be present at these floggings, except at punishments of the 42d Highland Regiment, when only the other regiments were allowed to be witnesses. Punishments in this regiment were, however, infrequent. The dragoons were punished by picketing; the Germans by being made to run the gauntlet. On these occasions the regiment formed in two parallel lines, facing inwards; the culprit passed down between these lines, having an officer before and behind him, and was struck by each soldier with rods. An officer also passed down on the outside of each line, administering a heavy blow to any soldier who did not give the culprit a fair and good stroke. Hessians were also punished by the gauntlet, while the band played a tune set to the following words:

"Father and mother, do not mourn
Over your only son;
He never did you any good,
And now he gets his doom—doom—doom—doom."

The officers often treated their men cruelly. General Johnson remembered to have seen Captain Westerhauge and Lieutenant Conrady beat a corporal with their swords on his back, over his waiscoat, so that he died the next day. They beat the man about two in the afternoon. He was standing: the captain first gave him a number of blows, and then the lieutenant commenced; but before he had finished the man was too feeble to stand, and the captain stood before him and held him up. The man then laid down on the grass, while the surgeon's mate examined his body, which was a mass of bruised and blistered flesh. His back was roughly scarified by the surgeon's mate, and he was

then removed to a barn, where he died the next day—never having uttered a word from the moment of the first blow. Mrs. Peter Wyckoff, mother of Mr. Nicholas Wyckoff, President of the City Bank of Brooklyn, and a daughter of Lambert Suydam, a brave officer in the Continental Army, informed Dr. Stiles, in 1861, that she distinctly remembers, when a school-girl at Bedford, having seen British soldiers tied up to a tree, in front of the house of Judge Lefferts, and flogged.

Among the patriotic deeds of the adherents of the American cause in Kings County were the *loans of money furnished to the State Government* by them. It was effected in the following manner: Lieutenant Samuel Dodge and Captains Gilleland and Mott, of the American army, had been captured at Fort Montgomery, and were confined as prisoners, under a British guard, at the residence of Barent Johnson, in the Wallabout. Dodge was exchanged in the course of a month, and reported the practicability of borrowing specie from Whigs in Kings County, mentioning Johnson as one who would risk all in the undertaking. It was therefore agreed that *confidential* officers should be exchanged, who were to act as agents in these transactions. Colonel William Ellison was fixed upon to receive the loan. He was exchanged in November, 1777, and conveyed \$2,000 in gold to Governor Clinton, a simple receipt being given. In this manner, before 1782, large sums had been loaned to the State. In 1780, Major H. Wyckoff was hid for two days in the upper room of Rem. A. Remsen's house, in the Wallabout, while the lieutenant of the guard of the "Old Jersey" British prison-ship was quartered in the house. Remsen loaned him as much as he could carry, and conveyed him in a sleigh, at night, to Cow Neck, from whence he crossed to Poughkeepsie.

The patriotism of many of New York's bravest soldiers was poorly rewarded by the passage of a legislative act, May 6th, 1784, levying a tax of £100,000 upon the Southern District of the State, a portion of which could be paid in State scrip, which the soldier had received for his services, and had sold to speculators for from two to six pence per pound. The scrip, it is almost needless to say, immediately rose to the value of ten shillings on the pound, leaving a very handsome profit to the speculators, who had invested it largely in the purchase of confiscated estates.

Brooklyn from the close of the Revolution to the War of 1812. Brooklyn's share in the actual hostilities of the Revolutionary War has been already given in our chapter on the *General History of Kings County*. For the first few years succeeding the war, but little of interest occurred in the town. Its inhabitants doubtless found plenty to do in repairing the ravages which their property had suffered during a seven years' hostile occupation. Yet the spirit of improvement was astir; and, in 1785, the staid old Dutchmen who worshipped in the ancient

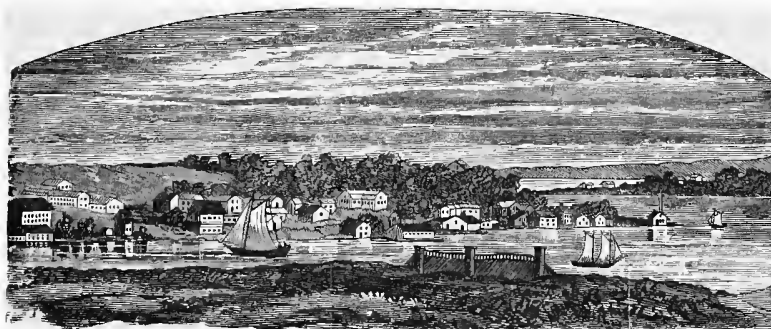
edifice in the middle of the road at "Brooklyn Church," as well as the few but loyal Episcopalians, who had set up their Ebenezer in John Middagh's barn, on the corner of Henry and Poplar streets, found a denominational rival in the little handful of stout-hearted "Independents," who erected a small place of worship on the ground now occupied by "St. Anne's Buildings," on Fulton street. In this year, also, were the beginnings of the "Brooklyn Fire Department."

Brooklyn was recognized as a *town* under the State government March 7th, 1788.

That the people were in favor of the preservation of order and the enforcement of the law, is evident from the fact that at a town meeting in April, 1794, it was "Resolved, that the Supervisors raise the sum of £10, 13s., 6d., which money has been expended for the purpose of building a *cage and stocks*."

The "New," or Catharine street, ferry, was established in the summer of 1795 by William Furman and Theodosius Hunt. A bell "for the use of the town of Brooklyn" was purchased at a cost of £49, 4s., which sum was raised by subscription. It was hung in a small cupola on the top of Buckbee's hay scales, which stood on the southerly side of Fulton street, close by "Buckbee's alley, now Poplar place, a crooked alley running from Poplar to Fulton street, between Henry and Hicks streets.

A theological school was established in the spring of 1796, at Bedford, by the Rev. Dr. John Henry Livingston of the Reformed Dutch Church. It had only a brief existence.



View of Brooklyn in 1798 (as seen from the North).

Rev. Jedediah Moore's "American Gazetteer," published in 1798, thus briefly disposes of Brooklyn: "A township in Kings County, N. Y., on the west end of Long Island, having 1,603 inhabitants, and 224 are electors, by the State census of 1796. There are a Presbyterian church, a Dutch Reformed church, a powder magazine, and some elegant houses, which lie chiefly on one street. East River, near a mile broad, separates the town from New York."

On the 6th of June, 1799, the "*Courier and New York and Long Island Advertiser*," the second paper ever published on Long Island, was commenced at Brooklyn, by Thomas Kirk. It was a small, dingy

sheet, purporting to be published "every Wednesday morning," and possessed little or nothing of interest to us of the present day.

1800. In an old scrap-book of this date, in the possession of the family of General JEREMIAH JOHNSON, is preserved what may be called *the first written history of Brooklyn*. It consists of newspaper slips, undoubtedly cut from the columns of Thomas Kirk's paper, "The Long Island Courier," to which are added numerous manuscript corrections, notes, and even whole pages of new matter, in the well-known handwriting of General Johnson, to whom it is probably not an error to attribute their authorship. That this careful arrangement and revision of these papers was made with a view to their republication in pamphlet form, is apparent from the fact that they are preceded by a title-page in Ms., "*A Topographical View of the Township of Brooklyn, in Kings County, State of New York* (motto), *Brooklyn: Printed by Thomas Kirk. 1800.*" The series consisted of about six papers, which form an interesting, though diffuse, *pot-pourri* of historical facts, speculations, etc., from which a few samples are selected.

"Kings County," says the author, "contains 4,495 inhabitants, including 621 electors; 930 of these are free white males, of ten and upwards; 700 free white males under that age; 1,449 free white females; 1,432 slaves, and 46 free persons not enumerated. The inhabitants are chiefly of Dutch extraction. Some are attached to their old prejudices; but, within a few years past, liberality and a taste for the fine arts have made considerable progress. The slaves are treated well, but the opinion relative to their freedom is yet too much influenced by pecuniary motives. It would certainly redound to the honor of humanity, could that blessing be effected here."

The town of Brooklyn at this period—and, indeed, until the incorporation of the *village* of Brooklyn—was divided, for ecclesiastical, school, and other purposes, into *seven* districts, retaining the same names which had descended from the "neighborhoods," or hamlets, of the earlier settlements, viz.: "The Ferry" (*het Veer*); the "Red Hook" (*de Roede Hoek*); "Brooklyn" (*Breuckelen*); "Bedford" (*Betfort*); "Gowanus" (*Goujanen* or *Gouanes*); "Cripplebush" (*het Creupelbosch*); and "the Wallabout" (*de Waal-boght*).

After defining the boundaries of the town, and enumerating these districts (See Stiles' *History of Brooklyn*, i, 381), he mentions:

"OLYMPIA," a tract of land which, he says, "was surveyed and laid out in streets as long ago as the year 1787, and then intended as a city; its progress has been arranged according to the plan, and begins to have the appearance of regularity. It lies to the east of Brooklyn Ferry, and is bounded by the Wallabout and the East River."

This was evidently the Comfort and Joshua Sands estate; purchased by them, in 1784, from the Commis-

sioners of Forfeiture—it having been the property of John Rapalje, the loyalist. John Jackson's Remsen estate was also included within the bounds of the prospective village. The author then proceeds to say that

"The holders of this tract [*i. e.*, Messrs. Sands and John Jackson—Ed.] appear to be desirous to encourage the undertaking, by their willingness to dispose of lots at a reasonable price. * * * This village, contemplatively a city, comprehends at present an extent of land within the following boundaries, *viz.*: Beginning at two rocks called 'The Brothers,' situated in the East River, from those to Brooklyn Square [the neighborhood of the old Dutch Church], through James street to Main and Road streets, to the seat formerly the residence of the Rev. Mr. Johnson, now Red Hook road [corner of Fulton avenue and Red Hook lane], from thence across the Wallabout, then to the East River to the place of beginning. This tract of land is better situated than any other near New York for the counterpart of that city. It is certain that, on the southern side of Brooklyn Ferry ["the Heights."—Ed.] the hills are so high, and such astonishing exertion is necessary to remove them, that Brooklyn Ferry can never extend any great distance upon that quarter, and all improvements must necessarily be made in Olympia. Add to this the want of disposition in the proprietors of that soil to sell any part of it. And, moreover, Olympia and Brooklyn Ferry must always continue to increase in a ratio with New York, unless some exertion of their own is made. But as that city can never extend further southward, but is continually progressing a contrary way, it is evident, if the former position be true, that Olympia must receive the whole progress which otherwise would be given to Brooklyn Ferry.

"Olympia is extremely well calculated for a city; on a point of land which presents its front up the East River, surrounded almost with water, the conveniences are almost manifest. A considerable country in the rear affords the easy attainment of produce. A pure and salubrious atmosphere, excellent spring water, and good society, are among a host of other desirable advantages. As regards health in particular, it is situated on the natural soil—no noxious vapors, generated by exhalations, from dock-logs, water, and filth sunk a century under its foundations, are raised here. Sand and clay for building are in the village. Stone is brought from a short distance. Timber, lath and boards are to be had on the spot. In fact, almost every article for building is afforded here as cheap as in New York. Could the inhabitants once divest themselves of their dependence upon that city, and with unanimous consent resolve that their own village should prosper, there requires no supernatural agent to inform us of the consequence.

"Want of good title has been alleged by some against building here [an allusion to the Rapalje estate—Ed.]; but it is ascertained, and from undoubted authority, that none was ever clearer or less entangled, and that reports here circulated what truth is obliged to deny.

"The principal streets of this village are sixty feet, but the cross-streets are not so wide. They are not yet paved, though a vast number of pebbles may be had there. Latterly, it appears to have had the appearance of a regular town. Edifices are erecting, and other improvements constantly making. When we observe the elevated situations, the agreeable prospects, the salubrity of the atmosphere, and the contiguousness to New York, with many other interesting advantages, it may claim, perhaps, more consideration than any part of the township."

The sagacity of the author is manifest from the following (the *italics* are our own—Ed.):

"It has been suggested that a *bridge* should be constructed from this village across the East River to New York. This idea has been treated as chimerical, from the magnitude of the design; but whoever takes it into their serious consideration, will find more weight in the practicability of the scheme than at first view is imagined. This would be the means of raising the value of the lands on the east side of the river. *It has been observed that every objection to the building of this bridge could be refuted, and that it only wanted a combination of opinion to favor the attempt.* A plan has already been laid down on paper, and a gentleman of acknowledged abilities and good sense has observed that he would engage to erect it in two years' time."

"It has also been observed that *the Wallabout would form an excellent navy-yard.* Should such a plan be carried into execution, it would considerably increase the importance of this place. As a retreat from New York in summer, Olympia would furnish many superior excellences over other places—such as its vicinity to that city, the opportunity of freighting and unloading vessels during the period of fever, the sale of goods to the yeomanry who are fearful of entering the city, etc. [Here a mutilation breaks the narrative.] * * * often the resort of the inhabitants of New York in their pedestrian excursions. This village has no peculiar privileges of its own. Joined with several townships, it supports two ministers."

In speaking of *manufactures*, he says: "With respect to 'Olympia' and Brooklyn Ferry, which are the principal villages in this township, they produce scarcely any thing of the manufacturing kind but what is useful in common life. There are eight grist-mills in this township, which grind by means of the tide in the East River. Some of these mills are employed to grind grain for exportation, others to supply the neighboring farmers. Cables, cordage, lines, and twine are spun and laid to considerable profit. A new patent floor-cloth manufactory is about to be introduced. * * * Brewing and distilling, with a capital, might be carried on to advantage. Nails are afforded very cheap. Chair-making, too, answers extremely well. Besides these, there are all the different mechanical trades peculiar to settlements of this kind."

In regard to *literature and education*, he says: "There are three schools in the township—one at Bedford, one at Gowanus, and the other at the Brooklyn Ferry. This last claims the preference, having been established a considerable length of time, under the superintendence of trustees. There are about sixty scholars, who are taught the common rudiments of education, with English grammar, geography, and astronomy. Two preceptors have the immediate direction. A beautiful eminence to the east of Brooklyn Ferry will afford an eligible situation for an academy." Thomas Kirk's newspaper, *The Courier*, then in its first year, is favorably mentioned; and, it is stated, that there are "no libraries, or places for the sale of books in the town." "There is but one society, properly speaking, in this township, and that is the Masonic. This, which is the first and only Lodge in the county, was erected in 1798 in Olympia, at the corner of Main and James streets."

A brief outline of some of the main points of early Brooklyn history is given, and reference is made to two volunteer companies, "whose uniform is as handsome as their conduct is patriotic." A powder-house and arsenal are said to be "already established." In the Appendix to this compilation, General Johnson strongly advocates the establishment of a *village corporation*, concerning the advantages of which he discusses fully and eloquently; considering it "now proper

time that a corporation for Olympia should commence its operations, and particular appropriations be made for extensive market-places, a square for an academy, another for a promenade, others for public buildings of different sorts, as churches, court-houses, alms-houses, etc., and not to sleep on an ideal prospect." And, long before the venerable author was gathered to his fathers, he had seen the more than realization of his "ideal prospect."

The spirit of speculation, as will be seen from the above glowing account of "Olympia," had begun to agitate the minds of the Brooklynites, and it received no inconsiderable impulse, in 1801, from Mr. John Jackson's sale to the United States of forty acres of the Wallabout, including the old mill-pond, for the handsome sum of \$40,000. Shortly after this, a portion of the estate of Comfort Sands, contiguous to the lands of Mr. Jackson, was sold, and Jackson street was opened to Jackson Ferry. About this time, also, the suppression of the rebellion in Ireland caused the emigration to this country of many persons who had been engaged in that unfortunate struggle, some of whom came to New York. A portion of these refugees, who had a little property, were induced to purchase lots on Jackson's land, at a spot to which—cleverly appealing to their patriotism—he had given the name of "Vinegar Hill," in honor of the scene of the last conflict of that memorable rebellion.

On the 2d of April, 1801, the village of Brooklyn was incorporated as a *fire district*, by an act entitled "An Act to vest certain powers in the Freeholders and Inhabitants of part of the Town of Brooklyn, in Kings County," etc., the 6th section of which is of much importance, inasmuch as it authenticated the copies of Old Road Records, then recently transferred from the County Clerk's office to the office of the Clerk of the Town.

Crime and vice seem to have made fresh and increasing inroads upon the primitive simplicity of this old Dutch town; for, in 1805, the town took measures to determine the location and ascertain the expense of erecting a "cage, or watch-house;" whether a rebuilding of the old one, or an additional one, is somewhat uncertain. At the same meeting, the foremen of the fire-engines were authorized to establish and regulate a "Guard, or Night-Watch within the Fire District, by and with the consent of the majority of the inhabitants."

1806. In the columns of *The Long Island Weekly Intelligencer*, published by Robinson & Little, Booksellers and Stationers, corner of Old Ferry and Front streets, October 9th, vol. i., No. 15, are the advertisements of Thomas Langdon, dealer in boots and shoes; Henry Hewlet, general merchandise, near the Old Ferry; John Cole, coach-maker; Dr. Lowe "at the Rev. Mr. Lowe's, corner of Red Hook Road" (present corner of Fulton street and Red Hook Lane); and William Cornwall, merchant tailor, corner of Front and Main streets, near the New Ferry. Five apprentices are wanted at Amos Cheney's Ship-yard; William Mil-

ward, Block and Pump Maker, is located "at the Yellow Store, on Joshua Sands' Esq., wharf, between the Old and New Ferries;" while Benjamin Hilton sells china, glass, and earthenware, "at New York prices," in Old Ferry street, in the house formerly occupied by Mr. Derick Amerman. Land and property is advertised by Henry Stanton, corner of Front and Main streets; by Robert M. Malcolm, corner of Washington and Sands streets, and by Thomas Lalliet. Joel Bunce, Postmaster, advertises the address of 53 letters uncalled for in his office.

In the issue of October 23d, is the advertisement of Augustine Elliott, "Taylor and Lady's Dress-Maker," in old Ferry street; and five verses of *original poetry*, "after the manner of Burns," extolling the beauties of, and the splendid prospect to be obtained from, "Brooklyn, or McKenzie's One Tree Hill." This hill was located on Pearl street, between York and Prospect streets. All around that portion of Brooklyn, north of Washington and west of Sands street, was a series of hills, some of which were covered with grass and had a few trees; others were of sandy soil, with here and there a slight covering of grass, and with some buttonwood trees, while others still were nothing but sand-hills. McKenzie's Hill, the most noted of these, was a fine green elevation, crowned with a single gigantic buttonwood tree, and afforded a beautiful view of the city and harbor of New York. It was marked, as were many of the surrounding hills, by the traces of intrenchments and fortifications thrown up by the British during their occupation of the Island; and was finally levelled about 1807-9, in order to fill in the wharves built out over the flats in the river, to the northwest of Main street. Another rather noted hill was located some distance farther west (bounded by Front, Adams, and Bridge streets, near the water-line of the East River), and was a barren, sandy eminence, on which every pebble or stone seemed to have been calcined by some extreme heat, while three or four feet below the surface were found regular layers of ashes, mingled with bits of charcoal, and vitrified stones and sand. All of these hills have now disappeared—that known as "Fort Greene, or Washington Park," being the only one which remains.

In August, 1808, the town was one day startled by the explosion of Sands' Powder Mill, which was situated in the vicinity of the present Jay and Tillary streets. Fortunately, it happened between twelve and one o'clock in the day, when the people were all at dinner—consequently no lives were lost, although forty kegs of powder were lost. The recently erected stone church, belonging to St. Anne's Episcopal Society, was considerably damaged, its walls being somewhat weakened, and the windows badly broken. An adjoining ropewalk was also levelled to the ground. This year the sum of \$1500 was appropriated by the town for the erection of a new "Poor-house."

1809, March 17th. "The Brooklyn, Jamaica and Flatbush Turnpike Company" was incorporated. The Company, during the year, paved Main and Old Ferry streets in the village.

In June of this year the *Long Island Star* was established by Thomas Kirk. The number for June 22d contains, among other advertisements, one by George Hamilton, who kept a select school "where students were taught to make their own pens."

September 7th, John Gibbons announces that he has opened an Academy for both sexes, at the place lately occupied by Geo. Hamilton, where the various branches of education are "taught on unerring principles." Also "Mrs. Gibbons will instruct little Girls in Spelling, Reading, Sewing and Marking." An evening school for young men is proposed, and "N. B. Good Pronunciation."

During the months of July, August and September, of this year, the yellow fever prevailed in Brooklyn, which gave rise to a long and wordy newspaper war between the physicians of the village, Drs. Osborn, Ball, and Wendell. On the 27th of September, DeWitt Clinton, Mayor of New York, issued a Proclamation, announcing the disappearance of the disease, and the resumption of the ordinary intercourse between that city and Brooklyn, which had been interdicted by his previous proclamation of 2d of August. Twenty-eight persons had died of the fever in Brooklyn, all of whom were under twenty-eight years of age. It was at first thought that the contagion was brought in the ship *Concordia*, Captain Coffin, on board of which vessel the first case and death occurred. But in the long and very able report of Dr. Rogers, the Health-officer of the Board of Health of New York, which was published in

December, after the subsidence of the disease, the epidemic in Brooklyn was imputed to purely local causes.

Brooklyn, at this time, was well supplied with private schools. One Whitney kept school opposite the Post-office; there was also the Brooklyn Select Academy, taught by Mr. John Mabon, and having as trustees, Messrs. Joshua Sands, S. Sackett, and H. I. Feltus. Platt Kennedy's scholars were advertised to hold an exhibition on Christmas Eve, at the Inn of Benjamin Smith, a large stone building on the east side of the road, opposite the old "Corporation House."

The industrial interests of Brooklyn were at this time represented by I. Harmer's Floor-Cloth Manufactory; Chrieton's Cotton-Good Manufactory, employing eight to ten looms, and three or four extensive Rope-walks; furnishing work to over one hundred persons.

The *Long Island Star*, of February 14th, 1811, contains a petition to the Legislature for the establishment of a *Bank* in Brooklyn. The great inconvenience of crossing the ferry in bad weather, on days when notes fall due, is particularly dwelt on by the petitioners. There was, at this time, only one dry-goods store in town, which was kept by Abraham Remsen, on the corner of Old Ferry (now Fulton) and Front streets; and the mails passed through Long Island only once a week. The publication of the *Long Island Star* was relinquished by Mr. Kirk, on June 1st, to Alden Spooner.

In July, 1811, the census of Long Island estimates the population of Brooklyn as being 4,402.

1812, June 11. News was received in Brooklyn of the Declaration of War between the United States and Great Britain. (See Chapter VIII, of *History of Kings County*.)

BROOKLYN FROM ITS INCORPORATION AS A VILLAGE.

(THE VILLAGE AS IT APPEARED SEVENTY-SEVEN YEARS AGO.)

NOTHING of historical importance occurred in the town of Brooklyn during the year 1812, except a serious fire on the east side of Main street, near the Old Ferry. Inadequate facilities for crossing the river prevented the early arrival of firemen from New York with their machines, and improvements in this respect were strongly recommended.

The subsequent introduction of team and steam-boats, upon both of the Brooklyn ferries, gave the much-needed facilities for succor from New York, and consequently largely diminished the risks to which Brooklyn had, hitherto, been exposed by fires.

In 1813 an enterprise originated which ultimately resulted in the establishment of the first public school. A

number of charitable ladies of the village formed an organization and established a school known as the *Loisian Seminary*, named after Lois, the grandmother of Timothy the Apostle. The object of the association was to teach poor children reading, writing, arithmetic, knitting, and sewing, gratis. The teachers were twenty-four young ladies, members of the society, who attended in rotation, two each week. One of the regulations of the seminary was as follows:

"It will be necessary that the presiding Trustee observe that the children attend punctually, no trifling excuse to be admitted, and that they are kept clean, and behave in a decent manner."

This school continued for five years. Some of the

teachers married, others tired of their duties, and finally a lady was engaged to teach at a salary. In 1817 Mr. Andrew Mercein had requested of the lady managers that a teacher might be employed at a salary and the school be converted into a public school, which could only be done under the then-existing laws by showing that the school was conducted by a teacher or teachers who had been drawing pay. This was agreed to, and Mr. Mercein and his associates in the enterprise then transferred the school—which had been held in the houses of the members of the society, without any permanent building—to a small framed house on the corner of Concord and Adams streets, which was subsequently removed to make room for the present building, occupied by Public School No. 1.

The principal events of the year 1814 are spoken of elsewhere. They were the introduction of steam ferry-boats on the Brooklyn Ferry, and defensive measures adopted in view of the war then in progress.

During the winter of 1815-16, small-pox prevailed to some extent in Brooklyn, and several deaths from the disease occurred. It is worthy of record that Drs. Ball and Wendell, by advertisement, offered their gratuitous services for the vaccination of such as desired.

1816, January 6th, a public meeting was held for the organization of a public school. At this meeting Andrew Mercein, John Seaman and Robert Snow were chosen trustees. At a subsequent meeting measures were taken for the purchase of a site and the erection of a school-house.

On the 8th of the same month a public meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Brooklyn was held at the public house of Lawrence Brower, "to take into consideration the proposed application for an incorporation of Brooklyn." On the following day, Messrs. Thomas Everit, Alden Spooner, Joshua Sands, Rev. John Ireland, and John Doughty, who had been appointed a committee to draft the required petition and bill, met at the residence of Mr. Hez. B. Pierrepont, and proceeded to perform the important task assigned to them.

April 12. The act incorporating the *village of Brooklyn* passed the legislature of the State.

That portion of the *town* of Brooklyn, thus set aside as a distinct government, had previously been known as the fire district, established in 1801, and was described as "beginning at the Public Landing south of Pierrepont's Distillery, formerly the property of Philip Livingston deceased, on the East River; thence running along the Public Road leading from said Landing, to its intersection with Red Hook Lane; thence along said Red Hook Lane to where it intersects the Jamaica Turnpike Road; thence a north-east course to the head of the Wallaboght Mill-pond; thence through the centre of the Mill-pond to the East River; and thence down the East River to the place of beginning."

Messrs. Andrew Mercein, John Garrison, John

Doughty, John Seaman, and John Dean, were named, by the act, as the first trustees of the village, to remain in office until the first Monday in May, 1817, when an election was to be held by the people.

On the 29th of April these gentlemen took the oath of office as trustees, and held their first meeting on the 4th of May following.

In March, 1816, a *Sunday-school* was "in operation in the village of Brooklyn," with more than seventy scholars. It was "under the management of four superintendents, a standing committee of seven, and a number of (volunteer) teachers, male and female." The design of the institution was declared to be the combining "of moral and religious instruction with ordinary school learning." The parents and guardians of the children who attended were requested to indicate *what catechism* they wished them to study, and the hearty co-operation of all the ladies and gentlemen in the village was asked for the school. It appears that the principal founders of this school were *Andrew Mercein, Robert Snow, Joseph S. Harrison, John Murphy, and Joseph Herbert*. Success followed the efforts of these benevolent and philanthropic men, and the "*Brooklyn Sunday-school Union Society*" was soon afterward organized.

The school was at first held in Thomas Kirk's printing office, a long, narrow, two-story frame edifice, on the westerly side of Adams street, between High and Sands; but it was now removed to the school building of District School, No. 1, on the corner of Concord and Adams streets. As far as is known, this non-sectarian effort was continued till 1818, when the Episcopalians commenced a Sunday-school of their own, which, with temporary intermissions, has continued to the present time. The union effort seems to have declined; but it was revived about 1812, and simultaneously other sectarian schools sprang up, all of which, as well as the union school, were prosperous.

During the first year after the incorporation of the village a seal was adopted, and many ordinances were passed, of which space will not permit a record here.

An effort was made to procure the passage of an act so amending the charter as to enable the trustees to fill all vacancies occurring in the board, and to restrict the right of suffrage to freeholders in votes for raising taxes. This was looked on by the people as an invasion of their rights, and so strong a remonstrance was sent to the legislature, that nothing more was heard of the proposed amendments.

Brooklyn Seventy-Seven Years Ago.—Before tracing further the history of Brooklyn, it seems desirable to present a brief sketch of the village as it appeared in 1816, and, with not much change, for about fifteen years thereafter. Should such a sketch fail to attract some people at the present, it is safe to predict that it will be read with increasing interest as time goes on.

Brooklyn, as seen from the New York side of the

river, during the first third of the present century, presented features of simple rural beauty, strongly in contrast with its present imposing aspect. Around the "Old (now Fulton) Ferry" there was a clustering of houses, taverns, stables and shanties, which had grown up since the earliest establishment of a ferry at that point, and which formed the nucleus of a considerable business activity. From the ferry-slip (with its horse-boat, its one steam-boat and its row-boat accommodations, but with no such accommodations as the present ferry-house affords, and with no bell save the resonant throat of the ferryman), the old country road, the "king's highway" of the colonial and revolutionary periods, straggled crookedly upward and backward, out past the old Dutch church, out through Bedford Corners, and away beyond Jamaica, even to Montauk Point; being, in fact, the great highway of travel of Long Island itself. As far as the junction of this old road (now Fulton street) with the new road (now Main street), which came up from the "New Ferry" (as it was even then called, although it had been established some twenty years), it was tolerably well lined with buildings of various shapes and sizes. Pert-looking Yankee frame edifices rudely intruded their angularities among the hump-backed Dutch houses quaintly built of stone, or of small imported Holland bricks. Yet one and all wore such an unpretentious and neighborly look, under the brooding shadows of the noble trees, with which the village abounded, that it was plainly evident, even to the most casual observer, that no premonition of the future greatness, so soon to be thrust upon them, had as yet disturbed the minds of their occupants.

Less than a quarter of a mile to the *left* of the "Old Ferry" was the "New Ferry" to Catherine street, New York; and the road (or present Main street) which led from it up the hill, till it met the "Old Ferry road" (now Fulton street), was beginning to show a respectable number of frame buildings—all, however, of comparatively recent origin. Beyond this ferry and street the land stretched northwardly (broken by McKenzie's, Vinegar, and other hills before mentioned) to the verge of the Wallabout bay, where John Jackson had a shipyard, and eight or ten houses for workmen. Adjacent to this was the infant United States Navy Yard (established in 1801); while beyond, along the curving shore of the bay, were the farms of the Johnsons, Schencks, Remsens, Boerums, and others.

On the *right* of the Old Ferry, and with an abruptness which, even at this day, is scarce concealed by the streets and buildings covering it, rose the northernmost corner, or edge of that portion of the present city known as "The Heights," stretching southwardly to near the foot of the present Joralemon street. The face and brow of this noble bluff were covered with a beautiful growth of cedar and locust, while its base was constantly washed by the waves of the East river. From its

summit the land stretched away in orchards, gardens and pasture, out to the old highway (Fulton street). The Indians named it in their expressive language "Ihpetonga," or "the high sandy bank." To the early villagers it was known as "Clover Hill," and its owners (at that time Messrs. Cary Ludlow, the Hickses, Waring, Kimberly, Middagh, De Bevoises, Pierrepont and Joralemon) resided upon their respective farms in a state of semi-seclusion, almost prophetic of that social aristocracy which has since claimed "The Heights" as exclusively its own. From this elevated plateau the eye rested upon a panoramic scene of unsurpassed beauty; the city of New York, with its glorious bay; Staten Island, with the numerous lesser islands studding the bosom of the harbor; the Jersey shore, with the Orange mountains in the background; further to the southward was Red Hook with its old mills; the scattered farm-houses nestled around the bay; Yellow Hook, and the forest slopes of Greenwood.

The Village.—In taking a view of the village as it then was, the portion along *the old highway* (now Fulton street), *as far as the present City Hall*, first claims attention.

At the "Old Ferry" landing, which was then situated much farther inland, and to the southward of the present lower ferry-slip, was a dock (Map A, 3), on one side of which were steps for the accommodation of the wherry, or row-boat passengers; while on the other, or upper side, the larger boats or scows landed their freight; and, after the steam-boat was placed on the ferry, it was known as the "steam-boat slip."

Some fifty or sixty feet from the slip was a flag-staff, or liberty-pole, of which Burdet Stryker, the butcher, who occupied a stand in the neighboring market-building, was the custodian.

It is related by Col. De Voe, that when this liberty-pole became dangerous from decay, Mr. Stryker sought to raise funds, by subscription, for a new one. He appealed to some of the "Society of Friends," who declined to subscribe because they were opposed to liberty-poles. He appealed to his old "boss," Thomas Everit, the Quaker, who at once told him that he was opposed to liberty-poles; but, at the same time, he would give ten dollars to assist in *taking down* the old one. It is hardly necessary to add that he succeeded in raising the required amount.

In the middle of the street, about fifty or sixty feet east of the flag-staff, stood the old market, a long, shabby, wooden structure, the head of which was opposite Carl's stables, near Elizabeth street. It was slightly raised above the level of the street, had a rounding roof, and contained six stalls, or stands, one of which is remembered to have been occupied by Burdet Stryker, another by John Doughty, another as a fish-stand, etc. The locality was a sort of rendezvous for all the butchers, of whom, from time immemorial, there had been a large number resident in Brooklyn. Many of them had

their slaughter-houses near by, and every morning came down to the ferry-stairs with their wheelbarrow-loads of nicely-dressed meats, which they trundled aboard the boats, barrows and all, and were ferried over to the city. The old market, also, was the great resort of the sportive blacks, who formed no inconsiderable portion of the population of Brooklyn, at that early day. They were much employed by the butchers and others, and were fat, sleek and happy fellows, generally on the best of terms with their masters and "all the world besides," and full to overflowing of the waggery and tricks for which the Dutch negroes have always been noted. At the market, also, these negroes celebrated their annual "Pinkster" holiday, which corresponded to their masters' "Paass" festival. The old building finally became so dilapidated as to be a nuisance, and was torn down one night, in 1814, by a party of young men and boys. It was a public institution, and the "market fees" were always collected by *William Furman*, one of the overseers of the poor, and who occupied a large double frame house (Map A, 1), with a long, high piazza in front, which stood on the site of the present City Railroad Company's elegant edifice. The house then stood right in front of the ferry-stairs, which led down on the lower side of the slip; and, in the basement nearest the water, he kept an oyster-house, where, for the charge of *twelve-and-a-half cents*, one could be furnished with as many fine roasted oysters as he could eat at a sitting.

WILLIAM FURMAN, or "Judge Furman" as he was called, was of a Newtown family; came here soon after the Revolution; was one of the founders of the New (or Catharine street) ferry; first judge of the county, 1808-1823; a village trustee in 1817; several years a supervisor; member of State legislature, 1827; a warm friend of Governor Clinton; president of the Brooklyn Fire Ins. Co.; and, in many ways, identified with the interests of the village. He died in 1852, aged 86 years. He was the father of Gabriel Furman, the talented lawyer and historian of Brooklyn, who was born in the above-described house in January, 1800.

Adjoining the western side of Furman's house, on the corner of the beach under the Heights (now Furman street), was a small shanty kept as a sort of opposition fish and oyster-house, by another Furman.

Between Furman's house and the corner of the present Columbia street there had originally been, in the early colonial times, a cattle-yard or enclosure, wherein were confined the cattle brought down from the Island for sale in the New York markets, and which were often delayed, by stress of weather, from crossing the East river for days together. It is probable that this cattle-yard (represented in the view of the Brookland Ferry House, in 1745—See *Chapter on Ferries*) originally extended to Doughty street, for there is evidence of there having been a public landing place at the foot of that street. On the site of this yard, adjoining to Furman's dwelling, there was, at the time spoken of, a two-story frame house, with dormer windows and a long front

stoop, occupied by John Bedell as a "stage-house" and grocery. Next to this (Map A, 5) was a large brick stable, with slate roof, said to be the best on the island. On the corner of the narrow lane, now called Elizabeth street, was a very old brick building (Map A, 8), of *ante-revolutionary* date, owned by John Carpenter and subsequently occupied by Daniel Mott as a tavern. Mott was burned out in January, 1814, by a great fire which involved some of his neighbors, between his place and the river, among whom were Thomas Everit and John Bedell. After this, for many years, the ground was occupied by a temporary structure used as a grocery, until the erection (about 1832) of the brick edifice known from that day to the present as "Carll's stables."

Across the lane stood the old stone tavern (Map A, 9) to which Benjamin Smith removed after he was burned out of the "Corporation House," on the opposite side of the road (Fulton street), in 1812. It was a two-story stone edifice, of about fifty feet front, with its bar and sitting-room on the corner next the lane, and a sign, swinging before the door, proclaimed it to be "*The Traveller's Inn. By Benjamin Smith.*" It was afterwards known as "Smith and Woods," and, at a later date still, was kept by Samuel Birdsall, the father of Mr. Thos. W. Birdsall, and was a noted stopping-place for the Quakers when they came to Brooklyn. At times, it was said, as many as a hundred and fifty horses munched their oats, stamped their feet and whisked away the flies, in the stables of the inn, and great was its fame among the "broad-brims." It was also the place of deposit for the New York newspapers, which were brought over in small boats, and left here for delivery to subscribers; for, in that day, the post-office confined its operations simply to the transmission of letters. Next above Smith's was James W. Burtis's feed-store (Map A, 29); and a tavern (also Map A, 29) kept by Martin Boerum, a son of an old citizen of Brooklyn, who owned a large farm near the Wallabout. Upon his father's death, Martin assumed charge of his patrimonial farm, and sold out his tavern-stand to John Hunter, a rough, jovial man, who (by virtue of having formerly been a member of the "Horse artillery" of the county) emblazoned upon his sign the rude delineation of a mounted artilleryman, above the words "Hunter's Hotel."

Next to Hunter's, and about opposite to Front street, was Selah Smith's tavern (Map A, 30), a double frame building, erected in 1780, and framed entirely of oak, even to the rafters. *Furman's Manuscripts* record (in 1824), that, "in digging the cellar of this house, a large rock was found, in endeavoring to sink which, it slipped, and one of the workmen fell under it, and there his bones remain to the present day;" which legend, of course, gives to that building and its present successor an indubitable right to have a ghost of its own.

Along the easterly side of the tavern ran the alley leading to the stables in the rear, and the gateway at

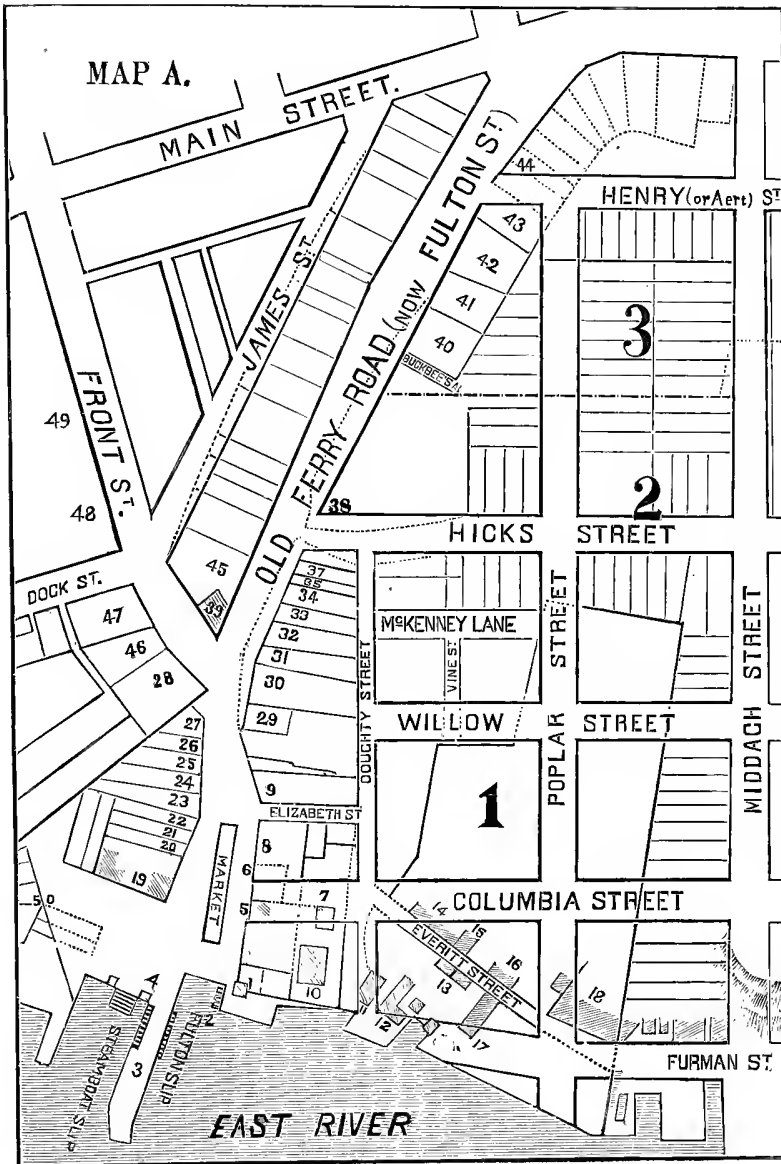
its entrance was spanned by a huge arch, formed out of a whale's jaw-bones, and painted *blue*. Selah Smith died in the early part of the year 1819, and the business was continued by his widow, Ann. Adjoining the other side of the alley was the ancient two-story brick building, with a very high stoop (Map A, 31), occupied

was a tallow-chandler, in Brooklyn. In 1794 he was one of the eight firemen chosen by the citizens, at annual town meeting, to man the *new* fire-engine, the second one in the infant fire department of Brooklyn. He was identified with the establishment of Methodism in Brooklyn, being one of the trustees of the newly incorporated Methodist church in Sands street. He was much interested in military matters, being captain of the village militia company, the

"Republican Rifles," which subsequently, during the war of 1812, volunteered, and performed a tour of duty at New Utrecht, with much credit. He was an ardent politician of the Jeffersonian school, and a member of the celebrated "Tammany Society, or Columbian order," being one of the "Wallabout committee," in 1808, to make arrangements for the sepulture of the martyrs of the prison-ships, at the Wallabout. Subsequently, he left the democratic ranks and espoused the cause of De Witt Clinton, with whom he was on terms of considerable intimacy. He had a peculiar aversion to the practice of "splitting tickets," against which he was wont to inveigh with great warmth, insisting, in his sputtering Dutch way, that folks "should take de tail, mit de hide." Though eccentric, he was noted for his philanthropy. On the several occasions when Brooklyn was visited by the yellow fever, and small-pox, he distinguished himself by his fearless, patient and thorough devotion to the sick. When friends and family fled from the touch of the pestilence, then Burdet Stryker appeared at the bed-side of the sufferer, and, regardless of color, social position, and condition, he nursed them tenderly as if they had been his own "kith and kin;" and, if needs be, as frequently happened, he performed the last sad offices and buried them with his own hands. He died in 1825.

On the opposite or *northerly* side of *Fulton street*, between the river and *Front street*, was the ferry-tavern, or "Corporation House," the nearest building to the river. As late as the close of the revolutionary period, the high-water mark of the East river, *north* of the ferry, extended nearly to the westerly line of *Front street*. Between the Corporation House and the ferry-stairs, during the revolutionary period, there was a frame building, together with a

barn for stabling, both of which were enlosed within the tavern-yard. After the close of the war, Capt. Adolph Waldron, the former occupant, returned from the exile to which his political principles had forced him, and resumed his ferry and tavern leases, which he carried on for some years thereafter; being succeeded, in 1789, by Capt. Henry Dawson, one of the three new ferrymen that year appointed by the corporation of New York.



MAP OF THE OLD FERRY DISTRICT OF THE VILLAGE IN 1816.
The dotted lines indicate old roads, lots and estates. FIG. 1, the Ludlow Estate; FIG. 2, the Hicks Estate; FIG. 3, the Midagh Estate. The smaller figures are alluded to in the text.

as a residence by BURDET STRYKER, the father of ex-Mayor F. B. Stryker, tallow Chandler and butcher, his shop being in the basement.

He was a native of New York City; born in 1769; served his apprenticeship with that good old Quaker butcher, Thomas Everit, Jr., near the Old Ferry, Brooklyn; and, on arriving of age, set up for himself in the village, where he continued in business during his life-time. His slaughter-house was, at first, in Doughty street, and he had a stand (No. 60) in the old Fly Market, New York; afterwards he

The tavern was next found in the hands of Capt. Benjamin Smith, who was burned out, as before stated, in 1812; but in 1816, the block between the ferry and Front street had been much extended by filling in, and its appearance totally changed by the erection of a line of buildings, mostly occupied by stores, taverns and stables.

At the ferry-slip, upon the site of the "ladies' sitting-room" in the present ferry-house, was a small shanty (Map A, 4) built and occupied by Daniel Wright, as an oyster-saloon, his oysters being conveniently kept fresh in the water which flowed beneath. To the north, or left of this shanty, the original beach appeared; while on the corner now occupied by Marston & Son's extensive coal-yard (Map A, 50), was originally Richard Mott's livery and tavern, afterwards kept successively by Townsend & Cox, Joel Conklin, and Daniel Wright, and it was a general stopping-place for the *habitués* of the ferry. Opposite, on the easterly side of Water street, and on land owned by the corporation of New York, was a block of four buildings, all under one roof, and fronting on Fulton street. The corner one (Map A, 19), late "The Franklin House," was originally a tavern kept by Capt. King, and afterwards by Mr. Barnum, subsequently the proprietor of the widely known and popular "Barnum's Hotel," in the city of Baltimore. He was succeeded by Abiather Young, who kept here "The Steamboat Hotel," and he, in turn, was followed by Gerardus C. Langdon. In the upper part of the hotel was a large ball-room, where entertainments were given, and where many an old Brooklynite learned to "shake the light fantastic toe" under the able instruction of Mr. Whale, dancing-master. In this room, also, Elias Hicks, the celebrated Quaker preacher, frequently held forth to large audiences, of all denominations, who were always attracted to his preaching.

Next above "Gerardy" Langdon's was Coe S. Downing's tavern (Map A, 20) and stage-house, upon the stoop of which, at almost every hour of the day, mine host could be seen, comfortably seated in a chair adapted to his especial use; for he was a Daniel Lambert of a man, to whom quiescence was far easier than locomotion. But he was vivacious, intelligent and shrewd; a democrat, and the leading politician of that party in the county; had served acceptably as supervisor, as judge of the municipal court, and in the Legislature. Then (Map A, 21) the liquor and grocery-store of old Mr. Evert Barkeloo; and, as a modest little sign over the door announced, the "Office of the Trustees of the Town of Brooklyn," of which body Mr. B. was clerk. Next door (Map A, 22) was Thomas Burroughs', the harness maker; and, next to him, was Samuel Carman's tavern (Map A, 23). Next him was the shop of Samuel Penny (Map A, 24), whose sign of "merchant *barber*" burlesqued that of his next-door neighbor, Peter Prest (Map A, 25), the "merchant tailor." On Penny's place "Sheriff" John T. Bergen afterwards built and kept a grocery-

store. Adjoining Prest's was the wholesale grocery (Map A, 26) of Messrs. J. & S. Schenck, occupying the site of the old "Corporation (or Ferry) House."

The angling position of the "Corporation House" left, on the westerly corner of the present Front and Fulton streets, a "gore" between it and the stone mansion of John Rapalje. On this vacant space was subsequently erected an engine-house, for the accommodation of the first fire-engine introduced into the town. The town's fire-bell was swung upon the roof of the adjoining Rapalje house (Map A, 28), then occupied by Mr. Abraham Remsen, who, in return for the accommodation, was granted all the privileges and immunities belonging to the firemen; a courtesy which was no more than just, inasmuch as tradition says that he was the *only* man in the place who was willing to accept the risk of having his slumbers disturbed by the clanging of the bell over his head. The Rapalje house passed into the hands of Mr. Abraham Remsen, above mentioned, who demolished it and used a portion of the stone in the erection upon the same site of a brick and stone store and dwelling, where he kept dry-goods and groceries. After his removal to Newtown, L. I., this brick building gave place to that occupied for many years (until May, 1861) by the Long Island Insurance Company, and at present by that of the Long Island Safe Deposit Company.

Recrossing to the *southerly side of the Old Road, from opposite Front street to Middagh street*, we come, next above Burdet Stryker's, to some lots owned by the French church (*L'Eglise du Sainte Esprit*) of New York, on which were two or three small frame buildings. One of these (Map A, 32), adjoining Stryker's, was the residence of Henry Dawson, Jr., a ferryman, who kept one of the "sixpenny-boats," as the row-boats were called, from the amount charged for ferriage; then (Map A, 33) the residence of John Simonson, a well-known butcher; then (Map A, 34) a house occupied by the Misses Van Cleef, sisters of old Rulof Van Cleef, the ferryman. They were market-women, and acquired a comfortable property. Then (Map A, 35) was the shoe-shop of Isaac Van Nostrand, who used to say that he "could fit a man's foot, but he could not fit his eye;" then (Map A, 37) John Rusher, tin and wooden-ware; and, on the corner of Hicks street, the low one-and-a-half-story store of D. Pell, grocer, afterwards, in 1831, fitted up as a drug-store for Dr. James W. Smith, by his village friends. Across the then narrow mouth of Hicks street (Map A, 38, and Fig. 5, Map of Brookland Ferry) was an ancient, roomy, low-roofed house of stone, roughly plastered over and shaded by two immense willow-trees. This was the Hicks mansion, in which resided the brothers John M. and Jacob M. Hicks, who had inherited, through their mother, a fine portion of the original Middagh estate. Exempted, by the possession of ample means, from the necessity of engaging in business or active labor, they passed their lives in a quiet, leisurely manner, which gained for them, from their less fortu-

nate neighbors, the appellation (distinguishing them from others of the same name in the village) of "the gentlemen Hicks." John M. (known as "Milk" Hicks, from the fact that he sold milk) resided in the small frame house, still standing, on the south-west corner of Hicks and Doughty streets. Jacob M. (generally called "Spitter" Hicks, from the habit he had of constantly expectorating) resided in the old mansion above referred to, which was levelled when Hicks street was finally opened to Fulton street. The Hicks estate (designated by large fig. 5, on Map A) comprised most of "Clover Hill," as the Heights were then called.

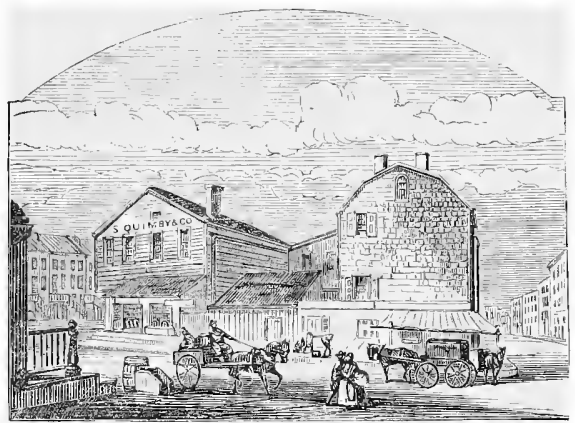
Some years before the incorporation of the village, and in consequence of a dispute between the Hickses and their neighbor Aert Middagh as to the boundary line between their respective properties, the two estates were surveyed by Mr. Jeremiah Lott, of Flatbush, then the leading, if not the only, surveyor in Kings County. He surveyed and plotted the two estates in blocks 200 feet square and "two feet thrown in for good measure" to each block. When the village of Brooklyn was incorporated, in 1816, Mr. Lott, who was employed to prepare a map of the same, proposed to carry out his survey on the same scale as that of his previous plotting of these two estates. Mr. Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, whose large property on the Heights was also included within the limits of the proposed survey, wished to prevent this wasteful plan, and to secure one with wider streets (they were only 40 feet wide) and larger blocks. He therefore employed, at his own expense, a competent Englishman, Thomas Poppleton by name, who was a city surveyor of New York, to make a plan for laying out the Heights. Poppleton surveyed all the village, from Fulton street to Jerolemon's lane, and made a map, still in existence, upon which all the streets and buildings, wharves, etc., which then existed, were laid down with great accuracy. On this map he laid out all the ground south of the Hicks and Middagh estates at Clark street, in blocks 400 and 500 feet long, with streets 50 and 60 feet wide; and this plan, fortunately for Brooklyn, was adopted for that part of the village south of Clark street. At first, the Hickses poohed at what they considered Mr. Pierrepont's visionary plans; but when, in due course of time, they saw the superior class of purchasers which his property secured, and the many advantages it presented, they appreciated his foresight, and were candid enough to say so. Moreover, they abandoned the old stone-house, which they had so long occupied, and, moving up Hicks street near to Clark, built there handsome houses for themselves, on the line of their old estate, and where they could enjoy the pleasanter surroundings due to their Yankee neighbor's broader streets, etc.

Tradition says that the whole of this hill between Poplar, Hicks, Furman and Orange streets, was used during the Revolutionary war as a burying-ground for British soldiers and sailors, and was thickly covered

with graves, which were all levelled off when the Hickses took possession at the close of the war.

Beyond the Hicks mansion and garden were the places of Mrs. Thomas, who kept green-groceries, candy and yeast, and was succeeded in the same business by Mrs. Flowers; of John Cole, carriage-maker; of Gilbert Reid, saddler; of John McKenney, coach-maker (afterwards occupied by John Gildersleeve, in the same business); then Mrs. Johnson's fruit and candy-shop; John Bergen's shoe-shop, subsequently Abraham Van Nostrand's; and lastly, "Buckbee's Alley," now "Poplar Place;" and in front of it was the public hay-scales, upon which farmers, coming to the ferry to sell their hay, could drive their loads for weighing, and upon the top of which, at one time, hung the town's fire-bell. Next was the house of Ogilvie, the cooper (Map A, 41), and Stephen S. Voris', formerly John Middagh's, hat-store (Map A, 42). On the corner of the present Henry and Fulton streets stood the old Middagh mansion, at this time occupied by Aert Middagh, the hatter. It was an ancient two-story frame building, standing crosswise to the road; and, when Fulton street was widened, was moved back to the line of the street; and, about 1840, was raised up by Mr. T. W. Peck, who placed three stores under it. It was partly destroyed by fire in 1850.

In the rear of the mansion, on present corner of Henry and Poplar streets, was the Middagh barn (No. 7, Map of Brookland Ferry, page 95), where, for a time, the Episcopalians of Brooklyn held their meetings. It was occupied for a while by Elizur Tompkins, and then



Middagh House and Barn.

by Mr. D. S. Quimby, who subsequently built a brick building upon this corner, having carried on the stove and range business here for nearly thirty years.

The accompanying view of the old mansion and barn, as they appeared about 1843 or '44, is from a painting by the late James W. Peck, Jr., son of James W. Peck, the well-known hatter, who, for so many years, has occupied the opposite corner, 98 Fulton street, where his sons still continue the business. The old pump, seen in the picture, was removed, and the well filled up, during the summer of 1868.

On the easterly corner of Henry and Fulton streets was a frame house (May A, 44) occupied by the widow of Dirk Amerman, the ferryman, who died during the yellow fever season of 1809; and adjoining, a similar building, owned by sheriff Wyckoff, and in which Judge Dikeman first "put out his shingles" as a lawyer; shortly thereafter succeeding old Mr. Barkeloo, as clerk to the trustees of the village.

Between this and Middagh street was leased property, belonging to the Middagh estate, and occupied by some small frame tenements; only one of which challenged attention, a neat, genteel little house, standing back from the road, about fifty feet westerly of Middagh street. Here lived Mr. James Harper, the grandfather of the well-known publishers, "Harper Brothers." The building was built by Mr. Thomas Kirk for his printing-office, and was occupied as such, after his failure, by Mr. George L. Birch, editor of the *Patriot*. On the corner of Middagh and Fulton streets stood the little dwelling of St. Clair, the stocking-weaver, said to be the first to introduce into the United States the knitting of stockings by machinery.

Northerly side of the Old Road (Fulton street), from Front street to Sands.

On the north-east corner of Front street and the Old Road, site of present building of the *Brooklyn Union and Argus Office* (Map A 39), was the large and very old frame building, originally Kirk & Mercein's printing-office, prior to their removal to New York, about 1813 or '14. It was next occupied as a hardware store by Thomas W. Birdsall and Joel Bunce; and its portrait at this period has been faithfully preserved (No. 1) in Guy's "Snow Scene of Brooklyn, in 1820."* It was, also, for many years the post-office—Mr. Bunce, and after him, in 1819, Mr. Birdsall, being post-master. At a later period it became the property of the Convent-hoven family of New Lotts; was occupied, for several

*Guy's "Snow Scene," representing the most important and compact portion of Brooklyn as it was from 1815-1820, will forever be invaluable as exhibiting the architectural character of the village at that period, and, in some degree, for half a century previous. It was taken from a second-story window of the artist's residence, the middle one (present No. 11 Front street) of the three Fisher houses. In order to properly understand this picture (a reduced copy of which is herewith presented) the modern observer should place himself near the corner of Front and Dock streets, and look up James street on the opposite side. He will then look along Front street, on his left, as far as the eye can reach, to Main street, indicated by horses and teams passing up from the Main Street Ferry; and, on his right, to Fulton street, which is indicated by the horse and sleigh passing down to the Old or Fulton Ferry. A confusion of ideas is generally produced in the mind of the modern observer by mistaking the rears of the old buildings, directly in the front of the picture, for their fronts. But it should be remembered that the fronts, which are on Fulton street, are invisible. Tracing, however, the line of roofs, and rears by the aid of the *key* which we have appended to this picture, the reader will be able to follow Fulton street up as far as Sands street. The high grounds on the right of the picture have been leveled and streets graded, so that nothing of their original conformation is now visible. As to the likenesses introduced, most of them are very striking, and the accuracy with which their faces are painted (the small size of the figures considered) is wonderful; one of the most striking productions in it being that of Mr. Patchen, the butcher, who is crossing Front street with a fore-quarter of mutton in one hand and a basket in the other.

years, by Sylvanus B. Stillwell's tailor-shop, and, about 1830, was supplanted by brick buildings erected by the Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company.

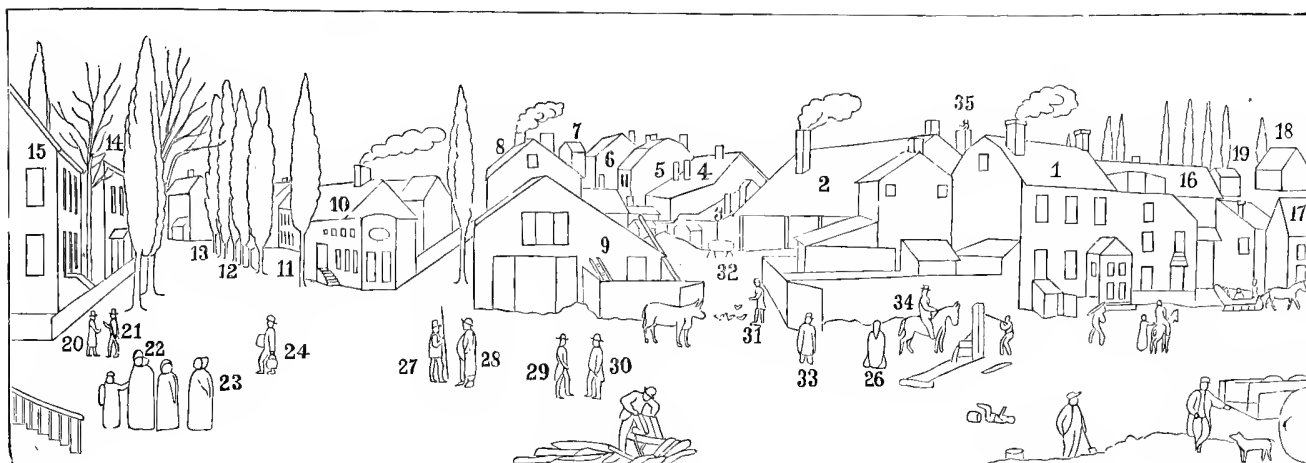
First above Birdsall's corner was the residence of Abiel Titus (Map A, 45), a small frame dwelling, with a narrow front on Fulton street, and not shown in Guy's picture. Titus is represented in that picture as feeding his chickens in the gateway of the yard between his house and his barn and slaughter-house.

In 1822 Wm. J. Dodge and Nathaniel F. Waring, Esqs., leased a lot, 18 x 20 feet, on the site of this yard, at a ground-rent of \$80—which, in those days, was considered an extravagant figure—and on which they erected a small brick building, the first ever put up on this side of Front street between Fulton and James. Here Mr. Waring opened his law-office. Subsequently, a building called "The Mechanics' Exchange" was put up, fronting the old pump seen in Guy's picture, and this, somewhat remodeled, was occupied by the *Brooklyn Union* office, previous to the completion of its new edifice on the corner of Fulton street.

Next to Titus' was a large one-and-a-half-story house (No. 2, Guy's picture) built of small yellow bricks, and possessing the indubitable appearance of very great antiquity. From all the data obtainable it appears probable that the old building was the original John Rapalje homestead. It is also interesting as having been the scene of occasional religious services of the Episcopal order during the occupation of Brooklyn by the British.

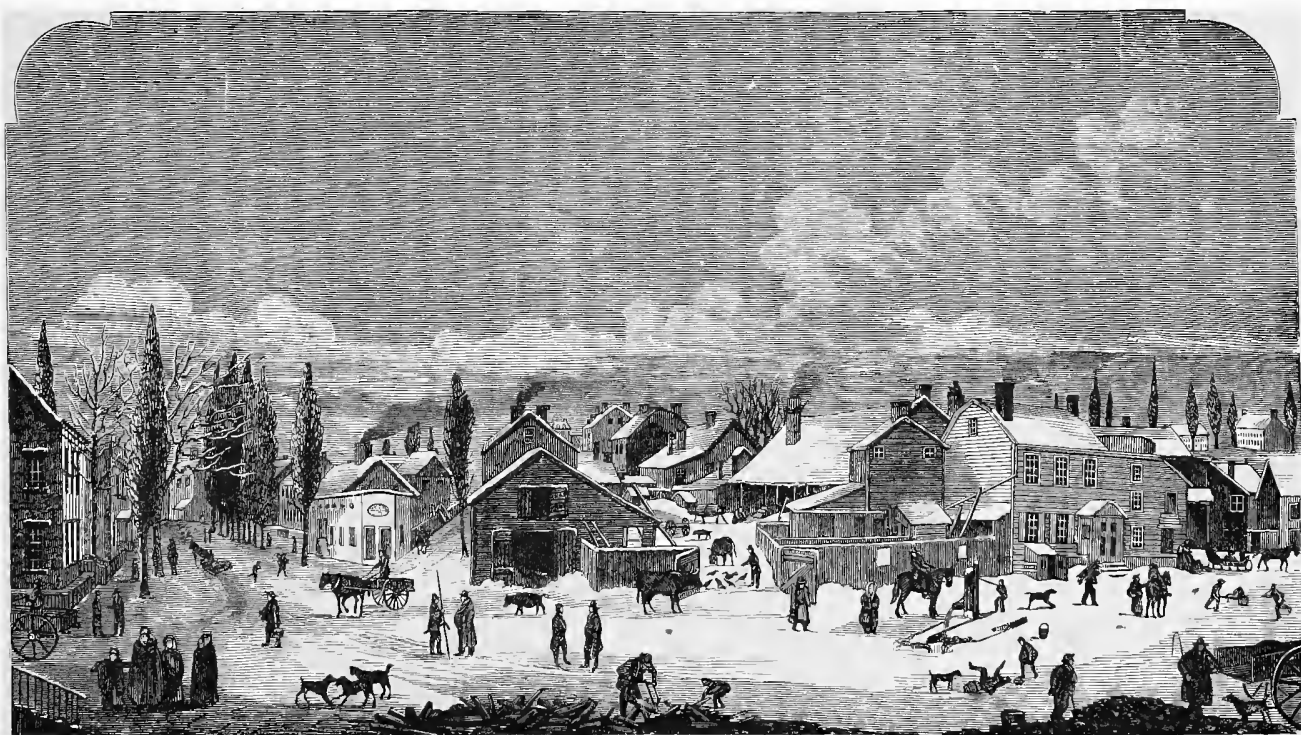
In one side of this ancient house was Ansel Titus' wheelwright-shop; and, in the other, Mrs. Eagles' candy-shop. This somewhat remarkable female rejoiced in the *sobriquet* of "The American Heroine," from a current tradition that she had once worn a uniform, and seen service in the Revolutionary war. She was a little, squat, "snapping-eyed" woman; always wore a red-and-white plaid turban; and, to the great delectation of the village, "bossed it" most tyrannically over her husband Jacob, a tall, lank, easy-going man, who called himself a grocer. She was succeeded, after a while, by Mrs. Burnet (wife of Martin Burnet, wheelwright), whose portrait is preserved in Guy's picture (Fig. 26), and who, in addition to candies, kept that *sine qua non* of every civilized community, "a thread-and-needle store."

Adjoining this old house was a shed—previously a dwelling—then Edward Cooper's blacksmith-shop, (No. 3, Guy's picture). Next, George Fricke's carriage-shop (No. 4, Guy's picture); then, directly opposite Hicks street, was a small brick building (Guy's picture, No. 5), at one time the residence of Diana Rapalje. This lady was the daughter of Garret Rapalje and a descendant of the first white female child born in New Netherland. In early life a favorite in the presidential circles at Washington, she was, in her later days (we will not say *decline*, for her bearing was erect and firm to the last), a stately exhibitor of the fashions of '76;



KEY TO GUY'S BROOKLYN SNOW SCENE

- | | | |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Dwelling and store of Thos. W. Birdsall. | 12. Robert Cunningham's. | 24. Jacob Patchen. |
| 2. House of Abiel Titus. | 13. Jacob Hicks' wood-yard, corner Main street. | 26. Mrs. Burnett. |
| 3. Edward Coope's blacksmith-shop. | 14. Joshua Sands' residence. | 27. Benjamin Meeker, talking with |
| 4. Geo. Fricke's carriage-shop. | 15. Augustus Graham's residence, cor. Dock st. | 28. Judge John Garrison. |
| 5. Diana Rapelje's house. | 16. Burdet Stryker's house and butcher shop. | 29. Thos. W. Birdsall. |
| 6. Mrs. Middagh's house. | 17. Selah Smith's tavern. | 30. Jacob Hicks. |
| 7. St. Ann's Church, corner of Sands and Wash-
ington streets. | 18. Morrison's, on the Heights. | 31. Abiel Titus. |
| 8. Residence of Edward Coope. | 19. Dr. Ball's house, opposite Morrison's. | 32. Mrs. Gilbert Titus. |
| 9. Abiel Titus' barn and slaughter-house. | 20. Augustus Graham, conversing with | 33. Abiel Titus' negro-servant "Jeff." |
| 10. Benjamin's Meeker's house and shop. | 21. Joshua Sands. | 34. James (son of Abiel) Titus, on horseback. |
| 11. Mrs. Chester's "Coffee Room." | 22. Mrs. Harmer and daughters. | 35. Samuel Foster (negro). |
| | 23. Mrs. Guy (the artist's wife). | |



GUY'S BROOKLYN SNOW SCENE, 1820.

and, as was natural, from her earlier associations, considerable of a politician in her peculiar way. Her erratic doings, from middle age to the close of life, indicated that moderate form of insanity which is termed eccentricity; and which, in her case, manifested itself in many absurd, amusing, and (to those concerned in litigation to her) troublesome forms. It was said that she had loved and had been disappointed; and that, from that time, pride and self-reliance drove her to seclusion and made her disrespectful of the customs and usages of society, in many minor points. Yet, in certain matters of etiquette, no queen could be more haughty. (See *Stiles' History of Brooklyn*, pages 61 to 63).

She was twice married after the age of fifty-seven, and she died in her eighty-second year. Her house was afterwards purchased by Col. Alden Spooner, who occupied it as a residence and as the printing-office of the *Star*. It is said that Talleyrand, the eminent French diplomatist, resided in one of the three buildings opposite Hicks street for a time during his stay in America.

Next above Diana Rapalje's house stood an old yellow framed-dwelling, its stoop furnished with seats on each side of the front door. This was the residence of JOHN DOUGHTY, who was long known as a faithful and honest public officer, and most excellent man. The authorities, in consideration of his great public worth, attached his name to one of the streets in this place.

He received a liberal education, and began business with his father in the Fly Market, about the period of the Revolution. In 1785 he was elected one of the seven members of Brooklyn's first fire-company, and served eight years. In 1790 he was one of the three assessors for the town, and held the office three years in succession. In 1796 he was made town-clerk, which office he held for the space of thirty-four consecutive years, and gave general satisfaction. On the 4th of March, 1797, he manumitted and set free his negro-man, Caesar Foster, aged about 28 years, the first recorded act of manumission; from which dated the movement of practical emancipation which resulted (by about the year 1825) in the removal of the entire institution of slavery from the town of Brooklyn. As town-clerk he witnessed and recorded more manumissions from slavery than any other person in the town; "and, in fact, the duties of his office about this period required a greater portion of his time," as the "act for the judicial abolition of slavery" was passed in the month of March, 1799, after which time all the births and names of the children of slaves were ordered to be recorded in the books of the town-clerk. The various duties imposed upon Doughty continued to increase very fast; and, as the public duties could not be neglected, it occasionally became quite onerous to him, as his daily business at the market called him before daylight and usually ended at noon; then the crossing of the ferry, followed with a hasty meal, when official or other duties began, which sometimes kept him constantly employed, even unto the midnight hour. Four hours duty, from ten to two, did not then, as now, constitute an official day's work; but the business daily presenting itself was daily attended to; and Doughty performed all the required services satisfactorily. In 1812, and 1819, he was overseer of the highway. In 1812 he was a "fire-engineer," also clerk and treasurer of the fire-department; and was chosen the first incumbent of the office of chief-engi-

neer in 1816, which he resigned the next year. 1821 to 1823, he again occupied the position; and, when the department was incorporated, he was unanimously chosen president. In 1801 he was one of the school-committee for "the Ferry district," and held the office several years, becoming clerk of District School No. 1, upon its organization in 1816. In that year the village of Brooklyn was incorporated; and Mr. Doughty was among the trustees named in the bill. From 1819, until 1829, he was a trustee, a portion of the time as presiding officer. In 1830 he was "collector of the village." In fact, it may be said that through a long and well-spent life, Doughty held nearly all the various positions of a public and private character that belonged to the town and village. One of his sons, John S. Doughty, was for many years treasurer of the village and city, and at the time of his death was cashier of the Atlantic Bank of Brooklyn.

A vacant lot intervened; then came two brick buildings erected by Wm. Van Nostrand, brother of Mrs. John Middagh; then, after another vacant lot, Mrs. Middagh's house, a two-story framed structure with a double-pitched roof (No. 6, in Guy's picture).

Next on the same side of Fulton street, where Market street now enters it, came a quaint and ancient oak-framed, scallop-shingled, frame house, standing with its gable-end to the street and shadowed by two large and venerable locust-trees. Tradition, probably, does not err in attributing its erection to Rem Jansen van der Beeck, the ancestor of the Remsen family and an early settler here, where he married, in 1642, a daughter of Jan Joris de Rapalje. This old house, however, was destined to acquire an additional and peculiar interest in connection with the history of the village and city which subsequently grew up around it. As the residence of Jacob Patchen, "the last of the leather-breeches," it was the scene of a memorable conflict between individual obstinacy and old-fogyism, on the one part, and the imperative necessities of public convenience and improvement on the other, with the usual result in favor of the latter.

The "Patchen difficulties," which during so many years alternately annoyed and diverted the public of Brooklyn, form an amusing episode which cannot, for want of space, be given here. They were not terminated till after Mr. Patchen's death.

The following description of this eccentric man was by one who knew him intimately:

"His dress was seldom varied or replaced; each article—a part of which he made himself—always bore the same appearance. The round-crowned felt-hat, with a broad brim rolled up all around, sat firmly down upon his head, much lower behind than before; and this at times was ornamented with a well-smoked pipe, secured under the band. Then he presented the short kersey coat, cut in a sort of semi-quaker style, covered with metal buttons the size of a Spanish dollar; a single-breasted waistcoat, buttoned up to the throat, containing two pockets large enough to shelter his doubled hands, clutching and guarding their sterling contents, the sinews of his business. Glancing downward, your

eyes met his stoutly-formed nether limbs, encased with ancient buckskin, remarkable for its high polish, by an adhesive grease and other matter, which had rendered it waterproof; while, below it, appeared stockings, usually gray in color, and stout in texture; and Patchen fastened them below the knee by the compression of the ties of those famous leather breeches. A broad and thick pair of cow-skin shoes, fastened on the top with large steel buckles, completed his attire." Aside from his eccentricities, Mr. Patchen had the reputation of being a conscientiously honest man.



A little beyond Patchen's was the crockery and earthenware store of Mrs. Coope (mother of David Coope). Above her were the stores of old Joseph Fox; Wilson (baker); Wynant Bennet (shoes); Mrs. Earles (thread and needles); and, on the corner formed by the junction of Old and New Ferry roads, a confectionery-store which often changed owners. Crossing the head of



Old Ferry-Road, between Prospect and Sands.

Main and Prospect streets, we came to a block (a view given above), between the latter street and Sands street. On the corner was the residence of Theodorus Hunt, one of the proprietors of the New (Catherine street) Ferry. In a small building adjoining a man Lippincott kept a grocery. The next, a high-stooped, double-pitched, dormer-windowed house, was the bakery of William Philip, the baker, *par excellence*, of the village.

He was the father of Frederick A. Philip, the artist; William H. Philip, the sculptor; Dr. John C. Philip; Rev. Joseph D. Philip; and five other children, all of whom have been honorably identified with Brooklyn interests.

Next was the shop of Peter Prest, who had moved up from his old shop. In the rear part of the same

house was a small dry-goods and thread-and-needle store, kept by Mrs. Williams, an Englishwoman. It was, *par excellence*, the gossip-place for the Brooklyn village dames of that day; Mrs. Williams' repertoire being constantly replenished with the most diverting tit-bits of scandal, which were here retailed to every customer or caller—and to each in *strict confidence*.

Adjoining, was the residence of Cyrus Bill, the father of Chas. E. Bill. The old gentleman kept a school and a dry-goods store, the latter being attended by his daughter (who subsequently married George Hicks), and his son Charles. Mr. Bill's school, which was opened in November, 1818, was the successor of one kept by a Mr. D. De Vinne.

On the corner of Sands street was Drs. Ball and Wendell's office. These were prominent and highly respectable practitioners in Brooklyn. Dr. Wendell was of the family of that name in Albany.

Westerly side of the Old Road (Fulton street) from Middagh to the present Montague street.

On the southerly side of Middagh street, after passing two small frame buildings, we come to the low one-story house of Marvellous Richardson, shoe-maker; whose name, in common parlance, was either abbreviated to "Marvel," or lengthened to "Miraculous Marvel." It was built by the Hessians, during the Revolutionary war, as a guard-house; and here, also, for a short time, during the rectorship of Rev. Mr. Wright, the Episcopalians worshipped in a hired room, rudely fitted up for the purpose, with pulpit, reading-desk and seats, and here gathered the few churchmen of the village, and, indeed, of the county, among whom was Aquila Giles, Esq., and his family, from Flatbush.

Next was the dwelling of Richard H. Cornwell, cabinet and coffin maker, and a man of considerable ability. He was, in 1832, Surrogate of the county, to which office (so grimly humorously appropriate to his business) he was elected by the Methodist influence, which then largely controlled local politics. Just opposite to the lower corner of what is now High street, was the wheelwright-shop of George Smith, the father of Mr. Crawford C. Smith. It was a long, two-story frame edifice, originally erected on Sands street, and occupied by the Methodist church. When, in 1810, they determined to build larger, it had been purchased by Mr. Smith, moved into this spot, and converted to a shop. It had a long flight of stairs on the outside, leading up to Judge Garrison's *Court Room*, on the second floor.

JOHN GARRISON was for many years intimately connected with the interests of Brooklyn. He was born at Gravesend in 1764. When quite young his parents removed to Brooklyn; and, his father dying soon after, he, under the instruction of Matthew Gleaves, became a butcher, commencing business, on his own account, about 1785; and, for many years, had a stand in the Fly Market, New York. In November, 1793, he experienced religious convictions, and when the first Methodist church was formed

in the village, in 1794, he was chosen one of its board of trustees, which office he continued to hold for thirty-six years. In politics he was a violent democrat, of the old school, and was naturally regarded, by some, as a man of bitter and vindictive feelings; while, in fact, a kinder-hearted man never lived. He was a fireman in 1787, 1790, 1791, 1793, 1794; overseer of the poor in 1803 and 1804; one of the committee of the board of health in 1809; a school commissioner in 1806 and 1807; was a village trustee in 1816 and 1826, and for the larger portion of his life-time a judge of the common pleas, or justice of the peace. Indeed, he, in connection with Squire Nichols, dispensed nearly all the justice that was needed to keep the Brooklynites straight in those primitive days; and, though his legal attainments were not extensive, his strong common sense, his shrewdness in judging character, and his straight-forward way of getting at the *justice*, if not the law, of the cases brought before him, rendered him, in the opinion of all who knew him, one of the best justices Brooklyn ever had. In person he was six feet two inches high, remarkably large, and weighing three hundred pounds. Towards the close of his life he inclined towards corpulency, but always retained his early activity and erectness. He was invariably dressed in a suit of "pepper-and-salt" mixed clothing, cut very loose. Many pleasant stories are yet told of his queer ways and sayings, by those who were wont to frequent his court-room. A characteristic one is the following: On one occasion, a trial was going on before Judge Garrison, the case being a suit for money. The long, warm summer's day had been almost entirely occupied by the arguments and pleadings of the opposing counsel, and judge and jury gave indubitable signs of weariness. The lawyer who closed the case requested the judge to "charge the jury," a proceeding somewhat unusual in the simple routine of the justice's court. Thereupon, the judge, rising with great deliberation and with some evident hesitancy, turned his burly figure towards the jury, and delivered himself thus: "Gentlemen of the Jury! You have heard the learned counsel on both sides, and the last lawyer who spoke has asked me to charge the jury. My charge shall be very short;" and turning to the contesting parties in the suit, he exclaimed, "I think that *that* man (pointing to one) owes *that* man (pointing to the other) the money, *and he ought to pay it!*" Again, M. T. sued G. T., before Judge Garrison, for the sum of ten shillings, and got a decision in his favor. G. T., however, contumaciously refused to pay, whereupon M. T. complained to the judge. "What!" said the judge, "won't he pay you? Well, I'll issue a summons and I'll *guarantee* he'll pay you, then." Accordingly, the summons was issued, and judgment obtained, but the money didn't come. Whereupon, M. T., meeting the judge soon after, said to him, "Look here, Squire, you *guaranteed* that debt, and now, if *you* don't pay it, I'll *sue you*." "Oh, well," said the judge, "that debt must be settled," and forthwith paid M. T. *five shillings* out of his own pocket. He died January, 1831, his remains being interred under the Sands street Methodist church, of which he so long had been a useful and devoted member. Judge Garrison's residence, during the early portion of his life, was in Doughty street; afterwards on the south-east corner of Washington and High streets. His portrait is preserved in Guy's Brooklyn picture.

Next the wheelwright-shop was a house occupied by Joseph Moser and wife, known to every one in the village as "Uncle Josey," and "Aunt Rachel."

JOSEPH MOSER, like his friend "Poppy" Snow, with whom he was associated in "every good word and work," was one of those quiet public benefactors which every community

needs. Peculiar in gait, clean-shaven, round-shouldered, and dressed always in drab-colored clothes, he was never missed from his place in the Methodist church on the Sabbath. His ministrations to the sick, and the heavy laden; his labors in the Sabbath-school; his untiring interest in the youth of the place, endeared him to the hearts of both old and young. He was a builder, and amassed what, in those days, was an independent fortune; and many of Brooklyn's most prosperous citizens owed their welfare to his unsolicited aid. His purse was ever open, and it probably never entered his head to say "No!" when called upon. Especially in the establishment of the churches of his own beloved denomination, was his liberality unbounded. But, through losses entailed upon him by others, he became deprived of his hard-earned property, and dependent upon the charity of relatives. Within a few years of his death, which occurred on the 8th of February, 1854, in his seventy-eighth year, he occupied, for the brief period of a few months, an inspectorship in the New York customs, and an inspectorship of pavements in Brooklyn, both of which were bestowed upon him unsolicited, and by his political adversaries. His life and death alike proved him a devoted, active and useful Christian.

A very old one-and-a-half-story house stood on the corner of the present Cranberry street; then a carpenter-shop—subsequently the paint-shop of old Matthew (father of ex-mayor George) Hall. Just beyond, and nearly on the line of the present Orange street, was an old house occupied by Cortlandt Van Buren, and afterward the residence of Losee Van Nostrand. Next to this was "Biddy Stephenson's liquor-saloon and Ice-Cream Garden," a place much resorted to for the holding of town, village, and public meetings. The "Garden" extended to the property of James B. Clark, Esq., an industrious, plodding attorney, for many years District Attorney of the County, and a dealer in real-estate, who occupied a large piece of land (some 200 feet front) leased from the Middagh estate, through which Pineapple street has since been opened, leaving the old "Clarke pump" out, on the corner.

Next to Mr. Clarke's grounds was the parsonage building of St. Ann's; and next to it, just on the lower side of the turn of the present Clinton street into Fulton, was the pretty two-story framed dwelling of SAMUEL SACKETT.

He was of a Newtown family and a most excellent man; for many years overseer of the poor, in Brooklyn, to which, as well as to the duties of a trustee of the only public school, he gave his undivided attention. He was a man of polished manners and agreeable address, and the father of Clarence D., and Grenville A., both lawyers and deceased. The former was a village trustee in 1826, and a member of the State legislature; while the latter, although a diligent and competent lawyer, was possessed of more than ordinary poetical genius, and, under the signature of "Alfred," wrote some of the best and most widely circulated of the fugitive poetry of the day, in *The New York Mirror*, *The New York Times* and *Long Island Star*.

Along the westerly side of the Old Road (Fulton street), from Orange to Clinton streets, extended a row of magnificent old elms; the largest, perhaps, being those along in front of Lawyer Clarke's grounds. Elm, mulberry, locust, cedar, and willow-trees abounded in

the village at that day, to a greater extent than the promenaders of the present city can realize.

The next house on this side of the road, and very nearly opposite to the present Johnson street, was the residence of JOHN VALENTINE SWERTCOPE, one of those Hessians who had been left (perhaps not unwillingly) upon our shores by the receding wave of British domination, after the declaration of peace in 1783.

With his long gray beard, his soldierly tread and strongly marked features, he was certainly the quaintest and most original character in the village. In the British service he had been an armorer; and, very naturally, found some employment in furbishing and repairing the guns, pistols, etc., of his neighbors in Brooklyn. By industry and thrift he amassed a very snug little property, so that he was commonly reputed to have found a buried treasure. In course of time he purchased from the De Bevoise brothers a strip of land off the end of their farm, upon which he erected a dwelling-house, and, adjoining it on the north, a gunsmith-shop, mostly used by his son John. Old Swertcope, among other contrivances, invented an air-gun, the balls of which were clay pellets; and this weapon was an object of great curiosity, and of no small fear, to the boys especially, in their predatory excursions into the old man's orchard. Much of his time was occupied in attending to his fine garden and orchard, where he used to prowl about, in apple season, with whip in hand and a dog at his heels, ready to pounce upon the boys who were skirmishing around his trees. He also did a considerable business in the distilling of rose-water. Roses, at that time, were raised in great abundance in the gardens of Brooklyn; and many persons were accustomed to send their annual crop of rose-leaves to Swertcope, who returned to each customer one-half the yield in rose-water; reserving the other half as payment for services in distillation. Having procured from the De Bevoises some of their fine strawberry-plants, of which fruit they had previously held the monopoly in the New York market, he very soon, by his good management, succeeded in dividing with them the reputation and the business of the best berries. In addition to these, he derived no inconsiderable income from the sale of a superior kind of bitters, which he manufactured; and he might be seen almost every morning, wending his way to the ferry, with a basketful of bottles of these bitters, which he peddled off in New York, before his return to Brooklyn. He was somewhat of a miser, and the large amount of money which he amassed, all in specie, was kept in a heavy iron-bound box, under his bed; and its key during his last illness was always placed under his pillow. The late George Hall used to relate that, having occasion to visit him, a little before his death, some one called at the house to obtain payment of a small bill, and the sick man directed his daughter to get the necessary amount out of the trunk. As she was engaged a little too long in searching for a coin, the sick man became impatient and suspicious, and raising himself up in bed, exclaimed, "Come away! Come away! vat you doin' mit your tam money-rousin?"

In the rear of Swertcope's land, just behind the present Presbyterian church, on the west side of Clinton street, was the ancient private burial-ground of the Middagh family. Along the southerly side of Swertcope's land was "Love lane," leading down the De Bevoise place on the Heights; and, a little distance beyond the lane was Lawrence Brower's tavern, called "Mount Pleasant Garden."

Beyond Brower's, a little north of the corner of Montague street, was the "Bee-Hive," kept by Mrs. Wells, the mother-in-law of Capt. Hudson, U. S. N. It stood back a little from the old road, with its "bee-hive" sign projecting over the walk, and was subsequently occupied by Dr. Hurd.

The easterly side of the Old Road (Fulton street) from Sands street to Myrtle avenue.

On the southerly corner of Sands street was John Harmer's patent floor-cloth factory. Subsequently, about 1819, he erected a new factory in Middagh, near Fulton street. Next to Harmer's was the residence and grocery-store of high sheriff John Dean, father of Col. Joseph Dean. He was a prominent politician in the county, was appointed sheriff in March, 1813, and "Dean's Corners," as it was generally called, was to the male portion of the village what Mrs. Williams' shop was to the female, a great rendezvous for (political and business) "chit-chat." Adjoining Mr. Dean's grocery, with an intervening space, was his extensive shoe-shop. Beyond this were two small old buildings; then the residence of George Smith, whose wheelwright-shop was on the opposite side of the road; and then, the two-story frame dwelling-house and grocery-store of Isaac Moser, brother of "Uncle Josey" Moser, of whom we have already spoken.

Across High street was a bakery-shop; Mr. John G. Murphy's house; "Gus" Back's, with his whip-factory in the rear; some vacant lots, and then a little north of the corner of Nassau street, a long, one-story-and-a-half edifice, built of small brick said to have been brought from Holland. This venerable building had been honored by having been the seat of the New York Provincial Congress, in 1746 and 1752, when driven from New York city by the prevalence there of the small-pox, and many important acts were passed here. It was also Gen. Putnam's head-quarters, previous to the battle of Brooklyn, in August, 1776. It stood some fifteen or eighteen feet above the level of the road and was, for many years, occupied by old SQUIRE NICHOLS, a cabinet-maker by trade, and, for thirteen years previous to 1822, a justice of the peace.

His shop adjoined the eastern end of the dwelling. Subsequently it was occupied by Samuel E. Clements, as the post-office and the office of his paper, *The Long Island Patriot*. On the second floor old Mr. William Hartshorn (who died in 1859) kept a little stationery-shop, and cases where he set type for the *Patriot*. In 1832, in consequence of the widening of Fulton street, the old house was condemned to demolition. Squire Nichols, though far from rich, was an honest man and universally respected. He was a native of Newark, N. J.; entered the American army as a private in 1775; was in the whole of that wonderful and unfortunate expedition of the northern army, under Gen. Arnold, against Quebec; and was appointed adjutant of the 4th regiment, commanded by Col. Holmes. In 1776 he was a lieutenant in Col. Nicholson's regiment raised at Quebec, was at the siege of Fort Schuyler, and the capture of Burgoyne's army. Also, in the actions of September 19th and October 7th, and other skirmishes; and,

at the battle of Rhode Island, October 14th, 1778, where he commanded his company, in the absence of its captain, was twice wounded. He was short and stout in stature and very active and energetic in mind, although somewhat crippled in his feet; and, even until within a few years of his death, was one of the most active justices of the peace which Brooklyn ever had, although he would drink, and not unfrequently swear, even "while on the bench;" still these were faults which were attributable probably to his early army associations. He died in November, 1835, and his remains were escorted to the tomb by the mayor and civil officers of the city, by four military companies of Brooklyn, and two from New York, forming the largest funeral which was ever known in Brooklyn, and Capt. Brower's Infantry company fired a volley over the grave of the old veteran.

Across Nassau street, on the southerly corner, was the large square house occupied by Capt. John O'Sullivan, a retired shipmaster, and father-in-law of Dr. R. S. Thorne and Dr. Hazlett. Then Willy Stephenson's "Auld Lang Syne" Inn, and the gardens attached to its southerly side. On the site of these gardens afterwards stood the old theatre. Next, on the corner of Concord street, was the residence of Dr. Joseph Gedney Tarlton Hunt, for many years in active service as a naval surgeon, and subsequently on duty at the Brooklyn navy-yard.

The southerly corner of Concord street was then a vacant lot, adjoining which was the residence of Rike Reid, batter; and for many years a constable in the village, thus commemorated in village rhyme:

Do you not fear the terrors of the law,
The direful energy of Justice Nichols?
Or lest *Rike Reid* let fall his mighty paw,
And put you all in very pretty pickles.

Then, the house of Joseph Sprague (afterwards mayor), who had in the rear of his ground a factory for making (by dog-power) the "Whittemore cards" used in the manufacture of woollen goods.

A little above stood an old meeting-house originally erected for the use of the "Independent" society, in 1785, and which afterwards came into the hands of the Episcopalians of Brooklyn. It adjoined the northerly side of the old Episcopal burial-ground belonging to St. Ann's congregation. It gradually fell into decay, but was patched up and occupied as a school-room, by Rev. Samuel Seabury and John Swinburne, who kept here a classical and English school of great excellence, at which many of our oldest citizens, now living, received their early education. Mr. Seabury, who had been an assistant to Mr. Evan Beynon, in his school on Concord street, until the death of that worthy pedagogue, was a fine scholar, a strict disciplinarian and a thorough teacher, and was afterward widely known as an accomplished editor and theologian of the Episcopal church. His assistant, John Swinburne, was a conscientious, methodical teacher, a good disciplinarian, and in all respects a faithful teacher and worthy man. The graveyard was for many years disused, being finally removed in 1860, and "St. Ann's Buildings" erected on its site.

Adjoining the southerly side of the Episcopal burying-ground was the Matthew Gleaves property, extending along the road to a point about midway between Tillary and Johnson streets, and back from the road to a point nearly midway between Washington and Adams streets. On this (subsequently known as the Tillary) property stood the head of Norris L. Martin's rope-walk, which extended back to the Wallabout Meadows. The next building was Dempsey's hotel, "The Village Garden," where the gay young fellows used to go to "shoot turkey." Then, with an intervening vacant space, the residence of Capt. Samuel Angus, United States Navy, originally built by old Matthew Gleaves. Then, the home of old Mrs. Miller, mother of Mr. E. G. Miller; afterward Mr. Henry Waring built a residence for himself on this property.

Near Mrs. Miller's was Moses Montgomery, originally a gardener, and his garden was called "Shamrock Hall." From this garden, the Johnson estate extended up to the line of the Duffield estate, about the corner of Adams and Willoughby streets, where was the rope-walk, which extended along the line of the estate, and was leased by James Engles.

That portion of the village lying north and east of the Old Ferry road (Fulton street), and along the streets at that time opened through it, viz.: Water, Front, Main, Prospect, Sands, High, Concord and Nassau streets.

Water street. On the north side of the street, between Old Ferry road and Dock street, were but six buildings, of which only two challenge any special notice, viz.: Townsend & Cox's (afterwards Richard Mott's) tavern; and the large brick and stone distillery not far from Dock street and fronting the river, said to have been built by John Jackson. It was here that the Brothers Graham commenced their Brooklyn career as distillers, about 1816, and were succeeded by old Cunningham, the Scotchman; and he in turn by Robert Bach.

On the south side of the street, between Old Ferry and Dock streets, were: on the corner, Barnum's Hotel; vacant lots; the livery stables belonging to the Townsend & Cox tavern opposite; the tan-yard of Losee Van Nostrand (afterwards of Talford & Van Nostrand); and some vacant lots (extending nearly to the corner of Dock street) upon which Alexander Birbeck subsequently erected his blacksmithery.

At the foot of Dock street, a few years later, was David Anderson's stone-yard, and from this point there was nothing on the north side of the street, which was washed by the tide, except a few tar-sheds belonging to Mr. A. H. Van Bokkelen, until within fifty or sixty feet of Main street, where was a small blacksmith-shop, and next it, on the corner, a large frame building used for storage of salt.

On the east side, between Dock and Main streets,

were the rears of Augustus Graham's and Joshua Sands' gardens; the dwelling of William Cornwell, the tailor; and, on the south-west corner of Water and Main streets, a tavern and livery-stable kept by Whitehead Howard, and in which one of the Bownes was interested.

At the foot of Main street was the "New," or Catharine street, ferry, and a small public market, bearing a close resemblance to that at the Fulton ferry, and commonly known as "Titus' market," from the fact that Abiel Titus kept a butcher's stand there.

On the north-east corner of Main and Water streets was Van Winkle's tavern and grocery, and, a little beyond, a cooper-shop; and, on the south-east corner, a grocery kept by Peter Snyder, who was also a ferryman upon the New ferry; and from this point, to near the line of the present Bridge street, was an open sand-beach, upon which the ship and dock-builders of New York were accustomed to moor their timber-rafts, which had been floated down the North river, and were sold and delivered from this spot. Main street was between high and low-water mark, until it reached the corner of present Pearl street; then, the water-lines ran out to the corner of the present Gold street, and thence, along the line of the present Marshall street, to the navy-yard. From the beach the land rose gradually into hills; and, near the foot of one of these eminences, about eighty feet eastward of where the present Adams street comes to the river, stood the famous "old Tulip Tree," said to have measured thirty feet at its lower, and twenty-five feet at its upper, circumference.

On a high hill, near the line of the present Bridge street, was a large establishment called "Mount Prospect Tavern," a great resort of the New York rowdies, who used to come over in row-boats from the city, accompanied by their girls, and hold high carnival here.

On the north-east corner of Water and Bridge streets was a large frame building known as "the Red Stores," used as a hay-press by the Messrs. Thorne, with a dock in front, upon which the hay-sloops discharged their cargoes. From this point to the present Little street were only high sand-hills, with here and there a shabby house.

Upon the south-west corner of Water and Little streets was an old tavern, kept by one Scott, and torn down, after his death, by his widow, who erected a new house upon the spot, which was kept as an inn for many years after. In 1817, Capt. Evans, then commandant at the United States navy-yard, opened, mainly for his convenience, a gate into the yard, on the line of Water street; and, in connection with John Little, established a ferry from the foot of Little street to Walnut (near Jackson) street, New York (as they said), for the accommodation of the mechanics and others employed in the yard. The establishment of the ferry was speedily followed by the erection of a

number of dwellings, on the eastern line of Little street, up to the navy-yard wall. On the opposite side of the street, and against the navy-yard wall, Little set up a tavern; and, adjoining him, Barney Henrietta, an Irish sawyer in the yard, purchased a house and lot, which he occupied until his death, in 1825. Grog-shops arose in all directions in the neighborhood, and real-estate commanded a better price than it then did at the Fulton ferry. Upon the hill, immediately in the rear of Henrietta's house, was erected a building, the first floor of which was occupied as a "Shooting Gallery," and, in the upper part, which overlooked the interior of the navy-yard, was placed a "shuffle-board." This building, overlooking the navy-yard, was a great place of resort for those who wished to obtain a view thereof; the principal attraction, at that time, being the building of the United States line-of-battle ship *Ohio*, by Henry Eckford, which was launched in May, 1820.

Front street, west side. Next to the Remsen house (which stood upon the site of the old Rapalje house), during the years immediately succeeding the Revolutionary war (1784-1815), there had been an old two-story framed dwelling occupied by Dr. Barbarin, the first settled physician of Brooklyn; while, next beyond, with an intervening space, was a small framed dwelling belonging to the Rapalje estate. This estate, comprising about one hundred and sixty acres, had been purchased from the commissioners of forfeiture by Messrs. Comfort and Joshua Sands, who paid for it, it is said, in soldiers' pay-certificates, which they had bought up in large quantities at a rate of discount which made the operation a very good speculation for them. Old Mrs. Rapalje, the mother of John Rapalje, by virtue of some right in the property, refused to give possession, which necessitated the official interference of the sheriff, who put the old lady out into the street, in her arm-chair.

The Sands Brothers were from Cow Neck, since called Sands' Point, Queens County, L. I., at which place their great-grandfather was an original settler.

COMFORT, the eldest, born in 1748, was, during early life, a clerk in a store of his native village; went to New York in 1762, and entered a store in Peck Slip. In 1769 he commenced business on his own account and also married, and had amassed a considerable fortune before the opening of the Revolutionary war. After the Declaration of Peace, in 1783, he settled permanently at New York. He was an active and useful patriot. He served from Nov., 1775, to July, 1776, as a member of the New York Provincial congress; was then chosen, by the New York convention, as auditor-general of the State, at a salary of £300. This office he resigned Oct., 1781, and, with his brothers Richardson and Joshua, took a contract to supply the northern army with provisions for the year 1782. In 1783 he became a partner with his brother Joshua, and carried on an extensive and lucrative mercantile business, until 1794; and represented the city several times in the assembly. He was twice married, and died at Hoboken, N. J., September 22d, 1834, aged eighty-six years. As

a merchant, one of the first directors of the old bank of New York, and president of the Chamber of Commerce, he held a high position in the mercantile circles of his day.

His younger brother, JOSHUA SANDS, who became more intimately identified with Brooklyn, by the purchase of the Rapalje estate, was born in 1757. At the age of fifteen he commenced his business-life as a clerk; but, in 1776, was invited by Col. Trumbull, of Connecticut, to accept a position in the commissariat department of the American army, with the rank of captain. He contributed very material aid in facilitating the retreat of the American army from Long Island, after the battle of August 26th, 1776. In 1777 he, together with his brothers Richardson and Comfort, tendered proposals for the supply of clothing and provisions to the northern army. These were accepted by Robert Morris, and were faithfully carried out on their part; but the scarcity of means at the command of the treasury department not allowing of a fulfillment of the contract on the part of the government, they became great sufferers, although afterwards partially reimbursed by a special act of congress. At the close of the war he became a partner with his brother Comfort in mercantile pursuits, and, in 1784, they were the purchasers of the Rapalje estate, as already stated. In 1786 he removed his residence to Brooklyn and built for himself, on his new purchase, a handsome frame mansion, about fifty feet square, and furnished with remarkable elegance for that day. This house, situated on the north side of Front street, about a hundred feet east of Dock street (his coach-house and stables being on the opposite side of Front street), was the largest in the village at the time, and was surrounded by a fine garden, which extended to the river. It subsequently came into the possession of John B. Cazeaux, Esq., who, in 1824, converted it into two dwellings, one remaining as No. 25 Front street. About this time, also, Mr. Sands made another addition to the material interests of the town, with which he had become identified by residence. Conceiving the idea of manufacturing the cordage and rigging for his own vessels, he imported both machinery and workmen from England, and established here extensive rope-walks, which became the beginning of a new and most important branch of industry. Mr. Sands represented this district in the State senate, from 1792 to 1798; was a member of the council of appointment for the southern district of New York, in January, 1797, and was judge of the county of Kings. In 1797 he was appointed collector of the customs of the port of New York, but was removed by President Jefferson in 1801. He was, also, president of the Merchants' Bank; and, in 1803-1805, represented this district in congress, to which he was again sent in 1825-1827. In 1824 he was chosen president of the board of trustees of Brooklyn, with which village he was always prominently connected in political, religious and social affairs, and which he lived to see an incorporated and thriving city. He died in 1835, universally respected, it having been justly said of him, that "no man enjoyed more fully the esteem and confidence of the inhabitants, without distinction of party, and all his official duties were performed with singular ability and fidelity."

This was the appearance of Front street during the first few years after the Revolution. In 1815, its appearance had somewhat changed. Beyond the Remsen house and two vacant lots was a modern brick house, owned by Mr. John Cox; then, three yellow brick houses (present Nos. 9, 11, 13 Front street) belonging to John Fisher, who lived in the corner store (on Dock street), his garden extending back to Water

street. On the other side of Dock street was the substantial brick house built by Augustus Graham, in 1814 or 1815. On the rear of this property Mr. Graham subsequently erected his white-lead manufactory. Beyond the Sands mansion and several vacant lots was an old-fashioned two-story house, said to have belonged to the Rapalje family, and afterward to have been occupied by Mr. Adrian Van Bokkelen, merchant, whose tar-sheds on the rear of this lot have already been spoken of. Then Robert Bach's house, afterward occupied by John Benson; and, with another interval, the two-story framed dwelling of William Cornwell, the tailor. On the north-west corner of Front and Main streets stood a two-story framed grocery, in which the late Edward Copeland (ex-Mayor) was said to have commenced business.

On the *southerly* side of Front street, on the corner of the Old Ferry road, was the Thomas W. Birdsall house and store (Guy's picture, No. 1); then Abiel Titus' yard and his slaughter-house (Guy's picture, No. 9), on the corner of the present James street, which, however, at that time, was simply a passage-way up from Front street, containing a few small buildings, mostly occupied by negroes. On the opposite corner of the alley was the carpenter's shop and dwelling (Guy's picture, No. 10) of Benjamin Meeker. He was a quiet, unassuming man; a "good Clintonian" in politics; originally an attendant at the Methodist Church, but afterwards a Presbyterian; was a member of the Mechanics Association, and died in 1849, much respected. His portrait is one of those given in Guy's picture. Next, with an intervening vacant lot, was Mrs. Chester's (Guy's picture, No. 11), memorable as the "Cradle of the Drama" in Brooklyn, a two-story house with a long stoop in front; and then (Guy's picture, No. 12) a large brick house, old Mr. Cunningham's residence, still standing; then an alley which is now called Garrison street. Between this alley and Main street (Guy's picture, No. 13) were about six lots of ground occupied as a wood and lumber-yard, by Jacob Hicks, who lived on the corner.

"WOOD HICKS," as he was called—the better to distinguish him from several others of the same name—was a clever, jolly old man, with a "horse-laugh" that might be heard a mile off—always clad in a roundabout, and carrying in his hand the measuring-stick with which he measured his stock-in-trade. He had two children, Charles and John M. Hicks, who inherited the ample fortune which their father's industry had accumulated.

Upon the *north-east* corner of Front and Main streets was a grocery, and upon the *south-east* corner a large tenement-house; but, although Front street was opened for travel for some five hundred yards farther from this point, northward to where the sand-hills again presented themselves, yet there were no buildings of any importance on its north side, and only a few miserable ones on its south side.

Main street. Omitting a repetition of the buildings already mentioned, as on the corners of Water and

Front streets, simply those of importance on this street from the river to Prospect street may be noticed.

On the *westerly* side of the street, and south of Hicks' wood-yard, were a few small wooden dwellings, and then David Anderson's house, whose stone-yard has already been mentioned as being at the foot of Dock street. There were no other houses of note on this side but those near the junction of Fulton and Main, all of which extended through from street to street.

Along the easterly side of Main street were but few buildings. On, or near, the present corner of Main and York streets, was John Moon's house; and his next neighbor was the house and garden of Capt. John O. Zuill, master of the good ship *Gleaner*, in the West India trade. Next him was James Cornell, butcher, his slaughter-house in the rear, and adjoining his house an *ice-house*—he being, it is said, the first man in Brooklyn who put up ice for summer use. Next was the house and paint-shop of Capt. John Allen, commander of one of the uniformed military companies of the village.

Then some small tenements, and, on the north-east corner of *Prospect street*, a large frame building, where James Burtis kept a grocery and feed-store. Along the *north* side of Prospect street, next to Burtis', there were, on either corner of Stewart's alley, small two-story frame houses. The north-east corner of Prospect street and Stewart's alley was most pleasantly associated, in the minds of early Brooklynites, with a famous restaurant kept there for many years, by John Joseph, otherwise better known as "Johnny Joe," and who was "a character" of the olden times. Then Mr. Stewart's comfortable double house, and a frame dwelling adjoining. Then were hills, about as far as the present Jay street, where there was a two-story frame house, with a dairy establishment attached. Beyond this, Prospect street, although open, did not contain more than ten small tenements. At, or near, the present Gold street was a gate, from which a pathway, or lane, led up to King's hill, as it was then called, to a large mansion situated on the highest part of the hill, and occupied by Robert Morris.

At about the termination of the present York street, were the United States Marine Barracks, which could only be reached (for York street was not then open or used as a street) "across lots" from Sands street, or *via* Jackson street, at that time a mere crooked lane. These barracks, substantially built of brick, were occupied in front as the residence of the commandant of the corps, and the rear (which extended into the navy-yard) by the inferior officers and privates. The southern entrance to the yard was some fifty feet west of the present one.

Sands street, from the Old road (Fulton street) to the Wallabout toll-bridge.

Beyond Drs. Ball and Wendell's office and drug-

store, on the northerly side of Sands street, after leaving the Old road, were vacant lots to old St. Ann's church, which then fronted on Sands street, with its side doors on Washington street. It was, at that time, the *new* St. Ann's, the first permanent home which the Episcopalians of Brooklyn had attained, after nearly a quarter of a century's buffeting about among private houses, barns, and old barracks. It was erected in 1805, during the rectorship of the Rev. John Ireland. Heavy in form, constructed of rough stone, overlaid with a coat of plaster and painted of a dark *blue* color, it would probably be considered, now-a-days, as a miracle of ugliness. Even then, the smallness of its windows and the *tout ensemble* of its exterior gave point to the jocular remark of an irreverent wag of a rival denomination, that, he "had often heard of the *church militant*, and its *canons*, but he'd never before seen its *port-holes*." The ground upon which it stood had been given, for the purpose, by Mr. and Mrs. Joshua Sands, whose benefactions ceased only with their lives; and it was a deserved as well as graceful compliment to the latter, which combined her name with that of an ancient saint, in the naming of the edifice.

It was a goodly company which assembled within the hallowed walls of old St. Ann's in those days. There was Joshua Sands, tall and commanding, and with the air of one whom no amount of business could perplex; Major Fanning C. Tucker, still taller in figure, and adding to the strict performance of every church duty the graces of the highest breeding; gentlemanly John Moore; the dignified and courteous Gen. J. G. Swift; the Pierreponts; the Treadwells; the Clarkes; Sacketts; Ellisons; Coleses; Petits; Smiths; Van Burens; Van Nostrands; Sullivans; Hudsons; Worthingtons; Stewarts; Gibbises; Cornells; Middaghs; Hickses; Warings; Marches; Carters; Spooners, etc., etc.; indeed, the catalogue would embrace a history of Brooklyn!

On the opposite or northeast corner of Sands and Washington streets was the residence of Fanning C. Tucker, and next beyond, on the same side of the street, was a neat and handsome two-story frame house, occupied by old Mr. John Moore and his two maiden sisters.

On the same side of Sands, below Pearl street, was a large two-story brick house, in which, after about 1818, George S. Wise, jr., Purser in the United States Navy-yard, resided. Between Purser Wise's and the nearest line of Jay street was the residence of Josey Herbert.

With the exception of a few small tenements, Wise's and Herbert's were about the last buildings upon the north side of Sands street. From the end of Sands street extended the Wallabout bridge to about the junction of present Flushing and Portland avenues, where the toll-gate controlled the travel of the Newtown Pike road, by Sands street, and also by the road running past Fort Greene, across to the Flatbush turnpike. Near the Wallabout bridge was Sands' rope-walk, extending from the south side of Sands street, all along the Wallabout

meadows, to about the foot of the present Tillary street, in some places being built upon piles. Around this walk were several tenements, occupied by the employés in the walk.

Returning, along the *south* side of Sands street, to what is now Bridge street, was nothing but sand-hills, among which nestled a few negro shanties. On the corner of Bridge street was a substantial frame dwelling with a large garden attached; the next most noteworthy house being that of Fanning C. Tucker, which he occupied after he sold his other house to Mr. Carter.

Across by the present Pearl street was Thomas C. Spink's cottage, and which, like all the residences on Sands street, was furnished with a large flower and vegetable garden. A large two-story dwelling stood on the south-east corner of Sands and Washington streets, fronting on the latter, and with stables in rear; and, on the opposite corner, was Dr. Chas. Hall's house, with a fine garden attached. Then the Methodist church, commonly known as the "Old White Church," occupying the site of the present Sands street Methodist Episcopal Church. Next to the church was the residence of one of the "fathers" of the village, "Poppy" Snow.

After the date of this sketch (about 1816), Sands street began to fill up rapidly, and was for many years quite a fashionable avenue of residences. Among these later comers may be mentioned, on the *north side*, Mr. Cunningham, the distiller, who built next to John Moore, between Washington and Adams; Josiah Bowen, a printer (of the firm of Pray & Bowen), and subsequently a Methodist preacher, next west of Purser Wise's house; below Jay street, Mr. Jehiel Jagger, a hatter, doing business in the city of New York. Mr. Jagger took the house, about 1820, from its previous owner, Capt. Clarke. On the *southern side* James B. Clarke, Esq., and Thomas Kirk, between Washington and Adams; between Adams and Pearl, Aime J. Barbarin, father of Mr. George Barbarin; Capt. Angus, of the navy; John C. Bennett, tailor; James Herbert, grocer, etc.

High street, although opened nearly to the present Bridge street, had but few buildings. Upon its *north side*, near Fulton, was Isaac Moser's grocery store, a brother of "Uncle Jo" Moser. Then, vacant lots up to an alley, on the easterly corner of which lived Richard V. W. Thorne. Next him was the Methodist parsonage house; and, then, a building used by that congregation for "class-meetings," and, adjoining, the rear entrance to their burial-ground and church. Beyond this point, on the north side of the street, were but few houses, the land being mostly occupied by the grounds and gardens of the residences on the south side of Sands street. Along the *south side* of High street, between Fulton and Washington streets, were only three or four houses, and, beyond the latter street, not over six or seven. About on the line of the present Bridge street, in front of the African Methodist Church, was a splendid grove of pop-

lars. From 1813 to 1818 there was a great mania in Brooklyn for this kind of tree, and scarcely a place of any pretension that did not have its poplar. On this spot a nursery of these trees was established by an enterprising citizen, to his ultimate loss.

Nassau street. Beyond Justice Nichols' place, on the *north* corner of Fulton street, were but one or two houses before reaching Washington street, on the north-west corner of which was Mr. John Green's house, and a large garden, and next him Evan Beynon's school-house. Beyond this were but few houses of any note.

On the *south* side of Nassau street, adjoining Capt. Sullivan's, on the corner of Fulton street, was Mr. Samuel Vail's neat two-story frame house, and between that and Washington street two or three houses. On the south-east corner of Washington street was the large frame house built by an Englishman, and afterward occupied by J. Fletcher Garrison, Esq., son of old Judge John Garrison. Adjoining his garden was the residence of Mr. William Wallace, a cloth merchant in New York. Beyond, on the south side of Nassau, were only some ten or fifteen houses, occupied, mostly, by mechanics and laboring men. The only noticeable building was the old "Alms House," a large framed edifice, about one hundred feet from the present Jay street, and surrounded by about two acres of ground. A lower room in this building also served the purpose of a "lock-up" or police station, wherein the village constables confined those committed to their charge for safe keeping. The old Alms-house building was subsequently purchased in 1825, by Mr. Josiah Dow, who converted it into a dwelling-house for his own use; and, in order to rid it of the odium attaching to the name of a "poor-house," erected upon it a large sign of "Wakefield House." The sign, however (while it gradually effaced from the public mind the stigma of the old name), provoked numberless calls from strangers, who very naturally mistook the place for a hotel; so that, as soon as practicable, Mr. Dow was glad to remove the sign.

Concord street. On its *northern* side, at its junction with Fulton, was Dr. Joseph J. G. T. Hunt's office and drug-shop, with stable adjoining. Then came an alley, the present Liberty street. Beyond, on north-west corner of present Washington street, was Dr. Osborne's residence and garden. On the north-east corner of the present Washington street was the large framed house of Adam Treadwell, a New York merchant. Between this house and the present Pearl street was a considerable hill, upon which were no improvements. From thence to the line of the present Gold street were only a few small houses, chiefly occupied by laboring men and mechanics; and the same may be said of the opposite or *southern* side of the street, on which the school-house of District No. 1 (where a Public School now stands) was the only noticeable feature. Concord street, "sixty years ago," was the last public street,

within the village limits, which was opened eastward from Fulton street.

We next pass *through that portion of the village lying south and west of the old highway (Fulton street), now known as "The Heights," and the streets which had at that time been opened in that direction, viz.: the Shore road (now Furman street), Joralemon's lane, Everit, Elizabeth, Hicks, Aert (now Henry street), Mid-dagh, Doughty and McKenney streets, etc.*

Elizabeth street, so named, it is said, after the wife of one of its old residents, still exists between Fulton street (just above Carl's stables) and Doughty street. In the olden time it was the only means of access to the ferry from the road along the beach, now Furman street.

Doughty street, into which Elizabeth street opened, extended from Hicks street to the East river, at which was a public landing used by the butchers of Brooklyn from time immemorial. On the southerly side of Doughty street were four or five dwellings; one of which, a brick and stone house, directly opposite to the head of Elizabeth street, was originally the residence of Israel Horsfield; and, during the revolutionary war, was occupied by the Hessians as their main guard-room.

ISRAEL and TIMOTHY HORSFIELD—men of mark in their day—were the sons of Timothy Horsfield, of Liverpool, England, where they were born. Israel came to this country in 1720, and became a freeman of New York. About three years after, his brother Timothy arrived and entered into business with him, as butchers. Their trade (principally with the shipping) increased, in a few years, to such an extent that they were obliged to seek other accommodations than could be obtained in the city of New York for the prosecution of their business. Long Island, which at that time furnished the New York market with most of its live stock, presented advantages which, together with the offer by the corporation, in 1734, of a favorable lease of a portion of the Brooklyn shore, near the ferry, induced them to remove there. They immediately built a wharf at the foot of the present Doughty street, together with a slaughtering place and the necessary buildings for residence. The next year they leased the two best stands (Nos. 1 and 2) in the Old Slip market, in the city of New York; their dressed meat being brought over daily, in row-boats, by their own slaves, directly to the "Old Slip," whence it was carried, in wheelbarrows, to their stands in the market. The Horsfields accumulated a large property and owned a considerable amount of land on the Heights, near the ferry.

TIMOTHY HORSFIELD, in 1739, was awakened by the preaching of the celebrated Whitfield, then visiting in America; and, in 1741, became acquainted with the Brethren (*Moravians*), and joined their church. In 1745 (during the French and Indian war) he was appointed colonel of the Brooklyn militia, but resigned his commission on account of much jealousy, which was felt and expressed in certain quarters. Soon after he was made the executor of the estate of an intimate friend and zealous Moravian, and, in 1750, removed with his family to Bethlehem, Penn., where he resided in a stone house, built for him by the brethren, which is still standing. His ample means enabled him to live among the Moravians without business cares, except such as pertained to the office of justice of the peace, which he held among them for twelve years. He stood deservedly high among

them, being a man of unblemished character, and was of much assistance to the brethren in their intercourse with the provincial government and with the Indian tribes in that part of the colony, while his acquaintance with business matters rendered him a kind of legal adviser to his German friends, who were unacquainted with the modes of transacting matters in this New World.

ISRAEL continued the business until his son Israel, Junior, became of age, when he transferred it to the young man, erected a brew-house near the ferry (Map A, 18) and engaged in the brewing of ale and beer.

At that period it was owned and occupied by George Hicks, commonly distinguished as "Ferry-master Hicks." He was originally a Fulton market butcher, but afterwards ferry-master at the Old Ferry, after the introduction thereon of steam-boats.

A large frame building somewhat westerly of the last named was probably also a Horsfield house; and, at a later period, was occupied by John Carpenter. He was a butcher, of some note, and in 1785 he was the treasurer and one of the trustees of an Independent congregation, which was incorporated in the town of Brooklyn, and which erected a frame church-edifice in what was afterwards St. Ann's burial-ground. FURMAN says (Mss. Notes) that, "disliking the proceedings of his associates, and the church being very much indebted to him, Carpenter locked up the church-building, put the key in his pocket, refused them admission, and afterwards sold the church and ground to the Episcopalian congregation, which he joined," and from which he was a lay delegate in 1788, '90 and '91.

From the southerly side of Doughty street, about one hundred feet west of George Hicks' house, commenced a lane or road extending south-westerly, along under the edge of the Heights, till it met the beach of the East river, at a little distance beyond the foot of the present Poplar street. This road, originally opened, perhaps, by the Horsfields, was, about 1816, paved from Doughty street as far as Caze's factory, and rendered more passable than it had previously been, by Thomas Everit, Jr., and Caze, whose property fronted upon it, on either side.

On the westerly side of this road (Map A, 10, 11, 12), was Everit's tan-yard, a wooden storehouse for hides, and slaughter-houses; and next to them (Map A, 13), were John Doughty's. On the easterly side of the road was the old Everit house (Map A, 14), where Thomas Everit, Jr., was born. By the side of the house was the famous Whalebone gate, from which a lane led up the hill to Mr. Cary Ludlow's residence.

THE EVERIT FAMILY.—THOMAS EVERIT, SEN., came from an old stock of butchers. About 1720 he commenced business in a slaughter-house on a small creek which put up from the East River, in the town of Brookland, at about the intersection of Columbia and Doughty streets. On the breaking out of the Revolution, September, 1775, he was elected second lieutenant of the Company of Light Horse, of Brooklyn. In the month of March following (1776), he signed the declara-

tion and took up his commission. This troop were first in service under Gen. Greene, who ordered them to seize all the fat stock of the disaffected for Commissary Brown. They next drove off stock under Gen. Woodhull; and, after the defeat at Brooklyn, in August, 1776, as they were proceeding eastward to join Colonel Livingston, they were ordered off the island by Colonel Potter. Everit, however, returned; and, in the month of November, following, renewed his allegiance to King George. He was a man of considerable talent, strictly honest, and possessed a very kind heart. His sons, Thomas, William, and Richard, were also butchers, and will be noticed in their proper order.

THOMAS EVERIT, JR., born in Brooklyn, in 1764, was remarkable for his quiet and studious habits; and, an excellent scholar. He served with his father until he mastered his profession, when he took charge of his father's stall and business in the old Fly Market, in New York, where he continued until about the year 1796, when he quit the market; became engaged in farming, near Hempstead; and joined the Society of Friends. After the lapse of a few years, he returned to Brooklyn. Here, with his old bosom-friend, John Doughty, he formed a partnership in the tanning and wool-business, and established a successful and extensive trade; after which his partner retired from the firm. He was an honest, unpretending, good man, whose simple habits, dress and speech, were fully and faithfully carried out, in his new faith. He was always seeking to do his fellow-man some service, either by advice or assistance, and this, too, in the most unassuming manner. He continued business, many years, in Brooklyn, from whence he afterwards removed it to New York, and died in 1841, leaving many relatives and friends, the latter of whom yet speak glowingly of his many virtues.

His brother WILLIAM, in 1775, joined the troop with Thomas, as a private, and continued with it until it left Long Island; and was afterward engaged in the commissary department of the American army. In 1786 he appeared in the Fly Market, and was a resident of the city of New York.

RICHARD EVERIT, another brother, also attended the same market as his father; afterwards became one of the first board of trustees of the First Methodist Episcopal meeting-house, established here in 1794, and died of yellow fever in 1798.

Beyond the house, and opposite the slaughter-houses already mentioned, were the residences of Mike Trap-pel (Map A, 15), designated in some old maps as house of Sarah (widow of Isaac) Hicks, and Burdet Stryker, their entrance being on an alley which led into the hill. On the other side of the alley was a large, old-fashioned building (Map A, 16), at one time occupied by Caze & Richaud's distillery, afterwards purchased by Robert Bach, for the same purpose; and then, with an intervening space, was a large brick edifice (Map A, 18), known, from the name of its occupant and owner, as "the (John) Sedgfield mansion."

Along, on the same side of the street, were three or four small houses, in one of which, about where the road *debouched* to the river-beach, resided a man named Coombs, who once had the audacity to impede the public's right-of-way, by erecting a gate across the road, in front of his place, and allowing no one to pass without paying toll. This obstruction, however, was speedily removed, *vi et armis*, by Hugh McLaughlin, a stalwart

Irishman who lived a few doors below; and, fortunately for the peace of the neighborhood, was never replaced.

The road which passed by Everit's and the distillery was obliterated, or rather superseded, by the opening of Columbia and Furman streets to the line of Doughty.

In 1823 or '24 travel was opened from the northerly end of Columbia street into Fulton street, by the opening of a short and narrow street called *Everit street*; and, on the easterly corner of its junction with Fulton, Obed Jackson built a substantial brick building afterwards occupied as a store by alderman D. D. Whitney.

On the beach road, which extended along the river under the Heights on the line of the present *Furman street*, on the *west* side, was a long wooden building used as a slaughter-house; then the house of Thomas Goen, who manufactured salt here by evaporation from salt water. Next were the residences of William Thompson, the waterman, who supplied the New York shipping with fresh water, and a tavern kept by an Englishman, whose sign was a swinging gate projecting over the street, bearing on its bars the following inscription:

"This sign hangs high,
It hinders none,
Come, take a nip,
And travel on."

On the *east* side of the road, a little beyond the line of the present Middagh street, were Thompson's pumps.

The beach here was usually strewn with water-butts, and lined with water-boats, awaiting their cargoes.

Further along, on the *west* side, between the lines of the present Cranberry and Orange streets, were the dock and extensive store-houses belonging to Jonathan Thompson, one of the pioneers of the warehousing business in Brooklyn. In 1797 the firm of Gardinier, Thompson and Co. purchased a water-lot here, and erected a bulkhead and warehouse for storage purposes in connection with their business as West India merchants. In 1800 the partnership was dissolved, and the storage business was continued, thenceforth, by Jonathan Thompson, until his death. For a long time his warehouses were known as the White Cotton stores; and it is worthy of remark that a large number of the cotton-bales used by Gov. Jackson, at the battle of New Orleans, were there repacked and stored.

JONATHAN THOMPSON was a native of Islip, L. I. As a politician, previous to and during the war of 1812, he was prominent in the old Republican party of that period, officiating for ten successive years as chairman of the Republican General Committee, at that time an important position. In consequence of his long service as presiding officer, he received the appellation of "Everlasting Chairman." He was Collector of Internal Revenue from 1813 to 1819; and of Customs of the Port of N. Y. from 1820 to 1829; discharging his financial duties with remarkable fidelity and accuracy.

Opposite to Mr. Thompson's stores, and on the east

side of the way, was the little house occupied by his foreman; and behind it, half way up the bank, was a notable spring of excellent water.

Between this point and Pierrepont's distillery, at the foot of Joralemon's lane, five or six small dwellings nestled along under the Heights on the eastern side of the road, some of which were coopers' shops, and one, near the line of the present Clarke street, a tavern kept by the Widow Vanderveer.

On the *west*, or river side of the road, we notice next beyond Jonathan Thompson's stores, at about the foot of the present Orange street, a dock known as the Milkmen's dock. Here, every morning, "rain or shine," came the venders of "lacteal fluid," stabled their horses in a row of sheds erected for the purpose, under the shelter of the Heights; and, clubbing together in the hire of boats, were rowed with their milk-cans over to New York, encountering, not infrequently, during the severe winter months, much suffering, and even serious danger, from fierce winds and floating ice. Their cans were suspended from yokes across their shoulders; and, thus accoutered, they peddled off their milk in the city and returned in the afternoon, wind and weather permitting, to the Brooklyn side, where they "hitched up" their teams and started for their homes. Next were Treadwell & Thorne's stores; then a storehouse owned by Robert Black, and which, during the war of 1812, he converted into a manufactory of salt, produced from the waters of the East river, by evaporation; the large wooden "Red stores," as they were called, belonging to Messrs. Kimberly & Waring (afterwards to Mr. Henry Waring); then a row of tar-sheds, and another large wooden store belonging to the same firm, and near the adjoining slip stood Tony Philpot's little ale-shop, with its sign representing two flagons of ale, one emptying into the other. Tony was an Englishman, and his place, well furnished with nine-pin alley, shuffle-board, etc., was a great resort for the long-shore-men and lower classes, to whom its semi-secluded position afforded free opportunity for the exercise of unrestrained and often uproarious jollity. In the slip near by, Mr. William Niblo, the well-known caterer of New York, had a floating crib in which he kept the turtles, which, from time to time, he served up upon the tables of his hotel; not forgetting to give his friend, Mr. Henry Waring, at least once a year, a fine green turtle, by way of rent.

Beyond this was open shore, to a point about half way between the lines of the present Clarke and Pierrepont streets, where was located a public landing called the Kingston lot; next to which, and north of the line of Pierrepont street, if continued, was Samuel Jackson's large dock, upon which were erected three wooden stores.

From this dock to Pierrepont's distillery, at the foot of Joralemon street, was an open sandy beach, along which

the tide ebbed and flowed to such an extent as to render it, at times, impassable.

Pierrepont's Anchor Gin distillery was on the site of the old Livingston brewery, at the foot of Joralemon's lane. Mr. Pierrepont had rebuilt the old brewery building, a large wharf, a windmill, which was exclusively used for the purposes of the distillery, and several large wooden storehouses, in which he kept the gin stored for a full year after it was made; by which it acquired the mellowness for which it was peculiarly esteemed. The distillery was discontinued about 1819; was sold to Mr. Samuel Mitchell, who used it as a candle-factory for a time; and subsequently was occupied, as a distillery, by Messrs. Schenck & Rutherford. The old windmill remained until about 1825, though unused.

Joralemon's lane was a miserable rutted country-road between the Joralemon and Remsen farms; and, towards its lower portion (from Hicks street to the East river), preserved much of its original character of a ravine, along under the southerly edge of the Heights. At that time it was little traversed, except by carts bearing distillery swill, or grain going to be ground into gin. It was originally laid out by Hendrick and Peter Remsen and Phillip Livingston, Esq., as a road of convenience or common way between their respective farms "from the highway and to the river," on the 14th of December, 1762; and was then two rods, or thirty-two feet, wide, increased by Loss' map, 1801, to fifty feet.

As we emerge from Joralemon's lane we pass, upon the site of the present First Dutch Reformed church building, its predecessor, erected in 1810. It was a heavily proportioned edifice, of gray-stone, with small windows and a square tower in front, surmounted by a square cupola. The space in front of it, now occupied by the City Hall, was then an open field, skirted by the old highway. Where the lane *debouched* into the highway, and on the site of the stately County Court House, there then stood the Military Garden, a place of resort famous in the village annals of Brooklyn. The small building which many of our readers will remember to have formed the western part of the Military Garden was originally occupied, as nearly as can be ascertained, by Thomas Coe, a blacksmith, who had his shop adjoining. It passed, about 1810, into the keeping of eccentric old Col. Greene, at which time it first became known as Military Garden. It reached its *maximum* of reputation, however, during the *regime* of MONS. JOHN FRANCOIS LOUIS DU FLON, a rosy-cheeked, cheery Swiss.

He purchased this property in 1822, and although neither he nor his wife had been bred to this occupation, they soon developed the tact and enterprise which proved that they could keep a hotel. He was induced by the Freemasons, who had hitherto been occupying lodge-rooms in Lawrence Brower's tavern, to erect a larger building, in which suitable accommodations could be furnished to the craft. It was the beginning of a series of pecuniary embarrassments, which

finally ended in bankruptcy. Yet Du Flon was a general favorite; his pleasant Garden, with its superior ice-cream, its tastefully-appointed viands, its attractions of flowers and shrubbery—for he and his wife had the characteristic of their countrymen, a passion for floral pleasures; his own urbanity and cheerfulness of disposition, made his place the resort, *par excellence*, of the best village society; and his hall, from its superior size and accommodations, afforded an excellent place for the balls, amateur concerts, and traveling shows, which from time to time visited the village. When General Lafayette visited Brooklyn, during his visit to America, in 1824, he received his friends at the Military Garden; and in Poppy Du Flon (for such was the respectfully familiar nickname given him by his fellow-villagers) he recognized the sick man whom he had attended, among others, at a lonely house on the frontier, during the Revolutionary war, and whom he had sat up with, watched and nursed, for several days. Both were affected to tears. Poppy Du Flon's life was unobtrusive, but useful; and his death, in his 88th year, was lamented by all.

In the rear of the garden was the old Potter's field, now covered by stables and Burnham's gymnasium.

Hicks street was, as will be seen by reference to Map A, quite narrow at its entrance on the old road, and climbed the hill (between present Fulton and Middagh streets), which was so steep as to be ascended, by loaded vehicles, with considerable difficulty. Beyond the John M. Hicks house already mentioned, on the corner of Doughty street, and garden adjoining, on the *westerly* side, was Mr. Brown's; Alex. Birbeck's blacksmith's shop and his dwelling adjoining; then, Mr. Haight's, on the corner of Poplar street. Between this and Middagh street were six frame houses, mostly occupied by two families apiece; beyond Middagh, three small houses, standing back from the street; then James Weaver's house, next the corner of the present Cranberry street. This was the end of Hicks street—all beyond being fields and orchards. Along the *easterly* side of Hicks street were but five buildings, one of which was occupied by William Thompson, formerly a negro slave of the Hickses, from whom he had received his freedom and the lot upon which he lived. Next, was the old Hicks mansion at the corner of Fulton and Hicks street.

In the rear of Hicks street (between Poplar and Doughty) was *McKenney street*, a narrow lane, originally $14\frac{1}{2}$ feet wide, in which were about a dozen dwellings.

From the western side of McKenney street, about equi-distant from Doughty and Poplar, extended a short *cul-de-sac* lane, about 20 feet wide, originally known as *Flyke street*, from its fancied resemblance to a fisherman's net. About twenty years ago, it was opened through to Columbia street, and is now known as *Vine street*, so named from a huge grape-vine which covered the front of the house occupied by Polly Fisher, one of the original residents of that locality. Vine street contained seven dwellings; so that it may be safely estimated that these three little streets, *Hicks*, *McKenney* and *Vine*, represented about one hundred

souls, in the early enumeration of the village inhabitants.

Middagh was the last street opened on the west side of the Old Ferry road, within the village limits, with the exception of a small portion of Joralemon's lane, near the Dutch church, and a small portion of Red Hook lane. On its northerly side was the Consistory-room of the Dutch Reformed church. In this humble building, which then stood in the midst of Aert Middagh's fields, a school was kept under the direction of the trustees of the church. There were but five other buildings on the street; although, on a little lane running out of it, about where *Henry street* now is, there were four or five small dwellings. A few houses (perhaps not more than six) were to be found on a road, now called *Poplar street*, extending then only as far as Buckbee's alley (now *Poplar place*); and three on the road, now *Cranberry street*, between Hicks and Willow. On what is now the corner of Cranberry and Willow streets was the house built by Mr. George Gibbs, in whose garden the Isabella grape-vine first obtained its notoriety, about the year 1816. His wife obtained it from North Carolina, and, after its value became known, she gave cuttings liberally to her neighbors. A few gentlemen of Brooklyn, in compliment, gave it her name, *Isabella*, and exerted themselves to multiply cuttings, and make its fine qualities more widely known. By the aid of various publications, in the *Long Island Star*, and other papers, it soon became the cherished ornament and pride of every garden and door-yard, and rapidly spread, not only through Brooklyn and Long Island, but even into far-distant States of the Union.

There were, also, several small houses erected in different fields of the Hicks, Middagh, and Johnson estates, none of which, however, were get-at-able, except by paths across the fields.

Brooklyn Heights.—The estates of the landed proprietors on Clover Hill or Brooklyn Heights, were:

I. The *Cary Ludlow estate* (Fig. 1, Map A), on the north-west corner of the Heights. This was a portion of the original Horsfield estate. Mr. Ludlow, who purchased it from the Horsfields, was a prominent New York merchant, and was not identified with Brooklyn, except by residence in the house which he erected on the western line of Willow street, about one hundred and twenty-five feet north of Middagh. The only access to it being by the roundabout way of the Old Ferry road and Hicks street, Mr. Ludlow secured a right-of-way up the hill-side, from Doughty street, through the old Whalebone gate, at the corner of Tommy Everit's house.

II. The *Hicks estate* (Fig. 2, Map A), and

III. The *Middagh estate*, have been already sufficiently described (Fig. 3, Map A).

IV. The *Waring Estate*. Adjoining, and running in the same direction with the southerly line of the

Hicks estate, was a strip of land, its western end on the river, and its east end reaching nearly to Henry street, which belonged, at that time, to Mr. HENRY WARING, a native of Greenwich, Conn.

His father had served with considerable distinction as captain of an artillery company during the Revolutionary war. HENRY, born 1773, was the eldest son; and in early life came to New York and became a merchant's clerk. In 1793 he went to sea, and subsequently commanded a vessel, trading between New York and the West Indies. In 1795 he was taken prisoner by a French sloop-of-war, and a prize crew was placed upon his vessel, which was ordered to Martinique. While on the voyage thither, he and a man named Bills rose upon the prize-crew, retook the vessel, placed the crew (seven in number) in the fore-castle, and steered for the island of Jamaica. Unfortunately, when within ten days' sail of that place, he was spoken and boarded by a Spanish frigate. The suspicions of the boarding-officer being aroused by finding the vessel in the hands of only two men, he instituted a search, found the seven Frenchmen imprisoned in the fore-castle, liberated them and restored to them the possession of the vessel. Waring and Bills were then taken to the island of Eustatia, and there imprisoned for several months, when they were exchanged and sent to New York. Soon after his return, a privateer, mounting seven guns, and named the *Adelia*, was fitted out by private subscription among the merchants of New York, and he was placed in command. His first cruise was successful, taking one or two prizes. When the United States navy was reorganized he was offered a commission, but declined it, because his old friend and messmate (Commodore) Chauncey received a higher position than was offered to himself. He then became senior partner in the New York firm of Waring & Eden. Subsequently, in 1796, he engaged in business with Mr. Gideon Kimberly, under the firm-name of Kimberly & Waring. From him, in 1806, he purchased the property on Brooklyn Heights, before alluded to, and in 1813 he made Brooklyn his permanent residence. With his partner, he became largely interested in the naval-store business, owning many vessels in the southern trade, and receiving large consignments of southern goods. In 1826, '27, '28, '29 and '30, he was a village trustee, serving the public interest with great zeal and fidelity, and possessing a leading influence in the board. In 1832 he was chosen as one of the presidential electors, and cast his vote for Jackson. In 1836 he sold his property upon the Heights, and purchased the property bounded by Fulton, Washington and Johnson streets, upon which he erected a residence. He was one of the first directors of the Long Island Bank; but, in 1840, having lost his wife, and being about to retire from business, he resigned that, and also his connection with the Brooklyn Savings Bank, of which he was one of the original trustees. He died in 1848. Mr. Waring possessed very pleasant and genial manners, and was very fond of social enjoyments. Strictly moral and conscientious in all duties, he held the entire confidence of the mercantile community. In politics he was an old-line democrat, a member of the first regular organized republican (as they were then called) society in the city of New York, out of which the present Tammany Society was organized; and an early and steadfast friend of Gov. DeWitt Clinton.

V. Next south to the Waring property was the *Gideon Kimberly* estate, a wedge-shaped piece of land, its broadest end on the river, and its apex reaching the Old Fort on Henry street.

GIDEON KIMBERLY was born in Vermont, in 1750; and in

1768 came to New York city, and became clerk to Messrs. Bedient & Hubbell, merchants in the Fly Market slip. Mr. Hubbell died about 1777, and young Kimberly became partner to Mr. Bedient, under the firm style of Bedient & Kimberly. In 1791 Mr. Kimberly formed a partnership with his old fellow-clerk Henry Waring, under the firm name of Kimberly & Waring, the business being conducted in Burling slip, near the present corner of Front street. Mr. Kimberly married in 1792, and, about the time of his marriage, settled on what was then known as Clover hill in Brooklyn, upon property purchased from the executors of Noel John Barbarin. This property, which was the old Bamber estate, commenced at the shore opposite to, and about two hundred feet south of, the south-west corner of Clarke and Columbia streets, and extended east from the river to the Old Fort, at Henry street. The present Mansion House in Hicks street stands upon a portion of this land. Mr. Kimberly retired from business in 1815, and died suddenly of apoplexy, at the Tontine Coffee House, in New York, in February, 1817, aged sixty-eight years. He was a regular attendant upon the Dutch Reformed church in Brooklyn; in politics was a democrat of the Jeffersonian school, and a prominent member and officer of the Tammany Society, in New York city. He was scrupulously honest, and, though a close business man, was humane and charitable. He had no children, and his wealth descended to heirs, many of whom he had never seen, or even heard of, during his life. After his death his real-estate in Brooklyn was sold in partition in the court of chancery, and the larger portion of it was purchased by his neighbors, Henry Waring and Samuel Jackson.

VI. The next estate to the Kimberly property was that belonging to SAMUEL JACKSON, one of the oldest merchants in the city of New York, and descended from an ancient English family, among the first of the Society of Friends to settle on Long Island.

He was born at Jerusalem, L. I., and previous to the Revolution became a clerk with his brother-in-law, Mr. Milton, a New York merchant; and after the decease of the latter he became the trustee of the estate. Removing to Brooklyn, with his widowed sister and her son, to whom he devoted the rest of his life, he purchased this property. It extended in width from the Kimberly line to the northeasterly side of Love lane; and, in length, from the line of the present Columbia street to the westerly line of Swertcope's estate, which was about 400 or 500 feet from Fulton street, as it now is. He also had a large wharf property in front of his dwelling, known as Jackson's Stores. His house, generally known as the "Old Stone House," was probably the old Timothy Horsfield house, afterwards occupied by Gov. Cadwallader Colden. It faced the river on the line of present Columbia street, about 250 feet north of Pierrepont. Mr. Jackson had succeeded to Mr. Milton's business, and successfully carried it on in South street, between Burling slip and Maiden lane, in the city of New York. The death of his nephew, in 1818, whom he had intended to make his heir, and, shortly after, that of his mother, left Mr. Jackson alone in the old mansion, with none to keep him company except his two servants (formerly his slaves), Harry and Susannah. He now turned his attention to ornamental gardening, and few private gardens in the town were so attractive as his—a walk to Clover hill and Jackson's garden being, in those days, the favorite walk of the young people of both sexes. And, to protect the contents of his garden, when any person entered it, unaccompanied by himself, his "man Harry" was always on hand to see that none of the ornamental plants were disturbed. Here the rich old bachelor lived and distributed his

hospitality with great liberality, until about the year 1820 when his favorite servant Suke died, and he shortly after broke up his bachelor establishment and took board at Morrison's hotel, north-west corner of Columbia and Cranberry streets. His house he rented to John Wells, Esq., a distinguished member of the New York bar, who died in it, of the yellow fever, in the year 1822. This old house afterwards became the asylum for some aged women, gathered together by the charitable exertions of Mrs. Pierrepont, Mrs. Richards, and other ladies—from which enterprise finally came the noble institution known as The Church Charity Foundation. It was said of Mr. Jackson that, although he seldom visited the city of New York, he would sit in his parlor, and from information derived from the New York newspapers, of which he was a constant reader, could direct purchases and make more money than any merchant in that city, in his line of business, which consisted chiefly of grain, naval stores and cotton. Mr. Jackson was nearly six feet high, and had a sallow complexion; dressed with remarkable neatness, somewhat after the old style of the Society of Friends; with cue; white top boots in cold weather; shoes, knee-buckles and shorts, in summer, etc. He was dignified and retiring, and made but few intimate friends, and was never known to attend a public-meeting of any description. His income was very large, and he contributed a large portion of it to private charities, and, though somewhat stern in his dealings with men, was always kind and considerate to children. When Forts Greene and Swift were constructed, in 1813, a committee called upon Mr. Jackson to request from him assistance in that important and patriotic work, although with little expectation that he would render any aid, inasmuch as he was known to be affiliated with the Society of Friends, who were opposed to the war. To their surprise he employed six men, at his own expense, to work on the forts for three months, during which time he daily inspected their labors.

VII. Next south of the Jackson property was a tract of 14 acres, extending from the East river to the Old road (Fulton street), and in width from Love lane to a line a little north of the present Pierrepont street. This strip of land was owned by the brothers ROBERT and JOHN DE BEVOISE, whose grandfather Jacobus purchased it from Joris Remsen in 1734. They were descendants of Carel De Beauvois, who came from Leyden, in Holland, in 1659, and was the first school-master of Brooklyn.

ROBERT, the elder brother, was a stout, strong, broad-faced man; but having, unfortunately, lost his nose and palate, in consequence of a cancerous disease, was, although really of a kindly disposition, quite an object of terror to the village urchins—which was by no means lessened by the savage disposition of twenty or thirty dogs which he kept around the house. JOHN DE BEVOISE was a strong contrast to his brother Robert—being thin, pale and consumptive. Both were bachelors, and, being well off, occupied their time alternately in fishing and gardening. Their dwelling, a small, ancient and rather dilapidated Dutch edifice (on the line of Columbia street, about 160 feet north of the line of Pierrepont), was graced by the presence of an exceedingly beautiful girl who filled the place of a daughter to the two old men, whose name she bore. SARAH DE BEVOISE had many admirers, and the private lane which led down to the house, between the De Bevoise and Pierrepont estates, is said to have received its name of *Love lane*, from the numerous love-lines, initials of Miss De B. and her love-lorn swains, which were scribbled and cut upon its fence by the young men of the village. It

is related of old Boh De Bevoise, that his ground was enclosed by a high board-fence; and, as the trees were thick on the line of the fence, when the posts gave away, from time to time, he nailed the boards to the trees. But the winds stirred the trees, and thereby loosened the boards again; so that, finally, it became a regular Sunday morning job with Boh to mend up his fences; and his neighbors, without reference to an almanac, could always tell when the Sabbath came, by the continual hammer, hammer, hammering which resounded along the line of partition. To Boh De Bevoise, also, belongs the honor of first gratifying the New Yorkers with the taste of garden-cultivated strawberries. Previous to the beginning of the present century, this delicious fruit had been known to the New York market, only by the few wild berries which were brought in by women from Tappan and New Jersey. But, about 1800-1802, Robert De Bevoise commenced their systematic cultivation for the market, sending them to market in crockery bowls, at two shillings per pint bowl; and, by refusing to sell any of his plants (people, at that day, were too honest to steal them), secured, and, for about three years, retained, the monopoly in the city. As a great favor, he gave some of his plants to his neighbor, old Swertcope, the Hessian, and he, too, in a short time made it a profitable business. The cry of "hot corn!" formerly heard on summer evenings in the streets of Brooklyn, is associated with the De Bevoise family. FURMAN says, "at this season of the year, when I was a boy of about seven or eight years of age, 1807-8, in the evening, an old colored woman, familiarly known as De Bevoise's Black Peg, or rather Margaret, or Peggy, the slave of Robert De Bevoise, made her appearance in the main street, then called the Old Ferry road, now Fulton street, crying 'Hot corn! nice hot corn! piping hot!' This was her cry for a time, until the corn got a little too tough from the ripening effects of the sun (for then we did not have green corn all the summer through, but had to depend alone on what was raised in Kings county); and, the large bell pears having attained nearly their full size, she stewed them whole until they were soft, and then poured molasses over them while they were hot, and carried them through the streets as 'baked pears,' and very palatable they were, as I well recollect; but this cry has gone out of vogue; I have not heard it for years." The selling of hot corn and baked pears were the perquisites of Black Peg. When, in 1816, the village was incorporated, and streets and lots began to be plotted over the old farm-lines, Robert De Bevoise took alarm, and expressed a determination to move out of the reach of the modern improvements. Hearing of this, his next neighbor, Mr. Hez. B. Pierrepont, inquired his price, and, \$28,000 being named, immediately accepted the offer, much to old Boh's astonishment, who supposed he had placed it at so high a figure that no one would buy. He continued to reside on the place, however, for two years after the sale, and then removed to the neighborhood of the Black Horse tavern, and built a dwelling known as the Abbey, in Fulton avenue. Soon, however, streets and houses made their distasteful appearance in the vicinity, and he "pulled up stakes" and settled at Bedford. Again the city jostled him, and, in despair, he fled to Jamaica, L. I., where he died some years after.

VIII. Next came the *Pierrepont* property, which, including the above-named De Bevoise farm, comprised a tract of sixty acres between Love lane and the line of the present Remsen street, and extending from the East river to the Old Ferry road, now Fulton street.

This, together with the De Bevoise, Remsen and Jo-



ralemon farms, originally formed the estate of Joris Remsen, who purchased it in 1706 from his father-in-law, Dirck Janse Woertman, who had consolidated the titles of the ancient *Hudde*, *Manje* and *Ruyter* patents. This Joris Remsen, in 1734, sold to his son-in-law, Jacobus De Bevoise, the fourteen acres known as the De Bevoise farm.

The Pierrepont mansion (a front view of which we have given on page 94) was erected by John Cornell at the foot of the present Montague street. It was purchased in 1795 by James Arden, who added wings, and about 1804 it became the property of Mr. Pierrepont, who, in 1802, had purchased the old Livingston distillery at the foot of Joralemon street, not far away.

HEZEKIAH BEERS PIERREPONT, born in New Haven, Conn., in 1768, was the grandson of the Rev. James Pierrepont, the first minister settled in that colony. The father of the Rev. James Pierrepont belonged to the family of Holme Pierrepont in Nottinghamshire, England, descendants from Robert de Pierrepont of Normandy. The family name being French, became anglicized in this country and spelt Pierpont; the correct spelling being resumed by the subject of this memoir. He displayed at an early age an enterprising spirit, and fondness for active life. While at college, he became dissatisfied with the prospect of a professional life, and proposed to his father that if he would permit him to leave his studies, he would provide for himself, and ask no share

of his estate. His father consented, and he fulfilled his promise, and thereafter provided for his own support. He first entered the office of his uncle, Mr. Isaac Beers, in New Haven; and, afterwards, to extend his knowledge of commercial affairs, engaged as a clerk in the Custom House, in New York. He then became the agent of Messrs. Watson & Greenleaf, in Philadelphia, in the purchase of the national debt, realizing thereby, in a short time, a small fortune. In 1798 he established, in New York, the commercial house of Leffingwell & Pierrepont, engaging in shipping provisions to France, where scarcity prevailed in consequence of the Revolution. He removed to France, to attend to the shipments of his firm, and resided in Paris, during the reign of terror, and saw Robespierre beheaded. The seizure of American vessels, carrying provisions to France, by England, then at war with France, so embarrassed this trade, that he relinquished it. In 1795 he purchased, in England, a fine ship named the *Confederacy*, and went on a trading-voyage to India and China, as owner and supercargo. On his return-voyage, in 1797, with a valuable cargo, his ship was seized by a French privateer, condemned and sold, for want of a *rôle d'équipage*, contrary to the laws of nations, and our treaty

stipulations. After an absence abroad, of seven years, Mr. Pierrepont returned, in 1800, to New York; and married, in 1802, Anna Maria, daughter of William Constable, a distinguished merchant, and the largest owner of wild-land in the State of New York. Considering foreign commerce, in the then disturbed political state of Europe, too hazardous, he abandoned it. He visited New England to examine into its manufactories, and, finding distilling of gin very profitable, he engaged Colonel James Anderson, of Connecticut, to establish a factory for him. In 1802 he purchased, in Brooklyn, the brewery belonging to Philip Livingston, at the foot of Joralemon street, which had been burnt during the war of the Revolution, and there established his factory, which obtained a high reputation, and was at that time the only manufactory of the kind in the State. His attention being thus drawn to Brooklyn, he purchased, on the Heights, the Benson farm and spacious residence, and removed to it. The success of his factory induced competition and diminished its profits, and, in 1819, he abandoned it, and thereafter gave his whole attention to the improvement of his Brooklyn property, and the settlement of his wild-land, amounting to nearly half a million of acres, situated in the northern part of the State, in the counties of Oswego, Jefferson, Lewis, St.

Lawrence and Franklin. During the remainder of his life, he spent part of every summer in visiting these lands, in company with his two sons, William and Henry, whom he had educated with special reference to their management. He foresaw, at this early period, the future growth of Brooklyn; was one of a committee, in 1815, who framed and procured the act for incorporating Brooklyn as a village, and



THE CORNELL-PIERREPONT MANSION. (Rear View.)

afterwards served as one of the trustees. The legislature having passed an act for laying out streets in the village, Mr. Pierrepont gave his exertions and influence to have a proper plan adopted. He procured Mr. Poppleton, a distinguished city surveyor, at his private expense, to make a plan, suggesting wider streets and larger blocks, instead of the narrow streets and one acre blocks of two hundred feet square recommended to the trustees; and succeeded in getting his plan adopted for that part of the Heights south of Clark street. In order to widen Hicks street, between Cranberry and Clark streets, and stop the extension of leasehold property and poor buildings of wood, he engaged Mr. Joel Bunce to purchase for him, from the Messrs. Hicks, that part of their property. He then widened the street as far as Cranberry street, by restricting the purchasers to a building-line. With a liberal public spirit, he voluntarily removed his fence on Fulton street, widening the street without compensation, while he was afterwards heavily assessed for the widening of the same street towards Fulton Ferry. In laying out Pierrepont street, he adopted a building-line making the width of the street between the houses eighty feet, and Montague and Remsen streets seventy-six feet. An intimacy, commenced

in Europe, with Robert Fulton, was continued during the too short life of the latter. He aided Mr. Fulton with his advice and influence in the establishment of Fulton ferry, in which he always took great interest. He subscribed towards the purchase of this ferry, from Fulton's assignee, in whose hands it had not been conducted with due regard to Brooklyn interests; and continued one of its directors till his death. In 1827 and 1828 Mr. Pierrepont served, with ability, as a member of the board of village trustees. As chairman of the street-committee, he exerted himself to secure an open promenade for the public, on the Heights, from Fulton ferry to Joralemon street. He had a map and plan drawn for the improvement by Mr. Silas Ludlam, and procured the consent of the proprietors for a cession of the property, except from his neighbor and friend Judge Radcliff, who opposed the scheme so violently, that Mr. Pierrepont, rather than have a contest with a friend, withdrew from the attempt, and himself paid the expenses incurred for the survey and plan, though he had ordered it officially. He lived and died in the belief and desire, that the Heights would some day be made a public promenade, on some similar plan. Before his estate was divided and sold, his executors gave the opportunity to the city to take the property between Love lane and Remsen street and Willow street, the only part of the Heights that remained unoccupied, for such a public place, and a petition was signed by a few public-spirited men for the object. But it was defeated before the city authorities by overwhelming remonstrances, very generally signed in the large district of assessment that was proposed. It appears from his diary, that, as early as the year 1818, he made inquiry as to the cost of stone wharves. He reluctantly improved his water-front with timber, only when he found, from the depth of water, the cost of stone structures was too great to be warranted by the small income derived by wharf-owners under our present port-laws. He persistently declined to sell his lots, except where good private dwellings of brick or stone were engaged to be erected, suited to the future character of his finely-situated property. Time has now proved the soundness of his judgment. His property is now covered by elegant mansions, besides five fine churches, the City Hall, Academy of Music, Mercantile Library, and other public buildings, while the front on the bay is occupied by extensive wharves and warehouses. Mr. Pierrepont possessed great energy of character, and a sound judgment; was domestic in his habits, and had no ambition for public office, or relish for political life. Yet he gave his services freely to his fellow-citizens, in aid of their local affairs. He died in 1838, aged seventy years, leaving a widow, two sons and eight daughters. His widow died in 1859. We add a list of the children of Mr. Pierrepont, to whom his Brooklyn property has descended: William Constable Pierrepont, residing at Pierrepont manor, Jefferson county; Henry Evelyn Pierrepont, Brooklyn; Anna Constable Pierrepont, deceased, wife of Hubert Van Wagenen; Emily Constable Pierrepont, married Joseph A. Perry; Frances Matilda Pierrepont, married Rev. Frederick S. Wiley; Mary Montague Pierrepont, died in 1859, unmarried; Harriet Constable Pierrepont, married Edgar J. Bartow, died 1855; Maria Theresa Pierrepont, married Joseph J. Bicknell; Julia Evelyn Pierrepont, married John Constable, of Constableville; Ellen Isaphine, married Dr. James M. Minor.

On the beach under the Heights, in front of the mansion, was a dock, accessible from the house by means of a pathway, with two or three flights of stone steps leading down the face of the bluff. At this dock always lay a row-boat, which was Mr. Pierrepont's ordinary

means of travel to and from New York. Aside from this road along the beach (now Furman street), the only way to reach the village from his residence was by a private lane, which opened upon the Old Ferry road (Fulton street), close by Larry Brower's tavern.

On the corner of Pierrepont and Henry streets, Mr. Thomas March, of the firm of March & Benson, the principal wine-merchants of New York at that day, built a residence, about 1833.

IX. Between Mr. Pierrepont's southerly line and the present Joralemon street was the remainder of the *Remsen estate*, owned by Peter Remsen. After his death, Maj. Fanning C. Tucker, Robert Carter, Adam Treadwell, and Mr. Pierrepont, purchased that portion nearest the river, and bounded by Joralemon, Clinton and Remsen streets; which streets were laid out and named by Mr. Pierrepont. The remaining portion of the estate, that bounded by Clinton, Joralemon and the Old road (Fulton street), was retained by Henry Remsen and his sister Matilda, children of Peter. The most easterly extremity of their land was purchased as a site for the City Hall; and, finally, they sold out all their property in Brooklyn. The old Remsen house now forms Nos. 2 and 4 Joralemon street, near Furman, and the old well is still under the baptismal font of Grace Church.

The Heights at that day were handsomely wooded; at the southern extremity (above the present corner of Joralemon and Furman streets) was a large grove, with ravines leading down to the shore, beautifully shaded with cedars. This was called "Lover's (or Hymen's) grove." Under the cliff stood the old (St. George's) Ferry house, occupying nearly the same site as the old Eagle tavern.

From Fulton avenue, down Red Hook lane, and thence along the river-side, to Joralemon's lane, includes the district now known as South Brooklyn. This lane diverged from Fulton avenue, as previously stated, a short distance east from Du Flon's Military Garden. It seems to have been laid out, according to record, about the 6th of June, 1760; appears upon Ratzer's map (1766-67) and all subsequent maps; and, although mostly swallowed up by the growth of the city, a remnant still survives, between Fulton avenue and Livingston street, and is particularly noticeable as containing the modest retreat of the Board of Education.

This lane passed on the east of the old Potter's field and along Judge Joralemon's land, until, at about the junction of the present Court and Pacific streets, it met a very considerable conical-shaped hill (Ponkiesbergh, or Cobble-hill, of Revolutionary memory), which reared itself above the surrounding corn-fields. Red Hook lane passed in a westerly direction around and along the base of this hill for about three hundred feet, then turned southwardly. Just at this turn, on the west side, commenced the private road or lane called *Patchen's lane*,

which led down to Ralph Patchen's house, near the foot of the present Atlantic street, where there was a *public landing-place* six rods long at low-water mark. Upon the incorporation of the village, in 1816, this lane was absorbed by District street, which followed the same course and became the southern boundary of the village. District street, in turn, merged its identity in Atlantic street.

Near the southern boundary of Patchen's land another private road diverged from the easterly side of Red Hook lane, known as *Freeke's lane*, or the *Mill-road*. From its point of divergence, on the line of Court street, between East Warren and Baltic, it ran southerly to the mills of John C. Freeke and Nehemiah Denton,—thence to Gowanus. Further down the lane, between the lands of Anthony Worthington on the west and Jacob Bergen on the east, was a small framed school-house, built by the farmers of the neighborhood; and near it, on the west side of the lane (at near the junction of present Butler and Court streets), was a gate opening into *Cornell's lane*, leading down towards the river to the house of Isaac Cornell, farmer and distiller.

From this point (Cornell's gate), the Red Hook lane passed along, still through Bergen's land, in a southerly direction, towards Red Hook. On its easterly side, in a retired and beautiful spot, near the line of the present Carroll, between Clinton and Henry streets, was a small cottage occupied, for many years in the early part of the present century, by the well-known actress, Mrs. CHARLOTTE MELMOTH.

Mrs. MELMOTH was much esteemed for her excellent private character; and, compelled at length by advancing age to leave the stage, she purchased this cottage in the quiet and beautiful Red Hook lane, and took boarders. Stuart, the artist, was, for a while, an inmate of her family; and his board-bills seem to have been paid, in part, at least, with some of his inimitable portraits, which adorned Mrs. Melmoth's parlor, and one of which, that of Judge Egbert Benson, afterwards found its appropriate resting-place upon the walls of the Long Island Historical Society. At this time, also, or subsequently, Mrs. Melmoth kept a school for young ladies and children at her residence, her pupils mostly belonging to the Cutting, Cornell, Pierrepont, (John) Jackson, and Luquer families. Some of these children, now men and women grown, are still living, and enjoy very pleasant and respectful memories of their old school-mistress, with whom they boarded during the week, returning to their respective homes on Saturday to spend the Sabbath. The nearest neighbor was Mr. Suydam's, where they took turns in going daily for milk, wherewith to furnish the suppan and milk, which was a favorite article of food. Her family consisted of herself, her friend Miss Butler, and two aged Dutch negro-slaves, a man and a woman. In person, she was fleshy and heavy, somewhat dignified in manner, but kind in word and deed. She always spoke with emphasis, and was esteemed by her patrons as peculiarly successful in advancing her pupils in reading and elocution. After a residence of some ten or twelve years in Brooklyn, she died here, in October, 1823, aged 72 years, much regretted by her friends, and was interred in the burial-ground of St. Patrick's Cathedral, New York city.

After her decease the house was converted into a tavern, which became a favorite resort for the dissipated young men of the town, who there indulged in drinking, eating oysters, raffling for turkeys, geese, etc., their orgies being carried on with a freedom to which the retired character of the spot was peculiarly conducive.

Beyond Mrs. Melmoth's, on the westerly side of Red Hook lane, was a high and beautiful elevation, which sloped gently off to the river, and which was subsequently known as Prospect hill, or Hoyt's hill, from its owner, Mr. Charles Hoyt, who first (about 1826) pushed streets through it, and brought it into the market. It is said that the first lithographic property-maps, since so commonly used among real-estate men, were made to illustrate this property. On the highest point of this elevation, Mr. James W. Moulton, the accomplished historian of our State, erected a very elegant residence of the Gothic style, which, upon his removal to Roslyn, L. I., was purchased and occupied by A. J. Spooner, Esq. The extension of Summit street involved its destruction.

The road made a bend between Rapalje and Coles streets, on the line of Hicks, around to the residence and mill of Nicholas Luquer. The long, low and cozy-looking homestead was surrounded by trees, through whose branches a pleasant breeze seemed always to play. It fronted the mill-pond, wherein Mr. Luquer, a thin French-looking man, raised oysters of extraordinary size and delicacy. His mill (called on Ratzer's map the I. Seabring mill) was mostly employed for grinding grain for the use of Mr. Pierrepont's distillery at the foot of Joralemon's lane. Between Luquer's residence and mill, and in about the line of the present Coles street, ran a road down to Jordon Coles' tide-mills. Coles' mill-pond, like that of Luquer, was constructed artificially. Across the road, near Coles' house, was a gate, which prevented cattle from straying on to Red Hook. From Luquer's mill, at corner of present Hicks and Huntington streets, the road turned to the corner of the present William and Columbia streets, crossed Bull creek, Koenties' kill, or Cow's creek, and, by a bridge, the stream which divided Red Hook from the mainland.

Red Hook was, at that time, in the possession of Matthias and Nicholas Van Dyke. The southern portion of the Hook was a high hill covered with locust, poplar, cedar, and sassafras-trees. This hill was cut down, in 1835, by Messrs. Dikeman, Waring and Underhill, for the purpose of filling up the neighboring mill-ponds, lower ground and drowned marsh. There were, on the island proper, only six buildings. On the extreme south-western point, known as Powder-house point, was a brick powder-house erected by Messrs. Jeromus Johnson, Charles J. Howell, and John Hoff (afterwards surveyor of the port of New York), who purchased from the Van Dycks an acre of land for that

purpose. Johnson and his associates had formerly a powder-house upon a little island, called "Cornell's island," situated about five hundred yards north of Bull creek, but this had been washed away by the tide. On the northern end of the island was the dwelling of the Van Dyck brothers; on the east side, their two mills and a small house occupied by the miller. Matthias' mill was known as "Ginger-mill," from its being used solely in the grinding of that article; while Nicholas' was called the "Flour," or "Tide-mill." The large adjoining mill-pond extended to Boomties Hook, and was famous for its fine oysters. The brothers Van Dyke always lived together in the same house—Nicholas being a bachelor. Matthias died first, and his estate was sold in 1834, under a decree of the court of chancery, to parties who organized the Red Hook Building Co., having for its object the sale of the lands, and the issuing of stocks, at one dollar per share, redeemable at a half per cent. discount in Wall street. The undertaking, however, proved too heavy for those who had undertaken it; and, in 1835, it was taken hold of by Messrs. Voorhees, Stranahan & Co., who organized the well known Atlantic Dock Company, and erected thereon the extensive warehouses and stores known as the Atlantic Docks.

Along the western side of the Hook, at low water, was a large flat, extending up to Pierpont's distillery at the foot of Joralemon's lane. *Northward*, along the shore of the East river, were the following farms, all lying between the river and Red Hook lane, viz.:

I. *Cornell's*, previously alluded to in passing down Red Hook lane, which formed its eastern boundary.

II. *Parmenus Johnson's estate*, lying between the river and the lane, and extending from Baltic nearly to Congress street. Mr. Johnson came from Oyster Bay, L. I., about 1818, and purchased sixteen acres of the old Rynier Suydam farm; to which he added forty or more acres by filling in and docking out upon his water front. The old Rynier Suydam house, a venerable Dutch edifice, stood on the site of Mr. Johnson's present residence, on the corner of Hicks and West Baltic streets, surrounded with pear-trees a century old; and the water, at that time, came up as high as the present line of Henry street.

III. The estate of *Cornelius Heeney*.

IV. *Ralph Patchen's farm*, extending from Congress to District (now Atlantic) street. He was one of the old Fly Market butchers, an honest man, but rough in conversation, and at times very severe and personal; he had, however, the confidence of his fellow-citizens, who several times placed him in public office. He purchased the distillery of Isaac Cornell, and the land of William Cornell. The large dock near his distillery was long known as *Patchen's dock*; and his residence was on the line of the present Hicks street, a few doors south of Atlantic.

V. The *Joralemon estate*, extending from the East

river to the lane, and from about 100 feet north of present State street, to Joralemon's lane. This was purchased, in 1803, by Tunis Joralemon, from the executors of Philip Livingston, Esq.

TUNIS JORALEMON, a native of New Jersey, was born in 1760, and was, for a while, a harness and saddle-maker near Flatbush. After his purchase of the Livingston estate, he devoted his attention to his garden; sold milk and vegetables in the New York market, and was a prominent man in the Dutch church. He was, at one time, justice of the peace, and a trustee of the village in 1817, '18, '19, '20, '21. In person he was tall, slim and slightly bent; his austere features strongly resembling the portraits of Dante, the great Italian poet. He was indeed of Italian descent, and his manner energetic and determined. He was most obstinately opposed to having streets opened through his farm. In 1826 Mr. Charles Hoyt forced Henry street through it, which was the commencement of the spread of land-speculation in Brooklyn. Shortly afterwards Mr. Pierpont, who had laid out a street through his own estate, called Clinton street (because it was projected at the time that that celebrated statesman succeeded in carrying out his great project of the canal), endeavored to force it through Joralemon's land by action of the village trustees. Mr. Joralemon opposed it bitterly, mainly because he disliked Clinton and his *big ditch*, and did not wish a street named after him. He died in 1840, leaving behind him the name of an honest man, and a property which, at the time, was estimated as worth from six to seven hundred thousand dollars. In 1841 the old Livingston mansion, which he had so long occupied, was destroyed by fire. Two mayors of Brooklyn, the Hon. Samuel Smith and Hon. T. G. Talmadge, married daughters of Mr. Joralemon.

Livingston street, and, also, *Sidney Place*, were laid out on the old map of 1801, by which the Livingston farm was sold—but no names were then affixed, they being simply called new roads.

Along the river-front of Joralemon's property lay what was called "the Fishing-place," it having been, from time immemorial, a favorite resort of the towns-people to draw their nets for fish; and it is said that Mr. Livingston, the former owner of the Joralemon estate, was accustomed to grant a privilege to fish at this place, at a stipulated price per day.

The region along the Brooklyn and Flatbush turnpike (Fulton and Flatbush avenues), to the town-line; along the Brooklyn and Jamaica Turnpike (Fulton avenue), to Bedford Corners; and, down the Fort Greene road to the Wallabout, may now be noticed. The old Ferry road has been described as far as the junction of the present Fulton street, Myrtle avenue, and Washington street. Myrtle avenue had not been opened, although its germ existed in a little street called *Myrtle street*, which extended only a short distance eastwardly from the main road. A little way from this Myrtle street, on the north side of the road, and elevated several feet above its level, on the site of the Halsey buildings, was Nicholas Rouse's grocery store and garden. Nicholas was a German, who had been for many years a resident of the village, and was much respected. His whole yard was covered by a

fine grape-vine, which bore abundantly; and the citizens of Brooklyn were wont, during the warm summer months, to resort here in great numbers to partake of his excellent mead-cakes; while, in autumn, they sought the grateful shades of his arbor, to enjoy the delicious grapes and the fine prospect; there being, at that time, no houses between his place and the Wallabout. After Brooklyn began to improve, and new streets were opened and old ones repaved, it disturbed Mynheer Rouse so that he removed to New York.

Beyond Rouse's, near the point of the present Willoughby street, stood the large and pleasantly willow-shaded residence of Mr. Nathaniel Howland, father of George S. Howland. On the point, now occupied by Jones' Building, where the L. I. Savings Bank is located, stood Ralph Malbone's grocery. Immediately adjoining this was Howland's ropewalk, extending along the northerly line of the Duffield estate, from Fulton to near Bridge street. From this point, the *Duffield estate* extended along the northerly side of the turnpike to about the present junction of Duffield street and Fulton avenue. This estate, like the Johnson property, was of a triangular shape, its apex resting on the site of the present City park.

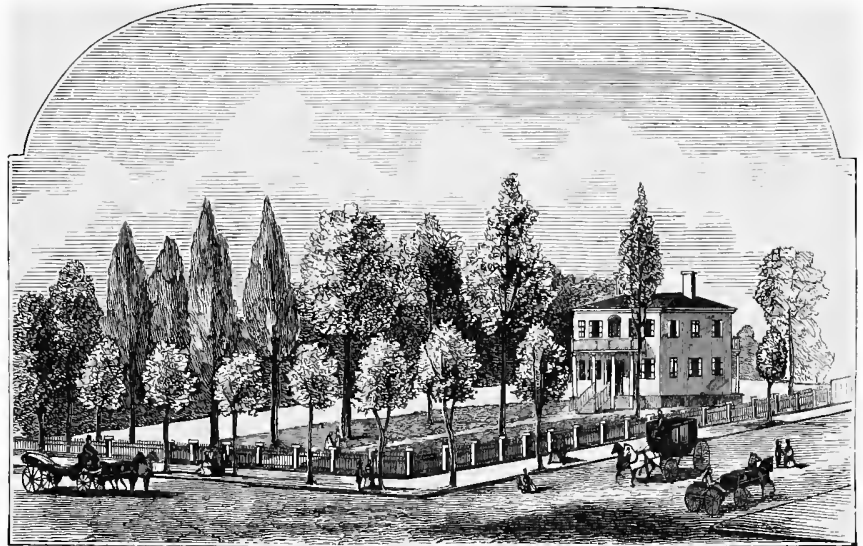
The old Duffield house (No. 4, Map B) stood near the westerly corner of the present Duffield street as it enters Fulton avenue, and its portrait is well preserved in the view of the old Brooklyn Church elsewhere given. During the Revolutionary war it was occupied by the British; and its door-posts bore the broad-arrow mark which indicated appropriation to army uses. Its owner, at that time, was Mr. Johannes De Bevoise, who received it as a wedding-day gift from his father. He was clerk of the town, and, for many years also, of the old Dutch church, which stood near by; and his residence very naturally became the Dominie's house, where the ministers were always expected to stay for rest and refreshment between church services on the Sabbath; for receiving applications for baptism, membership, etc.; for meeting the consistory, church-masters and others, and for attending generally to their official duties whenever they visited Brooklyn. Mr. De Bevoise's wife is said to have burned in her oven a large quantity of the old church papers and documents, alleging, with housewifely hatred of such lumbering trash, that old papers always made so much trouble. Margaret De Bevoise,

the daughter of the worthy town-clerk Johannes, married Dr. John Duffield, an American army-surgeon.

The private burying-ground of the Duffield family (No. 5, Map B) formerly stood upon the southerly side of the road, a little westward of the present Gold street. When the road was straightened into the present Fulton avenue, the little burial-place found itself in the very centre of the avenue, and was blotted out of existence.

From the corner of the present Duffield street, to the junction of the present Fulton and De Kalb avenues, the Samuel Fleet estate fronted on the turnpike, stretching back to the site of the present City park.

The name of FLEET seems to have been a slight change from that of the English ancestor of the family, Admiral *Fleetwood*. During the emigration which followed the troubles between Charles I. and his Parliament, one of that



THE FLEET MANSION.
(Fulton Avenue, corner of Gold Street).

The erection by the Fleet family of a row of handsome stone-front stores on Fulton avenue, has obliterated this fine old-fashioned homestead, with its beautiful lawn and trees, which had so long formed a most attractive feature of Brooklyn's principal thoroughfare.

family, Capt. Thomas Fleet, came from London, accompanied by his family, in his own vessel, and located near the head of Huntington Bay, which offered peculiar advantages for the prosecution of trading operations with the West Indies. Some idea may be formed of the growth and extent of his business, from the fact that, as early as 1675, he was assessed on the rate-list of the Town of Huntington for forty vessels, beside land and stock. From 1681-'85 he became an extensive freeholder; and, in 1688, was one of the patentees named in the patent for lands granted by Governor Dongan.

SAMUEL FLEET, the owner of this mansion, was a farmer, and made a snug property during the war of 1812, when grain and produce were very high; and, by the purchase of this farm, and other property in Brooklyn, became a very wealthy man. His life furnished a bright example of uprightness and punctuality.

A little above the present junction of De Kalb and Fulton avenues was the Black Horse tavern, kept, for many years, by Isaac De Voe, and afterwards owned by

Robert De Bevoise. Just this side stood the old sycamore tree which marked the place where the earth-work line of defense crossed the turnpike, in the Revolutionary war, and, also, in the war of 1812.

Beyond, and on the corner of a road which ran east to Fort Greene, stood another tavern kept by Charles Poling, who was connected with the horse-artillery of the county, the members of which generally assembled here before parade, etc. Opposite the tavern, which

Poling's tavern, led to a house on Fort Greene, occupied by a milkman named George McCloskey, who was the father of the present Roman Catholic Cardinal archbishop of New York.

From McCloskey's house the road ran northwardly until it entered the Newtown turnpike, near the easterly termination of the Wallabout bridge, about at the junction of the present Flushing and Portland avenues, where a toll-gate controlled the travel over both roads. A little south of the easterly end of the bridge was a mill; and over the Wallabout Flats was another wind-mill. Proceeding along the Newtown turnpike, on the south side was the dwelling of William Cornell (son of old Whitehead Cornell), who owned a valuable farm lying east of the toll-bridge, and which included a part of Fort Greene.

Beyond Uncle Billy's house, on both sides of the Newtown turnpike, to the town line between Brooklyn and Bushwick, there were only some ten houses, occupied by farmers, milkmen, and gardeners.

Beyond Poling's tavern, on the Jamaica turnpike, were three or four small dwellings and a carriage-shop, before coming to the estate of John Jackson, extending along the easterly side of the turnpike, from a point opposite the junction of Livingston street and present Flatbush avenue, to the southerly side of Hanson place. His residence was located on the north-east corner of the present Navy street and Lafayette avenue, while back, on the line of Raymond street and Lafayette avenue, were his barns, stables and gardens.

Retracing our steps, now, to Red Hook lane, we find on the southerly side of the turnpike, at the corner of Boerum and Fulton streets, a short distance back from the street, a two-story framed house, occupied at that time by Christopher Codwise. It was built by Dr. Benjamin Lowe, brother of the Rev. Peter Lowe, interred at Flatbush.

Beyond this was the residence of Tunis Johnson; then the grave-yard belonging to the Dutch church; then, with a considerable intervening space, an old frame house, shaded in front by two enormous black-walnut trees, and occupied by one Voorhis, who kept a carriage and blacksmith-shop nearly adjoining his residence. Then, opposite the Jackson estate, the residence of George Powers, who purchased this farm from Michael Grant Bergen, who emigrated to Nova Scotia, with many other loyalists, shortly after the close of the Revolutionary war.

GEORGE POWERS, Senior, demands at least a line of record. Although tradition says he was a Hessian soldier during the Revolution, an examination of the subject proves that he was not of those hirelings; but, on the other hand, he was among those who suffered much for their love of country. Before the Revolution he was a butcher in the old Fly Market, from which, in 1774, he advertised a run-away. On the breaking out of the Revolution, he took sides with the Sons of Liberty, and joined the Brooklyn Troop of Horse, under Capt. Adolph Waldron, then an inn-holder, at Brooklyn Ferry. When

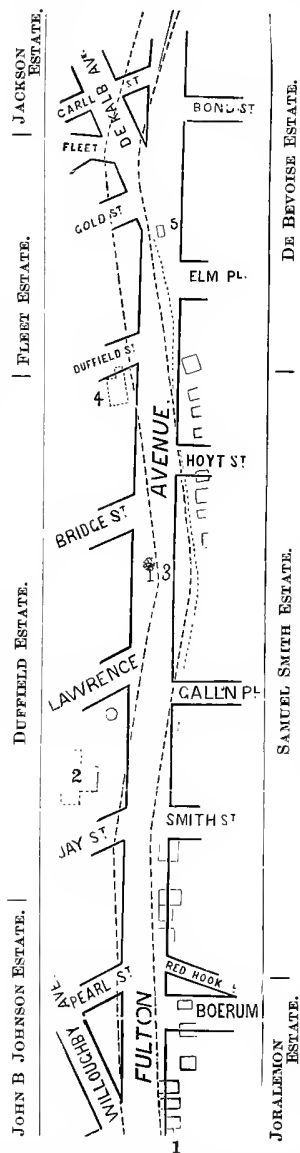
MAP B.

Showing (by dotted lines) the course of the old Brooklyn and Jamaica Turnpike, between the present City Hall and Bond street.

REFERENCES.

1. Du Fon's "Military Garden."
2. The Willoughby Mansion.
3. Site of the Old Dutch Church.
4. The Duffield House. (See also picture of the Old Dutch Church—chapter on *Ecclesiastical History of Kings County*.)
5. The Duffield family burial-place.

N. B.—The squares, in light lines, indicate the sites of old houses removed by the opening of the present Fulton avenue.



faced on this side of the road, was a hay-scales, bearing, in an niche, high upon its front, in an oval, an excellent profile, designed for, and understood to be, during the Revolution, that of King George III. When peace was again restored, however, it was found to be expedient, in order to save it from harm, to inscribe upon it the name of Franklin, and it ever after passed for a *bona-fide* representation of that American.

The road before mentioned as passing eastward, past

his company was ordered off Long Island, Powers and several others crossed the sound, from Huntington to Norwalk, leaving their horses behind, which were lost to them; and we find these men in Dutchess county, in October, 1776, in destitute circumstances; when they received their pay from the Convention. In 1782, before the termination of the war, although it was known to be near, Powers returned to Brooklyn, where he again commenced business. His early return gave him many advantages in establishing a profitable business before the British troops left the country; also, there were offered many opportunities for investing a small amount of money in various ways, as in teams of horses and cattle, wagons, etc., which the retreating British troops could not carry away with them. These investments, after a few years, returned large profits. His gains were laid out principally in landed property in the town, which afterwards became very valuable.

Just beyond Powers' was the old toll-gate before mentioned, which stood a little south of the present Hanson place, and about seventy-five feet west of St. Felix street. Some one hundred and fifty yards to the southward of the toll-gate stood the old John Cowenhoven house, a large heavy building of the Dutch type, with hump-backed roof, shaded by enormous willows and fronting south. Its location may be described as being on the west side of Fort Greene place, about one hundred and sixty feet north of Atlantic avenue, and with its gable on the Flatbush turnpike; it was pulled down only a few years since.

About two hundred feet south of the Cowenhoven house stood Baker's tavern, associated with the battle of Brooklyn, as being the point at which the long flanking-march of the British army finally ended on that day. A fine view of this building, more lately known as the old Bull's Head tavern, will be found in the *Brooklyn Corporation Manual* for 1867.

From the southerly side of the Flatbush turnpike, beyond the toll-gate, a road branched off, at about the present junction of Flatbush and Fifth avenues, to Gowanus. The Flatbush turnpike swept along, through fields and woods, up to the top of Flatbush hill, through what is now Prospect Park, and down the hill to a building in the hollow known as the "Valley Grove tavern"—near the boundary line between Flatbush and Brooklyn. At this point (about the corner of present Eleventh avenue and First street, as laid out on city maps, before Prospect Park was designed), it met a road running westward (nearly in line of the present First street), to a point in the middle of block now bounded by Fourth and Fifth avenues and Macomb and First streets, where it met the Gowanus road, just mentioned, as well as the road to Denton's and Freeke's mills. This, known as the old *Post-road*, from a very early period, and memorably connected with the history of the battle of Long Island, was also familiarly known, by latter generations, as the *Shun-pike* road; for, by travelling this route to Red Hook lane, the inhabitants of Flatbush, and others going to and from Brooklyn, avoided the toll-gate upon the Flatbush turnpike.

On the Flatbush turnpike, between the toll-gate and the Flatbush and Brooklyn boundary line, the only buildings were the "Valley Grove tavern," above mentioned; another about five hundred yards to the westward, called the "Farmer's Resort and Citizen's Retreat;" a small building in the woods on the top of the hill; a small house about half-way down the (Brooklyn) side of the hill; and another near the junction of the Flatbush and Jamaica roads, now Elliott place and Atlantic avenue. These were all on the easterly side of the road. Of that portion of the road which passed through what is now Prospect Park, it may be said that it was then almost uninhabitable on account of the agues, fall fevers, and other malarious diseases arising from the several stagnant ponds, hidden among the thick woods, which covered this locality.

At the junction of the Flatbush and Jamaica roads (present Atlantic avenue and Elliott place) was the site, afterward, of the extensive horticultural garden of Mr. Andre Parmentier.

He was a native of Belgium; was of a highly respectable family; had enjoyed the advantages of a liberal education, and was a relative of Anthony Parmentier, who introduced the potato in France. Pecuniary losses induced Mr. Parmentier, who was a merchant, to come to this country, in 1824. Stopping a while in New York city, he was finally induced, by his passion for botanical pursuits, to devote himself to gardening on a scale heretofore almost unknown in this section. Refusing the superintendence of the once famous Botanical Garden of New York, which was urgently pressed upon him by Dr. Hosack and others, he selected and purchased in Brooklyn, this tract of twenty-five acres, lying between the Jamaica and Flatbush roads, on the 4th of October, 1825, for the sum of \$4,000. Although beautifully and advantageously located, the surface of these grounds was a bed of rocks, some of which were used in enclosing the garden with a wall. Mr. Parmentier erected a dwelling and garden-house, and stocked the land with a great variety of trees and plants, useful and ornamental, indigenous and exotic. The garden soon grew into importance and attracted large numbers of visitors, from all quarters. In it the *Morus Multicaulis* plant was first introduced into America by Mr. Parmentier, whose enthusiastic devotion to floral pursuits promised brilliantly for his own interests, as well as for the public benefit. But, to the great regret of all who knew him, he was cut off by death, in 1830. His widow strove hard to continue the business; but failing in consequence of the death of her only son, was finally obliged to dispose of the trees and plants; and the grounds, once occupied by their attractive garden, were cut up into building-lots and streets. Mr. Parmentier was, also, an excellent musician, and possessed artistic powers of no mean quality.

From this point the old Jamaica turnpike ran through fields, farms and woods, to Bedford-Corners, which was a simple, forest-environed cluster of ancient, low-browed Dutch houses, presenting a scene of quiet beauty (See page 99) which has but lately, and reluctantly, yielded its charms to the rude embrace of city improvements. Bedford-Corners was especially the seat of the Lefferts family, the principal member of which, sixty years ago, was Leffert Lefferts, Esq., or Judge

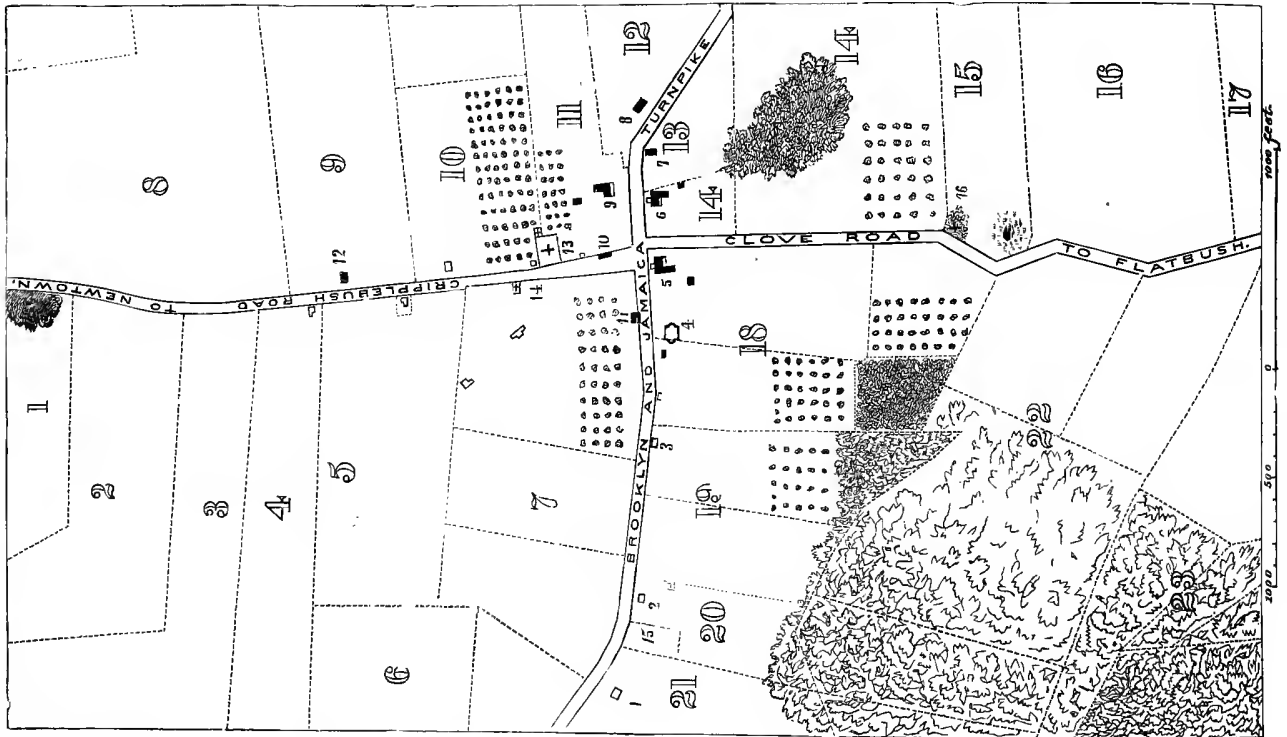
Lefferts, as he was usually called, who resided in the old Lefferts house on the south-west corner of the cross-roads. His biography will be found in the chapter in this volume devoted to "*The Bench and Bar*," and a genealogy of the Lefferts family is given in *Stiles' History of Brooklyn*.

From Bedford-Corners the *Cripplebush road* ran north-easterly to Newtown; the *Clove road* (called by the British "the Bedford pass") southerly through the clove or cleft in the hills, and the *Brooklyn and Jamaica road*, or "Kings' highway," ran easterly.

That portion of Brooklyn along the *Old Gowanus road to the Denton and Freecke mill-ponds*, and thence

along the *Bay shore to the New Utrecht town-line*, remains to be described.

This road, which was established in 1704, left the Flatbush turnpike just above the toll-gate, and ran southerly in the same general direction as the present Fifth avenue, until it reached the vicinity of the present Fifth street, where it deflected south westerly towards the present junction of Middle street with Third avenue, thence following the line of that avenue along the shore. The first house was a low one-story building on the westerly side of the road, in the vicinity of the present Dean and Bergen streets. It stood on the low ground, at some distance from the road; and, together



MAP OF BEDFORD-CORNERS IN 1766-'67.

(From Ratzer's Survey of 1766-'67, and shows the farm-lines, roads, houses, etc., etc., as then existing.)

REFERENCES TO THE LARGE FIGURES.

1. P. Reid (?).
2. Teunis Tiebout, 1776.
3. Peter Stothoff.
4. Jeremiah Meserole.
5. — Johnson.
6. Jacob Ryerson.
7. Rem Remsen, afterwards Barent Lefferts. House pulled down about 1840.
8. Barent Lefferts.
9. Michael Vandervoort, 1776; afterwards Jacobus De Bevoise. House pulled down recently.
10. Cornelius Vanderhoef, afterwards Leffert Lefferts.
11. Jeronimus Remsen, afterwards Barent Lefferts and Rem Lefferts. House pulled down 1838.
12. Lambert Suydam, afterwards Daniel Lott, now Chas. Betts. House pulled down 1856.
13. Abraham Van Anden, afterwards Benjamin Hinchman. House pulled down 1819.
14. Nicholas Blom, afterwards Charles Turnbull, Leffert Lefferts, sr., 1791, and John Lefferts. House rebuilt about 1787.
15. Peter Vandewater. Hendrick Suydam, 1791; Leffert Lefferts, jr., 1835.
16. Andris Andriese, Leffert Lefferts, sr., 1774; Leffert Lefferts, jr.
17. Benjamin and Jacobus Vandewater to Hendrick Fine, 1743; Fine to Jacobus Lefferts, 1753; L. Lefferts, sr. and jr.
18. H. Fine to Jacobus Lefferts, 1753. Partly from Executors of Andris Andriese. House built about 1750.
19. Peter Vandewater, Robert De Bevoise.
20. Isaac (?) Selover.
21. Rem Cowenhoven, Teunis Tiebout, Nicholas Cowenhoven.

22. Rem Vanderbeck and Lambert Andriese, afterwards Barent Lefferts.
23. John Cowenhoven, Isaac Cortelyou, and others, being part of first division Brooklyn Wood-lands.

REFERENCES TO THE SMALL FIGURES.

1. The Tiebout house, afterwards occupied by Nicholas Cowenhoven, subsequently by Robert Wilson.
2. The Selover house.
3. Rem Vanderbeck, afterwards Robert De Bevoise.
4. Judge Leffert Lefferts' house, built in 1838, now the residence of J. Carson Brevoort, Esq.
5. Judge Leffert Lefferts' old house, built about 1753.
6. N. Blom's house, rebuilt, 1787, by Charles Turnbull, an officer of the British army, afterwards occupied by John Lefferts.
7. Abm. Van Eoden's, then B. Hinchman's, and more recently J. P. Brinckerhoff's.
8. Lambert Suydam, afterwards Daniel Lott.
9. Jeronimus Remsen, then Barent Lefferts, then Rem Lefferts.
10. The old Bedford village school—afterwards Public School No. 3.
11. Old house pulled down in 1841.
12. Michael Vandervoort, afterwards Jacobus De Bevoise.
13. Bedford village burial-ground—the Lefferts' family burying-ground in the rear.
14. Old Remsen (?) family burying-ground.
15. Two acres bought by Brooklyn and Jamaica Turnpike Co., for a gravel-bank.
16. Negro burying-ground.

with the farm attached, was the property of *Thomas Poole*, who had purchased it from *Thomas Baisley*. At this period it was occupied by *Van Houten*, a milkman.

A little beyond, on the easterly side of the road, and in the vicinity of *Wyckoff* and *Warren* streets, was the two-story house of *Mr. Willetts*, a retired merchant, built in a style, and with pretensions, above the ordinary farm-houses.

The next house on the same side of the road was an old one-story building, standing several hundred feet back from the road, and with a fine cherry-orchard in front, occupied by tenants of *Adolphus* (or "*Dolph*") *Brower*, whose residence stood next, on the same farm, near the road. Nearly opposite, on the west side of the road, *John Ham* built a fine two-story house, standing several hundred feet back from the road; and there he resided in style so long as the money lasted to which he had fallen heir—finally ending his life in poverty—his last occupation being that of driving a swill-cart. *Ham's* house, erected after 1815, was burned a few years ago. *Brower's* and *Ham's* houses were located near the line of the present *Butler* street.

On the same side of the road, after passing *Brower's* (near the present *Degraw* street), was the residence and premises of *Tom Poole*, farmer, milkman and keeper of a small grocery and tavern. On the same side of the road, close to *Poole's*, and belonging to him, stood an ancient stone house, occupied by tenants.

On the same side of the road, between the present *Union* and *Sackett* streets, was *Jeremiah* (or *Jerry*) *Brower's*, who owned a few acres, afterwards bought by *Jaques Cortelyou*.

Next, on the easterly side of the road, in the vicinity of *President* street, was the house of old *Theodorus Polhemus*.

On the corner of the *Gowanus* road and the *Post* road leading to *Flatbush* (near *Macomb* street), stood a long one-story building, one end occupied as a school-room, and the other by a farm-laborer's family.

On the opposite corner stood *William* (or *Bill*) *Furman's* tavern.

Branching off westerly from the *Gowanus* road, at this point, was the road leading to *Denton* and *Freeke's* mills. On this were the fine houses, first of *Nehemiah Denton*, near the intersection of the present *Powers* and *Carroll* streets, and next that of *John C. Freeke*, near the intersection of *Nevins* and *Union* streets; each having a tide-mill attached to his premises. Both of these were flour-mills. Both *Denton* and *Freeke* had been merchants; were rich; and among the first in *Brooklyn* to use coaches, or barouches.

Freeke's mill, otherwise known as "*Brower's*," or the "*old Gowanus* mill," was the oldest in the town; and, until recently, portions of its dam were easily discernible between *Third* and *Fourth* avenues. Both *Denton's* and *Freeke's* mill are closely associated with the tragic incidents which marked the closing rout of the Ameri-

can forces, at the battle of *Brooklyn*, August 27th, 1776.

Denton's pond was the subject of a curious contract about 1709, between its original proprietors, *Abram* and *Nicholas Brower*, and *Nicholas Vechte*, the builder and occupant of the old 1699, or *Cortelyou*, house. With the strong predilection of his race for canals and dikes and water-communications, old *Vechte* added the traits of eccentricity and independence. His house stood on a bank a few feet above the salt-meadow, at a distance of a hundred yards from the navigable waters of the creek. To secure access to them, from his kitchen door, *Vechte* dug a narrow canal to the creek, but the ebb-tide often left his boat firmly sunk in the mud, when he wished to reach the city market with the produce of his farm. He therefore contracted with the *Browers* to supply him with water from their pond; and a channel was dug, in furtherance of his scheme, to a water-gate, through which his canal was to be flooded. The old Dutch farmer was accustomed to seat himself in his loaded boat, while it was resting in the mud of the empty channel, and hoist his paddle as a signal to his negro-servant to raise the gate. The flood soon floated his boat, and bore him out to the creek, exulting with great glee over his neighbors, whose stranded boats must await the next flood. The contract for this privilege, as well as another, by which *Vechte* leased the right to plant the ponds with oysters, are in possession of *Mr. Arthur Benson*.

On the south-west corner of the *Gowanus* road and the road leading to these mills was the house of *Joe Poole*, a shoemaker. Farther down, on the east side of the road, was the *Cortelyou* or *Vechte* house, already described.

On the block between *Second* and *Third* streets, and about a hundred feet east of *Fifth* avenue, was a small private burial-place, apparently that of the *Cowenhoven* family. The earliest date of the one or two remaining monuments is that of *Nicolas Kowenhoeven*, February, 1792.

Next, on the west side of the road, and between the present *Fifth* and *Sixth* streets, was a house, originally built by *Tunis Tiebout*, belonging to *Theodorus Polhemus*.

Next beyond, on the same side of the road, between *Ninth* and *Tenth* streets, was the house of *Cornelius Van Brunt*, on a farm which he purchased from the *Staats* family. Opposite to his house, and between *Eighth* and *Ninth* streets, was the residence of his father-in-law, *Rem Adriance*.

Next, on the west side of the road, between *Thirteenth* and *Fourteenth* streets, was the house of *Mr. Walter Berry*, who, in 1813, was gored to death by a bull which he was fattening. In 1816 it was occupied by his son *Richard*.

On the same side of the road, about on line of present *Fifteenth* street, on the adjoining farm, stood a house

formerly occupied by *Derrick* and *Deborah Bergen*, and afterwards by their son-in-law, Joseph (or Josey) Smith. This building was originally erected on the Cortelyou property, at the Narrows; but was taken apart and removed by water to its present site, on the purchase of the property by Derrick; his wife, Deborah, being a daughter of one of the Narrows' Cortelyous.

Opposite to Smith's, on the east side of the road, stood a small house occupied by *Tiesje Carson*, another daughter of Derrick and Deborah Bergen, and widow of Ebenezer Carson.

The next house on the east side of the road, and still standing on Sixteenth street, was that of *Rachel Berry*, widow of Walter, before named, who, after her husband's death, built upon her share of her father's (Derrick Bergen) farm.

On the west side of the road, at the corner of Hamilton and Third avenues, was the house of Peter Wyc-off, occupied by one of his grand-daughters. It stood upon the site of the old Van Duyne mansion.

The next house stood on the east side of the road, between the present Twentieth and Twenty-first streets, and was occupied by Anthony (or "Tony") Hulse, the owner of a large farm adjacent. A little beyond this house, on the same side of the road, stood a one-story house, erected before the Revolution, for his son John. Across a bridge, which spanned a small stream of water that drained the swamp above, was the house of George Bennet, on the west side of the road, and, a little beyond, the elevation known as Blokje's Bergh.

Next, on the east side of the road, was the one-story stone house of Wynant Bennet, a one-armed man. It was built at a very early date, and stood on the edge of the road (on the very brink of the cove) on the line of the present Third avenue and Twenty-seventh street.

The next house was that of the brothers Simon and Peter Schermerhorn (see cut on page 84), erected by the Bennets prior to 1695, on what is now Third avenue, near Twenty-sixth street. A little farther, on the same side of the road, in the vicinity of Thirtieth street, stood the house occupied by Stephen Hendrickson, son-in-law of George Powers.

On the adjoining farm, on the westerly side of the old road, on the present Third avenue near Twenty-third street, stood the house of Garret Bergen—erected, it is supposed, some years before the Revolution, by one of the Bennets; but enlarged and rebuilt about 1800, after the property came into possession of Teunis Bergen, father of Garret. This Garret was generally known as Squire Bergen, having for many years held the office of justice of the peace, as also that of an assistant judge of the county. He was noted for keeping peace among his neighbors; always refusing a warrant while the applicant was in a passion, and putting him off, until he had cooled down, after which an amicable settlement was generally effected with ease. He was an elder in the church, and a truly upright man, whose word was as

good as his bond, and whose conscientious life was admired and respected by all who knew him. His sons were the late Hon. Tunis G., favorably known as a public man, and an industrious genealogist; Peter G., a merchant in New York; John G., the late able and popular police commissioner; and Garret G., a farmer. His only daughter married Mr. Tunis S. Barkeloo.

At the time of the Revolution, the Bennets owned the water-front on the Gowanus cove, from Twenty-fifth to Thirty-seventh streets, inclusive, and it was probably between Thirty-second and Thirty-seventh streets that the British reinforcements landed during the progress of the battle of Brooklyn.

The next house was that of the children of John Cropsey. It was a one-story framed building, with a wing on its easterly side, and stood near the easterly corner of the Gowanus road and Marten's lane, at a point on the present thirty-fifth street about half way between Third and Fourth avenues.

In the wing of the house they kept a store and a small tavern, and had a blacksmith's shop on the corner of the road. It is believed that a tavern, known as "The Red Lion," was kept in this building during the Revolution.

On the opposite corner of Marten's lane stood a small house occupied by *Gysbert Bogert*, a fisherman.

Next, on the same side of the road, on a plot of about an acre, stood the house of *Abraham Bennet*, deceased, occupied by Caty, his widow.

Beyond Abraham's house stood that of his brother Anthony, also, on a lot of about an acre, afterward owned by Abraham Tysen, a Jerseyman, who carried on shoemaking and tanning; his vats being located in the low ground near the edge of the meadow.

On the land of *Simon Bergen*, on the same side of the road as the last house, and about a hundred feet beyond it, stood the school-house of District No. 2, an old one-story framed building. The predecessor of this school, and the first in the district, was a log house, which stood near the swinging-gate leading to John S. Bergen's, between Second and Third avenues, near Forty-fourth street. About seventy years ago the school was kept by an Irishman named Hogan, who fell in love with one of his female scholars, and made an unsuccessful attempt to commit suicide, by cutting his throat, because neither she nor her parents would listen to his proposals. After Hogan, the school was taught by a man named Cisley, who, to punish his scholars, made a fool's-cap, with a red face, ram's horns at the sides, and a cow's tail hanging down behind (the latter articles procured at Tysen's tannery), which he placed upon the head of the offenders, and then had him, or her, escorted around the neighborhood by two of the larger scholars. This, however, did not operate long; for, one day, while they were thus exhibiting a daughter of Stephen Hendrickson, Mrs. Hendrickson happened to meet them, and straight-

way seizing the scarecrow cap, rent it into tatters, and threatened the pedagogue with her direst vengeance, if such a punishment as that was ever tried on again. After the failure of his fool's-cap experiment, Cisley used to punish the children by locking them up in the garret, or loft of the school-house, which had no window, and was entered by a trap-door. This, however, was no great punishment for the youngsters, who amused themselves during confinement in various ways ; among others, by chasing and arousing the flying-squirrels which had their nests behind the chimney.

Next, was the old De Hart house (see cut, page 83), owned by *Simon Bergen*, who had previously built on the hill, west of the old house, a new habitation in modern style. Both houses stood on the shore of the bay, on the westerly side of the road, and were approached through a common lane. Simon was considered a rich man, and a good horseman, generally driving a spirited team in such style as, on some occasions, to excite the apprehensions of his wife Jannetje, whose remonstrances he would effectually silence by offering her the reins.

Next was the swinging-gate, leading to a small house on the shore of the bay, near Forty-third street, the residence of *John S. Bergen*, a brother of Simon.

The next house was that of *Wynant Van Pelt*, which stood on the east side of the road, between Forty-seventh and Forty-eighth streets—a small building, which had never been troubled by the painter.

After passing this we come to the lane leading to the old Van Pelt mansion, a low roofed one-story house, then occupied by *Henry Van Pelt* ; and, also, to a small modern-built house occupied by *Tunis Van Pelt*, both located near the bay and Forty-seventh street.

On the main road, on its east side, near present Forty-eighth street, was a shabby-looking dwelling, the house of *Christopher* (or “Chris.”), another of the sons of *Wynant Van Pelt*.

Further along, on the west side of the road, was the swinging-gate and lane leading to *Peter Bergen's*, whose house, a modern two story erection, with a basement, stood on the banks of the bay, near Fiftyeth street.

Then a lane led to the house of *Michael Bergen*, a modern one-story building, standing on the bay, near Fifty-third street.

The next lane led to the house of *Theodorus*, a son of Michael, and commonly known as *Dorus Bergen*, an ancient one-story building, partly constructed of stone, on the bay, near Fifty-first street.

Beyond his lane was that leading to *Tunis* (or Major) *Bergen's*, the last house within the bounds of the town of Brooklyn, a two-story building, with a wing, yet standing on the bay, near Fifty-eighth street.

The most fashionable style of houses among the wealthier farmers of the county, about the beginning of the present century, and of which there are many specimens yet extant, was a main building of about one story and a half in height, without attic windows, the second story gaining its light from gable windows; the roof, with a double pitch, extending over the eaves some four or five feet, in a curved manner, so as to form a piazza and cover the front and rear stoops, but without columns for support. A wide hall ran through the centre of the house, with two, and in some instances three, rooms on each side of the hall, the upper story being somewhat similarly divided. A wing was generally added for a kitchen. On this general plan were the Tiebout, Wyckoff, George Bennett, G. Bergen, J. Bergen and M. Bergen houses.

THE VILLAGE OF BROOKLYN,

1817-1834.

1817.—The winter of this year was unusually severe. The harbor was at one time closed by ice, both at the Narrows and at Hell Gate ; and foot-passengers crossed on the ice near the ferry.

There was much distress among the poor, and a *Brooklyn Humane Society* was formed for their relief. It was dissolved within a year, because, as was believed, “habits of imprudence, indolence, and dissipation, and consequently pauperism,” were engendered by its well-intended efforts.

Town meetings were held during the year to take measures against the storage of powder at Fort Greene, and with reference to ferry-rights, concerning which disagreements arose between the people and the ferry-company.

The name of “Old Ferry street” was changed to *Fulton street* by the trustees. At the first municipal election, William Furman, Henry Stanton, Tunis Joralemon, and Noah Waterbury were chosen trustees. In June the village was visited by President Monroe.

1818.—A survey of the village was made by Jeremiah Lott and William M. Stewart, assisted by Gabriel Furman, the historian, and John Cole. The boundaries were, on the south, District street (since Atlantic street), Red Hook lane, Fulton street, and thence a straight line to the head of Wallabout Bay. This survey, which was adopted by the trustees, was completed at a cost of five hundred dollars. Sign-boards were put up at the corners of the streets at an expense of \$50.

1819. February. The village was visited by General

Andrew Jackson. In March of this year the County Clerk's office was removed hither from Flatbush. The danger from powder-magazines at Fort Greene again agitated the public mind, and a committee to abate the nuisance was appointed. Thomas Birdsall succeeded Joel Bunce as postmaster in October of this year. An *Agricultural Society* was formed in the county.

1820.—The population of the village was 5,210, according to the census. Daily mails were established in May between this village and New York, as well as Jamaica.

It is recorded that several whales appeared this year near Sandy Hook, and that one, nearly seventy feet in length, was taken and towed into a slip at the foot of Pineapple street, where it was exhibited to those who wished to *feast their eyes* and *regale their noses*, till the stench became unbearable.

1821. March. The first number of the *Long Island Patriot* appeared. It was edited and published by George L. Birch.

Levels of the village were taken by Jeremiah Lott, and a compensation of \$250 was awarded by the trustees.

The number of buildings in the village this year was 867. Of these 96 were groceries and taverns. According to Furman there were, within the same limits, at the close of the Revolution, fifty-six buildings.

1822.—Sands street was this year paved, and in March, in compliance with a petition from the inhabitants, the trustees directed that the houses on Fulton, Main, Front, Hicks and High streets, should be *numbered*, at the expense of their owners. It was, also, announced that a graveled side-walk and curb-stones would be made in Fulton street, to the extremity of the village, near Military Garden. Fifty dwelling-houses were erected in the village this year.

March 13th, the *First Presbyterian Church* was incorporated.

In May of this year Alden Spooner published the first *Brooklyn Directory*. A *Medical Society* was established in Kings county.

On the 25th of July the corner-stone of the *first Roman Catholic Church* (St. James) was laid in Jay street, the society being incorporated on the 20th of November following.

In September precautionary measures were adopted by the trustees to prevent the introduction into the village of the yellow fever, then just making its appearance in New York; and the business of that city being necessarily transferred to Greenwich village, the steam ferry-boat Nassau plied regularly between that village and Brooklyn.

1823. March 3d, a severe storm occurred, which blew away the rope-walks of Joshua Sands and N. L. Martin, and did much other damage.

June 5th. Spooner's *Brooklyn Directory*, second issue, estimates a gain of 190 families during the year

past. The population of the town at this time was about 9,000; that of the village 7,000. During this spring Henry street was opened.

In July, also, one of the public stores attached to the Custom-house of the port of New York was moved to the village of Brooklyn, and kept in a three-story fire-proof building, on Furman street, erected by Jonathan Thompson, collector of New York. This was the first, and for many years the only, bonded warehouse in Brooklyn, and was situated on the dock on Furman street near Cranberry street. (Map c, 1). Another addition to the prosperity of the place was the erection of a laboratory for the manufacture of whiting and colors, by Hiram & Arthur Hunt, situated near Isaac Cornell's distillery, and named The Nassau Whiting and Color Manufactory, and *Furman's Mss.* record that, on the 1st of August, there were no less than 53 vessels at the wharves of Brooklyn, besides eight vessels in the United States Navy-yard. On the 28th of this month the *Apprentices Library* was organized, which may be considered *the* event of the year.

The village had been visited, in 1803 and 1809, by epidemics of yellow fever. The first, which occurred in a year of uncommon salubrity, broke out at the Wallabout settlement, near the navy-yard, where two vessels from infected ports had discharged their bilge water. In this epidemic seventeen persons were attacked, of whom six died.

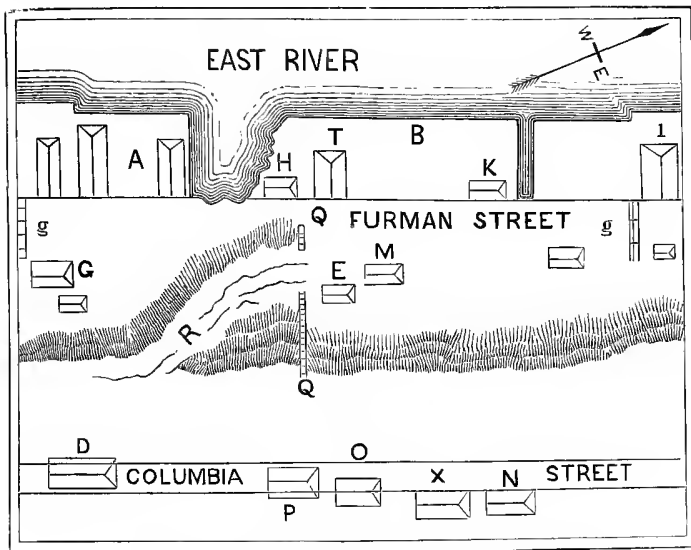
In the summer of 1809, another remarkably healthy season, the second epidemic occurred, traceable to a ship from Havana, which landed at Sands' lower dock, between Fulton and Catherine street ferries. In this case much discussion arose as to its cause, not all of which was entirely courteous in its character. Twenty-eight deaths occurred.

During this summer (1823) Brooklyn was again visited by the yellow fever. It was supposed by some to have been imported into the village by the ship *Diana*, or the brig *Trio*, which had lost her mate at sea by the same disease. The *Diana*, however, seems to have been fairly cleared, by concurrent testimony, from the imputation. Many inhabitants were disposed to trace the infection to certain stores belonging to Samuel Jackson and George Hicks, in which were stored large quantities of fish, from which arose an almost insupportable stench. The first case occurred on August 22d, in a house on Furman street (Map c, g), and was fatal. In the same dwelling seven persons subsequently sickened, two of whom died; and two who had removed from the house were attacked and died at a place in Nassau street near the Alms house in the back part of the village. Another who was ascertained frequently to have passed through the infected district, and, as it was believed, had frequently visited the house on Furman street (Map c, g), died at the Mansion house on Columbia street. On the same street, also (Map c, d), John Wells, Esq., an eminent member

of the New York bar, expired on the 7th of September. Another fatal case occurred on Furman street (Map c, n), above the cooper's shop of F. Tuttle (Map c, m); another on the same street, near Caze and Richaud's distillery, which recovered; and a case at Toby Philpot's, a public tavern on Furman street, recovered. A young woman, also from Furman street, died in Pearl near Nassau street; and two cases of sickness occurred, one without the infected district, and one who sickened on board the *Diana*, of which her husband was captain, and was reported to the New York Board of Health, and the health-officer attributed her illness rather to the atmosphere of that part of Brooklyn where the

be said to have fully commenced. Awaking suddenly, as it were, to an appreciation of the resources and advantages which they possessed, and flattered by the evidences of prosperity everywhere apparent, its inhabitants agitated great improvements. Streets and roads, hitherto considered as good enough, were now voted to be insufficient, and nuisances; and, as vast mounds of earth vanished before the steady approach of pick and spade, new avenues and streets, nearly all of which were re-graded and paved, sprang into existence with the suddenness of magic. Here and there, also, at private expense, a lamp was hung out, serving only to make darkness more grimly visible; and the imperfect

water-courses, which ran through the *middle* of the streets, were replaced by carefully constructed *side gutters*. A commodious market was built, a village watch was organized, a municipal court established, and the efficient force of the fire-department nearly doubled. More attention was paid to everything relating to the village government; and the village authorities, whose functions had previously been quite limited, were reassured by the growing public interest, and strengthened by various subsequent acts of legislation, so that their action became gradually more decided and efficient. On every side, buildings arose of higher architectural pretensions and beauty than those which had preceded them; and, led on by the enterprise of Dr. Charles Ball, followed by Z. Lewis, A. Van Sinderen, and others, the village began to assume a more elegant and creditable appearance. Everywhere the evidences abounded that the hitherto shiftless stand-still village was too near the heart of the leviathan metropolis, not to feel its throb, and be quickened by the rush of the life-current that circulated through its immense arteries. From this period the march of the village was impetuously forward, never stopping, never wavering till its rapid career culminated in its incorporation, ten years later, as a *city*. In quick succession, one street after another was opened, graded, paved and lighted; and radiating countrywards in every



MAP C—OF YELLOW FEVER DISTRICT, 1822,

Copied from one in Gabriel Furman's Mss. Notes.

REFERENCES.

- A.—Wharf and store of Samuel Jackson and George Hicks.
- B.—Where the ship *Diana* lay.
- C.—House where the fever appeared.
- D.—Residence of John Wells, Esq.
- E.—House where Thomas Oxx sickened and died.
- F.—Mansion house, owned by Alex. Robinson, Esq., and in which John Ward, Esq., died.
- gg.—Fences erected by the Trustees.
- H.—Toby Philpot's.
- I.—Stone store of Henry Waring.
- K.—Thomas Armstrong's tavern.
- L.—Jonathan Thompson's brick store.
- M.—Furman Tuttle's, and Mrs. Vanderveer's.
- N.—Residence of S. S. Newman.
- O.—Henry Waring's house.
- P.—David Kimberly's house.
- QQ.—Step-ladder to ascend the hill, from Furman street.
- R.—Road up the hill.

ship lay, to which she imprudently exposed herself in the night, than to any infection in the ship. The last death occurred on September 22d, just one month from the day of the first death, and on the same day the fences (Map c, g, g), which had been erected at each end of the infected district, were removed by the trustees. The ravages of the disease may be briefly summed up, as follows: 19 cases, of which 10 were fatal.

Oct. 15th, the *First Baptist Church in Brooklyn* was incorporated.

1824. This year Brooklyn's career of progress may

direction from the Fulton ferry, were daily-increasing evidences that there was a reality and a soundness in all this prosperity, that fully attested its permanence.

Brooklyn had now come to be the *third* town in the State, and the *sixteenth* in the United States; having in its incorporated part a population of more than 7,000. An urgent necessity was felt for a bank. Accordingly, the *Long Island Bank* was chartered and established during this year, with a capital of \$300,000. Furman says: "An error will not be committed in saying that the growth and prosperity of Brooklyn have been largely promoted by this bank."

January 6th. Brooklyn was designated, in a report of the Secretary of the U. S. Navy, as one of the places at which the *ten* first-class navy-yards were recommended to be established. The *Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company* was also incorporated, and the first *Baptist* church established here.

By acts of the legislature the trustees were constituted a *Board of Health*, and the *Brooklyn Fire Department* was incorporated. It was stated that in 1824 the village contained 865 buildings, and the town 160, making a total of 1025, of which 146 were of stone or brick. The number of buildings erected during the year was 164. The village then contained seven churches, eight rope-walks, seven distilleries, two chain-cable manufactories, two tanneries, two extensive white-lead manufactories, one glass factory, one floor-cloth ditto, one card ditto, one pocket-book ditto, one comb ditto, one seal-skin ditto, seven tide and two wind-mills, an extensive establishment for the preparation of drugs, and articles required for dyeing and manufacturing, conducted by Dr. Noyes, late professor of Hamilton College, seventy grocery and dry-goods stores, two printing establishments, lumber and wood-yards, master masons and carpenters.

The rope-walks manufactured 1,130 tons of cordage annually, at an expenditure of \$260,000, and employed 200 persons. The distilleries consumed, on an average, 780 bushels of grain per day, at an expense of \$368,200 per annum. The seal-skin factory employed 60 men; pocket-book factory 40 persons; comb factory 20; the card factory, 300 persons; and other branches in all 400 to 500 persons. Immense quantities of naval-stores, hemp, cotton, India goods, hides, provisions and lumber, were stored at Brooklyn.

Not least among the improvements, which indicated that the hitherto shiftless village had woken up, was the care which the authorities began to exhibit for the removal of nuisances, the cleansing of the streets, and other measures pertaining to the health, appearance and welfare of the place. On the 19th of May, the trustees passed a law to regulate the cleansing of Fulton, Main, Front, Water, Elizabeth and Doughty streets, which required that said streets should be swept, and the dirt and rubbish collected in heaps every Tuesday and Friday morning, between the first day of April and the first day of December, before ten o'clock, under the penalty of \$2 for every offense.

In May of this year a distillery of spirits of turpentine was erected at the corner of York and Adams streets, by David F. Cooper, Esq.

Measures were instituted for the establishment of a poor-house and hospital. A site near Fort Greene, including $19\frac{3}{4}$ acres, was purchased of Leffert Lefferts, Esq., for \$3,750. The existence of six powder-magazines in the vicinity of this site was considered objectionable, and measures were taken to petition the

legislature for the passage of an act forbidding the storage of gunpowder at Fort Greene.

During the month of June several improvements were made in the village. Orange street was opened into Fulton street, by taking down the small, ancient wooden dwelling-house No. 153 Fulton street. Water street, between Main and Washington, and which was previously an almost impassable slough, was raised and regulated. Prospect street was also regulated. "Here the hills literally bow their heads, and the valleys are exalted." The rocks in the vicinity of this street, formerly an incumbrance on the ground, were blasted and converted into building-stone; and the ground on the hills, before considered of little account, became so valuable that boards were erected thereon, inscribed, "All persons are forbid taking any of this earth."

July 1st. Joseph Sprague and Alden Spooner gave public notice, by advertisement in the *Long Island Star*, that they, in behalf of themselves and their associates, would make application to the legislature of the State, at their next session, for an act of incorporation, under the style of *The Brooklyn Gas Light Company*, with a capital of \$150,000, for the purpose of lighting streets, dwellings and manufactories with gas. Mr. Sprague gives, in his *Mss. Autobiography*, an interesting account of the inception of this enterprise. "About this time," says he, "Alden Spooner and myself, for amusement, made application for a Gas Light Company, fully aware that Brooklyn could not then sustain it. We inserted a notice for it, without the least thought of asking the legislature to grant it, desirous only to create a little sensation. After our notice appeared, another set of gentlemen demanded a withdrawal of it, asserting that they only were the rightful heirs to such a privilege, and declaring that they would drive us from the field. Such impertinence roused our Yankee blood to yield to no such demand, believing that as citizens we had rights. The demand being persisted in, it was determined that I should go to Albany for a charter, which I did; and without delay procured its passage through the Assembly, when the other gentlemen appeared, with counsel, and assured me that I might go home. Knowing that *one* charter could not be sustained, and *two* much less, I allowed them to pass their bill through the Assembly. We were now both in the Senate, where I had enough friends, clearly ascertained, by whose advice I was warranted in saying to the other gentlemen that they might go home with their counsel. They finally retired, while I remained, adding by agreement a part of them as directors, and thus passed a bill that is now giving light to Brooklyn. The stock was all taken up and immediately sold at ten per cent. advance, such being the misguided zeal, at that time, for any kind of stocks. It was amusing to see the estimation of directors, claiming great sagacity in counting up the fortunes to be made by *gas*! It was doubly amusing to see the infatuated dignity of the directors in their meetings,

over a worthless charter ; yet to them a rich *placer* of gold. The directors monopolized nearly all the stock, and resolved that no one should sell a share without the consent of the board. Various committees were put in motion, lots bought for gas-works, plans and estimates examined, until the great men of the day became convinced that to proceed would end in *something more than gas*. At this juncture, I moved that the money paid in be refunded, and all operations be discontinued, until the increase of Brooklyn should afford a reasonable prospect of supporting a gas company, which suggestion was adopted, and the money honestly returned, with interest."

In July of this year the first *iron-foundry* in Brooklyn was established by Alexander Birbeck, on Water street, between Fulton and Dock streets.

On the 10th of August, the village was honored by a visit from General Lafayette.

1825. In January a portion of the ground near Fort Greene, lately purchased by the town of Brooklyn, was appropriated for a cemetery, and divided into convenient parcels, which were allotted to the different religious denominations of the town, viz.: Dutch Reformed, Friends, Presbyterians, Roman Catholic, Methodist Episcopalian, Universalist, Episcopalian, Baptist, and a Common Plot.

February. A flag-stone walk was laid from the gate of the Old or Fulton ferry, to the Steamboat Hotel, a large wooden building, which stood on the easterly corner of Fulton and Water streets, in Brooklyn. It was the *first walk ever laid to the ferry*.

At this time the five trustees of the village held their meeting in a room over a grocery-store (about No. 23), within a few doors of Fulton ferry. "It was the custom," says the late Mayor Sprague, one of the trustees, "as soon as the board assembled, to order decanters of rum, brandy, gin, and crackers and cheese. At the close of the year there was an animated discussion, whether we five trustees should eat a supper of oysters at the public expense. It was finally decided to be not only impolitic, but illegal, and so we ate at our own expense, of *one shilling each*." Corporation proceedings were now first published in the *Star*; but a motion to allow the editors to copy the *minutes* of the board for publication, was *negatived*.

The corner-stone of the new Apprentices Library was laid July 4th, of this year, by Gen. Lafayette.

On the 5th of December, a public meeting was held for the purpose of considering a bill proposed by a committee for the organization of a *city government*. It was *rejected* by the meeting, which was adjourned for *twenty-one years*.

According to the census, the population of the village in 1825 was 8,800. The *Brooklyn White Lead Company*, the oldest in the State, was established by the brothers Graham.

1826. In March the new market in James street was

commenced. It was completed, and in successful operation, about the last of November. Erastus Worthington was appointed Postmaster in place of Thomas King.

On the 3d of May the board of trustees assembled for the first time in the new and recently finished Apprentices Library building in Cranberry street. The erection of this edifice seems to have given a considerable impetus to the literary interests of the village, as we find that, in August, a library was being collected for colored people ; and in November following, a free reading and conversation-room was established in the basement of the library building.

On the first of May an election took place, under the provisions of the amended village act, which gave two trustees to each of the five districts, instead of one, as before.

The height known as Mount Prospect was this year greatly improved by Dr. Evans. Several cottages were erected, surrounded by handsome fences, side-walks, etc. ; fruit-trees were planted, and the land, by a systematic and liberal expenditure, was brought into a high state of cultivation.

A fruitless movement was also made by Mr. Hez. B. Pierrepont and others, for the establishment of a park, or promenade, along the Heights, which then retained much of their original appearance.

1827. April 1st, the daily publication of the *Brooklyn Evening Star* was commenced ; but at the end of six months it was discontinued for want of sufficient patronage. The *Brooklyn Savings Bank* was also chartered, principally by the efforts of the friends and directors of the Apprentices Library, with a view to benefit adult mechanics.

The *first night boat* on the Fulton ferry commenced running September 28th of this year.

1828. In March the proposition was made to light Fulton street ; the cost of each lamp being estimated at \$4.23 per annum.

April. An ox-cart, owned by the village, and used for collecting and removing dirt and garbage from the streets, was found so economical, as to cause a proposition for the purchase of another. Two months later these ox-carts (the suggestion of the worthy president of the village, Mr. Sprague) were stated to have fairly paid their cost and the labor of gathering the manure.

May. A *theatre* was erected, about this time, on Fulton street, between Nassau and Concord, but was subsequently abandoned, and converted into dwelling-houses.

1829. May. The *Kings County Sabbath-school Society* was formed and comprised twenty-three schools within the county. Its officers were Nehemiah Denton, of Brooklyn, president ; John Terhune, vice-president ; N. W. Sandford, 2d vice-president ; Abraham Vanderveer, treasurer ; Evan M. Johnson, secretary. Managers for *Flatbush*, Messrs. Rev. Meeker, Rouse, Strong, Butie, Crookshank and Carroll ; for *Flatlands*,

John Lefferts, Dr. Vanderveer, David Nefus, Johannis Remsen; for *Gravesend*, B. C. Lake, John S. Garrison; for *New Lots*, John Williamson, John Vanderveer; for *Brooklyn*, Eliakim Raymond, Adrian Hegeman, Richard M. White; for *Bushwick*, Peter Wyckoff, James Halsey. This society was auxiliary to the Southern Sabbath-school Union of the State.

At this time the village contained some 300 youth, 200 of whom attended the public schools.

June 4th, the steam frigate *Fulton*, which had since the war been used as a receiving ship, was destroyed at its moorings at the Navy-yard by the explosion of the magazine. By this accident thirty-three were killed and about thirty were wounded.

In the same month a *Temperance Society* was organized in Brooklyn, with A. Van Sinderin, president, and F. T. Peet, secretary.

In October the corner-stone of the *Collegiate Institute for Young Ladies* was laid. The building, which cost \$30,000, stood on Hicks street. The institution, after a few years of evanescent prosperity, was closed because of a lack of patronage, and was afterward converted into a hotel and boarding-house, under the name of the "Mansion House."

1830. The events of the year were unimportant. The County Supervisors purchased a *poor-house farm* at Flatbush; a *Dispensary* was established; and a *Brooklyn Colonization Society*, and a *Brooklyn City Tract Society*. The *Hamilton Library Association* was founded.

1831. An application was made for a charter of a railroad from Brooklyn to Jamaica. Samuel E. Clements was appointed Postmaster, *vice* Erastus Worthington, deceased; and, on the resignation of Mr. C., in December, he was succeeded by Mr. Joseph Moser.

Meetings were held in December by the inhabitants, and a committee reported in favor of uniting the town and village of Brooklyn under a *city* government.

1832. February 1st. The *Star* of this date contains a letter from a Mr. G. B. White, of 100 Fulton street, to Mayor Sprague, on the subject of providing water-works for Brooklyn. He proposes the formation of a company, to be called the "Brooklyn Water Company," with a capital of \$25,000 (in 1,000 shares of \$25 each); for which sum Mr. White agrees to unite the requisite number of springs on the East River shore, and by tide-power to raise it to a sufficient height above the highest point on Clover hill, at the end of Cranberry street; and to construct a reservoir of the capacity of 1,000,000 gallons.

The *Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad* was incorporated on the 25th of April; though not completed and opened till April 18th, 1836.

June 20th. The dreaded cholera made its appearance in New York, and a medical board was established for the village of Brooklyn. Up to July 25th, when it ceased, there had been ninety cases, of which thirty-five

died. These cases occurred in Tillary, Jackson, Hicks, Willow, Fulton, Marshall, Gold, Front, Furman, Main, and High streets, and Red Hook.

It is noteworthy, as illustrating the early progress of the temperance reform in Brooklyn, that there were in the village, in 1832, with a population of 12,302, 178 licensed and unlicensed houses, where liquor was retailed. In 1833, a determined effort was made by the trustees to reduce the number of licenses; and the movement, in spite of the opposition which it met, so far succeeded that, in 1835, with a population of nearly 30,000, there were only fifty taverns in the city.

October. The *Brooklyn Bank*, the second in town, commenced operations, Samuel A. Willoughby, President.

1833. January. The principal measures at this time before the public, were, the location of the County Court House, the establishment of the South ferry, and the widening of Fulton, near Front street. The locating of the Court House in Brooklyn, long discussed and often attempted, had at length been rendered probable, owing to the fact that the old one at Flatbush had been destroyed by fire the December previous. In view of the rapid increase of property and population which had taken place in Brooklyn, it seemed most appropriate that the new edifice should be erected here. This town then had 2,266 electors; whereas, all the rest of the county had only 710; 554 jurors, and the other towns 270; and taxable property assessed at \$7,829,684 while that of the rest of the county was only \$1,600,594. The proposition, however, to locate the court here, and to increase the representation of the village in the board of supervisors, met with strenuous opposition from the other towns of the county. An act was finally passed, in the month of April, authorizing its location in Brooklyn, and appropriating Messrs. L. Van Nostrand, Joseph Moser, and Peter Conover, as commissioners to fix upon the site.

April. The plottings and plannings for a city incorporation, which had so long interested the citizens of Brooklyn, culminated at length in a determined effort to secure the coveted boon from the legislature of the State. A bill for the incorporation of the *City of Brooklyn*, and the erection of the *Town of Gowanus*, in Kings county, was introduced and passed the Assembly (April 12); but, owing to the strenuous opposition made by the city of New York, was lost in the Senate (April 27). The Brooklynites, however, received (May 15th) a sort of *placebo* for their disappointment, in the shape of an amended village charter, obtained through the efforts of Judge Greenwood, which embraced several sections of the proposed city charter. So desirous, however, were a portion of the citizens, of being under a city government, that they proposed the annexation of Brooklyn to the city authority of New York.

In the Autumn of this year land speculation in Brooklyn came to be, in some cases, almost a mania; and lots were purchased and sold at what then appeared

to many extravagant prices. Mount Prospect lots, two-and-a-half miles from the ferry, were mostly above \$100 per lot. The Parmentier garden (junction of the Jamaica and Flatbush roads), purchased for \$57,000, was sold in lots at auction, for between \$60,000 and \$70,000; ten acres at Red Hook, owned by the heirs of Rynier Suydam, sold for \$47,000; the R. V. Beekman farm, at Gowanus, comprising over 26 acres, was purchased at auction by Charles Hoyt, for \$25,000. About the same time, also, the old John Spader farm was purchased by Pine and Van Antwerp, auctioneers in New York. They soon laid out the beautiful avenue now known as Clinton avenue, from the river to the Jamaica road, lengthwise through the farm. The land on either side was sold in sections of half an acre each, or lots of eighty by one hundred feet. The first settlers were Messrs. Baxter, Van Dyke, Halsey, Hunter and others; St. Luke's (then Trinity) church was erected in 1835, and the avenue soon began to assume the beautiful appearance which now characterizes it.

During the period which elapsed from 1830 to 1835, a settlement, then called Wallabout village, was springing into existence along the shores of the Wallabout bay. At about 1840 the farms there were traversed by the Newtown turnpike, which entered into Brooklyn proper, through a toll-gate and over a bridge, built on the outlet of the mill-pond, which then covered the Park, lying west of the Navy-yard. An old road was also traveled from what was called Cripplebush, passing the old stone house of Mr. J. J. Rappalye, and thence through Nostrand avenue and Bedford avenue to Jamaica turnpike. From about the year 1832, streets were laid out from time to time, not all at once; and, in 1835, Myrtle avenue was graded and paved from the City Hall to Nostrand avenue, which afforded a new facility of entrance from the Wallabout into the older

part of the city. Not long after, a section of Flushing avenue was paved; extending from the Navy-yard Hospital-gate to Bedford avenue; and also Bedford avenue, Skillman street, Franklin and Kent avenues from Flushing to Myrtle avenue, and Classon avenue from Flushing to Willoughby avenue. None of these streets were cut through, except Bedford and Classon avenues, which had been ploughed up and leveled like a country-road.

The rope-walk of Fricker and Cooper (burned in 1845) was built in 1830, on the open space between Classon avenue and Graham street. About the same time a large, stone tenement-building, for the operatives in the rope-walks, was erected near. A few dwellings were soon scattered along Flushing avenue, and the other avenues north of Myrtle avenue; and, in 1836, the public school-house was built near the corner of Classon and Flushing avenues.

To illustrate the rapid growth of this part of Brooklyn, it is only necessary to say, that in 1842 there were three churches between Fort Greene (on the west) and Division avenue (on the east). On the same territory in 1860 there were twenty-eight.

That the thoughts and aspirations of Brooklynites were tending hopefully toward a future *civic* dignity is manifest from a proposition made to the Corporation, in March, to furnish the village with a supply of water from springs at the Wallabout. A committee thereon finally reported the plan as feasible, and that the modest sum of \$100,000 would cover all expenses of reservoir, steam-engine, and eleven miles of pipe. They further expressed their opinion that the village could be amply supplied with the purest water at an annual expense of \$10,000 for interest and cost. The financial aspect of the times, however, probably forbade any attempt at a realization of the project, as it seems to have been dropped from the public mind.

THE FIRST CITY OF BROOKLYN, 1834-1854.

1834. January. The Brooklyn people, undaunted by previous defeats, and confident in their own resources, and the justice of their claims, again renewed their application to the legislature for a city charter. The city of New York, with the spirit of "the dog in the manger," still threw the whole weight of her wealth and influence against the movement; objecting that the limits of the city of New York ought to embrace the whole of the counties of Kings and Richmond; that all commercial cities are natural rivals and competitors, and that contentions, inconvenience, and other calamities, grow out of such rivalries; that the period was not far distant when a population of 2,000,000 would be comprised within the three counties of New York, Kings and

Richmond; that the limits of the city of New York already extended to low-water mark on all the shores of Brooklyn, east of Red Hook; that an act of legislature, passed in 1821, relative to the village of Brooklyn, was virtually an encroachment on the rights of New York, inasmuch as it provided for the election of a harbor-master, whose duty in Brooklyn would be *within the city-limits* of New York; and further, that the sheriff and civil officers of Brooklyn were allowed to execute processes on board of vessels attached to the wharves of Brooklyn, etc., etc.

The real key, however, to the opposition made by New York, was undoubtedly to be found in the fears of her real-estate speculators, and her municipal author-

ities. The former, who held large quantities of land in the upper portion of the city, foresaw that the incorporation of Brooklyn, as a city, would give a new impetus to her growth and population; and that Brooklyn lots would soon become formidable rivals to their own in the market. The latter saw, in the energy of their youthful neighbor, a power which, when grown to maturer strength, might wrest from New York her long-contested and profitable water and ferry-rights. So capital, speculation and monopoly joined hands in a most formidable league against the aspirations and endeavors of Brooklyn. Despite their exertions, however, Brooklyn triumphed; and, by an act passed on the 8th of April, was fully invested with the name and privileges of a city.

The first election under the new charter was held on the fifth of May, and in several of the wards a union ticket was elected. The following gentlemen composed the FIRST BOARD OF ALDERMEN: *First Ward*, Gabriel Furman, Conklin Brush; *Second Ward*, George D. Cunningham, John M. Hicks; *Third Ward*, James Walters, Joseph Moser; *Fourth Ward*, Jonathan Trotter, Adrian Hegeman; *Fifth Ward*, William M. Udall, Benjamin R. Prince; *Sixth Ward*, Samuel Smith, William Powers; *Seventh Ward*, Clarence D. Sackett, Stephen Haynes; *Eighth Ward*, Theodorus Polhemus, John S. Bergen; *Ninth Ward*, Robert Wilson, Moses Smith.

This board, on the 20th of the same month, elected *George Hall* as the first mayor of the city of Brooklyn.

GEORGE HALL was born in New York, September 21, 1795. In 1796 his father purchased the Valley Grove farm, near Flatbush, where he lived for a short time, and then removed to Brooklyn. George was educated at Erasmus Hall, Flatbush; and, after he left school, took up his father's trade of a painter and glazier. In early life he was noted for his convivial habits, yet he displayed that frankness, energy, persevering industry and active spirit of benevolence, which soon rendered him the chosen and trusted counsellor of all his associates, the friend of the poor, and the warm and effective advocate of every measure calculated to benefit his fellow-men. In his business, which he commenced on his own account, in 1820, his talent, integrity and straightforwardness won for him a mercantile credit, which brought him success. Mr. Hall was chosen, in 1826 and 1832, trustee of the Third ward of the then village of Brooklyn. In October, 1833, he was elected president of the village, in a closely contested election brought about by his strenuous endeavors to exclude hogs from the streets, and to shut up the shops of unlicensed retailers of rum. As the first mayor of the city, he most honestly administered its affairs. In 1844 he was defeated as the temperance candidate for the mayoralty; and again in 1845, as the Whig nominee for the same office. On both of these occasions the vote polled showed, at least, that he was personally regarded by the people of Brooklyn as most worthy of the office. In 1854 Mr. Hall was elected to the mayoralty by the Know-nothing party, though an endeavor was made to defeat him by asserting that he was born in Ireland. But Mr. Hall proved that, though his parents were Irish, he was born in this country. He thus became the first mayor of the incorporated cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburg. During his term of office the cholera raged with considerable virulence in the city. There seemed

to be no one with sufficient courage to face the epidemic until Mr. Hall literally took it in hand. He went right into it; superintended the removal of victims, cleaned out houses, took responsibility after responsibility, and his efforts met with deserved success. The epidemic seized him also; but, apparently by his determination not to succumb to the disease, he fought it off. A report was circulated that he was dead, which report brought him to the front of the City Hall, that people might see he was *not* dead. His fellow citizens so much admired his courageous efforts that they presented him, as a testimonial, the house No. 37 Livingston street, in which he died. The testimonial avowedly took this shape, for the reason that his friends knew that he would not keep money in his possession while there was distress to be relieved. In 1861 he ran for the office of registrar as a Republican candidate, and, though he received a very complimentary vote, was defeated, and never after took any part in politics. There was scarcely a Brooklyn institution of public benefit in which Mr. Hall was not interested, either as one of its founders or as having helped its progress. He was, for a number of years, president of the *Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor*; and for some time president of the *Fireman's Trust Insurance Company*, a position that secured him a modest competency without overtasking his strength. He died on the 16th of April, 1868, and his funeral, on the following Sabbath, was such a scene as Brooklyn has seldom, if ever, witnessed. The flags upon the City Hall were displayed at half-mast, and, long before the hour of the services, the dwelling was crowded to excess; and a crowd of three or four thousand collected in the street, in front of the house, and were addressed by Rev. Henry Ward Beecher, in one of his characteristic and eloquent addresses. As the advocate of the temperance cause, it is almost superfluous to speak of George Hall. He was the first man in his city in the field for temperance; the first to sign in Brooklyn the Old Temperance Pledge, and the first to sign the Washingtonian Pledge. Even in his last sickness, when his medical attendants prescribed brandy for him, it was with the utmost difficulty he could be got to try it; and when the taste of that was in his mouth, which he had fought against all his life, he spat it out again, and died as he had lived. George Hall possessed strong physical health, sound practical sense, and true moral energy. He never shrank from the performance of any known duty. He was a faithful counsellor, a wise man, a disinterested, unambitious and truly patriotic citizen; a man who took straight paths of action and was fearlessly in earnest. But while he was a stern magistrate, there was never a softer heart beat in woman's bosom than his. When the presence of want was made known to him, he would swing a basket on his arm and take food from his own larder to feed the suffering poor. Large numbers of poor widows and families were accustomed to apply to him for assistance. Yet his name was very seldom seen on any published or printed subscription list.

Under the provisions of the charter with which the new city of Brooklyn commenced its existence the municipality was divided into *nine wards*, the first five of which corresponded to and were identical with the five *districts* of the former village, and retained the same limits and numbers as said districts. The legislative power was vested in a mayor and a board of aldermen. This board, constituting and denominated the Common Council, was composed of two aldermen, elected annually from each ward, and a provision was made whereby no member of the Common

Council could hold office as mayor and alderman at the same time. The Mayor was to see that the ordinances of the Common Council were complied with, and offenders against the same prosecuted; and he was to be assisted in his duties by an inspector or inspectors, who should report all such breaches of law to him, or to the attorney of the board, as the Common Council might direct. He was to have no vote in the Common Council, although he possessed a qualified veto power. The Common Council were to have the management and control of the finances, and of all property, real and personal, belonging to said corporation, and within the said city; they could make, establish, publish, alter, modify, amend and repeal all ordinances, rules, regulations and by-laws, usual and necessary for the regulation, protection, etc., etc., of the various city interests, including the powers of a board of health, of police and of excise.

In July it was resolved, at a public city meeting, of which the mayor was chairman, that \$50,000 should be raised to purchase ground for a *City Hall* at the junction of Fulton and Joralemon streets.

The South ferry was proposed, about this time, but was met with the usual opposition from New York city. This, and the condition of the Brooklyn ferries generally, kept up an agitation; and public meetings and newspaper articles seem to have been then, as now, a favorite, though ineffectual, method of warfare.

September. Permission to occupy Atlantic street was granted by the corporation to the Jamaica Railroad Company; and this, we may add, proved an unfortunate bone of contention, until the change of terminus in 1861.

1835. In January, the project of purchasing the low grounds at the Wallabout for a city park received a favorable report from a committee of the corporation.

During this year speculation in real-estate reached its culminating point. Eight acres of the Jacob Bergen farm were sold at \$1,000 per acre, and the real-estate of Samuel Jackson, deceased, brought \$570,000.

Jonathan Trotter was elected mayor in May, by the board of aldermen.

HON. JONATHAN TROTTER, born in Newcastle-upon-Tyne, England, in 1797, emigrated to this country in 1818, and began business in Roosevelt street, New York city, as a morocco dresser. Subsequently his business was in Ferry street. In 1826 he built an extensive factory for the dressing of leather, in Stanton street, near Gold, now the 5th Ward, Brooklyn; and, a few years after, in 1829, became a resident here; was very successful, and became a very prominent citizen of the village of Brooklyn. His residence was in Bridge street, between Tillary and Chapel. In 1834, under the new city charter, then a village trustee, was elected alderman of the 4th Ward. In May, 1835, Mr. Trotter was chosen mayor, and re-elected in 1836, and held the office until May, 1837. While mayor he laid the corner-stone of the City Hall, as originally planned, on the 28th of April, 1836. During his term, also, Myrtle avenue was opened, and extensive arrangements were made for opening up the outlying portions of the city. In

1837 Mr. Trotter was among those unfortunates who were caught with outspread sails, when the great financial storm burst upon the country, and went down from wealth to a very moderate competence. He returned to New York, in 1840, and re-established himself there, but never again was enabled to assume a prominent position in either politics or business. His death, April 5th, 1865, closed a long life of earnest work, in which was permanently developed a good, courteous, practical manhood. Mr. Trotter was the first president of the Atlantic Bank of Brooklyn, and, at one time, vice-president of the Leather Manufacturers' Bank of New York.

The small-pox again visited the city, and the poor were gratuitously vaccinated.

In September, Fulton street, from Front street to Water street, was widened by the demolition of the buildings on the east side.

The population of the city was found to be 24,310, a gain of 9,015 in fifteen years.

The close of this year found a City Hall in process of erection, the Lyceum building nearly completed, the Jamaica railroad finished, and several boats almost ready for use on the new South ferry.

1836. A permanent water-line for the city was reported, in January, by General J. G. Swift, and was afterward adopted by the city authorities; but all records and documents concerning this line suddenly disappeared from the office of the Common Council; and, in their anxiety to extend lots into the water, people made encroachments beyond that line.

The Apprentices Library (subsequently known as the City Buildings) was this year purchased by the city. Its site was afterward occupied by the City Armory.

The corner-stone of the new City Hall was laid on the 20th of April. The sanguine spirit of speculation and extravagance, which prevailed at that time, led to the planning of this building on a magnificent scale.

Unfortunately for the pride of Brooklyn, yet perhaps a blessing in disguise, the walls of this ambitious structure were suddenly arrested, when they had scarcely risen above their foundations, by the lack of means consequent upon the severe commercial revulsions of 1836-7. And when, after ten years of patient waiting, they began to rise towards completion, it was on a reduced scale of architectural grandeur, and consequently at a much diminished rate of expense.

The corner-stone of the *City Jail*, in Raymond street, near Fort Greene, was laid, and the Brooklyn Lyceum was completed and occupied, and during the following year was furnished with a reading-room, library, and museum.

Jonathan Trotter was re-elected mayor, in May of this year, by the board of aldermen.

1837. In May General Jeremiah Johnson was elected mayor by the board of aldermen.

JEREMIAH JOHNSON, aptly styled "Brooklyn's first and foremost citizen," was a descendant, in the fourth generation, of Jan Barentsen Van Driest, who came, in 1657, from Zutphen in Guelderland, and settled at Gravesend. His father, Barnet Johnson, born in 1740, was distinguished as an active

patriot during the Revolutionary struggle. He was encamped, in command of a portion of the Kings county militia, at Harlem, in 1776, and in the following year was captured by the British, and only obtained his parole (from Gen. Howe) through the kind interposition of a masonic brother. In order to help on the cause to which he was devoted he shrank not from personal and pecuniary risks, but suggested loans from friends in his county to the American government; and himself set the example by loaning, first £700, and afterward sums amounting to \$5,000, all the security for which was a simple private receipt, given, too, in times of exceeding peril and discouragement—a noble and memorable deed. JEREMIAH, his son, was born January 23, 1766; was, at the time of the breaking out of the war, in his eleventh year, and old enough to understand the full meaning of passing events. That these stirring scenes made an indelible impression upon his mind and character is evident from the fact that his reminiscences, descriptions, maps, etc., have since formed the largest and certainly the most valuable portion of the Revolutionary lore of Kings county handed down to our day, and has been largely drawn upon by every local and general historian of Long Island. His father dying before the peace, young Johnson was thrown the more upon himself; and, though the times were very unfavorable to regular education, he improved his opportunities as he was able; attended night schools; taught himself, and gradually disciplined and developed the elements of a manly, self-made and self-reliant character. Then, as a good, quiet citizen, he lived upon his farm in faithful industry; married (1) Abigail, daughter of Rem. Remsen, in 1787, who died in 1788; (2), Sarah, daughter of Teunis Rapalye, in 1791, who died in 1825. He had ten children (two sons, Barnet and Jeromus; and two daughters, Sarah Anne, married to Nicholas Wyckoff, and Susanna, married to Lambert Wyckoff), all of whom well sustain the paternal reputation of benevolence and usefulness, patronizing every worthy cause. The old homestead was taken down and the fine substantial mansion, now occupied by the family, was erected near the same spot, in 1801. In 1796 he became a trustee of the town of Brooklyn, an office which he held for twenty years. Naturally of a social turn, of benevolent impulses, and public-spirited withal, and from his very character, position and associations, he became early connected with public affairs. From 1800 until about 1840 he was a supervisor of the town, during a large portion of which time he was chairman of the board. In 1808, and in 1809, he represented Kings county in the State Assembly. He took an active part, also, in military matters. During the war with Great Britain, from 1812 to 1815, he was at first only a junior captain; but, when one was solicited to go out in command on the frontier, others declining, he volunteered for a dangerous duty, and so took precedence by consent, and early became colonel. Meanwhile he was very active in military affairs, and held himself ready at call. He was then honored with a brigadier-general's commission, and was in the command (of the 22d Brigade of Infantry, numbering 1,750 men) at Fort Greene, in Brooklyn, for three months. Whilst there he was conspicuous for his soldier-like ability; proved himself an excellent disciplinarian; and was a great favorite with officers and privates. He was fortunate, as well, for, in that three months' time, no one of his soldiers died. After the peace he was promoted to be a major-general, an office which he held during his life, though not in actual command of a division. When (in 1816) Brooklyn became a *village* his residence was left outside of the village bounds, and, of course, he could not (except by his own influence in a private capacity, which he ever largely exercised) participate in its public affairs; but, in 1835, the *City*

Charter was obtained, and the bounds included the 8th and 9th wards, which brought his home again within the lines. In 1837 he was elected mayor of the city of Brooklyn, and re-elected in 1838 and 1839. As a public officer he was faithful, prompt and indefatigable, while his punctuality was proverbial. In 1840, and again in 1841, he was elected again a member of the State Legislature. At one time, also, he was judge of the Common Pleas. In 1848 he was chosen the first president of the St. Nicholas Society of Nassau Island, an office which he held until his death. In 1849 he was unanimously elected an honorary member of the American Institute (having been a member since 1836), and at the time of his death was chairman of its board of agriculture. As chairman of this committee he was quite active in urging to its final passage the act for the encouragement of agriculture in the State of New York. Besides all these there was hardly an occasional or incidental duty in the business of agriculture, of education, of improvements, of reference, of management, to which he was not summoned, by reason of his business capacity and experience, as well as the reputation and high confidence he maintained amidst the community. He made no pretensions to literature, and seldom wrote anything for the public eye; he nevertheless wielded an efficient pen, when his feelings were aroused, or his sense of justice and propriety were violated by official malpractices, or the wrong-doing of others. He was fond of putting down memoranda and scraps of history, and interesting facts which his observation and experience had gathered; though in an incidental way, rather as materials for a more labored attempt. Well acquainted with the language of Holland, he was fond of making translations from its writers; as, for example, his excellent translation of *Von der Donk's History of New Netherland*. Indeed, there has not been an author meditating a work upon Long Island, or publishing one, who has not conferred with General Jeremiah Johnson, or who has not borrowed and used his communications and his notes, and made grateful mention of him and his assistance. He was a modest, consistent, obedient, habitual, conforming Christian. He belonged to the old Dutch Reformed congregation, in Brooklyn. In that congregation for fifty years he was a communicant; and a standing member of the consistory, in and out, alternating, according to the parish method, continually; and the clerk of its consistory for forty years, until his resignation in 1843. Gen. Johnson was remarkably active, prompt, decided; never idle; of indefatigable industry; kindly to all, warm-hearted and affectionate; generous in all his instincts, sympathizing with the young. He was of a social, genial mood; was fond of his pipe, even to the last, and handled it from his seventeenth year to within a quarter of an hour of his death. He was fond of his gun, of walking, and of manly exercise; from youth up an early riser, and early to bed. His free, easy, unreserved manners, made him ever a welcome and delightful guest. He could give information upon the gravest and most important themes; he could sympathize with the most common. If there was an ancient tree, or stump, connected with some memorial of the past, he knew of it, and he was the one to mark it by a monumental stone. His perception was quick and clear, and his tact admirable; and well nigh to the last, his eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated, and his voice continued full and strong. His death, which occurred on the 20th of October, 1852, was in harmony with his life—calm, trustful and serene—and caused a wide-spread and profound sensation of sorrow throughout the city of Brooklyn.

May. The three banks of the city, in accordance with the advice of a public meeting of citizens, sus-

pended specie payment. It was a season of great pressure in the money-market, and small bills or *shin-plasters*, issued by corporations and individuals, were extensively circulated.

1838. General Johnson was re-elected Mayor of Brooklyn. The year proved a very dull one for the city, in which business was prostrate, because of the financial crash of the previous year.

Greenwood Cemetery was this year incorporated as a joint-stock company, and in April, 1839, was incorporated as an association of lot-owners.

1839. Cyrus P. Smith, Esq., was chosen mayor by the aldermen.

CYRUS PORTER SMITH, born at Hanover, N. H., April 5th, 1800, spent his boyhood on his father's farm. Later, by teaching district-schools every winter, from his eighteenth year, he paid his way through college, graduating from Dartmouth in 1824, with honor. He then commenced the study of law with chief-justice Williams, in Hartford, Conn., and was admitted to practice in 1827. Locating in Brooklyn, he connected himself with Dr. Cox's (Presbyterian) church, of which he was chorister from that date until 1859. In 1828 he began to come into notice as an active Whig, in the Jackson presidential campaign; from 1833 to '35 was clerk of the village board of trustees; corporation counsel of the new city 1835 to 1839, enjoying, meanwhile, a fine legal practice. Chosen (the fourth) Mayor of Brooklyn by the Board of Aldermen in 1839; he was re-elected by the people in 1840, and held office until 1842. In 1836 and '37 he was supervisor, and city alderman in 1848. He was deeply interested in public education, the whole system of Brooklyn's public schools being put into operation during his thirty years' connection with the Board of Education, twenty-one of which he was its president. In 1856 and '57 he represented the city in the State Senate, holding the chairmanship of the committees on commerce and navigation. At an early date he became one of the associates of the Union Ferry Co., of which, from 1855 to the time of his death, he was managing director, superintending its vast interests with rare skill and fidelity. In January, 1869, he became acting president of the Brooklyn City R. R. Co.; nor must it be forgotten that, in 1839, during his first year of Mayoralty, in connection with Gen. Robert Nichols, he founded the City Hospital. He is further mentioned in Chapter on *Bench and Bar*.

This year was memorable for the completion of the labors of the commission, which had been appointed in 1836, for laying out the city. These commissioners were Samuel Cheever, Isaiah Tiffany, and Alonzo G. Hammond. Fulton and South ferries were this year consolidated.

1840. April 14th. The first election of the mayor *by the people*, in conformity with an act of the legislature, resulted in the choice of Cyrus P. Smith, Esq.

The city of Brooklyn, at this time, covered a district of twelve miles square, having a population of 30,000; thirty-five miles of regulated, paved and lighted streets; two markets; a large police; an efficient fire-department, a good government; twenty-three churches; three banks, whose united capital was \$1,000,000; one savings-bank; two lyceums (one for apprentices, the other at the Navy-yard); good schools; libraries, etc.

The Atlantic Dock Company was this year incorporated, with a capital of \$1,000,000.

1841. Mr. Smith was re-elected mayor. In this year the *Brooklyn Eagle* was established.

1842. Henry C. Murphy was chosen mayor. His biography will be found in our chapter on *The Bench and Bar*. The grounds occupied by Greenwood Cemetery were purchased, and several churches were established.

1843. At the charter election, Joseph Sprague (democrat) was chosen mayor.

JOSEPH SPRAGUE, born in Leicester, Mass., 1783, was the son of a wealthy farmer; at the age of twenty-one he became clerk in a wholesale store at Boston. Two years after he commenced, on loaned money, as a country merchant, but the unsettled condition of business, arising from the European war, rendered the effort unsuccessful. He sold out, paid his debts, and occupied his temporary leisure in enlarging his education at Leicester Academy. Next he tried farming, on a small farm given him by his father; but soon realizing that this was not his *forte*, sold out, and invested the proceeds in wire cards for carding wool and cotton, with which, in 1809, he came to New York. There he immediately engaged as school-teacher, quickly disposing also of his little stock of cards. Two years later (1811) he married into the De Bevoise family, of Bedford, and for several years thereafter resided partly in Bedford and partly at New York. The war of 1812 increased the demand for domestic manufactures, and woolen cards rose to an unprecedented price. His father and brothers established a card-factory at Leicester, and he managed their sales in New York city, with varying profit, for some years. In 1819 he purchased a home in Brooklyn (now 115 Fulton street); in 1822 he was one of the founders of the First Presbyterian Church; in 1823 his personal efforts at Albany secured a charter for the Long Island Bank, and the Brooklyn Fire Insurance Co. In 1825 he was chosen a village trustee, and, in 1827, its president, being re-elected annually until 1832, when, worn down with his arduous duties during the cholera season, he was superseded by George Hall. In 1826, with Col. Alden J. Spooner, he secured Fort Greene for the village. In 1833 he was the means of procuring a city charter for Brooklyn; and became, 1834, first president of the Long Island Insurance Co., holding the office for ten years. During this time speculation and politics ran high, and he had to contend persistently against the making of loans on property, then rated far above its normal value, for which action he was often soundly berated. But the financial crash of '37 proved his sagacity, inasmuch as, through his foresight and caution, the capital of the company (\$200,000) was saved entire. In 1834 the Brooklyn Bank went into operation, but received a severe blow in the dishonesty of its first teller. It was, however, upheld by the exertions of several individuals, among whom Mr. Sprague was conspicuous. In 1843 he was elected Mayor of the city of Brooklyn, and again in 1844, over George Hall (temperance candidate), and Hon. William Rockwell (whig). During his first term the whig members of the common council refused to attend the meetings of the board, whereupon Mayor Sprague had them arrested upon the charge of misdemeanor in the neglect of public business, and compelled their obedience. In 1848 he was one of the foremost advocates for the opening of Washington Park on Fort Greene. He was repeatedly, and as late as 1851, a member of the board of supervisors, always commanding a large amount of influence. He was one of the most zealous and efficient members of the board of con-

solidation which perfected the plan of union between Brooklyn, Williamsburgh and Bushwick, and, also, chairman of the police committee in that body. He was, at the time of his death, a director of the Mechanics Bank, a member of Hohenlinden Lodge of F. and A. Masons, and for many years Grand Treasurer of the Grand Lodge of the State. Rendered independent by the industry of his earlier years, crowned with the esteem of his fellow-citizens, and occupied in the duties of the many offices of trust and honor which they conferred upon him, he passed pleasantly and gently down the vale of years. In politics he never allowed his conscience to become subservient to the claims of party. In his public duties he was rigidly honest, evincing a firm determination to have every department of the municipal government carried out with efficiency and economy; and, while these duties fully occupied his days, *his own work*, in his factory, was performed *at night*. As a Christian he was a most sincere believer in the truth and mercy of God, and a humble and conscientious follower of his word. Life closed to him on the morning of the 12th of December, 1854, in the seventy-second year of his age. The universal expression of sorrow, which was heard on every hand, testified to the respect which was felt for his public services, and his eminent personal character.

A bill was prepared and presented to the legislature during this year, by the Common Council of New York, for taxing the property of citizens of Brooklyn doing business in that city. Against the passage of this law the Common Council of Brooklyn remonstrated. A line of omnibuses was established, in September of this year, between Fulton Ferry and East Brooklyn.

From a report made to the Common Council (in January, 1844), it appears that the whole number of buildings erected and in process of erection during the year 1843, was 570. These buildings were chiefly of brick, and stores were in seventy-five of them. Fourteen were in the places of buildings destroyed by fire, and four were church edifices.

1844. Joseph Sprague was re-elected mayor, over two opposing candidates.

April 4th was rendered memorable by a riot between the native Americans and the Irish in the neighborhood of Dean and Court and Wyckoff streets. The disturbance was finally quelled, but two companies of uniformed militia were kept under arms during the night, and the public feeling continued in an excited state for some time thereafter.

On the twenty-fourth of May the corner-stone of the Long Island Railroad tunnel was laid, and the tunnel was opened for travel on the third of the following December.

1845. The ferry question, and the establishment of a permanent city hospital, were, at this time, the leading topics of interest and public discussion among the citizens of Brooklyn: resulting in the passage of an act (May 14), vesting the power of granting ferry-leases in an independent board of commissioners; and the incorporation (May 8th) of the *Brooklyn City Hospital*.

April 8. The charter-election resulted in the choice of Thos. G. Talmadge (democrat) for mayor.

THOMAS GOIN TALMADGE, born in Somerset, N. J., in 1801, came, in 1819, to New York city, where he became a clerk in the mercantile establishment of Mr. Abraham Van Nest, and from 1823 to 1836 was engaged in the wholesale grocery business. In 1823 he married a sister of Hon. Jacob W. Miller, United States Senator from New York, who died in 1834; and, in 1835, he married a daughter of Cornelius Van Brunt, of Brooklyn. In 1836 he was a foremost supporter of Van Buren, and was elected a representative from New York city, in the State legislature. From 1838 to 1839 he was a member of the New York Common Council, and at one time, president of the board of aldermen of that city. In 1840 he became a citizen of Brooklyn, and, at once took a prominent position in public life, from 1842 to 1843 representing the 8th ward, and from 1844 to 1845 the 6th ward, in the board of aldermen of that city. From 1845 to 1846 he was (democratic) Mayor of Brooklyn, and, in 1846, was appointed judge of the county court by Gov. Wright. In 1848 (his second wife having died in 1843) he married the youngest daughter of Judge Teunis Joralemon, of Brooklyn. In 1845 he was appointed by Gov. Bouck, and without his previous knowledge, as Loan Commissioner of the United States Deposit Fund, for Kings county, and, in 1858, became the president of the Broadway Rail Road Co. of Brooklyn. He was, also, a member of the Chamber of Commerce. During his mayoralty the new City Hall was erected, and the 8th ward (Gowanus), to which he removed after his third marriage, was much indebted to his enterprise in developing its progress and growth—the Third avenue being the first one opened, about 1840, along the bay, and the second one being the Fifth avenue, both of which passed through the Van Brunt and Talmadge farms. Buildings soon commenced in that vicinity, and its subsequent growth was rapid. He was a politician of the old school, latterly a National Democrat and chairman of the Democratic National General Committee. Upright and sincere in his dealings, dignified and courteous in bearing, he held the esteem of all who knew him. He died May 4th, 1863.

A line of omnibuses was established, in July, between Fulton and South ferries, by George Van Brunt.

1846 and 1847. Francis Stryker (whig) was elected mayor of the city, April 14, 1846.

FRANCIS BURDETT STRYKER, son of Burdett Stryker, was born in Brooklyn, December 11th, 1811, and was educated, partly at the primary department of Erasmus Hall, at Flatbush, and partly by other teachers in his native village. At the age of fourteen, shortly after his father's death, he became an apprentice to Jeremiah Wells, carpenter, doing business in Poplar, between Henry and Hicks streets, who was, also, at that time, the chief-engineer of the village fire-department. Having served his time, he continued at his trade as a journeyman until 1838, when he was elected one of the three tax-collectors of the city. In April, 1839, he commenced working at his trade for his brother Burdett, until, in 1840, he was chosen sheriff (on the whig ticket), serving for three years; returning then to his trade in his brother's employ. While thus working as journeyman, at twelve shillings per day, in the spring of 1846, he received the whig nomination for mayor, to which office he was elected over the then incumbent (T. G. Talmadge), and re-elected the next year, 1847, (against Thos. J. Gerald), and the year following, 1848, (against Wm. Jenkins). During the first term of his mayoralty the only noticeable event was the purchase and erection of Washington Park (Fort Greene) as a public park. In January, 1847, the ship-fever broke out in Hudson avenue, near Tillary street, having been imported by a ship-load of Irish emigrants, and continued to rage in that and other localities,

in the 1st, 2d, 5th and 6th wards, during 1847 and 1848. Though the mayor and the board of aldermen, at this time, constituted the board of health, Mr. Stryker did not call them together officially to act upon the matter, not deeming it best to arouse any alarm in the public mind, or to raise any questions as to the legal propriety of making appropriations for the sick. Calling into practice the lessons of active practical benevolence, which he had learned from his father in the earlier epidemics which visited the village, he took upon himself the burden of personal visitation, superintendence and relief of the sick and dying. Unsupported by the medical faculty, who, indeed, dissuaded him from exposing himself to contagion, Mr. Stryker, during the long continuance of this epidemic, unremittingly visited the sick, watched with them, cared for them, defrayed all expenses from his own pocket, so that no costs accrued to the city; and, aided only by voluntary exertions of William Hewitt (then one of the street inspectors), and Staats Dawson (mayor's marshal), carried on in his own person all the functions of a health board. In the cholera season of 1849, during the term of his successor, Mayor Copeland, Mr. Stryker devoted himself largely to the relief of the sick, and in the fall of that year was elected county-clerk (on the whig ticket), which office he held for a three-year term. In 1860 he received from the commissioners the position of superintendent of sewers.

These years were not rendered memorable by any unusual events. The steady growth of the city continued, churches, societies and industries were established, and the march of improvement kept its regular pace.

1848. In March gas was for the first time introduced into Brooklyn.

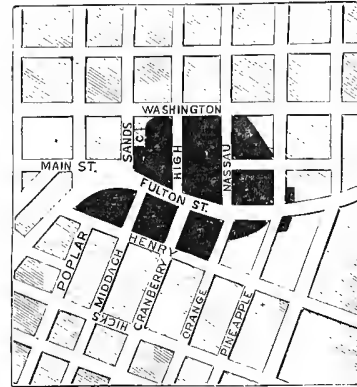
July 4th was rendered memorable in the annals of Brooklyn, by the munificence of its venerable and worthy citizen, Augustus Graham. The Brooklyn City Hospital, sorely crippled by lack of means, and struggling wearily against the apathy of the public, was unexpectedly placed upon a permanent foundation by a donation, from Mr. Graham, of bonds and mortgages amounting to \$25,000; and the Brooklyn Institute was endowed with the ownership of the elegant granite building, in Washington street, which had been originally erected for the Brooklyn Lyceum.

August 8. The *Cypress Hills Cemetery* was incorporated under the general cemetery act.

The principal event of the year was the disastrous conflagration of the 9th of September, which is still remembered, and spoken of as *the great fire of Brooklyn*. Three church edifices (the First Universalist, Baptist, and the Sands street Methodist-Episcopal); two newspaper offices (the *Star* and *Freeman*); and the post-office building, were burned in this great conflagration, which was finally only stopped by blowing up several buildings (by marines from the U. S. Navy-yard), and which devastated a thickly-settled part of the city, of several acres in extent, and destroyed property to the amount of \$1,500,000. The accompanying map shows the area over which this conflagration swept.

Serious as was the calamity which thus befell this

young and growing city, it afforded but another opportunity of developing that peculiar elasticity of the



MAP OF BURNED DISTRICT, 1848.

American mind and character, which not only leads to the inception of great undertakings, but enables it to surmount all obstacles and every disaster. Scarcely had the ruins ceased to smoke before the burned district became the scene of the busiest activity. New buildings were erected. Fulton street was widened by setting back the building-line, on the *west* side, from Henry to Mott streets; and, on the *east* side, from Sands to Concord streets; and in every direction were seen the well-directed labors of citizens to retrieve their losses.

In November of this year the idea of a *union between the two cities of Williamsburgh and Brooklyn* appears to have been, for the first time, broached. A meeting of the citizens of the former place was held, at which the subject was discussed; but, aside from some newspaper sparring, it seems to have been unproductive of result.

The benefits accruing to that portion of the city, known as South Brooklyn, from the erection of the Atlantic docks, began to make themselves apparent, in the rapid progress, and increase of population, in that vicinity. In March, 1848, Mr. Daniel Richards, the originator of that magnificent enterprise, petitioned the common council for permission to open thirty-five streets in its immediate vicinity. During this year and the next, a plan was also devised by Mr. Richards and others, and received the legislative approbation, for the construction of a large navigable canal, from Gowanus bay to Douglass street, through the centre of the meadows, into which the sewers from the elevated ground on either side should empty. It was to be five feet deep below low-water mark, four feet above high-water mark, 100 feet in width, and 5,400 feet (or about a mile) in length, draining some 1,700 acres of land in the southern part of the city.

The great object to be attained by this improvement was the removal of the marsh-miasma which hung about Prospect hill, and other portions of the city, making them liable to intermittent fevers and other diseases, and thus shutting them out from improve-

ment; also to lay the lands open to use, and to render that portion of the city valuable for commercial and mechanical purposes. The estimated expense of this canal was \$78,600, and at its termination it was proposed to construct a large basin for vessels, costing \$8,000 additional. Other basins, along the course of the canal, were to be erected by private enterprise, furnishing large and ample depots for timber, coal, lime, cement, brick, etc.

These liberal provisions and plans so stimulated the growth of Brooklyn that, during 1848 and '49, it was estimated that no less than 2,100 buildings had been erected, 700 of which were in the Sixth ward, or South Brooklyn.

1849. April. Edward Copeland was elected mayor.

EDWARD COPELAND commenced business in Brooklyn, as a retail grocer, on the corner of Front and Main streets. He was a graduate of Columbia College, and first introduced to public notice by his efforts and speeches in aid of the Greek and Polish revolutions, in the years 1828 and 1830. He became a member of the village board of trustees in 1832, and established so fair a reputation as to induce his fellow-citizens to tender to him the presidency of the village, in 1833; and a nomination to Congress, in 1834, which, however, he declined. In 1844, he was elected city-clerk, without solicitation on his part, and by the special request of the whig and native American members of the common council. To this office he was re-elected in 1847 and 1848. In the mayoralty to which he was called in 1849 he carried the same urbanity, dignity, decision and careful attention to the details of official business. As a scholar, especially in polite literature, few in our city surpassed him in varied acquirements. Through his official papers, and in his frequent contributions to literature and science, he fully sustained this reputation; while he was a most pleasing speaker, polished and winning in manner, of an eminently social disposition, liberal, accessible at all times and by all persons; and in habits, refined and unostentatious. As chairman of the Whig General Committee he was largely instrumental in contributing to the success of 1837, '38, '39 and '40; and, as a judge of the Municipal Court, from 1839 to 1840, aided by such men as Judges Eames and Rushmore, he gave to that tribunal a degree of force and dignity which made it everywhere respected. He was, for many years, a member of the Board of Education, aiding powerfully by his efforts and influence to give character and efficiency to the system of public instruction, and to establish the reputation of the board. He died June 18, 1859.

The corner-stone of the United States Dry Dock was laid on the 4th of July in this year. The *Cemetery of the Evergreens* was also organized and incorporated.

The idea of connecting Brooklyn with New York by means of a *bridge* was not only broached, but seriously discussed, in public, and in the New York papers. The *Tribune* thus expressed itself, "The bridge is the great event of the day. New York and Brooklyn must be united, and there is no other means of doing it. The thing will certainly be achieved one of these days, and the sooner the better." Among other plans was one of a floating-bridge, with draw, etc.

The principal event of this year was the visitation of that dreadful scourge of the human race, the *epidemic*

cholera. It appeared in Brooklyn on the 26th of May, 1849, from which time it prevailed here until the 22d of September. During this period there were 642 deaths, being in a ratio to the population (100,000) of one in every 155 persons. In New York, during the same period, with a population of 425,000, there were 4,957 deaths, being a ratio of 1 to every 86 persons.

This epidemic commenced in Court street, and was not confined to any particular part of the city, although nearly four-fifths were in different, well-defined localities, in the neighborhood of Hoyt, Bond, Butler, Douglass streets; Blake's buildings, State street; Furman and Columbia; Squire's buildings in Hicks, near Pacific street; Hall's alley, Furman street; Clark's buildings, Kelsey's alley, Hamilton avenue and Columbia street. These localities were in the neighborhood of low ground and stagnant water, or where the filth was abundant, and were too crowded, being occupied by a population at least one-half or one-third larger than was consistent with either comfort or health.

Of the victims of this epidemic, a large portion were intemperate; and, among those who were temperate, the attack could, in almost every instance, be traced to some error or excess in diet.

1850. In July another disastrous fire occurred, second in destructiveness only to the great fire of 1848. It consumed several large storehouses on Furman street, and destroyed property valued at not less than \$400,000. The most prominent feature of the fire was the terrific explosion of a large quantity of saltpetre, which was stored in one of the warehouses, and which occasioned the utmost consternation, blowing one fire-engine, and those who were working it, entirely off the dock, into the water. Luckily, however, no lives were lost.

In April Mr. *Samuel Smith* was chosen mayor, to serve from May 1st until the close of the year, in accordance with an amendment to the city charter, which made the term of this and the other municipal officers commence with the civil year.

SAMUEL SMITH was born at Huntington, L. I., in 1788. His boyhood was spent upon his father's farm; and his education was obtained at the Huntington Academy. In 1803 he began to learn the cooper's trade, and in 1806 removed to the village of Brooklyn. In 1809 he abandoned his trade; and, with Mr. Richard Bouton, hired the John Jackson place, and went to farming. A year later they left this location and hired "the Post farm" (which took in a portion of the present Fort Greene). In 1811 Mr. Smith married Eliza, daughter of Judge Tunis Joralemon, and the next year purchased the easterly portion of the Tunis G. Johnson farm, on the southerly side of the Old Road (now Fulton avenue). For this property, comprising nearly fourteen acres, he paid \$6,000; in 1815 added to it, by purchase, the southerly portion of the original Johnson farm, about six acres, at \$500 per acre; and, in 1818, bought the remainder (bounded by Red Hook lane, Schermerhorn street and a line one hundred feet east of Smith street), eight acres, for the sum of \$10,000. Here he pursued the farming and milk business until about 1825, when he turned his attention exclusively to the im-

provement and sale of his real-estate, the value of which was then fast increasing—with the rapid development of the village. He managed his property with an ability and success which made him very wealthy. He was commissioner of highways and fence-viewer of the old town of Brooklyn from 1821 to '25, and also in 1827, '33, '34; assessor from 1827 to 1830 inclusive; justice of the peace in 1831, and for several years thereafter; supervisor for several years, and for two years chairman of the board; and was appointed (by the old council of appointments) a county judge, going out of service on the adoption of the new State constitution. He was also one of the three County Superintendents of the Poor; and, in connection with his associates, David Johnson, of Flatbush, and Michael Schoonmaker, he selected and purchased the present county-farm at Flatbush, and erected thereon buildings suitable, at that day, for the accommodation of the poor. Descended, as he was, from an old-fashioned democratic family, Mr. Smith has always been found in the ranks of that party. When the city of Brooklyn was chartered, in 1834, his farm was brought within the limits of the Sixth ward (now cut up into the Sixth, Tenth and Twelfth wards), which he represented in the board of aldermen from 1834 to 1838, from 1842 to 1844, and 1845 to 1846, a portion of the time as president of the board. In 1850 he was unanimously elected mayor by a democratic majority of three to four hundred votes, over Mr. J. T. S. Stranahan; also overcoming the two thousand majority by which his predecessor, Mr. Copeland, had distanced his competitor in the previous chartered election. As mayor, Mr. Smith always possessed the confidence of the public as one who would deal with public affairs justly and faithfully as with his own. He was selected as a vigorous economist, endeavored to do his duty to the best of his ability, and always commanded the respect and confidence of the better classes. At the time of the war of 1812, Mr. Smith was a member of the militia-company known as the Washington Fusileers, and served a while in camp on Fort Greene. After the war he was commissioned ensign in the 44th (Col. Joseph Dean's) Regiment, and subsequently was promoted to a captaincy in the same. He worshipped with the congregation occupying the old Dutch church, and, in 1830, he became a member of that communion. Mr. Smith was, for a considerable portion of his life, identified with the inception and interests of the principal moneyed institutions of Brooklyn, having been a director of the Brooklyn Bank; a director, and, for two years, president of the Atlantic Bank; an original incorporator of the Nassau Insurance Company, and a director in the Mechanics Insurance and Home Life Insurance Companies. Mr. Smith died May 19, 1872.

1851. With this year began the mayoralty of Conklin Brush, who served during two years.

CONKLIN BRUSH commenced business in the city of New York, at the close of the war of 1812, and, with no resources but a good character, and remarkable business tact and energy, he very rapidly acquired the reputation of a safe and successful merchant. From 1816 to 1840, embracing all the periods of great commercial disaster, he was at the head of nine successful mercantile firms, no one of which ever failed, and all of which were highly prosperous. Mr. Brush came to Brooklyn in 1827. His services were eagerly sought by the Brooklyn people of that day, and he served in the board of trustees in 1830; and in the common council from 1834 to 1835, serving as president of the board. When he retired from the presidency, he received a unanimous vote of thanks for the manner in which he had filled the office. Mr. Brush took an active part in every lead-

ing public measure which has advanced the growth and prosperity of Brooklyn. When he moved to Brooklyn there was not a public lamp in the village. In 1832 he took measures to place them in Hicks and Willow streets, and since then they have been gradually extended so as to light all the populous quarters of the city. In 1834 he was chairman of a citizens' committee, which secured for Brooklyn, against the opposition of New York, the establishment of the South (or Atlantic) ferry. He also led the movement to widen Fulton street, below its junction with Main street, against a most violent opposition. Mr. Brush was appointed, by a public meeting of citizens, on a committee to select and secure a site for a City Hall. They obtained the site on which the City Hall now stands, and proposed the erection of a hall substantially like the present building, to cost about \$100,000. Unfortunately, other counsels prevailed, and a building to cost from a half to three-quarters of a million was planned and commenced under a democratic majority in the common council—an egregious blunder which finally resulted in a ten years' delay in the erection of this much-needed public edifice; and, what was worse, in the formation of nearly one-half of the debt which subsequently burdened the city of Brooklyn. To Mr. Brush, also, in connection with Mr. Daniel Richards, Brooklyn is indebted for the projection and inception of the great Atlantic docks, which was incorporated in 1840, and of which company he was a director, during some six years. In 1848 he erected a grain-elevator and several stores connected therewith. In the fall of 1850 Mr. Brush was elected by the whig party as mayor over John Rice (democratic), and George Hall (independent). He served as mayor during 1851 and 1852. The city never had a mayor better versed in all the details of thorough practical service. His perfect familiarity with financial affairs secured for him the confidence and support of the large property interest, which sensitively requires all due knowledge and caution on the part of public servants. After the expiration of his term of office he accepted the presidency of the Mechanics' Bank of Brooklyn. By no means least, among the many important services which he rendered to the city, was his connection, from the first, with the great movement for procuring a supply of water: his valuable efforts having been properly recognized in his selection, by the mayor, as one of the board of construction, of the water commissioners. He died July 4, 1870.

That part of the city known as *South Brooklyn* began to make rapid strides in the development of commercial resources, industries, and density of population, which have since distinguished it. Sand-hills were levelled, marshes were filled, streets were laid out, graded and paved. Dwellings were erected, docks, piers and warehouses were established, and a great impetus was given to the prosperity and growth of the region.

There were in Brooklyn, at this time, many *distilleries, rectifying establishments*, etc., the annual products of which added very considerably to the material wealth and commercial prosperity of the city.

The combined statistics of this branch of Brooklyn industry showed that 6 distilleries, 3 rectifying establishments, and a brewery, employing altogether 179 persons, and consuming grain and fuel to the value of \$993,300 annually, produced during the same period 5,459,300 gallons of whisky, valued at \$1,364,825, besides \$40,000 worth of slops and swill. 2,964,000 gal-

lons of whisky were rectified and manufactured into domestic liquors, pure spirits, etc.

At the same time there was also more *white-lead* manufactured in Brooklyn than in any other city or town in America (and probably as much as was made in all parts of the United States), consuming nearly one-third the product of all the then-existing lead-mines of the country. The Brooklyn White Lead Works, located in Front street, between Washington and Adams, was the oldest in the city and State, and one of the oldest in the country, having been established in 1822, and incorporated in 1825, with a capital of \$53,000, by J. B. & Augustus Graham, and other enterprising capitalists. It occupied an entire block of 230 by 200 feet, employing 90 men; and producing annually 2,500 tons of white-lead, red-lead, litharge, etc., valued at \$425,000.

The whole united product of the white-lead works of Brooklyn, at this time, was from 6,000 to 12,000 tons annually, and their united capital was over one million of dollars.

The above statistics illustrate the rapidly-increasing value and importance of the city at that period of its existence.

July 1st. Not to be forgotten, also, in the annals of Brooklyn, was the laying of the corner-stone of the Old Ladies' Home, a charity which owed its inception, and its subsequent perfect development, to the Christian philanthropy and liberality of the late John B. Graham, Esq.

During this and the following year many churches, benevolent associations, and business corporations, were established. In January, 1852, the *Brooklyn Athenæum and Reading-room* was incorporated; and, during the same year, an elegant and commodious edifice was erected on the corner of Atlantic and Clinton streets, for its occupancy.

1853. Edward C. Lambert was chosen mayor for this and the succeeding year. In his communication to the common council, on the 3d of January, he presented a summary of the progress of the city during the year 1852. "Well may we rejoice," he says, "in the increase of population, numbering at the present time some 120,000, and ranking us as the seventh city in our union: in the increase of taxable property, amounting to nearly twelve millions of dollars during the past year; and in the many improvements which have taken place in various parts of the city, evidencing a solid and permanent growth." Fifteen schools were mentioned as under the control of the board of education, giving instruction to 18,307 scholars, while two evening-schools had been opened, which were attended by 809 scholars. Twenty-two miles of street mains had been laid down by the Brooklyn Gas Company, being nearly half of the whole number put down since the formation of the company; and 1,202 gas-lamps had been erected. The number of buildings

erected during the year 1852 was 2,500. The movement, first agitated in 1835, for the securing of a full and permanent water-supply for Brooklyn, was this year advanced by the investigations of Mr. Wm. J. McAlpine, an engineer appointed, in 1851, to make the necessary examinations; and his report and plans were recommended by the mayor in his annual report.

EDWARD AUGUSTUS LAMBERT was born in the city of New York, June 10th, 1813. His father, master of a merchant-ship in the service of one of the old South street shipping-houses, was lost at sea with his vessel; and his son, from the age of twelve years, was obliged to depend upon his own efforts. As clerk, he served in an importing-house until 1832, entering then into the stationery-business. In 1849 he was chosen on the democratic (free-soil) ticket, as alderman from the Sixth ward of Brooklyn; and, on the division of that ward, in 1850, was elected alderman of the (new) Tenth ward, (formed from the Sixth), and was honored by the presidency of the board. In November, 1852, he was elected, on the democratic ticket, mayor of the city of Brooklyn, for the years 1853 and '54. During the term of his mayoralty the affairs of the city were administered with strict economy, and the laws enforced with an impartiality and strictness which secured the universal approbation of his fellow-citizens; while his personal devotion to all the duties of his station, whether at or outside of the office, was conspicuous.

During his term of office, charters were granted to, and contracts made with, the horse-railroads which now form so important an element of Brooklyn interests; the introduction of a permanent supply of water was assured to the city, by the purchase of ponds, etc.; the Truant Children's Home was established and the Sunday-law rigorously enforced to the great satisfaction of all good citizens. In the spring of 1854 Mayor Lambert's health failed, under the pressure of his official labors, and the common council granted his request for a leave of absence. He accordingly spent about six weeks in Europe, and returning home, June the 1st, found the city of Brooklyn in a state of excitement. Riots had broken out between the Irish and parties affiliated with the Know-Nothing party, and prompt and energetic measures were required to suppress them. These measures were at once adopted by Mayor Lambert, whose characteristic firmness, decision and impartiality rendered him exactly the man for the emergency; and he was admirably seconded by the civil, police and military force which he immediately summoned to his aid. The power of the law, the rights of free speech and the proprieties of the Sabbath were promptly and fully vindicated.

During the war of the rebellion Mr. Lambert was among the first to promote volunteering, etc., and called the first great war-meeting, on Fort Greene, in April, 1861. He was also the recording-secretary and an active member of the committee appointed by the citizens of Brooklyn, in June, 1862, to provide for the reception, care and relief of wounded and sick soldiers forwarded from the field by government; and, when the great Sanitary Fair was organized in 1864, was chairman of the committee on benefits, entertainments and exhibitions, in which capacity, as well as by his labors as a member of the War Fund committee, he rendered most excellent service.

Mr. Lambert has been, for many years, prominently identified with the Presbyterian denomination, as delegate to its synods and treasurer of the Presbyterian committee of Home Missions; and was one of the most active and influential original members of the Lafayette avenue Presbyterian church

(Rev. Dr. Cuyler's). He was at one time the president of the Craftsman's Life Insurance Company, of New York city; and is now engaged in the wholesale stationery business.

December 17th, 1853. The *Brooklyn City Railroad Company* was incorporated under the general law of the State of New York, and set immediately to work to lay the rails on the several routes designated by their contract with the city authorities.

On the 20th of the same month, the Colonnade-row, on the Heights, was destroyed by fire. It consisted of eight four-story brick buildings, having on their fronts large wooden columns and balustrades; and, being conspicuous from the river, were much noticed and admired, especially by strangers.

During the year, the common council, acting under authority of the act passed June 19th, 1851, purchased several streams and ponds of water on the island, at an expense of some \$44,000; and which sources, it was estimated, would furnish a sufficient quantity of water to meet the wants of the city for a period of years, while the quality of the water, for purity, was unsurpassed. In June an act was passed, by the legislature, entitled "An Act for the supply of the city of Brooklyn with water;" which act required, that, before the adoption of any plan, the same should be submitted to the electors for their approval. A special election was, therefore, held in the month of July, which resulted in the rejection, by a majority of 3,700, of the plan proposed by the common council. A strong opposition was found to be arrayed against the plan, while many citizens, too confident of the success of the undertaking, did not interest themselves in its favor. As, however, the act empowered the common council to submit other plans and estimates, until an approval was obtained, this defeat was but a temporary delay to the progress of the important and beneficent work of procuring a supply of wholesome water for Brooklyn.

1854. In May, persons connected with the Bridge Street Primitive Methodist church inaugurated public religious exercises in the open air. These meetings were disturbed by New York roughs, who came over for that purpose; and, on Sunday, the 4th of June, a serious riot occurred at the Main street ferry, as a party of these roughs were about to embark on their return.

Sticks, stones and other missiles were hurled by the crowd collected near the ferry, at the New Yorkers, who, in return, fired on the crowd, wounding several and killing one. Some damage was done to the ferry-house and boat, but the mob was finally dispersed by the police and military, and order was restored. No subsequent disturbance occurred. The right of free speech was vindicated, and street-preaching and ill-feeling gradually subsided.

June. On the 13th the cholera made its appearance in Plymouth and Pacific streets. It numbered 656 persons among its victims, before the close of the season.

July. On the 3d of this month the cars of the Brooklyn City Railroad Company made their first trips over the *Myrtle avenue*, *Flushing avenue* and *Fulton street*, and *Fulton avenue* routes; their first paying trips being made on the following day, the 4th. On the 7th of August cars began to run over the *Greenwood* route.

September 11th. Memorable in the educational history of Brooklyn, as marking the commencement of the *Packer Collegiate Institute for Girls*, which superseded the former Brooklyn Female Academy.

As a counterpart to the Packer Institute, another educational establishment, for boys, called the *Brooklyn Collegiate and Polytechnic Institute*, was incorporated during this same year.

In November was incorporated the *Union Ferry Company* of Brooklyn, with a capital of \$800,000. This new corporation superseded the former Union Ferry Company, which had existed since 1851. There were previously two associated companies: the New York and Union Ferry Company, from 1839 to 1844, and the Brooklyn Union Ferry Company, from 1844 to 1851.

On the 17th of April, of this year, the Legislature of the State, three-fifths being present, had passed an "Act to consolidate the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh, and the town of Bushwick, into a municipal government, and to incorporate the same," the said act to take effect on the 1st of January, 1855. With the last day of 1854, therefore, ended the history of the FIRST CITY OF BROOKLYN.

HISTORY

OF THE

TOWN OF GRAVESEND.

By REV. *AR. Stockwell*, A. M.

GEOGRAPHY, Topography, Soil, etc.—The town of Gravesend, by age and position, is worthy a prominent place in the History of Kings County.

Containing within its boundaries, probably the most popular seaside resort in the country—viz.: *Coney Island*—it has assumed of late an importance entirely unknown to the first two hundred and thirty years of its existence.

It is triangular in form, its base resting upon the Atlantic Ocean on the south, its apex adjoining Flatbush on the north, and is bounded east by the town of Flatlands, and west by New Utrecht.

Its nearness to two of the largest commercial centres in America promises, in the near future, a growth vastly more rapid than during any period of its past history; while its healthful climate, and present rapid-transit accommodations, will doubtless render it an attractive place of residence for the business men of New York and Brooklyn.

It occupies the most southerly portion of Kings county, and is some seven miles from Fulton ferry; while its northern boundary is only about two miles from the southern city limits of Brooklyn.

Its surface is mostly level, yet with a sufficient slope towards the sea to make possible a complete system of drainage.

The soil, though somewhat light and sandy, is yet very productive; and, with careful tillage and generous fertilizing, will, under favorable circumstances, produce two fair crops.

The climate is remarkably healthful and agreeable. The inhabitants are rarely, if ever, exposed to any dangerous epidemic, and notable longevity is the rule rather than the exception.

The atmosphere is so modified by the influence of the sea that the temperature is usually cooler in summer and warmer in winter, by several degrees, than we find it further inland. The weather must be extremely cold for the mercury to fall below zero; while, in

summer, the cooling, delightful sea-breeze, which invariably springs up in the afternoon, generally makes the hottest days tolerable, and even comfortable.

Settlement.—It was, probably, upon the soil of Gravesend that the foot of white men first trod in this State. (See chapter on Coney Island). The first permanent settlement of the town dates back to the year 1643; although there may have been individuals who occupied land within the town-boundaries a few years earlier, as we shall have occasion to notice hereafter.

While all the other towns in Kings county were settled by the Dutch, who came over from Holland under the auspices of the Dutch West India Company, Gravesend was first settled by a colony of English, under the leadership of Lady Deborah Moody, a woman of considerable wealth and education, who afterwards took a prominent part in the administration of public affairs.

The free enjoyment of opinion in religious matters, the mild laws, the "freedom and exemptions" offered to settlers, the richness of the soil, and the salubrity of the climate, all rendered the Nieuw Netherlands an attractive place of settlement to those who, having left Old England for the purpose of obtaining religious freedom, had found, to their surprise and grief, in New England, the same intolerance from which they had thought to escape. The persecuted in England had, in turn, become the persecutors here, as soon as circumstances afforded the opportunity. As has been well said by J. W. GERARD, Esq., in a discourse on "The Lady Deborah Moody," before the *New York Historical Society*, May, 1880, "the practice and the principles of the Puritan fathers became far from harmonious. The rigid lines of their ecclesiastical faith were drawn as strictly and maintained almost as ruthlessly as in the fatherland; and the governing authority exacted conformity in spiritual matters as the condition of civil freedom. Those who had been branded as heretics stigmatized others as heretics, for differences in theological abstractions, and even for non-conformity

to church-routine. * * * Inquisition was made into men's private judgments as well as into their declarations and practice. * * * Toleration was preached against as a sin in rulers which would bring down the judgment of heaven upon the land.

* * * Non-conformists were scourged and fined for their ideas, no matter how mildly expressed; and even if they met together privately, to partake of communion, they were disenfranchised and imprisoned. * * * Any sympathy expressed for the sufferings of the victims, or criticisms made on the severe action of the magistrates, was visited with fines and scourgings. Any question of the authority of any part of the Biblical history was visited with scourging; and a second offence with death. Many of the English colonists removed to the Dutch colony for freedom of conscience and liberty of worship."

Among those thus compelled to seek a new home was the Lady Deborah Moody, widow of Sir Henry Moody, of Garsden, in Wiltshire, and one of the baronets created by King James, in 1622. She was the daughter of Walter Dunch, a member of Parliament in Queen Elizabeth's time; as, also, was her uncle, at a later period. Both in and out of Parliament her father's family had been open and avowed champions of popular liberty and constitutional rights. Sir Henry Moody died about 1632. It is related in *Lewis' History of Lynn, Mass.*, that in 1635, about five years before leaving England, Lady Moody had made herself obnoxious to the law by violating a penal statute which forbade any person residing beyond a specified time from their own home. This produced from the Court of the Star Chamber an order that "Dame Deborah Moody and others should return to their hereditaments in forty days, in the good example necessary to the poorer classes;" her offence being that she had simply gone from her country residence to live for a short time in London. It is not strange that she chafed under the unlawful restraints of such a civil and ecclesiastical despotism, and that she longed for a home in a land and among a people where the most sacred rights of humanity were properly respected. In 1640 she emigrated to Massachusetts, and April 5th united with the Church at Salem. May 13, 1640, the General Court granted her 500 acres of land for a plantation; and, in 1641, she purchased the farm of Dep-Gov. John Humfrey, called Swampscott, near Lynn, for which she paid £1100. She soon found, however, that her hopes of religious peace and freedom were delusive; for, having imbibed the belief taught by Roger Williams, that infant baptism was not an ordinance of divine origin, and that it should be restricted to adults, she was duly "admonished." Being still unconvinced of the erroneous nature of her views, she was excommunicated. In 1642 she was "presented" by the Quarterly Court for holding these views. Harassed, annoyed, "admonished," excommunicated, "presented," in 1643 she, with her son Sir Henry, John

Tilton and wife, and a few close friends, bade farewell to Massachusetts, and sought, among the strangers of Nieuw Amsterdam, speaking a language as foreign to her as were their manners and customs, an asylum where she might enjoy peace and happiness, without sacrificing her conscientious convictions. An extract from Gov. *Winthrop's Journal* indicates the high regard in which she was still held among her New England neighbors, although "disfellowshipped" by her own church. "The Ladye Moodye, a wise, an anciently religious woman, being taken with the error of denying baptism to infants, was dealt with by many of the elders and others, and admonished by the Church of Salem (whereof she was a member); but persisting still, and to avoid further trouble, etc., she removed to the Dutch, against the advice of her friends." Here she found, to her surprise and joy, a number of her own countrymen, who had sought, near the fort, an asylum from savage hostilities. On the eastern shore of Manhattan Island, about opposite the lower end of Blackwell's Island, and at the place known as "Deutil Bay," had sprung up quite a settlement of English residents. Among the earliest of these was Nicholas Stillwell, or "Nicholas, the Tobacco Planter," as he is often called in the old records. His experience of England's and New England's intolerance had been similar to that of Lady Moody; and he had secured here a plantation, on which he had erected a stone house, which became the nucleus of an infant settlement, known as "the English settlement at Hopton." But the policy of the Dutch Director-General, Kieft, toward the Indians, had precipitated a general war; and the English settlers at Hopton had fled for safety under the walls of the fort at Nieuw Amsterdam. Here they were found by Lady Moody and her associates, and the two parties naturally fusing together, were invited by the Director-General to select from the unappropriated lands of the W. I. Co., a location for a new settlement. The present town of Gravesend was the site selected for their new home, by a committee of their number appointed for the purpose, and a patent was issued by the Director-General and Council in the summer of 1643. Of this patent but little is known, as the original cannot be found; but it is so referred to in subsequent documents as to leave no doubt of there having been such a patent.

Thus began the settlement of the town, under the leadership of a woman of education and refinement, whose force of character, combined with her uprightness of life, made her a power for good with those among whom she moved. Both by nature and grace she was fitted to be a pioneer in such an enterprise. For sixteen years she went in and out among the people, prominent in their councils, and often intrusted with important public responsibilities, which prove the respect and confidence of her associates. She seems, also, to have enjoyed the friendship of Gov. Stuyvesant, who several times sought her advice in matters of

great public importance. Even the nomination of the three town-magistrates was, on one or two occasions, intrusted by the Director-General to her good judgment. He also availed himself of her kind offices, on another occasion, in quelling an incipient rebellion, raised by some of her English associates against the Dutch authority.

She owned a large tract of land in Gravesend, as we shall hereafter see; and we find, by the old town-record, that in November, 1648, she rented all her "broken up" land, for three years, to one Thos. Cornewill, reserving, however, one piece for her own use. She also furnished him with 4 cows and 4 oxen, receiving as rent, per year, 10 skipplles of wheat for the land, and 60 gilders for the use of the animals.

Much doubt has existed as to the time and place of Lady Moody's death.

Some have thought it possible that she went from Gravesend to Virginia, with her son Sir Henry, and ended her days there. Others, that she went to Monmouth Co., N. J., with a colony from Gravesend, who obtained a patent for a large tract of land in the above county in 1665.

Among the old records of the town we have found some data which seem clearly to determine the fact of her death and burial in Gravesend. The record of the probate of the will of one Edward Brown, November 4, 1658, states that Lady Moody, with two other persons named, was "granted power by the Court to administer upon the estate of the said Edward Brown." She must, therefore, have been living at the above date, and in Gravesend. It is also recorded that Sir Henry Moody, some seven months later, May 11, 1659, conveyed a piece of land to John Johnson, which is described as being "the gift of inheritance from his deceased mother, Deborah Moody, patentee."

Facsimile of signature of Sir Henry Moody, Junior.

This fixes, beyond question, the time of her death within seven months, viz., between Nov. 4, 1658, and May 11, 1659. The strong probability is, therefore, that she died at Gravesend, about the beginning of the year 1659, and was buried in one of the nameless graves of the old burial-place, which now, after more than two and a quarter centuries, retain no vestige of inscriptions to indicate whose dust slumbers beneath the sod.

Name.—With regard to the name, *Gravesend*, given to the town, Thompson, in his *History of Long Island*, states that it was so called, by the early English settlers, from the town of that name in England, from which they sailed on their departure for America.

This theory is plausible only upon the supposition that Lady Moody and her associates actually made Gravesend their point of departure for New England. Whether this be true or not, since Gravesend was an important commercial town on the river Thames, in the County of Kent, it would not be strange if the early English settlers should be desirous of transmitting the name to the new settlement which they were about to found on this side of the ocean. This seems all the more probable, since they evidently intended to make the modern Gravesend, from its favorable position, a commercial town of no little importance. There is, however, no corroborative evidence of this origin of the name. Another supposition, which we believe to be the true one, is that Gov. Kieft, when granting them permission to settle here, or later, when he issued the patent for the land, called the town Gravesend, from the old Dutch town, *Gravensande* (the Count's beach), on the river Maas, in Holland, which may have been dear to the Governor as being the place of his nativity, or from early associations.

Pioneer Settlers.—Before the proper settlement of Gravesend by Lady Moody and her associates, there were two persons who took up farms within what afterwards became the town-boundaries, and for which they held individual patents.

The first patent, or ground-brief, was issued by Gov. Kieft, May 27, 1643, giving possession (retrospectively from August 1st, 1639) to one Antonie Jansen Van Salee, 100 morgen (200 acres) of land, one part to be called the *Old Bowery*, and the other the *12 morgen*.

Facsimile of Anthony Jansen's mark.

According to an old map, now on file in the town-clerk's office at Gravesend, the "Old Bowery" part of this farm was situated at the western part of the town, now covered wholly, or for the most part, by the village of Unionville; while the "12 morgen" (by which name the land is known to this day) lay a little distance from it in a south-easterly direction. Between these parcels of land lay a large strip of marsh or meadow-ground, worthy of special mention in connection with a certain "Neck" of land (or rather at that time of sand-hills) running south from the "Old Bowery," because of the legal efforts afterwards made for the possession of both.

This neck and meadow became a bone of contention for years afterwards between the inhabitants of Gravesend, on the one hand, who claimed it as belonging to their original patent; and, on the other, Francis De Bruyn (afterwards called Brown), the successor of An-

tonie Jansen Van Salee (Anthony Johnson), who also claimed it as included in the 100 morgen granted to the latter.

Finally, June, 1669, by request of both parties to the suit, the matter was referred, by the Court of General Sessions, to Governor Lovelace, for decision. John Clanning and Jacques Corteleau, the two referees appointed by the governor, reported that Mr. Brown "hath no meadow in his patent, but is short of his 100 morgen of land which he purchased, and we do verily believe it doth not, in right, belong to Gravesend." They recommended, therefore, that one-third thereof be allowed to Brown," to make up his 100 morgen of land, and lying before his door, within a stone's throw, he paying for the ditching which is yet to be done; that one-third go to Gravesend "for the ditching they have done," and the remaining one-third was left to his Excellency's disposal. In accordance with this report of the referees, Gov. Lovelace issued his "Edict," as it was called, a certified copy of which is before us, and is as follows :

"The Governrs Judgement & Determination concerning ye land in question, between ye Inhabitants of Gravesend and Francis Brown."

"Whereas there hath been a Controversary or Matter in Difference between ye Inhabitants of ye town of Gravesend & Francis Brown, alius de Bruyn, concerning a parcell of Meadow ground adjoining to Twelve Morgen of upland in ye patten of ye said Francis Brown, specified, as also about a certaine Neck of land endorsed upon ye old ground brief of ye said Brown, but claymed [by] ye [said] Gravesend as granted to them longe before, & being within ye lymitts of their patten. Upon Examination and due consideration had of ye premises, I do adjudge that if Francis Brown have his complemt of Twelve Morgen of upland, he hath no right or clayme to ye meadow, yett in regard a third parte or proportion thereof is already layd to him, he is to have and quietly enjoy ye land, and ye remainder or othr two third partes are to continue and be to ye Inhabitants of Gravesend. And as to ye Neck of land Endorsed upon ye old patten of the said Francis Brown, & also claymed by ye said Inhabitants of Gravesend as aforesaid, I doe think fitt, since it hath hitherto or most usually been enjoyed in Common between ye Town & ye said Farm that it continue so still, and this shall be ye conclusion and final determination of ye said controversy or Matter in Difference unless both or either of ye partys thinking themselves agrieved do sue for redress therein at ye next Cort of Assizes, where ye law is open for them, but after that tyme it shall be a barre to any further pretences.

Given undr my hand and seale at Fort James in New York, this 23d day of August, in ye 21 yeare of his Magties Raigne, Anno Dom. 1669.

Sgd FRANCIS LOVELACE."

This, however, did not prove to be the "conclusion and final determination" of the matter; for, 120 years later, Albert Voorhees claimed an exclusive right to this ground, by virtue of purchase from Brown. He also attempted to enforce his claim by preventing Gravesend people from erecting their fish-huts, drying their nets, etc., on the beach along the property. This brought him in direct conflict with his fellow-citizens;

who claimed, by virtue of their patent, the right to "fish, hawk and gun along and upon" the property. To determine their several rights, Mr. V. brought an action for trespass against sundry townsmen, which was tried the 18th of September, 1789, in the Supreme Court, at Flatbush. Aaron Burr was the town's attorney, and the case was tried before a jury of seven Queen's county men. The town was willing to concede to Mr. V. a patentee's right, viz., 1/39 part of the commonage, but not the exclusive right which he claimed. The trial resulted in a verdict for the town; the judgment being affirmed by the October term of the court, with costs. Col. Burr's summing-up, as shown by his minutes, was clear and forcible; his charges (as per receipts, now extant) were £20, besides £15 "for advice lately given and as a general retainer." Mr. Crosby, hotel-keeper at Flatbush, also receipted for £30 "for entertaining the people of Gravesend;" and "also the account of Col. Burr;" and "40 shillings" from Mr. Roger Strong (a lawyer who assisted in the case in behalf of the town), "for wine, punch, &c." How will this compare with some recent civic law-suits?

Thus the matter rested for about 50 years longer, when, in 1843, another law-suit was tried upon the question of title. David Davis, then in possession of the property, began an ejectment suit against Thomas Hicks and Coart Van Sicklen, as representing the town.

At a special town meeting held January 13th, 1843, a committee was appointed to defend the suit, and \$350 voted for legal expenses. This trial, like the other two, was a complete vindication of the right of the town to use the ground for fishing-purposes.

In this case Gabriel Furman was attorney for the town. The plaintiff, however, appealed the case, and the town, for some reason, failed to meet it, and judgment was obtained against them by default. The matter was finally settled by the town paying to the plaintiff a sum of money sufficient to pay his cost of litigation.

For the present time, and indeed for the last fifteen or twenty years, the town seems to have given up, by tacit consent, all her right and interest in the land in question; and the successors of Francis de Bruyn and Albert Voorhees to-day hold quiet and undisputed possession. Indeed, the few who have used the ground for fishing purposes, for the last few years, have paid, without remonstrance, an annual ground-rent of from \$5 to \$30. It is probable, therefore, that whatever rights the town formerly had in this property, are now gone past recovery. Some of the suits which have arisen out of this matter are still pending.

The next patent, in order of time, was that granted by Gov. Kieft to Guysbert Op Dyck for Conyne (Coney) Island, and Conyne Hook, afterwards called Guysbert's Island. This patent bears date 1644, and was for 44 morgen, or 88 acres. This land was also claimed after-

wards by the town as included in the patent of Gravesend. Op Dyck came to this country in 1635; in 1642 was Commissary of Provisions for the colony, and for some time had charge of the fort on the Connecticut river, where he made much trouble with the English. We mention him again, in connection with Coney Island.

Then came the patent of Robert Pennoyer, dated Nov. 29, 1645. (State Secretary's office, *Dutch Book of Patents*, page 144.) We learn from a certified translation of this patent, found among the old papers of the town, that the farm was "situated between the land of Antony Jansen and Meladie [My Lady] Moody, amounting together to eighty-nine *Morgen* four hundred and forty rods," and the grant was made, "with this express condition and agreement, that he, Robert Pennoyer, shall acknowledge the noble Lords Directors to be his Lords and Patrons under the Sovereignty of their High Mightnesses, the States-General, and hereto be obedient to their Director and Council, as it becomes good and faithful citizens."

First Town Patent.—We now come to the first patent of the town of Gravesend, granted by Gov. Kieft, and dated Dec. 19, 1645. It is remarkable for being, probably, the only one of its kind, where a woman heads the list of patentees named. It is another evidence, also, of the prominent position which Lady Moody held among the early settlers, and of the respect shown her by the Dutch authorities. It is worthy of note that liberty of conscience was also freely conceded to the first settlers of Gravesend; they were granted by Gov. Kieft freedom of worship "without magisterial or ministerial interference."

This first patent of 1645 was confirmed by Gov. Lovelace in the year 1670, with the evident design of more clearly defining the town-boundaries, which had long been a matter of dispute because of the vagueness with which they were expressed in the first general patent of Gov. Kieft. After describing the town-bounds, in general terms, very similar to those used in the previous patent, it adds: "And all the meadow-ground and upland not specified in the former Patent, concerning which there has been several disputes and differences between the Inhabitants of Gravesend and their neighbor, Francis Brown, the which in parte were settled both by my predecessor and myself, but since fully concluded and determined between them by Articles of Agreement, The which Articles I do hereby confirm and Allow."

Thus was this trouble, which had so disturbed the peace of the town, quieted for the time, only to break out again with unabated fury, a century further on.

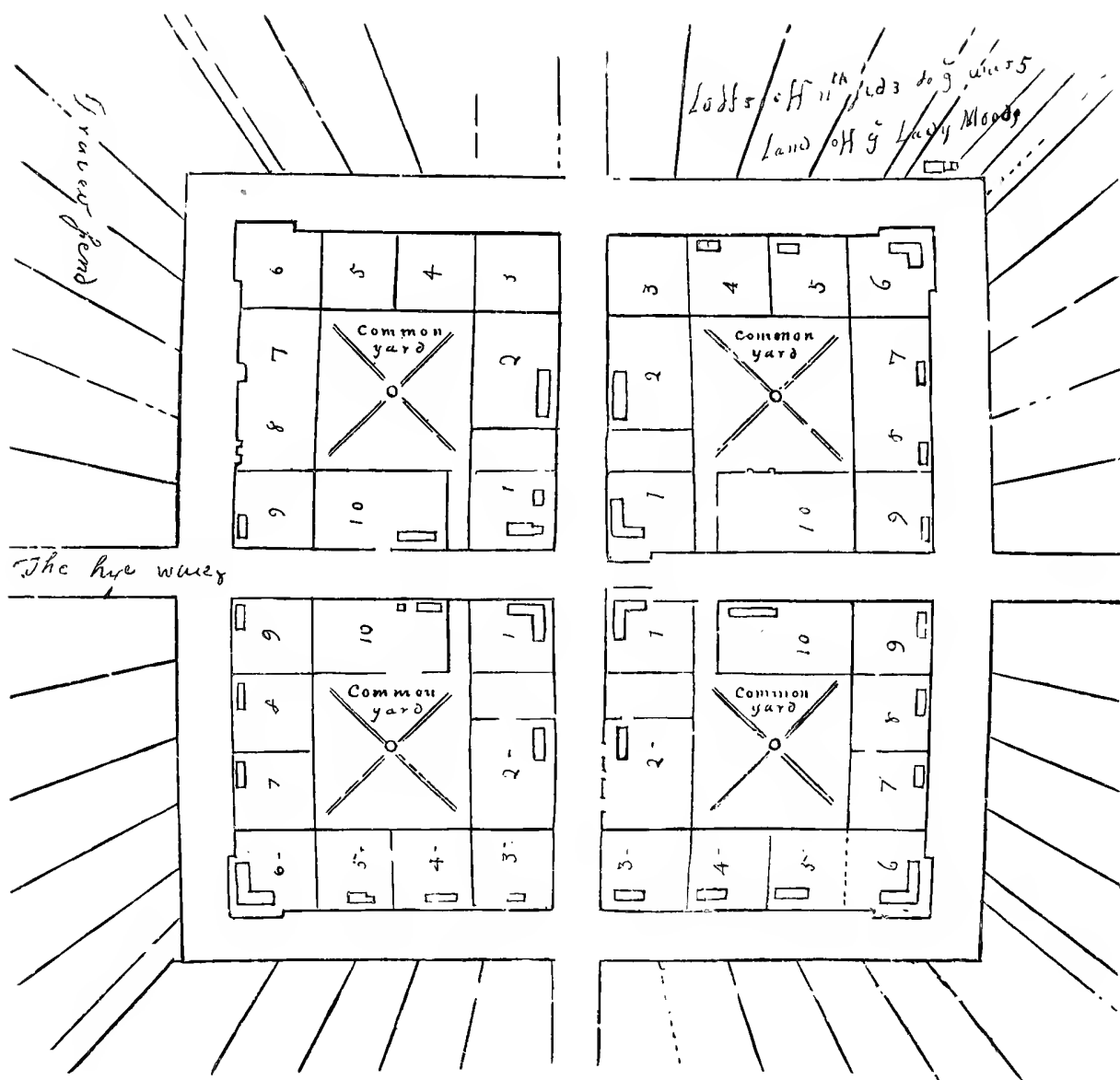
Another confirmatory patent was issued, later still, by Gov. Dongan, in 1686, by which the town-lines were made definite and permanent; while, at the same time, they were somewhat extended beyond the limits described by the preceding patent. This patent also fixes

the amount of quit-rent to be paid yearly by the town, instead of the one-tenth of the product of the soil demanded by Gov. Kieft, as follows: "paying therefor yearly and every year, on the five and twentyeth day of March, forever, in lieu and stead of all services, dues and demands whatsoever, as a quit-rent to his Majesty's use, six bushels of good winter merchantable wheat, unto such officer or officers as shall be appointed to receive the same at the City of New York."

These three original patents, written upon parchment, in an excellent state of preservation, are still to be found in the town clerk's office at Gravesend; and (with the other town records), unlike those of the surrounding towns, are in the English, instead of the Dutch, language.

Thus furnished with the requisite authority, Lady Moody and her associates began in earnest the work before them. In view of the natural advantages which the town possessed, they no doubt hoped to make it, at some future day, a large and important commercial center. From its situation at the mouth of "The Narrows," and with a good harbor of its own; with the ocean on the one side, and the then-flourishing village of New Amsterdam (New York) on the other, there did indeed seem to be good ground for such an expectation. But unfortunately, as the event proved, Gravesend Bay, though affording secure anchorage for smaller craft, would not permit vessels of large tonnage to enter its quiet waters with perfect safety. And so the idea of building a "city by the sea," which in extent, wealth, and business enterprise, should at least rival New Amsterdam, was reluctantly abandoned.

However, with this end in view, as the work begun would seem to indicate, they commenced the laying out of the village. Selecting a favorable site near the center of the town, they measured off a square containing about sixteen acres of ground, and opened a street around it. This large square they afterwards divided into squares of four acres each, by opening two streets at right angles through the center. The whole was then enclosed by a palisade-fence, as a protection, both against the sudden attacks of hostile Indians, and the depredations of wolves and other wild animals which were then common upon the island. Upon one of the oldest maps of the town, on file in the clerk's office, we find a perfect representation of the village-plan as originally laid out. From this we learn that each of the four squares was divided into equal sections, laid off around the outside of each square and facing the outer street. These were numbered from one to ten, in each of the four squares. This gave forty sections in all; and thus one section was allotted to each of the forty patentees. By this arrangement every family could reside within the village, and share alike its palisade-defence. In the center of each square was reserved a large public yard, where the cattle of the inhabitants were brought in from the commons, and herded for the



night, for their better protection. At a later period, if not at this early date, a small portion of each square was devoted to *public* uses; on one was the church, on another was the school-house, on another the town-hall, and on the fourth the burying-ground. The original plan of the town is preserved, in its main features, to this day, after almost two hundred and fifty years.

The farms, or "planters' lots," as they were then called, were also 40 in number, and were laid out in triangular form, with the apex resting upon the village, and the boundary-lines diverging therefrom like the radii of a circle. This plan would thus enable each man to go from his house within the village-defences to his farm, with least trouble and exposure to himself, and without trespassing upon his neighbor. Several town-farms have retained to the present time this peculiarity of outline.

From the fact that the village was divided into 40 sections, and that 40 farms radiated therefrom, we have naturally inferred that there were 40 patentees. If this be so, one of them, very early in the history of the town, must have dropped out of the original number, either by death or removal; or, as tradition has it, forfeiting by his profligate life all his right, title and interest, in the property allotted him. This would seem to be more than mere conjecture; for, in all subsequent divisions of lands lying beyond the home-farms, there were 39 sections in each division, and only 39 names as including all the patentees.

By reference to the old map above mentioned, we are able to locate precisely the land allotted to Lady Moody, which has been to some, of late, a matter of doubt and inquiry. In the original allotment of land to the patentees, a majority of them were granted what were called "plantation lots," as we have seen; but to Lady Moody a "Bowery," or farm. On the map this "Bowery" is located north-east of the town-square, embracing the land belonging to the late Judge Barent Johnson, and possibly a part of the present Prospect Park Fair Grounds. But her land must have extended west of the village also, probably by subsequent purchase, although this is not indicated upon the map. We so judge, from the fact that Robert Pennoyer's land, as we have already seen in considering his patent, is therein described as lying "between the land of Antony Jansen and Meladie Moody," which could not be true except upon the above supposition. The late TUNIS G. BERGEN, in his *Early Settlers of Kings County*, thinks it probable that her land included the farm of the late Ex-Mayor Smith, of Brooklyn, together with the farms of Jacobus Lake and Cornelius D. Stryker, all west of the village. If this be true, her "Bowery" covered a large area of what is now most valuable property. But whatever property these Gravesend settlers possessed, whether much or little, they held with a clear title from its original owners.

Indian Purchases.—Gravesend, at the time of its settlement, was, like the rest of Kings county, the property of the Canarsie Indians; and, from them, at different times, all the land within the present town-boundaries was fairly purchased. The earliest of these purchases is recorded in a deed (one of the few town-documents written in Dutch), on file in the Gravesend town-clerk's office, dated September 10, 1645, three months before the issue of Governor Kieft's patent. There are two other Indian deeds, dated in 1650 and 1654, being both for land on the present Coney Island (see chapter on Coney Island). In 1684, in view of the frequent changes of government, and preparatory to a confirmatory charter which they proposed to obtain from Governor Dongan, the people of Gravesend fortified their Indian title by the following conveyance, the original of which is still among the Gravesend records:

"Know all men whome these presents may anywaies concerne, that we, Crackewasco, Arrenopeah, Mamekto, Annenges, the right and true proprietors of a certain parcel of land commonly called by the Indians *Makeopaca*, beginning at the most eastward end of the beach called by the Indians *Moeung*, bounded on the westmost side by the land heretofore purchased from Chippahig, and on the eastward side by the creek commonly called the Strome Kill, and soe along from the head of said creek, through the middle of the meadow and valley, till they come to a white-oak tree standing by the Flatland wagon path and soe running to another white oak tree standing by Utrecht wagon path, and soe upon a direct line to the Flatbush fence, and upon the west side bounded by the field of Utrecht, Doe hereby acknowledge and declare, that, for and in consideration of one blanket, one gun, one kettle, to have sold, assigned and made over all our right, title, interest and claim, to the said parcel of land, from us, our heirs, executors, administrators and assigns forever unto the freeholders and inhabitants of Gravesend in Kings County, their heirs, executors, administrators and assigns forever, for them the said inhabitants to have, hold, possess and enjoy the same as their own free land of inheritance or otherwise to dispose of as to them shall seem meet without any molestation from us or any other. Witness our hands the 20th of the 5th month, called

July, 1684. Cake ^{his} ^{mark} N wasco, Areun ^{his} ^{mark} X apoech, Arma ^{his} ^{mark} P nat,
Mus ^{his} ^{mark} V kheok, witnessed by us Pense ^{his} ^{mark} u mend, Wope ^{his} ^{mark} 7 sa,
Jack ^{his} ^{mark} kahna, Slip ^{his} ^{mark} C amore, Wer ^{his} ^{mark} J ransobling, John
Tilton, Senior, Samuel Spicer, Barent Juriansen, Joachim
Guylerk. Recorded by me John Emans, Clerck.

This fair and honorable dealing won for the settlers the respect and friendship of their Indian neighbors, with whom at first they maintained most pleasant and familiar relations. But familiarity bred contempt, and the savages finally began to demand, as their right, what had previously been granted as a matter of kindness or policy. Little resentments arose on both sides, and so it happened that private and personal wrongs were committed by both parties, paving the way for the open and bitter hostilities which soon followed. Undoubtedly, the ill-advised policy of Director Kieft tended (as

was openly charged against him at the time), to precipitate upon the colony the Indian war which broke out in 1643-44, and resulted in great distress and destruction of life and property.

Upon the Gravesend people, then in the first year of their settlement, and but illy prepared for such attacks, this new danger fell with great force. But they stoutly defended their village against several very sudden and fierce attacks. During these perilous times, every settler was compelled, by town ordinance, to share in building and keeping in repair the palisades, which surrounded the town-square and formed its defence. Each man was also obliged to keep, constantly on hand, one gun, and a certain quantity of powder and lead, in order to be prepared for any sudden emergency. During the year above mentioned, the Indian raids upon the town were unusually frequent and severe, and the inhabitants were kept in constant fear. The house of Lady Moody, according to Gov. Winthrop, seems to have been the principal point of attack; perhaps, because it was the largest and most conspicuous, and better fitted than the rest for a common rallying-point.

On one occasion her house was bravely defended by forty men (probably the whole number of able-bodied men in the settlement), some of whom had the reputation of being expert Indian-fighters. At another time the inhabitants, greatly outnumbered by the Indians, were compelled to flee to *Amersfort* (Flatlands), where they remained till the danger was passed. It is probable that, at this time, the town had not been put in a proper condition of defence, for want of time to build their palisade-fortifications. During this year, however, a treaty of peace was made with *Pennowits*, the crafty chief of the Canarsies (See THOMPSON'S *Hist. Long Island*), ending, for a time at least, all open hostilities between the settlers and the Indians upon Long Island.

It is probable that the dangers and anxieties of this first year led Lady Moody to think seriously of returning to Massachusetts; for there is extant a letter from Deputy-Gov. John Endicott to Gov. Winthrop, dated "Salem, 22 of the 2d month, 1644," referring to a request which she had made for permission to return, and strongly urging the Governor to refuse her unless she would confess her previous error, and leave her opinions behind her.

After this time we hear of but little disturbance from the Indians till the year 1655, when occurred probably the fiercest attack from the Northern Indians which the town had yet sustained. Dr. STRONG'S *History of Flatbush* says:

"In 1655, a large body of Indians from the north, following the course of the Hudson river to the south, left death and desolation in their track along the Jersey shore, then crossed over to Staten Island, and here killed sixty-seven white settlers, beside destroying much property; they then crossed

the Narrows, and made a fierce attack upon Gravesend. The inhabitants were unable to drive away the invading foe, but bravely stood their ground until relieved by a detachment of soldiers sent from Fort Amsterdam."

So far as we know, this was the end of all the Indian troubles in which the people of Gravesend were concerned.

Division of Lands.—As we have already seen, an allotment of land was made to each of the patentees, and those who were associated with them. In each grant of land made, we find in the early records an entry like the following: "To Thomas Cornish was granted a planter's lott with all the privileges thereunto appertaining." These were undoubtedly the lots radiating from the village-center, to which reference has already been made. We have no data for determining the precise area of a "planter's lott;" but, from the condition of things at this early period, we infer that it contained only a few acres at most. It happened in some cases, however, that a larger tract of land, or "bouwery," came into the possession of certain individuals by special grant, as in the case of Lady Moody, for what reason we are not told.

The grant for a Bowery contained 30 acres of upland, with more or less meadow, according to their need of pasturage. The following town-record is in point: Sept. 27, 1646. "It was agreed by the town that for such as should have Boweries, should have fifteen morgen of upland with meadow proportionable to their stocks." This meadow-land was also made inseparable from the farm, for, at the same meeting, "It was then agreed upon that none of the said inhabitants should dispose or sell away his meadow from his lott, but that it should remain entire to it."

Whatever the number of acres originally allotted to each settler, their possessions did not remain the same for any length of time. Farms and town-lots rapidly exchanged hands. The town-records, for the first fifty years, are largely taken up with the transfer of real-estate, either by purchase or exchange. After a few years, as we can readily see, the amount of land which each one individually possessed was large or small, as his enterprise or necessities led him to buy or sell. In every subsequent sale of land, however, the town reserved the first right to purchase; "but if the town would not buye it, then said inhabitant had leave to sell to any one unless he was notoriously detected for a scandalous person, or a publicke disturber of the common peace."

In order to secure permanent and useful citizens, rather than mere adventurous speculators, at a town-meeting held Sept. 7, 1646,

"It was then and there ordered and agreed upon by ye major parte of ye said Inhabitants that in case they did not build a habitable house by the last of Maye next, which will be in ye year 1647—that the said inhabitant that should be defaulted therein should forfeitt his lott to ye town."

In 1647 the meadow-land, probably that undivided

portion lying between the village and Coney Island, was divided and assigned, so that every man might know his own; and Sergeant Hubbard was appointed to do the work at the expense of the town.

In the year 1657 another division of land was agreed upon. One thousand acres, supposed to be that lying adjacent to the town-lots, were divided, according to the record, among thirty-eight families. The north-quarter, as it was called, was divided into 12-acre lots, and the west-quarter into 20-acre lots. The eastern part of the town, then and since known as the "Neck," was at this time called also "the general corn-field." This seems to have been, as its name indicates, the common property of the town, where, under certain restrictions, each inhabitant was at liberty to choose and cultivate such a number of acres as he could properly manage. Ten or twelve years later this land was also divided, and either sold or given to the inhabitants. The land on the south side of the present highway leading to "Gerretsen's Mill" was divided into thirty-nine 12-acre lots, and some of them remain to-day as they were originally laid out. The land on the north side of the highway was divided into the same number of lots, but containing probably a larger number of acres. This division was made in 1668-9, as seen from an old map, dated 1674.

The north part of the town, then thickly wooded, as were other portions of it at the time of its settlement, was called the "North Woods." This was also divided in 1684, and distribution made to the inhabitants.

Within forty years of its settlement, therefore, the most valuable part of the town was thus disposed of.

Town Organization.—In 1646 the inhabitants availed themselves of the privilege granted by their patent "to erect a body politique and civil combination," and to "elect, nominate and choose three of the ablest, approved honest men," who should act as justices in the town-court, when confirmed by the Governor-General. The three men first elected and so confirmed were Lieut. George Baxter, Edward Brown



Facsimile of George Baxter's Signature.

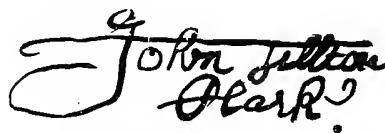
and William Wilkins. Sergeant James Hubbard was



Facsimile of James Hubbard's Signature.

chosen *schout* or *constable*, and John Tilton, "*town-*

clark," with a salary of one gilder (40 cts.) from every inhabitant of the town.



Facsimile of John Tilton's Signature.

Jan. 9, 1651, a town-order was made regulating the manner in which the *magistrates* should be chosen, thus: the town was to choose the first man, and he was to choose the second; these two a third, and so on until six had been chosen. The first three chosen were to act as magistrates for one year; the second three assisting in court when necessity required. The next year, the second three were to act officially and the first three to assist; and so they were to alternate. All were to be approved by the town, and confirmed by the Governor.

The Board were empowered to fill all vacancies occasioned by the death or inability of any of its number.

Town-meetings were, at first, held monthly, at some private house, as evidenced by the following town-order, "May 3d, 1652, voted to hold regular town-meetings the last Saturday of every month at ye house of James Hubbard at 12 o'clock, M., and ye drum to beat one hour before ye time." Also, it was voted to choose at every meeting a person who should act as "speaker for their more orderly proceedings, peace and credit." Fines were imposed upon those who were absent from these meetings, without sufficient excuse. After the purchase of a school-house in 1728, it was probably used for this purpose.

The first record of a town-meeting is dated in the year 1646. From that time the records are regularly and carefully kept. Public meetings, in case of emergency, were assembled by the beating of the drum, and general gatherings for town-work by the blowing of a horn.

In those days it was deemed to be not only the privilege, but the *duty* of every man to be present at these public gatherings, and have a voice in the management of town-affairs. Hence, in 1656, a man was chosen to warn the inhabitants of all general and private meetings of the town; and those failing to appear, without good excuse for their absence, were liable to a fine of 5 guilders for each offence. At the same meeting it was agreed that six men present at any meeting should form a quorum for the transaction of all town-business.

In 1646 the town "allotted to each man ye juste pportion of fence every man was to maintain for his peculiar lott, which is 20 poles."

Peremptory measures were sometimes necessary to prevent the careless from neglecting this part of their public duty. So, in the following spring, when one

Applegate failed to put up his fence according to law, the town voted "to hyer a man to doo it and paye him, and Applegate to answer to ye town."

In 1652 three men were chosen as "*fence-viewers*," who were to go their rounds once every fortnight, and compel all owners of land to keep their fences in order, under a penalty of 5 gilders. In 1674 the penalty was fixed at 20 gilders.

In 1646 a public pound was made, and 2 stivers (4 cts.) were allowed for pounding cattle or swine.

In 1649 it was ordered, by town-vote, "yt every man shall provide himself of a ladder of 20 foot or above by New Yeare's day nexte," under penalty of two gilders and 10 stivers per week while in default. It was also ordered, at the same meeting, that each man should provide himself with arms within two months, and also one pound of powder and two pounds of lead "to lye in Bancke."

The following vote was also passed: that "ye pasture att ye end of ye lotts shall be for ye use of any of ye inhabitants for a calf or cow yt is sick, or for a horse in case a stranger comes to ye town." In the last clause of this enactment we find the evidence of that warm-hearted Dutch hospitality, for which their descendants are still noted.

The fines collected for violation of law were at first put into the "common or poor stock" of the town; but in 1652 it was voted that the fines should be used in defraying the common charges, or town-expenses.

A *Bureau of Vital Statistics* was established in 1650. The record is as follows: "It was also agreed unto that all burials and marriages and for all yt shall be borne, notice should be taken thereof and recorded."

For the first half century of the town's existence marriages were performed by a magistrate; but those intending marriage, whether by a Justice or minister, were obliged to have the banns published from the nearest church, as prescribed by law. A marriage is recorded with the following endorsement, dated 1689:

"A certificate of ye minister at Flatbush. Isaac Hasselberg and Elizabeth Baylis have had their proclamation in our church as commonly our manner and custom is, and no opposition or hindrance come against them, so as that they may be confirmed in ye banns of matrimony, whereto we wish them blessing.

MITTWOUT, ye 17 March 1689.

RUDOLPH VARRICK, Minister."

In accordance with the above permission, they were married in Gravesend by Justice Nicholas Stillwell.

In 1664, Dec. 31, Sergeant James Hubbard was married, by a magistrate, to Elizabeth Baylis. This was his second marriage. At the same time, as justice, he united in marriage James Bowne and Mary Stout.

The following are the first entries under the new law. "Aug. ye 2d. Peter Simson was by publick authority married." "Aug. ye 11. The sonn of William Wilkins was borne, and Aug. 18, he was buried."

"Sept. 9. Thomas Cornwell deceased and was buried." His widow seems to have been speedily consoled, however, for the very next record, and bearing the same date as the above, is as follows. "Sept. 9, 1650. John Morris and Elizabeth Cornwell, widow of Thomas, were married."

Cattle and Fences.—All horses and colts turned into the common pasture at Coney Island were, by law, marked, and a description of them kept on the town-records.

In 1675 three men were chosen, by the town, to go to the "flys" (marshes) about the 2d hour, and see if any beasts were mired, and if so, help them out. If any beast should die through their neglect, they were to pay the damage; and if any man should be warned to go and help these men and should refuse, he was to be fined 5 shillings and pay all damage resulting from his neglect.

Early Temperance Laws.—The liquor traffic occupied the attention of the people considerably at a very early date. A license law was passed regulating its sale to the white population, and a stringent prohibitory law preventing its sale to the Indians. The latter is as follows:

"April 16, 1656. Att an assemblie of ye Inhabitants uppon a lawful warning given, it was inacted, ordered and agreed uppon that hee, she or they whatsoever, that should tapp, draw out, sell or lett any Indian or Indians in this corporation have any brandie, wine, strong liquor or strong drink, should, if so foctd, paye the summ of fifty gilders, and for the next default one hundred gilders, according to the law of the country."

The law also provided that not more than one pint should be sold, at one time, to the whites.

Before the Town Court, Oct. 8, 1663, "Richard Stout declareth that Nathaniel Brittain hath slandered him that he hath sould wine to the Indians. The said Nathaniel denyeth it, but said that the Indians told his wife that they had bought wine of Stout." The Court, however, ordered Nathaniel to pay the cost of prosecution.

Prosecutions were not uncommon under these laws, not only before the Town Court, but also before the Court of Sessions. Ambrose London was before the Town Court, charged with selling more than a pint of wine at once. The defence was the same weak plea that men so often make now to satisfy their conscience and justify their violation of law, viz.: that people would have it, and if he did not furnish it some one else would; but the Court fined him to the full extent of the law. Being afterward tried and found guilty of selling liquor by false measure, he was again heavily fined.

Sunday Laws.—On the 7th of Oct., 1666, "Thomas Whitlock and John Griggs were presented before the Town Court for buying and selling land on the first day of the week. John Griggs said he did not remember such a covenant. The Court, however, ordered that

the bargain be declared void, and each be fined 15 shillings and cost of Court."

The records furnish another law equally decisive upon this point.

"Whereas there is a prohibition express by an order from the Governor of all such exercises upon ye first day of ye week as gunning, ball-playing, horse-racing, nine-pins, excessive drinking and ryotting with other ye like which greatly tends to ye dishonor of God, ye hindrance of many from and in religious duties to ye reproach of ye Government and ye shame of ye place, for ye preventing whereof the officers of this town according to their duty have given due notice that what person soever shall in the like transgress, shall pay 10 shillings and answer it before the Governor.

This act proclaimed the 13 of 8 month 1675."

Sundry Orders and Contracts.—The town at this early period seems to have suffered much from the depredations of wolves. This part of the island, being in some portions thickly wooded, furnished, for a time, a secure lair for these wild beasts, from which they could make their nightly raids upon the unprotected flock and fowls of the settlers.

To encourage their extermination, therefore, the town, in 1657, ordered a bounty of 5 gilders to be given for every wolf killed within the town corporation. This extra inducement, added to the self-interest of each individual, led to such a determined effort against the common enemy as greatly held them in check, and in due time caused their entire disappearance.

The woods, to which we have referred as covering a large area of the town, were at first common property, and at the disposal of any one who might be at the pains to cut fire-wood or timber therefrom. And to protect every man in this right, a town-order was made about this time, laying a fine of 20 gilders upon any one who should take for himself the wood or timber which another had cut. There must have been some dishonest men, even in those days, to make such a law necessary.

Houses of the Olden Time.—It may be interesting to know the style of house which afforded shelter and protection to the early settlers. If the following is a fair specimen, it will not strike us as being too elaborate or expensive, even for that early day. Here is the contract for a dwelling, as entered by the town-clerk upon his record:

"Ambrose London bargained and agreed with Michah Jure for his building him a house by the middle of June nexte, and to paye the said Michah 40 gilders for it—at the time he begins a skipple of Indian corne, at the raising of it 10 gilders, and at ye finishing of it ye rest of the said summ. Ye house to be made 22 foote long, 12 foote wide, 8 foote stooode with a petition in ye middle, and a chimney, to laye booth rooms with joice, to cover ye roof, and make up both gable ends with clabboards, as also to make two windows and a door."

This man, London, was rather a speculator, and soon disposed of this house, and made another contract for

a larger and still more commodious one; the contract price for building it being \$44.00. John Hawes was the builder, and his contract was to build "1 house framed uppon sills of 26 foote long, and 16 foote broad and 10 foote stooode, with 2 chimneys in ye middle and 2 doors and two windows, and to clabboard only ye roof and dobe the rest parte." The price was 110 gilders, or instead, "one Dutch cow."

Household Furniture, etc.—But, if their houses were built more with reference to their comfort and actual necessities than for display, the same was true of their household furniture and personal effects, as will be seen from the following inventory of the estate of John Buckman, deceased, dated in the year 1651, and signed by Lady Moody as one of the witnesses. Among a few other articles appear the following: "1 Kettle, 1 Frying pan, 1 Traye, 1 Jarre, 1 pair breeches, 1 Bonett, 1 Jackett, 1 Paile, 2 Shirts, 1 Tubbe, 1 Pair shoes, 2 pair ould stockings, 9 ould goats, money in chest, 32 gilders."

The Town Court.—This court (see p. 164) was established in 1646, by the election of three men, acting as justices, to hear and settle all complaints brought before them. It took cognizance of cases of slander, trespass, theft and debt; and in all cases coming within their jurisdiction, where the damage did not exceed 50 Holland gilders (\$20), the decision of any two of the magistrates was final. But, in all cases where the damage was in excess of \$20, an appeal could be taken from this to a higher court. At first the time and patience of the court was severely taxed, in being compelled to listen to complaints of the most trivial character, which obliged them to hold frequent and otherwise unnecessary sessions. To remedy this, and, so far as possible, relieve the court, in 1650, at a general town-meeting, "Itt was then and there agreed unto that a general Court should be held once or twice a year, and that ye town should make choice of two or three men to sitt with ye Court att these times and to adjudicate with them about such matters as maye concerne ye good of ye general and every one in particular, and yt ye present pattent be read att these times to ye whole Inhabitants." It was also ordered, by public vote, that those found guilty of "slander, laying violent hands upon any to the breach of the peace, theft," &c., should be punished, "Either by fining, imprisoning, stocking or standing in a publick place." The latter became the common mode of punishment for these offences. There are those still living among us who remember well the old *stocks*, which were placed near the town-hall, where prisoners convicted of petty crimes were made a public show, and were hooted at and pelted by the boys of the neighborhood.

As already observed, the records of the town for the first fifty years were largely taken up with the transfer of real-estate; which may find explanation in the fact

that breach of contract was, during all this time, a common cause of complaint before the Court, and great trouble and annoyance was caused in settling these difficulties for the want of a written agreement; so that, in 1651, the court ordered "that for the future, all bargains and sales should be recorded by the town-clerk, or be in writing with sufficient witnesses, or the Court would give them no hearing."

Cases of theft were not entirely unknown, even in those days of primitive simplicity and honesty. We quote the following as a fair specimen of many of the grave complaints which taxed the wisdom and patience of the court.

Thomas Cornwell was plaintiff, and Ambrose London defendant, in an "action for taking away his henn and selling it. Order of ye Court was that ye said Ambrose Should restore again ye henn, which he promised to doe." But failing to comply with the order, in Jan., 1649, the court again ordered "that he should forthwith paye to the said Cornwell 3 gilders and 8 stivers with the Cost of Court."

The most common offence with which the court was called upon to deal was *slander*. So troubled was the court with cases of this character, which were brought without any just cause, or upon insufficient evidence, or, as the court expressed it, "caused by certain buise bodyes, persons insendiaries of mischief and trouble," that at length a fine of 50 gilders was ordered against any man who should bring such action without the necessary proof. Sometimes the punishment was made severe in aggravated cases, if the charge was proved. Again, satisfaction was rendered by the accused making a suitable acknowledgment of his wrong-doing, and apologizing therefor, with promise of future amendment. It would be unjust to suppose that the offenders formed any large portion of the little colony. The great majority were honest, thrifty, law-abiding citizens. We thus judge, because only a few names appear, and these repeatedly, as defendants in these actions. The severity of the punishment sometimes imposed may also be taken as a fair interpretation of the contempt with which the better portion of the community looked down upon these disturbances of the common weal. Judgment, too, was pronounced without respect of person; and female gossips received no better treatment at the hands of the law than their male companions. The following are fair specimens of the many that fill the court record. In 1650 Nicholas Stillwell brought an action for slander against Thomas Applegate, for saying, "he thought if plaintiff's debts were paid he would have little left." As he had nothing to say to the charge, the court admonished him, and fined him 12 gilders and the cost of court.

The next year Sergeant Hubbard, in behalf of his wife, brings a similar charge against the same Applegate. Here it is:

"Defendant is charged with saying ye plaintiff had

but half a wife. Being questioned by the court if he could disprove the fact, said, he never said it. Nevertheless, the Court sentenced him to make publick acknowledgment of his error, and to stand at the publick poste during the pleasure of the Court, with a paper on his breast mentioning the reason: that he is a notorious scandalous person; whereupon, he again confessed his guilt, and desired her to pass it by, and remit it, which she freely did, and he gave her thanks."

In the case of Ann Goulder, evidently an old offender, found guilty of slander, she was ordered "to stand in yrons half an hour, with a paper on her breast declaring her to be a publick disturber of ye peace, and if any further trouble from her, sheto be put out of ye town."

Ambrose London brought suit against the wife of Thomas Applegate, for saying "his wife did milk her cows. The Def't saith she said no otherwise, but as Penelope Prince tould her, yt Ambrose, his wife, did milk her cows. Penelope Prince being questioned, acknowledged her fault in soe speaking, and being sorrie for her words, she spoke satisfaction on both sides."

That it was a serious thing in those days to speak evil of those in authority, is evident from the following case:

Thomas Applegate, Sr., it appears, had brought a case before the Governor for adjudication. As the decision had been against him, he felt himself greatly wronged; and had, in his anger, said that undue influence had been brought to bear upon his Excellency to effect this result. Consequently, at a court held Dec. 26th, 1650, he was charged with saying that the Governor "took bribes." Although he positively denied the charge, "yett nevertheless the Court being sufficiently satisfied in their consciences according to the evidence yt ye said Applegate had spoken ye said words, the which being soe contrarie to all rules and laws divine and human, not to scandalize or to speak evil of any person much more of ruler and Gov. ye Court doe therefore adjudge ye said Applegate doe deserve to have his tongue bored through with a red hott yron and to make publick acknowledgement of his great transgression therein, and never to have credit in anye of belief in any testimonie or relation he shall make either in court or countrie, and for ye execution of ye said sentence doe refer him to ye mercy of ye Governor."

When this sentence was publicly read, the said Applegate confessed his guilt, and asked forgiveness of the Governor, and begged the court to intercede for him; at the same time expressing the hope that this would be a warning to him in the future. We have every reason to believe that through the repentance of the offender, and the kindly intercession of the court, the tongue of the slanderer escaped the judicial perforation, and that the remainder of the sentence was also remitted.

The above examples from Town-Court records will

suffice to show with what judicial wisdom and severity the minor offences against law and order were treated over two hundred years ago, in protecting the rights of our citizens and maintaining the public peace.

This brings us to the

Court of Sessions.—This court, in the year 1668, was moved from Flatbush to Gravesend, where it remained for seventeen years. The original court-house is said to have been built in 1668, and stood near the present Dutch church.

We find this interesting record of the court while held at Gravesend :

“Whereas there hath been several misdemeanors committed in contempt of authority in the town of Gravesend, by throwing down the stocks, pulling down fences, and such like crimes ; the court also find there was no watch in town which might have prevented it, and being the offenders cannot be discovered, it is ordered that the town stand fined in 5 pounds till they have made discovery of the offenders.”

A watch-house had been built about ten years before this, but the authorities had evidently become careless about keeping suitable guard at night. It would be an excellent thing if our local authorities, now-a-days, could be made, in like manner, responsible for good government.

Then, in 1685, by act of the Second Colonial Assembly, it was removed to Flatbush again; the latter place being considered the more central and convenient location for the transaction of county business. It remained here until its final removal to Brooklyn, where it is now held. The old record of the Court of Sessions, while it was held at Gravesend, may now be found in a fair state of preservation in the Register's office in the city of Brooklyn. The first entry in the book is as follows :

“Att a Court of Sessions held att Gravesend the 17 day of March, By his Royal Highness' authority, in the 25 year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord Charles the Second, by the grace of God, of Great Brittain, France and Ireland King-defender of the faith, &c., and in the year of our Lord God 1668-9.”

“Present,

CORNELIUS VAN RUYDER,	} Justices.
JAMES HUBBARD,	
RICHARD LOTT,	

The record of every regular session of the court is begun in the same language as the above, changing only the date of its sitting, or the names of the presiding justices.

It was customary in this court for the Secretary of the Colony, or a member of the Council, or the High Sheriff, if present, to sit with the justices and preside over their deliberations.

The following case, tried here before a jury, shows that they were unwilling to have justice miscarry through any technical defect in the indictment, or to have any artful schemer profit by another's ignorance of the law :

“*Samuel Dennis, Pl'tf. John Van Cleef, Def't.*—The Plantif produced the Def'ts obligacion wherein hee was to

pay him severall parcells of corne in Nov. last. The Deftt. owned it was his act and deed, but objected that the action was not legally entered, nor a declaration given in. Whereupon, it being left to the jury they brought in their verdict as followeth. That seeing the pl'tf is a stranger, and is unacquainted with the laws so as to observe every circumstance which is proper for ourselves, but hath observed the end and substance of the law, though not every circumstance, that therefore hee have a present determination or hearing, seeing the law in folio the fourth, doth not make a negative exception in this case.”

“The Worshipl Court allow the verdict, and order present payment of the debt, with two pounds damage and costs of Court.”

The following case shows a hospitable regard, on the part of the court, for the comfort and welfare of strangers :

“The Constable of Bushwick presented Heumphry Clay for Retayling of Liquor without a license, but the Court being informed that hee keeps an inn att Marspath Hills for the accommodation of Strangers they have thought best to grant him a license and remit the fine.”

We will mention but one other case, worthy of note because of the peculiar punishment inflicted. We have been able to find no evidence of this case in the records of the court, but find it stated in THOMPSON'S *History of Long Island*. From the date given we think there must be some mistake as to the locality, but we give it as we find it. A soldier was convicted before the Court of Sessions in Gravesend for leaving his post while on guard, for the evident purpose of indulging his appetite for strong drink. He was condemned to sit upon a wooden horse during parade, with a pitcher in one hand and a sword in the other, to signify that he loved his beer more than his duty, and that his courage was determined by the quantity consumed.

Quit-Rent.—The patent of Gov. Kieft exacted from the settlers one-tenth of the revenue of the soil, as quit-rent, to be paid yearly to His Majesty. By the Dongan Patent of 1686 this yearly tax was commuted to six bushels of good merchantable winter-wheat, to be paid every 25th of March to some officer of the government duly appointed to receive it. This certainly was not an exorbitant demand for the favors the town had received; nor have we heard that complaint was ever made.

There are, among the old papers of the town, several receipts (the earliest dated 1776) for this quit-rent, given by the Receiver-General, or by his deputy, which show that the town continued to pay the six bushels of wheat as late, at least, as 1780.

After the Revolutionary war, and in the year 1786, the legislature passed an act providing that any individuals or corporations in arrears for quit-rents, who should pay such arrearages, less eight years (the period of the war), and a sum equal to fourteen years additional quit-rent, should receive a certificate from the treasurer of the State and be thenceforth forever exempted from the payment of any quit-rents. That

Gravesend met its obligations fully is shown by the following :

“Patent granted to the inhabitants of Gravesend in Kings County date 10 Sept 1686. Quit rent six Bush Wheat pr ann

Paid up to 25 Mar 1775					
From 25 March 1775					
To 25 Dec 1786					
	11:9				
	8				
	3:9	BUS. 6	BUSH. 22½	6/-	£6.15
14 yrs Comut.		6	84	6/-	25. 4
					£31.19

Rec'd 12 Dec. 1786 From Olibert Terhune Supervisor of Gravesend Public Securities Which with the Interest Allowed Thereon amount to Thirty one Pounds Nineteen Shillings In Full for the Arrears of Quit Rent and a Commutation of the future Quit Rents that would have arisen on the Above Described Patent.

GERARD BANCER, Treas'r.

Assessors and County Treasurer. Assessors are first mentioned in 1691. The next year a *County Treasurer* was chosen to look after the money thus collected. He seems to have been chosen by representatives from the various towns, as is inferred from the following :

“At a general town meeting held Jan 22, 1692, John Poland and John Lake were chosen to meet other townsmen at Flatbush to choose a County Treasurer, next monday being ye 25 of January. Also William Goulding and Daniel Lake to present our assessment to ye justices at Flatbush ye first of Feb. next ensuing, because ye assessors were absent.”

A Port of Entry.—In 1693 Gravesend was one of the *three* ports of entry on Long Island.

Census.—The first attempt at a census of the town, which we have been able to find, was made in 1675 (*Documentary History*, Vol. II), as follows :

“The Accountts from Gravesend this 14 of the 7th mo'th Anno 1675, of all persons Rateable according to ye law, as also of their Lands both upland and meadow ground, with the number of their cattle, namely—Oxen ; Cows ; horses ; Mares ; and Sheep as follows : Of persons the troopers excepted 30 : of oxen there is 26 : of cows there is to ye number of 107 : of cattle 107 : of horses and mares 62 : of colts 29 : of sheep to ye number of 60 : of acres of upland and Meadow ground 932.

By me Nicholas Stillwell, Constable, and ye Overseers. Rate £13 14s 5d. (Endorsed.)

Gravesend valuacons Brought in Sept. 20, 1675.

Exd. Rate £13 14s 3d.”

1675. “Feb. 1st. At a general town meeting ye Inhabitants made choice of Nicholas Stillwell to be Constable ye present year. 13 voters.” This could hardly have been the full number of voters in town, even at this early day.

1683. In a return of the persons, lands and cattle ratable according to law in Gravesend, we find there are 32 persons taxed ; number of acres, 1,356 ; horses, 59 ; colts, 9 ; cows, 121 ; calves between 1 and 3 years,

119 ; and 2 bogs kept by John Tilton, Sr. ; 14 sheep. This shows a gain in some respects, and a falling off in others.

1698. In a list of the freeholders, their wives, children, apprentices and slaves, within Kings county, we find Gravesend credited with 31 men, 32 women, 124 children, 6 apprentices, and 17 slaves, making a total population of 210. At this time Brooklyn had a population of only 511, and all Kings county contained but 2,013 inhabitants.

1738. In another list of the inhabitants of Kings county, both white and black, the census of Gravesend is given as follows : “Total population, 268 ; white men, women and children, 218 ; blacks, 50.” Thus showing an increase in total population, in forty years, of only 58 persons, and of these 33 were blacks. Brooklyn had, according to this census, a total population of 721, and Kings county 2,348, as follows : Whites, 1,784 ; blacks, 564.

1788. In an old tax-list of this date, found among the town-papers, we find the number of inhabitants taxed in Gravesend to be 58. Only 47 of the above were real-estate owners, the others being taxed for personal property. Number of acres, 2,211 ; number of horses, 95 ; cattle, 227 ; sheep, 42 ; slaves, 65.

1789. In a paper, similar to the above, there were but 42 real-estate owners on the list, and the number of acres given as 3,079. This paper is signed by Cornelius Stryker, John Emmans and Stephen Emmans, Assessors.

The following returns, sent to the Secretary's office in 1790, are valuable for the sake of comparison.

NAMES OF TOWNS.	Freeholders w £100.	Freeholders worth £20.	Tenants worth £5.	Males.....	Females....	Slaves.....
Brooklyn.....	97	105	98	582	537	437
Flatbush.....	87	40	4	137	148	141
Flatlands.....	34	87	15	313	294	390
Gravesend.....	42	46	4	160	134	131
Bushwick.....	52	52	20	194	169	164
New Utrecht.....	43	46	8	170	159	204
	355	376	149	1556	1396	1471

1791. We also have before us an old paper entitled : “The second payment of the tax for building Kings county Court House, apportioned to the Inhabitants of, or Ratable estates in the Town of Gravesend, 26 day of September, 1791.” In this list we have 51 ratable estates, with their valuation, and the tax laid upon them. The highest valuation is put upon the estate of Richard Stillwell, Jr., it being £1,451, and his tax £4 6s 11½d. The smallest valuation was £1, and the tax 1d.

1800. The census for Kings county gives a total population of 5,749.

1810. The census by towns was as follows: Brooklyn, 4,402; Bushwick, 798; Flatbush, 517; Flatlands, 517; Gravesend, 520; New Utrecht, 907; total, 8,303. The gain in the county in ten years, from 1800 to 1810, was 2,563. The gain for Gravesend for the same time was only 3. It is probable that these returns cannot be relied upon as perfectly accurate in every particular, but they furnish a fair approximation.

In 1828 Brooklyn had a population of 7,475. In 1840, 36,233.

1835. The census gives the number of inhabitants of Gravesend as 695; or only 427 for nearly a century's increase of population; not a very remarkable growth for 97 years. In 1864 there were 99 voters.

1880. The census shows a much more rapid increase, the number of inhabitants being given as over 3,500.

1883. The tax-list gives the names of 1,307 resident tax-payers, beside a very large number of non-residents who pay taxes on parcels of land ranging in size from city building-lots to several acres. The great increase in population has been made in the last decade. The benefits to be derived from living in a place where taxes are low, the climate most healthful, and the surroundings altogether delightful, are beginning now to be appreciated as never before. We may justly look for a still larger increase in the next ten years.

Highways.—The first highways were narrow, unfenced lanes, rightly designated upon the old records as "wagon-paths." As the cattle of the inhabitants gradually increased, it became necessary for every man to fence his land adjoining the lanes, according to a town-order; and where the wagon-paths passed through the various lots of the farmers, as they very frequently did, the bars were to be carefully put up after every ingress and egress, under penalty of a fine for every neglect, and the damages which might result from stray cattle.

Four gates were also put up in the four quarters of the town, at the ends of the lanes, separating the common pasture-ground from the cultivated fields. If the children, even, left these gates open, the parents were held responsible for the consequences.

The streets through the town-square were the first opened, and were considered, in these early times, remarkably fine roads. Those leading to the "12 morgen" and Unionville on the southwest, and to the "Neck" or "General Cornfield" on the east, were scarcely more than simple wagon-tracks. But little labor was required in making these roads, beside that of cutting the trees or clearing the underbrush, which covered this part of the island.

The first town-record we find, relating to highways, is dated April 21, 1651, viz.:

"Att an assemblie of ye inhabitants of ye town it was ordered and agreed unto that every inhabitant who is possessed of a lott shall be ready to go by ye blowing of ye horn on

Thursday next to clear ye common ways uppon ye pennaltie of 2 gilders for every one yt is defective."

There is another record of a highway laid out "to and from the Beach," dated Dec. 11, 1660, evidently the present road to Unionville, scarcely twenty feet wide, and known to this day as the "Beach Lane."

Highways were frequently changed for the accommodation of individuals; in those days, a matter of no great labor. We find several records like the following:

"March 25, 1678. It was proposed in a legal meeting, and in presence of Judge Nicholas Stillwell, unto ye inhabitants and freeholders of our town, by Abraham Emans, whether ye said Abraham might take unto his lott ye general highway going down to ye mill, and he ye said Abraham allowing to ye town a sufficient highway at ye east side of his lott and more convenient to ye town, which was consented unto by ye pluralitie of ye freeholders."

In the following instance the town propose the exchange: April 1st, 1697. The town propose to exchange with Nicholas Stillwell their highway "next to his habitation at the end of our lane, he allowing unto the town a sufficient highway in the same place where formerly it was."

As the early highways were opened for the purpose of reaching more easily their outlying farm-lots, rather than for the convenience of travel, it would sometimes happen that farmers from the neighboring towns, to save themselves time and lessen the distance to the point aimed at, would open short-cuts across their neighbors' fields without leave or license, to the great damage of property. This was done several times by the farmers of Flatlands and Flatbush, until the people of Gravesend, at a general town-meeting called for the purpose, drew up and presented to the above town a strong remonstrance against such unauthorized trespass; and finally, in 1691, appealed to the Court of Sessions to confirm a town-order making such an offence a misdemeanor and finable.

The records furnish a description, dated 1696, of the highway between Flatlands and New Utrecht, which would now be utterly unknown but for this record. It seems to have followed the line of the towns, rather than a direct course, making a travel of five miles necessary to accomplish an air-line distance of three. The direction and width are as follows:

"Ye way from ye end of ye lane to Amersfort is 4 rodds in breadth, and from thence along Flatbush and New Utrecht fence one rodd, and at New Utrecht lane it takes the breadth of that lane, and so runs till it comes to our lane, and then it is three rodds breadth, and further between every range of lots is a way one rodd and a half. The line of ye highway to Amersfort is north x east, about half a point north."

At a very early date, also, probably not long after the above, another road was opened, running east and west, through the northern part of the town, from Flatlands to New Utrecht, which has been known, for a century at least, as the "King's Highway," and, like all

roads of that period, is narrow and winds about in a most arbitrary manner.

Rider avenue, in the northern part of the town, running from Gravesend avenue to the Coney Island avenue, was opened about 1850 or '51; and *Rider's lane*, in the extreme eastern part, extending from the "Neck" road to King's highway, was opened about 1831. They are both narrow streets.

Coney Island Causeway.—Previous to 1823, in order to reach Coney Island, it was necessary to ford the Coney Island creek, which could be done only when the tide was out. To meet the need of a good highway to the shore, a company was formed by act of the legislature, passed March 22, 1823, whose corporate title was "The Coney Island Bridge and Road Company." Their capital stock was \$6,000, all paid; 300 shares at \$20 per share. Van Brunt Magaw, George Stillwell, Garret Stryker, Jacobus Lakes and Lawrence Ryder were appointed a commission "to lay out a causeway from Gravesend village to the sea-shore." This was a continuation, toward the south, of the street originally laid out through the village-center. The company, by 1824, had their causeway constructed over the meadow, their bridge built, their toll-gate erected, and everything in running order. Van Brunt Magaw was elected first president, and John Terhune secretary and treasurer, and held their respective offices for sixteen years; when, September 4, 1839, James W. Cropsey was elected president, and B. I. Ryder secretary and treasurer. The road subsequently came into the hands of Mr. John Lefferts, of Flatbush, by the purchase of the stock; he kept the road in repair and collected the toll, until about the year 1876, when it was purchased by Andrew R. Culver, president of the Prospect Park and Coney Island railroad. The road is still in good condition, although sometimes covered by the high tides. It has virtually ceased to be a toll-road.

Gravesend Avenue.—In 1838 an effort was made to open a free road, four rods wide, "from the Coney Island Bridge road, in the town of Gravesend, over the town of Flatbush to the Clove in Flatbush hill, at the Patent-line between the towns of Flatbush and Brooklyn." This was an extension to the north of the village-center road, as the Coney Island causeway was an extension towards the south, and met with considerable opposition.

It was four rods wide, for about two miles from the village, and then terminated in a narrow lane as it turned towards the north-east, and passed into the town of Flatbush.

This street, in 1875, by act of the legislature, was widened to 100 feet, and extends directly north to the city-line of Brooklyn, where it connects with 20th st. It cost the abutting property-owners in the town of Gravesend about \$40,000 for these improvements, and it is now known as Gravesend avenue.

Coney Island Plank Road, extending from 15th Street, Brooklyn city-line, to Coney Island, with a toll-gate at each extremity of the road, was surveyed by Hon. Tunis G. Bergen, and map filed October 12, 1849. In 1850 it was laid out, 66 feet wide, completed, and long known as the *Coney Island Road*. After ten or twelve years' service, the planks were removed and the road turnpiked. It was the main thoroughfare to Coney Island for many years, or until the completion of the Boulevard. It was often thronged, of a fine afternoon in summer, with every description of carriages and horses; and was noted as the drive where the sporting-men of twenty years ago were accustomed to exhibit the fine qualities of their thoroughbreds.

On May 11th, 1869, an amendatory act was passed widening this road to 100 feet, and an assessment laid upon the property along the street in 1871. The next year, 1872, the work was accomplished; people were warned to set back their fences, and the large assessment was collected. But, of all the money levied and collected, not one dollar was ever expended to put the road in proper condition, and the few who refused to move their fences have never been compelled to do it to this day. This road is now known upon the county map as Coney Island avenue.

The Neck Road to Sheepshead Bay was, in 1865, extended and widened from a narrow lane to a width corresponding to the increasing growth and travel of the town. Wm. H. Stillwell, surveyor.

In the year 1876, 60th street was opened, beginning at Gravesend avenue and terminating on 3d avenue, South Brooklyn.

A year or so later 86th street was opened. This street begins on the old Coney Island causeway, south of the village, and runs in a direct course through New Utrecht to Fort Hamilton. These streets are all down in the recent county survey, and are 60 feet wide.

Ocean Avenue.—It extends from the Willink entrance of Prospect Park, Brooklyn, to the Atlantic Ocean: 100 feet wide and a little over five miles long. It affords the eastern part of the town of Gravesend, especially Sheepshead Bay, a beautiful and convenient drive direct to Brooklyn. There is a strong probability that the inlet at the bay will be bridged, making Manhattan Beach its southern terminus.

It is, without doubt, the cheapest road of its kind ever built in Kings county. The commissioners all being men of honorable standing in the towns interested, and themselves owners of abutting property, were therefore careful that no extravagant outlays should be made. It was located by an act of the legislature, April 19, 1871; the map filed July 3d, 1875; and the road completed in 1876. The sidewalks are laid out fifteen feet wide, and the roadway seventy feet. The contract for construction was \$12,500; the cost of removing buildings, law and incidental expenses, making the sum total \$15,000. No public work of such ex-

tent has ever been done in this part of the country at so little expense. The commissioners were Benjamin G. Hitchings, Robert Magaw, and Philip S. Crook. The superintendent of survey was Samuel McElroy.

Ocean Parkway.—We come finally to speak of Ocean Parkway, fully acknowledged to be the finest drive in America. It is simply the extension of Prospect Park, in one broad magnificent avenue to the Atlantic Ocean. The idea of a drive on such a grand scale, for the benefit of Brooklyn and New York, had its origin in the fertile brain of J. S. T. Stranahan, then president of the Park Commissioners of Brooklyn. Application was made to the legislature, and an act passed May 11, 1869, amended May 14, 1872, giving to the Brooklyn Park Commissioners the necessary authority to "lay out, open, and improve a public highway or avenue from Prospect Park, in the City of Brooklyn, towards Coney Island, to the lands of the Prospect Park Fair Grounds Association." The understanding was, that while it stopped at King's highway, in Gravesend, for the present, it should ultimately be continued to Coney Island. It was therefore rightly called "Ocean Parkway."

The whole affair was placed in the hands, and under the full control, of the Park Commissioners, with power to fix the assessment district and levy all necessary assessments for the opening and construction of the road. The construction of this part of the avenue was begun in 1874, and completed at the beginning of the following year. The extension from King's highway to the ocean was begun in the early spring of 1876, and November 18th, of this year, the completed road, from Prospect Park to Coney Island, was thrown open to the public. The whole length of the road is five and one-half miles to the concourse, with a continuous width of 210 feet, and a reserve of thirty feet on the outside lines of the avenue; upon which, according to the legislative act, "no buildings or other erections, except porches, piazzas, fences, fountains and statuary, shall remain or be at any time placed; which space on each side of the avenue, and in addition thereto, shall be used for court-yards only, and may be planted with trees, shrubbery, and otherwise ornamented, at the discretion of the respective owners or occupants thereof; but such use and ornamentation shall be under the direction of the said Park Commissioners." The center-road, devoted to pleasure-driving, is seventy feet wide. Side-roads on each side the center-drive, twenty-five feet; and sidewalks, each fifteen feet. Between the main road and the two side-roads is reserved a space of thirty feet for ornamentation. Six rows of trees adorn the avenue, one on each side of the three drives. The assessment-district was laid at 1050 feet on each side the avenue. The parkway contains about 125 acres. The road terminates at the beach in what is known as "The Concourse." This consists of an area 2720 feet in length, and running 1000 feet back from high-water

line. A beautiful drive has been constructed across it lengthwise, seventy-five feet wide, with a sidewalk twenty-five feet on the ocean side, and the whole covered with asphalt pavement. Two shelters have been built in the centre of this concourse, one on each side of the spot where the road enters it. These are each seventy-five feet long and twenty-five feet wide, and open toward the sea, giving a most beautiful and uninterrupted view of the ocean and the opening of the "Narrows." The cost of this boulevard is something startling, especially to those who were compelled to bear the larger part of it. The following is a copy of the figures taken from the books of the County Treasurer, by Mr. Martin Schoonmaker: Cost of opening, \$265,705; Cost of construction, \$295,525. This covers the expense of avenue only from Prospect Park to King's highway. The cost of opening the avenue, viz., \$265,705, was paid entirely by the property-owners within the assessment-district, as follows: \$108,068 in cash; \$157,637 in land, for which the owners did not receive one cent. To meet the expense of construction, viz.: \$295,525, the county of Kings was authorized by the legislature to issue bonds to the amount of \$300,000, bearing interest at the rate of seven per cent., to be paid on or before the expiration of ten years, the interest payable semi-annually. Reckoning the interest on the cost of construction for ten years, at seven per cent, we shall find the whole cost of the avenue, from Prospect Park to the King's highway (the section first built), will reach the enormous total of \$768,097.50.

The cost of the extension from King's highway to the ocean, though much less per lineal foot than that first constructed, was: Amount levied for opening (for lands taken, including awards), over \$100,000; Cost of improvement, grading, etc., \$75,000.

This, with interest, added to the cost of the first section, would swell the total cost of the five-and-a-half miles of Ocean parkway and concourse to about *one million dollars*.

The property-owners within the assessment-district earnestly and persistently petitioned the legislature to relieve them from this heavy burden, which amounted virtually to a confiscation of their property; for the 1,000 acres, more or less, which were assessed to pay \$375,000 for constructing the whole length, with interest, if sold by public auction, would not pay the amount levied upon them. No relief was obtained, however, until 1882, when the legislature passed a law, laying two-thirds of the amount to be raised upon the county of Kings, and the other third upon the property benefited. This gave general satisfaction, and the people, glad to be freed from this overshadowing burden, gladly paid the one-third cost which was levied upon them. The amended act of 1872, section 11, reads as follows: "After the said avenue shall have been opened, the said avenue, together with the court-yards fronting thereon, shall be under the exclusive charge and man-

agement of the said Park Commissioners, and they shall make and enforce rules and regulations for the proper use thereof, * * * its subsequent maintenance shall be a charge upon the city of Brooklyn," &c. In accordance with this provision, in March, 1883, the Park Commissioners passed a law compelling heavy wagons to leave the center-drive for the side-roads, but a strong police-force will be necessary to carry it into effect. Notwithstanding its great width and three drives, it is hardly too wide to accommodate the vast number of carriages that throng it every pleasant summer afternoon. The common verdict is, that no finer drive of its length can be found in this country.

The same session of the legislature which passed the Ocean Parkway act, passed another, appointing commissioners for laying out streets and mapping the towns of Kings county. In 1870 this commission began active operations, and completed the work in about three years. Consequently we find our town covered with streets and avenues on the county map, in many instances sorely conflicting with the existing order of streets. To meet the present pressing demand for building-lots, many land-owners have opened these legalized streets upon their property; and others are opening streets which suit the situation of their land, without regard to the county survey. So we expect it will continue until all our farming-land is turned into building-lots, and we become a constituent part of what is destined to be the largest city in the world.

Post-Offices.—Previous to the year 1842 all mail matter intended for Gravesend was sent to the Flatbush post-office, and from there obtained by individuals, as best they could. It was considered, in those days, a neighborly duty for any one who happened to pass the office to call for the letters intended for his neighborhood, and see that they were delivered at his earliest convenience. Sometimes, however, the stage-driver was pressed into the service and made to do extra duty as postman. In the same manner, also, letters were taken to Flatbush to be mailed.

The probability is that few letters were written or received in Gravesend for the first 200 years. The people lived mainly within themselves. They married mostly among their own relatives and towns-people, and quietly settled down where they were born, very few having relatives more than a day's journey from their homes; and, since their business was mostly done in Brooklyn or New York, they had very little occasion to communicate by letter with the outside world. But the time at length came when a larger correspondence became necessary, and when this slow and often uncertain means of communicating with the post-office became very irksome to the people.

Therefore, in the year 1843, upon petition of the people, and through the influence of the late Henry C. Murphy, who was then serving his first term in Congress, a post-office was established at Gravesend, and

Mr. Martin Schoonmaker was appointed the first post-master, keeping the office in his store, next to the Reformed church, on Gravesend avenue. After serving as post-master ten or twelve years, he resigned, and Mr. Gilbert Hicks, then a young man, was appointed to succeed him, July 12, 1854.

Mr. Hicks retained the office for several years, when he removed to Flatbush, and was for many years, till 1882, the able and faithful post-master of that village. Mr. John Bergen, then the village merchant, succeeded Mr. Hicks. He continued in office until July 16, 1869, when Dr. R. L. Van Kleeck was installed as his successor, and still holds the position.

It speaks well for the popularity of Dr. Van Kleeck, that, being a pronounced democrat in politics, he was yet appointed by, and has so long retained his position under, a republican administration, having now entered upon his fourteenth official year. During his term of service the business and efficiency of the office have been largely increased. It is now doing a thriving business, especially in summer, owing to the large number of summer-residents.

In 1800 another post-office was established in town at "Hotel Brighton," on Brighton Beach; but this was discontinued after a trial of one season. A system of lamp-post boxes was established at the same time, confined wholly to the Coney Island district, and this still continues in operation. The letters are regularly collected and distributed daily by a city carrier. For this purpose the post-office department appropriates \$600 annually. The whole arrangement is under the immediate supervision of the Brooklyn Post-Office.

A third post-office has also been established in the eastern part of the town, in the flourishing village of Sheepshead Bay. There has been here such rapid growth in population, within the last three or four years, that the distance of a mile and a half to the Gravesend Post-Office seemed an unnecessary tax upon their time and patience, and so a post-office in this village became a public necessity. Consequently their petition for one was favorably considered, and, in July, 1882, Dr. James F. Morgan was appointed first post-master.

Public Schools.—Whatever interest may have attached to the subject of education, and however important it may have appeared to the early settlers, their advantages in this direction were necessarily limited for many years, owing to the difficulties presented by the unsettled condition of things around them. It is fair to presume, however, that when the increase in population made such a step necessary, they met the wants of the rising generation with such facilities for learning as the needs of the hour required, and their circumstances would permit.

However, it was not until about eighty years after the first settlement of the town that we find any definite attempt to establish a permanent public-school system. Then, a joint stock company of nineteen per-

sons was formed, and an acre of ground purchased, with a house already upon it, to be devoted exclusively and forever to public instruction. We have before us the original deed of this house and ground, found among the old town-papers.

Its date and heading are as follows :

"The eighth day of April, in the first year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord, George the Second, and in the year of our Lord seventeen hundred and twenty-eight." It was given by Jacobus Emans, and was signed, sealed and delivered, in the presence of Aaron Emans and Samuel Hubbard, as witnesses.

This deed describes the property as "one house and two garden spots," and is given to the "freeholders and inhabitants of Gravesend, whose names are signed upon the back side hereof, to be used and employed to the use of a school by the owners thereof at all times forever hereafter, and for no other use or employment whatsoever."

It bounds the property "on the south by Nicholas Williamson, on the north by highway, west by highway, and east by the common yard, containing one acre, be it more or less."

The "common yard" was an acre in the center of each square, to which reference has already been made, where the cattle of the settlers were herded for the night for safe-keeping. A gate opened into this "common yard" from the rear of each dwelling, for the greater convenience of the house-holders.

The boundary of this school-lot fixes its precise location where the town-hall now stands. On the back of this venerable document are the names of the nineteen purchasers, with the sum each was to pay as his proportion. Attached to it is the following memorandum : "Eighth day of April, anno 1728, memorandum that the persons whose names are hereinunder signed, are the owners of the within-named house and garden-spots, each one to have Right according to the value of money he hath paid, as doth appear in proportion as is hereinunder noted down." The consideration in this transfer was £19.

This school-house accommodated the town for sixty years; when, in 1788, a new and larger building was erected upon the same site. It was a low, one-story wooden structure about 25x35 feet, without the slightest attempt at architectural display, and has been, until within a few years, a familiar landmark of the town. The date of its erection is ascertained from the following receipts in the town-clerk's office. The first is as follows : "Received, Gravesend, 27 Aug. 1788, of Roger Strong thirty-six shillings and three pence, in full, for the freight of boards, shingles, &c., bought for the school-house in said town, per me, John West." The second is dated in January of the following year, and is for work done on the new school-house : "Received, New Utrecht, 15 Jan. 1789, of Capt. Isaac Denyse, fourteen shillings and sixpence in full for

work done to Gravesend school-house, per me, Johannes Johnson."

This building is still in existence ; it was used for a school-house for about fifty years, when a new site was purchased and a new house erected. It was then, by common consent, turned into a town-hall, where the public business of the town was transacted ; although this, as we have seen, was in direct violation of the provisions of the original deed. It continued to serve this purpose for about thirty-five years longer, when it was considered too small and mean in appearance to serve the needs of a rapidly-growing town. Thus it stood on one of the most public sites in all the town, a familiar object to the eyes of nearly three generations. The *whipping-post* and *public stocks*, which formerly stood beside it, had long since disappeared, leaving the old building alone to tell the story of the past.

However, in the year 1873 the old house was sold to give place to the present large and commodious town-hall, and it was purchased at public sale by Charles M. Ryder for \$26.50 ; moved to his property near by, and fitted for a tenement-house. And thus keeping, for the most part, its old outward form and appearance, after almost a hundred years, we find it still doing faithful service in furnishing shelter to this remote generation.

In 1838, as before mentioned, a new school-site was purchased of Cornelius Emans, on the north-west side of the town-square, and a new school-house erected better suited to the needs of the district. In 1874 it was enlarged by the addition of a wing, to be used for a primary-department. Thus stands *District No. 1* to-day, with a good school-building, a primary and grammar-department, two teachers, and a large number of scholars.

Teachers.—The following list is taken from the old records, supplemented by the memory of several of the oldest inhabitants, and the names given as nearly as possible in the order of their service.

Messrs. Proctor ; Garahan ; Barnardus C. Lake ; Patrick Noonan ; Benj. Mercer ; David Turnbull ; Johnson ; Abram Emmans ; John Wyckoff ; Charles Goodrich ; Richard Kyles ; Dr. C. H. Schnoppes ; James M. Fulton ; Spafford ; Brown ; Pillings ; Geo. Berget ; Norton ; Edward Benjamin ; Rowell ; Requay ; Bates ; Wm. H. Stillwell ; Andrew Hegeman ; Gilbert H. Wickham ; Le Grand Payne.

Assistant Teachers were Miss Aletta Ditmars and Miss Nellie Storm.

Judge Wickham was for 21 years the faithful teacher of this school, until the close of 1876, when he resigned to take the position of Associate Justice of the Court of Sessions. In 1877 Mr. Payne became principal, with Miss Storm as assistant, and they still retain their positions.

District No. 2.—In 1811 it became necessary, for the greater convenience of the spreading population, to divide the district, or create a new one in the eastern part

of the town. Accordingly the residents in that neighborhood combined together for the erection of a new school-house. Land was purchased of Mr. Isaac Denyse; a building erected 18x30 feet, and paid for by subscription. In 1847, to meet the demand for more room, an addition of 10 feet was made to the length of the house, at a cost of some \$200, making a long, low building, uninviting in external appearance, and very gloomy within. Therefore, one row of seats only was made next to and facing the wall; thus enabling the pupil to give his undivided attention to his studies; while at the same time it afforded the teacher the opportunity to keep, unobserved, a watchful eye over those who were more inclined to be mischievous than studious. This old building continued to serve the purpose of a school-house till 1879, when it was abandoned for the new one.

The deed of the lot was made out in the name of Mr. John S. Garretson, and it remains in possession of his heirs to-day.

In 1879 a new site was purchased on Ocean avenue, and a large and convenient school-house built, which does credit to the district. It is a two-story wooden building, 35x55 feet, well painted, and kept in good repair. Jacobus Voorhees was the architect and builder. Its cost was \$2,700. *Teachers* of this school, from the beginning, have been Messrs. John D. Watkins; Martin; Mercer; Benson; John S. Fulton; Isaac S. Perry; R. H. Stanton; Joulon; Gorman; Edmund Williams; W. H. Stillwell; Kelley; P. D. Voorhees; B. F. Ladd; Rev. Charles Battersby; William Vradenburgh; Brown; Rev. J. H. Battersby; John B. France; A. H. Battersby; Johannes Kouwenhoven and Edward Bennett. The two latter are now in charge of the school.

Districts No. 3 and 4. Application was made October 25th, 1870, for a division of District No. 1, and the establishment of a separate district in the village of Unionville; and also, at the same time, for a division of District No. 2, and a new school opened at Sheepshead Bay. Mr. Voorhees Overbaugh, who was then school-commissioner, granted the application and set off from District No. 1, the Unionville District, called No. 3.

A neat one-story school-house was at once built in a cedar-grove, and for the past twelve years has been in a flourishing condition. The names of the teachers are as follows: A. Ketcham; Reynolds; Miss Addie Sinderin; Miss Elizabeth Campbell; Wm. Span; Miss Maggie Thompson; Miss Kate Voorhees; Benjamin Wallace, and Miss Cora Morris—the two last named now in charge of the school.

In the same year Mr. Overbaugh divided District No. 2, making a new one at Sheepshead Bay, called No. 4. The old M. E. church building was purchased October 31st, 1870, by the new trustees, and a school immediately started. This arrangement continued until the year 1878, when (October 1st) a new one-story

building was completed on a new site upon the same avenue. This house was neat in appearance, and ample for the accommodation of the district. The trustees, by a system of wise economy, while maintaining a first-grade school, at the same time have saved money enough from the annual town-allowance, and the State money, to pay every dollar of their indebtedness for the new house, without tax upon the district. The following teachers have been here employed: Rev. Mr. Morris; Rev. J. H. Battersby; John B. France, and the present teacher, Isaac McKane.

District No. 5. In 1874 a branch school from District No. 1, and under the care of the trustees, was established at Coney Island, and an extra allowance of \$500 was made to the district for its support. The school was first held in the little Union Chapel, formerly built for religious services, but which at this time was unoccupied. In 1876 the town appropriated \$500 for its purchase, which was accordingly done. In 1878 application was made by the residents of Coney Island to be set off as a district by themselves. The application was granted by the school-commissioner, C. Warren Hamilton. They immediately elected trustees from their own number, and took matters into their own hands. The chapel continued to be used for school purposes until the year 1882. In the early part of this year a beautiful two-story house was erected, with blinds and a handsome cupola, at a cost of some \$8,000. The work was done by our enterprising builder and town supervisor, John Y. McKane. This is one of the largest and finest school-buildings in town.

District No. 6.—About the same time another school was started in South Greenfield, the northern part of the town, as a branch of District No. 2, and \$500 were annually appropriated to carry on the work. In 1878 or 1879 this portion of the town was, upon application, set off from District No. 2, and assumed the dignity of a school-district, known as No. 6. The trustees very soon built a fine, two-story brick school-house, which, from an architectural point of view, is, without doubt, the handsomest public building we have in town. The cost, when furnished, will probably not be less than \$10,000. Owing, however, to what would seem to be a most unjust and foolish opposition on the part of a portion of the district, the new school-house remains empty and useless; while the scholars are crowded into a small, ill-ventilated building, which would better become the enterprise and finances of two hundred years ago.

Mrs. Jane Wise was the first teacher, followed by Mr. Thomas Taylor, and he in turn by the present teacher.

Several *private schools* have been, from time to time, established, which have fulfilled their mission and passed into history. There are now, at least, two flourishing private schools for younger children, in addition to the six school-districts to which attention has been given.

The salary of the teachers was formerly raised by a direct tax upon each scholar, in addition to the State allowance. In 1860, however, we learn that a portion of the money received for liquor licenses was devoted to school purposes. But, after a time, this money was applied to the support of the Inebriates Home, at Bath; and from that time a portion of the town revenue, arising from the rental of the common lands at Coney Island, has been annually set apart for this worthy purpose. One thousand dollars is the annual allowance to each school-district, a sum which, in the aggregate, if wisely used, would be sufficient to meet our present needs.

Despite its financial advantages, the educational interests of Gravesend have not kept pace with the growth and importance of the town. No town in Kings county can offer a finer location or better inducements for an institution of a high order than Gravesend. And yet, there is neither academy or high-school of any grade above the common district-school. The revenue of Coney Island should, in the hands of honest commissioners, furnish ample means for a most liberal endowment of such an institution, without a dollar of tax upon the people, as is necessarily and willingly done in other towns, where no such resources are available.

Revolutionary Incidents.—The landing of the British forces, August 22, 1776, was made at Gravesend Bay, within a mile of the village; through which passed the column under Lord Cornwallis, towards Flatbush. An encampment was made by a British detachment, on the march thither, in the large farm-yard of Joost Stillwell, now owned by his grandson, Nicholas R. Stillwell. The old homestead of that day still remains in good preservation. In the disastrous battle of L. I., on the 27th, there were a number of Gravesend men among the soldiers who were surrounded by General Clinton's flanking movement, but their acquaintance with the hills and woods enabled them to escape safely to their homes within a day or two after. Nicholas Stillwell, Rutger Stillwell, Barnardus Ryder, Peter Williamson, Stephen Donly and John Voorhees, were active patriots during those days.

During the British occupation of Kings county, which followed the battle of Long Island, the people of Gravesend were much troubled by lawless Tories, or "plunderers" as they were called, who made frequent marauding forages upon the farms of the villagers. One of these expeditions was defeated by the vigilance of a young maiden, Altje Stillwell (afterwards the grandmother of Mr. Jacobus Lake), who displayed a signal light; and the villagers, rallying, gave the Tories such a warm reception that they fled in dismay, leaving one of their number dangerously wounded. He concealed himself among the drift on the shore at Fort Hamilton until morning, when a farmer going to the shore for drift found him, and, pitying his suffering condition, took him home, and concealed him in his own

barn till he was able to be taken to the English camp.

On another occasion Mr. Court Lake discovered an English soldier coming from the Old Mill—the ruins of which may now be seen—carrying a bag of meal, which he had stolen. In attempting to stop him by force, a hand-to-hand encounter took place, in which, at length, both fell to the ground, with the soldier uppermost. The latter drew from his pocket a large knife, which he attempted to open with one hand and his teeth. Mr. Lake, by a desperate effort, threw the soldier from him and gained his feet. Then, seizing the enemy's gun, which had fallen near by, he quickly fired. The charge entered the soldier's neck, making a terrible wound. Mr. Lake at once informed the nearest neighbor, by the name of Turnbull, who came with his wagon and took the wounded man to his own camp within the English lines. Whether the shot proved fatal or not, Mr. Lake was never able to learn.

There are still extant, among the town-records, two old papers, one of which is dated in 1778, and reads as follows: "A return of the officers and an exact Acct. of what every Inhabitant of Gravesend has against each officer, for his Board at six shillings N. Y. currency, and weeks from the time they were Billited until the 31 day of March, 1778, inclusive." It gives the name of each officer, his rank, time billeted, name of the inhabitant where quartered, time he had been there and amount due. In this "Return" we find the names of eighty-eight officers, in rank from ensign to captain, and the names of thirty inhabitants where they were boarding. Some of the officers were charged with over a year's board. It is signed by Joost Stillwell, Captain.

A similar paper, dated 1782, reads as follows: "A list of the money due the Inhabitants of the township of Gravesend for the Boarding of Continentals and other officers, Prisoners, and some friends, as will hereunto appear by the following accounts. Gravesend, July 13, 1782." Only forty officers are mentioned in this paper, and about the same number of inhabitants as before. The board of these officers eventually become a State charge; as we find that in August, 1790, Congress voted \$38,000 "towards payment of persons in Kings County for subsisting American prisoners during the late war."

During the Revolutionary war the rebel freebooters, Heyler and Marriner, were a terror to the Tories in the neighborhood of New York, and doubtless rendered material aid to the American cause, on many occasions, although we would not attempt to justify their mode of procedure.

Heyler's most brilliant exploit was the capture of a British sloop-of-war, of 20 tons, off Coney Island. He had only two whale-boats, but, spying the sloop lying quietly at anchor in a secure place, as they supposed, he sent one boat to reconnoitre. They found the officers careless and playing cards in the cabin, and with no

watch set. The other boat being signalled to, came up. Capt. Heyler and his men boarded the sloop from both sides, taking them all prisoners without loss of life, and even without resistance. A few articles were removed and the ship fired. There were on board \$40,000, with many valuable articles, all of which were lost. It is said that the captain of the ship, while being conveyed a prisoner to the American head-quarters, loudly lamented his folly and carelessness. These facts rest on the authority of Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, who received them direct from one of Heyler's men.

After the war was over, the farmers were obliged to appear before the Governor at Albany and prove their loyalty to the Colonial government, before they could retain their lands; or, pay a certain sum of money to keep them. Samuel Stryker, of this town, whose farm lay west of the village, started for Albany for this purpose (as related by his great-grandson), but was taken at Poughkeepsie with a severe attack of typhoid fever. Before he had sufficiently recovered, to be able to give the matter his attention, the appointed time for proving his loyalty had passed, and the consequence was he had to pay twice for his farm. Though afterwards assured by competent legal authority that he could recover, under the circumstances, he never made the attempt.

In the year 1789, on Tuesday, October 20, as we learn from his private diary, General Washington visited Gravesend on his general tour of inspection throughout Long Island. He stopped in the center of the town-square, near the school-house, where the town-hall now stands; and the school-children were all dismissed that they might pay their respects to His Excellency the President of the United States. Mr. Coert Lake was one of those fortunate enough to shake hands with him; an honor which he never forgot, and which he was always proud to relate to his children and grandchildren.

Several Hessian soldiers remained after the war was over, married and settled in Gravesend, and made honest and respectable citizens.

War of 1812.—There were also several residents of Gravesend actively engaged in the War of 1812, some of whom lived to a great age, and have but lately passed away. The last one, Evert Stellenwerf, died March, 1883, having reached the ripe age of 97 years.

The following is a partial list, probably including nearly all, of those who served in the War of 1812: Richard Stillwell; Nicholas Stillwell; Rutgert Stillwell; Rutgert Stillwell, 2d; Garret Williamson; Isaac Van Dyck; Henry Van Dyck; John Donly; Rem Van Cleef; Coert Lake; Hendrick Van Cleef; Evert Stellenwerf; Stephen Ryder. "Aunt Katie Ryder," widow of the last-mentioned, Stephen Ryder, was buried April 29, 1883, having reached her 93d year. She regularly drew her husband's pension for services in this war up to the present year. And now, so far as this town is

concerned, there is no living connecting link between the present generation and the War of 1812.

Some amusing anecdotes are told of camp-life in Brooklyn. The soldiers had looked with envious eyes, for some time, upon a flock of geese which pastured near their camp, and longed for a change of diet from the common soldier's fare. So, one day, a man named Conklin, full of fun and fruitful in expedients, procured a fish-hook, to which he attached a strong cord; having baited well the hook, he sallied forth among the flock, trailing his baited hook. The old gander of the flock, seeing the rare opportunity for a relish, embraced it without unnecessary delay. His object accomplished, Conklin started upon a run for the camp; the gander following, with out-spread wings, at an equal pace. An old lady, near by, seeing the man running and the goose in full chase, but not observing the strong attractive power which compelled the following, cried after him: "Don't be afraid, my good man, he won't hurt you!" Although thus kindly assured of his safety, the soldier continued to flee and the goose to pursue, until both disappeared in the camp.

In our late Civil War the town furnished her full quota of men, either by enlistment or by furnishing substitutes, as the law provided.

In the year 1700 we find, in the list of officers of the State militia, the following: "Of ye foot Company in ye town of Gravesend, John Lokes, Capt. Chr. Bemoyns, Lieut. Albert Coerten, Ensign."

Miscellaneous.—An obituary notice from one of the Brooklyn papers of sixty years ago read thus:

"Died in Gravesend Aug. 23, 1823, Rutgert Stillwell, aged 78. It is a remarkable fact that he has not been off his own farm in more than 40 years. No persuasion or inducement could move his resolution in this particular, which is supposed to have been caused, in the first instance, by some hasty determination. He was a bachelor, and devoted much of his time to reading and study; possessing a strong mind and memory singularly retentive, so much so as to be often consulted in doubtful cases. He was pleasant in manner, very fond of company and conversation, and apparently as well acquainted with the city and country in his neighborhood as if he had really visited them."

This statement has been authenticated by relatives now living.

Church History.—The oldest and most prominent church in town is the Reformed (Dutch) church, located in the village, on one of the town-squares. Its early history is somewhat obscure, and historians widely differ in their opinion as to the date of its organization.

Dr. Corwin, in his *Manual of the Reformed Church*, covering the period between 1628 and 1878, puts the date as far back as 1655. But, from the data before us, we cannot accept such a conclusion.

After much careful research, we have been unable to find anything which would warrant more than a mere inference of its possibility. On the contrary, there is sufficient evidence, amounting to a very strong proba-

bility, that there was no regular organization until the latter part of the 18th century.

In the first place, as we have already seen, the early settlers of Gravesend were English; and, consequently, could not be supposed to have any special leaning towards the Dutch church. Indeed, if the early accounts we have of their religious belief be true, we must regard them as lacking some of the most essential elements of Dutch theology. In a report of the state of the churches in New Netherland, made to the Classis of Amsterdam in 1657, by Dominies Megapolensis and Drisius (*Doc. Hist.*, Vol. III., 1850), we find the religious condition of the Gravesend colony summed up as follows: "Those at Gravesend are reported Mennonists; yea, they, for the most part, reject Infant Baptism, the Sabbath, the office of Preacher, and the Teachers of God's word, saying that through these have come all sorts of contention into the world. Whenever they meet together the one or the other reads something to them." This, if it be a statement of fact, as no doubt it is, does not strongly favor the theory of a Dutch church in Gravesend at this early date.

We know, also, from other sources, that Lady Moody, while, perhaps, not denying the ordinance of infant baptism, was yet accused of denying that it was an ordinance of God. It was this that brought her in conflict with the Puritan religious sentiment of Massachusetts, and afterwards, for a time at least, somewhat disturbed her amicable relations with the Dutch authorities of New Netherland. We are well convinced, also, that there was a strong free-thinking or atheistic element among them, which doubtless prepared the way for Gravesend to become early one of the strongholds of Quakerism on Long Island. We do not suppose, as has been erroneously believed, that Lady Moody and her fellows settled Gravesend as a colony of Quakers; for George Fox, the founder of that body, had not yet entered upon his public ministry, nor did the order assume the dignity of an organized body until some years after this time. But, we may well believe, that their previous religious experience fitted them to take kindly to the peculiar principles of that society upon its first introduction among them.

We can find no record of this order in Gravesend before the year 1657. In August, of that year, an English vessel landed in New Netherland, having on board eleven Quaker preachers. While they scattered in different directions, it fell to the lot of Richard Hodgson and two companions, to come to Gravesend. His preaching here seems to have met with success, as he declares his testimony was received. This, according to Hodgson's journal, was the first Quaker meeting on record in America.

This visit of Friends to Gravesend seems to have created no disturbance; although the watchful Dutch Governor, Stuyvesant, was on the alert to detect such heresies. Six months after, however, John Tilton, the

town-clerk, was called to account for entertaining a Quakeress, a female preacher. He pleaded, however, that she got into his house in his absence; and he was permitted to go with simply a fine of £12 and cost of court. About a year after Hodgson landed, two other Friends, Cole and Thurston, came from Virginia. Gov. Stuyvesant had them arrested and sent to Staten Island, from whence they soon escaped, and came in an Indian canoe to Gravesend. Here, according to their own testimony, "they found some Friends in the truth, by whom they were much refreshed." They further state that "meetings were held at the house of Lady Moody, who managed all things with such prudence and observance of time and place as to give no offence to any person of another religion." Thus, in 1658, just before she died, Lady Moody seems to have adopted the peculiar tenets of the Friends.

In the following year, Mary Dyer and John Taylor made a tour of Long Island, and terminated their journey at Gravesend. From this time, it has been said, this town became the "Mecca of Quakerism." In 1661 a Quaker meeting was held in Gravesend, and Gov. Stuyvesant sent his Sheriff, Waldron, to arrest the preacher. He, however, escaped, and left only his cloak, which the officer bore in triumph to the fort. Samuel Spicer was arrested for entertaining him, and fined £12 for his grievous offence. John Tilton and wife were again arrested, and, by sentence, banished for harboring Quakers. The sentence was probably never carried into effect; for, in two years, he was again called to account for the same thing.

The mother of Samuel Spicer was also arrested, and charged with trying to entice even young girls to join the Quakers.

Up to this point we can see no evidence of a Dutch church in town. Neither could they have had a minister, as appears from the following fact: An appeal was made, April 12, 1660, to Gov. Stuyvesant, probably by the few Dutch settlers who had come among them, for a minister, basing their appeal upon their great need of a religious teacher, "because the people led such Godless lives, on account of the diversity of religious opinions among them." Gov. Stuyvesant replied that measures would be taken at once to supply their spiritual need; but there is not the slightest evidence that he ever fulfilled his promise.

In 1672 Geo. Fox, while on his first visit to this country, came direct from Maryland to Gravesend. He says, in his journal, that after a long and tedious journey through the wilderness of Jersey, they came to the house of Richard Harthorn, at Middletown, in East Jersey. After a night's rest, Mr. Harthorn took them, horses and all, in his own boat, and set them upon Long Island. He continues: "That night we got to friends at Gravesend, with whom we tarried that night, and then, with some friends from Gravesend, started next day for half-year's meeting at Oyster Bay." After vis-

iting Rhode Island, he returned again to Long Island. He says: "we passed from Flushing to Gravesend, where we had three precious meetings." This was in the latter part of July, 1672. Up to this time there is no evidence whatever that there was a Dutch church, or any other, in town.

From 1677 to 1684 the records of the Flatbush church, the oldest Dutch church on Long Island, give, in unbroken line, the election of elders and deacons for the four Dutch churches of Kings county—Flatbush, Flatlands, New Utrecht and Brooklyn—and mention no other church. Had there been, at this time, a church at Gravesend, it would certainly have been mentioned. In a census of Kings county, dated 1698, in a list of 31 freeholders in Gravesend, we find that nearly two-thirds of all, or 19 out of 31, are represented as English. This fact militates somewhat against the theory of a Dutch church at this time.

We furthermore learn that, even in 1704, there were still but the four Dutch churches above mentioned in Kings county, from the following report on the state of the Church of England in the province of New York, as laid before the clergy convened at New York, October 5th, 1704, by appointment of Lord Cornbury. In reference to Long Island, the report says: "Kings county, consisting of *four* Dutch congregations, supplied formerly by one Dutch minister, but now without any, by the death of the late incumbent (Dominie Lupardus); they are sometimes supplied by the Rev. Mr. Vesey (rector of Trinity, New York), when he finds all the English, and some of the Dutch, well affected to the Church of England."

The English settlers in Gravesend may therefore have availed themselves, occasionally, of the services of Rev. Mr. Vesey; but up to this time, 1704, we are satisfied there was no Dutch church, or stated preaching, in town.

Two years after this, however, they began to hold regular services under the ministry of Dominies Freeman and Antonides, who were then acting (though not in harmony) as pastors of the Dutch churches of Kings county. These services continued from 1706 to 1741.

As evidence of this, we have found, on a detached fly-leaf of one of our old church books of record, the following entry made by Abram I. Labagh, who became pastor of the church in 1842. He there states that "receipts for Dominie's salary, most of them mentioning Mr. Freeman's name as minister, are preserved from May 13, 1706, in unbroken succession, down to December 25, 1714." Since this latter date, the receipts are in the names of Revs. Freeman and Antonides, and reach to July 1st, 1741. Mr. Labagh further states that, among the old papers of the church, has been found one in the words following:

"Know all men by these presents, that, we the Inhabitants of the Town of Gravesend, in Kings County, on the Island of Nassau, here underwritten, do nominate, constitute

and appoint John Lake and John Simonson Elders of said town, and by these presents have nominated, constituted and appointed the said John Lake and John Simonson to compound a league with Mr. Cornelius Van Brunt and Mr. Peter Cortelyou, deputies of the town of New Utrecht, for the third part of all their divine service, which they have or shall have of Mr. Freeman and Mr. Antonides, ministers of the Gospel of Jesus Christ; that is to have the said services in our said town of Gravesend, and as the said inhabitants, do promise and engage ourselves to hold for good faith, what said Elders shall do in agreeing for said service, and other considerations in the town's behalf, and for benefit of said ministers; and we promise to perform every article or articles as the said Elders shall conclude of with said deputies. In witness our hand the 4th day of January, anno 1714."

Signed:

Samuel Gerritsen, Cornelius Van Cleef, Daniel Griggs, Stephen Corten, Ferdinand Van Sicklin, Jan. Ryder, Nicholas Williamsen, Thomas Stillwell, Benj. Griggs, Barent Jansen, Seger Gerretson, Jan. Lucasson, Wm. Williamson, Adam Nickelson, Samuel Polings, Bernardus Ryder."

These papers, above referred to, were long ago lost or destroyed, as they can now nowhere be found among any of the church papers, and all we have to show is the copy above given.

But these facts prove two things, *first*, that regular divine service began to be held in Gravesend in 1706; and *second*, that in 1714 a formal arrangement was entered into, between the *inhabitants* of Gravesend and the officers of the church of New Utrecht, for one-third of the regular services of the two Dutch ministers on Long Island. The question now arises, had they a church building at this time; or, did they hold their services in private houses after the manner of the Quakers? Our theory is, that, about the time they began their regular church services, they also erected their first house of worship. We know that, in 1720, a church building was already in existence. We are indebted to Judge William H. Stillwell for the discovery of an old deed (*rec.* in the Kings county Register's office), dated June 25, 1720, whereby Samuel Poling conveyed to Thomas Stillwell, among other property, "two garden spots, bounded northerly by land of Thomas Stillwell, and southerly by *ground whereon the meeting-house stands*. East by the highway, and west by the common yard and the street leading to the common yard." He also sells "*one right* in the meeting-house and ground."

It is clearly evident, therefore, that a building existed at this time, and the strong probability is that it was built about the time regular preaching began. The description of the above property fixes the precise location of the first Dutch church upon the property now belonging to that body, and occupied by the present lecture-room. The location of the church property, therefore, has never been changed since it was first purchased, although it has been since somewhat enlarged. Consequently, the theory that the first house of worship was moved, after it was built, to the site of the present church, we consider untenable.

We further conclude there was no church organization until more than 50 years after regular preaching began. The grounds for this conclusion are as follows:

First. The authority granted in 1714 to John Lake and John Simonson, as we have seen, to negotiate with Cornelius Van Brunt and Peter Cortelyou, elders of the New Utrecht church for the services of Dominies Freeman and Antonides, was given by sixteen of the *inhabitants* of Gravesend. Now, had there been an organized church here at this time, this arrangement would have been the legitimate work of the consistory, and not of the inhabitants of the town.

Secondly. The old deed of 1720, above referred to, evidences that the church building then standing did not belong to a corporate body, as would be likely, had there been a church organization, but to private individuals; else how could Samuel Poling sell to Thomas Stillwell "*one right* in the meeting-house and ground."

Thirdly. In the oldest record we have of the Gravesend church, we find entered, under the heading of "Communicants," June 27, 1763, the names of 21 members, 15 male and 6 female. In another part of the same book, and under the same date, we find the names of 3 elders and 3 deacons elected. These entries are the first indication we can anywhere find of either consistory or communicants.

We consider it, therefore, a warrantable conclusion, that 1763 is the date of the regular church organization. It is true that the names of baptized children began to be entered upon the record in 1714, the date of the New Utrecht compact; but, beside this, there is no record of any kind till the date we have supposed to be that of the formal organization of the church in 1763; and from this time the list of communicants, and that of elders and deacons, continues unbroken to the present day.

The old church record was kept in the Dutch language till about 1823, when it first began to be written in English.

A second church building was erected, most probably about the time the church was formed, in 1763. Judge Nicholas Stillwell, now advanced in age, tells us he well remembers hearing his uncle, Rutger Stillwell, speak of the building of the second church upon the site of the old one; and of its smaller dimensions. The circumstances connected with its erection were indelibly impressed upon his mind, from the fact that he was then a school-boy, and during intermission was accustomed to cross the street and watch the builders at their work. Mr. Stillwell was born in 1751; and, if the building was erected, as we have supposed it, in 1763, he would then be a school-boy of 12 years, just the age to be forcibly impressed with an event of this character.

We have been thus particular, because, hitherto, this whole matter has been involved in doubt and uncer-

tainty, and if the result of recent investigations can throw any light upon the subject, it will be heartily welcomed.

There are many still living who remember well the second house of worship, and who will recognize the following description: It was somewhat different from the ordinary style of church architecture among the Dutch of this date, viz., the round, or six, or eight-square style, which was most commonly adopted. This was oblong in shape, very low, with double-pitched roof, facing the south, and having double doors in the center. The sides, as well as the roof, were shingled, according to the custom of those days. The inside was ceiled, top and sides, with boards, and painted a dull, dingy brown. There was but one aisle, and this extended through the center of the church. In this aisle were two strong pillars supporting the roof, one of them only about 10 feet in front of the pulpit. A gallery crossed the south end, where, it is said, the young men were wont to congregate. Under the gallery, on the west side, were the *negro-quarters*, having the appearance of being fenced in, and belonging exclusively to them. In the north end of the church was the pulpit, a plain, octagonal, box-like structure, only large enough to accommodate one man at a time. Upon the building was a spire, which contained a belfry and bells; and over all, a weather-cock of burnished brass, no doubt to warn the devout worshippers against the sin of Peter. This old church, within the memory of those now living, was without stoves, or any other heating appliances. The women carried their foot-stoves, which, before service, they were very careful to fill at the nearest neighbor's; while the men were compelled to sit, during all the long service, with nothing to generate heat but the grand old Calvinistic preaching of the Dutch Dominie, or the anticipation of a warm dinner after the service was over.

In this church the celebrated Whitfield preached on two occasions while in this country. Mr. Rutger Stillwell, above mentioned, remembered hearing him, and the text he used on one occasion was from John xii: 32. "And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me."

This building continued to be used for worship until the close of the year 1833, when it gave place to the present edifice. The subject of building a new and more modern house of worship was first officially considered at a meeting of consistory, held Nov. 30, 1832, at the house of Elder George Suydam, in the first year of the pastorate of Rev. I. P. Labagh.

The consistory then appointed a committee consisting of Garret Stryker, Nicholas S. Williamson, and Samuel I. Garritsen, "to estimate the cost of a suitable house, and what, in their opinion, each individual ought to subscribe towards it." After various meetings in reference to it, and the appointment of several committees, it was finally resolved, at a meeting held Feb. 5,

1833, "to build a house 45x62 feet; to build it by day's work and not by contract; and that Henry Van Dyck should be the builder."

The above committee of estimate were appointed a building-committee, to take full charge of the whole matter, and draw upon the treasurer as necessity required. The sum of \$3,833 had already been raised among the congregation.

An effort was at first made to change the location, but the matter was finally settled by enlarging their present ground by the purchase of some adjoining land of Mr. C. A. Emans.

The third house of worship was completed near the close of 1833. The building-committee were appointed to take charge of the sale of the pews, and also, as soon as convenient, to procure a bell from the city of New York.

The pews were rated at \$6,550, but the subsequent sale realized \$8,062; so that this church began its history free from debt, and has so continued to the present day.

The first Sunday in January, 1834, was appointed for the dedication, and Rev. Dr. De Witt, of New York, was invited to preach the sermon.

The Consistory of the church at this time was composed of the following members: Rev. Isaac P. Labagh, *President*; Garrett Stryker, John S. Gerritsen, John S. Voorhees, Stephen Stryker, *Elders*; John Van Dyck, Samuel I. Gerritsen, Nicholas S. Williamson, Richard J. Stillwell, *Deacons*; Samuel G. Stryker, *Clerk*.

In 1849, in consequence of the cracking of the old bell, through the instrumentality of the ladies of the congregation a new one was procured, remarkable for its clear silvery tone. It can be heard for miles around, calling the devout to worship, and rebuking the great tide of Sabbath desecration which flows past it to the sea.

Although the present building is exceedingly plain in external appearance, yet its interior presents a pleasant, home-like attractiveness, which gives universal satisfaction.

Ministers.—The church was supplied, as we have seen, by Revs. Freeman and Antonides from 1705–41; Arondeous from 1741–6; and occasionally supplied by Van Sinderin from 1746–65. In 1767 Martinus Schoonmaker, who was two years before licensed to preach, became pastor of the church of Gravesend and Harlem. In the old church book are his half-yearly receipts for salary, written in Dutch, invariably given for seventeen pounds and ten shillings, making his yearly salary for Gravesend, £35. In 1783 he became pastor of the six Dutch churches in Kings county, and could then give this church only one Sabbath in six. In 1787 Rev. Peter Lowe became his colleague, and occasionally preached in Gravesend, and is now most affectionately remembered by some of our oldest inhabitants.

Dominie Schoonmaker preached in the Dutch language, Rev. Mr. Lowe in the English. In 1808 the collegiate arrangement between the churches of Kings county was dissolved; and each church carried on its own work in its own way. Dominie Schoonmaker continued to supply all the Dutch churches in the county, until he died, in 1824. Dominie John Bassett preached in Gravesend from 1811–24. In 1832 the church made a formal call upon Rev. Isaac P. Labagh, who accepted, and became the first settled resident pastor of this church. He was called at an annual salary of \$500. He remained till 1843, when he was succeeded by Rev. Abram I. Labagh, who had been pastor of the Reformed church at St. Thomas, W. I. He continued pastor for seventeen years. In 1859 Rev. M. G. Hansen, a recent graduate of Rutgers College (1856), and New Brunswick Seminary (1839), became pastor of the church. He resigned in 1871, and the pulpit was vacant for nearly a year.

In 1872 Rev. A. P. Stockwell, a graduate of Amherst College (1862), and Union Theological Seminary (in 1865), and at that time associate pastor of the Reformed church at Millbrook, Dutchess county, accepted a call to the pastorate of this church. He was installed February 29, 1872, and still remains pastor, having entered upon the twelfth year of his ministry to this people.

The financial condition of the church was never better than at present, 1883; with not a dollar of debt, and with \$500, a legacy recently left the church by Walter Nichols, Esq., of Jamaica, now in bank. The benevolent contributions for the past few years have also been largely in excess of any previous period of the same length in the history of the church.

The additions to the membership for the past eleven years have been about 125; and we are happy to say that the church at the present time shows a very united, prosperous and progressive condition.

Parsonage.—At a meeting of the consistory, held September 21, 1844, the question of building a parsonage was taken into consideration, and a resolution passed, that it was expedient to proceed forthwith to build, and a committee was appointed to find suitable location. At a subsequent meeting, held September 28, they reported in favor of two acres of land belonging to Mr. John I. Lake, which could be purchased for \$600. This report was adopted, and the committee granted full power to purchase. The old church building-committee were appointed to take charge of this work, and authorized to proceed at once to business.

The parsonage was to be built, like the church, by day's work, and Lawrence and Jacobus Ryder were appointed builders. The house was completed during this year—a substantial wooden-building, two stories and basement, and shows to-day the honest and thorough labor done upon it.

Chapels.—At a meeting of consistory, held June

13, 1853, Mr. John Bergen and Mr. John Lake were appointed a committee, with power to act in conjunction with the ladies of the congregation, in taking the necessary steps to secure a site and build a lecture-room in the village.

After much opposition, and a strong protest against it, on account of lack of space, the site was finally located on the church-grounds, and on the very spot where stood the first and second church-buildings. It was completed in 1854, a neat and comfortable house, about 25x45 feet. In 1879 a gallery was made across one end, and fitted up for an infant-class-room, having sliding-doors so arranged that the upper and lower rooms can be thrown into one, during the opening and closing exercises of the Sabbath-school.

In 1868 another lecture-room was built in the eastern district, in which to hold the sessions of the Sabbath-school of that neighborhood, the weekly prayer-meetings, and a monthly preaching-service. The land, 50x125 feet, was donated by Mr. Simon C. Gerritsen, and a neat building, 25x36 feet, was erected thereon.

James S. Voorhees was the builder, and the cost \$1,820.

The Sheepshead Bay M. E. Church was organized in 1840 with five or six members, at the house of Samuel Leonard. The first church-building was a small wooden edifice, costing about \$800, and erected in 1844, the lot being purchased in September of that year. It was afterwards sold to District No. 4, and used as a day-school until the erection of a new school-house. In 1869 the present church-building was erected on McKane avenue. It is a small frame-building like the first, with seating capacity for about 150 or 200 persons. The society, when first organized, was called the *Methodist Protestant Church*, and so continued till 1862, when it became the *Independent Methodist Church of Gravesend*. Rev. Charles Battersby was then the pastor. It retained this name for three years, and then became the *Methodist Episcopal Church*, which is its present status. The first superintendent of the Sabbath-school was Samuel Leonard. This office has been, for many years past, and is now, most creditably filled by Mr. John Y. McKane, supervisor of the town. The school numbers about fifty scholars, with 300 volumes in the library.

Regular *pastors*: Revs. Messrs. Russell; Stanciliff; Baker; Morris; C. Battersby; N. Orchard; Morris (second time); J. Henson; J. H. Battersby; J. Nelson; Fawcett; C. Backman; and the present pastor, C. W. Powell. During a part of this time the pulpit was supplied by local ministers, whose names are not recorded.

The present condition of the church may be considered favorable, and there is a movement already on foot to build a new church in a more suitable and convenient location.

The M. E. Church, at Unionville, was organized

in 1844, and the house of worship erected the same year. It is called "The Fisherman's Church." The name was taken from the fact that many fishermen, from farther east on Long Island, were accustomed to seek the quiet waters of Gravesend bay to spend the Sabbath; and to give these men a place and encouragement to worship on the Sabbath, seems to have been a strong inducement to build the church and give it its present name. The church was dedicated by Rev. Henry Chase, of the N. Y. East Conference, for many years pastor of the Mariner's church, in Rosevelt street, New York. The first pastor of the church was Lorenzo D. Nickerson, still living. He belonged to the circuit which included Unionville, two years before he joined Conference, and two after. He stands on the minutes as having charge of New Utrecht, which included the Unionville members, in 1844. The next year Fort Hamilton was substituted for New Utrecht.

The first superintendent of the Sunday-school was Mr. Randall, of Gravesend. It is a live church, entering heart and soul into every good work.

Pastors: 1846-7, E. O. Bates; 1848-9, J. D. Boutan; 1850, James McBride; 1851-2, Benjamin Redford; 1853-4, Edward K. Fanning; 1855-7, John F. Booth; 1858-9, William Wake; 1859-60, Ezra K. Miner; 1861-3, Robert Roberts; 1864-6, H. C. Glover; 1867-8, Wm. H. Russell; 1869-70, Lorenzo D. Nickerson (second time); 1871-2, Nicholas Orchard; 1873-5, Samuel A. Seaman; 1876-8, Alexander McAlister; 1879-81, Henry C. Glover (second time); 1882-3, Wm. H. Russell (second time).

Coney Island Chapel.—In the year 1868 a Sunday-school was started upon Coney Island, the first sessions being held in the basement of the Wyckoff hotel. The need of a more suitable place for holding their services soon became apparent; and a chapel was suggested, where both Sunday-school and preaching-services could be held. The idea was brought to the notice of Thomas Bell, Esq., of Parkville, a kind-hearted and liberal man, who at once seconded the suggestion; and, to make the enterprise an immediate success, offered to advance the money to begin operations without delay. Accordingly, Messrs. Wm. H. Stillwell, John S. Ryder, and Edmund Williams, were constituted a building-committee, and immediately set to work. Oscar D. Way received the contract for building the new chapel, at a cost of \$850; the bell, fencing, painting, etc., bringing the sum total up to \$1,250. Of this sum \$600 was raised among the people, and \$650 advanced by Mr. Bell. After a trial of six or seven years the enterprise was, for a time, abandoned, and the chapel sold to District No. 1 for a day-school. After a few years of suspended animation the Sunday-school has again revived, and now is prospering under the efficient superintendence of Mr. Peck. A larger and more commodious chapel is in process of erection in a much pleasanter part of the island, and the future of the

present movement seems brighter than ever before. In 1868 Mr. Bell was also instrumental in having another church built in the western part of the town, near Unionville, for the colored population, called *The African Zion M. E. Church*.

Catholic Churches.—About 1869 a Catholic church was erected at Sheepshead Bay. It is a frame edifice, and, externally, inviting in appearance. Father James McKiverton is the officiating priest. In 1880 another handsome Catholic church was erected at Coney Island. Both of these churches are well attended by the Catholic element of the community.

Thus we have, in all, seven churches in the town of Gravesend.

Cemeteries.—The oldest in Gravesend is the old town burying-ground, dating back very nearly, if not quite, to the early settlement of the town. It is situated nearly in the center of the south-west town square, and is for public use, being used mostly by the old inhabitants, whose families have for many years been buried there. Eventually it will, probably, cease to be used for burial-purposes; since many families now own lots in Greenwood, and the number is constantly increasing.

The earliest record we find, relating to this cemetery, is the recorded will of John Tilton, one of the early and prominent settlers of Gravesend, and for many years town-clerk. This will is dated Jan. 15, 1687, wherein he devises land in Gravesend for a burying-ground, "for all persons in ye everlasting truth of ye gospel as occasion serves, forever to have and to hold, and to make use of to bury their dead there."

This land is known to cover a part of the present burial-ground, as no other has been used for this purpose since the first settlement of the town. It is also probable that this land of John Tilton's was adjoining, and intended to enlarge, the original burying-ground.

Some of the slabs marking the resting-place of the quiet sleepers are very old. One rough stone bears, as near as we can read it, the date of 1676. Many of the old inscriptions are in Dutch. For example: "Hier Legt her Lichamran Ann Voorhes Vrou Barrent Voorhes, D. 1760." Some stones are also distinguished with a stanza of poetry, which speaks the usual hope for the dead, and warning to the living, which are common to the elegiac poetry of the present day. For example:

"Heere liyes the Body of Benjamin Steimeist. Born Oct. 13, 1702. Departed this life April 12, 1762.

"His flesh in hope
Rests in the dust;
His soul departing hence, we trust
Is praising God among the Just."

There is to be seen here, also, a common field-stone, hardly appearing above the ground, which Hon. Tunis G. Bergen thinks may probably mark the grave of Lady Moody.

Another burial-place in the north part of the town

was incorporated Sept. 7, 1850, under the name of *Washington Cemetery*. It contains 100 acres, or more than 10,000 lots, of 400 square feet each. It was founded by James Arlington Bennett, LL. D., to whom the land then belonged. It has become now almost exclusively a Jewish burying-ground. It is governed by a board of trustees, composed of six members, two of whom are elected annually. Henry D. Bennett, son of the founder, is the superintendent. Its situation is beautiful, fronting both upon Gravesend avenue on the west, and Ocean parkway on the east.

Libraries.—In addition to the Sunday-school libraries, which consist of a thousand or twelve hundred volumes, every school-district has a library of from two hundred to four hundred volumes, open to all residents of the districts, and replenished from year to year by money appropriated by the State.

In this connection it will be a matter of interest to look over the list of books contained in the library of Sir *Henry Moody*, while he was a resident of Gravesend. This library shows him to have been a man of extensive education for the time in which he lived. We give below the catalogue as we find it, in *Documentary History*, Vol. IV.

"A latyn Bible, in folio.

A written book in folio containing private matters of State.

A writtenth book in folio containing private matters of the King.

Seventeen several books of devinite matters.

A dictionarius Latin and English.

Sixteen several latin & Italian bookx of divers matters.

A book in folio containing the voage of Ferdinand Mendoz.

A book in folio Kolleth Sylva Sylvarum.

A book in quarto colth bartas' six days worck of the lord and translatt in English by Joshua Sylvester.

A book in quarto Kalleth the summe and substans of the Conference which it pleased his Excellent Majsti to have with the lords bishops &c. at Hampton Court contracteth by William Barlow.

A book in quarto Kalleth Ecclesiastica Interpretatio, or the Expositions upon the doubtful passages of the Seven Epistles callet Catholique and the Revelation collecteth by John Mayer.

Eleven several bookx more of divers substans.

The verification of his fathers Knights order given by King James.

Anno 1661."

Lodges.—A lodge of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows was organized February 2d, 1859. The meetings are held weekly. The present officers as follows: *Noble G.*, Abram E. Stillwell; *Vice G.*, G. H. Wickham; *Rec. Sec.*, Dr. R. L. Van Kleek; *Permanent Sec.*, Washington Willis; *Past Grand*, Edmund Williams.

Villages.—*Sheepshead Bay*. One of the most thriving villages on Long Island is Sheepshead Bay, situated in the south-east part of the town of Gravesend.

There are those now living who well remember when there was but one house, and that a small, inferior one, on any part of what is now Sheepshead Bay.

The quiet waters of the inlet offered a secure anchorage for the small fishing-craft so common along the shore of Long Island; and, consequently, the fishermen gradually congregated here in the generation past, built their humble homes and enjoyed a peaceful life, as they followed their profitable but dangerous occupation. The population increased but slowly at first, and for many years the village consisted of only a small cluster of houses.

Some fifty years ago, however, some of the old residents of Brooklyn and New York discovered that here was just the place to spend a hot summer-day, both for pleasure or for health; or to satisfy a craving appetite with a clam-chowder, or a regular fish-dinner. But, for all this, it continued for years its undisturbed slumber.

About 40 or 45 years ago a hotel was built, known as Tappan's hotel, justly celebrated ever since for its excellent accommodations and courteous treatment of guests. It has always been a favorite resort of those who sought the "abundance of the sea," every variety of which they could find here upon shortest notice. A few years later Linderman's Hotel was built, and soon found also a host of enthusiastic friends and visitors. The Washington House, formerly owned and kept by Mr. Hendrickson, is also among the oldest and best known. Another hotel, whose claim of celebrity should not be overlooked, stood formerly in the middle of what is now Ocean avenue; and was kept by the genial and hospitable host, well-known of late years in city and country by the familiar name of "Pop Fagan." This house was burned; and, in 1875, another, known as Delano's hotel, took its place. In 1862 Mrs. McMahon built a fine hotel, which was greatly enlarged and beautified in 1882. In 1868 Osborn's hotel was erected; and, in 1882, the Hotel Jerome, perhaps the finest hotel at the Bay. These hotels are now filled with summer-boarders, who find a most excellent tonic in the cooling sea-breeze, combined with the finest sea-bathing, boating and fishing, anywhere to be found.

Like other parts of the town, the Bay has grown wonderfully in popular favor within the last ten years. To those who visit the Bay but seldom, the changes noticeable, even in a short time, are perfectly surprising. Houses are building, new streets are opening, and the march of general improvements constantly advancing. The first marked advance of Sheepshead Bay in popularity, and increase of valuation, dates from the year 1877, when a farmer by the name of Emmer, owning a farm of some 50 acres near the Bay, died; and his widow had the farm surveyed, divided into building-lots, and sold by public auction. The following year a neighboring farm, owned by Daniel D. Stillwell, was also sold in the same manner. Building immediately began upon these lots, and now the whole hundred acres or more are nearly covered with dwelling-houses; and, since then, the few lots left unimproved have quadrupled in value.

Perhaps the finest and most fashionable part of Sheepshead Bay is what is called "Lincoln Beach," formerly low marshy ground, which, a few years ago, could not find a purchaser at \$100 an acre. It lies a little to the east of the village, and along the shore of the bay; having before it the beautiful Manhattan Beach, and, on the left, an uninterrupted ocean-view. The pioneer in building up and beautifying Lincoln Beach was Alanson Treadwell, Esq., the head of the celebrated clothing-house of Treadwell, Jarman & Slote, corner of Broadway and Chambers street, N. Y. His fondness for fishing and boating had frequently led him, during former summer-seasons, to visit Sheepshead Bay, where he could indulge, without limit, his favorite sport. With prophetic instinct he saw the future value of this unimproved low-ground as a place for summer-residences, provided a suitable outlay of money and labor should first be made. Consequently, in 1877, Mr. Treadwell purchased two building-lots for \$350 apiece, and began the work of filling in with soil to make a solid foundation for a summer-cottage. Never before had man dared to dispute with the ocean-tides the question of title to this property. Hence, there was many a shrug of the shoulders and shake of the head among the neighbors when they saw this rash and expensive work undertaken. It was, however, accomplished in due time, in spite of every obstacle, and a neat and very pleasant cottage erected upon one of the lots in the spring of 1878. This was the starting-point of an enterprise which has grown beyond all expectations. Other lots were soon bought by wealthy men, and handsome buildings erected, until now there are, lining the shore-front, ten or twelve beautiful cottages, costing from five to seven thousand dollars; and it has become the finest part of Sheepshead Bay.

To show the almost fabulous increase in value of this once nearly worthless marsh, we may cite the fact that one of the lots originally bought by Mr. Treadwell, he sold to his partner, for the purchase-price, \$350. This gentleman, after keeping the property four years, not wishing himself to build upon it, sold it, unimproved as he found it, for over \$6,000.

In 1880-1, the brothers, J. B. and Robert Voorhees, owners of two beautiful farms adjoining the village, began to sell lots for building-purposes, and also to erect fine houses themselves, which have found ready lease. This, also, has greatly added to the improvement of the place. There are now, probably, 200 or 250 houses where, a little more than a generation ago, there was but one. Mrs. Elizabeth Clute, a wealthy lady from New York, coming to the Bay for summer recreation, found it so delightful and healthful a place to live, that she has made it her permanent residence since 1877. She has done much for the place in building handsome houses, and otherwise creating much enthusiasm in village improvements. Her own residence, Manhattan Villa, is one of the finest in town.

John Y. McKane, our efficient and hard-working supervisor, is one of our most enterprising business-men, and resides here. Aside from his official duties, he has in his employ, as a builder, some 100 to 150 men, and is in constant demand, both in and out of town.

We would also mention the Lundy Bros., Corson Bros., John Miller, Mr. Teets, and many others, as enterprising business-men.

The village is connected, by foot-bridge, with Manhattan Beach; and contains a church, post-office, four stores, a meat-market, and also many hotels and excellent boarding-houses, where the finest fresh fish, clams, oysters, and every desirable kind of sea-food can be had in abundance. Two steam-railroads afford excellent communication with Coney Island, and also with New York and Brooklyn.

And thus our growth continues; and, we venture to say, that no village in Kings county can show a better record of material prosperity for the past few years, or brighter prospects of the future. With the great bridge uniting the two largest cities of America, now thrown open to the public; and the problem of rapid transit about to be solved, it is not rash to prophesy, for this part of Long Island, at no distant day, a future which will far eclipse the wildest dreams of its most enthusiastic inhabitant.

Unionville.—This village is built, partly, as we have before seen, on the site of the old bowery of the first patentee, Antony Jansen. There are some fifty houses along the shore of Gravesend Bay, overlooking Coney Island Point, and the beginning of "The Narrows."

There are several hotels, among the finest of which, for situation and royal hospitality, is the hotel of Capt. James Stillwell. Near by is also the ruin of the first tide grist-mill ever built in town, some 230 years ago. There is also a church, several stores, and a thriving lumber-yard, owned and run by A. & T. M. Hageman.

The fishing and boating here are most excellent, and it is a favorite resort for summer-boarders, who desire the full benefit of the sea-shore, combined with the quiet and rest of country-life.

Gunther's Steam Railroad furnishes quick and comfortable communication with the city. We predict for Unionville a future enlargement and importance, of which she need not be ashamed.

General History.—Until within the past ten years there has been very little variation in the history of the town. The population has slowly increased, and property has advanced in value little by little. The people have pursued the even tenor of their ways, and lived to a good old age.

The record of deeds and transfers of property has been made in the Register's office in Brooklyn since about 1707; and, hence, the town-records have been taken up generally with the reports of town-officers elected, and resolutions passed, which, for the most part, relate to Coney Island.

Supervisors.—The first recorded election of Supervisor took place in 1754, Samuel Gerritsen being the successful candidate. Since then the following gentlemen, among others, have filled the office with honor and ability, some of them for nearly or quite 20 years. John Terhune; Nicholas Stillwell; Samuel G. Stryker; B. I. Ryder; William Bennett; Jaques J. Stillwell; and John Y. McKane, at the present time President *pro tem.* of the Board of Kings county, an honor worthily bestowed. Others also have faithfully served, whose names are not now at hand.

Town-Clerks.—In the early history of the colony this office was the most important in the town. John Tilton was the first "clerk;" serving the town in this capacity for about twenty years. The names of Edward Brouse and Symon Lane also appear as filling, for a short time, this office. Will Goulding was also town-clerk for some twenty-two years; and John Emans for thirteen. Among many others we note the names of Samuel Hubbard; Samuel Gerritsen; and, more recently, Judge Nicholas Stillwell; Jacobus Lake, and the present clerk, John L. Voorhees. Mr. Stillwell held the office, without doubt, longer than any other man. For thirty-five years he carefully kept the town-records, in a clear, legible hand, and to-day is probably better versed in town-affairs than any man living. He served from 1835-70. He was also, for three years, Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, until this court was abolished; and, for six or seven years, Associate-Justice of the Kings county Court of Sessions.

Within the past ten years the town has advanced more in material prosperity than in the whole century preceding the last decade.

The popularity of Coney Island, and the millions expended there in fine hotels and other improvements, have brought the town at once into notoriety. Why this vast mine of wealth remained so long undeveloped is a mystery. The town received some benefit from Coney Island at least seventy-five years ago.

The first record we find of the appointment of commissioners of common lands is dated 1811, when, at a public town-meeting, it was resolved, that it would promote the interests of the town to lease Coney Island. According to this resolution, Nicholas Stillwell, Van Brunt Magaw and John Terhune were chosen commissioners for granting leases "upon such conditions and terms of years, as to them should seem fit, and the most to promote the interest of said town."

This speaks well for the honesty and good judgment of the first commissioners, and the confidence the town reposed in them.

Magistrates' Pew in Church.—In the early part of this century the town-justices, being the chief dignitaries, were honored, and, at the same time, encouraged, to attend divine-service on the Sabbath, by having a pew set apart for their special use. But in 1813, at a public town-meeting, it was "Resolved, to sell the

pew in church in said town, commonly called the justices' bench, by public auction." Stephen Stryker was declared the successful bidder.

Town-Hall.—Among public buildings we would not forget to mention the *town-hall*, built in 1873. In the second story is a large public hall, with stage, ante-rooms, &c. The first floor contains a court-room and room for public town business, and several smaller side-rooms for the use of town-officers; and in the basement are four cells for the confinement of criminals, which (in summer time) are generally well patronized.

Water Supply.—In January, 1880, an application was filed before the Town Water Board to form a "Water Works Co.," for the purpose of supplying the town with pure, fresh water. The board granted the franchise in May of the same year. The following persons form the company: C. W. Schofield; S. Richardson; Benj. Richardson; Benj. S. Stephens; J. A. Brainard; William Bennett and Harmanus B. Hubbard. The company have erected a large brick engine-house; a large iron water-tank, 75 feet high by 15 or 20 feet in diameter, and have sunk several fine wells on their property, near the Brighton Beach railroad. They have run a main to Sheepshead Bay and one to Coney Island; and it is hoped will soon, according to their promise, run another to the village of Gravesend.

The town, for the last few years, has had a hard, expensive and constant struggle to save any of her valuable common-lands from the hands of grasping corporations, which have already seized much of it for railroad purposes. What the future will develop in this direction yet remains to be seen.

One thing, however, is evident,—that the quiet slumber which this good old town has enjoyed for more than two hundred years, has at length been forcibly disturbed and broken up; and, with all her natural advantages, and the impetus she has already gained in the way of progress, we cannot help predicting for Gravesend a magnificent future.

Race-Courses.—Horse-racing on Long Island is said to have been first introduced by Gov. Nicoll, in 1665. The first course was at Hempstead Plains, and a piece of plate was the stake. The object, as set forth by the Governor, was to improve the stock, and encourage the breeding of superior animals. The sport was countenanced and continued by Gov. Lovelace, who, in 1669, authorized the inspectors of Hempstead to receive subscriptions for a sweepstakes. Gravesend seems to be specially favored (?) in this respect, there being no less than four race-courses in the town. The first one was the *Prospect Park Fair Grounds Association*, incorporated 1868, containing about 60 acres. A mile-track was made, and a large club house built near Gravesend avenue, which was afterwards moved to Ocean Parkway, when this magnificent avenue was opened through their ground.

The property has now come into the hands of the following gentlemen: George Powers; Samuel Payson; E. O. Read and Henry Dodge.

The club-house is in charge of the celebrated caterer, Hiram W. Howe.

About 1874, a half-mile track was built near Parkville, containing some 40 acres. The hotel was first erected on Coney Island avenue, at that time the principal thoroughfare to Coney Island. When the Ocean Parkway was opened it was removed to the latter avenue; and, after being to some extent remodelled, it now makes a fine appearance. After a few years of prosperity it ceased to be profitable as a race-course, and was consequently used for other sporting purposes. The property belongs to Ex-Mayor W. R. Grace of New York. The management of the concern has this year (1883) passed into the hands of the *New York and Brooklyn Driving Club*. William McMahon has charge of the hotel.

Coney Island Jockey Club.—In 1880, the Coney Island Jockey Club bought 100 acres of land, in what was commonly known as the "Neck Woods," at a cost of \$110,000. Subsequently they added about twenty acres more, at an expense of \$25,000, making the total cost of purchase about \$135,000. At great expense, all the trees not needed for shade or ornament were taken out by the roots, and the grounds were graded, seeded, and otherwise greatly beautified. A grand-stand was built, with solid, brick foundation, upon which rests a well-proportioned and highly ornate edifice. It has been handsomely painted; and, with the sloping, grassy lawn in front, presents altogether an attractive appearance. Its cost was nearly \$50,000. Everything about their vast grounds is kept in perfect order.

Spring and fall meetings, of ten days each, are held, and the most celebrated race-horses in the country are then put upon exhibition. This is the most fashionable resort of the kind in the vicinity of New York. Thousands of people are brought by railroads and carriages every day of the races, and it is said that as much as \$30,000 have been taken, as gate-money alone, during a single meeting. Their beautiful and extensive grounds are freely thrown open to the public, except during the racing-season, and a drive through them well repays the trouble.

It is a stock-company, and the present officers are: Leonard W. Jerome, President; Gen. Butterfield, Treasurer; J. G. K. Lawrence, Secretary.

The fourth course, that of the *Brighton Beach Fair Ground*, will be mentioned more particularly, in connection with Coney Island.

ADDENDA.

On pages 162 and 189, reference is made to a confirmatory deed given, in 1654, to the people of Gravesend, by the former Indian proprietors of Coney Island.

The following is the deed in question;

GRAVESEND, May the seventh, 1654. Certain Indians, viz., *Mattenoh*, *Sachemacko* [Sachem] of Niocko [Nyack] being demanded against a certain parcel of land, viz., a neck of land from Antonie Johnson's house southward and on Island called Conye Island, to whom it did belong unto, they did all declare that it was to their knowledge the right and true proper land of one *Guttaquoh*, and called by them Narrioch, that is to say, the Island; and the neck of land is called by them Manahanning, and in testimony of the premises have hereunto set their hands.

Sign: *Manahanning*
 Sign: *Narrioch*

The above sd quantitie of land being within the bounds and limits of the land granted by patent to certain patentees and inhabitants of Gravesend, by the late Gov. Kieft, the above said *Guttaquoh* doth, hereby, acknowledge and declare to have sold all his right, interest and claims to the above said quantities of land, called Narriockh and Manahanning, unto the honourable the lords Bewint Hebbers of the West India Company of the Chamber of Amsterdam, for the use, right and propertie of the above said patentees and inhabitants of Gravesend, as having received fifteen fathoms of sewan, two gunns, three pounds of powder, for, and in, consideration of the said land, of the said patentees and inhabitants and doe hereby by virtue hereof assigne, sell and make over all my right, title and interest unto the said land unto them, their heirs, executors, administrators and assigns to enjoy as their own proper land, together with all the meadow land and marsh land thereunto appertaining. In confirmation whereof I have hereunto set my hand the seventh of May 1654.

Guttaquoh

Subscribed and acknowledged in the presence of us

GEO. L. RIGHT. A. RANDELL.
 JNO. WILLSON. JUET, *Interpreter*.

The following deeds recorded in the office of the Secretary of State, at Albany, N. Y., also possess interest as touching materially on early Gravesend history.

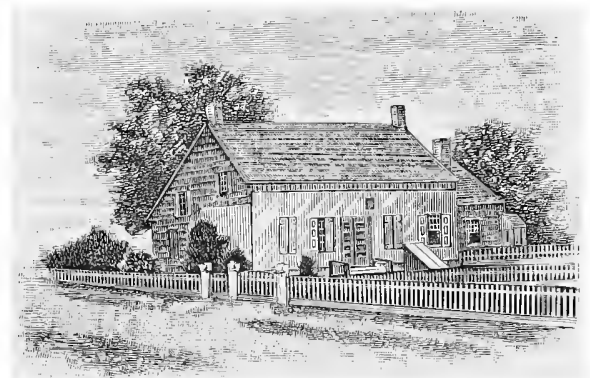
<i>Papomora</i> , Chief of ye Indians, To James Hubbard, John Bowne, John Tilton, Jr., Richard Stout, William Goulding and Samuel Spicer.	} Jan. 25, 1664. Lib. 3, page 1.
<i>Taplavappammund</i> , <i>Mattamahickanick</i> , and <i>Yawpochammund</i> , <i>Kack-enham</i> , also <i>Mattanoh</i> , <i>Norchon</i> and <i>Qurrmeck</i> , To John Tilton, Samuel Spicer, William Goulding, Richard Gibbons, James Grover and Richard Stout.	
<i>Manavendo</i> , <i>Emmerdesolsee</i> , <i>Papomera</i> , <i>Checausenm</i> , <i>Shan-hemun</i> , <i>Cramanscun</i> , <i>Winegermeca</i> , <i>Macca</i> , To James Grover, John Bowne, Richard Stout, John Tilton, Richard Gibbons, William Goulding, Samuel Spicer, and the rest of the company.	} April 7, 1665. Lib. 3, page 3.
	} Dated June 5, 1665. Liber 3, page 5.

Correction of Error.—It may be well here to correct a ridiculous *misprint* made in THOMPSON'S *History of Long Island*, ii., 76, which reflects somewhat upon the fair fame of Gravesend. It occurs in this quotation; on the 14th of April, 1649, John Furman agreed with the town to keep their calves for three weeks for sixty guilders, "to be paid in money, tobacco, or corn, and some *bitters*, if desired." In the original manuscript the word "*bitters*" is found to be *butter*!

Ancient Homesteads.—But few of these remain, the most notable being the following :

THE STILLWELL HOUSE.—This house was formerly in possession of the Van Sicklen family. Ferdinandes Van Sicklen was the first owner of the property, to whom we can distinctly trace it; although it may have been in the family for several generations before.

After the death of Ferdinandes, who was a man of considerable note in the town, and died some time in the latter part of the last century, the property, including the house (then new), was inherited by his son Cornelius, the grandfather of Henry and Abram Van Sicklen, now large property owners on Coney Island. Cornelius sold it to one Richard Stillwell, from which time the Stillwell interest in the property begins. It is said of Cornelius Van Sicklen that, after he sold the property, he went to Pleasant Valley, Dutchess county



THE STILLWELL HOUSE.

and bought a farm. Soon his wife died, and he returned to Gravesend. Happening one day to meet a worthy maiden, Katrina Stillwell, while she was in the act of milking the cow, being struck with her modest beauty, and perhaps also with her worth as a frugal *helpmeet* for a farmer, he at once proposed marriage to her on the spot; and after one night for careful deliberation, he was accepted. From this marriage sprang the present Van Sicklen family, which is the third generation.

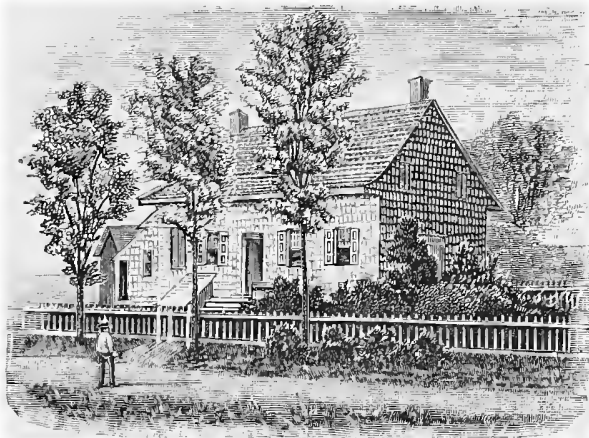
Richard Stillwell, whom we left in possession of the property, occupied the old house till his death, when it was conveyed to his son Daniel, whose heirs still hold it. Mr. Stillwell lived in the old house for some years, when he built a fine residence in striking contrast to the low-roofed, side-shingled house of his fathers.

After this the old house was occupied by his farmer, and continues so to be used to this day. It is a venerable structure, probably over a century old, and is still in a fair state of preservation.

THE STRYKER HOUSE.—This is another of the old land-marks of Gravesend. We can only trace it back three generations, to Cornelius Stryker, who, at his death, left it to his son Derick.

After his death, it continued to be the family residence for over 30 years. In 1861, when the youngest child, Cornelius D. Stryker, became of age, the farm was divided, and the widow bought the interest of the other heirs in the old house.

Some ten or fifteen years later, she sold the house to her son-in-law, Mr. David Jones, the present owner. It begins to show plainly the marks of age. Its history



THE STRYKER HOUSE.

must reach back nearly, if not fully, a hundred years. Like the Stillwell House, it is built after the Dutch fashion of the early times; it is one story, with extending eaves on either side which form a kind of piazza, and with the living, sleeping and working rooms mostly on the ground floor.

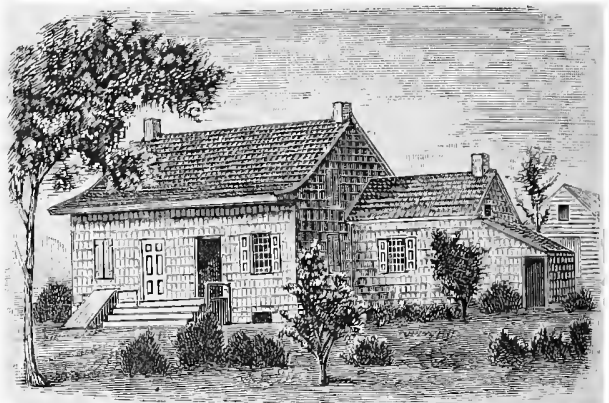
What is remarkable about this house is that the roof has never been renewed, and the shingles, though very much dilapidated and open to the weather, are still the same that were laid when the house was first built; probably long before the oldest person in town was born. An outlay of a few hundred dollars would make it good for many years to come.

THE JOHNSON HOUSE.—This house was built by Barrent Johnson, from whom it descended, through his son, to the late Barrent Johnson, for many years Associate-Justice of the Court of Sessions, whose heirs now hold it. This house, though not so old as the others mentioned, is far older in appearance and more dilapidated, and shows the sad neglect of years. It is fast passing into an uninhabitable condition.

To look at these old houses, one would think they were built to last, not for years, but centuries.

The large, heavy timbers then used, which were cut

a year before needed, and well seasoned, would now be considered almost too cumbersome for a five-story factory.

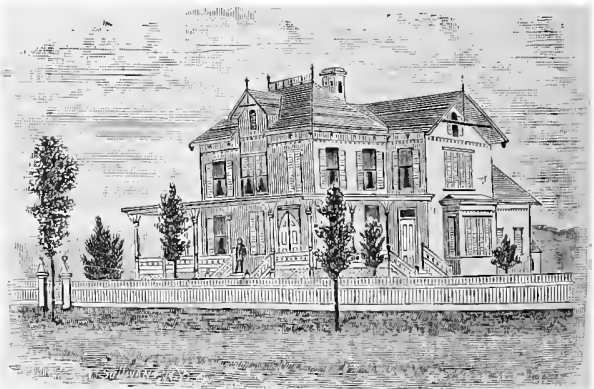


THE JOHNSON HOUSE.

This old house is especially noteworthy, because it stands, on what will be seen by the old map, to have been originally the "Bowery of ye Lady Moody," and is no doubt very near the site of her early residence. It is situated, like the other two mentioned, near the center of the village.

It cannot fail to awaken in the mind of one who knows anything of its history, grateful thoughts of the noble woman who took so grand and memorable a part in the early settlement, defence and prosperity of the town.

COTTAGE OF REV. A. P. STOCKWELL.—This cottage is situated a little distance from the village, and near the Ocean parkway, which connects Prospect Park with the ocean. It was built by Rev. A. P. Stockwell, pastor of the Reformed Church at Gravesend, in 1882, for his private residence. Mr. Dixon of Brooklyn was the



THE RESIDENCE OF REV. A. P. STOCKWELL.

architect, and Mr. John Y. McKane, of Gravesend, the builder.

It has been greatly admired for its architectural beauty, and the convenience of its internal arrangement. It also specially shows the contrast between the present style and arrangement of dwellings, and that of a hundred years ago, and the advance which has in these years been made.

HISTORY OF CONEY ISLAND.

By



Esq.

TOPOGRAPHY. About 7 miles southerly from New York city, at the extreme entrance to its harbor, facing the Atlantic Ocean, and separated from Long Island by a narrow creek, is an island about 5 miles long, varying in width from a few hundred feet to three-fourths of a mile, which, within the last few years, has become celebrated as *the* watering-place of New York and Brooklyn—CONEY ISLAND. It comprises about 80 acres of arable land; its southerly border is an ocean-washed beach of fine white sand, and its northerly border, along the creek, which divides it from the mainland, is mainly salt-marsh or meadow. The present Coney Island has been formed by the gradual aggregation, in times past, of several separate tracts; and, until the beginning of the present century, the western portion of the present island was the only part known by that name. Its Indian name was Narrioch, and it extended from Norton's Point easterly, to near the site of Rich. Ravenhall's establishment; and, when first discovered, was much broader north by south than now, (see the *Narrative of the Labadists*, 1679–80, and THOMPSON'S *History of Long Island*). This Narrioch, the original Coney Island, was bounded east by an inlet connecting the bay and ocean, and separating it from Coney Hook, a peninsula of the mainland extending south to the ocean. A ditch was dug through the salt-marsh of Coney Hook, from Brown's creek east to Hubbard's creek, making Coney Hook an island; thenceforth known as Pine Island, from its being rather heavily timbered with pine, oak and cedar. Eastward from, and adjoining Pine Island, was Pine Island Inlet, separating Pine Island and Guisbert's Island. Paul Bauer's West Brighton Hotel occupies part of the site of this inlet, which was an almost direct southerly continuation of Hubbard's creek. Next easterly to this inlet was Guisbert Island, the largest of all the divisions of Coney Island, and which contained all the arable land; being, therefore, often called in the Gravesend records "the island." In front, and on the southerly side of Guisbert's Island, was the "Great Pond," a considerable sheet of water, discharging into the ocean at its westerly end, nearly in front of Bader's Hotel at the Ocean Parkway; and, at the other end, opening into Sheepshead Bay, east of "Windmill Hill," on Manhattan Beach. This pond and these inlets were the main approaches into Sheepshead Bay from the ocean. The outer shore

of this pond was a low, flat sand-bar, skirting the entire front of Guisbert's Island, on the ocean. Easterly of this bar and Guisbert's Island, was another inlet, known as Plumb Beach Inlet, and separating these portions of Coney Island from Pelican Beach, then a part of Barren Island. By the filling up of Plumb Beach Inlet, and the breaking through the beach of another inlet much further east, Pelican Beach has become a part of Coney Island.

Discovery. Coney Island was first visited by Verazzano, in his discovery of this region, in 1527 and 1529. It would seem, from De Laet's, and also from Juet's narratives of the voyage and discovery of Henry Hudson, in 1609, that this was one of the places at which they landed and had interview with the savages.

Settlement. In 1643 Gravesend was settled by Lady Moody and friends; but, before the date of the second or confirmatory patent granted them in 1645, several persons took up farms within what became afterwards the town-boundaries, and for which they held individual patents. In May, 1643, Antonie Jansen Van Salee took a patent for land, of which the larger portion was at the extreme westerly part of the town (near Unionville), and the balance was a strip running southerly therefrom, which the English settlers also claimed. They had also undertaken to extinguish the Indian title to the land granted the town, by direct purchases from the natives. The earliest of these, November 1st, 1649 had been that of Narrioch (the original Coney Island), from Cipehacheke, sachem of the Canarsies. But the Nyack Indians also claimed ownership of this; and Francis de Bruyne, who had succeeded to the ownership of the Jansen Van Salee farm, insisted upon his right to the strip, which lay between its two portions. Anxious to fortify their claim to this, as well as to Narrioch, which they had come to look upon as their own (though Kieft's patent only gave them the privilege of pasturing on it), they obtained from the Nyacks, May 7th, 1654 (for 15 fathoms of seawant, 2 guns, 3 lbs. of powder), a conveyance of Coney Island, and the disputed neck of land; which latter was an inheritance of litigation to the town of Gravesend, some of the suits arising from it being yet pending in the courts. Guisbert Op Dyck, the original patentee of Coney Island, being Commissioner of Provisions for the colony of North America, neglected to occupy his patent; but,

afterwards, being thrown out of public employment, began to think how he could realize upon it. In August, 1661, he presented to the Director and Council a petition setting forth that the people of Gravesend were in the constant use of "a certain little island, situate between the tide-creek and Coney Island, and now called Guisbert's Island," and were very anxious to purchase it for pasturage of their cattle, and praying that he might be allowed to dispose of it to that town. But, as the Council took no notice of his petition, and the Gravesend people apparently were less anxious than he represented, to purchase land of which they were already virtually in possession, Op Dyck finally, October 20, 1661, having failed to sell to them part of the ground claimed in his patent, sold the whole of it to Dick De Wolf, a merchant of New Amsterdam, who had obtained from the Amsterdam Chamber of the W. I. Company, the exclusive privilege of making salt in the Nieuw Netherlands. De Wolf promptly established his salt-works on the island, and his agents ordered the Gravesend people to cease pasturing their cattle, or making hay thereon. This roused the ire of the Gravesend settlers, who "laid waste his garden, tore down the surrounding palisades and burned them completely, threatening to throw the foreman of the work, who reproved them, on the top of the burning pile." The matter, being brought before the Director and Council, was by them decided favorably to the English; but, on reference to the Council of the W. I. Company, at Holland, that body (jealous of English influences, as is evident from their instructions to Governor Stuyvesant) called for all the papers in the case, desiring meanwhile that a guard of "two or three soldiers" should be sent to take possession of De Wolf's house, etc., in the name of the Company, and to "prevent further robberies and outrage." Stuyvesant, however, who was no friend to Guisbert Op Dyck, the original patentee, and who had good reason to keep on the best of terms with the Gravesend people, manifested no especial haste to comply with the orders of his superiors. For, in January, 1664, the directors of the W. I. Company again wrote to him complaining of his delay; which, however, continued until the transfer of the Nieuw Netherlands to the English in September of that year, disposed finally of the fortunes of the *first manufacturing enterprise ever established within the limits of the present Kings county.*

By the new charter which the English Governor Nicolls granted Gravesend in 1668, Coney Island (Narrioch) was not embraced within the town-limits; and this, with similar defects relating to the town's disputes with De Bruyne, was sought to be rectified in a patent obtained by the town, in 1671, from Governor Lovelace. Having thus considerably enlarged their bounds and perfected their title, the Gravesend people (1670) entertained the project of dividing Guisbert's Island; which was not done, however, until October, 1677, when, by Samuel Spicer, Samuel Holmes and Ralph Cardall,

appointed a committee for the purpose, it was divided into thirty-nine parts or shares, of about two acres each. The inhabitants then agreed "that the said island shall be fenced and planted only with Indian-corn, tobacco or any summer grain, and not else; that the cattle may have the benefit of feeding until the beginning of the third month, or until the meadows are through, and then in the latter part of the year, when tobacco and Indian corn are housed, and the said land is to be thrown open to commons, when the major part will use their land no longer, as being worn out." The lots and names of owners in this division were:—1, Thomas Tilton; 2, Samuel Holmes; 3, John Lake; 4, William Compton; 5, Samuel Spicer; 6, James Hubbard; 7, John Tilton; 8, John Bowne; 9, John Griggs; 10, John Lake; 11, Barent Juriansen; 12, Obadiah Wilkins; 13, Samuel Holmes; 14, Ralph Cardell; 15, John Bowne; 16, Thomas Delavall; 17, John Tilton, Jr.; 18, John Cooke; 19, Nicholas Stillwell; 20, Peter Symson; 21, Richard Stillwell; 22, John Tilton, Jr.; 23, Thomas Delavall; 24, Samuel Spicer; 25, Barent Juriansen; 26, John Griggs; 27, Samuel Spicer; 28, Charles Bridges; 29, Thomas Delavall; 30, John Lake; 31, Ann Wilkins; 32, William Williamson; 33, John Emans; 34, Ralph Cardell; 35, John Poland; 36, John Applegate; 37, Samuel Holmes; 38, Samuel Spicer; 39, William Goulding.

By the new conveyance from the Indians, in 1684, and the confirmatory charter obtained from Governor Dongan, 1685, Coney Island was fully secured to Gravesend.

The *Labadist travellers* have left us a clear description of Coney Island, as they saw it in 1679; "The outer shore of this [Long] Island has before it several small islands and broken lands, such as Coney Island (*'t Conijnen Eylandt*), a low sandy island of about three hours circuit, its westerly point forming with Sandy Hook, on the other side, the entrance from the sea. It is oblong in shape and is grown over with bushes. Nobody lives upon it, but it is used in winter for keeping cattle, horses, oxen, hogs and others, which are able to obtain there sufficient to eat the whole winter, and to shelter themselves from the cold in the thickets. This island is not so cold as Long Island, or the Manhatans or others, like some other islands on the coast, in consequence of their having more sea-breeze, and of the saltness of the sea breaking upon the shoals, rocks and reefs, with which the coast is beset."

Subsequent Divisions of the Island.—Following the rule established in the original division of the Gravesend settlement, viz: thirty-nine shares or portions (there were in the first division forty shares, one of which was for a school-house), the balance of the present island was, from time to time, divided among the Gravesend inhabitants, always in thirty-nine shares; viz.: as we have seen, in 1677, Guisbert's Island; 1761, meadow at east end of Guisbert's Island; Plumb Is-

land ; 1766, "Sedge Bank" (Manhattan Beach) ; 1766, the "middle division of the island" (present W. A. Engeman, Brighton Beach and Race Track), etc. The two latest divisions were made in 1815 and 1821.

The Town's Commonage Leases of Coney Island.—By agreement of its inhabitants and freeholders in town-meeting assembled, the town had, from time to time, leased Pine and Coney Islands, in seven-year leases (reserving for the freeholders "the privilege of fishing, grazing, fowling, hawking, gunning, hunting, cutting off and carting off any sort of timber," etc.), to the following persons : 1702, John Griggs ; 1720, Richard Stillwell ; 1727, Thomas Stillwell ; 1731, Richard Stillwell ; 1733, Capt. John Cannon, mariner, of New York ; 1789, the islands were let in three divisions, to the highest bidders, viz., Abraham and John Emans, and John Van Cleef ; this arrangement continued *annually* (the lessees being Emans, Van Cleef, Jones and Voorhis) until 1803, when the town directed the Commissioners of Highways to "let, for one season, at public vendue, to the highest bidder, all the undivided mowing-meadows or commons" in the town, etc. ; "the sand on Plumb Island and Pine Island beaches" to be let by contract, the rights of Gravesend people to sand being protected.

Roads on Coney Island.—A road to the island was made in 1734, from the record of which it appears that the inlet between Coney Island and Coney Hook (Pine Island) had, by this time, become so shoal that the road was laid right along the beach without regard to it, and yet the two islands are divided by it—thus fixing the time when the process of filling up this inlet was going on ; and that Coney Hook had become separated from the main land and had become an island. Thomas Stillwell, a very prominent citizen of Gravesend in that day, and who had become the owner of all the thirty-nine lots on Guisbert's Island (constituting all the arable land on Coney Island), conceived the idea that, by cutting a ditch from Hubbard's to Brown's creek he would secure an excellent pasturage for his cattle, near his farm. At this time a considerable trade had arisen between New York and the residents on Jamaica Bay, whose boats went outside of Coney Island, in their trips to and from New York. Stillwell, by personal visitation of his Jamaica friends, convinced them that the opening of a ditch or canal through his property would give them an *inside* route to New York ; and finally, they all assembled, on a given day, and dug the canal—known to this day as "Jamaica Ditch." It was a *success*—giving the market-boats not only a shorter, but a much safer and easier way to the city.

By successive town-orders it was ordered (1735 and '49) that no one should mow sedge, or grass, upon Coney Island before the 1st September ; in 1752, that no wood or timber should be cut off ; and, in 1761, a division was made of the meadow on east end of Guisbert's Island. In 1763 another road was laid out along the

north side of middle division of Coney Island. About the year 1820, the project of a new and more direct road to Coney Island began to be agitated ; for, up to that time, the only route to Guisbert's or Johnson's Island was by fording the creek (if the tide happened to be low), and then westerly along the southerly side of Guisbert's Island. John Terhune, then Supervisor of Gravesend, proposed that the town should build what is now popularly known as "the shell road ;" but it was eventually done by private enterprise.

The Gravesend and Coney Island Road and Bridge Company was incorporated March 22, 1823, by legislative act, with a capital stock of 300 shares of \$20 each, and empowering John Terhune, Van Brunt Magaw, John S. Gerritson, and their associates, to open a road three rods wide through the meadows (between land at present of James A. Williamson, and land late of Stephen H. Stillwell, deceased,) and to construct a bridge over the creek. The enterprise, however, grew upon the hands of the projectors, who soon saw the necessity of providing a hotel for visitors to the Island. Additional capital-stock was authorized by act of legislature in 1826 ; five directors were authorized by an amendment act, in 1829, and the road and bridge were built, and a site procured from Court Van Sicklen, on which they erected the "Coney Island House," and leased the same to a Mr. Tooker for three years. This property, in 1827, was sold to John Terhune, who, the same year, sold a half to his brother Abraham, and it ultimately passed, with John's half, into the hands of Peter Lott.

Piracy. The Tragedy of the Brig Vineyard.—Coney Island is connected with a tragedy of the sea, well-nigh forgotten by even the older residents of the vicinity, but which was the cause of intense excitement at the time. On the 9th November, 1830, the brig Vineyard cleared from New Orleans for Philadelphia with a cargo of cotton, sugar and molasses, and \$54,000 in specie (all Mexican dollars), consigned to Stephen Girard, Esq., of the latter city. The officers and crew of the brig were William Thornby, *Captain* ; Mr. Roberts, *Mate* ; Charles Gibbs (alias Thos. D. Jeffers), Aaron Church, James Talbot, John Brownrigg, and Henry Atwell, *seamen* ; Robert Dawes (age 18 or 19), *cabin-boy*, and Wansley, a young Delaware negro, *steward and cook*. When the brig had been five days out at sea, and was off Cape Hatteras, the negro steward informed some of the others of the money on board ; and, with Gibbs, Church, Atwell and Dawes, planned to kill the captain and mate, and possess themselves of the specie. On the night of March 23d, between 12 and 1 o'clock, as the captain was on the quarter-deck, and the boy Dawes was steering, the negro Wansley came up on deck, and, obeying a pre arranged call from Dawes to come and trim the binnacle-light, as he passed behind the captain felled him with a pump-brake, and killed him by

repeated blows. Gibbs then coming up, he and Wansley flung the captain's body overboard. Roberts, the mate, who was below, came up the companion way to ascertain the cause of the commotion, and was attacked by Church and Atwell, who failed, however, (through nervousness) to accomplish their design upon him. He retreated to the cabin, where he was followed by Gibbs, who, not being able to find him in the dark, returned to the deck for the binnacle-lamp, with which he re-entered the cabin, accompanied by Church, Atwell, and the boy Dawes; and Roberts, being speedily overcome by their blows, was dragged upon deck and hurled into the sea—still alive, and able for a while to swim after the ship, begging for mercy. Talbot, who, in his terror at what was going on, had sought refuge in the forecastle, and Brownrigg, who had fled aloft, were now called by the conspirators and offered their lives and equal share in the booty if they kept silent. It is needless to say that they joyfully accepted the terms thus unexpectedly offered them. The conspirators then rifled the vessel, divided the specie; and, under direction of Gibbs, who, from his being the only one understanding navigation, assumed command of the vessel, their course was laid for Long Island. When within 15 or 20 miles off Southampton light, the vessel was scuttled and fired, and they took to their boats; Gibbs, Wansley, Brownrigg and Dawes, with about \$31,000 of the money, in the long-boat, and Church, Talbot and Atwell, with about \$23,000, in the jolly-boat. The wind was blowing a gale, and in attempting to cross Duck (or Rockaway) Bar, the jolly-boat upset, and its occupants, with their share of the booty, were lost. The occupants of the other boat were compelled, by fear of a similar fate, to lighten their boat by throwing overboard all but \$5,000 of their stealings; but finally succeeded in reaching the shore of Pelican Beach, then part of Barren, now of Coney Island. Their first care was to dispose temporarily of the specie by burying it in a hole (dug with an oar) in the sand at a considerable distance from the shore, each taking out sufficient for his immediate wants. Food and lodging were their next most pressing wants, and meeting, on Pelican Beach, with Nicholas S. Williamson, of Gravesend, they told him a pitiable tale of shipwreck, and, getting from him the needed directions, they passed on to Dooley's Bay, on the northwest shore of Barren Island. Here resided John Johnson and wife, and his brother William, who kindly received and cared for the shipwrecked mariners, and gave up to them for the night their own room and beds. Brownrigg and the Johnson brothers thus happened to occupy chairs in the living-room; and as soon as the other inmates of the house were asleep, Brownrigg revealed the whole matter to the two Johnsons. In the morning, after getting such breakfast as the place afforded, the pirates desired the Johnsons to take them over to the hotel at Sheepshead

Bay, whence they might get a conveyance to Fulton ferry and New York. This the Johnsons did, and returned to Barren Island without unnecessary delay; and, proceeding to the spot described by Brownrigg (and to which they had gone in the early morning with Wansley to get some clothes left there), they dug up the specie, removed it to another hiding-place remote from its first location; and, by walking in the water, effaced all traces of the direction they had taken.

Meanwhile, Gibbs and his party were bargaining with Samuel Leonard, the hotel-keeper at Sheepshead Bay, when suddenly, in the presence of all, Brownrigg, declaring that he would go no further with them, denounced his companions as pirates and murderers, and unfolded the whole story of the *Vineyard's* fate. Wansley incontinently took to his heels to the woods, and Gibbs and Dawes were seized and bound by the inn-keeper and his people; and Justice John Van Dyke was summoned, who promptly issued warrants for the arrest of the pirates. The one constable of the village found his hands full in guarding Gibbs and Dawes; and so Robert Greenwood, of Sheepshead Bay, volunteered to go into the woods and look up Wansley. After an hour's search he found the negro, and presenting a huge pistol, ordered him to fall on his face and cross his hands behind his back. Wansley submitted, and Greenwood, sitting astride of him, tied his hands securely, ordered him to arise, and marched him back to Leonard's hotel. After the negro had been thoroughly secured, his captor showed him the pistol (*utterly destitute of either lock or load*), with the remark that it "was just as good's any other if you knowed how to use it." Gibbs, Wansley, and Dawes were then lodged in the county jail at Flatbush.

The Johnsons had been none too quick in securing the \$5,000; for, scarcely had they regained their home, when Squire Van Dyke, with Brownrigg as guide, appeared on the scene, and going right to the spot where the money had been deposited the day before, found it gone! Brownrigg was then sent to join the others at Flatbush; and from thence they were remanded to New York Bridewell. Indictments being found against Gibbs and Wansley, they were tried, and convicted on the testimony of Brownrigg and Dawes; and on the 11th of March, 1831, were sentenced to be hung; sentence being carried into effect on the 22d of April following.

John and Wm. Johnson, apprehensive of further search being made for the money, made no haste to get it home. In a day or two they were visited by agents of the insurance companies and an officer, who not only searched for the money on the beach, but thoroughly ransacked the Johnson abode from garret to cellar, without success. Having, finally, as they thought, eluded the vigilance of the law, John Johnson and wife planned to get possession of it without the assistance of William. Accordingly, one night, while the latter was

asleep, they stole out and unearthed the treasure, and reinterred it in two parcels, one of \$3,400, the other of about \$1,600. Knowing how closely William would scan the beach when he discovered his loss, they made only the slightest mark to designate the new place of deposit on Pelican Beach, by tying knots on the long sedge-grass, which could be seen only by the closest scrutiny. William's indignation, when he discovered the loss, was intense; his suspicions fell upon his brother, and going to New York, he informed the insurance companies, who entered suit against John for recovery of the money. The trial, which was held before Judge Dean, in the Apprentices Library, in Brooklyn, ended in John's acquittal, for want of sufficient evidence. He then removed to Brooklyn, and William to Canarsie. But, when John went to look for his deposit, he found only the larger sum. A high tide had swept over the site of the other; the action of the waves had loosened the knots in the sedge-grass, and the \$1,600 was lost to him forever! In 1842 the Skidmore family, living on "Ruffle Bar," concluded to remove their house, in sections, to a new site on the shore of Dooley's Bay, Barren Island. The house was accordingly taken down piecemeal, and most of it carried across the bay and piled up near its future site. The moving was not quite completed on the day appointed. On the foundation of their old home had been left the wooden ceiling of an upper chamber, in one piece or section. During the night a violent storm drove the tide up to an unprecedented height; and, in the morning, when Jacob Skidmore arose, he was surprised to find that his chamber-ceiling had been brought over by the tide, from Ruffle Bar to Dooley's Bay, without injury. Anxious to learn whether any other of his property had gone farther west, he proceeded along the northerly, or inside, shore of Pelican Beach, which then had become separated by a small inlet, shallow enough to be forded at low-tide, but at high-tide floating skiffs through it from the ocean to Dooley's Bay. The eastern part of Pelican Beach then had a ridge of sand-hills, while the western was as flat and level as the whole of it is now. Arrived at these sand-hills, from whence to get a view of the surrounding country, he saw none of his lumber; and, acceding to the suggestion of his companion, Mr. Loring, hurried back so as to cross the inlet before the tide got too high. Taking a last look, as they did so, they noticed the shore or ocean-side of Pelican Beach much washed away, and also saw his neighbors, Willett Smith and Henry Brewer, approaching. Smith and Brewer came on easterly until they reached the spot where John Johnson and wife had last buried the \$1,600; and here, by the storm over night, the silver dollars had been uncovered, and lay scattered along the beach. The two men lost no time in filling pockets and boots, and carried away all they could; but they could not keep their good luck to themselves, and in a day or two business was almost entirely

suspended in Gravesend, and every man who could got to Pelican Beach. The intense excitement only gradually subsided when a succeeding storm placed the location of the "find" so far to sea as to be absolutely beyond further search.

Modern Development of Coney Island.—About the year 1844 Messrs. Eddy and Hart, two New York gentlemen, leased a portion of the western part of Coney Island, and on it built a large circular platform, over which an enormous tent was erected, and the "Pavilion" at Coney Island Point sprang into existence. A dock, or wharf, was built just north of the westerly part of Coney Island, and a number of bathing-houses built on the southern shore of the Point. This was the commencement of what has since become familiar to many of the residents of New York and vicinity as "Norton's Point." Prior to this occupancy by Messrs. Eddy and Hart, this spot had been the home of Gilbert Hicks, who succeeded Henry Brown, the sole occupant of this part of Coney Island at about the close of the Revolutionary war. When Messrs. Eddy and Hart started their enterprise, Cropsey and Woglom were proprietors of one of the only two hotels of Coney Island—the "Coney Island House," built by the Coney Island Road and Bridge Company. The other was owned and managed by that patriarch of Coney Island, John Wyckoff, Sr., formerly school-master of Gravesend, afterward hotel-keeper opposite the church in Gravesend, from whence he removed with his wife and family to Coney Island, and built what, with additions, soon enjoyed a most enviable reputation as "Wyckoff's Hotel." The Pavilion, Wyckoff's, and the Coney Island House, with the exception of the two farm-houses on the respective farms—into which the arable land had been divided—the Van Sicklen and the Voorhies farm-houses, constituted the whole of the residences on the island. But the day of development was drawing nigh; and, when Daniel Morrell, the toll-gatherer on the "shell-road," counted three hundred vehicles of a warm fourth of July (Sunday) driving to Coney Island, many of the staid, good people of Gravesend bewailed the existence of a place whose attractions caused such wholesale Sabbath-breaking.

In October, 1847, Dr. Allen Clarke, seeing the desirability of Coney Island as a summer resort, bought a piece of ground of Mr. Court Van Sicklen (by giving a mortgage on it), and, just north of the Coney Island House, the "Oceanic" was erected, run for a season, and burned down. It was said it caught fire accidentally, and some people believed it. The property passed into the hands of Judge John Vanderbilt, who built another—a larger and a better hotel—on the site of the former, and it became a very fashionable resort; but, after a few years of varying success, it shared the common fate of sea-side resorts—it burned down. The premises are now incorporated with those of the old Coney Island House.

Another step in the development of the island was taken when Mr. Partridge, the owner of the Dye Wood Mills below Unionville, interested himself in the scheme of a railroad from Coney Island across the creek over West Meadow Bank, along "the twelve morgen," through the villages of Bath and New Utrecht, and along the new plank-road to the "new," or Fifth avenue, entrance, to Greenwood cemetery. After many and vexatious delays, toils and troubles, on the part of its promoters, The Brooklyn, Bath and Coney Island Railroad, as its incorporators called it—the "Dummy Road," as it was known to the public generally—was opened to travel. In the meanwhile Mr. Stephen H. Bogart had erected, at its Coney Island terminus, a hotel, elegant for its day and generation, which was called the "Tivoli." But Mr. Bogart died, and the hotel shared the common fate of large sea-side hotels—it burned down.

Another impetus to the development of Coney Island was the completion of the "horse-car" route to Coney Island—down the old Coney Island road, as Coney Island avenue was then called; and the building of the restaurant on Coney Island, so long kept by George Green.

About the year 1868 Mr. William A. Engeman conceived the idea of purchasing the interests of the two or three hundred heirs of the persons to whom, in 1766, the thirty-nine lots comprising the middle or southern division of Coney Island had been allotted; and, by gathering together, in his own ownership, the shreds and patches of interests, divided, subdivided and again subdivided (until in many cases the resources of arithmetical calculation were severely tasked to determine just how little any one particular person owned), to thus ultimately acquire a property on which he could erect a great family home and house. This task, it may readily be imagined, was far more easy of conception than of execution. Many a person of less indomitable perseverance than Mr. ENGEMAN would have quailed under the difficulties attending the making of searches (in most instances amounting to complete genealogies) of thirty-nine families for one and one-fourth centuries back; and whose members were scattered not only throughout the various States of the Union, but some of whom had found homes in such far-off places as the Sandwich Islands. Energy, perseverance, and well-directed, intelligent industry, however, finally unravelled the twisted mazes of family-ties, hunted for and found the scattered members, negotiated for and purchased their interests; and, as usual, success crowned well-directed, persistent efforts. Mr. Engeman had passed through many sad and bitter experiences in life, and found in the excitement attending this undertaking a relief from oppressive and almost unsupportable reflections.

The premises were purchased, and comprise what is now known as the Fair Grounds, the Ocean Hotel prop-

erty, the Brighton Hotel property, and the Bathing Pavilion, taking in all the ground between that of Manhattan Beach and the common lands of the town of Gravesend. The Ocean Hotel was built, and in a quiet, respectable family sea-side hotel, refined guests found an agreeable relief from the noise and hubbub which even then had begun to pervade the more western part of the island.

In the meanwhile the other parts of the island were beginning to feel the impetus which was crowding Coney Island into prominence as a competitor for the patronage of the seaside-loving population of the metropolis and suburbs, in the heated summer terms. Settlements of restaurants, lager-beer-saloons and bathing-establishments began to spring up with unwonted activity; at first in the immediate neighborhood of the railroad termini, and soon from thence spreading, laterally, along-shore on either side, till, in a few years, the entire beach front was thickly studded with these aspirants for public favor. These buildings were not of the elaborate nature characteristic of the more pretentious "pavilions" of to-day. Far from it. Most of them were rude, unplanned boxes, having a door with a hole in it for light, and each furnished inside with a couple of hat-and-coat-hooks, a rude bench, and a pail of water for rinsing the feet after the bath. But they were the pioneers to what has since become a vast business during the heated days of the summer.

Then, a law was passed providing for the opening and grading of Gravesend avenue, at the expense of the holders of property on both sides of it; and the Prospect Park and Coney Island Railroad (Culver's) took it, without paying for it, as the location of their road. Naturally, the property-holders felt indignant at thus being compelled to open and grade a road at their own expense for a railroad company; and not even the admitted fact that this railroad is altogether the best managed and operated of all the roads to Coney Island, has enabled it to overcome this feeling.

The building of this railroad; its hotel, long known as "Cable's," at its shore terminus; the purchase, and the re-erection on Coney Island, of one of the observatories erected at the Philadelphia Centennial Exhibition, as an "observatory;" and latterly, its magnificent depot, have all combined to make this place a center of attraction to a vast multitude to whom the low rate of fares charged is by no means a source of mis-comfort.

Next was the building of the Ocean Parkway, that magnificent highway from Prospect Park to the sea. (See page 172). This Ocean Parkway, and its lateral or shore branch, called the Concourse, all aided in helping Coney Island to a place in the public estimation.

While John I. Snedeker was host of the "Oceanic Hotel" on Coney Island (for so the old "Coney Island House" was christened in later years), among his guests was a wealthy New York banker, whose sick infant

had been ordered to be taken to the seaside for the benefit of the pure air. This gentleman, impressed with the healthfulness of the place, in a casual conversation with the host one evening, requested the latter to ascertain whether any property could be purchased in the vicinity, as he was anxious to purchase in so salubrious a situation. Mr. Snedeker accordingly made enquiry in the village-store at Gravesend, and was directed to William H. Stillwell, whose long residence and position as a resident civil-engineer and surveyor had placed him in a position to be especially familiar with lands and titles in that section. This resulted in an interview between the latter and the banker, one Saturday evening, at the hotel; when the former called the attention of the latter to a tract of land which might possibly be purchased, and the next afternoon the two visited the locality. This banker was Austin Corbin, Esq., and the spot shown was "The Sedge Bank," since become famous as "Manhattan Beach." The banker, pleased with the location, took immediate steps to purchase the property, which was successfully accomplished by the agency of the other, without unnecessary loss of time, and forms the site of the Manhattan and Oriental Hotels, and the vast tract on which they are located.

While the Manhattan Beach property was being developed, the consolidation of the two railroad enterprises produced the Brooklyn, Flatbush and Coney Island Railway Company (or, as it is more familiarly known, the Brighton Beach Railroad), whose hotel, so widely known, is located on a part of the "middle division," purchased of Mr. Engeman, and is too well known to need particular description.

In 1878 a company was organized with Jacob Lorillard, of New York city, as president, who purchased a lease held by William A. Engeman, of a shore-front lot of land on Coney Island; contracted with the Delaware Bridge Company to build the iron pier on the site of the old one built by Mr. Engeman, and the present elegant structure is the result of their labor and invested capital.

While all the tracts known as the "Middle" or "Engeman's" division, and the "Sedge Bank" or "Eastern division," now Manhattan Beach, are, and have been, confessedly and concededly, private property for at least a century and a quarter; the ownership of the remainder of the island, from a line drawn a short distance easterly of the Ocean Parkway, has not been undisputed. There are two essentially different and distinct theories in relation to this matter, the proper solution of which depends entirely on the language of the original grants.

The original charter of Governor Kieft of 1645, and of which all the other and subsequent charters are confirmatory, grants "To the Honoured Lady Deborah Moody, Sir Henry Moody, Barronnett, Sergeant James Hubbard, Ensigne George Baxter, their associates,

heirs, executors, administrators, successors and assigns, or any they should join in association with them," a certain quantity or parcel of land, etc., etc.

Was this grant of these lands made to the town as a corporation, or to the individuals as tenants in common? If to the former, then so much of it as has not been heretofore set off in severalty, and assigned to individuals, belongs to the town as a corporation; while, if to the latter, then the heirs of these are the owners of so much of it as they or their ancestors have not divided as tenants in common. This latter class are usually known as the "patentee" party, and the former as the "town" party. The arguments used by each are not without weight; and, in view of the enormous value of the property involved—a property which makes Gravesend probably the wealthiest town in the State—not without interest. The "town" party claim:

1. That the grant was made to the corporation, who, at their town-meetings, divided so much of it from time to time as their convenience required, and whatever was not so divided was retained by the corporation.

2. That all divisions and allotments of lands were made either in town-meetings or by authority of them.

3. That every known division of land is entered on the town-books as an act of the town.

4. That the town has shown from the first an uninterrupted possession, passing repeated orders for the care and management of them.

On the other or "patentee" side of the question, it is claimed that the grant was made to the individuals as tenants-in-common; for

1. The charter authorized the persons therein named to form a town—it did not create, but authorized the grantees to create, a town. This implied an action by the grantees subsequent to the granting of the authority to act. The town was to be formed by the people who had received authority to form it—consequently the town could have had no existence at the time the authority to form it was given, and therefore the grant *could not* have been made to the town. It did not exist when the grant was made.

2. The grant is made to certain persons "and any *they* (that is the grantees) should join in association" with them. That is, not any who should come to reside there—not all who should join them—but only those whom the original patentees should elect—should accept—"should join in association with them."

3. The manifest propriety that they who had braved the toil, privations and hardship of settling a new colony, should possess that to which their time and labor had given a value.

4. That all divisions of lands were uniformly into thirty-nine parts, or shares corresponding to the number of original patentees—although these divisions, some sixteen in number, covered a period from 1643 (the first) to 1766 (the date of the last division of land).

5. That their title as tenants in common in and to the

undivided lands, is equally as good as to the land divided—the source of title being the same in either case.

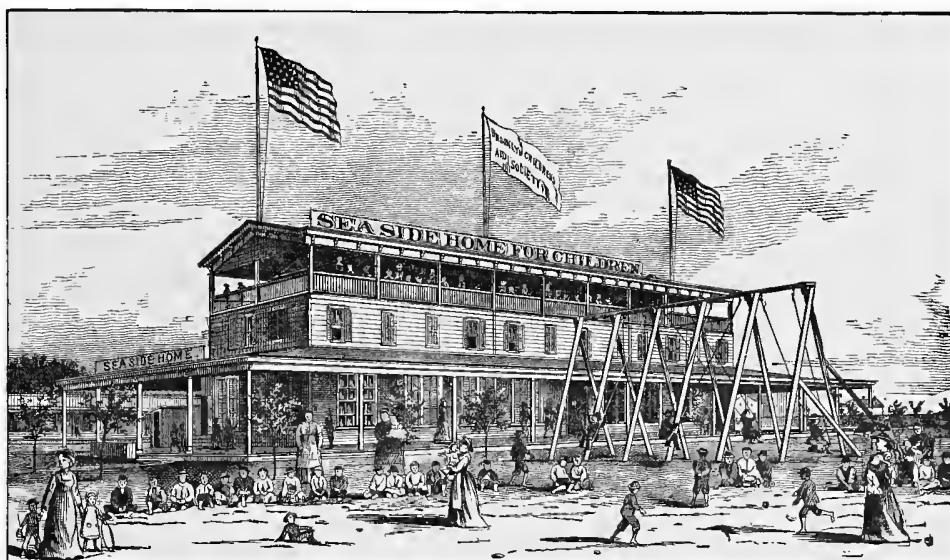
6. That although these divisions were made at town-meetings, they were so made merely as matters of convenience, not of necessity; and some of these meetings are expressly stated to be meetings of the proprietors; as for instance the meeting at which the arable lands on Guisbert's Island is decided to be divided, is expressly declared to be a meeting "of the owners of the rights," etc.

The above is believed to be a fair statement of the case. It is proper to add that the representatives of both sides have, all along, maintained and acted on their convictions with considerable pertinacity. While the town, through various officers, has, from time to time, rented the lands; on two occasions, at least, in 1814 and 1820, they divided all accrued rentals up to these dates respectively, among the representatives of the patentees. We note, also, that the records show frequent sales of "rights" and "thirtyninths" in the individual commonage, and devises of the same; and that, at no time, has a proposition arisen for a sale of any of these lands, without an active protest against such action on the part of a corporation, looked upon as merely a trustee for private parties.

Notably was this feeling manifested when, some years since, the Quarantine Commissioners of the State of New York undertook to avail themselves of the opportunity which the Legislature of the State had afforded them, of selecting Coney Island Point (Norton's Point) as a site for a quarantine establishment. The Legislature had passed an act appropriating \$50,000 toward the purchase of a site to be selected by the Quarantine Commissioners, who were also allowed to take the same, if agreement as to price could not be arrived at, by virtue of "the right of eminent domain." Of course no agreement looking to a sale of part of Coney Island for a nominal sum to a corporation who would so use it as to destroy the value of the remainder, could be arrived at; and the Court appointed Commissioners to appraise the value of the lands proposed to be taken. No sooner had the initiative steps herein been taken, than a large number of persons appeared and insisted on being made parties to the proceedings; alleging that they, with others, were the rightful owners

of the fee of the premises sought to be acquired; that the town, as their trustee, had collected rents and exercised acts of ownership for so long a period that the corporation had come to be looked on as the owner of the tract. They were joined as parties, and had the Emigration Commissioners succeeded in the scheme, a desperate legal warfare respecting the ownership of the price paid, would undoubtedly have ensued. This was avoided, however, by the Commissioners of Appraisal, in their report of the value of the property, placing so high an estimate on it as to far exceed the appropriation therefor, had the latter been tenfold larger than it was. And the Quarantine Commissioners abandoned the attempt of wresting from the town its most valuable property.

In 1879 Mr. William A. Engeman, one of the pioneers of Coney Island, opened a mile-track upon land which he owned at the island. It is known as the *Brighton*

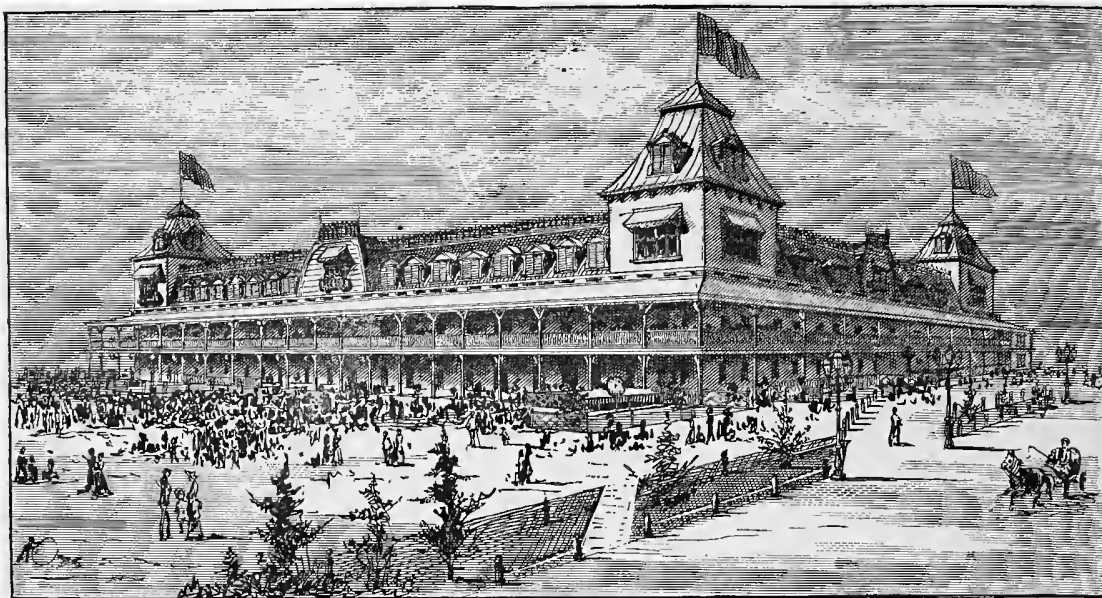


THE SEA-SIDE HOME FOR CHILDREN, WEST BRIGHTON BEACH, CONEY ISLAND.

Beach Fair Grounds. It contains a grand stand, and other adjuncts considered necessary for sporting purposes. The meetings are continued all summer, and it is considered quite popular among the sporting fraternity. It is the sole property of Mr. Engeman, and is very valuable.

The Sea-Side Home for Children.—*The Brooklyn Children's Aid Society* is doing a noble work here during the summer months, of which a full account will be found under the head of *Charitable Institutions* of the City of Brooklyn.

Sea-Side Sanitarium.—After two years' effort, *The Children's Aid Society of New York*, have succeeded in leasing lot No. 37, at Coney Island, for the purpose of erecting a sea-side sanitarium. They propose erecting a beautiful building; which they are enabled to do by the gift of \$10,000 from Mr. D. Willis James, of New York.



PAUL BAUER'S WEST BRIGHTON HOTEL

PAUL BAUER.—“Mine host” of the West Brighton Hotel, whose portrait appears on the opposite page, is a fine specimen of manhood, both physically and mentally. Tall and athletic in form, he has a keen eye and an energy of manner which denote truly his quick perception, prompt action, and remarkable executive ability.

Although he is master of the English language, a slight German accent betrays his foreign birth, which occurred in Austria, August 18th, 1846. His boyhood was passed there in school and in various attempts at employment. He was successively placed at several trades; but his innate energy, and love of out-door activity, revolted from plodding labor, and he could not be kept at work. He might have become a “ne’er do weel,” had he not decided, at the age of fifteen, to try the greater freedom and better opportunities to be found in America. Landing in New York in 1863, he maintained himself for a time by different employments, and then enlisted in the United States Army, serving three years in the Light artillery, and two years longer in the 4th Cavalry. Although he entered the service as a private, his energy and ability soon raised him from the ranks, and he was successively promoted until he became Captain. After five years he left the service honorably. In later years he was a Captain in the Fifth Regiment, and also a Corporal in the Separate Troop, under Col. Spencer. After leaving the army, he was employed in a restaurant in New York city, where his natural abilities and force of character made their mark at once; so that he soon left a subordinate position to assume the management of the Van Dyke House, and afterwards of the Pacific Hotel. Here his success, both as caterer and general manager, was instant and abundant, demonstrating him to be one of the few who can successfully preside over an hostelry. He saved some money, for which he sought a profitable investment. Early in 1876, during a pleasure ride with his family to Coney Island, he was sagacious enough to foresee the future of what is now America’s greatest seaside resort. When the carriage was almost overturned in a hollow near the present site of the club house, and Mrs. Bauer remarked: “This is the worst place I ever saw,” her husband replied: “It can be made the best.” With characteristic promptness, on the following day, he secured from the authorities of Gravesend, a lease of twelve acres fronting

on the beach, at what is now known as West Brighton; and on the 22d of February commenced the erection of the “West Brighton Hotel,” which was opened for guests on the 2d of May following. It is an immense palace-like structure, 242 feet long, by 145 feet wide, with a dining-room capable of seating six thousand people comfortably, at one time. It is the largest and most tastefully decorated dining-room under one roof to be found at the Island; in which, on several occasions, ten thousand guests have dined to their satisfaction. There are rooms for two hundred and fifty guests, with private dining-rooms; and four tower-rooms, for the especial use of coaching parties. Mr. Bauer is also the owner of the Pavilion opposite, of a large bathing establishment, and a number of other buildings devoted to the entertainment of the public. He has also leased a portion of the ground to others for similar purposes. Mr. Bauer retains the general supervision and management of his hotel, and, by careful and systematic attention to details, he achieves the greatest success, and his fame attracts many of the best people to the “West Brighton Hotel.” Mr. Bauer believes that liberality to the public begets their liberality in return; therefore, all the appointments in and about the hotel are of the best. Fine music is discoursed every afternoon and evening by two orchestras, one of them the famous “Vienna Ladies’ Orchestra;” and by numerous soloists, both vocal and instrumental, attracting crowds of respectful listeners.

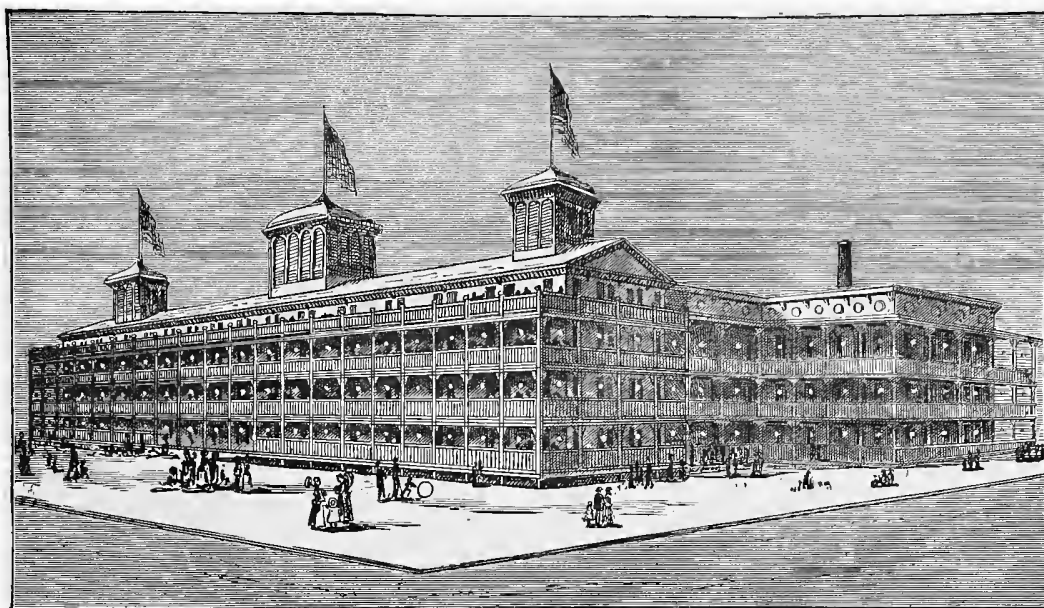
Administrative ability of the highest order is requisite for the management of so vast an institution; and this Mr. Bauer possesses in a rare degree; as well as capacity for details, thoroughness, promptness, and financial ability. He also has the faculty of wisely selecting his assistants. His success at West Brighton has fully justified his judgment of seven years ago, and brought great pecuniary gains from his investment in Coney Island sand.

He is a member of the Masonic order, also of several gun-clubs, and of some social organizations.

Naturally fond of society, Mr. Bauer is affable and pleasant in manner; and a gentleman who has gained and retains the friendship of thousands, and who feels a pardonable pride in the success which he has wrought out by his unaided efforts.



Paul Bauer



FELTMAN'S OCEAN PAVILION, WEST BRIGHTON BEACH, CONEY ISLAND.

CHARLES FELTMAN, the first pioneer of Coney Island improvement, was born at Verden, in Hanover, Germany, Nov. 8, 1841.

Very early in life, when but a mere boy, he became infatuated with the idea of leaving his native country for the shores of America; and, as years rolled on, his thoughts kept pace with time, until, arriving at the age of fourteen years, despite the opposition of his parents and friends, without means and alone, he succeeded, after many disappointments, in finding a sailing-vessel on which he could work his passage as cabin-boy to a country he had often heard of, far beyond the sea.

Early on a bright May morning, in the year 1856, leaving all that was dear to him on earth, he sailed from Bremen, Germany, in the ship "Auguste;" and after several weeks at sea amid all kinds of weather and trials, he arrived a penniless and friendless boy, among strangers in a strange land. Unable to speak the English language, and not having a friend to whom he could apply, he sought in vain for employment and barely succeeded in obtaining the necessities of life by doing odd jobs occasionally picked up in the streets of New York.

During the "panic" winter of 1857 he fared "very slim," subsisting chiefly upon stale bread and water, until the spring of 1858, when he obtained his first legitimate employment at East New York as a laborer, ostensibly in a coal-yard; but was compelled to divide his attention between a small farm and grocery store, controlled by the same party; working from 4 A. M. to 10 P. M. for \$3 per month and board. This variety of labor, as "man of all work," at first had its charms; but the long hours, combined with hard work and small pay, grew distasteful to young Feltman. He sought and found a change by obtaining employment in a bakery on Smith, near Church street, South Brooklyn. His labors were here divided between driving a wagon during the day and assisting in the bakery at night. One day while at work in the bakery, he met with quite a severe accident; which, in consequence of improper treatment on the part of a

quack doctor, rendered the use of his right arm impossible for about eight months. Meanwhile his limited savings melted away.

Nothing daunted, and willing to work, he obtained a position as an apprentice in Kernan's bakery on Fulton, near Jay street, where he remained about two years; and during the year 1866, by close economy, he was enabled to enter into business for himself as a baker. His first place of business was on Classon avenue, near Van Brunt street, where by close attention he supplied several routes and did a thriving trade. He transferred to Parkville, where he purchased some property and erected a building in which he continued business until the opening of the Boulevard compelled him to leave and return to Brooklyn.

The next attempt was at the corner of Sixth avenue and Tenth street, where he erected a fine brick structure, with brown stone trimmings, still standing, and owned by him. When he commenced building neither street had been cut through, and people laughed at his, so called, "fool-hardiness," for building such a fine structure in an open field. But having been blessed with that prophetic intuition which makes the successful engineer and capitalist, he steadily foresaw the future demands of that portion of the city; which, in a short time was fully verified, as the progress of that section now proves. And from this point he renewed the bakery business and controlled a large Coney Island trade, supplying the "shanties" with bread, pastry and ice-cream.

During the early part of the winter of 1874, his career as caterer to the visitors of the island was first commenced. At that time, more than three-quarters of Coney Island was a barren, sandy waste, and wind-swept region; where the Atlantic surges beat with unrestrained violence; inhabited at the extreme west end by some few "clammers," "roughs," and "three-card-monte-men," who bore the name of "Coney catchers." In the vicinity of Gunther's depot (the only railway then running to Coney Island, except the horse-cars), were a few common-place, rough-board shanties, one of which Feltman obtained from a former customer, Martin Hook, in

consideration of the payment of \$500 for one year's lease of an uncouth shanty, 16x25 feet, adjoining the site of said depot. He erected, in connection with this, a shelter-house, 25x50 feet, fitted up a bar and lunch counter, and commenced a career which now justly places him as foremost in his business. Until then, exorbitant prices were charged for all "solids and fluids;" but he began by selling luncheons and "clam-roasts" at extreme low prices, including ice-cream at 15 cents instead of 25 cents, lager at five instead of ten cents per glass, etc., etc., until, at the end of the season, so successful had been the enterprise that the bar-receipts alone were \$6,000; \$3,000 of which was divided as net profits with his business partner, Henry Wulff.

Hook, the leasor, having prided himself on having driven such a sharp bargain, was considerably chagrined when he learned of the result; and when Feltman, at the expiration of his one year's lease, offered him \$1,200 yearly rental for the beach-front only (for which Hook was paying but \$70) it was rejected. It was then offered for \$2,000, which was promptly refused by Feltman. Meanwhile, Henry C. Ditmas' lease of the "Washington Hotel," a low, two-story frame building, 75x25 feet in size, and occupying the present site of what is now the "Sea Beach Hotel," was quite anxious to sell out, having lost considerable. At this time his lease was nearly expired, having but one year longer to run; but, acting upon the advice of Feltman, who instructed him how to proceed, he secured an extension of ten years longer lease, for which Feltman agreed to pay him \$4,000 for all right, title and interest to said new lease. When the money was tendered, however, it was rejected; with the information that he (Ditmas) had been offered \$6,000 for his lease, and would not sell for less. Thereupon Feltman, having been released from his verbal contract, returned to Brooklyn; while Ditmas, after looking in vain for a purchaser of his lease, importuned Feltman again and again, until "sick and discouraged," he readily accepted Feltman's proposition of \$3,800, including all household effects, which in the previous agreement was not enumerated. Immediately upon the transfer of said lease to Mr. Feltman, he had plans drawn of his own architectural designing, for a new building two stories high, 55x125 feet, with a wing of 25x85 feet, and more complete in appointments than any structure then existing on the island. This he submitted to Godfrey C. Gunther, President of the only steam-railway then running to the island, and to him he made a full statement of his intentions, and urged the necessity of later evening trains (than 7:15) from the island, to accommodate thousands of business men and working people, who could by this means avail themselves of the privileges offered at this resort, even after ordinary business hours; but all the arguments he could present failed to induce Mr. Gunther to accede to his wishes.

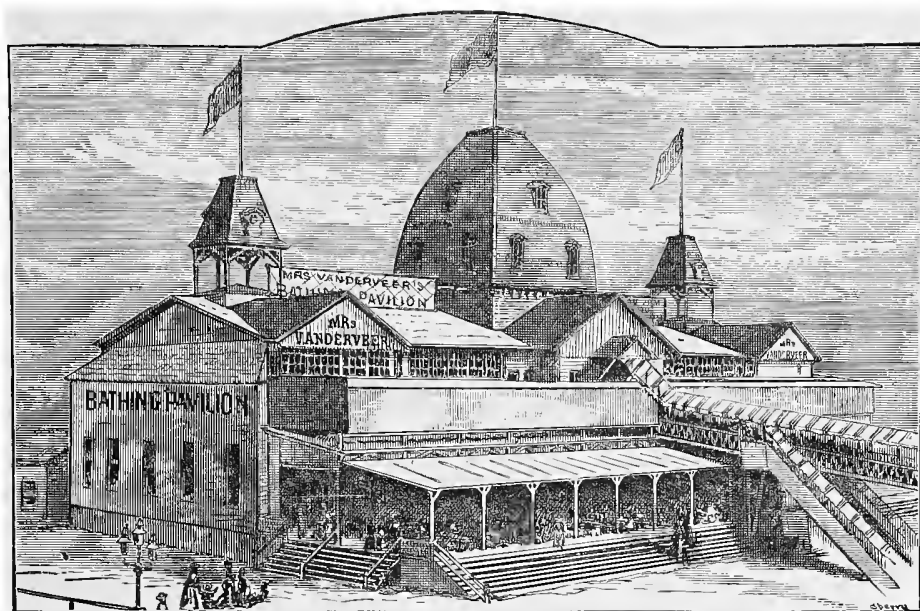
He next applied to the Superintendent of the Brooklyn and Coney Island Horse Car Road, and again was met by rebuffs. The only person he received any encouragement from was Mr. A. R. Culver, whom he met at his office in New York city, and after submitting his plans, etc., he received within one week a decided promise that the new road, when completed, would run late evening trains.

Having succeeded thus far in his plans, he commenced at once the erection of his building, facing it in an easterly direction and toward the terminus of the new railroad. When completed, at an outlay of \$20,000, he named it the "Ocean Pavilion;" advertised very extensively, and engaged for the season Wagnemacher's 71st Regiment Band, which was the first music ever performed on the island under like circumstances. By hard work and dint of perseverance, he overcame all opposition and division. Although apprehen-

sive of the result, his first season in the "Ocean Pavilion" was a success. The following season he was the first to introduce vocal music successfully; since which time, others following his example have caused instrumental and vocal music to be one of the greatest features of Coney Island. Every succeeding season he has added to the original building; until, at the present writing, he has a larger structure, in point of square feet of flooring, than that of any on Coney Island. It contains the largest ball-room in the world, the walls of which are tastefully and elaborately decorated with panels, consisting of allegorical figures, landscapes of German scenes, and beautiful characters representing Spring, Summer, Autumn, Winter, etc., executed by a masterly hand. This, when illuminated at night by eleven electric lights, besides 400 gas-jets, presents a beautiful fairy-land aspect. This magnificent room, three stories high, furnishes ample accommodation for over two thousand dancers upon the floor at one time. Its dimensions are 223 feet in length, by 41 feet and six inches in width, with a ceiling of 32 feet; the roof of which is supported by seventeen iron trusses, and capable of sustaining 250,000 pounds weight. This feature of construction was originally designed for the purpose of a theatre, the balconies of which were to be suspended from the roof; thus leaving the auditorium below entirely free from the always to be dreaded and ever objectionable columns. Or again, should he at any time desire to add more sleeping apartments for guests, he may suspend the entire third floor from the roof and partition it off at pleasure, without the necessity of disfiguring the ball-room in the least, as before mentioned. To this building is added two wings, one of which is 135 feet long by 35 feet wide; the other being 140 feet long by 36 feet wide; while around the entire structure is a large, broad piazza, 15 feet wide, capable of seating 5,000 people comfortably; the entire facilities affording accommodation for 20,000 people. 118 rooms have recently been added in the upper portion of one of the wings, for the use of boarders, each one being large and airy, containing marble wash-basins, gas, and electric bells, and finely carpeted and furnished. The summer garden, quite a feature of this immense establishment, in which is introduced a choice variety of entertainment, is 167 feet long, by 57 feet wide, containing quite 300 evergreen trees, closely planted in large boxes along the sides. It was here Mr. Feltman first introduced to the American public, after a visit to Germany in the fall of 1879, the famous "Tyrolese Warblers;" since which time he has had the best talent which money could obtain.

During his second season as host of the "Ocean Pavilion," initiatory steps were taken to develop a specialty he now largely enjoys, which is that of entertaining lodge-festivals, etc. The steady growth and popularity of this class of patronage may be estimated from the fact, that from two in one season, he has entertained as many as thirty-seven such gatherings, varying from three to ten thousand each; while the excellent character and good order observable at these excursion parties renders the "Ocean Pavilion" the most famous resort on the Atlantic coast.

Mr. Feltman has succeeded far beyond his most sanguine expectations, having received his full share of patronage. He is one of the most affable, energetic, frank and open-hearted men on the beach; while in stature he is medium tall and well-proportioned, quick in his comprehension of business chances as well as in social impulses; "Once a friend always a friend" is his maxim. He points with considerable pride to his out-door garden, consisting of trees and shrubbery, as the only successful effort on Coney Island in rescuing a little of the sand from its normal condition of barrenness, and placing it in condition for thrifty vegetation.



MRS. VANDERVEER'S BATHING PAVILION, WEST BRIGHTON BEACH, CONEY ISLAND.

MRS. WILLIAM VANDERVEER.—Mrs. Vanderveer's pleasant face and buxom figure is well known to the *habitués* of Coney Island; and her life possesses much of the romance of success. A native of Newfoundland—Lucy Devlin by name—she was the youngest of three daughters. Her father, a baker doing a large business, was unfortunately drowned while on his return from a visit to Boston. The bereaved widow came on, with her young family, to Brooklyn, to meet some relatives; but, finding they had removed to Canada, she concluded to remain; and, having a little means, established herself in a small business, in which she was assisted by her daughters. About 1857, Lucy, the subject of our sketch, married Mr. William Vanderveer, a native of Newtown, L. I., and a plasterer and brick-layer, by trade. He was afterward a captain in the Brooklyn police; and, subsequently, held an appointment as inspector of sewers. Mrs. Vanderveer first commenced business on her own account by keeping a fruit and confectionery store at the City Hotel, which formerly occupied the site of the present County Court House. Thirteen years ago, her husband came to Coney Island, in the way of his trade (in partnership with Mr. Dibble); and, a year later, she followed him. Her first venture here was that of a fruit and confectionery stand on the piazza of the Neptune House, which then stood where the Children's Aid Society's place now is. Here she made money, and invested it; at first, in the construction of twelve bathing houses. The next season she increased the number to seventy-five, and the year after, she had two hundred in use upon the beach. These she worked until she had earned sufficient with which to erect a hotel—the present Vanderveer House. This was in 1875; and, after that was paid for, she erected the present elegant and commodious *Bathing Pavilion* known by her name. Both of these buildings were constructed by Supervisor McKane. The ocean-front which

Mrs. Vanderveer occupies is about 175 feet in width, stretching back to the street, and most conveniently located to the Culver Railroad Depot, the Iron-Piers, etc.

The Pavilion is a picturesque and admirably planned building, of 172 feet length and 65 depth; three stories in height. It furnishes accommodations for 500 bathers; as well as a large Marvin safe for the reception of their valuables while bathing; and it also has *warm* salt-water baths; an excellent restaurant and bar, reception-parlors, etc. Its cost was nearly \$46,000.

Mrs. Vanderveer has not been unmindful of the personal safety of her customers, as well as of their valuables. She first purchased the patent of Captain Street's Patent Elevated Life-Lines, which are now in very general use; keeps a life-boat out constantly upon the water in front of her establishment during the day; and two beach-guardsmen on duty daily. As many as 300 or 400 persons are frequently found bathing at Mrs. Vanderveer's beach. No less than 5,500 bathing suits form a part of the equipment of the establishment; for the washing and drying of which there is an extensive laundry and steam drying-room, from which, also, is furnished the motive-power for the electric-lights which supply the Pavilion, Hotel, Iron Pier and Observatory near by. Mrs. Vanderveer naturally recalls with pleasurable pride her early struggles in the erection and equipment of this Pavilion; which, when furnished, her sons painted for her, and which her daughters assist her in caring for. Not less is she proud of her very excellent hotel, 100 by 40 feet in size, and with three stories, containing 36 guest-rooms, parlors, a large bar and restaurant; and having attached a livery of twenty horses, etc.

All this, as the result of thirteen years of a woman's labor and industry, is a record which cannot be despised; and forms a portion of Coney Island history which cannot be overlooked by the veracious chronicler.

His natural repugnance to any but open-and-above-board work was in no wise relieved by the tales poured into his ears, of being sent to the Government silver mines, if detected, where he might expect to pass the remainder of his life as a convict; and by the moral certainty that, while the captain and mate were reaping a golden harvest from the transaction, neither would hesitate a moment to sacrifice him to save themselves, should necessity arise. Fortunately, however, the stock was all landed without detection; and the vessel, well loaded for the return voyage, weighed anchor for home. The homeward trip was a terrible one. The vessel, heavily laden with sugar, hides, indigo and coffee, encountered a terrific gale for the whole passage; the sailors were nearly all sick with Chagres fever; and Engeman was obliged to perform the duties of cook, waiter, sailor and do all other kinds of work necessary on shipboard. When, on arrival at New Orleans, the crew were paid off, young Engeman received the princely sum of ten dollars as his full wages for the trip! But, little did he care for that; his health was fully restored, and thus his main object had been accomplished. A day or two found him an omnibus-driver, in the streets of New Orleans, sleeping in a hay-loft in lieu of bed; economizing in every possible way to save sufficient to pay steamboat fare to Fort Smith, Ark., whither he proceeded as soon as financially able. Here he entered the employ of the United States Government in the transportation, by mule trains, of rations to the army stationed at Forts Washita, Arbuckle and Cobb, and Antelope Hills. This was in the summer of 1859, in the fall of which year he engaged in the completion of Fort Cobb (Indian Territory). The following spring and summer he accompanied the government forces in pursuing marauding Indians on the Canadian River; and, the next winter the troops were engaged in hunting up the different tribes at Fort Cobb, Washita River, giving them rations of flour and beef, and in preparing them to settle and farm the fertile lands of the Washita Valley.

Early in the spring of 1861, the government despatched the trains to Fort Belknap, Texas; whence they were ordered to Fort Colorado. Here the different infantry and cavalry companies were gathered together, and from this place they proceeded to Fort Mason.

The civil war had broken out, and Texas Rangers gathered ominously about them; these, in turn, were followed by the Indians, who, at a safe distance in the rear, were laying the country waste. From Fort Mason, the Unionists retreated to San Antonio; from thence to Green Lake, the Rangers following. Green Lake is but a few miles from Powder Horn, from which those who remained faithful to the union cause (among whom was Engeman) took ship for New York, touching at Key West and Cuba on the way. Arrived at New York, Engeman and most of the party proceeded to Washington. Here he was tendered the position of Colonel of the first regiment raised there, by General Holt, to protect the capital. This offer was made on the representations of General Palmer, who had had ample opportunities of knowing our hero's eminent qualifications for such a position. But Engeman refused the offer. Too much of his life had been passed on the frontier to render the tendered position such a one as suited his temperament. With some of his Western comrades, he wished again to go to the frontier. Railroad travel, however, had been so impeded that leaving Washington was not an easy matter. The first attempt the party made was, *via* the Relay House (between Baltimore and Washington), whence they proposed going to St. Louis. Before reaching the Relay House, however, they were surrounded and captured by the guards, who imagined

them to be rebels engaged in tearing up the railroad tracks.

Their protestations were of no avail, and they were marched back to Washington; and, on Pennsylvania avenue, were in imminent danger of being lynched by a mob. At the critical moment, some of General Palmer's cavalry chanced to be passing, and recognizing their old Texan comrades, saved their lives, and restored them to liberty. So great, however, was the exasperation of the mob, that Engeman and his associates had to be taken to the jail to save them from the fury of the populace. After a few days, when the excitement had somewhat subsided, Engeman and his associates quietly left Washington; and, *via* Harper's Ferry, proceeded toward St. Louis; narrowly escaping capture, this time by the Confederates, on suspicion of being spies. At St. Louis the party separated, and Mr. Engeman went to Leavenworth, Kansas, and engaged to take government trains to St. Louis, transporting ammunition from the arsenals there to the different armies and steamboats. He was sent from St. Louis to Rolla, Mo., with army wagons to get ready for the battle of Springfield, where the Union forces were beaten, and driven back to Rolla with the loss of Gen. Lyon. From Rolla they were ordered to Sedalia, Mo.; thence to Leavenworth, with all transportation by land. On their way to Leavenworth, at a place called Lone Jack, they were surrounded by guerillas and detained two or three days. Measles broke out among the Union troops, it was snowing furiously, and the only protection for the sick were the government wagons. On the approach of the Irish Brigade from Sedalia, the guerillas left and the brigade escorted the sick and enfeebled remnants of the army to Leavenworth. At Leavenworth, Engeman had charge of all the government wagons during the winter. The following spring he hauled a battery of artillery from Leavenworth to Fort Union, New Mexico, which he left there, and took a large number of government wagons to Denver, Colorado. At Denver, he was offered the entire charge of the government works and corrals, but declined the position and returned to Leavenworth, by way of the Platte River, only one man accompanying him in the dreary ride in an old wagon, through the homes of the Sioux Nation, who, through the scarcity of buffalo meat, had been compelled to use dog's flesh as daily diet. Arriving at Leavenworth, and finding business slack, Engeman proceeded to St. Louis, where he met Mr. George Bell, an old friend, who had charge of all the government corrals at that port, and with whom he engaged as assistant. After being with Mr. Bell a year, the latter went home, leaving Engeman in entire charge and command of all the corrals and animals; the reception, inspection and shipping of all horses and mules purchased for the government at St. Louis for the use of the different Union armies. So varied and onerous were Engeman's duties of inspection here, that five horses, daily, were tired out in succession in carrying him from place to place as his business called him. During his term there Engeman bought and inspected for the government over one million of horses and mules, a larger number, it is believed, than was handled by any other one man. With the close of the war in 1865 this business, of course, ceased. Had Engeman so wished he could readily and honestly have left the government employ a millionaire. But a love for money has never been one of his characteristics, as all who know him will testify.

Domestic difficulties interrupted his enjoyment of life, and made him desirous of seclusion and quiet, after the toils he had undergone. In visiting New York and Brooklyn, he came to Coney Island, and at once was enamored with its beauty, healthfulness and eminent fitness as a place



William F. Engerman

suited to his taste and feeling. Enquiries, made of those who would be likely to know, showed him the tract now known as the Race Track, the Ocean Hotel property, and the Hotel Brighton property; these, together, forming one of the original divisions of Coney Island, known as the Middle Division. This property was purchased from the two or three hundred persons who had, by continued succession of inheritance, come to be the owners; a hotel was erected as a family home and the coveted boon of *quiet* seemed at last to have been secured by Mr. Engeman. But his mind, used to activity, refused the rest he had laid out for himself; and, a year or two later, we find him purchasing the unexpired term of a lease on Coney Island, fronting on the ocean. As an instance of his energy, it should be stated, that the *first ocean pier* was erected here by him; that the idea was conceived on the 29th day of June, and the pier completed, opened for visitors, and doing business on the 4th of July thereafter, although one of the intervening days was Sunday. The building of the *Bathing Pavilion* well serves to illustrate the indomitable energy, and determination to carry out his plans, once matured, so eminently characteristic of Mr. Engeman. When the Hotel Brighton was about being located, and the premises whereon it stands were purchased from Mr. Engeman, an arrangement was made that he should have the exclusive right to erect baths, he paying a percentage on receipts, as an equivalent to the company, therefor.

To accommodate this custom Mr. Engeman erected a two-story and basement bathing pavilion—four hundred feet long, fifty feet wide, two stories high above the basement, with an upper piazza of thirty and a lower piazza of fifty feet wide, extending along the entire front. The basement was divided into kitchen, ice-house, dormitories for employees and several hundred bath-houses, to be used when exigencies required. The main floor was occupied by a spacious dining-hall, bar-room, billiard-room and the various offices necessary. The second floor was devoted to bathers, and contained about one thousand bath-rooms; the entrance to the bathing department on the second floor being by means of a spacious staircase from the main hallway below; and the exit for bathers to the water being by means of a wide bridge whose spacious arch spanned the distance from the front of the second story to the water's edge. The idea of the bath-houses on the second or upper story was novel, and—as the sequel proved—successful.

The building was commenced on the 9th day of May, 1878, on which day the first of the piles on which the building rested was driven. One of the chief difficulties was encountered almost at the outset of the undertaking, when it was ascertained that to have the large structure completed, furnished and equipped in season, would necessitate the getting of lumber and timber on the ground very much more rapidly

than could be accomplished by any then used method of transportation. But the fertile mind of Mr. Engeman soon overcame this obstacle, and in a most novel method. Aware of the fact that, at certain times of tide, any floating object in the water near the shore would assuredly be thrown up by the waves, he conceived the idea of purchasing worn-out canal-boats, lading them, securing the cargo with hawsers lashed around the entire hull and cargo, and then towing the entire vessel and cargo out of Gowanus Canal, through the Narrows, around Coney Island Point, and fairly out to sea to a point in front of the location of the proposed building; there coming in shore as close as possible, let go of the canal-boat, the tug proceeding homeward and the canal-boat striking the shore, would go to pieces; the lumber and timber drifting on shore at the precise spot needed. Nine times in succession was this unprecedented feat repeated; save that the last canal-boat was beached and unloaded three successive times before it was broken up. It was by the aid of such appliances as these that Mr. Engeman was enabled to complete his building, put in steam-drying apparatus to dry the used bathing dresses, immense ranges in the kitchen, furnish the entire place with not only bath-suits, but with bar and restaurant supplies and furniture—all by the 18th of June, or *less than seven weeks* from the time of commencing work, a feat certainly unparalleled in the history of the county.

For years the attention of Mr. Engeman had been turned toward making a *race-track* by the sea; and, in the Spring of 1879, his aspirations were realized. With his accustomed energy he had the land surveyed, the track laid out and built on the marsh which formed the rear part of his Coney Island property, with dirt and loam carted from the city's hills—the lumber drawn to the ground by the horse-cars from the city—the grand-stand, field-stand, sheds, paddocks, bars and offices, judges' and timers' stands, and all the equipments of a well-equipped race-course completed for use in an incredibly short time—viz., between the first week in May and the middle of June. In this, as well as the former enterprise, amid every discouragement, his brain conceived and his untiring energy pushed these works forward to completion.

The innumerable privations endured in early life have left their impression on Mr. Engeman's mind and naturally generous and open-hearted character, and have made him very tender toward the weaker sex and toward youth, who can always find in him a sympathizing friend and an earnest adviser. Warm in his friendships, and, by no means implacable in his resentments, he is ever more ready to forgive than to punish. While his liberality has made him hosts of friends, his qualities of mind and heart serve to keep these friends warm and steadfast to his great and varied interests.





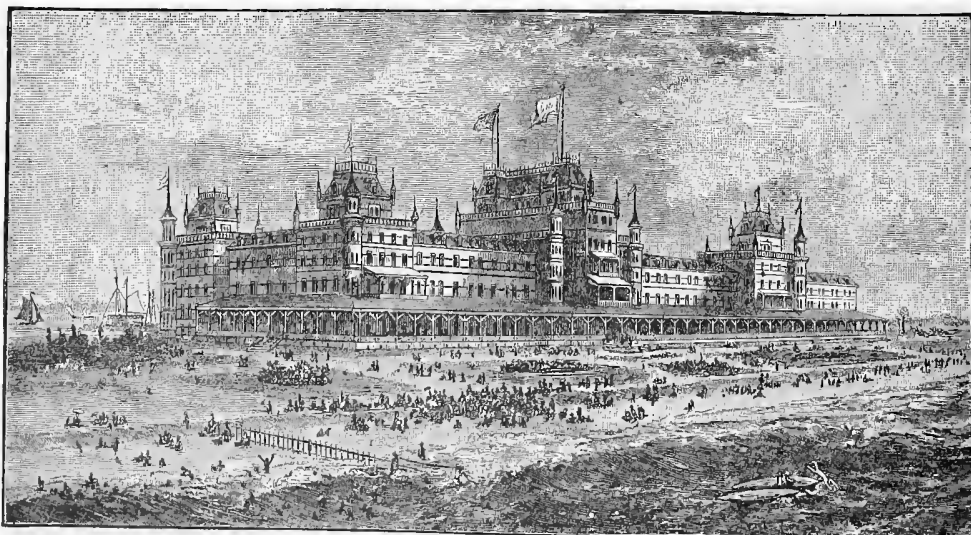
MANHATTAN BEACH HOTEL, CONEY ISLAND.

The Eastern section of Coney Island lying between the Ocean and Sheepshead Bay, known in old times as "Sedge Bank," and now as "**Manhattan Beach**," is reached by the *Marine Railway*, running from the Hotel Brighton—and built on piles the whole distance, thus allowing ingress and egress of the waves, and making travel possible in all weathers.

Manhattan Beach has a sea-front of over two miles, fringed with a fine sandy beach, and presenting an unparalleled view of the Ocean. This section of the Island, (as we have already mentioned on page 195), owes its present splendid improvements to the foresight and energy of Austin Corbin, Esq., the well-known banker and railroad magnate. The "**MANHATTAN BEACH HOTEL**," and the "**ORIENTAL HOTEL**" (built in 1880, with a view to the especial needs of families as permanent guests), are both unique and imposing struc-

tures—and, from the rear of the latter, the *N. Y. and Manhattan Beach R. R.* connects, by means of its various ramifications (viz.: L. I. R. R., to Flathush avenue; to Greenpoint and Long Island City, Brooklyn; and to Thirty-fourth street, and foot of Whitehall and Pine streets, New York City), with the cities of New York and Brooklyn. The Excursion and Picnic Pavilion, the mammoth Bathing Pavilion, Music Stands, etc., which form the necessary adjuncts of these two large hotels, surrounded as they are with extensive walks, lawns and flower-beds, laid out in the most exquisite style of the landscape gardener's art, form—with the ocean view, and the inland view, beyond Sheepshead Bay—a *tout-ensemble* of most surpassing attractiveness.

The railroad facilities for reaching Coney Island will be found fully described in our chapter on *Railroads and Travel in Kings County*.



ORIENTAL HOTEL, MANHATTAN BEACH, CONEY ISLAND.



John Y. McKane

JOHN Y. MCKANE.—It is certainly fortunate for the town of Gravesend, beset as it is, on all sides, by grasping monopolies; and flooded on all days of the week, during four months of the year, by the population of the neighboring cities, that its principal town-officer is "to the manor-born," conversant with all its wants and mindful of all its vested interests; and that he is a man of nerve, of tact and of honesty. Such a man is Supervisor McKane. He is of that excellent North-of-Ireland (Scotch-Irish) stock, which for the two past centuries has furnished so valuable an element to our American population. He was born August 10, 1841, in the County Antrim, Ireland; and, when fifteen months' old, was brought by his mother to Gravesend, where his father had preceded them by a few months. His earliest education was at the Gravesend district-schools; and, from the age of eight to sixteen years, he was occupied in working in the garden, digging clams, and all the employments which usually make up a country-boy's life. When sixteen years of age, he commenced to learn the carpenter's trade with Abraham J. Van Dyke, of Flatbush, remaining with him for a year until Mr. Van Dyke went West. He then went to work with William Vause, builder, of Flatbush, for another year, when his old "boss" returned, and John resumed his apprenticeship with him, remaining with him four or five years. Then, in 1866, he commenced on his own account as carpenter and builder in the village of Sheepshead Bay, Gravesend. His first public office was that of Constable, which he held for one year. Then he was elected one of the Commissioners of Common Lands for a term of seven years. Then he was chosen Supervisor of the town, of which he is now serving his third, two-year, term. Since its present organization, in 1883, he has been President of the County Board of Supervisors. The confidence which the people of Gravesend repose in Mr. McKane is evidenced by the number and varied character of the offices of public trust with which they have invested him. He is a Police Commissioner; President of the Town Board; President of the Board of Health; President of the Police Board, and President of the Water Board. He is also, by election of the Police Board, the Chief of Police, having under his control 150 police, 20 of whom are regular town police, the balance being specials, during the "Coney Island season."

In addition to these public duties, he carries on an extensive business as a builder, having built (with the exception of the Manhattan Beach, Oriental and Brighton) nearly all the hotels, and two-thirds of all the other buildings on Coney Island, as well as in the town of Gravesend. He has long been a consistent member and supporter of the Methodist Episcopal church of Sheepshead Bay; and has been, for seventeen years, the faithful Superintendent of its Sabbath-school. He is a member of Franklin Lodge, I. O. O. F., and has held all the offices within its gift. He is also a member of the Mutual Benefit Society, Odd Fellows.

Mr. McKane was married, in 1865, to Fanny, daughter of Capt. Cornelius B. and Maria (Coles) Nostrand, of Gravesend, by whom he has a pleasant little family of three boys and a daughter. His venerable parents reside in Sheepshead Bay, happy in the respect and confidence which they see reposed in their son by their fellow-citizens.

Despite the number of official honors enjoyed by Supervisor McKane, he is no politician. A democrat by preference, he has never felt himself bound by, nor has he ever been elected on, strict party-lines. A friend, who has known him long and well, writes to us of him, thus:

"The life of Supervisor McKane, the struggles through which he has passed, and the difficulties which he has over-

come in order to reach his present position of honor and influence, are well calculated to bring out, in strong relief, those sterling qualities of character which have brought him into such worthy prominence among his fellow-citizens.

One marked characteristic of Mr. McKane is his thorough honesty of purpose. This is conceded by persons of every political faith, if they give an honest expression of opinion.

As the highest officer of the town, he has ever seemed most anxious that all his public acts should tell for the benefit of his constituents; and we believe the man is yet to be found who can justly point his finger at a single instance wherein he has stained, or in any way compromised, his official integrity. While his public position and influence would give him abundant opportunity to enrich himself, if he so desired, by winking at the violation of law, and by other questionable means, yet we do not believe he ever added to his possessions one dollar of unlawful gain.

Those who have known Mr. McKane longest and best cannot fail to notice that courage and perseverance are also marked traits of his character. When once convinced that a certain course of action is right and in the line of duty, he does not hesitate to advance on that line in spite of political opposition, and the probability of making political enemies. We can say of him what we wish could be said of every public man, he is not afraid to do right. We fully believe him incapable of political intrigue, bribery or fraud.

He has nipped in the bud many a conspiracy to violate the law, and has spoiled many a little scheme of the gambling fraternity at Coney Island, which, if he had been willing to pass unnoticed, would have brought him no small gain. But he would spurn wealth that must be gained in this way, at the expense of his honor. His physical courage is as marked as his moral; no threats of political destruction or physical violence deter him, for a moment, as chief of police, from bringing the strong hand of the law to bear upon every form of iniquity which is properly brought to his notice. He also generally accomplishes what he undertakes. His perseverance is such as to overcome all obstacles in his way. To this is owing, in no small degree, his rapid rise from the humble position of his childhood, to the highest honors in the gift of his fellow-townsmen.

But above all else, stands the modesty and grace of a Christian character. The demands which his position make upon him every day in the week, render it specially difficult to live in strict observance of all religious duties, as would be most congenial to him if he were master of his own time; but, in all his busy life as a master builder, he has made it a point never to yield to the many solicitations to do business on the Sabbath. That day, he has said, should be reserved for his own personal duties, and as a day of rest.

He is also tender-hearted, and generous to a fault. We venture to say that he fills to-day more official positions than any other man in Kings Co. The present County Board of Supervisors have proved their confidence in him by electing him president *pro tem.* of their honorable body; and, indeed, he seems to have been the only man in the Board upon whom both political parties were willing to unite.

His official life has been untarnished, and his private life above reproach. We do not for a moment suppose him to be above all the mistakes and frailties of human nature. That he has done some things in public and private life which he regrets we have no doubt, but, as a public man, we believe him to be honestly striving to do his duty; and in his most trying position we believe no man could do better, or more wisely administer the responsible trust conferred upon him by his fellow-citizens."

EDWARD RIDLEY.—The life and career of Mr. Ridley is an example of what may be attained by a well-balanced, vigorous mind, united with enterprise, energy, industry and integrity; characteristics which form the character of a successful merchant, and which, if possessed by a young man in the beginning of his business career, are equivalent to wealth, for they are sure to bring wealth. A discriminating writer has said, "Love of business, and capacity to conduct business, stand next to affluence."

These qualities entered largely into the character of Mr. Ridley—a character which needs no eulogistic language to array it for publication; for it is its own eulogist, speaking from a conspicuous position founded on a well-spent life. It would, therefore, be injured by any words of adulation.

But a virtuous life demands our reverence; public and private worth, our admiration; long and practical usefulness, our gratitude; therefore, in referring to one whose life fairly elicits these sentiments, it is an act of justice to conscientiously and honestly speak of him as those who knew him best would and do speak. If he possessed rare, commendable, or even brilliant endowments, it is not adulation or undue eulogy, in writing his memoir, to give him all the credit they deserve; it is but speaking the language of truth and soberness.

This leads us to say that Mr. Ridley's character as disclosed in the record of his life, may be described as follows, and we believe all who knew him will say it is a true mental portrait of him.

His moral and intellectual qualities were in harmony; his principles commanded the respect of the great commercial community in which he lived; his private virtues attracted the affection and regard of his friends. He was modest, claimed no merit, assumed no importance and never alluded to the wealth he had acquired. He was charitable, not impulsively bestowing his means without discrimination, but with judicious selection, and from a sense of duty. His economy was exact, but liberal; the recipients of his bounty were numerous. He had a high sense of justice, and the claims of humanity. His religion was a part of his being, and displayed itself in the uniform tenor of his life. He acted under the habitual conviction of accountability; his feelings were always under the control of his will, hence he was never guilty of those extravagances of conduct which too often mar the career of men in conspicuous positions.

He was tenacious in his friendships—equally so, we believe, in his enmities. Having once had good cause to doubt a man's sincerity or integrity, he never after fully trusted him. His disposition was cheerful—his conversation instructive and entertaining. Whatever were his faults—for he was human and, of course, possessed the weaknesses and frailties of human nature—they were overshadowed by his virtues.

Few men ever assimilated themselves so easily and

naturally to the detail of business as he did; few men were more evenly balanced or self-controlled under the sudden emergencies and vicissitudes of the commercial world than he; if the tide was against him, he breasted it courageously and hopefully; if in his favor, he was calm and complaisant.

Such we believe to be the characteristics of Edward Ridley; given without embellishment, with rigid adherence to truth. It will now be our pleasant duty to briefly trace his life and career from its beginning to the time when summoned by death to the unseen world.

He was born in Leicester, England, in the year 1816, and was a lineal descendant of Bishop Ridley, who, with his brother-martyr Latimer, suffered at the stake for his inflexible adherence to those principles which his conscience assured him were right.

Mr. Ridley's father was James Mosley Ridley, gentleman; held in high esteem for those inbred qualities that qualified him for the respectable position he held in the place of his nativity, that of an accomplished English gentleman. Among his most intimate friends was Sir Edward Wilde, so well known in the English history of that day.

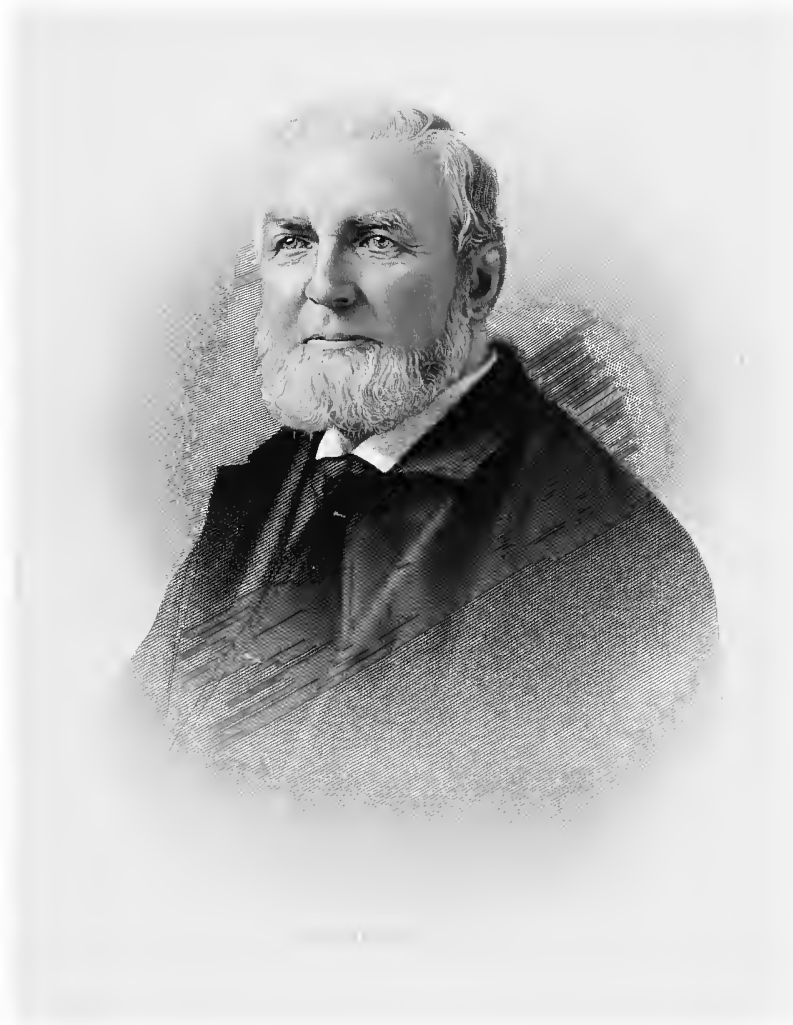
His mother was a lady, in every respect qualified for the wife of a man like James Ridley.

As Mr. Ridley desired his son to enter the legal profession, he was carefully educated, and taught those religious principles which imbued his whole life. As his father was a member of the Church of England, he was reared under the teachings of that church.

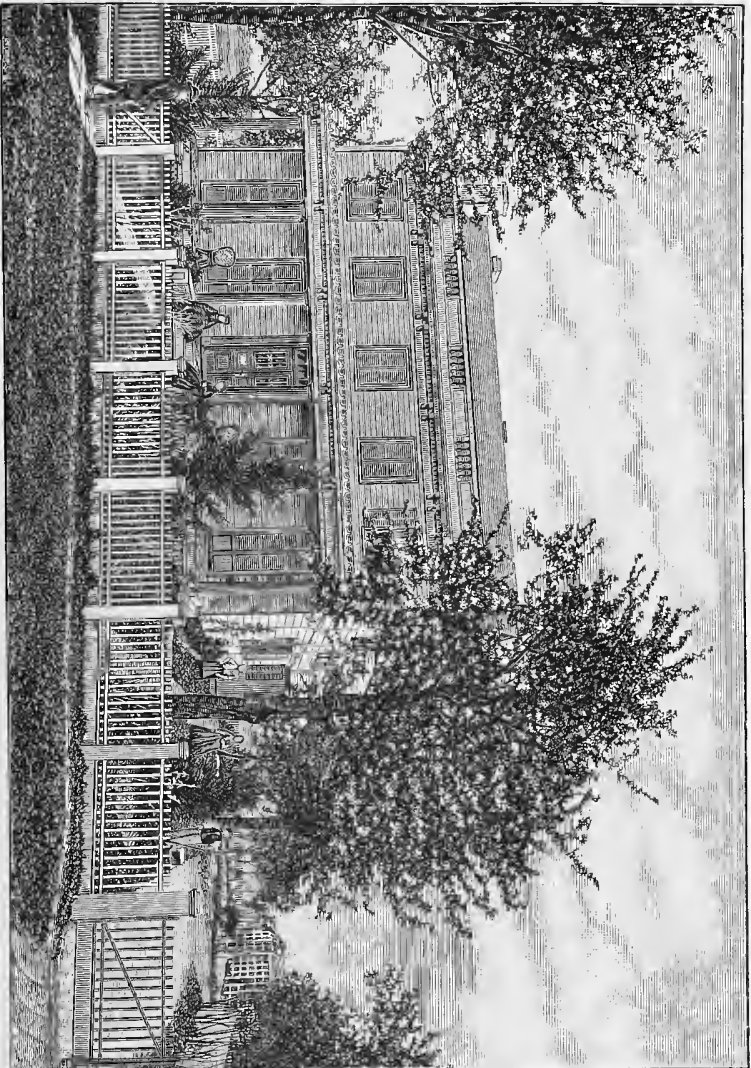
There was much in the youth of young Ridley that gave indication of future eminence; but, as he advanced in years it became apparent that the tendencies of his mind were leading him to the calling of a merchant, and not to the bar. Still, he was a constant and an appreciative student, devoting his leisure hours to books.

With considerable reluctance his father assented to his choice of business; and, according to the custom of England, he was apprenticed to a highly respectable merchant. Having completed his mercantile education, he began business in his native town under prosperous circumstances; but, by the failure of business houses whose paper he had endorsed to a large extent, he was obliged to suspend. After honorably settling with his creditors, with the means he had left, he emigrated to this country and became a resident of Albany.

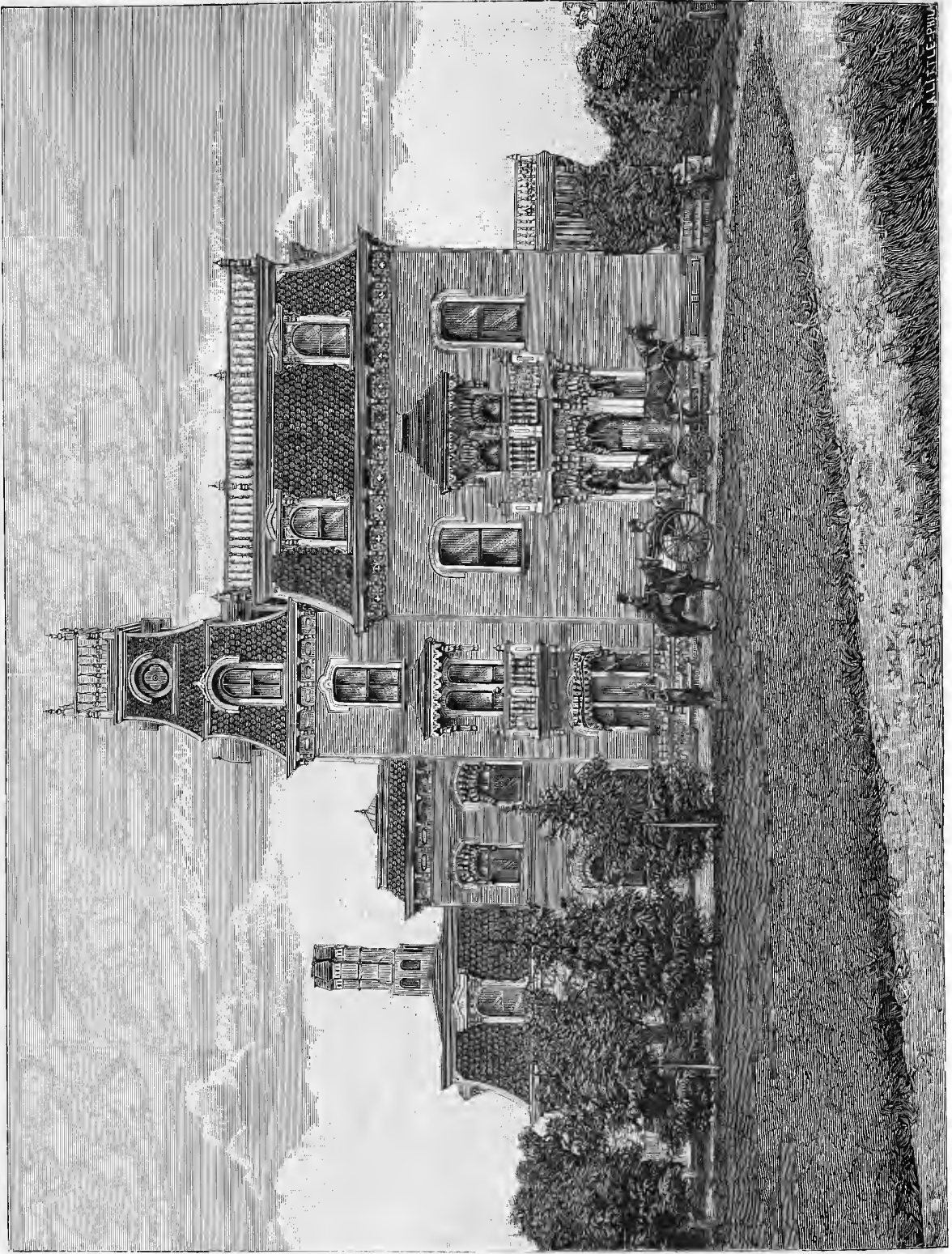
Here he began business as a dry goods merchant, attaining such success that he was enabled to establish a branch at Saratoga. He was then but 30 years of age, and the management of these two concerns was a severe test upon his business ability. But he was equal to the emergency, and success attended both houses. At length his enterprising spirit induced him to look for a more extended field of exertion, directing his attention to the City of New York, that metropolis



Edw. Ridley



FORMER RESIDENCE OF THE LATE EDWARD RIDLEY.



RESIDENCE OF THE LATE EDWARD RIDLEY.

which, while it affords great facilities for amassing wealth, presents gigantic difficulties in doing so.

Accordingly he drew his business at Albany and Saratoga to a close, and early in the year 1849, became a competitor for commercial prosperity and wealth in New York. He entered upon his career in a careful and unpretending way, in Grand street. His store, when first opened, was 12x30 feet in extent; but his business gradually increased from this small beginning to be the most extensive and successful in the city.

It would be the work of supererogation to describe in detail his mercantile career. That he attained distinguished success and great wealth by his singular business accomplishments and honorable dealing, succinctly describes it. It may not, however, be improper to add that the establishment of which Mr. Ridley was at the head at the time of his death, occupies four and one-half acres of ground, bounded by Grand, Allen and Orchard streets, and that in it 1,700 persons found and still find employment.

In 1879, Mr. Ridley returned to England for the purpose of discharging some debts which he left when he came to this country. The fidelity to conscience which governed him in the payment of those debts most truthfully describes his real character. It is not strange that such a man should become an ornament to the mercantile world, a stalwart pillar in the business fabric of the metropolis.

Mr. Ridley was twice married; first to Miss Elizabeth Smith, of Leicester, England, Oct. 23d, 1837. There were born to this marriage five children, three sons and two daughters—James Mosley, Albert and Arthur John, Fannie Louise, and Emma Elizabeth, all of whom are living except James M., who died several years ago. His two sons, Albert and Arthur, were his partners under the firm name and style of "EDWARD RIDLEY & SONS." The latter continue the business.

Mr. Ridley's first wife died in 1863. In January, 1865, Mr. Ridley was united by marriage to Caroline Wilhelmina Yevance, of Philadelphia. His marriage relations appear to have been happy.

Most of the time during his second marriage, Mr. Ridley was subject to attacks of that fatal disease, apoplexy, which finally terminated his life; and it was only by the most tender care, faithful and untiring watchfulness, that the fatal stroke was so long averted.

To his second marriage there was born one daughter, Clara W. Ridley, born July 25th, 1867, a young lady of many accomplishments, most tenderly attached to her father, an attachment which was mutual.

In his circle of home life Mr. Ridley was chivalric in devotion and inexhaustible in affection. His elegant home at Gravesend was a pleasing retreat from the wearing cares and labors of Grand street. This had been his home for over seventeen years; a home built and furnished, its grounds beautified under the superin-

tendence of Mrs. Ridley, with special regard to his health and comfort.

He usually reached his store about eleven o'clock in the forenoon; leaving it at six P. M. in his carriage. After the opening of the great bridge he crossed it every day, morning and evening, down to about the time of his death, reaching his home after a drive of over seven miles. As he left all the cares and responsibilities of his business in Grand street, his home to him was like another world—a world of peace, quiet and rest, and we may well say of happiness. Here he found time to study the contents of a library which he had collected with the judgment and taste of a scholar.

The discipline of his early education, ripened by contact with the world, rendered him an appreciative and critical reader of books. Not long after he came to this country, he united with the Methodist Episcopal Church, sincerely attached to it by conviction but without bigotry in head or heart.

In 1874 he was ordained a minister in that church, but his ministrations seem to have been confined, especially during the absence of the pastor, to the church at Parkville, of which he was a member and the principal founder. He occupied its pulpit on the Sunday before his death, and preached for nearly an hour with great earnestness and much interest to his auditors.

He was one of the most industrious of men; would leave his business in New York, and return to his home; and, after a pleasant reunion with his family, he would seek his study, where he often remained engaged until a late hour.

He was fond of music, especially sacred music. Every evening, before his family retired, with the accustomed family worship, he would unite with them in singing his favorite hymn—"Nearer my God to thee." This was repeated on the night in which, before the dawning of another day, he saw the last of earth, with singular solemnity and with something of a premonition of the sad event so soon to follow.

Mr. Ridley's death was very sudden and unexpected. On Monday afternoon he left Grand street, at the usual hour, for his home, apparently in his usual health. After spending the evening with his family, he retired. He remained in bed a half hour, when he arose, as Mrs. Ridley believed, for some purpose connected with his library, as he occasionally did. A brief time elapsed, when she was startled by his groans; she hastened to him, reaching him only in time to listen to the utterance of a few affectionate parting sentences, and to his declaration that he was dying.

It needs no words of ours to describe, if we could, the bitter anguish that thus suddenly fell upon this happy household.

Thus lived and thus died Edward Ridley. We cannot conclude our sketch of him in more appropriate language than that contained in the following beautiful tribute paid to his memory by another.

"He had none of the pride of wealth or the arrogance of aristocracy; though giving largely to the church he never did so in a manner to inspire thoughts that he considered himself above others. During the many years that he passed at Gravesend, he never departed from his charming Christian simplicity; and, by everyone who knew him, he was looked up to more for his many virtues than his great riches. Even in matters of importance he was inclined rather to have others express their will than insist upon his own opinion. To his sons he has left an inheritance in his example of a good life, far richer and better than the munificent bequests they received from him."

WILLIAM H. STILLWELL, a lineal descendant, in the eighth generation, of Nicholas Stillwell, the emigrant of 1638, was born at Gravesend, L. I., June 28, 1832, where he received such elementary education as the district-school there then afforded. At the age of nineteen, he accepted a position as teacher of the district-school at Grassy Pond, Queens County, and, in succession, in the schools at Gravesend Neck and Gravesend Village. Having taught himself the elements of land-surveying, he gradually worked himself into a considerable practice as a land-surveyor. This extended, in time, till he came to be recognized as an authority on matters connected with his profession. Elected by his neighbors to the position of Justice of the Peace, for several successive terms, he left that office with a clear record as an upright, honest, fearless official. In 1857 he was chosen as clerk at the Alms-house department, which position he filled for seven years, during which time it was his province to examine and audit all bills, which amounted to some three hundred thousand dollars per annum in value; and, on his retirement, his employers unanimously gave him a certificate in which they bear witness to his fidelity to his trust, by saying that his accounts were "invariably correct in every respect." He next built and established a grocery store at Unionville, which he kept with moderate success for a year or more. During all this while, he occupied his leisure moments in studying law under the general direction of Hon. Philip S. Crooke, and for which his term of service as Justice had given him a decided taste. Having been admitted to practice he removed to Brooklyn, and there opened an office. He has been en-



WILLIAM H. STILLWELL.

gaged in various matters of local enterprise, notably the purchase of the Manhattan Beach property, and perfecting the title thereto. In 1874, he accepted a position in the Corbin Banking Company's office, No. 61 Broadway, New York, where he remained for four years; when he exchanged it for a better position with William A. Engeman, on Coney Island; retaining, however, his Brooklyn office. His chief characteristic—unflinching honesty and integrity—has won him hosts of friends, while his intimate knowledge of all matters pertaining to real-estate in Gravesend, make his services much sought after by those who are interested. He is pleasant and social, yet domestic troubles have caused him to prefer solitude. His genealogical notes on the family whose name he bears, attest his aptitude for close, diligent, painstaking attention to details and office work. He has, also, in manuscript, a nearly completed *History of Coney Island*, of great antiquarian research and historical merit; of which the editor of this work has, by his kind permission, largely availed himself, and which, we trust, will be published, at no distant day.

HISTORY

OF THE

TOWN OF FLATBUSH.

By REV.



A. M.

THE BEGINNINGS of Settlement of the towns upon the west end of Long Island are somewhat difficult to define. The English, who settled its eastern extremity, came mostly in groups, or colonies, from Connecticut or from the Massachusetts Bay, with well defined religious or temporal motives, and frequently with previously-perfected church and political organizations. On the contrary, the Dutch, although naturally clannish, seem to have wandered to the western shore of Long Island, from their first settlement at New Amsterdam, mostly as individual settlers. For purposes of mutual protection, readiness of retreat, and nearness to a market for their farm-produce, they secured farms along the shore, until the whole shore, from the Waale-boght to the ocean at Gravesend, was taken up. Not until then did they venture further inland; and we find patents granted, one after another, for Breuckelen, for Gravesend; then for Amersfort or Flatlands.

Soon, the hardy Dutch farmers discovered that the lands in, or near, the woods covering the ridge north of Amersfort, and extending a mile or more to the south, were more fertile than those upon the open flats between s'Gravesende and Amersfort. That the settlement of the town was begun in this manner, *from the south*, and not, as has been generally supposed, from the north, by persons moving over the hill from Breuckelen, is evident from the following fact: that we learn of no purchases of farms at Breuckelen at any distance back from the river, towards the hills and woods of Flatbush. Again, the first deed of land here, dated June 6, 1636, is for a tract at the *southern* boundary of the present village, conveyed by the Indians to Andries Hudden and Wolphert Gerritsen, and called "The Little Flats." Another deed was given, about the same time, to Wouter Van Twiller, the Director, for land in the same vicinity, called "Twiller's Flats." These three tracts lie partly in Flatbush and partly in Flatlands. But the earliest deed to land *within* the bounds of the present town is to Jacobus Van Corlaer, for a tract in its south-

easterly corner, designated as "Corlaer's Flats." This view is fortified by the facts: that the largest proportion of old houses were in the southern and central portion of the village; and that the road over the hill to Breuckelen was through a continuous and dense forest—being, in fact, little more than a crooked Indian-trail. If we consider that, even in later times, this road afforded a most difficult route over which the farmers of the villages south of Brooklyn were obliged to haul their produce to market, it is evident that, in the earlier times, household goods, farm-produce, etc., could only have been conveyed, to and from Flatbush, either by boat to Gravesend Bay; or, by the "shore-road," to Gravesend; and thence to Amersfort. Even sixty-one years after (1697–80), as we learn from the *Journal of the Labadists*, Jasper Dankers and Peter Sluyter, this road was a wretched one. "Taking our leave [we] rode on to 'tVlacke Bos, a village situated about an hour and a half's distance from there, upon the same plain, which is very large. This village seems to have better farms than the bay [Flatlands], and yields fully as much revenue. Riding through it, we came to the woods and hills, which are *very stony and uncomfortable* to ride over." But still stronger proof is found in the fact stated by these travellers, that, when they started out from Breuckelen, they reached s' Gravesende by *following the line of the shore*; which we believe to have been the *earliest*, the most traveled, and the *best* route for reaching the interior villages; thence they continued their journey to Amersfort and 't Vlacke Bos.

Houses were probably erected and lands cultivated before any formal deeds or patents were procured from the Indians, or the Director at Nieuw Amsterdam. New Amersfort (Flatlands) was undoubtedly first settled in 1624; and it is not unreasonable to suppose that, within the four or five years ensuing, settlers began to clear the woods and locate in the more fertile lands at 't Vlacke Bos, or Midwout—the settlement of which we may, therefore, safely place at 1630–34. But, although the last of the five county-towns to be

settled, Flatbush was the third to procure a town-patent from the Director. This was in 1651, and the tract of land (the title of which had undoubtedly been secured from the Indians by purchase, on the part of the West India Company—as was their invariable custom), for which the patent was granted, was bounded north by the hills, and on the south by Amersfort (Flatlands), being one unbroken stretch of dense forest. The eastern and western boundaries of this patent were probably coincident with those of what was afterwards called “the Old Town.” The original Dutch patent is not in existence, and was probably destroyed in 1684*; when, in common with those of the other county-towns (except Gravesend, which, as an English settlement, was exempted), it was “called in” by Gov. Nicolls, who was then granting new, or confirmatory, charters. Dr. STRONG, in his *History of Flatbush*, says that the *only original Dutch patent of any part of the town*, which has been discovered, is a “Ground Brief or Patent” issued by Gov. Stuyvesant to the “indwellers and inhabitants of Midwout” for the Canarsie Meadows, therein described as “a parcel of meadow-ground, or valley, lying on the east north-east of the Canarsie Indian planting-grounds.” According to HENRY C. MURPHY, the original patentees, to whom Stuyvesant granted the patent of 1651, were Jan Snedecor, Arent Van Hatten, a burgomaster of Nieuw Amsterdam, and Johannes Megapolensis, one of the ministers of the same city.

The first houses and settlements were probably in the most southerly portion of the present village; along the “Indian-path” from New Amersfort to the Hills—now the direct road, through the village, from Flatlands to Brooklyn. We have but little positive knowledge concerning the number, or the names, of the first settlers; or the locations secured by them during the seventeen years elapsing between the first purchase of 1634, and the patent of 1651. But, Dr. Strong states that, after the patent of 1651, “farms were laid out into 48 lots, or tracts of land, extending 600 Dutch rods east and west on each side of the Indian-path, and having severally an average width of 27 rods.” Those on the east side ran east to west; those on the west side had a south-westerly inclination, corresponding with the direction of the Hills on the north-west of the town. Each one of the proprietors named in the patent received (in distribution *by lot*—the invariable custom of the Dutch in the division of patented lands) two or more lots apiece, while the central and most eligible lots were reserved for the church. A considerable portion of wood lands lying on the west, north and east sides of the town, together with Corlaer’s and Twiller’s Flats, were left in common, and remained undivided for years.

Early Boundary Disputes with Flatlands.—Although the Indian title to these lands had been

carefully extinguished, and purchases confirmed with patents from the Dutch and English Governors, the settlers of Flatbush met with trouble from their Amersfort neighbors, about certain lands along the boundary-line between the two towns. Especially was this the case upon the Canarsie meadows, at that time highly esteemed by the Dutch farmers; and, finally, in 1666, arbitrators, appointed by Gov. Nicolls, made a survey, approved by the Governor, April 20, 1667, by which the lines were carefully defined by marked trees, stakes and fence. And the Flatbush people then received the following confirmatory patent:

“RICHARD NICOLLS, Esq., &c. * * * Whereas there is a certain town within this government, known by the name of Midwout alias Flatbush &c. * * * Now, for the confirmation, &c. Know ye that I have given, ratified, confirmed and granted unto Mr. Johannes Megapolensis, one of the Ministers of this City, Mr. Cornelius Van Ruyven, one of the Justices of the Peace, Adrian Hegeman, Jan Snediger, Jan Stryker, Frans Barents Pastor, Jacob Stryker, and Cornelius Janse Bougaert, as Patentees, for and in behalf of themselves and associates, freeholders and inhabitants of the said town, their heirs, successors and assigns; All that tract, together with several parcels of land, which already have or shall hereafter be purchased or procured for, or on behalf of the said town; whether from the native Indian proprietors or others, within the bounds and limits hereafter set forth and expressed, viz: That is to say, The said Town is bounded to the North by the Hills, to the South by the fence lately sett between them and the town of Amersfort alias Flatland.” Then, with mention of the stakes and land-marks, the deed closes with “which said meadows were upon the 20 of April last, by common consent staked out, and by my approbation allowed of; All which said tracts and parcels of land, meadow-ground &c. * * * Dated, Oct. 11, 1667.”

The security afforded to the Flatbush settlers by this patent was, however, of short duration; for, in 1670, *Eskemoppas*, Sachem of Rockaway, with his brothers *Kinnarimas* and *Ahawaham*, with evil intent, claimed the land, demanding that payment therefor should be made to themselves as the *original* Indian owners, and denying the right of the Canarsies to deed it to the settlers. Although this claim was fraudulent, yet, to avoid the ill-will, annoyance, distress and expense to which its refusal might give rise, the Flatbush people accepted a deed from *Eskemoppas* and brothers, for which they paid a valuable consideration. The deed is as follows:

“To all Christian people to whom this present writing shall come; *Eskemoppas*, Sachem of Rockaway, upon Long Island, *Kinnarimas* and *Ahawaham* his brothers, send greeting: Whereas they, the said Sachem *Eskemoppas*, and his two brothers afore mentioned, do lay claim to the land now in the tenure and occupation of the inhabitants of Midwout, alias Flatbush, as well as other lands adjacent thereto as the right born Indian owners and proprietors thereof: Knowys that in consideration of certain sums of seewant, a certain sum of wampum and divers other goods (hereinafterspecified) unto the said Sachem and his brothers in hand paid, and received, from Adrian Hegeman, Jacob Stryker, Hendrick Jorise and Jan Hansen, for and on behalf of themselves and the rest of the inhabitants of Midwout alias Flatbush, the receipt whereof

* Land was sold, in 1653, by Edward Griffen to Peter Loot. Griffen must have had a clear title from some patent, granted by some one at an earlier date.

they do hereby acknowledge, and themselves to be fully satisfied and paid: Have given granted contracted and sold * * * All that said parcel of land where the said town of Midwout stands, together with all the lands lying therein, stretching on the east side to the limits of Newtown and Jamaica, on the south side to the meadow ground, and limits of Amersfort; on the west side to the bounds of Gravesend and New Utrecht, and on the north side along the Hills; that is to say, all those lands within the limits above mentioned &c. * * * In witness whereof, the parties to these presents have hereunto set their hands and seals this 20th day of April, in the 22nd year of his Majesty's reign, in the year of our Lord 1670.

ESKEMOPPAS £ Mark. (seal).

KINNARIMAS & Mark. (seal).

AHAWAHAM f Mark (seal).

Signed and delivered in the presence of

THOMAS LOVELACE.

CORNELIUS VAN RUYVEN.

Recorded the day and year within written

per MATHIAS NICHOLS, *Secretary*.

The consideration agreed upon in the purchase herein mentioned was as follows viz: 10 Fathoms of black seawant; 10 Fathoms of white seawant; 5 Match coats of Duffells; 4 Blankets; 2 Gunners sight Guns; 2 Pistols; 5 Double handfulls of Powder [Gispens bunches of Powder]; 5 Bars of Lead; 10 Knives; 2 Secret Aprons of Duffell [Cuppas of Duffell]; 1 Half vat or half barrell of Strong Beer; 3 Cans of Brandy; 6 Shirts. All the above particulars were received by the Sachem and his ten brothers, in the presence of the persons under written, as witnesses hereof.

John Manning.

Sylvester Salisbury.

John Hough.

Jacob Van Cortlandt.*

Teunis Jacob Hay.*

Edward Carlisle.*

Acknowledged before me, the Sachem and his two brothers, and the goods delivered in my presence, the day and year within written.

FRANCIS LOVELACE."

In this deed we find, for the first time, the *eastern* and *western* boundary-lines of the town definitely laid down; and it is probable that the difficulty with *Eskemoppas*, concerning the right to the lands within the town of Flatbush, related especially to the *eastern* section of the town. While it is well established that the western portion of the town was purchased from and deeded by the Canarsie Indians, in 1651, the time of purchase of the eastern section cannot with any degree of certainty be fixed. No deed has been found, earlier than this one from Eskemoppas, in that section of the town extending from Keuter's Hook to the Jamaica line. It is possible that, the boundary lines being indistinct or poorly defined, the Flatbush people may have attempted to settle farther to the east than warranted by the limits of the original deed; and that the land thus occupied was truly the property of the Rockaway Indians. However this may be, we find, from the time of this deed, 1670, the western section of the town, as far as Keuter's Hook, is called the *Old Town*; and the portion beyond, as far as the eastern boundary, at the Jamaica line, is called the *New Lands*,

or "the *New Lots*." The original name of this tract was *Oostwoud*, or "East Woods."

Settlements were soon made on this section, by persons from Flatbush; and, about this time also, "several of the inhabitants of Midwout, or Flatbush, removed to New Jersey, and formed settlements on the Raritan at Milstone."—(*Strong*.) In proof that 1670 is the true date of the *first settlement of that portion of the town of Flatbush called the New Lots*, we notice that, five years after, when settlers began to appropriate the land thus secured by deed from Eskemoppas, there appeared another claimant, Capt. Richard Betts, who endeavored to establish a claim to a portion of the tract by virtue of a deed which he professed to hold, bearing date of 1663. The matter was tried (on an appeal by the town of Flatbush from the Court of Sessions) at the General Court of Assizes; which, in 1675, in the city of New York, and, after a fair hearing, ordered as follows: "That the land shall lye in common to Flatbush, and towns adjacent, as it heretofore hath been, and that the towns who have the benefit of the commonage shall pay their equall proportion of the purchase money to the Indjans and cost of this suite." From this it is evident that the validity of a deed of earlier date than 1670 was not admitted. After this suit, however, the inhabitants deemed it prudent to obtain a separate patent for the *New Lots*, which, according to Dr. STRONG, was granted by Gov. Andros, March 25, 1677, to Arian Lamberse and others, to the number of thirty-five persons. This patent is not now extant. The boundary-line between Flatbush and Amersfort seems to have been a source of frequent trouble between the two villages. The first difficulty was settled by the deed of Gov. Richard Nicolls, bearing date of 1667. Two years after, however, complaint was made by the inhabitants of Amersfort that those of Flatbush were not observing the terms of the patent granted in 1667. The matter was tried before the Court of Sessions at Gravesend, and a new agreement made, dated May 11, 1677. Two years later, June, 1679, complaint was again made to the Court against the inhabitants of Flatbush for trespass. A record of the Court of Sessions, held at Gravesend, June, 1679, relates to this matter, as follows, viz:

"The inhabitants of flatlands complayning that the inhabitants of flatbush have trespassed upon the land belonging to flatlands aforesaid, contrary to an award made and agreed upon between both towns, and an order of the Court punctually to observe the same, which being proved by the constable and one of the overseers of flatlands, aforesaid, and they not appearing to answer the complaint, and for their contempt in not observing the said award and order of the Court. The Court orders, that the said inhabitants shall pay as a fine to the publique, the sum of ten pounds and to observe the said order of Court. They also complayn, that the inhabitants of flatbush have chopt of the marke of a tree, &c. To be deferred to the next Court of Sessions, and they to have notice of it to answer the same."

* These are supposed to have been Judges, or Justices of the Peace.

A similar dispute arose in 1683. While this controversy was being carried on about the southern boundary, another arose between Brooklyn and Flatbush about the north boundary-line, which heretofore, in all deeds and patents, had been designated as "the Hills." The authorities of the village of Brooklyn, in 1678, insisted that the term "to the Hills" should be construed so as to include the southern base of the hills. Those of Flatbush, however, contended that their patent embraced all the land to the *crest* of the hills, arguing that Brooklyn's construction of the terms of the patent would deprive them of all their rights; since the base of the hills might be made to mean until the land became perfectly level. Since the land from the immediate foot of the hills slopes gradually to the southern boundary of the town, and even to the sea, this claim of Brooklyn to the land on the southern slope of the hills could not with safety be entertained a moment, lest at some future time they should desire to claim a right to the whole town. The matter was therefore submitted to the Court of Sessions at Gravesend; and December 18, 1678, the court decided that the whole dispute be referred to Captain Jaques Cortelyou and Captain Richard Stillwell, who should make a survey of the land and run a boundary-line. Their "report was ordered to be determinative." Five years afterward they reported that they had performed this duty, "and have marked the trees betwixt towne and towne."

DR. STRONG states that "One of the trees thus marked by these arbitrators was a large white oak, standing near what is called the Port Road, and mentioned afterwards in the patent granted by Governor Dongan as one of the boundaries of the town. This tree remained until the time of the Revolutionary war, when it was cut down by the Americans and fallen across the road to intercept the British. A red free-stone monument, with a proper inscription, was subsequently set up near the stump of this tree by General Jeremiah Johnson, on the part of Brooklyn, and John C. Vanderveer, Esq., on the part of Flatbush."

The precise point at which this tree stood, and where the monument was afterward placed, is now embraced in Prospect Park. It is about one hundred and fifty feet down the road, south-east of the bronze slab containing the inscription of the battle of Long Island. At the time of the Revolutionary war, the road at this point ran through a narrow pass, between the hills, one of which still remains as it then was, and is on the east side of the road. The face of the other, next the road, on the west side, was destroyed by constant excavations to procure the excellent sand of which it was composed. Between these two hills, which were in former times separated at their base by a space of thirty or forty feet, ran the road from Flatbush to Brooklyn. The tree stood at the eastern base of the hill, on the north side of the road.

In after years a toll-gate was placed just south of this spot. In the gutter at the north-west end of the toll-house, and about fifty feet from the base of the hill,

the red free-stone monument was placed, the letter F being cut on one side and upon the other the letter B, indicating, no doubt, Flatbush and Brooklyn. In the lapse of years, the wash from the road and hill gradually covered up this stone; and, at the time the ground was purchased for the park it was completely covered with sand. The grade of the Park road has no doubt buried it two feet or more beneath the surface, where in all probability it would now be found.

This report of the commissioners, Cortelyou and Stillwell, was *not* accepted as "determinative," as the court ordered. The next year new trouble arose in reference to the boundary. Philip Wells and Jacobus Cortland were appointed surveyors by the two towns.

They reported "that the line run formerly by Capt. Jacques Cortelyou and Mr. Stillwell is right and Just."

After several subsequent disputes, the difficulty was finally adjusted on the following basis, viz.:

"That the summit of the hills, or the first perceptible southerly declivity of any hill, should be deemed and taken as the fixed and determined line, and wherever the hills are cut off or interrupted by an intervening valley or hollow, the boundary line should extend in the shortest possible direction, from the summit of one hill to that of the opposite one. In conformity with this determination, proper monuments have been placed on the boundary lines, to prevent, if possible, all further mistakes."

Flatbush, occupying a central position, was bounded on all sides by the other towns, which accounts for the numerous conflicts in reference to boundary-lines.

Boundary Dispute with Newtown.—The last, and by far the most prolonged controversy, of this kind, was that concerning the north-eastern boundary-line. It began in 1706, when the inhabitants of Newtown claimed part of the lands embraced in the Flatbush patent for the New Lots. At this time a fund was raised, by tax, upon every patentee, to pay expenses in defending their boundary-line; and, at the annual town-meetings, two officers were chosen, whose duty it was to guard the interest of the town, to "their meets and bounds," according to the patent. The Dutch called these men "*Dorps mannen*," or *towns-men*. Afterward the English designated them the "Defenders of the Patent." For fifteen years the controversy was prolonged, being finally settled in 1721, and was the last serious trouble concerning the boundary-lines of the town.

The Dongan Charter, 1685.—The last patent or confirmatory deed for the town was issued by the Governor, Colonel Thomas Dongan, in compliance with a request of the inhabitants for a patent for the whole town which should include all the former separate grants or deeds. These several patents had been granted at different times for *Flacke Bos*, Midwout or Flatbush; for the Canarsie Meadows; Keuter's Hook; *Eastwoudt*, and *Oostwoudt*, or the New Lots. The patent, dated Nov. 12, 1685, is as follows:

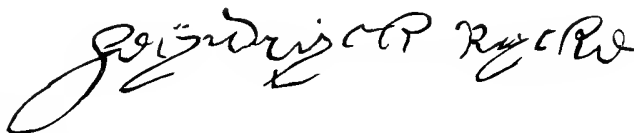
"THOMAS DONGAN, Lieutenant-Governor and Vice-Admiral

of New York, &c., under his Majesty James the Second, by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c., Supreme Lord and Proprietor of the Colony and Prince of New York and its dependencies in America. To all to whom these presents shall come, sendeth Greeting : Whereas, there is a certain town in Kings County, upon Long Island, called and known by the name of Midwout, alias Flatbush, the bounds whereof begin at the mouth of the Fresh-Kill, and so along by a certain ditch which lies betwixt Amersfoot and Flatbush Meadows, and so running along the ditch and fence to a certain white-oak marked tree, and from thence upon a straight line to the westernmost point of a small island of woodland lying before John Stryker's bridge ; and from thence with a straight line to the north-west hook or corner of the ditch of John Oakie's meadow, and from thence along the said ditch and fence to the swamp of the Fresh-Kill, and so along the swamp and hollow of the aforesaid Kill to the land of Keuter's Hook ; thence along the same to a white-oak tree ; from thence with a straight line to a black-oak marked tree standing upon the north-east side of Twiller's Flats, having a small snip of flats upon the south-east side of the line ; and so from thence to a white-oak tree standing on the west side of Moschito Hole to a small island, leaving a snip of flats in the Flatlands bounds ; and from thence to a certain marked tree or stump standing upon the highway which goes to Flatlands, upon the Little Flats, about twenty rods from Flatbush Lots, and so along the fence six hundred Dutch rods to the corner of Flatbush fence, and so along the rear of the lots to a sassafras-stump standing on Cornelius Jansen Berrian's lot of land ; and from thence with a straight line to a certain old marked tree, or stump, standing by the Rush Pond under the hills, and so along upon the south side of the hill till it comes to the west end of Long Hill, and so along upon the south side of the said hill till it comes to the east end of the Long Hill ; and then with a straight line from the east end of said Long Hill to a marked white-oak tree standing to the west side of the road, near the place called the gate or port of the hills, and so from the east side of the port or gate aforesaid, upon the south side of the main hills, as far as Brooklyn Patent doth extend, and so along the said hills to the bounds of the Jamaica Patent ; and from thence with a southerly line to the kill or creek by the east of Plunder's Neck, and so along the said kill to the sea, as according to the several deeds or purchases from the Indian owners, the Patent from Governor Nicolls, and the award between Brooklyn and the town of Flatbush, relation thereunto being had, doth more fully and at large appear : And, whereas, an application to me hath been made for a confirmation of the aforesaid tracts and parcels of land and premises : Now, Know ye, that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his Majesty, James the Second, by the Grace of God of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, Supreme Lord and Proprietor of the Province of New York, in consideration of the premises and the quit-rent hereinafter reserved, I have given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do give, grant, ratify and confirm unto Cornelius Vanderwyck, John Okie, Joseph Hegeman, Aries Jansen Vanderbilt, Lafford Pieterse, William Guiliamsen, Hendrick Williamse, Arien Ryers, Peter Stryker, John Stryker, John Remsen, Jacob Hendricks, Derick Vandervleet, Hendrick Ryck, Okie Johnson, Daniel Polhamus, Peter Lott,

Cornelius Vanderveer, Derick Johnson Hooglandt, Denise Teunis, John Johnson, Ditimus Lewis Jansen, William Jacobs, Hendrick Hegeman, and Garret Lubbertse, for and on behalf of themselves and their associates, all the freeholders of the said town of Flatbush, and to their heirs and assigns forever, all the before-recited tract and tracts, parcel and parcels, of land and islands within the said bounds and limits, together with all and singular, the woods, underwoods, plains, hills, meadows, pastures, quarries, marshes, waters, lakes, causeways, rivers, beaches, houses, buildings, fishing, hawking, hunting and fowling, with all liberties, privileges, hereditaments and appurtenances to the said tract of land and premises belonging, or in anywise appertaining ; To have and to hold, &c. * * * * To be holden of his Majesty in free and common soccage according to the tenure of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in his Majesty's Kingdom of England. Yielding, rendering and paying therefor, yearly, and every year, at the City of New York, to his Majesty, his heirs or successors, or to his or their officer or officers, as by him or them shall be appointed to receive the same, eighteen bushels of good merchantable wheat, on or before the five and twentieth day of March, yearly, and every year. In Testimony whereof, I have caused these presents to be entered upon record, in the Secretary's office in the said Province, and the seal thereof, have hereunto affixed, and signed with my hand the twelfth day of November, in the first year of his Majesty's reign, Anno Domini, 1685.

THOMAS DONGAN.

FACSIMILES OF THE AUTOGRAPHS OF SOME OF THE PATENTEES OF FLATBUSH, UNDER THE DONGAN CHARTER, OF 1685.



HAYNDRYCK REYCKE, the ancestor of the SUYDAM Family of Kings County.



CORNELIS JANSSE VANDER VEER, the ancestor of the Vanderveer Family of Kings County.



JAN STRYCKER, the ancestor of the Stryker Family of Kings County.



LEFFERT PIETERSEN, (van Haughwout, North Holland, 1660,) the common ancestor of the Lefferts Family in Kings County.

Adrian Ryerson 1661

ADRIAN REYERSE, the common ancestor of the Ryerson, the Adriance and the Martense families.

Peter Lott 1662

PETER LOTT, ancestor of the Lott Family of Kings County.

Quit-Rents.—This is the first deed or patent in which any mention is made of any revenue therefrom accruing to the governors. When Dongan entered upon the government of the colony, he found its revenues insufficient to meet its current expenses. With the double intention, therefore, of increasing these revenues, and, at the same time, securing to the inhabitants of the several towns, and to their posterity, an indisputable title to the lands which they had obtained from his predecessors, and by purchase from the Indians; he called in all the patents, and replaced them with new ones. In these new patents he evidently endeavored to secure a greater degree of definiteness in description of boundaries, etc., which had already given rise to innumerable disputes. And the colonists submitted, with apparent willingness, to the change of their deeds, and to the new feature of quit-rent inserted therein. There was, indeed, a protest sent to the English Government by Santin, the collector of New York and a member of the Council (afterward discovered to be a defaulter); but Gov. Dongan's able and manly reply to these charges (*Doc. Hist. N. Y.*, Vol. III, p. 442), sufficiently explains his motives in the matter, and justifies his action.

The quit-rent continued to be paid for several years, according to the requirements of the patent, in good merchantable wheat. At what time the change was made, by which money was accepted in lieu of wheat, we have no means of determining. The Receiver General, at a subsequent date, was authorized to make such a change, and "wheat was valued at eighteen shillings and eight pence a bushel, in New York currency," and rents continued to be paid according to this standard until 1762.

Commutation of Quit-Rents.—After the Revolutionary War an act was passed by the legislature of New York, April 1, 1786, providing for the collection of arrears and the future annual Quit-Rent; and, also, making provision whereby any town might commute for the payment of its quit-rents. In December of this same year the inhabitants of Flatbush availed themselves of the privilege of this act, and purchased a release from future quit-rents, which would have fallen due each year under the terms of their patent.

Dr. STRONG's *History of Flatbush* preserves the re-

ceipt for this release and payment, from which it appears, that its amount (including three years' arrears), from March 25, 1765, to the same date 1786, a period of twenty-one years and nine months (with eight years deducted for "period of Revolution), was £162, 9s.

Social and Political History.—*Origin of the name.* The early settlers of Breuckelen very naturally termed the densely-wooded hills of Flatbush the "Bosch"—a term equivalent to our word *bush* or *wood*. Following the Indian-path to the top of the ridge, the eye rested upon an unbroken range of level woodland, extending east and west as far as could be seen, and stretching out toward the south for nearly three miles, to the bounds of New Amersfordt. This woodland, covering the extended plain, was called "*t Vlacke Bosch*," i. e., *the flat woods*; "*t Vlacke*," or "*Vlachte*," meaning the plains or flats. In the early Colonial records a similar reference is made to the level *beyond* the woods, which is designated as "*t Vlacke Landts*," and embraced, at that time, the towns of New Utrecht, Gravesend, and New Amersfordt. In proof of this we find, in a report of Governor Stuyvesant's, Oct. 19, 1665, this declaration, "*The Flat land (t Vlacke Landts)*, stripped of inhabitants to such a degree that, with the exception of the three English villages of Hemstede, New Flushing and Gravesend, there were not fifty bouweries or plantations in it," &c.

This term, "*t Vlacke Bosch*" was, without doubt, the earliest designation of the wooded country south of "the Hills," and now, for the most part in the Town of Flatbush—and is so used by the Labadist travellers, in 1679–80. This would seem to prove that, even thirty years after the first settlement of the village, the name of the *locality* was a more familiar one to the settlers than the new name—*Middel-Wout* (middle-woods), given it by Gov. Stuyvesant. In the defence of Hendrick Van Dyck, the Fiscal under Stuyvesant, in 1652, he complains that "the Director hath, on his own authority, begun to plant a hamlet in '*t Vlacke Bosch* [the Flatbush] on Long Island, between Amersfort and Breuckelen. He named it *Middel-Wout*, where Jan Snediker, one of his Selectmen, hath settled." This term appears to be nearly synonymous with the original name of the whole section of woodland. The former term "*t Vlacke Bosch*" meaning the *Flat-Wood*, and "*Middel-Wout*" meaning *Middle-Wood*; "*Woud*" or "*Wout*" being the Dutch for *wood*, or *forest*. It was, therefore, undoubtedly, the peculiar surroundings of the locality on which the village was situated, that suggested its name. The name *Middel-wout*, in common use, gradually became abbreviated to *Mid-twout*, as it is given in the earliest town-records, bearing date 1659. After the surrender of Long Island to the English, we find, for the first time, in public documents, the use of the name Flatbush (*Fflatbush*, *Flatbos*, *Flackbush*); a sort of English rendering of the original Dutch "*t Vlack Bosche*." *Midwout*, however, continued to

be the ordinary appellation in public records and common use, until 1776; the term *Flackebos* being only twice used by Town Clerk Van Ecklen, in 1694-'95. It seems evident, therefore, that the change of name from *Midwout* to *Flatbush*, is the result of no legal enactment, but simply of common usage.

In early times the center of the village was called "*Dorp*," meaning "the town" and here was located the church, the school, and the court-house. North of the "*Dorp*" the land was of a peculiar character, where no rich strata are visible; the roads and fields are covered with immense water-washed cobble-stones. And this is even more observable further north, towards the hills. To this section the early settlers gave the name of *Steen-raap*, or "stone-gathering." Though, to a great extent, these stones have been removed from the surface, still, in digging cellars, and trenches for gas and water mains, large beds of them are yet found, as if piled away by human hands. Still further north, on the sides of "the Hills," were found huge boulders—water-worn—and of which the farmers all through this section of the town used (up to the middle of the present century) to build their farm fences. But, of later years, these boulders have disappeared, having been sold and broken up for building purposes. The Labadist travelers of 1679-80, so often referred to in these pages, have left unequivocal testimony to the then condition of public travel in the county; and within the memory of some still living, these stones and boulders contributed largely to the exceeding roughness of *Flatbush* roads. The soil of that portion of the village lying south of "the *Dorp*" is a sandy loam and remarkably free from stones. The Dutch called it *Rustenburgh*, meaning borough, or "resting-place." This name may have been applied in grateful comparison with the state of the roads in other parts of the town and county, over which they were obliged to pass; or, because their homes were here situated, to which they returned for a nightly rest, after their days of severe toil upon their wooded and stony farms in the northern part of the town. According to Mr. TEUNIS G. BERGEN, another portion of the town was called "East *Midwout*," which was, no doubt, that part known as *New Lots*.

Organization of Local Government and Courts.—During the earlier years of slow growth the Dutch towns scarcely needed any special or local provision for the administration of justice. The will of the Director of the West India Company, the two local officers appointed by him, and his occasional personal superintendence, sufficed to maintain good order among them. In course of time, however, difficulties arose from this lack of a properly-organized government. The Directors too often misused their powers, and were disposed to govern in a dictatorial and tyrannical manner, overlooking wholly the rights of the people. If imposed upon by the inferior officers of the town, it was worse than useless to appeal to the Direc-

tor, for these were simply carrying out his instructions. An appeal generally brought some punishment upon the villages for their audacity. A government of this character was not at all adapted to a people who had lived under the liberal form of government of Holland, where each city or village provided to a great extent for its own defense, administered its own finances, and governed itself by its own laws. Thus the inhabitants of the towns, who, in Holland, had been accustomed to have a voice in all matters relating to their government, could not quietly submit to the present arbitrary rule of the Directors.

Finally the growing popular discontent found expression in a convention of delegates from the Dutch towns of Long Island, assembled at *Nieuw Amsterdam*, Nov. 26, 1653; but adjourned until December. Up to this time, the civil affairs of *Middlewout* had been administered by an official called the "*Schout*," exercising, somewhat, the combined functions of a judge and sheriff, and subordinate to the "*Schout-fiscal*" of *Nieuw Amsterdam*. The name *schout* is supposed to be an abbreviation of the Dutch word *schuld-rechter*, or, "crime-righter;" i. e., a judge of crimes. The people of each village also had the right to elect two more *schepens*, or magistrates, as in the *Fatherland*. In November, 1646, Jan Teunissen, of Breuckelen, was made *schout*; and had jurisdiction, also, over *Middlewout* and *Amersfoort*. We find no mention of another *schout* being appointed till April, 1654, when David Provoost was made the first separate *schout* of Breuckelen. Teunissen probably remained *schout* of the other Dutch towns; although in the *Col. Docs. State of N. Y.* Provoost is called *schout* or sheriff of the Dutch towns on Long Island. *Midwout*, at this time, was allowed the privilege of a separate village to nominate three *Schepens*; and *Amersfoort* obtained two. Provoost was succeeded by Pieter Tonneman from January, 1656, to 1660; when he became the first Sheriff of *Nieuw Amsterdam*. The first entry in the oldest Court record of conveyances of property in the Town Clerk's office, at *Flatbush*, relates to the purchase, or allotment, of property in the village of *Middlewout* to this P. Tonneman, under date of July 2, 1659. He was, also, January, 1657, a member of the Supreme Council of the *Nieuw Netherlands*. In 1661 *Adriaen Hegeman*, a resident of *Middlewout*, was appointed, by Gov. Stuyvesant, as *schout* of Breuckelen, *Midwout*, and *Amersfoort*. He had been, in 1654, one of the three *schepens* to which the town of *Midwout* was entitled; and, from 1659 to 1661, had acted as clerk, or secretary, of *Midwout* and *Amersfoort*.

At the re-assembling of the convention, December 11th, 1653 (the *Flatbush* delegates being *Elbert Elbertsen* and *Thomas Spicer*) a strong demand was made for laws, "resembling, as nearly as possible, those of the *Fatherland*." Gov. Stuyvesant treated the matter as "audacity" on the part of the Colonists; re-asserted

his authority; reprimanded the burgomaster of New Amsterdam for calling such a convention, and sought to weaken the force of remonstrance by asserting that the three Dutch Long Island towns had "no right to jurisdiction."

The convention re-assembled December 13, 1653, and declared they would protest to the States General, and West India Company. The Governor then ordered the convention to disperse and directed Breuckelen, Midwout and Amersfort to prohibit their delegates from appearing, for the present, at any meeting at New Amsterdam. Early in the following year, however, a serious trouble threatened the colonists; which, while it served to allay the excitement caused by the events of December, 1653, at the same time united the settlers of the Dutch towns more closely. Pirates and robbers infested the rivers on either side of New Amsterdam and the shores of Long Island, and constantly committed outrages upon the persons and property of the settlers on Long Island. While the English residents at Gravesend sympathized with and often harbored these men, the Dutch settlers in the various villages banded to resist them, and protect themselves and their property. Breuckelen, Midwout and Amersfort, April 7, 1654, formed a military company, and informed the Governor that they would "assist with all their might." Every third man was detailed to act as a minute-man, when required. A military officer was appointed in each town, called a Sergeant, and a public patrol in the village.

This expression of loyalty, so cheerfully and promptly given, was especially pleasing to the Governor, in view of the closing events of the previous year. It proved that the Dutch settlers were, at heart, true in their allegiance to the interests of the West India Company. He therefore resolved to reward the Dutch towns of Breuckelen, Midwout and Amersfort, by giving them the increased municipal privileges which they had desired. Thus, by making this distinction in favor of the Dutch towns, he rebuked the English settlers at Gravesend for their sympathy with the pirates—who were their countrymen—as well as for the part they had taken in the convention.

Local Officers Appointed.—It was at this time that the form of government was changed at Midwout, and the village was permitted to have a voice in the choice of its magistrates. A double number of persons were chosen by the people, and their names forwarded to the Governor, who from this list selected and commissioned those who should serve as magistrates. These local officers possessed functions and powers similar to those of the magistrates of New Amsterdam; and were under the immediate direction of a superior "District Court," composed of delegates from each town-court, together with the schout.

By direction of this "District Court" churches could be built, schools established, roads laid out, or

repaired. In fact, all the local affairs of the towns came within its jurisdiction; subject, of course, to the approval of the Governor, or the Supreme Council of New Netherlands. Under this arrangement the inhabitants of Midwout nominated six men in April, 1654, from whom three were chosen to act as schepens of the village. In the absence of any Midwout records earlier than 1659, we cannot state positively the names of these officers. We know that Adriaen Hegeman was appointed a local magistrate in 1654, and find his name on the earliest record of the village as serving still in the capacity of schepen. It is therefore reasonable to presume that the other men, whose names are found with his on the record of July 2, 1659, were appointed schepens with him in 1654. If this is correct, then the first three local magistrates of Midwout were Adriaen Hegeman, Willem Van Boerum, Jan Sueberingh.



Facsimile of Adriaen Hegeman's Signature.

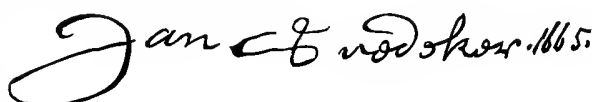


Facsimile of Willem Jacobse Van Boerum's Signature.



Facsimile of Jan Sueberingh's Signature.

In *Col. Hist. of N. Y.* the name of Jan Snedicoor appears as the first sent by the Governor to settle Midwout. He was also one of the signers of the Patent; a shoemaker by trade, and kept a tap-house or tavern in New Amsterdam from 1642-1654, when he was sent by Governor Stuyvesant to his new settlement at Midwout. He is called in *Docs. of Col. Hist. of N. Y.* "one of the Director's Selectmen." It is reasonable to suppose that the Governor would certainly place this man in some position of influence. Although his name is not on any of the early records, Mr. TEUNIS G. BERGEN, in his *Early Settlers of Kings County*, states that "Jan Snedicoor was a local magistrate of Midwout from 1654 to 1664."



Facsimile of Jan Snedicoor's Signature.

"Five Dutch Towns."—This method of village government, by schepens and schout, continued until 1661. In that year New Utrecht and Boswyck (Bushwick) were joined to Breuckelen, Amersfoort and Midwout, and the district was called the "Five Dutch Towns."

To these five Dutch towns were assigned two officers, representing the general government, and to whom the village schepens were subordinate, viz.: a schout-fiscal and a secretary, or clerk, the special function of the latter being to take acknowledgments of marriage settlements, deeds and wills. Adriaen Hegeman was the first schout-fiscal of the five Dutch towns, and he was also specially appointed as *auctioneer* for the district. He was probably succeeded in both offices by Francis De Bruyn, in 1673. In *Docs. of Col. Hist. of State of N. Y.* (Vol. II. p. 675) De Bruyn's appointment is recorded, with a reference to the former existence of the office, and its probable discontinuance while the towns were subject to the English.

"Whereas experience hath proved that it is highly necessary to continue the office of *Auctioneer* on Long Island, therefore on petition presented by Secretary Francis De Bruyn, he is thereunto commissioned and qualified, and said Francis De Bruyn is accordingly commissioned and appointed Auctioneer in the towns of Midwout, Amerfort, Breuckelen, Boshwyck and Utrecht, with their dependencies situate on Long Island &c. Done Fort Willem Hendrick, the first Jan. 1673."

A year later he was succeeded by Nicasius de Sille, of New Utrecht; and he, again, by Michael Hainelle.

The next change in the village government was made in 1665.

After the surrender of the colony to the English, in 1664, the government of Nieuw Amsterdam lost its distinctively Dutch character. The offices of Burgomaster, Schepens and Schout were abolished, and a Mayor, Board of Alderman and Sheriff were substituted in their place. This rendered necessary a change in the local and "district" government of the Long Island towns. Governor Nicoll therefore called a convention for the purpose of establishing a uniform method for the administration of justice in the various villages and plantations on Long Island. To this, held at Hempstead, February, 1665, Flatbush sent Jan Stryker, Hendrick Gucksen, and Hendrick Jorise Brinkerhoff as delegates. The code of "Duke's Laws," as they were called, which was passed by this convention, restored again to the Governor almost all the unlimited power enjoyed by his Dutch predecessors; and was not at all satisfactory to either the Dutch or English towns, which found themselves still without the desired representative form of government. The Flatbush delegates, as well as those of other towns, were so openly and severely censured by their fellow townsmen for their share in the enactment of this code that the Court of Assize, October, 1666, decreed "that whoever should thereafter detract or speak against any of the deputies who had signed an address to His Royal Highness, the Governor, he should be presented to the Court of Assizes and answer for slander." At this convention Long Island and Staten Island were united, as **YORKSHIRE** of which the five Dutch towns, with

Gravesend, Newtown, and Staten Island, were constituted the *West Riding*; all the towns of the present Queens county, except Newtown, became the *North Riding*; and those of the present Suffolk county formed the *East Riding*; and a High Sheriff was appointed for the Shire, with a deputy for each Riding, and a certain number of justices for each town. On the 1st or 2d of April, yearly, each town was to elect its own constable and eight (afterwards reduced to five) overseers, whose duties were strictly defined by the code. From these overseers in each village the constable was to select the jurors for the Court of Sessions or Assize. The overseers were to be "men of good fame and life, chosen by the plurality of voices of the freeholders"; four remained in office two years successively, and four were changed for new ones every year; the constables "to be chosen out of that number which are dismissed from their office of overseers," in the preceding years. The overseers were the assessors of the town; and, with the constable, made regulations in all matters which concerned the order and government of the town. They were authorized, together with the constable, to hold town-courts, for the trial of causes under £5. On the death of any person, the constable and two overseers acted as coroners and surrogates, if any will was found. If no will was found, the constable, in the presence of the overseers, was, within forty-eight hours, to search after the estate of the deceased, and deliver an account of the same, in writing, under oath, to the next justice of the peace. The constable and Board of Overseers were required annually to appoint two of the overseers to make the rate, for building and repairing the church, for the maintenance of the minister, and for the support of the poor. They were to establish the bounds of the town, regulate fences, and, with the constable, appoint an officer to "record every man's particular marke, and see each man's horse and colt branded." The overseers filled vacancies in their number occurring by death, and any person, so chosen by his fellow townsmen, was obliged to serve, or pay a fine of £10. We find an entry upon the records that "Theodorus Polhemus, for refusing to stand constable for Flatbush, although legally elected, was by the court fined five pounds to the public." The constable and two overseers were to pay the value of an Indian coat for each wolf killed, and to cause the wolf's head to be "nayed over the door of the constable, their to remaine, as also to cut of both the eares, in token that the head is bought and paid for."

Overseers of Flatbush.—1675, Simon Hansen, John Roloffsen; 1676, Arian Ryers, Garret Sneger [Snediker]; 1679, Joseph Hegeman, Derick Jansen Van Vleet; 1680, Barent [Barthold?] Claas, Cornelius Berrian, Joseph Hegeman; 1681, Cornelius Berrian, Reynier Aertsen, Barthold Claas, Jan Remsen; 1682, Reynier Aertsen, Jan Jansen, Jan Remsen, Adrian Ryersen; 1683, Jan Aertsen, Aris Janse [Vander Bilt],

or Jan, son of Aert from the "Bilt," or hill; Jan Jansen, Jan Auckes [or Ouke—Van Nuys.]

Handwritten signature: Auckes Jansen 1680

"This is the Mark of Jan Aertsen Van der Byldt—from the Bilt," or Hill, in Friesland, the ancestor of the Vanderbilts of Kings County.

Handwritten signature: Auckes Jansen 1680

Facsimile of Signature of Auckes Jansen Van Nuys.

Among the other regulations made by this convention, which did not disdain to care for all the minutiae of legislation, was an order directing what flesh-brands were to be used for marking the horses and cattle of the several towns, the letters beginning alphabetically from the east end of the island; thus, Easthampton's brand-letter was A, and that of Flatbush, in order, was O.

Herewith we give a few extracts from the town records of this period (translated by TEUNIS G. BERGEN), showing the character of the legislation under the Schout and Scheppens.

Sunday Laws.—Under date October 5, 1659, we find the following:

SCHOUT
vs.
JAN KLAESSEN, } Scheppens Court.

Schout complained against the defendant for carting in huckwheat with his wagon and oxen on Sunday, contrary to the placards. Condemned to pay costs.

The "placards" probably refer to the proclamation upon the subject of Sabbath-breaking and drunkenness, issued with so much zeal by Governor Stuyvesant, shortly after his appointment of Governor, in 1645.

SCHOUT
vs.
JAN CORNELISEE, } Scheppens Court.

"Schout complained against the defendant for shooting 2 wild turkeys and a duck, on Sunday, and claimed a verdict of 25Gl., the penalty provided. Sentence suspended, its being his first offence."

A later entry shows that they were especially careful of the general interests of the town; and also treated all, both rich and poor, "of whatsoever quality he may be," alike.

"September 15, 1662.—Scheppens Court." By Schout and Scheppenen taken in consideration, the complaint come to them that the residents of this town receive damage by the cattle of their neighbors running at large without a herder: So it is that the Schout and Scheppenen to remedy this, ordain by this, that any person of whatsoever quality he may be, no cattle on the land may let run without a herder, on the penalty of each beast to be pounded."

About the same date we find further action in regard to this matter:

"September 15, 1662.—Schout and Scheppenen. That in violation of the regulation, great damage is done, so is it that the Schout and Scheppenen, for the same to remedy, ordain, that all of the residents a proper swing-gate 5 feet high, which shall open and shut, shall make to their premises before next Christmas, under penalty of 12£, and on leaving a gate open to be liable to a penalty of 6£."

Another entry shows, to some extent, the jurisdiction of these officers in ecclesiastical matters:

"February 2, 1663.—Schout and Scheppenen of Court of Midtwout, on request of Jan Sueberingh and Jan Strycker, to the Director General and Council in pursuance of an ordinance, appoint a double number of persons for service, as church masters of Midtwout, and further they, the said Court of Midtwout, for nomination of a double number of the following underwritten names:

Jan Strycker, Willem Jacobse Van Boerum, Jan Snediker, Jan Sueberingh.

We wait, &c., for the favorable decision from the Director General on the part of the Court of Midtwout.

JAN STRYCKER,
WILLEM JACOBSE VAN BOERUM, } Scheppenen.
HEYNDRIK JOORESEN,

ADRIAEN HEGEMAN,
Schout."

As already stated, by the "Duke's Laws" for town government, certain courts were established as a part of the system. There were three of these, viz.: the Town Court, Court of Sessions, and Court of Assize, the latter being held annually in the city of Nieu Amsterdam. There is some difference of opinion among authorities in reference to the location of the Court of Sessions. The earliest records of this Court, in the County Clerk's office, are dated at Gravesend, 1668-1669. It is possible that, between 1665 and this earliest record, the court which was established immediately after the Convention of Hempstead, may have held its sessions, in 1665, at Flatbush; and its records may have been kept as the records of the original County Court.

Original Seat of Justice.—There is very little doubt but that the *original* seat of justice for the county under the Dutch governors was at Flatbush; and that it continued here until after the surrender to the English, and the permanent establishment of the Court of Sessions at Gravesend, either in 1665 or 1668. Rev. Dr. STRONG, who gathered many valuable facts in his *History of Flatbush* from the aged members of his congregation, who were the immediate descendants of the first settlers; upon their authority states positively, that "Flatbush in 1658 was the seat of justice for the county, and a market-town. At that time the public officers of the county, the Minister, Schout, Secretary or Clerk, as well as the public School-master, resided here. The courts were held here, and the general business of this section of Long Island was transacted here."

One evidence that this *original* court, whatever may

have been its name, was not held at Gravesend, is found in the fact that, when, in after years, the Court of Sessions was held there, and a court-house built, the inhabitants of the county, after a few years, petitioned to have the county-seat changed back to Flatbush, "because of the inconvenience of getting to Gravesend, the town being at the southern boundary of the county." If it had been held there *originally*, this difficulty would no doubt have presented itself before; and this experience of the people would have been an objection to the establishment again of the County-Court at Gravesend in 1668.

No doubt the true solution is this, that, after the change of government made by Governor Stuyvesant, in 1654, whereby the Dutch villages were granted greater municipal privileges, a certain form of court for the administration of justice was established. During the time that David Provoost acted as Schout, this court *may* have been held at Breuckelen, where he resided. When Pieter Tonneman was appointed, it is likely the court was held at Flatbush, where Tonneman owned lots and probably resided. It is certain, however, that after Adrian Hegeman became Schout, the court was held at Flatbush; for he resided here, and the records of the court (dated 1660), in the Town-clerk's office, are signed by him. It is evident that these court-records were not merely records of a town; but of a district-court; for one of the earliest minutes relates to the transfer or conveyance of property at Gouwannes.

As translated by Mr. TEUNIS G. BERGEN, it was as follows: "Aug. 26, 1659. Appeared before me Adrian Hegeman, Secretary of Midwout and Amersfort, Direk Janse (cooper) of the first part, and Pieter Pradt of the other; Derck Janse (cooper) sold to Pieter Pradt a certain Bouwery lying at Gowanes," etc.

work
Dirck Janse *of* *Midwout* *and* *Amersfort* *Secretary* *of* *the* *first* *part* *and* *Pieter* *Pradt* *of* *the* *other* *Derck* *Janse* *cooper* *sold* *to* *Pieter* *Pradt* *a* *certain* *Bouwery* *lying* *at* *Gowanes* *etc.*

Facsimile of Direk Janse's mark—a cooper's adze.

The first court-house for the county was erected at Gravesend in 1668, when the Court of Sessions was transferred to that village by order of the Hempstead Convention. For eighteen years this court sat at Gravesend. In accordance with an act passed at the second Colonial Assembly, held on Nov. 7, 1685, under Governor Dongan's administration, the Court of Sessions was moved to Flatbush. The cause for this, as stated in the preamble of the act, being the inconvenience to which the inhabitants of the county were subjected, in traveling as far as Gravesend. The edifice at this time erected (1686), served the county until 1758, when a new one was erected, which was superseded by a larger building in 1793. In 1832, it was burned, and

since then Brooklyn has been the County Town. (For history and description of the three county court-houses, supplied by the author of this history, see Chapter on *The Bench and Bar of Kings County*.)

The "Duke's Laws" continued to be those by which the town was governed, until October, 1683, when the first Colonial Legislature, convened by order of Gov. Dongan, and consisting of the Governor, Council and seventeen members, assembled in the city of New York. At this convention several important changes were made in relation to the government of the towns. The most objectionable features of the Duke's Laws were repealed. The "ridings" upon Long Island and Staten Island were changed to *counties*; and, instead of a court for certain ridings, each county, from this time, had its own court.

Office of Overseers changed to Commissioners.

—This Assembly, also, made an important change in the town-government by the appointment of "Commissioners," in the place of *overseers*, as town-officers.

The following list of these officers, for the town of Flatbush, is given in Dr. STRONG'S *Hist. of Flatbush*, as follows: 1684, Adrian Ryersen, Cornelius Baronsen and John Auky; 1685, Stoffle Probasco and Joseph Hegeman; 1686, Arian Ryers and Pieter Stryker; 1687, Aris Janse and Stoffle Probasco; 1688, Pieter Stryker and Cornelius Bardulph.

Supervisors Appointed.—The office of Commissioner was continued until the first Tuesday in April, 1703, when *Supervisors* were elected in the several towns of Kings county. Although the supervisors were elected in April, 1703, yet the first meeting of the board was not held until the first Tuesday in October, 1703. The earliest record, however, of their meetings, that can be found, bears date of the first Tuesday in October, 1714; and was held at the court-house in Flatbush

(Dr. Strong's *History*, p. 61). At this meeting the board chose Samuel Garretson, of Gravesend, as their clerk, and John Vanderbilt, of Flatbush, as treasurer of the county. At that time the ordinary and contingent expenses of the county (including the per diem compensation of the two members of the Colonial Assembly for their attendance during the year 1703) amounted to only £17. 0s. 6d., or \$177.56. This sum was apportioned among the several towns; Flatbush being assessed for £15. 1s. 6d. of the amount.

List of Supervisors.—The list of supervisors in the town of Flatbush is as follows (serving from April to April): Aris Vanderbilt, 1703-'05; Daniel Polhemus, 1705-'06; Jacob Hendrick Ryck, 1706-'07; Aris Jansen

Vanderbilt, 1707-'08; Jan Vanderveer, 1708-'10; Benjamin Hegeman, 1710-'11; Ryck Hendricks, 1711-'12; Jan Cornelise, 1712-'13; Jacob Hendrickson, 1713-'14; Ryck Hendrickson, 1714-'15; John Vanderveer, 1715-'16; Daniel Remse, 1716-'17; Jacob Suydam, 1717-'18; Dominicus Vanderveer, 1718-'19; Lieut. Philip Nagle, 1719-'20; Cornelius Cornell, 1720-'21; Abraham Lott, 1721-'22; Ryck Hendrickson, 1722-'23; John Vanderveer, 1723-'24; Cornelius Cornell, 1724-'26; Peter Lefferts, 1726-'27; Johannes Ditmarse, 1727-'28; Ryck Suydam, 1728-'41; John Van Kerk, 1741-'43; Peter Stryker, 1743-'44; John Van Kerk, 1744-'49; Dominicus Vanderveer, 1749-'51; Johannes Lott, jr., 1751-'59; Jeremias Vanderbilt, 1759-'63; Johannes Lott, jr., 1763-'82; Philip Nagle, 1782-'87; Johannes J. Lott, 1787-'1804; John C. Vanderveer, 1804-'32; John Wyckoff, 1832 to February, '37; Isaac Cortelyou, February, 1837, to February '39; Jacob Rapelje, February, 1839, to April, '41; (April to April again); Isaac Cortelyou, 1841-'44; Jacob Rapalje, 1844-'45; Philip S. Crooke, 1845-'51; James V. Schoonmaker, 1851-'58; Philip S. Crooke, 1858-'70; Jacob V. B. Martense, 1870-'74; Peter S. Williamson, 1874-'82.

Town-Clerks.—The following is a list of the *Town-Clerks* of the town from 1659 to 1881: Adrian Hegeman, 1659-'71; Jacob Joosten, 1671-'73; Francays De Bruynne, 1673-'74; Michael Hainelle, 1674-'75; Jan

July 13. 1659
Michael Hainelle

Facsimile of Signature of Michael Hainelle, Town Clerk.

Gerrit Van Marckje, 1675-'80; Derick Storm, 1680-'83; Johannes Van Eklen, 1683-1700; Johannes Schenck, 1700-'11; Abraham Lott, 1711-'16; Jan Gaucell, 1716-'19; Adrian Hegeman, 1719-'41; Jores Remsen, 1741-'54; Jeremias Vanderbilt, 1754-'62; Petrus Van Steenbergh, 1762-'73; John Lefferts, 1773-'76; Philip Nagle, 1776-'92; John Van Der Bilt, 1792-'94; John C. Vanderveer, 1796-1804; Garret Stryker, 1804-'10; Abraham Vanderveer, 1810-'16; Garret Stryker, 1816-'19; Adrian Hegeman, 1819-'23; William Ellsworth, 1823-'27; William Hegeman, 1827-'28; John A. Lott, 1828-'44; John Vanderbilt, 1844-'45; James V. B. Wyckoff, 1845-'49; Gilliam Schenck, 1849-'52; John L. Lefferts, 1852-'57; John T. Rhodes, 1857-'65; John Erskine Howard, 1865-'70; Lefferts Vanderbilt, 1870-'72; Gilbert Hicks, 1872-'79; Henry Vernon Vanderveer, 1879-'84.

Justices of the Peace.—First appointed at the Convention of Hempstead in 1665. The earliest records, until 1819, are in Dutch. In the first English records

the election of Justice of Peace is not accurately noted until 1835. The Town Clerk seems to have held the office of Justice of Peace and Town Clerk, as the first English records up to 1835 are signed by him with his title as Town Clerk and also with "Justice of Peace" affixed to his name.

The list is as follows: John I. Ditmas, 1819-'21; Adrian Hegeman, 1821-'23; Wm. Hegeman, 1823-'28; John A. Lott, 1828-'29; David Johnson, 1829-'35.

First Justices elected at Town Election: Jacob Rapal-yea, 1830-'33; Simon Rapal-yea, 1830-'33; Ferdinand Wyckoff, 1833-'35; John R. Snediker, 1833-'36; John A. Lott, 1833-'36; Isaac Cortelyou, 1836-'38; Stephen P. Stoothof, 1836-'40; Abraham Snediker, 1838-'40; David Johnson, 1838-'42; John Vanderveer, 1840-'41; Garret Vanderveer, 1840-'41; John Vanderbilt, 1840-'41; James V. B. Wyckoff, 1841-'42; Michael Schoonmaker, 1841-'42; James Birdsall, 1842-'43; John C. Lott, 1842-'43; Abraham Van Wyck, 1842-'43; Abraham Snediker, 1842; John Vanderbilt, 1842; James Birdsall, 1842; Abraham S. Eldert, 1844; Abraham Snediker, 1844; Jacob H. Sackman, 1844; Gerrit Martense, 1845-1848; John Cortelyou, 1845-1847; Edwin M. Strong, 1845; Cornelius Duryea, 1845; Englebert Lott, 1846; John Lefferts, 1848; Jonathan U. Forbell, 1849-1852; John V. Martense, 1850; Englebert Lott, 1850-'53; William H. Suydam, 1851; Alonzo G. Hammond, 1852-1860; Philip S. Crooke, 1852; John Hess, 1853; John V. Martense, 1853; Isaac Denyse, 1854; Leffert R. Cornell, 1855; Francis L. Dallon, 1856-'60; John Hess, 1856; John Oakey, 1857-'61; Henry Suydam, 1858-'61; Jeremiah L. Zabriskie, 1860-'62; Abraham Lott, 1861-'62; Francis L. Dallon, 1862-'64; George W. Close, 1863-'67; N. Lansing Zabriskie, 1863-'65; John H. Bergen, 1864-'70; Richard S. Bacon, 1864-'66; Richard L. Schoonmaker, 1865-'66; James Sutherland, 1866-'70; W. Ward Watkins, 1866-'69; John L. Bergen, 1866-'67; Rem R. Hegeman, 1867-'71; Henry Ditmas, Jr., 1867-'69; D. N. Comiskey, 1868-'70; Freeman Clarkson, 1869-'74; E. B. H. Steers, 1870; Alexander Gillespie, 1870; Peter Pigott, 1871; Frank Crooke, 1872; Andrew McKibbin, 1873; Freeman Clarkson, 1873; E. B. H. Steers, 1874; James Hardie, 1875; Peter Pigott, 1875; Wm. B. Green, 1876; Wm. McMahon, 1877; Thomas Chadwick, 1878; Peter Pigott, 1879; Christian F. Wulff, 1870-'81; Thomas H. Glass, 1880; Wm. McMahon, 1881.

Constable.—This office, in former days, was one of considerable importance, and its duties required responsible men. For over a century the office was held by some of the most prominent citizens of the town. The office of village constable was created by the Hempstead Convention in 1665. The names of the earlier constables cannot be found. Jacob Stryker is the first mentioned constable, serving from 1669 to 1670. The list of his successors is long; and since, in modern times, the office has become of very much less importance

Facsimile of Jacob Stryker's Autograph.

than formerly, it is hardly necessary to give the names of its incumbents, especially as they are to be found in Dr. STRONG'S *History of Flatbush*, published in 1842.

Treasurers of County.—From 1714 to 1840, a period of one hundred and twenty-six years, the *Treasurer* of the county was, with one exception, a resident of Flatbush.

For these, as well as those who have served the county as *clerks of the Board of Supervisors*, and as *judges of the County courts*; as members of the *Colonial Assembly* and of the *State Legislature*, see the chapter on "*Bench and Bar of Kings County*."

Distinguished Citizens.—Many of the inhabitants of Flatbush have been called upon, from time to time, to fill representative positions of responsibility and trust in the County, State and National Governments.

According to BERGEN'S *Early Settlers of Kings county*, Gerardus Willemse Beekman, of Flatbush, was also chosen as a member of the Colonial council, and its President. He was also acting-governor in 1709–1710, and Colonel of Militia, as well as Justice of Peace for Flatbush in 1685. He will be more particularly mentioned in our Chapter on the *Medicine and the Medical Profession in Kings County*.

Dr. STRONG states "that among the delegates from the county of Kings who met in the city of New York, in convention April 10, 1775, for the purpose of choosing delegates to the first Continental Congress, was JOHN VANDERBILT; who, from his being subsequently a member of the Senate of the State was called "Senator John," to distinguish him from Judge John Vanderbilt. Among the delegates chosen by that convention to represent the county in that Congress, were no less than three from this village, viz.: Johannes Lott, John Lefferts, and John Vanderbilt. These delegates convened at New York on 22 of May, 1775; and continued to meet at different places, from time to time, till the adoption of the Constitution of the State in April, 1777.

JOHN LEFFERTS, of this village, was also a member of the Provincial Congress, from this county, which met on the 30th day of June, 1776. His son, PETER LEFFERTS, of Flatbush, was one of two delegates from this county to the convention which met at Poughkeepsie on 27th day of June, 1778, to adopt the Constitution of the United States. He was afterward a member of the Senate of the State, in which he appeared in a suit made entirely of homespun cloth, of so fine a texture and finish that it attracted special notice. His son, JOHN LEFFERTS, of Flatbush, was at one time

a member of Congress from this district; and also a delegate to the convention of 1821, which met for the amending of the Constitution of the State.

It is probable that no man in the county has been better known for his uprightness, honesty and talent, or has received higher honors at the hands of his party and the people, or rendered greater benefits to the village of Flatbush, and better protected the interests of the county towns, than the Hon. JOHN A. LOTT, whose full biography will be found in the chapter on the *Bench and Bar of Kings county*; as will, also, that of his talented law-partner, the late Judge JOHN VANDERBILT. The Hon. JOHN OAKLEY'S biography will also be found in the same chapter. He is a native of Brooklyn, but removing in boyhood to Flatbush, his whole active life has been prominently identified with the welfare of Flatbush.

On a comparison of these various lists the singular fact is noticeable, that while the inhabitants of Flatbush were so frequently called upon to take such an active part in the county and State government, from the original settlement until 1842, comparatively few of them have held such positions since that time. A reason for this may be found in the fact that Flatbush, until 1832, a period of nearly two hundred years, was the county town. As a consequence the inhabitants were brought into a more immediate contact with the political interests of the county and State, than they were after the county seat was moved to Brooklyn.

Flatbush During the Revolution.—As heretofore stated (page 32), the people of Kings county entered upon the revolutionary struggle with much reluctance. Stimulated by the proximity of the turbulent population of New York city, as well as by the contagious excitement of current events, they "equally, with the other colonists, resisted the encroachments and taxation of their foreign rulers; they also, at first, had their meetings and expressed their sympathy with the general uprising. On April 5, 1775, a meeting was held at Flatbush, at which deputies were appointed for choosing delegates to the Continental Congress, to be held at Philadelphia in May, from Flatbush. DAVID CLARKSON, ADRIAN VOORHEES, JACOBUS VANDEVENTER and JOHN VANDERBILT were appointed; and May 20, the magistrates and freeholders met in Brooklyn to co-operate with the freeholders of the City and County of New York, and other meetings for a similar purpose were afterward held." (*Field*.)

The news of the battle of Lexington (received in New York April 23d, the very day when the Provincial Convention had dissolved), led to a call by the citizens for the assembly of a Provincial Congress on the 24th of May. It was in compliance with this request that a meeting of town delegates was held at Flatbush, May 22d. But, even then, prudence had taken the place of valor, and Flatbush, through her delegate, Nicholas

Cowenhoven, declined any complicity in the proceedings of the Convention; and, at the same time, expressed the intention of remaining neutral in the approaching struggle. Nicholas Cowenhoven and Johannes E. Lott were the delegates chosen to represent Flatbush.

In June, 1776, we find some of the royalists of Flatbush engaged in a wide-spread plot to seize the person of Gen. Washington; and, in the confusion ensuing, to rise and overawe the whigs. MR. T. W. FIELD mentions that :

"David Mathews, the mayor of New York, resided for a portion of the year at his country-seat in Flatbush; and, although by his great adroitness and caution, he managed to avoid such complicity with the plot as could be proven, he was undoubtedly the lieutenant of the chief conspirator, Gov. Tryon. Near him, in the village of Flatbush, lived William Axtel, a loyalist gentleman of wealth and influence, afterwards Colonel of the British provincial militia. The plot undoubtedly had its inception on board the British ship-of-war Asia; was matured at Flatbush, the residence of Mayor Mathews, and relied for its principal sustainers and adherents upon the loyalists of Long Island. Of the ninety-eight persons who were ultimately charged with complicity in this plot, fifty-six were residents of Kings and Queens counties. The nightly return of Mathews to his residence, not more than four or five miles from the landing-place of boats from the Asia, and his daily return to the city, made him the fittest organ of communication between the Governor and the loyalists. The conspiracy failed to accomplish anything, except to increase the rigor of surveillance over the Long Island loyalists, who felt its influence for many months subsequently."

The Skirmishes of Flatbush.—This village had a distinct share in the movements and events which culminated, on the 27th of August, 1776, in what is known as the Battle of Long Island—more properly the Battle of Brooklyn. As will be seen by reference to the account of the Battle of Long Island (Chapter VI. of the *General History of Kings County*, in this volume), Flatbush lay in the track of one of the British columns of attack, and was the scene of some of the preliminary fighting of that eventful action. When the British army landed at Denyse's ferry, on the morning of the 22d, a heavy column, under Lord Cornwallis, pushed forward to Flatbush. "A small redoubt had been constructed by the Americans, near the western boundary of the village, and here occurred the first collision between the British and the American forces on our island." Cornwallis' vanguard, under the Hessian Colonel, Donop, reached Flatbush in the evening. We quote from T. W. FIELD'S *History of the Battle of Long Island*, Vol. II. of the *Memoirs of the Long Island Historical Society* :

"Three hundred American riflemen, who had occupied the village, abandoned it as soon as the Hessian battery of six guns had taken position and opened fire. The possession of this slumbrous little Dutch village by the Hessians was not, however, destined to be maintained without a struggle. The awe inspired by the imposing array of the German troops had worn away in the cool night, and early on the morning of the 23d the slumbers of the heavy-eyed Hessians

were broken by a dash upon their right wing, resting near the west end of the village. On the thickly wooded hills near Flatbush, Colonel Hand was in command of the whole Pennsylvania battalion of riflemen, consisting of 553 officers and privates. Believing that the familiarity acquired by combat with the formidable strangers would dissipate the increasing dread with which they were regarded, Col. Hand ordered an assault upon their lines. The attack was spirited, though feebly maintained, as the Americans retired to the woods as soon as a field-piece was brought to bear upon them."

Emboldened, however, by their success, the Americans, on the afternoon of the same day (23d), made another assault on Donop's left wing, encamped a short distance west of the Brooklyn and New Utrecht road. So impetuous was this attack, that * * *

"that portion of the Hessian corps was driven back upon the main body, then lying south of the Dutch Church, and the whole detachment was held at bay for more than one hour. The fire of the American riflemen was so galling that the Hessians were compelled to improvise redoubts, from the houses of Adrian Hegeman and Lefferts Martense, for the purpose of repelling their attack. In these buildings they cut holes, wherever these afforded them position for firing upon the American sharpshooters. At length the cannon, from which the Hessian gunners had doubtless been driven by our riflemen, were brought into position, and opened their fire upon the assaulting party. At this time the houses of Jeremiah Vanderbilt, Leffert Lefferts, and Evert Hegeman were in flames, and added, by their conflagration, the horrors which war had brought upon this quiet village. Although it has been a popular habit to charge this incendiarism upon the Hessian invaders, it is yet certain that these dwellings were fired by the Americans, to prevent their occupation as defensive positions by the enemy."

"On the 25th the Americans determined to meet the Hessian artillery with the same arms; and, accordingly, a strong body of riflemen, accompanied by several guns, pushed forward beyond the edge of the woods, and opened fire with round and grape-shot, upon the devoted village, behind whose walls the enemy sought shelter from the rebel sharpshooters. The attack was well maintained for a time, but was at length repulsed by the greater weight and steadiness of the Hessian artillery,"

The poor Germans, however, were much harassed and disgusted by this, to them, novel and irritating method of warfare; and Cornwallis was finally obliged to relieve them from picket and guard duty, so that they might be enabled to procure a little rest.

"The inconsiderate Americans, however, beat up their camp again at 2 o'clock on the morning of the 26th, and they were once more hurried to the front to assist in repelling these midnight prowlers. This was the fifth considerable skirmish, in three days, which those uneasy Yankees had compelled the slow-moving Germans to repel, and their pertinacity was becoming unendurable. During the afternoon of the 26th a stronger force than had yet been engaged was pushed forward upon the Hessian lines; and this time with such threatening demonstrations that Lord Cornwallis, whose instructions were imperative not to press the rebels from their position, immediately ordered Col. Donop to retire. The brave, though cruel, Hessian, begged hard to be permitted to remain and intrench himself, but was compelled to retire to the main body, which was far too powerful for

the light assaulting column of the Americans to make any impression upon it."

Late in the evening of that day, the whole British force was in motion, in the decisive movement which precipitated the battle of the 27th.

The British Occupation of the Town, 1776-1783.—Flatbush, of course, suffered its full share of the lawlessness and oppression to which Long Island was subjected during the seven years occupation of the British forces. Mrs. G. L. VANDERBILT, in her very interesting *Social History of Flatbush*, thus speaks of its unhappy condition after the battle of the 27th August, 1776, which placed the whole county at the mercy of the British :

"It is almost impossible to realize the picture of devastation this village presented at that period. The cattle belonging to the farmers had been driven, by command of the American officers, into Queens and Suffolk Counties, to prevent their falling into the possession of the invaders, and the grain, the produce of the year, was stacked in the fields and burned, for the same reason. The houses of those in the northern section of the town were burned. In the line of march of the British, and over the district of hills and woods which embraced or bounded the area of the battle-ground, were strewn the bodies of the dead who had fallen either in battle, or in irregular fighting in the hills and hollows, for there was no quarter given by the Hessians. It is probable that some of these were never buried, for bones were frequently found long after the engagement, and the superstitious avoided a locality said to be haunted. During that dreadful August many of the inhabitants fled from their homes, which were taken possession of by lawless adventurers. The sick and wounded were placed in the church, and the want of attention to their sufferings caused the whole air to be infected. In the Autumn a camp-fever became epidemic, and proved very fatal. The grass grew in the streets, all business was at an end ; the wet Autumn which succeeded a hot Summer added to the filth of the encampment, and the want of many of the common comforts of life caused almost constant illness, even among those who escaped the fever. Amid all their sickness and poverty they were constantly harassed by petty exactions from which there was no appeal ; their fences and even their farming utensils were used for firewood ; their horses were taken from before the plow ; their cattle were driven away or butchered ; their fowls were stolen ; and frequently small parties of soldiers on the march took temporary possession of their homes, driving out the owners if the room was needed. As a sort of practical joke the feather-beds were sometimes emptied into the wells. The dark cherry-wood cupboards were dismantled, and from the shelves the horses of the cavalry-officers were fed. It was useless to seek redress, none could be had. To make the scanty supply still more inadequate, the whole town was filled with soldiers. Some of these were of the roughest class. These were billeted upon the people without their consent, and often in opposition to their express wishes. For a regiment of Waldeckers no compensation was ever given. Even where Congress promised two dollars per week, there were very little prospect at that time that it would be paid ; and the Continental money, which was a legal tender, was much depreciated. There was no safety from thieves either day or night, but the loss of property was small compared to the danger of life, and the constant feeling of personal security. A band of men of notoriously bad character con-

stituted a company under the name of the 'Nassau Blues,' and were in possession of the Court House. They not only helped themselves freely to the property of the inhabitants, of whom they were called the 'Guards,' but they were the terror of respectable people."

In connection with this subject the reader is referred to pages 100 and 101 ; as well as to Chapter VI, of our *General History of Long Island*.

In the appendix to Mrs. VANDERBILT's book, is an exceedingly vivid sketch of "Home Life During the War of the Revolution," taken from the lips of an old lady of Flatbush, who was in her sixteenth year at the time of the Battle of Long Island.

Old Mills.—In former days two large windmills formed a conspicuous feature in the village landscape. One of these stood east of the main road and south of the road to New Lots, formerly called Cow Lane, now East Broadway,—or near the northeast corner of present Erasmus street and Nostrand avenue. It was of very peculiar construction ; built by a Mr. Molineaux, of Westbury, L. I., in 1820, and owned by Rich. Willis, of New York city. It was circular in form, about 60 feet in diameter, and about 25 feet high to the eaves, surmounted with a conical roof, from the top of which issued the shaft, rising some 25 feet above the roof. To this shaft were attached an upper and lower set of arms, extending at right angles to the shaft, for a distance of 20 feet. Between these upper and lower arms, at their extremities, a series (16 or 18) of perpendicular fans, or movable wings, were attached, which could be so adjusted, at any angle, as to take the wind from any direction. It turned one "run" of stones only, and was more lately known as "Lloyd's Mill. It is supposed to have been the only mill of this peculiar construction upon the Island, and was taken down January, 1868. Another old mill stood upon Mr. John C. Vanderveer's farm, in the southern section of the village, and was always called "Vanderveer's Mill." This is said to have been the first windmill erected upon Long Island. *The Rural Gazette*, March 4, 1879, states that it was completed in 1804 by John C. Vanderveer. It was of immense strength, the main timbers being twenty-eight feet high and two and a half feet thick. It was four stories high, with a stone foundation of about three feet. The arms and sails, similar in construction to the Holland mills, were twenty-six feet long. There were three sets or "run" of stones. The sails were first blown off in the famous September gale of 1821. About ten years after the sails were blown off again, after which they were not repaired. During the drafting riots of 1863 it was a refuge for the colored people, who were threatened by the Irish. It was destroyed by fire on the night of the 30th of April, 1879.

Old Houses.—These have nearly all passed away, one by one. The only one still standing is that owned by the heirs of John C. Bergen. In Mrs. Gertrude

Lefferts Vanderbilt's delightful book, *Social History of Flatbush*, and Dr. P. L. Schenck's interesting *Zabriskie Homestead*, will be found reminiscences of these ancient dwellings, which our limited space will not allow us to dwell upon. The old "Robinson House," *alias* "Melrose Hall," which is soon to be demolished, deserves more than a passing notice.

Melrose Hall.—There are few towns in this State possessing more of historic interest than Flatbush; and, certainly, no single dwelling in this lovely village has witnessed more of tragic or romantic incident than has Melrose Hall. Its erection ante-dates, by many years, the American Revolution; it possesses a style of architecture quite unknown to the early Dutch settlers; and on a plan grander and more pretentious than any of its contemporaries.

It is said to have been built by an Englishman by the name of Lane, in 1749. It was adorned with gilded drawing-rooms and wide wainscoted halls; surrounded by ample grounds, tastefully laid out in flower-beds and garden-plots, all hid away behind the far-stretching lawn. Here its proprietor, with his numerous friends, led a merry life, not unfrequently awakening the still echoes of the night by their bacchanalian songs and revels.

After Lane's death the property was purchased by Col. William Axtell. Axtell was a descendant of Daniel Axtell, a Colonel in Cromwell's army, who was beheaded by order of Charles II—he having been refused the benefits of the act of "General pardons and obligations," by Parliament.

William Axtell was born on the Island of Jamaica. Here he owned large sugar plantations which were sold

in 1759, which is the probable date of his coming to New York. Here he lived until 1763, when he sold his house and lot in Wall street and came to Flatbush to reside. He was a member of the King's Council; by birth and education a loyalist; and, from instinct as well as choice, a Tory. Being a man of much influence and considerable wealth, his new home became a favorite rendezvous for all the Tory element in and about the metropolis. Here many a secret conclave was held, and many a plan concocted, to thwart the designs of the

Rebels. Here the beauty and fashion of the day were often hospitably entertained, and the spacious ball-room resounded with the dulcet notes of the lute or viol, while flying feet kept even pace with the swift-flying hours.

In 1778 Axtell was commissioned, by Sir William Howe, to raise a regiment of foot, of which he was Colonel. In 1783 the Colonel and his officers were presented by their lady friends with a handsome standard of colors. This presentation took place in front of his house; his men and officers forming in a circle around the flag, which they saluted, taking a solemn oath to support it forever. Afterwards, a sumptuous dinner

was served in the hall and grounds, and the event closed with a brilliant ball, the like of which was seldom seen in the infant colony.

In 1776, a few days before the Battle of Brooklyn, while Axtell was entertaining a party of British officers, an American gunner, stationed on the wooded heights beyond, threw a shell into the house, causing much damage, and great consternation to the inmates. After the battle of Long Island, as is well known, Flatbush remained in the hands of the British



MELROSE HALL, 1883.

until the close of the war. During this period many American prisoners were paroled here; among them several officers. The conduct of the Tories towards them was so insolent and overbearing, that one of the Americans, Captain William Marriner, after his release, resolved to be avenged. For this purpose he procured a whale-boat and a picked crew, and set out from the Jersey shore for Gravesend Bay, where he landed in the evening, and proceeded without delay or molestation to Flatbush. Here he divided his men into four parties and proceeded to the residences of Major Moncrief, Col. Sherbrook, Col. Mathews (then Mayor of New York), and Col. Axtell. At a given signal, the doors of the various houses were battered in, and Moncrief and Sherbrook captured; but, fortunately for Mathews and Axtell, they escaped, having remained in New York that night.

Even if Colonel Axtell had been at home, his capture would have been no easy task, for the house abounds in secret closets, and out-of-the-way nooks, where one could easily hide. Indeed, much mystery surrounds these secret rooms. By some, they were supposed to have been constructed by order of Col. Axtell for such emergencies as the above. By others, they are associated with secrets of a more terrible nature, and have been peopled with ghosts and hobgoblins. One thing is certain, for no inconsiderable period of its history, Melrose was looked upon suspiciously by its neighbors as a place to be avoided after night-fall; and children were awed into subjection and silence by stories of phantom sights and sounds, seen and heard in and about the ancient place.

In consequence of Axtell's well-known Tory proclivities, his property was forfeited by an act of the legislature, and sold by a Commission, on the 21st day of October, 1784. The purchaser was Aquila Giles, an American officer of some distinction, who had often visited here in the early part of the war, but who was subsequently forbidden the place. Among the then inmates of the house was Miss Shipton, said to have been a niece of Mrs. Axtell, to whom Col. Giles was betrothed, and whom he afterwards married. Thus, by the fortunes of war, master and guest changed places; and Col. Giles, and his wife Eliza, were the happy possessors of Col. Axtell's estate until June 28, 1809, when they conveyed the same to Bateman Lloyd.

Lloyd was a native of Salem, N. J., an officer in the American army, and died here in 1815. Through his heirs it finally passed into the possession of James Mowatt, husband of the well-known actress, who resided here from 1836 to 1841.

Mrs. Mowatt, in her auto-biography, speaks of her life in Flatbush most enthusiastically. Of the house she says there were dark and spacious vaults beneath the kitchen, where it was said English prisoners had been confined; and a secret chamber above the great ball-room, where it was affirmed a young girl had been

purposely starved to death, and whose ghost wandered, at night, about the house.

Here she spent happy years, as she herself writes, trundling hoops, skipping the rope, riding horseback, and dressed in half Turkish costume, shooting birds on the wing, much to the annoyance and disgust of her staid Dutch neighbors. In 1844 Dr. John Robinson purchased the property, and came here to reside with his family. Dr. Robinson was a gentleman of the olden school, and a graduate of Dublin University. Though his practice was mostly in the city of New York, he took a just pride in Melrose, and preserved its trees and rare shrubs with scrupulous care. He resided longer in Melrose Hall than any other person; and gave character, by his individuality, to the whole place. He died in 1879, much regreted by those who had the pleasure of an intimate acquaintance with him.

Since his death, Melrose Hall, and a part of the original domain, have been purchased by his old friend and neighbor, Dr. Homer L. Bartlett, who contemplates removing the ancient mansion, and converting the lawn and grounds into a beautiful park, where family residences can be built beneath the shadows of these venerable and historic trees. Such is the logic of fate. The cry of the whip-poor-will gives place to the prattle of childhood; and the shadows of ghosts are supplanted by the spray and mist of the fountain of Melrose Park.

Town Pound.—On the south side of Cow Lane, or East Broadway, about sixty feet east of Locust street, in former days, was located the town pound. Its high board-fence enclosed an area of about forty feet square, extending almost half way across the street. Adjoining it was the colored people's burying-ground, extending west about 100 feet, to a pond, on the land now occupied by the Public School and the building of the Flatbush Engine Company. This pond, in early days, probably extended to the middle of the line of the street; this accounts for the angle in the street at this point. When this property, then owned by the Reformed Church, was improved, and the street laid out in 1865, these relics of the old town were removed. The graves were opened and the remains removed to a new burying-ground in another section of the Reformed Church land, at the northeast corner of the cemetery of the Holy Cross. Dr. Strong quotes a record of the court, November 12, 1695, ordering a pound and a good pair of stocks to be built immediately. It is probable, therefore, that the pound had been located on this site for one hundred and sixty or more years.

Stocks and Whipping Post.—The *stocks* were erected in front of the old Court House, and were still in existence in the early part of this century. Near by was a *whipping-post*; and one of the town officers was a public-whipper, with an annual salary of £3. There was also a *public brew-house*, located in the southern part of the town, near Vernon avenue, on the property now owned by the Brooklyn City Railroad Company.

THE MODERN HISTORY OF FLATBUSH, 1830—1883.

POPULATION.—After obtaining the patent from Governor Stuyvesant, in 1651, the settlement appears to have increased in population more rapidly than any of the other towns. This may have arisen from its central position, and because it early became the market town. As early as 1658 it was the seat of justice for this section of Long Island, and in 1654 the governor issued an order for building the first church for the "Five Dutch Towns," at Flatbush.

The first reference to the population is found in Vol. II. of *Colonial Documents, N. Y.*, where it is stated that "all the men in the town to the number of seventy-three took the oath of allegiance." Breuckelen and "dependencies" had at this time eighty-one men. None of the other towns had over fifty men.

The next mention of the population is in Vol. III of *Doc. Hist.*, in a census of the Kings county towns for the year 1698. According to this, Flatbush contained sixty-two men, seventy-two women, two hundred and sixty-three children, eight apprentices, and seventy-one slaves, making a total of four hundred and seventy-six; Brooklyn at this time numbering five hundred and nine. In 1840 the population was one thousand five hundred and thirty-seven; in 1880 the population of Flatbush (including the settlements of Parkville and Windsor Terrace) numbered 7,634. The first assessment rolls give the valuation of the taxable property of the town for 1675 as £5079 19. 0.; 1676, as £4872 11. 0.; 1683, as £7757 10. 0. (while Breuckelen for the same year had a valuation of £5793 10. 0.); Flatbush, 1820, \$504,408.00; 1840, \$1,100,555.00; 1880, Real-estate, \$4,005,550.00; Personal, \$281,500.00. In the census of 1755 Flatbush possessed the largest number of slaves, there being 108 as against 67 in Brooklyn, and thirty-five in Flatlands.

Changes in the Village.—The destruction of the court-house by fire, in 1832, was the first of the many and great changes which have taken place in the town during the past fifty years. By this event, and the removal of the courts to Brooklyn, the character of the village was changed. No longer the county-seat, it became the quiet country village; and, instead of being considered the most important town in the county, it was now distinguished from the other villages only by its rural beauty, and the larger number of its inhabitants. One change has followed another in quick succession, so that the village has changed in a more rapid and marked manner within the last forty years than during the previous two hundred years. Dr. Strong states that the first fences through the village were

made of stone, surmounted by earth and sod, upon which were planted shoots of the primrose. These were kept properly trimmed and gave a very neat and pretty appearance to the village. But these fences were destroyed at about the time of the Revolutionary war, the primrose-bushes all dying during a single season. Gradually the common post-and-rail fence took the place of the stone fences, making a very marked and unpleasant change. After a number of years these were displaced by neat picket fences. About the year 1812, Lombardy poplars were planted in great numbers on both sides of the main street; but, although they gave the village a most picturesque appearance, were illy adapted to this climate, and in a few years were mostly destroyed and taken down. Until the year 1855 a large number of weeping willow trees formed a beautiful feature in the village scenery. There were six or eight of these trees around the Reformed Church.

Historical Trees.—In addition to these, there have been five remarkable linden trees in the village, whose age goeth beyond the memory of the oldest inhabitant, and which were probably relics of the primeval forest. One of these grew upon the site now occupied by the residence of John A. Lott. Dr. Strong states that, on one occasion, the Court of the county held its session under this tree. The second was upon the southeast corner of Flatbush road and East Broadway, or Cow Lane, as it was originally called. Another stood on the corner of Grant street and Flatbush road, adjoining the yard of the chapel of the Reformed Church. The fourth, standing like a village sentinel, on the northwest corner of the Main road and Church Lane, shading and protecting with its ancient arms the old homestead of the Lloyd and Zabriskie families, was destroyed by a gale of wind in October, 1876. According to village tradition this tree has quite an historical notoriety. It is said that during the war Washington and his officers pitched their tents under its far-reaching branches; and that the English officers placed their tents in the shade of the same tree after the capture of the village. Tradition also says that in early times, at stated intervals during the summer, an itinerant Methodist preacher held services under this tree. Dr. Strong states that during the war of the Revolution Major David Lennox, as a prisoner, was billeted upon Mr. Bateman Lloyd, who then owned this house. While thus a prisoner he was visited by his brothers, Robert and William, who endeavored to influence him to desert the American cause. The interview took place under this tree. They used every inducement, but although completely overcome by the prospect of separation from his brothers, he

turned from them, and, amid his tears, exclaimed with Roman firmness: "I will never forsake my country in her need." Both house and tree disappeared from sight at about the same time. The old house, more than two hundred years old, was taken down in November, 1877, to make room for the new and elegant residence of Dr. John L. Zabriskie. The fifth tree still stands in front of the residence of the late Gen. Philip S. Crooke. The huge trunk, in its extreme age, is no longer capable of sustaining the weight of its immense branches; and, several years before his death, Gen. Crooke had riggers to fasten chains around the branches in the upper part of the tree, and a strong iron band around the trunk, so that it might still be preserved in its beauty.

Sidewalks Regulated.—About the year 1827, the first attempt was made to regulate the sidewalks of the village, and bring them to a uniform appearance and grade. The first to undertake this improvement was Mr. Matthew Clarkson. The next improvement was the placing a neat wooden, and often quite ornamental, railing in front of each dwelling, separating the sidewalk from the road. This railing, in later days, extended, on either side of the street, in an almost unbroken line, from one end of the village to the other, giving to the street a neat and beautiful appearance.

Sidewalks and Crossings Flagged.—In the year 1874, by a special Legislative act, the Commissioners of Highways were authorized to flag the street sidewalks of the village upon application of a majority of the property owners upon the street. A later act authorized them to lay cross-walks at the intersection of streets. On the west side of the main road, the walk is paved from one end of the village to the other; and, on the east side, from the city line to Vernon avenue.

Flatbush Main Road.—The road from Brooklyn to the Flatbush Reformed Church was originally a branch road, owned by the Brooklyn, Flatbush & Jamaica Turnpike Company. In 1855, Teunis J. Bergen, Philip S. Crooke, John Lefferts, Jeromus I. Johnson, and others, organized a company, with Teunis J. Bergen, president, Philip S. Crooke, secretary; and buying out the interest of the Jamaica Company in the Flatbush section of this road, they formed the *Flatbush Plank-Road Company*, and proceeded to lay down a plank-road from Brooklyn to Flatlands. The road, as at present constituted, was surveyed in 1855, by Teunis G. Bergen. Right of way, with the privilege to charge toll and lay planks on the section of the road south of the Reformed Church in Flatbush, was obtained from the Road Commissioners of the towns; as this portion of the route belonged to the towns of Flatbush and Flatlands. After a number of years this road became thoroughly worn out; and, about the year 1855-6, was taken up, and a macadamized-road was built in its place by the prisoners in the Kings County Penitentiary, hired by the company. Such of the planks as

were available were used, at the suggestion of Teunis J. Bergen, for village plank-walks, and for a time did good service, but finally became warped, unsafe and unpopular.

Old Stage Routes.—For more than one hundred and fifty years the inhabitants had ridden to the city over an "exceedingly stony road" in their common farm-wagons, which were made in early days without springs. About the year 1830 a line of stages was established by Smith Birdsall. A stage left the village in the morning for the city and returned at evening. There was, at that time, no *post-office* here. Letters intended for those resident here, were addressed to Brooklyn and brought out to the village, for many years, as a favor, by Mr. Cornelius Duryea, whose business led him to the city daily. The first post-office was located here after Colonel James C. Church, of Fort Hamilton, established his mail-coach route between Fort Hamilton and Brooklyn. Mr. Michael Schoonmaker was the first postmaster at Flatbush, serving until about 1845, when his son, Richard L., was appointed. In 1865 Miss Phebe Case was appointed serving until May, 1870, when Gilbert Hicks was appointed, and held the office until 1882, when Henry Paton became postmaster. Another line of stage-coaches, owned by Conklin Carll, of Brooklyn, and driven by the well-remembered "Billy Cutting," was started between Gravesend and Brooklyn; and these two lines, in 1838-9, caused the withdrawal of Birdsall's line. In 1845, after the discontinuance of the Fort Hamilton coaches, George Bennett, of New Utrecht, established a line between Flatbush and the city; and, in 1847, was succeeded by Thomas Jones, whose omnibus left the village every hour during the day. This line was bought, in 1849, by Garrett Stryker, who sold, in 1852, to James Davis; and, in 1854, it was sold again to Cornwell & Weeden, who ran a stage every half hour during morning and evening hours, and hourly at other times of the day. In 1858 Mr. William Smith bought and ran the line until the introduction of the street-cars, July, 1860.

Street Cars Introduced.—The next great change which affected the rural character of the village was the introduction of the street cars into the village. Until the year 1857, Flatbush, although so near to Brooklyn, had nevertheless preserved its strictly rural character.

About 1848, Mr. Theodorus Polhemus, owner of most of the land on the hill, together with Mr. Churchill C. Cambrelling and others, initiated the project of opening Flatbush avenue, from Fulton avenue, Brooklyn, to the village of Flatbush. The line of the avenue had been previously surveyed in 1837, and map filed in Register's office. This project was bitterly opposed, for some reason, by the residents of Flatbush. Soon after, Judge Lefferts, and others, of Bedford, projected the opening of Fulton avenue to

Bedford. This proposition met with better success, and Fulton avenue was speedily laid out and opened for travel. Court street and Fifth avenue had been opened a few years previous to Gowanus, and thus an easy outlet was made for the city in these directions. Soon the city began to grow rapidly out toward its suburbs, lying to the east, west and north. There was no growth, however, toward the south, in the direction of Flatbush. These localities, Gowanus and East New York, though further from the City Hall than Flatbush, were nevertheless more easy of access. The long, tedious ride, by stage, over the hill, was a serious barrier to the growth of the city toward Flatbush. This had been, no doubt, in some measure, a benefit to the village; keeping back the tide of immigration which flooded the eastern section of the city, and preserving intact the woodlands which were afterwards purchased by the city for Prospect Park. In the spring of 1854, Flatbush avenue (surveyed in 1837) was laid out, graded and paved, from its junction with Fulton avenue, Brooklyn, to the city line, which at that time was a few hundred feet north of the present site of the Reservoir. In 1854, by Legislative enactment, N. B. Morse, John G. Bergen and Nicholas Stillwell were appointed commissioners to lay out and arrange for opening Flatbush avenue, from the city line to the present terminus of the village, at Malbone street. The line of the street was surveyed by Teunis G. Bergen in November, 1854, and a map filed in the Register's office. This portion of the avenue, however, was not opened to the public, until 1858, owing to the difficulty experienced by the commissioners in raising the assessment made for the improvement.

After the avenue was opened to the village, the Brooklyn City Railroad secured, in 1860, from the Plank-Road Company, a right of way through the village, and extended a single track (with a switch at Winthrop street) to the present depot at Vernon avenue. The first cars ran through to Flatbush in the latter part of July, 1860. Thus the serious barrier which, for two centuries, had separated Flatbush and Brooklyn, was removed; and the two localities were united, by iron bands, in a union never to be broken.

Streets Laid Out.—The first change in the original system of roads and streets (which had existed since 1654) was made in 1834, when Hon. Gerrit L. Martense bought a section of land 1,000 feet on East Broadway, and filed a map of thirty-eight lots in the Registrar's office, September 1, 1834. He opened two short streets, called Erasmus and Johnson streets. Here, six or eight English mechanics bought lots and built homes for themselves. The section has since been known as the "English neighborhood." For many years, however, the greater part of the land remained as commons, and these houses formed a secluded little hamlet, entirely isolated from the rest of the village. In 1835, Dr. Ad-

rian Vanderveer had his farm on the east side of Flatbush avenue, to the Clove Road (now Canarsie avenue), surveyed into city lots. He opened, at this time, Vernon avenue, and improved it by grading it and planting trees upon it from Flatbush Road to the Clove Road. He also laid out Lott, Prospect, Lawrence, Franklin and Clinton streets, and Bedford avenue; but these streets were not opened until 1867-68, and but little, if any, of the property was sold before that time. In 1837 a map was filed by John A. Scudder, of a section of the Cornelius Suydam farm, and a street (the continuation of the Clove Road, now Canarsie avenue) was opened through the property. (For a more detailed statement of this speculative movement see our account of the Holy Cross Cemetery). The next, and most decided change, was made in 1865, when a section of four acres of land, owned by the Reformed Church, was laid out in city lots, and Locust street opened through the property. This section was bounded on the north by East Broadway, east by Johnson street, and west by the land of Erasmus Hall Academy. This property found a ready sale, and a number of houses were soon erected upon it. Soon after, in 1867, Teunis J. Bergen, of Flatbush, purchased the Antonides farm, which adjoined the last named section on the south, and with a front on Flatbush road, and opened Union street through the center of the property, as far as Johnson street. Several years after, the Board of Improvement opened this street, from Flatbush Road to the Catholic Cemetery, and changed the name to Grant street. In a short time many of the streets laid down by Dr. Adrian Vanderveer, in his survey of 1834, were opened from East Broadway to Duryea's Lane, or to what is now called Avenue B. After the opening of these streets, buildings of all descriptions were rapidly put up; so that now, this once secluded little hamlet of "English neighborhood" has assumed the appearance of the suburbs of a large city.

The Village of Parkville.—In 1849 a company was formed, the "*Coney Island Plank-Road Company*;" a right of way was secured in 1850, and a road laid out from Brooklyn to Coney Island, passing through the western section of the town. Upon this road two sections of land were bought in 1851-52, and the villages of GREENFIELD and WINDSOR TERRACE were founded. On July 10, 1851, the trustees of the United Freeman's Association (who had formed a company under the act passed April 10, 1851) purchased 67 acres of land from Johnson Tredwell, and proceeded to lay out a village, to which they gave the name of *Greenfield*. In 1852 they purchased from the farm of Henry S. Ditmas, immediately adjoining on the south, another section; bringing up their whole purchase to about 114 acres, at the rate of \$500 per acre. These purchases were made by Charles Foster, Hezekiah Russell, John C. Myers, Charles A. Tilva, Wm. Stevens, Trustees of the association. The officers of the associ-

ation were John A. Lawrence, *President*; J. C. Valentine, *Vice-President*; Francis Webb, Harry L. Pelouze, John Hall, *Directors*; J. K. Raymond, Robert Smith, *Secretaries*.

In 1853 the association contracted to have the streets laid out and graded. Shade trees were planted along the sidewalks, and numerous public wells were dug upon the line of the streets, for the convenience of the residents. The association held control of the property, selling lots as demands were made for them. After a number of years the association closed up its affairs, the first section in 1854, the second about 1856; and each individual secured a deed for such property as he desired as his share. None of these deeds for any of the lots sold by the association were given by the association, but by the original owners, Johnson Tredwell and Henry S. Ditmas. The only member of the original association who still holds property and resides at Parkville, is Mr. Wm. H. Taylor, who, as the first settler, came to the village in 1852.

In 1853 a new road was opened and planked upon the southern boundary of the Greenfield purchase. This road, called the "Shortest Route to Coney Island," began at the Coney Island Plank Road, about 100 feet south of Mr. Teunis Bergen's residence, near what, according to the present system of streets, is the corner of Avenue H, and ran in a southwesterly direction, crossing the Boulevard at Avenue I. Continuing in same direction as far as the northwesterly corner of Washington Cemetery, at Avenue K, it there turned south and followed what is now Gravesend avenue. This road, according to Mr. John V. N. Bergen (to whom, as well as to Mr. Wm. H. Taylor, we are indebted for many facts in the history of Greenfield), was opened by the adjoining property owners, in order to make a direct route to the city for the residents of Gravesend.

In 1870 the name Greenfield was changed to PARKVILLE. The Post-Office had for some time been called *Cresco*, but the authorities at Washington saw fit to change the name to Parkville. Within a few years past the original village has been increased by purchases made at the east of the Coney Island Plank Road, along the line of Newkirk avenue. The first house in this section was put up by Mr. Joseph Stelle, who purchased a large tract of land. On the southwest, Mr. A. F. Johnson bought a portion of the farm of Abram Duryea, upon which he built several houses for sale, and laid out the section in city lots.

A portion of the John Ditmas farm, lying to the north of the village, was bought by Kingsland and Keeney, who afterward conveyed it to the "Butterick Pattern Company." This section of the village is as yet unimproved, the Congregational church being the only building thereon, at present.

During 1880-'81 an effort was made by Messrs. Wilder & Montgomery to secure an Act of Incorpora-

tion, a matter which is still agitated by some of the prominent residents of the village. There is now in the village a large and flourishing public school and five churches, of which we will speak more in detail when treating of the literary and ecclesiastical history of Flatbush.

The first settler upon the original purchase was Mr. William H. Taylor, who built the first house in 1852. Mr. E. McChesney erected a dwelling for himself in 1853. After this the number of inhabitants increased quite rapidly. Among these early settlers were D. I. Talt, Mr. Benton, J. P. Heath, J. Kershaw, J. Marquies, William Staites and William Matthews. The first house within the *present* limits of Parkville was erected in 1803 by Adrian Martense, the grandfather of Mr. Adrian Bergen. In 1836 Teunis Bergen, the brother of Adrian, built a house for himself upon land near the old homestead; and, in the year 1852, Mr. Adrian Bergen built a commodious residence upon his farm within the limits of Parkville, for his son John V. N. Bergen. Though not included in the *original* purchase, these residences are within the present limits of Parkville, and are the oldest houses in the locality. Their owners have been largely interested in the increase and welfare of the new village.

In the year 1860 the population was about 200, and the valuation of the property, real and personal, according to the assessment rolls, was \$62,450. In 1880 the population was about 525, and the valuation of property, real and personal, had reached the sum of \$161,280.

Hon. A. G. Hammond, a man of considerable prominence among the early settlers, was the *first post-master* of the village. Several of the residents of Parkville have been elected to hold offices in the general town government. Among these we find, of *Justices of the Peace*, the names of A. G. Hammond, 1852-1857; G. W. Close, 1863-1867; Wm. McMahon, 1877-1881; Andrew McKibbin, 1873-1877; and Daniel M. Cumiskey, *Justice of Sessions* for two years. Mr. William Staite held the office of Excise Commissioner from 1880-1883. J. PAULDING, for a long time resident of the village, was elected a member of the State Assembly, and was instrumental in securing the Act creating the Occan Parkway. When this boulevard was laid out and graded it was necessary to remove the M. E. Church, the district school-house, the residence of Mr. J. V. N. Bergen, and several other private houses. By the opening of the boulevard or parkway the village was divided into two sections.

Windsor Terrace.—The same year in which the "United Freeman" founded Parkville, a tract of land on the Coney Island road, near the present city line, was purchased by Robert Bell, who immediately proceeded to lay out the village, afterward called WINDSOR TERRACE. This section was bounded on the east by the Coney Island road, 1,025 feet to land of

Thomas Murphy; south and west by the land of Thomas Murphy; north by the patent line of the City of Brooklyn. The land was originally the farm of John Vanderbilt, divided at his death between his two sons, John and Jeremiah. The dividing line of these two farms, which were purchased by Robert Bell, is Vanderbilt street. Mr. Bell subsequently reconveyed it to Edward Belknap, who laid out forty-seven building plots (each 100x150 feet) on each side of Seely street and north of Vanderbilt. On Adams street, south of Vanderbilt, the lots were only one hundred and eight feet deep. He laid down the following streets, since recognized by the town survey, viz.: *Seely, Vanderbilt* and *Adams*, as well as a short street not recognized by the town survey, but which now forms part of the present Prospect avenue. These streets were laid out at his expense.

In 1853 G. W. Brown, an extensive real estate operator and prominent builder of Brooklyn, purchased a number of the 100 feet lots on Vanderbilt and Adams streets. These, in 1855, he subdivided into 50 feet lots; and again, in 1860, into 25 feet lots. In 1854 Brown made an agreement with the "Windsor Terrace Land Association" to convey to them these sections. This was the origin of the "Windsor Terrace Land Association," the name being first assumed when Brown agreed to sell these lots. The association had no charter, but existed only in name, and for the purpose of carrying out the agreement between Brown and the members, to convey land to them from the original owners of the fee. No land was conveyed to the association as such, but to individual members, as they wished it; and thus the agreement made with Brown, according to a record made by him in the Register's office, was carried out, for no such legally chartered body existed as the "Windsor Terrace Land Association."

After the village was laid out, Belknap erected six houses, and filed a map of the place in the Register's office, which he called "Map of Pleasant Cottage Sites." Those on Seely street were purchased by W. Ward Watkins, J. McNaught and George Hudson. Those on Vanderbilt street were taken by Theodore Magnus, James Hardie and Dundas Dick. Three public wells were dug upon Adams, Vanderbilt and Seely streets. After these improvements were completed, Belknap caused the whole property to be sold by separate plots in open market. As the village lies upon the southern slope of the hills, the streets on its northern boundary required a great amount of grading in order to secure a uniform grade. While the streets running from north to south have quite a steep descent, those lying east and west, having a nearly level grade, rise one above another, in the manner of terraces. This gives to the settlement a most picturesque appearance, appropriately suggestive of the name, "Windsor Terrace." In 1860 the population of this locality was about 30

persons. In 1880 it was about 185, while, at present, the old and new sections of the village comprise about 300 inhabitants.

The valuation of property in the original purchase was, in 1860, \$27,100; and, in 1880, it was \$105,055. A commodious chapel was erected in 1874, and a fine school-house in 1875.

The residents of Windsor Terrace who have held prominent positions in local and general government, are: C. C. Martin, Assistant Engineer of the Brooklyn Bridge; Michael E. Finnegan, Searcher in Register's office, Brooklyn, and for many years Secretary of the Executive Committee of the Democratic General Committee of the County, and at one time delegate to State Democratic Convention; James Hardie, Justice of the Peace; Wm. E. Murphy, Assessor and Police Commissioner, and Theodore Magnus, Excise Commissioner. To Mr. Finnegan we are largely indebted for facts relative to this village.

Flatbush Fire Engine Company.—One of the oldest village organizations is the *Flatbush Engine Company*, authorized under a special law in 1821. But little is known of the company until 1825. Then Mr. Kellogg, principal of the academy, was instrumental in securing its thorough organization. The first foreman was Mr. Isaac Cortelyou. Through Mr. Kellogg's assistance, an engine was procured from Connecticut. This first engine was constructed somewhat after the form of the present garden engine. It consisted of a square box, as a reservoir, in which was placed a large force pump with two long arms, and the whole arrangement mounted on two wheels, giving it the appearance of a cart. It was called the "Cart Engine," and, in case of fire, was drawn by a horse to the locality needed. It could be worked by six or eight men, but was not a suction engine, merely a force pump; consequently the majority of the company, and all the men that could be induced to assist, formed two lines and passed water in leather buckets, with which the company were well supplied, in order to keep the box, or reservoir, of the engine full of water. At the time of the burning of the Court House, in 1832, in the absence of the foreman, Mr. John J. Vanderbilt, inexperienced parties had passed water in these buckets from a neighboring duck pond. Soon the valves became choked with mud and the engine rendered temporarily useless. The engine was sold to A. R. & S. H. Fox, and was instrumental, on several occasions, in saving their glass works at Sand Lake, New York, from destruction. The second engine was purchased at New Haven, Conn., where it had been in use for some years, until, on the occasion of a serious disturbance between the students of the college and the firemen, the engine was somewhat injured. It was bought by the town for \$800, and repaired at a moderate expense. This engine was of much more modern construction than the "Cart Engine," having four wheels

and parallel arms on the side. It was both a suction and forcing engine." It was called "*Washington No. 1*," and the number of members of the company limited by law. In 1861, through the influence of Hon. John Vanderbilt, the law was amended so as to allow the number to be increased to 25 firemen, who after a service of eight years were to be exempt from jury and military duty. In October, 1863, the company undertook the canvass of the town to raise, by subscription, means to purchase a new engine. Messrs. Abraham Lott, John Lefferts and Nelson Hamlin were appointed the committee for the purpose; and the amount was raised upon the understanding that it would be refunded to the subscribers, if the Legislature would pass a bill making it a town charge. \$2,100 was thus raised. In 1864 the Legislature passed an act authorizing town bonds, to the amount of \$6,000, for the purpose of purchasing a new engine and erecting a new engine-house. A new engine and hose were bought at a cost of \$2,382. The total expense for engine and house was \$6,011.75. In 1872 a bell-tower was erected at the rear of the engine-house, and a fine large bell hung in it by the town. False alarms, however, were so frequently sounded, that in 1881 the town authorities ordered the bell to be taken down and properly hung in the tower of the new Town Hall. The first building used as an engine-house was situated in the grave-yard at the rear of the Reformed Church and faced on Church Lane. It was built originally as a town guard-house, and also for a house in which to keep the bier, used in carrying the dead to the grave, before hearses were brought into use in the village. On April 21, 1865, the company purchased a large flag, and on May 1, 1865, Mr. Henry Wall presented the company with a flag-staff about 100 feet high. The pole and flag were raised June 3, 1865, in front of their new engine-house. Formerly such a flag-staff, called "*The Liberty Pole*," stood for many years in the center of East Broadway, at its junction with Flatbush road. The first trustees were David Johnson, Michael Schoonmaker and Jonathan Kellogg. The members of the present Board of Trustees are John Lefferts, Abraham Lott, Wm. S. Schoonmaker, J. P. Vanderveer and Henry Ditmas. The following is as accurate a list of the company's foremen as can be gleaned from the company's very imperfect records, and with the aid of Justice Peter Pigott, the secretary of the company, and Mr. Abram Lott, President of the trustees: Isaac Cortelyou, 1821-'30; John J. Vanderbilt, 1830-'33; Isaac Cortelyou, 1833-'42; John D. Prince, 1842-'60; Abraham Lott, 1860-'62; John L. Bergen, 1862-'69; Theodore B. Alston, 1869-'73; Joseph S. Story, 1874-'75; Adrian Bergen, 1875-'76; John McElvery, 1876-'79; Chas. McKinney, 1879-'82.

Masonic Lodge.—During the Winter of 1860-1, a number of Masons, resident in Flatbush and Parkville, secured from the Grand Lodge of the State, a

dispensation (March, 1861) and warrant (dated June 16, 1861) for a lodge, called *Kings County Lodge, No. 511, F. and A. M.* The charter members were: Wm. Mathews, F. L. Dallon, John V. N. Bergen, Jonath. Longmire, H. Brown, Jr., Henry Wall, J. Sutherland, J. G. Smith, W. H. Hubbard, Jas. J. Foden. The lodge was duly organized by the election of the following officers: Wm. Mathews, *W. Master*; Francis L. Dallon, *Sen. Warden*; John V. N. Bergen, *Jr. Warden*. From its organization until the present, the following persons have been its *W. Masters* (some serving two or more terms): Wm. Matthews, F. L. Dallon, Henry Wall, Abraham Lott, Homer L. Bartlett, M. D., Adrian Vanderveer, Rev. Corn. L. Wells, D. D., Henry G. Marshall, Wm. P. De Forest, Wm. L. Keese. Its present officers are Wm. Matthews, *W. M.*, Henry J. Johnson, *Sen. W.*, and John Kerswell, *Jr., W.*, and H. L. Bartlett, *Treas.* The lodge rooms are in Schoonmaker Hall, Flatbush. Until about 1875 the lodge held communications weekly, but since then twice a month. It now numbers sixty-five members, and its work and influence in the village has been creditable to itself and beneficial to the community.

Flatbush Gas Company.—The introduction of gas for illuminating purposes was a new era in the history of the village. The dense foliage of the village rendered locomotion, upon moonless nights, not only difficult, but to a greater or less degree dangerous. In order to obviate this evil, a number of the residents, about the year 1860, procured frames of street lamps and placed them upon suitable posts, along the street line, in front of their dwellings. In them were placed large kerosene lamps. These lamps were attended to daily, and lighted each dark night, by the family in front of whose residence they were placed. This attempt at street-lighting, imperfect as it was, gradually emphasized in the mind of prominent citizens, the necessity for a more perfect system; especially as, after the novelty of the thing had somewhat worn away, many neglected to light them. In the Winter of 1863-64 the matter was much discussed, and on April 14, 1864, the *Flatbush Gas Company* was formed, with a capital of \$40,000.00. Eight hundred shares were issued at \$50 per share; subsequently the capital was increased \$15,000.00 by the issue of three hundred more shares at \$50 per share. The charter members of the company were: Hon. John A. Lott, John J. Vanderbilt, Wm. Brown, Jr., Henry Wall, John Lefferts, J. V. B. Martense, and J. Furman Neefus. The first officers of the company were, Hon. John A. Lott, President; J. Furman Neefus, Secretary; John Lefferts, Treasurer. In 1872 there were twenty-two street lamps which were lighted at a cost of \$47.00 a year for each light. The company then had seven miles of mains, and a capacity for supplying thirty thousand cubic feet of gas every day. At first, consumers were charged \$4 per thousand feet, which rate was subsequently reduced to three

dollars. The company now have 200 street lamps and nine miles of mains, and supply a large majority of the residences in the village. The present officers of the company are John J. Vanderbilt, President; Abram I. Ditmas, Secretary, to whom we are indebted for these facts; John Lefferts, Treasurer. W. S. Burnett has acted as Superintendent of the Gas Works since their first construction.

Board of Improvement.—Until 1871 there was no competent and legally appointed body, other than the Commissioners of Highways, to whom the care of the streets and avenues of the town could be intrusted. If new streets were opened the work was undertaken by the property owners on either side of the proposed street, who were thus not only compelled to give the land for public convenience, but also to incur the expenses of opening. This, in itself, might not be considered an unjust burden upon the property, where the street was opened at the free will of the owners for its improvement. When, however, by act of the legislature, the whole county was surveyed and mapped into streets, Flatbush, being situated near to the city, a demand soon arose for the opening of many of these projected streets, whether the owners of the property desired it or not. To avoid endless contentions and secure justice to all, as well as to prevent this important matter from falling into the hands of mere scheming politicians, at whose hands the property-holders would be fleeced, it was necessary that some competent Board should be appointed, whose special business it should be to attend to this whole interest of opening streets in the town and laying assessments. Foreseeing this, the Hon. John A. Lott had already prepared a law providing for this important interest of the town. Through his instrumentality an act passed the legislature April 19, 1871, providing for the creation of a Board of Improvement for the Town of Flatbush. The act was entitled "An act providing for the opening and improvement of new roads and avenues, and closing old highways in the town of Flatbush, Kings County." It provided for "a board composed of seven residents of the town of Flatbush, to be called *The Board of Improvement of the Town of Flatbush*, the members indicated being John A. Lott, Philip S. Crooke, Jacob V. B. Martense, John Lefferts, John J. Vanderbilt, John L. Zabriskie, M. D., and Abraham I. Ditmas. The members of the board were to hold office for five years; vacancies through resignation or death to be filled by the President of the Board, the Supervisor and the Town Clerk. The successors of those who have held office for five years to be appointed by the Supervisor, Town Clerk, and the Assessor of the town having the shortest term to serve (Chap. 567 of the Laws of 1871). In accordance with this act, the *Board of Improvement* was organized April 20, 1872; Hon. John A. Lott, *President*; Abram I. Ditmas, *Treasurer*, and Lefferts Vanderbilt, *Clerk*. Upon the death of Hon.

John A. Lott, July, 1878, Gen. Philip S. Crooke was elected president, August 12, 1878, and Mr. Abraham Lott was appointed a member of the board to fill the vacancy occasioned by the death of his father. After the death of General Crooke, in the Spring of 1881, Mr. Abraham Lott succeeded to the Presidency of the Board. Mr. Wm. E. Murphy was appointed April 18, 1881 in the place of General Philip S. Crooke. During the ten years of its existence, the Board of Improvement has accomplished much toward the permanent improvement and development of the town, and has saved thousands of dollars to the inhabitants of the village.

Through the assistance of the Clerk of the Board we are able to give a summary of the result of the work for ten years, since the organization of the Board. They have opened and improved Franklin avenue, from the city line to Washington avenue. They were next called upon to open and improve Malbone street, from Flatbush avenue to New York avenue. These were important and expensive improvements and by the careful management of the Board many thousands of dollars were saved to the town. They have also opened and improved the following streets and sections of streets, viz.: Caton avenue to the Coney Island road; a section of Nostrand avenue; Grant street to Canarsie avenue; Lefferts avenue to New York avenue; a section of East New York avenue; Avenue B, from Flatbush avenue to the western town boundary line; Vanderbilt street; Albany avenue, and closing the Clove road from East New York avenue. The erection of a suitable building for a Town Hall was committed to their charge. In the successful completion of this work we have a lasting monument of the faithfulness with which these gentlemen discharged their duties as members of the Board of Improvement. There is no provision in the law for a salary to the members of the Board. The members have cheerfully given their services and time for the welfare of the village.

First Village Newspaper.—In the year 1872, a proposition was made to Mr. H. J. Egleston that he should undertake the editorship of a village paper. He consented; and, on April 20, 1872, the first copy of the *Kings County Rural Gazette* was issued. The first edition (of 2000 copies), was given away among the inhabitants of Flatbush and the neighboring towns. A demand immediately arose for its continuance; yearly subscriptions came in rapidly, and in four weeks the size was increased. After several enlargements, it is now a respectable sized sheet of twenty-eight by forty-two inches. Mr. Egleston's interest was bought out in 1873, and a joint stock company formed with a capital stock of \$4,000, since increased to \$10,000. Mr. H. J. Egleston was elected president of the company, and has since continued to be its editor and manager, with Mr. Wm. B. Green as associate editor. For a long time the issue averaged 1000 copies per week, but for

several years past has been about 2000 per week. For several months the office was at the drug-store of Wm. H. Douglas, corner of Clarkson street and Flatbush avenue, and the paper was printed in Brooklyn. In course of time building-lots were secured on the corner of Diamond street, and a small gothic building, purchased from the Willink estate, was moved to and located upon the corner of Diamond street. The company now own a large steam power press, 31x48, a large Gordon job press, and a nine-horse power engine. Six compositors are constantly employed. Two weekly papers,—the "*Rural and Brighton Gazette*," and the "*American Business Journal*,"—are issued by the company. The paper has exercised considerable influence in local matters, and many village improvements were first suggested, discussed and brought to completion, largely through its influence. During the first year of its existence, the subject of a local telegraph company was frequently discussed in its columns.

Flatbush Telegraph Company.—In the Autumn of this year, 1872, H. J. Egleston published a card calling a public meeting to consider the subject of the establishment of a village telegraph. This meeting and two subsequent ones were largely attended, at which stock was subscribed to the amount of \$3,000, and a company was forthwith organized. Hon. John A. Lott, John Lefferts, Wm. Matthews, R. L. Schoonmaker and H. J. Egleston were elected *Directors*; Hon. John A. Lott was chosen *President*; H. J. Egleston, *Secretary*, and John Lefferts, *Treasurer*. A contract was made with the Western Union Telegraph Company to construct and work the line. Miss F. K. Pike, was the first operator. The first message was sent June 21, 1873, by Mr. John Lefferts to Hon. John A. Lott, who then, as a member of the Court of Appeals, was staying temporarily at Congress Hall, Albany, N. Y. The message read as follows: "See 3rd Epistle of St. John, 13th and 14th verses." The second message was from the editor of the *Rural Gazette* to the editor of the *Brooklyn Eagle*, viz: "Flatbush, the banner-town of the county, is annexed by telegraph." There were originally sixty shares at \$50 a share. The interest upon the invested capital pays the deficiency of \$200 in the annual income of the office. Thus another bond was formed which unites the town to the city, and to the great world beyond. An attempt was made during this year to strengthen this bond of union.

Annexation Question.—The subject of the *annexation of the county towns to the City of Brooklyn* was earnestly discussed in the papers of Brooklyn and by the various local newspapers of the county towns. During the Winter of 1872-73, the subject was brought before the legislature of the State; and, in June 28, 1873, an annexation act was passed. According to this law (Chap. 861 of the Laws of the State, for 1873), a call was issued for the supervisors to meet and appoint commissioners who were to draft a plan for con-

solidation. They were required to assemble on (or before) the first Monday of August, 1873, and appoint five commissioners, one for each county-town; who, with six commissioners to be appointed by the Mayor of Brooklyn, were to form a Board of Commissioners of Annexation. The law provided that they should meet on the second Monday of August, 1873, and begin their work of drafting a plan for the consolidation of the county-towns, and their annexation to the City of Brooklyn. The Mayor and Board of Supervisors met on the last Monday in July, 1873, and named the Commissioners, as directed in the act of legislature. The Mayor appointed, to act on the part of the city, J. N. Wyckoff, Jr., E. J. Lowber, A. G. Bayliss, Edmund Briggs, George C. Bennett and George L. Fox. The appointments of the Supervisors were: Hon. John A. Lott for *Flatbush*; C. Warren Hamilton, for *New Lots*; Peter Lott, for *Flatlands*; William Bennett, for *Gravesend*, and Teunis G. Bergen, for *New Utrecht*. On Monday, August 11, the commissioners held their first meeting for organization. The Hon. John A. Lott was chosen *President*; W. G. Bishop, *Clerk*; and Stephen Ryder, *Sergeant-at-Arms*. The duty assigned to the commissioners was a most difficult one, viz., the amicable arrangement and harmonizing of many important and conflicting public interests. The first demand came from the county-towns, requiring a charter which would give to them equal rights. At the meeting of August 30, a new difficulty presented itself. While the towns and city might be consolidated under one corporation, still the county, although wholly embraced within the proposed city limits, must also have its representative officers. Thus two boards of officers would be employed in governing the same territory, a presumable cause of future conflict of jurisdiction. A third difficulty presented itself in relation to Flatbush and the Prospect Park lands. By an act of legislature, this land, lying within the limits of Flatbush village, and a part of Flatbush territory, had been made a portion of the City of Brooklyn against the will of the inhabitants, and in the face of their remonstrance to the legislature; and now the town would be called upon to bear an assessment and pay taxes upon the land of which it had been forcibly deprived. The same difficulty existed in the case of Flatbush and Gravesend in reference to the New Boulevard or Ocean Parkway, which had been taken in like manner by the county. The Flatbush representative was at first opposed to the movement; but becoming, at length, convinced that the matter could be satisfactorily arranged for all parties, he prepared an elaborate and comprehensive digest of the case, in all its bearings, and which was marked by incredible study, research and legal ability. To him alone belongs the credit of so presenting the matter as to secure a satisfactory settlement of the various and conflicting interests involved. The committee completed their labors in October; and

on November 4, 1873, the subject of annexation was submitted to the towns at the Fall elections. The result of the elections showed that the towns either did not thoroughly understand the subject, or were not prepared for annexation. The vote in Brooklyn gave a majority of twenty thousand in favor of it. The majority in the towns against it, however, was one thousand five hundred and sixty-eight on the whole number of votes in city and county. Thus ended the first attempt at a permanent union between the city and its rural neighbors.

Town Hall.—While this matter was under consideration, the subject of a Town Hall was repeatedly agitated in the local village paper. After the destruction of the County Court House, at Flatbush, great difficulty was experienced in finding a suitable place to hold the village courts, the town elections and other public meetings. For many years the elections were held at the hotels of the village; and the Justices held their courts either at their own houses, or in the parlor of one of the numerous hotels of the village. There being no place in which to confine prisoners, or persons awaiting trial, constables were compelled to take such persons to the jail in Brooklyn, and then return them for trial to the village. After the erection of the public school-house, in 1842, the elections and Justices Courts were held, for nearly twenty years, in its upper story. About the year 1861 it became necessary to use this room for school purposes. During this year Schoonmaker's Hall, on Flatbush avenue, was completed, and was used for ten years as a place for all public gatherings, church fairs, sessions of court and for election purposes. The discussion of this subject in the local paper brought the matter prominently before the public. A call for a public meeting to consider the subject of a Town Hall appeared in the *Rural Gazette* of February 14, 1874. Pursuant to this call a large and enthusiastic meeting of prominent citizens was held at Schoonmaker's Hall on Thursday, February 19, 1874, Supervisor J. V. B. Martense being *Chairman*, and Abraham Lott, *Secretary*; at which, after various motions and considerable discussion, the matter was referred to the Board of Improvement, with power, the expense for land and building being limited by resolution to \$40,000. At this meeting the town authorities were directed to issue thirty-year bonds, and provision was made for payment of interest and principal by taxation. The Board of Improvement immediately entered upon the accomplishment of the task assigned to them. A building committee, consisting of John Lefferts, John J. Vanderbilt and John L. Zabriskie, M. D., was appointed. Architect John Y. Cuyler was engaged to draft plans for the building. On May 18, 1874, the Board procured the enactment of a law authorizing them to proceed legally in their work (Chap. 456 of Laws of 1874 of State of N. Y.). A section of land (100 feet front and 200 feet deep)

was purchased on Grant street (then Union Place) two hundred feet east of Flatbush avenue, at a cost of \$5,800. The contract was let to Wm. Vanse for \$29,000, the building to be completed September 1, 1875. Though not completed, the building was nevertheless used on November 2, 1875, for the annual fall election. On February 7, 1876, the new Town Hall was formally transferred by the Board of Improvement to the town authorities. On this occasion a large and enthusiastic meeting was held. The formal transfer was made by Hon. J. A. Lott in an able address, a portion of which, in these days of robbery in high places, is worthy of historical record, and is as follows: "It was found, on adjustment and settling of the interest realized on the money deposited in the bank, and in making up the final account, that the said expenditure exceeded the sum of forty thousand dollars borrowed, and the interest realized thereon, by the amount of ninety-eight dollars. That excess was paid by the seven members of the Board, out of their own pockets, in equal sums, to the Treasurer, who was thus enabled to defray and pay the entire expenditure incurred without leaving any outstanding indebtedness therefor, beyond the amount authorized by the law under which the Board acted."

Temperance Societies.—For many years prominent citizens had interested themselves in the securing of good government for the town and in the suppression of Intemperance. Now and again, up to the year 1875, temperance societies had been organized and efforts made to control the terrible evil. During the year 1870 a temperance society was organized and chartered, with a large membership, by the name of *Golden Star Division No. 459, Sons of Temperance*. The society continued in active operation for several years. In December, 1871, the *Father Matthew Total Abstinence Benevolent Society of the Church of the Holy Cross* was founded, which is still in existence, having fifty-eight members, with James McCarthy as *President*, Maurice Dwyer, *Vice-President*; Edward Mackey, Andrew Short and Michael Murphy, *Secretaries*, and F. Bollinger, *Treasurer*. Through the influence of these agencies the subject of the proper execution of the excise laws was frequently brought before the public. Under the auspices of the "Golden Star Division," several public meetings were held, at which this, and kindred subjects, were discussed. In hearty sympathy with the work of the societies, a call was issued by a number of prominent citizens, not members of these organizations, for a public meeting to be held at Schoonmaker's Hall, July 5, 1873. The call invited "All the people of Flatbush who wished to have Excise Laws in relation to licenses and the sale of liquor on the Sabbath," to meet and discuss the subject.

Excise Commissioners Appointed.—As a result of this meeting a committee was appointed, through whose agency a law (Chap. 444, Laws of 1874) was passed in 1874, providing for the organization of a

Board of Excise Commissioners for the town of Flatbush. Licenses previously had been granted by the Town Board, consisting of the Town Supervisor and Justices of the Peace. In accordance with the law, the new board was organized April 22, 1875. Abram J. Van Dyke, E. H. Steers and Michael Kennedy were chosen as *Commissioners*. The Board organized with A. J. Van Dyke as *President*, E. H. Steers, *Secretary*, and Michael Kennedy as *Treasurer*. The law required that the Commissioners should meet on the first Monday in May, in each year, to organize; and once a month thereafter to grant licenses. The salary was fixed at three dollars for each commissioner for every meeting thus attended. The following list comprises the names of members of the Board from 1876-'82, viz.: 1876, E. H. Steers, A. J. Van Dyke and Felix McGloin; 1877, A. J. Van Dyke, J. Quevedo, E. H. Steers; 1878, J. Quevedo, E. H. Steers, James Haywood; 1879, E. H. Steers, Henry Cook, James Haywood; 1880-'82, James Haywood, Henry Cook, Wm. Staite. Under the former plan, when the matter was under control of the Town Board in 1873, there were fifty saloons in the town in which liquor was openly sold in violation of law every day in the week. There were only seventeen licenses issued for the whole town. Apparently there was no desire, and no power, on the part of the Town Board to enforce the law. In 1872 thirty licenses were granted; and, in 1874, before the Excise Board was organized, only ten out of the sixty saloons in the town were licensed. During the first year of the new Excise Board twenty-seven places were licensed and a large number of the unlicensed compelled to cease selling. The check given to unlicensed liquor traffic by this new excise law was, however, but temporary. Watchful of their interest, the saloon-keepers soon understood that the Excise Commissioners did not intend to disturb them. The completion of two additional street railroads to the city line, the increased travel upon the Ocean Parkway, the opening of the Brighton Beach Railroad and the enforcement of the excise laws in the City of Brooklyn, were agencies which brought to the village, on Sabbath and all holidays, thousands of people, a large proportion of whom were patrons of liquor saloons. "Hotels" sprung up like mushrooms on every side. Houses of ill-fame increased with alarming rapidity on the Boulevard and vicinity. The village seemed in a fair way to be over-run by the crowds of pleasure-seeking, drinking, lawless Sabbath-breakers, that had placed all laws at defiance in at least two of the other villages in the County.

Law and Order Association.—In the year 1880 there were 52 licensed liquor saloons and a large number of unlicensed places, making an average of one saloon to every 150 residents, counting men, women and children, within a radius of less than half a mile from the south-west entrance of the Park. On the Coney Island road were six houses of ill-fame. At this

crisis, Mr. C. C. Martin, engineer of Brooklyn Bridge, who had been fighting this evil alone on the West Side of the town for a year, conceived the plan of a Law and Order Association for the town of Flatbush. At his call a number of the most prominent citizens met, May 10, 1880, at the residence of Mr. William Matthews, and organized the "*Law and Order Association of the town of Flatbush*," the aim of which was: (1). To prevent indiscriminate granting of licenses in violation of law; (2). To enforce observance of law in relation to persons holding licenses, especially the law in relation to sale of liquor on the Sabbath; (3). To enforce the law which prohibits sale without license; (4). To enforce the law in relation to houses of ill-repute; (5). To take all legal means by advice of counsel to accomplish their ends. Rev. C. L. Wells was chosen *President*, Mr. C. C. Martin, *Secretary*, and Mr. John Lefferts, *Treasurer*, who were all re-elected at the end of the year. The sum of \$960 was subscribed for carrying on the work of the association, counsel was immediately employed, and active operations begun. As a result of the first year's work, the number of licenses was reduced from fifty-two to thirty-eight "hotel," and two "beer" licenses. All the disreputable houses (six) have been closed and the occupants driven out of the town; and several subsequent attempts at their re-establishment have been frustrated by the vigilance of the association. Eleven convictions were secured for violation of excise law, and six liquor saloons have been closed.

The association numbers thirty-six members and bids fair to be of great service to the future welfare of the town. With the increase of liquor saloons, and the influx of an army of undesirable visitors upon holidays, Saturdays and Sabbath days, drunkenness and crime was rapidly upon the increase in the town. The local constables were of little avail in maintaining the law and good order upon these days. They were also utterly unable to protect the property of the residents of the village against the depredations of thieves who made frequent incursions into the village at night. For several years a number of the inhabitants upon the Main Avenue subscribed a sufficient sum to employ three or four private watchmen who patrolled the village every night. Through these men frequent arrests were made and some slight protection afforded at night. The need of a local Police Board and a regular police force became every year more evident.

Police Commissioners Appointed.—In the Fall of 1877 the matter was taken in hand by Mr. John Lefferts, Homer L. Bartlett, M. D., and Michael E. Finnegan. A bill framed by Michael E. Finnegan was taken by him to Albany, and on January 12, 1878, was passed by the legislature. This law authorized the organization of a *Police Board* and gave to them certain powers necessary to enable them to afford a competent police force and protection to the village. Through the kind-

ness of Mr. J. Z. Lott, the Clerk of the Board, we have obtained the following facts. According to the provisions of the act, the Board was to consist of five members, appointed by the Supervisors and Justices of the Peace. The first members of this Board were : Homer L. Bartlett, M. D., five years ; Wm. E. Murphy, four years ; John Z. Lott, three years ; John Lefferts, two years ; and Michael Kelly, one year. On June 19, 1878, these gentlemen met and organized, according to the law, as *Police Commissioners for the Town of Flatbush*. Homer L. Bartlett, M. D., was chosen *President* ; John Z. Lott, *Clerk* ; Wm. E. Murphy, *Treasurer*. They immediately organized a regularly constituted police force, of which James Byrne was appointed Sergeant ; having under his control seven men. These men were expected, however, to accomplish an almost impossible task. They were to thoroughly protect a section of country about two miles square, composed of three distinct villages, nearly a mile apart. To do this, they must travel every night over a tract of country, surrounded by open fields, affording easy means of escape for a host of burglars, had they been disposed to plan their attacks upon the houses of the residents, when they knew the policeman in the district was far distant. Under the efficient management of the gentlemen who compose the Board, very much, however, has been accomplished ; and the (wholly inadequate) force has been used to the very best possible advantage. With more means at their disposal, a very much more perfect system of protection of property could be carried out. The fact that a very large proportion of the houses are furnished with Holmes' Burglar Alarm has been of great assistance to the police, enabling each man to undertake the patrol of so large a district each night. As a result of their three years work, there were 336 arrests the first year ; in the second year there were 456 ; in the third 429. The expenses of the Board are met by special tax, taken to the amount of \$9,000 the first year, and \$5,000 each year afterward. This amount is wholly inadequate to the successful accomplishment of the purpose designed by the law organizing the Board.

The present officers of the Board are John Lefferts, *President* ; Wm. E. Murphy, *Treasurer* ; John Z. Lott, *Clerk*. The law provides that all members appointed after the expiration of the term of the first Board shall hold office five years, and that their successors shall be appointed by the Supervisors and the Justices of the Peace. Mr. Lefferts was appointed in 1880 for five years ; Mr. Kelly for four years ; Mr. Lott re-appointed in 1881, for five years. The members of the Board receive no compensation for their services. No better evidence of the law-abiding character of the citizens of Flatbush—for which they have been justly noted for two hundred years—can be offered, than the fact that seven policemen can thus watch a rural district nearly two miles square, a suburb of one of the largest cities of the Union, and so well protect the interests of all. The

arrests and imprisonments, in almost every instance, are for offences committed by outsiders, coming into the village ; or of persons residing upon the outskirts of the village near the city limits. The village has always been noted as a well-governed, law-abiding and patriotic locality. During the War of the Revolution many of its inhabitants enlisted in the Federal Army, and large sums of money were raised for the American cause. In the late Civil War a number of its citizens entered the Army of the Union, some of them serving for the whole term of the war. Much was done and comparatively large sums of money raised in the village, for the various relief committees. There is now in active operation here a Post of the *Grand Army of the Republic*.

Flatbush Water Works.—As early as 1853, James I. Murdock, of Flatbush, proposed a plan for supplying Flatbush and Brooklyn with an unlimited water-supply, by forming large basins at Flatland (excavated to the depth of the water-floor under this part of the island) from which the water could be pumped by suitable apparatus into a general reservoir on Prospect Hill. Discussions on this point did not take any definite shape until the spring of 1881, when Benjamin F. Stephens, of Brooklyn, was engaged—the necessary surveys having been made—by the B., F. and C. I. R. Co., to build water-works at Sheepshead Bay. He carried into practice Mr. Murdock's theory with success, and procured our unlimited water-supply. Through the active interest of Mr. John Lefferts, Treasurer of the R. R. Co., who associated with him Mr. John Matthews, John Z. Lott, and others, a company was formed for supplying the village with water. Its members were, in addition to those already named, William W. Wicks, *President* ; Aaron S. Robbins, *Treasurer* ; Benjamin F. Stephens, N. Cooper ; Mr. Lott being *Secretary*, and Jeremiah Lott, *General Superintendent*. The money necessary for the immediate prosecution of the work was loaned by W. W. Wicks and A. S. Robbins, on bonds issued by the company. The stock has never been placed upon the market. Land was procured at the southern boundary of the town, at Paerdegat Pond, near what was formerly "Little Flats"—the lowest point in the village and the only one where surface springs of purest water abound. The water in the wells of this vicinity is of an entirely different character from that in the Northern section of the village, near the hills. The Paerdegat water is very soft and wholly free from any trace of mineral or vegetable matter ; while that of the wells in the north section of the village, near the hills, is hard and impregnated with iron and lime. Having secured the necessary authority, the Company, during the summer of 1881, sank twelve wells—placed in a series of three—stretching over a tract of 1,300 feet, east and west, and directly across the water-course which underlies the Island. These wells were connected by 2,400 feet of suction pipe⁸

to 24 inches diameter), in such manner that they could be drawn from by the pumps, singly, or in any desired combination. During the winter of 1881-'82 about ten miles of mains were laid. A reservoir-tower, 100 feet high and 20 in diameter, standing on a concrete base of 98 feet above the lowest part of the town, was erected on high ground at the north end of the town, on Washington avenue, near Malbone street. The engines and pumps, especially constructed according to Mr. Stephens' patent, have a pumping capacity of 2,000,000 gallons per day. The pumping mains are 20 and 16 inches. The wells, which are 35 feet deep (with a depth of 26 feet of water), are built with water-tight walls, which effectually prevents any surface-water from entering them; and secures, also, a supply of perfectly pure water.

Healthfulness of the Village.—Flatbush has always maintained an exceptional reputation for healthfulness, to which the gravestones in the village burying-ground bear testimony. A very large proportion of those buried here were persons over fifty years of age. There is a row of stones, eleven in number, marking the graves of one family-connection, of whom all but two were over 63. The aggregate of their ages was 774 years; and seven of them were over 80, and one over 90. Along the edge of the woods, near the base of the hills, ague prevailed in former days, arising from the undrained ponds within the woods lying in the limits of Brooklyn. And the changes consequent on the formation and improvement of Prospect Park, the excavations for its lake, etc., caused, at the time, a considerable outbreak of malarial disease. But, since the completion of the Park, this source of trouble has been dissipated, and the most prominent physicians of the town declare that there has been *during the past two years scarcely a case of well-defined malaria in their practice, within the village.*

Board of Health.—The first local Board of Health was organized by Dr. John B. Zabriskie, July 24, 1832, and consisted of *Supervisor* John Wyckoff; John R. Snedecker and Henry S. Ditmas, *Overseers of the Poor*; David Johnson and John A. Lott, *Justices of the Peace*; Dr. Adrian Vanderveer, *Health Officer*, with whom were associated Drs. J. B. Zabriskie, Robert Edmond and William D. Creed. Several years ago, a law was enacted establishing a Village Board of Health on the same basis as the Metropolitan Board of Health, but its duties have always been light, confined to the enforcing of ordinary sanitary regulations, the recording of vital statistics, etc.; and, at no time has it been called upon to deal with epidemics. The present members of the Board are *Supervisor* Peter Williamson, *President*; *Justices* Peter Pigott, Christian Wulff, Thomas H. Glass, William McMahon; *Town Clerk* Henry Vanderveer; *Citizen* John Z. Lott. The Board is organized with John L. Zabriskie, M. D., *Health Officer*; William Gaynor, *Counsel*.

Ecclesiastical, the Reformed (Dutch) Church.

[The peculiar collegiate relation of the churches of the five Dutch Towns of Kings County, renders it necessary, in order to avoid repetition, that this portion of their history should be considered as a whole. This has been done in our chapter on the *Ecclesiastical History of Kings County from 1654 to 1800*. The facts which MR. STRONG has gathered in relation to the Reformed Dutch Church of Flatbush will, therefore, be found carefully preserved, and inwrought in that chapter.—EDITOR.]

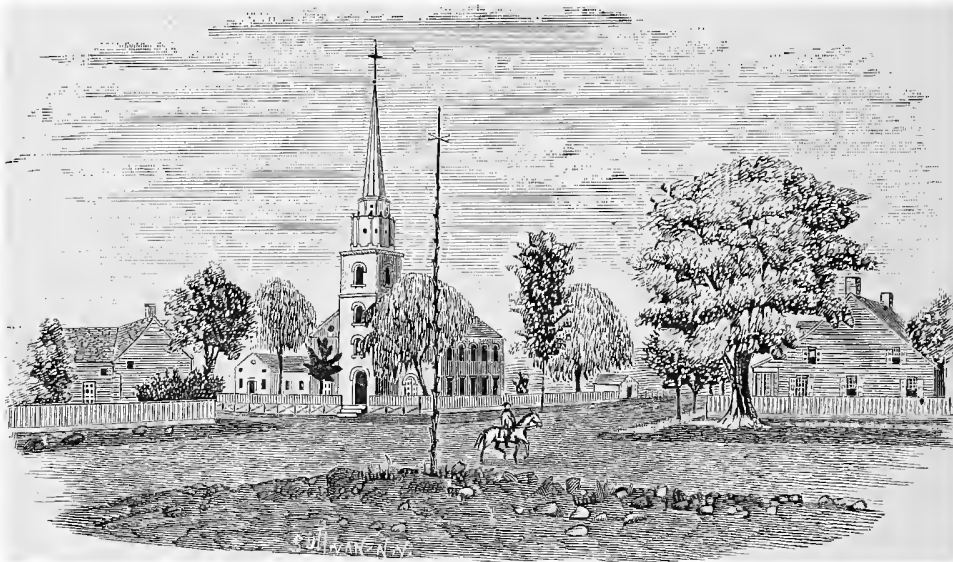
At the beginning of the present century, as will be seen by reference to that chapter, the Rev. MARTINUS SCHOONMAKER, and the Rev. PETER LOWE, were colleagues in the charge of the Kings County churches.

Rev. Mr. Lowe continued pastor until his death in 1818. He was buried at Flatbush, but his remains were, in 1875, removed to Greenwood and placed in the lot purchased by the Reformed Church of Flatbush. These lots were purchased on May 17, 1873, for the use of the pastors of the church. The total cost for lots and fencing was \$1,850. The churches of Flatbush and Flatlands then united in calling the Rev. WALTER MONTEITH, who was installed in 1819, but resigned his charge in the following year and accepted a call to the Presbyterian Church at Schenectady, New York. The church remained without a pastor until 1822, when the Rev. THOMAS M. STRONG, D. D., was called and installed on November 17th of that year. The house near Vernon avenue, formerly used as a parsonage, having been sold, the consistory erected a commodious parsonage-house upon a lot nearly opposite the church, and immediately adjoining the Academy. This was a single frame house, two-stories and an attic. The Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker continued to reside in the old parsonage next the church until the time of his death, May 20th, 1824. He had been a faithful and efficient pastor over the congregation for nearly forty years. After his death, the collegiate bond which had existed for so many years between the Dutch churches was finally dissolved. The Rev. Dr. STRONG continued pastor of the church at Flatbush until June 14, 1861, when, having served the congregation faithfully for thirty-nine years, he died at the age of 64 years. As a token of their love and esteem the consistory caused a beautiful tablet to be erected to his memory and placed in the west wall of the church, beside the pulpit. He was interred in the village church-yard, and his remains, in 1875, were removed by the consistory to the church lot in Greenwood Cemetery. Dr. Strong was a man possessed of traits of character eminently fitting him for the work of the ministry. A man of enlarged views, he was always active in every good work in his own congregation, and in those enterprises intended for the extension of the cause of Christ abroad. He gave his best energies to the church over which he ministered, and to the denomination at large. He was clerk of the

General Synod of the Reformed Church for thirty-four years ; and, through his intimate knowledge of church matters, was appealed to as authority on ecclesiastical law in the denomination. During the last sickness of Dr. Strong, which continued for three years, the consistory engaged his son, the Rev. Robert G. Strong, to act as colleague and assistant. After Dr. Strong's death his pulpit was supplied for about two years by the Rev. William W. Howard, Principal of Erasmus Hall Academy.

In April, 1863, the Rev. CORNELIUS L. WELLS, of Jersey City, was called to the pastorate, which he now fills. Thus, during a period of two hundred and twenty-eight years, sixteen pastors have been settled over the congregation. Of this number two served the church for nearly forty years, and nine of the number died while in its active service.

from Mr. Henry Crabb, who for many years had a large organ-factory in the village; at one time at the rear of the Allgeo house in East Broadway, and in latter years in Clarkson St. The old round box-pulpit, mounted on five or six columns about five feet high, and entered by two circular stairways with banisters on each side, was removed, and a more modern pulpit erected in its place. The old pulpit was given to the First German Reformed Dutch Church, corner of Herkimer street and Howard avenue, Brooklyn. The crimson satin curtain, at the back of the pulpit, representing the rising sun, was replaced by a large painting on canvas intended to give the appearance of heavy curtains looped up in elegant style. The impression, however, at a short distance, was rather suggestive of a gathering storm-cloud ready to hurl its thunderbolts upon the assemblage. In 1861, while the pulpit was



The Neefus House.

FLATBUSH CHURCH, 1842.

The Zabriskie House, and Tree.

Copied from the view in Dr. Strong's History.

The interior of the present building has been remodelled three times since 1836. At that time the old straight, high-back pews on the main floor were replaced by more modern ones. The high fronts of the side galleries were lowered, and a gallery erected across the east end of the church. In 1852 the parsonage, on the lot adjoining the Academy, was sold for about \$5,000 to Mr. Rich. L. Schoonmaker. The old stone parsonage next the church was torn down, and a beautiful double house, which has been used since that time as a parsonage, was erected in its place at a cost of \$9,881.52. During this year the church was again renovated at a cost of \$4,514.25. The straight-back old fashioned pews in the side galleries were removed, and more comfortable ones put in their place, and the backs of all the pews in the church upholstered. A large organ was purchased at a cost of \$2,249.93, and placed in the east gallery. This organ was purchased

vacant, the church was thoroughly remodelled. All the pews on the main floor were replaced with more comfortable ones ; the walls were frescoed, and the canvas painting back of the pulpit replaced with a fresco on the wall representing a recess. A marble tablet, in memory of Rev. Thomas M. Strong, D. D., was placed in the west wall by the side of the pulpit. Most of the seats belonging to New Lots were purchased by the consistory.

Heretofore, the pews had been owned by individuals, and the salary raised by a subscription list. It was now resolved to rent the pews owned by the church, and fix a ground-tax upon all pews owned by individuals. At this time, the subject of procuring a new clock for the steeple was agitated by H. L. BARTLETT, M. D., author of "*Sketches of Long Island*." The matter was finally taken in hand by the consistory, who removed the old clock which had been silent from age for

many years, and replaced it Sept. 20, 1862, with a new clock of Sperry & Co's make, costing \$375.

Sabbath-School of Reformed Church.—Through the influence of Rev. Dr. Strong and Adrian Vanderveer, M. D., a sabbath-school was organized the year after Dr. Strong began his labors. Dr. Vanderveer was the first superintendent, and held the office for nearly thirty years. Until 1830, the Sabbath-school was held in the school-rooms of the Academy. During this year, an effort was made by the "Ladies' Sewing Society" of the village, and \$1,195.82 were raised, and a suitable frame building 25x50 feet was erected, about twenty-five feet south of the church, with its gable end to the main road. This building was taken down during the summer of 1881. The other *superintendents* of the school have been Mr. Irwin Cortelyou and Mr. John D. Prince; the *Assistant-Superintendents* were Mrs. Ellen C. Strong, Mrs. Susan Schoonmaker, Mrs. Maria L. Lefferts, Mrs. Elizabeth C. Strong, Miss Mary Vanderveer. In 1871, the school had so increased that it was impossible to find accommodation in the old building, although it had been once enlarged. The Consistory, therefore, resolved to erect a new one; and a building committee, consisting of Rev. C. L. Wells, D. D., Mr. A. J. Ditmas and Mr. John D. Prince, was appointed.

Lots, on the corner of Union place or Grant street, were purchased from Hon. John A. Lott, at a cost of \$11,000. The old wheelwright and blacksmith shops, and the old Antonides house were removed. In their place a beautiful (Gothic) brown stone building was erected, at a cost of \$49,823.59, making the total amount expended \$60,823.59. The school now numbers 8 officers, 45 teachers, and 350 scholars.

St. Paul's Protestant Episcopal Church was organized July 11, 1836, with Matthew Clarkson and Robert J. Crommelin, *Wardens*; David Johnson, James Mowatt, George Cornell, C. Durand, Charles Waldron, A. Norrie, William H. Story and Samuel Richards, Jr., *Vestrymen*. Rev. Dr. Benjamin C. Cutler acted as Rector for the congregation; which, until the completion of their church, occupied the lecture-room of the Reformed Church. The corner-stone of a church edifice was laid August 13, 1836, by the Rt. Rev. Benjamin T. Onderdonk, and the church completed in December, at a cost of \$8,480, of which over \$6,000 was donated by Mr. Matthew Clarkson. December 23, 1836, Rev. Thomas T. Brittain became rector; and, on the 29th, the edifice was consecrated. Rev. John F. Messenger was assistant minister until September 1, 1837, when he was followed by Rev. James Coghlan. Mr. Brittain resigned March 29, 1836, and was succeeded by Mr. Coghlan as rector, who resigned October 21, 1839. He was followed by William Barlow, March 30, 1840, who resigned April 29, 1842. Rev. George Burkner was then rector until February 12, 1844, followed by Rev. William H. Newman, who died in Flatsh, after ten years' service, and was buried in the

churchyard of the Reformed church. In 1854 Rev. William Rudder became rector; succeeded, in 1858, by Rev. Mr. Pennington; and he, September 30, 1861, by Rev. B. S. Huntington, who resigned July 12, 1863. The Rev. J. A. Spencer, D.D., became rector July 28, 1863, and resigned September 9, 1865. Then Rev. H. W. Fay was called Sept. 21, 1865, resigned December 29, 1866. Rev. Robert B. Van Kleeck, D.D., was called March 7, 1867; resigned July, 1874, and was succeeded by Rev. James W. Braden. He was called to Hartford, Ct., and in June, 1882, was succeeded by the present incumbent, Rev. Summerfield E. Snively. In July, 1874, the church edifice was sold to General Philip S. Crooke, and a new one erected, at a cost, with furniture, of \$7,000; C. C. Haight, *architect*; William Vanse, *builder*. It was first occupied for service Thanksgiving-day, November, 1874, and consecrated May 31, 1877, by Rt. Rev. A. N. Littlejohn, Bishop of Long Island. The church stands near the site of the first church, on the corner of Church Lane and Irving Place. During Mr. Van Kleeck's rectorship, a commodious (Gothic) rectory was erected at a cost of \$11,000. Soon after the building of the church, Mr. Matthew Clarkson inaugurated a Sunday-school, of which he was the superintendent, until about 1850; after which the rector assumed the charge. During Mr. Van Kleeck's term, his son, Robert Van Kleeck, Jr., was superintendent, followed by Henry G. Marshal, Rev. Mr. Braden, and Robert S. Walker, the present superintendent. The infant school, for years a strong feature of the school, has been under the successive charge of Mrs. Robert Van Kleeck, Mrs. John H. Bergen, Miss A. Hopkins, Miss Fannie Miller. We have taken Rev. DR. STRONG as the authority for facts of the early history of this church; and are also indebted to the assistance of Rev. Mr. Braden and Mr. William Matthews.

St. John's Episcopal Church, Parkville.—(Sketch furnished by the pastor, Rev. R. B. Snowden.) The incorporation of this church dates September 28, 1859. In 1860 it was received into union with the Convention of the Diocese of New York, the Diocese of Long Island not having then been formed. The incorporators were William Matthews and George W. Close, *Wardens*, and Lawrence Powers, Henry Wiggins, B. S. Hilton, James Sutherland, John Marquis, William Staite, John V. N. Bergen and Walter Kelsey, *Vestrymen*. No further records of this early period are extant; until the year 1868, when the Diocese of Long Island was formed. The Rev. R. B. Van Kleeck, D.D., then rector of St. Paul's Church, Flatbush, took charge of the parish. Services were held either by himself, or his son, R. B. Van Kleeck, Jr., who being a candidate for Holy Orders, acted as Lay Reader. Services were held for several years at the village school-house. In February, 1871, the sum of \$1,000 was obtained, with which, in March 1873, was purchased a section of land

200 feet square, pleasantly located on Webster avenue, near the Ocean Parkway. In the work of soliciting funds Mrs. Mary Tunison was especially active and successful. In the summer of 1873 the use of the school-house being desired by the parish for public worship, Mr. Mortimer C. Tunison placed at their disposal a small building near the corner of Coney Island Road and Newkirk avenue; and, at his own expense, fitted it up for a chapel. Service was held in it for the first time September 6, 1873, the Rev. Mr. Cromwell officiating. The Rev. Dr. Van Kleeck was rector of the Church until after Easter, 1874; Mr. Ritchie officiating as Lay Reader. He was succeeded by Rev. William W. Ayres, who discharged the same duties until Christmas, 1874. In February, 1875, the Rev. R. H. Tighe was appointed by the Bishop to the charge of St. John's. His relation as minister in charge continued until Easter, 1876, although the Rev. R. B. Snowden, then awaiting orders, was appointed in October, 1875, to conduct the service, and he is still the rector. In the summer of 1875, Mr. M. C. Tunison made certain necessary alterations in the building, and enlarged it by the addition of a chancel. In 1882, this edifice, having been presented to the parish by the heirs of Mr. M. C. Tunison, was removed and placed on the church plot on Webster avenue. It is thirty-six feet in length by sixteen in width. A subscription is now in progress to obtain funds wherewith to remodel and enlarge the building. A Sabbath-school has been maintained since the organization of the parish, and has at present a membership of thirty-five pupils and teachers. For several years Mr. Charles Leigh was superintendent; he was succeeded by Mr. John Mower, who still holds the position. There are at present twenty-two families connected with the parish, and eighteen communicants. The corporation is now constituted as follows: Rev. Robert Bayard Snowden, M. A., *Rector*; C. W. H. Carter and Charles Leigh, *Wardens*; and C. A. Benmers, James Busby, Spencer A. Wallace, Little Rutherford, James Rutherford, Thomas Rowe, and Samuel Stretch, *Vestrymen*.

First M. E. Church of Flatbush was organized May 21, 1844. Previous to this time occasional services had been held in the village, by itinerant and local preachers of the denomination. Tradition states, that frequently on summer Sabbath afternoons, services were held under the shade of the large linden, or bass-wood tree at the north-west corner of Church Lane and the main road, near the old Zabriskie house. Rev. Lorenzo Dow Stansbury, an exhorter from the M. E. Sands St. Church, of Brooklyn, often preached here. In May, 1844, a church organization was formed by the election of Amaziah Foster, Richard Halliby, Philip S. Croke, Wm. H. Story, Adrian Vanderveer, M. D., Rem, John and Rem R. Hegeman and Samuel Youngs as *Trustees*; with a connection of several families, and a membership of ten persons. The first sermon preached to the new

congregation, by a regular preacher, was in 1845, under a large willow on East Broadway; and, for three or four years thereafter, services were regularly held at Mr. Rem Hegeman's house. In the winter, protracted meetings during the week were also held at this house. These services, conducted principally by local preachers from Brooklyn and elsewhere, were often continued from five to six weeks at a time, and were largely instrumental in increasing the membership, and the numbers of the congregation. During the first season thirty-two converts were added to the church. In 1848 a lot, corner of East Broadway and Prospect street, was donated by Dr. Adrian Vanderveer, valued at \$800. In 1849, a frame building, 50x36 feet, facing on East Broadway, was erected by Rem R. Hegeman, as master-mechanic, at a cost of about \$1,200. For many years this congregation was supplied by Conference with preachers, who also included Flatlands and other neighboring places, in their ministrations.

Ministers.—Lorenzo Dow Stansbury, an exhorter from Brooklyn, is named by the best authorities (in the absence of early records) as having had charge of the congregation as early as 1842. He labored for several years, and was largely instrumental in building up the church in its infancy. After he left, Flatbush was associated with Gowanus, and Rev. H. D. Latham preached at both places. Then followed Rev. N. Orchard. Flatbush is first mentioned in the minutes of the Conference in 1845, when it was associated with Gravesend, and Rev. L. D. Nickerson was pastor. 1846 (Centen. M. E. Ch., Brooklyn and Fl.), John C. Green; 1847 (Fl. and 18th St. M. E. Ch., Brooklyn), E. S. Hebard. The first pastor of Flatland M. E. Church, after it became a separate charge, was Rev. G. W. Woodruff, 1848-'50; succeeded by Rev. T. H. Barch, 1850-'51. The next year the church was supplied by local preachers. In 1854 Flatbush and Flatlands churches were united as one charge under Rev. Jacob Shaw; 1856, Rev. S. W. Law; 1857-'58, Rev. Wm. Gothard; 1861, Rev. Geo. N. Pratt; 1862 (Fl. joined with Cook St. Ch., Brooklyn), Rev. Joseph Henson; 1863-4, Flatbush and Flatlands were united. During this period Mr. John Rowlee, of Fleet St. Ch., Brooklyn, became interested in this church and took charge of the congregation; 1865, Rev. F. S. Weedon; 1868-'70, Rev. J. C. Thomas. During his pastorate, and through his labors, a new church edifice was erected on Diamond street, near Flatbush avenue, the corner-stone of which was laid July 28, 1869. The building is of brick, with a chapel and Sabbath-school room on the ground floor and a large audience room for church service above. The size is 40x85 feet. The cost of the building was \$17,500. The land cost \$6,500. At first only the ground-floor, or Sunday-school room, was furnished. The first services were held in the new edifice July 6, 1870; the first sermon by Rev. Benjamin M. Adams July 10, 1870; and the church was dedicated October 30. The Sunday-

school was organized with three teachers, and now has eighteen; with twenty scholars, and now has seventy-five. *Superintendents*: Joshua Hamblin, George Matton, John B. Rowlee, Dr. John Robinson, John Kerswell, James A. Hamblin, R. S. Seckerson. The Rev. Mr. Thomas labored with great assiduity, contributing very largely of his own income to the church in whose history his pastorate forms a bright page. He was succeeded by Rev. Moses Bedell in 1870; Rev. W. E. Tompkins, 1871; Rev. James Robinson, 1872; Rev. C. Kelsey, 1873-'74; Rev. T. M. Terry, 1875-'78; Rev. T. D. Littlewood, 1878-'79. During the pastorates of these latter two, the church debt was cancelled. In 1880, Rev. John A. Roche, D. D., was appointed pastor, a man of great zeal, godliness and superior talent, whose labors were largely blest. He was succeeded, 1882, by Rev. C. W. Powell; the Flatbush and Sheepshead Bay churches being united in one charge.

"Church in the Woods."—In 1835 the colored Methodists established a church, since known by the above name, at the eastern terminus of East Broadway, at the crossing of the Flatland Neck road. In 1838 it was fully organized by Rev. Samuel Todd, Presiding Elder. Frank Cummings and Cato Oliver were made *trustees*, in connection (according to the statement of Mr. Samuel Anderson, Sen., one of the few surviving members of the old church) with seven trustees of the Fleet St. Church of Brooklyn. A frame church was built, with help from friends in Flatlands, Flatbush and Brooklyn, on land bought from Richard Johnson, next the woodland of Michael Stryker's estate. Money was raised by subscription in Flatlands and Flatbush, with some slight help from Brooklyn, and a frame edifice erected. The church was afterwards burned, and dissensions arose among the members, so that it was finally decided to organize anew as an Independent or Congregational Church. By the aid of Rev. Dr. Storrs, of Brooklyn, it was so organized as a Congregational Church, with Rev. Abram Brown (colored) as acting pastor; and a new edifice of brick, cost \$800, was erected. *Ministers*: Revs. George Levere; Marbley; James Carter. The church is partly supported by the Home Missionary Society of the Congregational Church.

Flatbush Mission School.—Mrs. Gertrude L. Vanderbilt organized, in February, 1856, a colored Sunday-school, which for some three years assembled in a little room at the rear of Judge Vanderbilt's house. Through Mrs. Vanderbilt's exertions it resulted in an incorporated "*Society for the Amelioration of the Colored Population of Flatbush.*" A church was erected on the north side of the main road to Brooklyn (site now enclosed in south-east corner of the deer-paddock in Prospect Park); and, when the land was afterwards taken for the park, it was removed to lots upon the north-west terminus of Catharine street. When these lots were afterwards cut away by the extension of the Brighton Beach Railroad,—and Catharine street was ob-

literated by the opening of Malbone street, Washington and Tompkins avenues—the church organization was dissolved; not, however, without having accomplished much good among the colored population of the village.

M. E. Church, of Parkville, organized 1865.—John L. Strong, son of Rev. Dr. Strong, in 1853, soon after the founding of Greenfield, went over to the new village one Sunday afternoon to arrange for the establishment of a Sunday-school. With assistance from Adrian and his son John N. Bergen, and Wm. H. Taylor, they soon had a flourishing school, which met in the house of Mr. Teunis Bergen, and became the parent of all the evangelical churches in the village. In 1865, a few professing Christians, under the lead of Mr. Edward Ridley (Ridley & Sons, Grand street, New York), then of Gravesend, established religious services at the public school-house; afterwards, at residences of Mr. Sutherland, W. H. Taylor and J. Tibbets. Finally, during the year, an organization was effected; with Edw. Ridley, J. Tibbets, W. Whitely, W. H. Taylor, Geo. Wilson, as *trustees*. Lots were purchased, on the corner of Foster and Second streets, and a frame structure was erected, at a cost of \$4,500, which was dedicated April 1, 1866, by Bishop Janes. Before this, however, the church was supplied by Rev. L. W. Anderson; in April, 1866, the Rev. Nich. Orchard was appointed pastor; followed, in 1869, by Rev. Geo. A. Graves. During his pastorate the opening of the new Ocean Parkway or Boulevard necessitated the removal of the church, and it was so removed to Lawrence street, west of the Boulevard, between Second and Third streets. But, finally, through Mr. Ridley's efforts, a new edifice and parsonage were erected in 1872, at a cost of \$16,000. It has a fine steeple, is elegantly furnished, and was dedicated October, 1873, \$10,000 being subscribed toward the liquidation of the debt, at the second meeting of the congregation. Rev. W. P. Estes, pastor from 1872, was followed, 1875, by Rev. H. Asten; he, 1878, by Rev. John A. Roche, D. D.; he, 1880, by Rev. Geo. Taylor; and he, 1881, by Rev. W. C. Blake. After the disbanding of Mr. Strong's Sunday-school, consequent on the gradual development of several church organizations in the village, the Methodist Episcopal Church appointed Mr. Wm. White, of Brooklyn, as superintendent. He served one year, and was followed (by successive re-elections) by Mr. Edw. Ridley, to the present time. The Sunday-school building is remarkably elegant and well equipped for its special purpose; and the school is self-supporting, costing about \$600 per annum. Teachers assert that the opening of this Boulevard has exercised a very demoralizing effect, not only upon the attendance of the school, but upon the churches and other portions of the community.

Parkville Congregational Church was organized April 10, 1866, by the New York and Brooklyn Congre-

grational Association, by appointment of Joseph Sutherland, Daniel M. Cumisky, Standish Mason, William Staites, Richard Perrin, Charles A. Bermers, Ezekiel Robin and John Wilson, as *Trustees*. The first officers were John Wilson, *Clerk*; Standish Mason, Ezekiel Robin and John Wilson, *Deacons*. A neat and commodious church was soon built, at a cost of \$10,000, and Rev. J. B. Hopwood became pastor in 1866; followed, 1868, by Rev. H. Belden, who served three years. In 1874, Rev. J. W. McEckron was called; but, in 1877, was followed by Rev. Thomas Douglas, who resigned after three years, and was succeeded by Rev. W. H. Shannon, the present pastor. Present *Officers*: J. V. N. Bergen, James Sutherland, William Spencer; Mr. Bergen, *Clerk*. The Sunday-school, organized 1866, has had, as Superintendents, J. V. N. Bergen, Thomas H. Stevens, W. H. Hudson, James Sutherland, Rev. W. H. Shannon.

Windsor Terrace Sabbath-School.—After establishing a flourishing Sunday-school at Parkville, Mr. J. L. Strong, in 1854, undertook a similar enterprise in the new village of Windsor Terrace; and, with Mr. George Hudson and others, organized a prayer-meeting, which proved a success. Upon Mr. Strong's leaving for Pennsylvania, in 1855, Mr. John D. Prince, Superintendent of the Sunday-school of the Flatbush Reformed Church, was induced to assume the charge of this work; and for nearly twenty-five years, "rain or shine," he rode across the country, every Thursday night, to fulfill his appointment at Windsor Terrace. He resigned in 1880, leaving in the village a religious element which ultimately bore fruit in a church organization. In connection with this prayer-meeting, a Sunday-school was organized August 16, 1871, of which Lewis P. Eager was *Superintendent*, E. B. Estes, *Secretary*, and Hoyt Palmer, *Treasurer*; the school meeting at a house on the north-west corner of Coney Island road and Vanderbilt street. The school is well equipped and has had, as Superintendents, J. S. K. Wittke, 1873; and, since 1875, by re-election, Mr. C. C. Martin, the well known Bridge Engineer. Although there exists at Windsor Terrace a legally appointed incorporation, there is, as yet, no organized church; but those in charge of the Sunday-school felt that upon them devolved the responsibility of providing means of religious worship to those who were coming into the place from the city. Several efforts were made, but unsuccessfully, till Mrs. C. C. Martin enlisted her husband's interest. By his efforts was secured a certificate of incorporation for an association under the title of "*The Windsor Terrace Sabbath-school*," the corporate members of which were C. C. Martin, E. B. Estes, J. S. A. Wittke, Samuel P. Seaman and John S. Wildridge; application made December 23, 1873, and granted by a Judge of the Supreme Court January 5, 1874. This association, with legal rights to purchase and transfer property, etc., secured a site on the west side of East

Fifth street, between Greenwood avenue and Vanderbilt street, on which was built a frame chapel for lecture and school purposes, which was dedicated February 15, 1874. This was accomplished largely by the efforts of Mrs. Martin and Mrs. Wittke. Regular Sabbath and week-day services have since been maintained, conducted by pastors of churches in the city and vicinity, especially Rev. Thomas H. Wray. The enterprise still depends on voluntary subscriptions, but has accomplished a good service to the village.

Roman Catholic Church of the Holy Cross.—(*Sketch contributed by Peter J. Curran, M. D., of Flatbush*). Prior to 1848-9, the few Catholic residents of Flatbush, and of Kings County generally, outside of the City of Brooklyn, had no place of worship, and were only occasionally accommodated by missions conducted by the clergy of the Jay Street Roman Catholic Church of that city. Under the pressure of a long-felt want for a more accessible place of worship, the old "Curran House," still standing in the Cemetery grounds, then recently purchased, was selected for the purpose, and a weekly mass and confessional established. The first priest in charge was Father Quinn, from St. James', Brooklyn. He resided in the upper part of the house, a portion of the lower being used as a chapel. From the latter part of 1848, to about the middle of 1850, Fathers Quinn, Briody and Gillespie, in the order named, served as pastors. Meanwhile the number of Catholics in Flatbush had increased; and, with the consent of Father McDonough, the Vicar-General of Long Island, they purchased eight lots on the corner of the present Erasmus and Prospect streets. On these, in the fall of 1851, they erected a neat and commodious frame church, about 75x50 feet in size. It had a low, slanting, shingle roof, and was surmounted by a plain Roman cross of wood. With but slight alterations, the building, like its predecessor in the cemetery, still exists and is now used as the parochial school-house. In this edifice, costing \$1,300 (no debt incurred), mass was first offered by Father Bacon, of Brooklyn, afterwards Roman Catholic Bishop of Portland, Maine. Father Gillespie, the resident pastor, removed to California in January, 1852; and the church was served by Father Eugene Cassidy and others until April, when Rev. Andrew Bohen was installed as its first regular pastor, removing the pastoral residence to Erasmus street, one door from Prospect. In the winter of 1852, a parochial school, the first in the county towns, was established in the gallery of the church, under charge of Mr. John Savage, and with about 125 scholars, of both sexes; there being, at this time, about 450 parishioners. A Sunday-school was also established; and, in 1853, a sacristy was added to the church. In 1854 a division was made of the Holy Cross parish; that portion of New Lots called East New York being made a separate parish and the Church of St. Malachi erected. For awhile, the Flatbush priests served these parishes

alternately ; and, in 1855, Father Bohen was succeeded in the pastorate by Rev. John Dowling. The teacher, Mr. Savage, also left Flatbush, and was succeeded by Timothy Hurley, a gentleman of the highest culture, who chose to hide his abilities in a village-school. His invariable suit of "pepper-and-salt" was known throughout the five towns of the county—a decent garb, as warm in winter as it was cool in summer. With close shaven face, sharp pinched features, a keen gray eye, a broad honest forehead, a large and powerfully chiselled mouth, with a chin of ponderous size, both bespeaking firmness—the whole a pale, kind countenance—he was ever and completely the school-master. He lived to see almost two generations schooled in his manly, but gentle ways ; and left behind him a name synonymous with education throughout the county towns. Mr. McDonald, Mrs. John Hoey, Charles McLaughlin (brother of Rev. James) have also been honored teachers of this school. Mr. Hurley also had a second term of service after these. The church gallery, which had hitherto served as a school, in 1855–6 became too straitened for the increase of scholars ; and a small frame structure (formerly a carpenter's shop) was presented to the parish by Patrick H. Curren for the purpose, and was moved from its original site to the present location of the Convent of the Sisters of St. Joseph. It is now used as a dwelling-house on Grand street, to which it was removed years ago. Father Dowling was killed by being thrown from his wagon, September 28, 1858, and is buried in the Holy Cross Cemetery. Father Bartholomew Gleason succeeded to the pastorate, and became the first occupant of the new parochial residence, purchased by the parish, corner Prospect street and Dutchman's Lane, now East Broadway. In September, 1860, Rev. Stephen Cassidy became pastor, but died in October, 1861, from ailments contracted in the discharge of his duties. Rev. Thomas McLaughlin followed ; under him the school-house was enlarged, the parochial property improved, and the whole parish felt the influence of his large-hearted character and personal magnetism. Ill health caused him to leave in 1864, and his place was taken by Father Strain, during whose time a new school-house was improvised out of an old coach-house, on the site of the old one. It was removed in 1872, when the Sisters of St. Joseph came to Flatbush. Father Strain took an especial interest in the school, and under his supervision it, as well as the religious societies of the parish, flourished. He died suddenly, and was followed by Rev. James Moran, and he by Rev. Michael Moran. In 1869, Rev. James J. Doherty became pastor, and gave a new impetus to the surroundings of Holy Cross. Through his efforts the new church, the largest and richest in the county towns, was erected ; the Sisters of St. Joseph were introduced ; the old church was converted into a school-house ; a curate was provided ; the parish was divided into two districts and a new church organized in the village of

Parkville, and placed under the care of the learned Father James McKiverken. September 1, 1872, the corner-stone of the new church was laid, and the completed edifice was dedicated June 8, 1873. It is 65x127 feet, of Croton-brick, with Dorchester-stone trimmings, and in the nineteenth century French-Gothic style, with a tower and spire in the northeast corner, 150 feet high. Its interior decorations are in polychrome, and it accommodates a congregation of 1,000, and cost about \$40,000. Thomas P. Houghton, of New York city, was the *architect* ; and Thomas Ryan, the *builder*. Father Doherty, much broken in health, closed his pastorate of nearly ten years, May 22, 1881, and was followed by Rev. Bernard McHugh ; Father Marron being curate. Under their care all the various Roman Catholic interests of Flatbush are prospering.

The Sisters of St. Joseph, who now have charge of the Roman Catholic parochial schools, for both sexes, came into the parish November, 1872, from the Mother House, at Flushing, which is also the Convent of St. Joseph. The first sisters here were Sister Alphonsus, *Superioress* ; Sister Aurelia, Sister Loyla and Sister Gertrude. The present community comprises the *Superioress*, and teachers, as follows : Sister Sylvester, Sister St. Heri, Sister Sidonia and Sister St. Ignatius. Miss R. Moan is the church organist and also instructor in the school. The services of the Catholic clergy of Flatbush, not only in their parish, but in their faithful ministrations at the County Asylum, Hospital, Nunnery and Almshouse, not to mention the Small Pox Hospital, located in this town, entitle them to most unstinted praise.

Roman Catholic Church at Parkville.—Before the erection of the Roman Catholic church at Flatbush, the catholic residents of the country towns were entirely dependent upon the city of Brooklyn for their religious privileges ; though, on certain occasions, services were held at the convent, at New Utrecht. After the Flatbush Roman Catholic church was erected, the catholics of Parkville, New Utrecht and Gravesend were all included within its jurisdiction. In the latter part of 1869, Rev. Mr. Moran, resident priest at Flatbush, initiated an organization at Parkville, which was completed in 1870, for a congregation and the erection of a church edifice for those of his faith. A neat frame edifice, in the Gothic style, was erected on Lawrence avenue, near First street, at a cost of \$12,000, the corner-stone of which was laid August 21, 1870, and the building finished November 27, 1870. It was dedicated by Rt. Rev. Roman Catholic Bishop of Brooklyn, and received the name of "*Church of St. Rose of Lima*." The church is prosperous and well attended. During its first three years the church was supplied by the Flatbush church : Rev. James McKiverken, appointed October, 1874, the first and present pastor of this and Sheepshead Bay flock, has, since July, 1879, been assisted by Rev. William Doherty. There is a

flourishing Sunday-school in connection with this church.

Cemetery of the Holy Cross.—Several efforts, previous to 1849, to purchase property for a Roman Catholic cemetery, failed, owing to the unwillingness of the towns-people to have a cemetery of *any* character within the limits of the town. But, during the spring of that year, a tract of land in the eastern section of the town was secured, and the *Cemetery of the Holy Cross* founded. The farm, of which this land formed a part, originally belonged to Joost Van Brunt. In 1772 he sold it to Hendrick Suydam, who, at his death, left it to his son, Cornelius. In 1837 certain speculators conceived the idea of laying out a village in this section of the town. Through John A. Scudder, as their representative, a section of this farm, containing 18 acres, was purchased in 1837 from Mr. C. Suydam, at \$300 per acre, and divided into small village lots. A number of these lots were sold. Dr. Adrian Vanderveer purchased at this time another section of this farm, containing 12 acres, lying to the north of the first purchase. During the panic, in 1837, Scudder failed to meet his payments, and was obliged to relinquish his section. John Gill, who had purchased a small lot and built a house on it, now bought the portion sold by Scudder. Many unsuccessful attempts were made to procure this property from these parties for a cemetery. At length James Duffey, a coffee and spice merchant in Brooklyn, made a proposal to buy the land and erect there a large mansion, as well as to build and operate spice-mills. This gave color to the idea that the mechanics engaged in the mill would buy lots and build here. Gill finally consented to sell for \$2,700. After the property came into Duffey's control, he changed his mind in reference to the spice-mills; and accepted a tempting offer from Rev. James McDonough, pastor of what was then St. James Church, Brooklyn, but afterward became the Brooklyn Cathedral.

This first purchase for the cemetery, of 17 acres, 3 rods, was made in June, 1849, by Rev. J. McDonough acting for Right Rev. John Hughes, who was then Bishop of New York and Brooklyn. Dr. Vanderveer would not sell his section. On July 14, 1849, Thomas Moran, who was the first victim of the cholera in the town, died, and was the first person interred in the cemetery. The second purchase was made from Mr. Samuel Young, whose house, in the rear of the cemetery, had been accidentally destroyed by fire. Not desiring to rebuild in this locality, he sold his land, consisting of one acre, to the cemetery, for \$500. The third purchase was in 1857, from the heirs of the estate of Adrian Vanderveer, M. D., who sold 19 acres 3 rods, at \$500 per acre. This portion was not used for twelve years, until November 3, 1869, when the first interment was made. During 1869 another section, consisting of 22 acres, was bought from Leffert Cornell. This was formerly the Cornelius Vanderveer

farm. For this section about \$18,000 was paid by the cemetery.

The title of the property is vested in the Bishop of the Brooklyn diocese. In the spring of 1855, a neat chapel was erected in the cemetery, and dedicated by Right Rev. John Loughlin, Bishop of Brooklyn.

The first superintendent of the cemetery was James Egan, who held the position until April 1, 1853; when P. H. Curren was appointed, who through faithful discharge of his duties held the position for twenty-six years. On his resignation, in 1879, the bishop appointed, on March 1, 1879, his son Wm. H. Curren, as superintendent, through whose assistance many of these facts have been gathered.

There have been, since the founding of the cemetery, 152,322 interments. The greatest number in one year has been 6,000. This was during the last visitation of the cholera. The average would be about 5,000. During the cholera, 278 were buried in one week. The diocesan vaults for the burial of the Catholic clergy are under the chapel. There are twelve large vaults in different parts of the cemetery. Although owned by the Brooklyn diocese, the right to bury is not restricted to it. The yearly average of funerals from New York City is about seven hundred. The services at the cemetery are under the supervision of the parish priest at Flatbush village.

First Baptist Church of Flatbush, organized April 29, 1872, with Joseph Steele, H. J. Egleston, John D. Randolph, R. H. Estes, E. C. Dickinson, as *trustees*, and 19 members and their families. They first worshipped in a class-room of the Methodist church; afterwards, for nearly three years, in second story of Schoonmaker's Hall, on Flatbush avenue—the pulpit for the first year being supplied by Rev. J. B. Cleaver. In 1873, Rev. L. F. Moore was called as first pastor; followed, after two years, by Rev. F. T. Cailhopper, who resigned 1877, and was followed, December 1, 1881, by Rev. Reuel C. Bowen, then a theological student, but now the installed pastor. During Mr. Moore's pastorate, a chapel was erected on west side Ocean avenue, south of Church Lane; it was dedicated September 27, 1874. This edifice was remodelled and enlarged, and otherwise improved, in 1880. A Sunday-school was organized at same time as the church, of which the Superintendents have been H. J. Egleston, R. H. Estes, L. I. Boone, and William B. Green, the present incumbent. The present church officers are H. J. Egleston and R. H. Estes, *deacons*; Mrs. Nancy Randolph, *deaconess*; Albert Zisett, *treasurer*.

Second Reformed (German) Church of Flatbush.—Fifteen years ago the German population of Flatbush depended for religious privileges upon the German church at New Brooklyn (now corner Herkimer street and Hazard avenue), three miles distant. In 1874 an effort was made by F. C. Suckow, pastor of the New Brooklyn German church to form a congrega-

tion in Flatbush, and a preaching service was commenced March 1st in the Methodist chapel. On 18th of same month the church was organized by a committee of the South Classis of Long Island, with 55 members; the first consistory being John J. Snyder, John Ziegler, *elders*, Gustave Enck, Fred. Osman, *deacons*. The pulpit was, for some time, supplied by Rev. F. C. Suckow and Rev. Julius Hones. On July 11, 1875, the corner-stone was laid of a neat two-story frame and brick edifice, erected on the Reformed church property, corner East Broadway and Bedford avenue, at a cost of \$5,500. The first settled pastor was Rev. F. A. Freidel, called December 25, 1875; resigned in the Spring of 1881. The next was Rev. C. H. Schwarzback, the present pastor, called during the Summer of 1881. A prosperous Sunday-school has always been connected with this church.

Educational.—The early Dutch settlers of Kings county brought with them from the Fatherland a due appreciation of the importance of religious and educational privileges. The schoolmaster was regarded as occupying a social position second only to that of the "dominie;" indeed, under certain circumstances, he was required to perform some duties pertaining to the ministerial office. As we learn from BRODHEAD'S *History of New York*, Evert Pietersen was examined by the Classis of Amsterdam, in Holland, and sent out with a colony of emigrants as *schoolmaster* and *ziekentruster*, or "consoler of the sick," that he might "read God's word and lead in the singing until a minister should arrive." One of the stipulations made with Johannes Van Eckkelen, the schoolmaster of Flatbush, by the consistory of the church, in 1682, was that, "when the minister shall preach at Breuckelen or New Utrecht, he shall be required to read twice before the congregation (at Flatbush) from a book used for the purpose. In the afternoon he shall read a sermon, or explanation of the catechism, according to the practice approved by the minister." These men were always required to be church-members, and of good repute. Governor Stuyvesant, in 1649, earnestly besought the Amsterdam Classis, by letter, "to send out pious, well qualified, diligent schoolmasters," adding that nothing "is of greater importance than the right, earnest instruction of the youth." Dr. STRONG, who wrote his *History of Flatbush* forty years before the late TEUNIS G. BERGEN issued his "*Early Settlers of Kings County*," had earlier access than the latter to traditions which antedate existing records. This fact may serve to reconcile the differences which seem to exist between these two authorities in regard to the first schoolmasters. In accordance with Dr. STRONG'S statement, Adriaen Hegeman, clerk and schout, was the first schoolmaster, 1659-1671; while, according to BERGEN, Reynier Bastiaensen Van Giesen was the first. It will be seen that it is quite possible that Hegeman acted in this capacity, from 1653 or '54,

the date of his first coming to Flatbush, until 1660, in 5th June, of which year (according to Bergen's translation of the first records) the consistory made an agreement with Van Giesen to become schoolmaster. He served until October 26, 1663, when Pilgrom Cloeq was engaged, and probably served until 1671. This covers the period for which Dr. Strong could find no other schoolmaster than Hegeman, and places the date of the employment of a schoolmaster at a much earlier point. It is also in accordance with Dutch custom; for it cannot be supposed that the first settlers were here for nearly fifteen years without a schoolmaster and *krank-besoecker*. From 1671, Dr. Strong and Mr. Bergen agree as to their lists of schoolmasters.

The school-master was also employed as fore-singer and sexton; and, to increase his income, he had charge of all interments, for which he received a certain fee. He was required to ring the church bell before each session of the school. This practice was kept up until about 1794, a period of nearly one hundred and fifty years. He was to "instruct the children, also, on Wednesday and Saturday afternoons in the common prayers and the catechism." He was "required to keep school nine months in succession, from September to June. It was his duty to provide the basin and water for the administration of baptism, and to make arrangements for administration of the sacrament." He was also required to "give invitations for funerals, dig the grave and toll the bell." "For a speller he received three guilders, and four guilders for a writer" (probably instruction in spelling and writing). In addition he had a stated salary of "six hundred guilders in grain, and a dwelling-house, pasture and meadows." These requirements continued in force for nearly one hundred years. In Dr. STRONG'S history we find an agreement with one of the earliest teachers and also one with the last teacher, in the Dutch language, in 1773, in which there is very little, if any, change in the requirements. The first school-house was situated upon a lot of land opposite the old lecture-room of the church and next to the land now owned by the Academy. In 1823 the church used the south portion of the lot, to build on it a parsonage. The first school-house was a wooden structure, composed of three buildings joined together. It stood until 1803, when, becoming much dilapidated, it was resolved to sell it, and move the village school into the academy. The building was sold to Bateman Lloyd, who took it down and constructed with the timber a store near the northwest corner of the main road and Church Lane, which remained until 1825. There were twenty-one school-masters employed from 1654 to 1802. Patrick Noon was the last teacher in the old school. The village school was taught as a distinct school, however, in the south end of the Academy. Mr. Hegeman was its first teacher in the Academy. Only the most elementary English branches were taught. Hegeman left in 1823. The Dutch language was taught

until about 1765, when Petrus Van Steenburgh was teacher. He was the first to teach English in connection with the Dutch. Anthony Welp was the last teacher of the Dutch language. Gabriel Ellison, in 1776, was the first to teach English exclusively in the village school.

Erasmus Hall Academy.—To the Rev. Dr. John H. Livingston and Senator John Vanderbilt is due the credit of founding an Academy in this village. With the active co-operation of the prominent citizens, in 1786, they entered upon the undertaking with commendable zeal. The sum of £915 was raised by subscription, the list being headed by Senator Vanderbilt with £100; and, during 1786, a large and commodious building 100 feet front and 36 feet deep was erected. An arrangement was made whereby a valuable lot in the center of the town was secured. This most desirable piece of property was held by Mr. Jacob Lefferts. The church, always closely associated with the education of the young, offered to Mr. Lefferts two other tracts of land, one lying directly west of the graveyard and facing on Church Lane; the other situated on East Broadway, near what is now the corner of Nostrand avenue, upon which property the "Lloyd Mill" was afterward erected. The consistory then, on December 29, 1797, executed a lease for this land in perpetuity to the Trustees. The property, in case the Academy ceases to exist, is to revert to the church. The amount raised by subscription did not meet the expense incurred in completing the building, the total cost of which was \$6,250. To liquidate this debt the inhabitants who held a deed for "Twillers" and "Corlears" Flats, relinquished their right and title to the Trustees of the Academy, who sold the property at the rate of \$16 per acre. From this sale the Academy realized \$1,500. The balance of the proceeds was divided among those inhabitants who would not relinquish their interest in the Flats. On the 18th of May, 1787, an application was made to the Regents of the University of the State of New York for a charter of incorporation, which was granted November 20, 1787; the incorporators named being John Vanderbilt, Walter Minto, Peter Lefferts, Johannes E. Lott, Aquila Giles, Cornelius Vanderveer, George Martense, Jacob Lefferts, Wm. B. Gifford, Hendrick Suydam, John J. Vanderbilt, Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker, Philip Nagel, Peter Cornell, Rev. John H. Livingston, D. D., James Wilson, Samuel Provost, John Mason and Comfort Sands. The name chosen for the new school was in honor of Desiderius Erasmus, the distinguished patron of literature in Holland in the sixteenth century. The academy, from its commencement, was bitterly opposed by many of the old inhabitants of the town, who afterward superstitiously attributed all their misfortunes to the establishment of an academy among them. The best teachers were employed, and a system of instruction adopted which made the institution the first of its kind in the

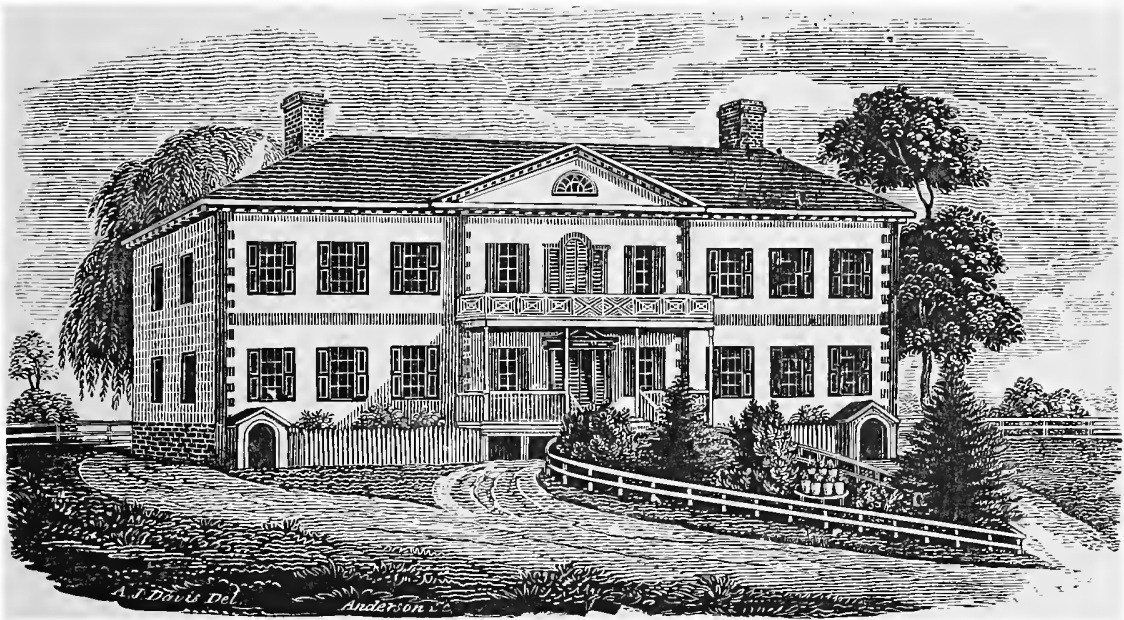
State. The whole of the income being thus expended by the Trustees in raising the standard of the institution, nothing could be appropriated toward canceling the outstanding debt. By voluntary contributions the Trustees reduced the amount, in 1789, to \$1,064.94; but it was not until 1825 that the debt was entirely removed. This was accomplished by a further sale of the Commons, or Flats, belonging to the town, and by voluntary subscriptions.

In 1794 the General Synod of the Reformed Dutch Church resolved to locate their Theological Seminary at Flatbush, in connection with the Academy, and make Rev. Dr. John H. Livingston, who had been chosen the first Principal of Erasmus Hall, President also of the Theological Seminary. A few years afterward, through certain influences brought to bear upon them, the General Synod removed the Seminary to New Brunswick, N. J. Among a large number of prominent men who were educated at Flatbush, we find the following names: William A. Duer, President of Columbia College, N. Y.; John Duer, one of the revisers of the Revised Statutes of this State; John Berrian, Attorney General of the U. S.; George M. Troup, for several years Governor of Georgia; Dr. Adrian Vanderveer, one of the most prominent physicians of the county; John Hunter, of the State Senate; Hon. John Vanderbilt, Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, also State Senator, and Hon. John A. Lott, Judge of the Court of Appeals.

Rev. Dr. Livingston resigned in 1792, and Dr. Wilson was chosen in his place. He held the position of Principal, though employed also as Classical Professor at Columbia College, until 1804. This he was enabled to do by employing experienced men as his teachers. Rev. Peter Lowe was appointed to succeed Dr. Wilson as Principal, and remained until his death in 1818. Dr. Strong states that, in 1797, and again in 1809, the trustees sought, but did not obtain, from the legislature, the privilege of raising £1,200 by lottery, in order to liquidate the debt. The plan adopted by the trustees in former days was to employ some prominent man as principal, and then engage experienced teachers who should serve under him. The principal exerted merely a governing power, and participated only to a very limited degree in the work of teaching. In later years the principal has acted also as the first teacher, and employs experienced assistants. Mr. Albert Ohlenis was employed while Rev. Mr. Lowe was principal, as first teacher. Next we find the name of Joab Cooper, in 1806, the author of *Cooper's Virgil*, so well known as a text book in the schools and colleges, for so many years. He remained for two years and was succeeded by Mr. Valentine Derry, upon whose resignation, in 1809, Mr. Richard Whyte Thompson was appointed first teacher. He resigned in 1814, and was followed by William Thayre, appointed in December, 1814. He remained, however, only a part of a year, when the

trustees called Mr. William Ironsides. In 1816 Mr. Joab Cooper was again appointed, but resigned at the end of the year. The position was held for the next two years by Mr. Andrew Craig. Upon the death of the Principal, Rev. Peter Lowe, and the resignation of Mr. Craig, due to failing health, the Trustees appointed in August, 1818, the Rev. Joseph Penney, as Principal. He was the first Principal who resided at the Hall and had charge of the classes. He employed as assistant Rev. John Mulligan. They held the position until 1821, when Rev. Timothy Clowes, D.D., accepted the office. In 1823, Mr. Jonathan Kellogg became Principal. Under his administration the Academy flourished greatly; he made many changes in methods of teaching, and in the arrangements about the school-rooms. The trustees in 1826-'27 built a large wing, 50 by 25 feet, for additional school-rooms, on the N. E. corner of the

Theological Seminary at New Brunswick, and President of Rutgers College. During the time Dr. Campbell was principal, the Regents, in 1835, determined to establish a department for the instruction of common-school teachers in each of the eight senatorial districts. Erasmus Hall was chosen for the Southern District. High price of board, and other agencies, hindered the success of the plan in relation to Erasmus Hall, and only two applications were received. Consequently, in 1836, the trustees resigned the trust, and the Salem Academy, in Washington County, was chosen by the Regents. In May, 1839, Rev. Dr. Penney, who, since his resignation in 1821, had held the position of President of Hamilton College, returned to Flatbush and succeeded Dr. Campbell as Principal, which position he held until November 1, 1841, when Mr. James Ferguson, A. M., was chosen. In June 1843 he re-



ERASMUS HALL ACADEMY, 1850.

building, at a cost of \$1,500. Mr. Kellogg, also, made great improvements upon the exterior of the Academy, and in the appearance of the grounds. Nearly all of the beautiful trees which now adorn the grounds were planted by him. Matters did not, however, proceed satisfactorily after a few years; and, because of intemperance, he was called upon, in 1834, to resign the position. In May, 1834, the trustees appointed Rev. Wm. H. Campbell, who had for some time taught a select school in the village, as principal. "Through his superior qualifications as teacher he not only gave the highest satisfaction, but also infused in the hearts of the inhabitants an earnest desire for a liberal education to a degree which had never before existed." Dr. Campbell remained until 1839, when ill-health forced him to resign; and he has since occupied the position of Principal of the Albany Academy, Professor in the

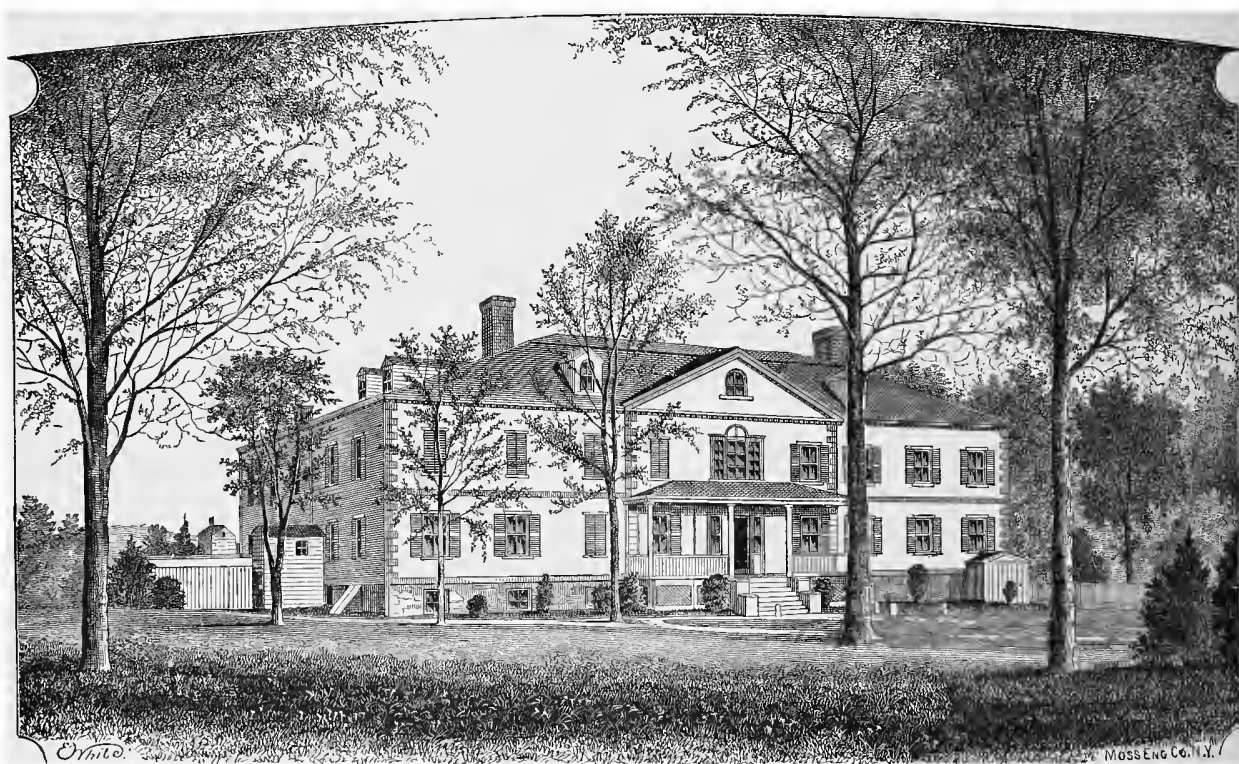
signed the position, and the trustees appointed Rev. Richard D. Van Kleeck as Principal. Mr. Van Kleeck was a most thorough and efficient teacher, and under his care the institution was greatly prospered. A large number of scholars came from other States; and, for many years, a number of Mexican and Cuban students boarded at the Academy. Mr. Van Kleeck's health having failed, he resigned on February 22, 1860, and was succeeded by Rev. William W. Howard. On April 19, 1863, Mr. Howard, having received a call to the Presbyterian Church, at Aurora, Cayuga County, N. Y., resigned as Principal. The trustees then chose the Rev. E. F. Mack as Principal. Mr. Mack held the position for eleven years; and, in September, 1874, was succeeded by Mr. Jared Hasbrouck. Upon the resignation of Mr. Hasbrouck, the trustees appointed, as principal, in February, 1879, Rev. Robert G. Strong, a former

graduate of the Academy, who for several years had conducted a large and prosperous select school in the village. Mr. Strong accepted the position, and in September, 1879, moved his school into the Academy. There is attached to the Academy a large library, which at one time contained 2750 volumes. Also a philosophical and chemical apparatus and mineralogical cabinet.

Select Schools.—Since the founding of Erasmus Hall, several private select schools have existed in the village. Among these, we mention the classical school of Mr. John Copp. This was the first select school, and was of a very high order. It was established in 1773-'74, and was held in an old house on the corner of Linden Boulevard and Flatbush Road. It was

school was taught by Miss Gerrard for several years. In 1840 Mrs. Mitchell opened a private school at her house in Clarkson street. This school was discontinued about 1876. After his resignation as Principal of the Academy, Rev. L. T. Mack, in 1874, opened a select school on Waverly avenue, for one year. In 1871 a select school was begun by Rev. R. G. Strong, the consistory of the church granting him the use of the old lecture-room adjoining the church. This school was merged into the Academy when Mr. Strong was appointed Principal of that institution, in 1879.

Public School No. 1.—For a number of years the village school was held at the Academy; and matters worked harmoniously until the year 1841, when dissatisfaction arose among certain residents of the



ERASMUS HALL ACADEMY, 1883.

broken up by the Revolutionary war, and Mr. Copp joined the army. The next select school was taught by Rev. William H. Campbell, D.D., in 1833, and was discontinued after the appointment of Dr. Campbell as Principal of the Academy.

A very flourishing and widely-known school was conducted by Miss E. N. Duryea. This school was begun in October 12, 1837, and was largely patronized by parties from a distance, as well as by parents residing in the vicinity of the village. A number of prominent persons were educated here, among whom we mention the name of Miss Emma Thursby, the world-renowned prima-donna. Miss Duryea closed her school because of her failing health. A well-conducted select

village in regard to the distribution of the school funds between the public school and the Academy. In order to avoid further trouble in the matter, the trustees of the Academy, in 1844, on motion of Hon. Gerrit Martense and John J. Vanderbilt, resolved, "That the children of the village school be removed from the Academy, and that the town be requested to build a special school-house for their accommodation."

Accordingly the children were taken from Erasmus Hall and taught for a time in a building on the corner of East Broadway and Flatbush avenue, owned by estate of Mr. Stryker. The next year a commodious two-story frame building, about forty-five by thirty feet, was erected for a school-house, near the site of the

present building. The main floor was fitted up for a school-room, and the upper story was reserved as a court-room. The primary town meetings and regular elections were held here for many years, until the erection of Schoonmaker Hall, in 1861. The members of the first Board of Trustees were General Philip S. Crooke, Captain W. Story, and Teunis J. Bergen. The first principal of the public school, after it was withdrawn from the academy, was Mr. John Oakley, who remained until 1852. He was succeeded by Mr. Dewitt C. Wickham, who held the position until 1857, when, because of failing health, he was compelled to resign. The next principal was Mr. David Van Etten. At the end of the school year he resigned, and, in 1858, the place was filled by the appointment of Mr. Horace Wickham. After two years his health failed, and he resigned. Mr. E. W. Bartlett held the position until 1861. He was followed by Mr. John T. Rhodes, who taught until 1865, when he entered the New York Theological Seminary. On the retirement of Mr. Rhodes, the trustees appointed Mr. John L. Williamson. In 1869 Mr. Williamson resigned, and Mr. Charles A. Libby became principal. He was succeeded in September, 1877, by Mr. A. Whigam, the present efficient incumbent, under whose influence the school has grown rapidly. The interests of the public school are under the care of three trustees, elected by the town. The members of the present Board are Dr. John L. Zabriskie, J. D. Randolph, and J. Lott Vanderbilt. In 1878 the accommodations became entirely too limited. For several years both stories of the old building had been used for school-rooms, and three teachers employed. At a town-meeting, in the early part of 1878, it was resolved to sell the old building, and appropriate \$19,000 of town funds, to be raised by taxation, for the building of a new school-house. John L. Zabriskie, M.D., J. D. Randolph and George Hamblin were appointed a committee to undertake the work. The plans were by Mr. John Y. Colyer, the engineer of Prospect Park; and the building (53 feet by 85 feet in size) of brick, two stories high. The building was begun May 1, 1878, and completed December 1, 1878. It was used for school purposes before it was finished, on October 14th, 1878. There is a large, well-selected library of some 1,500 volumes; and, at present, four teachers, besides the principal, are employed in the main school. In 1872 a branch school was established at the mission church for the colored children. Miss Mary E. Paton had charge of this, as principal, for four years; followed, in 1876, by Miss E. Morris; by Mrs. Ida Roberts, in 1878-'80; Miss Emma W. Clark, in 1880-'81; and Miss Bridget Walker, in 1881.

Parkville Public School.—At first, the inhabitants on the west side of the town sent their children to the Flatbush public school. In 1855, however, the settlers at Parkville, or Greenfield, as it was then

called, petitioned to be set off as a separate district. This was granted June 6, 1855, and Greenfield District School No. 1 was organized. It is now called *Flatbush No. 2*. Lawrence Powers, Joseph B. King and John Hall were the first trustees. The school was held for one year in a private house owned by Mr. Rutherford, and situated on section 64, on Webster avenue, near Second street. In 1856, a suitable building was erected for a school house.

Upon the opening of the Boulevard through the school property in 1872, this building was moved to its present site, on Lawrence avenue, near Second street; and in 1876 was greatly enlarged and remodelled. Owing to an omission in the records, we have been unable to obtain the full names of the different principals. The list, as far as can be ascertained, is as follows: The first principal was Miss Harriet Clark, 1856; followed by Miss Harriet Brewster; Risley or Ryler and Rodman in 1858. The position was afterward filled by male teachers. During a part of 1858 Mr. Kirkwood was principal. Mr. Mead, a portion of 1859, when the District was organized as a Union Free School. Mr. Mead was followed by Mr. Cady; Mr. Thompkins, two years; Mr. Berry, one year; Mr. North, two years, 1865-67. Mr. A. Whigam was appointed in 1868, at a salary of \$900, which was raised after one year to \$1,100. In 1873, the position was held by Mr. Devore; succeeded by Mr. Belden, in 1874; Mr. A. Whigam again, from 1875, until called, in September, 1877, to take charge of District No. 1, at Flatbush village. Mr. Christie next served one year, resigned; and Mr. Wallace was principal for three years. Upon his resignation, in 1881, the present principal, Mr. L. H. White, was appointed. The amount paid annually for the support of the school has increased in the twenty-seven years from \$75 to \$2,400. The board of trustees at present consists of Mr. J. H. Wilder, H. T. Montgomery, M. Ryan, P. H. Walsh and Wm. Staite. There are at present 153 scholars, taught by four teachers.

Windsor Terrace School.—At a meeting in the winter of 1873, called by Mr. Michael E. Finnegan, to consider public-school matters, it was resolved to petition the commissioner of public schools, and the trustees, to be set off as a separate school district, to be known as *District No. 3*, of the town school. The petition was granted, and a committee, consisting of Mr. E. Finnegan, C. C. Martin, Theodore Magnus and James Hardie, was appointed to carry out the wish of the meeting. C. C. Martin, Wm. E. Murphy, and M. E. Finnegan and ———, as trustees, secured the passage of an act authorizing them to bond the district for \$10,000, payable at the rate of \$1,000 annually, the first bond to be payable in 1880. A suitable school-house, in the Swiss style, costing \$6,700, from plans by John Y. Culyer, architect, was erected on the west side of Prospect avenue, between Greenwood avenue and Vanderbilt street, and was ready for use

January 1, 1876. In 1874, Mr. Wm. N. Walker was employed as the first principal; remained until April, 1876, and was followed by Mrs. Carrie Blamey. She was succeeded in September, 1876, by the present principal, Mr. John J. Wells, who by his efficient management has done much to build up the school. The school now numbers 100 scholars, and two teachers, beside the principal.

Literary Societies.—A number of literary and debating societies, of both a public and private character, have flourished in the village from time to time. The most prominent of these, the *Flatbush Literary Association*, was organized in 1840. During the winter of 1841-'42, a series of lectures on various subjects was given by some of its members. Rev. Dr. T. M. STRONG's *History of Flatbush* was first prepared by him, as a member of this society, to be delivered as a lecture. After its delivery, there was an earnest demand for its publication. Only a few copies are now in existence, and for these extravagant prices have been offered. We are largely indebted to Dr. Strong's history for facts relating to the early history of the town.

Musical Associations.—The village has been long noted for its musical talents. Several well conducted and creditable musical associations for vocal and instrumental music have existed in the village. Promi-

nent among these are the *Flatbush Glee Clubs*, of 1853-1857, and the present *Flatbush Choral Society*, organized in 1877. The musical talent displayed has been quite remarkable for so small a town.

Conclusion.—We have thus traced, as minutely as the limited space allowed would admit, the civil, ecclesiastical and literary history of the town of Flatbush, from its earliest settlement to the present time, a period of nearly two hundred and fifty years. During all this time, unbounded prosperity from an over-ruling, all-wise providence of God has been granted to the village. Financial disaster or failure has seldom, if ever, visited it. The health of the town, with only two exceptions, during visitation of cholera, has been *unprecedentedly excellent*. Probably no other village containing so large a number of inhabitants, for so long a period a county-seat, and lately, for many years, under the shadow of one of the largest cities of the Union, can show such an unblemished record for good character, as a law-abiding, prosperous, religious and healthful community. May they ever treasure this record with grateful hearts; and may He, whose merciful providence has granted such prosperity to the village, still watch over those whom He has thus honored with such a lineage of good and upright men.

Facsimile of autograph of Cornelis Barend Van Wyck.

Emigrated from Wyck, a village of Brabant, Holland, in 1660; married Anna, daughter of Rev. Theodorus Polhemus, the first minister of the Dutch towns; and settled in Flatbush.

HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF NEW UTRECHT.

By *Lewis & Bergen* Esq.

LOCATION.—Where the Western end of Long Island touches, with high bluffs, the waters of The Narrows and the Bay of New York; between the southerly boundary of the City of Brooklyn, and the southerly and westerly boundaries of the towns of Flatbush and Gravesend; in the County of Kings, is situated that region of country, covering an area of more than eight square miles, which is called the TOWN OF NEW UTRECHT. Bounded, for the greater part, by the harbor of the greatest port of America, and commanding a view of its commerce and of the great cities on the Bay, the situation of the town is a highly favored one.

Within its confines now stand the *villages* of NEW UTRECHT, BATH, FORT HAMILTON, BAY RIDGE, and part of UNIONVILLE, where live an intelligent, conservative and law-abiding people, engaged chiefly in agriculture, fisheries, and manufactures; and where, also, reside many of the professional men and merchants of the cities of New York and Brooklyn.

Its Indian Inhabitants.—The earliest human beings, so far as history knows, who dwelt in this region, were two of the thirteen tribes of savages that were found by the first European settlers on Long Island; viz., the *Canarsie* and the *Nyack* tribes of Indians. How long they had roamed about, or pitched their tents in this portion of Long Island, is quite unknown. The beds of *wampum*, or shells, that were discovered near the site of Fort Hamilton, attest that the place had been often visited, and had been very familiar to the savages for a long time. It is, however, a familiar fact (although still to the reflective mind a startling one), that it is scarcely more than two hundred years ago that the dusky and mysterious savages surrendered possession of the soil of New Utrecht; and, but a generation or two since, they quite disappeared from the neighborhood.

Discovery.—The first Europeans, recorded to have looked upon the wooded bluffs of the western end of Long Island, where now are seen the cultivated fields

and gardens, and the walls and towers of many modern structures, were the Italian adventurer, Giovanni de Verazzano, and his followers. There are other hints and allusions, in accounts of old voyages, that seem to show that Dutch and Norwegian vessels had occasionally entered the present Bay of New York, for the purpose of procuring furs; but, the first definite record is that of Verazzano.

In the year 1524, this corsair, under a commission from the King of France, while coasting northward along the shores of the New World, entered the mouth of the great river, now called the Hudson; and, for a brief period only, explored what he called with his native enthusiasm, "The Most Beautiful Bay." In his account of this discovery, he states that with his boat he entered this beautiful bay between headlands, "through which a very large river, deep at its mouth, forced its way to the sea; and found the country on its banks well peopled, the inhabitants being dressed out with feathers of birds of various colors."

Although some writers have thrown doubt on the authenticity of this discovery, later investigations, and the examination of an ancient map still extant in Italy, give new credibility to the tale, that this Italian pirate, whose vessel carried the colors of the King of France, was the first civilized being to look upon the wooded banks of the Narrows, on which is situated the town of New Utrecht.

But the Italian was unmindful of the value of his discovery; and, apparently without even a dream of the future of the shores he had seen, he sailed away again and left "The Beautiful Bay" and the wooded banks to the savages and their ancient solitude.

Eighty-five years passed by after Verazzano's departure; and generations of savages came and went without another ship's prow having cut the waters of "the beautiful bay." At length, in the year 1609, a vessel called "The Half Moon," under the colors of Holland, dropped anchor in "The Great River of the Mountain." But the Dutch mariners looked with wiser eyes than

the Italians, upon the headlands and the bluffs. Not as fugitives or mere adventurers, but as men of enterprise and as promoters of commerce, they deemed the land worthy of a settlement and determined upon the development of its resources. Their report of the possibilities of this region, made with that care and due regard for truth so characteristic of their people, convinced the merchants of Holland of the great value of the discovery, and caused them to take advantage of the situation. Soon after The Half Moon had returned to the Netherlands, the Dutch prepared to found a port on the Island of Manhattan. In 1614, the great Dutch West India Company, in accordance with its charter, undertook the enterprise of establishing trading-posts and colonies in this new region of The Great River; and the New Netherlands became recognized as a part of Dutch Territory.

On the easterly side of the deep and rapid waters of an arm of the sea which flowed past the island of Manhattan, was situated another island of larger area. Its head formed part of the bounds of the great bay; and it lay at the north of The Great River, like a huge fish with its tail extending far into the ocean. This island, now known as Long Island, had, at the time of the Dutch discovery, various Indian names, prominent among which was *Seawanaka*, or Isle of Shells (or of *Wampum*); and, by virtue of its possessions, was often visited by the ancient savages. To the Dutch this island soon became so well known and appreciated, by reason of its bays and havens and fertile lands at its westerly end, that they termed it "The Crown of the New Netherlands," and named it the Isle of Nassau. Settlements were early made on Nassau Island. Villages soon sprang up, with fine trading and farming opportunities. But the Wallabout, Amersfort (Flatlands); Midwout (Flatbush); Breuckelin, Boswyck and Gravesend, were settled and established for many years before the lands on the most westerly extremity of Nassau Island (extending up to the headlands of The Great River, called then "Hamel's Hooftden," or headlands),* were rescued from the dominion of the savages. Among the woods of this region, and overlooking the broad expanse of "The Beautiful Bay," the wigwams of the Nyack tribe stood, undisturbed by the white man for a generation after he had built his first house on Nassau Island.

First Settlements in the Town.—In the year 1639, an exile, and settler of New Amsterdam, Heer Antony Jansen van Salee, applied to the Director-General and Council of the New Netherlands for lands adjoining the westerly side of the settlement of Gravesend; but did not then receive any patent. On May 27th, 1643, he received from Gov. Kiefft a patent for about

200 acres lying in what is now known as the village of Unionville, in the eastern portion of the present town of New Utrecht. This grant was part of the purchase made by Gov. Kiefft of the great chief "Penhawitz," head of the Canarsie tribe, who claimed nearly the whole of what is now known as Kings county as his hereditary right. But the patent of Gov. Kiefft to Van Salee made but a slight inroad upon the edge of the wild territory, lying then about the "Hamel's Hooftden" or headlands of the Narrows, and claimed by the Nyack tribe. New Utrecht was not yet born.

In the year 1645, after the fierce Indian war upon the Dutch colonists (provoked by the arrogance and short-sightedness of Gov. Kiefft), and as one of the terms of the peace then made, all the region lying about the Narrows and extending from Coney Island to the old village of Gowanus, now in South Brooklyn, was again purchased from the Indians by the Governor. But still the axe of the Dutch settler was not heard about the Narrows, and the Indian trails were the only roadways.

In the meantime, there had appeared the various preposterous and arrogant claims of the English to lands in the New Netherlands, which they had neither discovered nor occupied. Long Island seemed ever, in the early times, to hang as a glittering prize before the eyes, not only of Englishmen in Britain, but of Englishmen in the New World. The fugitive Puritans of New England were equally greedy with the intolerant aristocracy at home, and the adventurous cavaliers of Virginia, to control the country which they had neither seen nor settled; and which was now being opened by the enterprise of a people whose language and religious liberty were both as strange and contemptible to the people of the British Isles, as to the other English on the banks of the James, and on the shores of Massachusetts Bay.

But the Dutch of the New Netherlands were not unmindful of the value of the lands they had occupied. In the year 1647, the inhabitants of New Amsterdam and of the Dutch towns of Long Island made a representation to the States-General of Holland, of the importance of their possessions in the New World. Inasmuch as the English had made claims to Long Island, the Dutch settlers took occasion to speak more particularly of that region, which they call, "on account of its good situation, its fine bays and havens, and good lands, *a Crown for the New Netherlands*."

At about the time of this representation by the Dutch settlers, there was living in the ancient city of Utrecht, on the banks of the Rhine, in Holland, the Honorable CORNELIS VAN WERCKHOVEN, Schepen of the city, a member of the Government of Holland, and also of the Dutch West India Company. He seemed to have been impressed by the representations thus made by the settlers on Long Island. In November, 1651, he rose in the chamber at Amsterdam,

* These headlands, as the *Journal of the Labadist Travellers* of 1679-80 (pp. 98 and 118) informs us, were the high points of land on Staten Island and upon Long Island opposite, and were named the *Hooftden* from the resemblance of the shores to the Hooftden or headlands of the channel between England (at Dover) and France (at Calais).

and announced that he would undertake the founding of two colonies in the New Netherlands; one of which was to be on, or near the Hooftden Headlands on the bay of the Great River. He soon afterwards arrived at New Amsterdam; and, after having obtained from the Government a grant, he again purchased of the Indians, on November 22d, 1652, that portion of Long Island bordering on the Narrows and the bay, called "the Nyack Tract." The original boundary-line seemed to extend along the bay, from a lane between the farms belonging to the late Albert N. Van Brunt and the late Chandler White, to Cortelyou's lane on the present highway leading from the bay to the village of New Utrecht, near the residence of John C. Bennett.

The price which Van Werckhoven paid to the savage owners, or claimants, of this piece of virgin territory which forms the foundation of the present town, was six shirts, two pairs of shoes, six pairs of stockings, six adzes, six knives, two scissors, and six combs. There is no record of the ceremony which took place at this transference of land, for articles by *sixes* and *couples*. The import of the consideration paid is rather to be determined by its weight as a peace-offering and symbol of respect for ancient claims, however indefinite on the part of the savages; for the same land had already been purchased by the Governor. Still, the articles themselves were also, in that primitive time, of no little value to a savage tribe very few in numbers, and whose title was even then disputed by the chief of the neighboring Canarsie Indians.

Van Werckhoven soon proceeded to erect a house on his tract; and, as may be inferred from a suit that was afterwards brought, he also built a kind of mill. Thereafter, he re-embarked for Holland to procure settlers for his land, and left in charge of his grant the tutor of his children, Jacques Corteljaui. But the founder of the town never saw his possessions in the New World again. Soon after he had returned to Holland, in the year 1655-6, Van Werckhoven, in the beginning of his new career, died in his native city of Utrecht; and his enterprise in the New World seemed likely to fail in its very inception. Indeed, the plan of Van Werckhoven, if it had been successfully carried out and thoroughly developed, might have made him into a Patroon of a very large estate of ever increasing value; and might have led to many difficulties and complications concerning the rights of settlers and the land-titles of the present day. In truth, in later times, the heirs of Van Werckhoven did assert their claim to the title of this part of Long Island. But their pretensions were never seriously sustained; and have been regarded only as a curious bit of history, raising not the faintest cloud of suspicion on the titles of the present holders of the land.

Van Werckhoven's agent, after the death of his lord, was left without any means to found a colony; and, for some years, the Nyack tract remained as of old, with its tangled woods unbroken except by the

Indian trails and wigwam-camps. But Cortelyou, a man of scholarly attainments, a linguist, a mathematician, a philosopher, and a surveyor, was soon persuaded not to let "this beautiful land" (as the tract was called by its first historian, Nicasius de Sille) lie unfruitful and without inhabitants.

The Founding of the Town.—Accordingly, in the year 1657, Cortelyou determined, himself, to procure the

Ja: Corteljaui. 1657

Facsimile of Signature of Jaq. Cortelyou.

settlement of this region with sturdy colonists. On January 16th, of that year, twenty-one patents were granted by the Governor and Council-General in the Nyack Tract, of fifty acres each; together with a house-lot for each grantee. Nineteen persons each received a grant; and the two other grants, in keeping with the liberality of this people, who combined enterprise with charity, were reserved for the poor.

The names of the founders of the new settlement are as follows:

Jacques Cortelliau, or Cortelyou; the Lord Counsellor and Fiscal *Nicasius de Sille*; *Peter Buys*; *Johann Zeelen*; *Albert Albertsen* (Terhune); *William Willemsse* (Van Engen); *Jacob Hellickers*, alias Swart; *Pieter Jansen*; *Huybert Hooek*; *Jan Jacobson*; *Yunker* (or Squire) *Jacobus Corlear*; *Johan Tomasse* (Van Dycke); *Jacobus Backer*; *Rutger Joosten* (Van Brunt); *Jacob Pietersen*; *Pieter Roeloffse*; *Claes Claessen* (Smith); *Cornelis Beeckman*; *Teunis Joosten*.

These fathers of the settlement soon began erecting houses, clearing the forest and planting crops with all the industry of their race. In memory of the ancient city on the Rhine, in the Fatherland, in which Cornelis Van Werckhoven, the founder of the enterprise, was born, and where he died at an early age, with his work but just begun, the town was named—the UTRECHT of the New World.

First Houses.—Of these founders of New Utrecht, NICASIVS DE SILLE, a Lord Councillor and Fiscal, or Attorney-General, under Governor Stuyvesant, was a man of varied attainments, "well versed in the law, not unacquainted with military affairs, of fine character," a poet and a historian. The earliest records of the town are in the beautiful handwriting of this man, one of the most versatile of all the pioneers of the New World. His "History of the First Beginning of the Town of New Utrecht," a brief, but interesting paper, is the earliest native literature of the town; and was translated into English by the late Hon. TEUNIS G. BERGEN, the worthy successor, in the annals of New Utrecht, of the virtues and attainments of Nicasius de Sille.

Of the twenty settlers of New Utrecht, RUTGERS JOOSTEN VAN BRUNT* is the only one who has male de-

* Autograph given on page 68.

scendants in the town at this day; and, some of them still living on the same lands their forefathers cleared. Cortelyou, De Sille, Van Dyck and, perhaps, Terhune, are probably the only founders who have female descendants in the town at the present time. The Van Sicklen and Emmans families are some of the descendants of Jansen van Salee.*

The first house erected in the limits of the present town, was undoubtedly one which had formerly stood on the ground of Jansen van Salee, in or near the present village of Unionville; but, of the fact, there appear no authentic records. Soon after Van Werckhoven obtained his grant, and just before he left for Holland, it appears that he erected a building or small retreat, well surrounded by palisades, as a protection against the Indians. But the first house erected in the colony of New Utrecht proper, after the grant to Cortelyou, was one made of clap-boards; which Jacob Hellakers (alias Swart), tore down in Gravesend, and re-erected on his own patent of land. The first house actually built in the town was that of Nicasius de Sille.

Facsimile of signature of Nicasius de Sille.

It was built, with others, for Van Brunt and Pieter Buys in November, 1657, by Jacob Hellickers, and was carefully enclosed by a high palisade around the garden. This house of De Sille was, for many years, a fine relic of colonial life. Substantially built, after the manner of the Dutch architects of the time (a style which has re-appeared in the designs of the architects of to-day); with its thick stone walls, its capacious fire-places, its prominent chimney, its long, rambling sort of roof of red tiles brought from Holland, its heavy beams and long rafters, and its odd windows—with their little panes of glass—this ancient colonial house, was, for nearly two hundred years, an evidence of the care, stability and comfort of the early settlers of New Utrecht. Into this house Gen. Nathaniel Woodhull, a patriotic officer of the American army, in the year 1776, in the War of the Revolution, after having been inhumanly treated by British soldiers in spite of his wounds, was taken to die; and, before the old fire-place which had warmed the colonists for more than a century, the brave patriot enjoyed some comfort before his death. The site of this house was not far from the old Dutch church edifice and burying-ground. It was last occupied by Barent Wyckoff, who inherited it from Rutger W. Van Brunt. It was torn down in the year 1850, after having sheltered and comforted generation after generation for almost two hundred years. From the primitive days of the pioneer settlers to the more luxurious life of the present time, this ancient building preserved its early form intact, on the old foundations,

long after many a more modern structure had yielded to age.

At first, New Utrecht grew but slowly. The settlers were in constant fear of the Indians. In the year 1659, the Nyack tribe, in spite of the frequent purchases of their lands and many peace-offerings, caused so much alarm that the old house of De Sille was surrounded with a stockade. In the year 1660, in the beginning of its fourth year, the village had grown to consist of eleven substantial houses, and a block-house protected by palisades. At this time, but little more than two hundred years ago, New Utrecht was a miniature fortress in the midst of a forest through which the savages roamed more or less vindictively, and oblivious of the fact that the territory had been bought of them already three times. A striking proof that, at this time, the forest was still dense and the savages treacherous and war-like, is seen in the order issued by the Governor, in the year 1661, that the whole village be well palisaded, and "the trees be cut down within gun-shot, so that men might be seen afar off."

First Town-Charter.—Towards the end of the fifth year of the existence of this village-fortress, on December 22, 1661, the first charter of New Utrecht was granted by the Governor and Council of New Netherlands; and the inhabitants were duly authorized to elect magistrates and to hold courts of justice. This charter gave municipal powers similar to those of New Haarlem and other villages settled in the New Netherlands, which were all, more or less, modeled after the self-government of the cities of Holland.

The first magistrates elected in New Utrecht were Jan Tomassen (Van Dyck), Rutger Joosten (Van Brunt) and Jacob Hellakars. Adriaen Hegeman, the schout or sheriff of the neighboring towns of Breuckelin, Amersfoort and Midwout, was also authorized to exercise jurisdiction in New Utrecht. The town was then annexed to the district known as "the five Dutch towns of Long Island," which included Gravesend.

At about this time, Governor-General Stuyvesant made an official entry into the village; hoisted the standard of the Prince of Orange on a high flag-staff, erected in the centre of the settlement; and then went to the house of Rutgers Joosten Van Brunt, who gave a public entertainment; the first public banquet recorded in the annals of New Utrecht.

Thus the town began its life with the principle of self-government, which the Dutch had brought with them from the Fatherland, and transplanted into the New World without ostentation and without the shadow of a boast that they were the founders of liberty on the American continent.

Of the magistrates, Jan Tomassen was appointed Sergeant, and received from De Sille the gift of a halbert as the badge of his office. The same donor also presented the inhabitants with ten muskets and sufficient ammunition to protect them from the Indians.

* See page 169.



RESIDENCE OF NICASIVS DE SILLÉ, NEW UTRECHT, L. I., 1657.—DEMOLISHED IN 1850.

For two years, thereafter, the pioneers of New Utrecht continued diligently to clear their forests and plant their crops. Secure in their position from the few marauding Indians around them, they pursued the arts of peace until the quiet state of the village was suddenly, and without warning, broken by the warlike arrival, before the gates of the palisades, on January 12, 1663, of the notorious renegade and adventurer, John Scott, and his motley followers.

Capt. Scott's Raid upon the Town.—This was no Indian raid, for the seventy horsemen and sixty infantry were clothed in civilized array. They had come in search of conquest from the eastern end of Long Island, and belonged to some of the English colonies there. There was no war then between England and Holland; but this Scott had got hold of one of the numerous grants of Long Island in which the English had asserted rhetorical claims to undiscovered lands; and, filled with the high-sounding words of his grant, had proclaimed himself President of the English towns of Long Island. With noise and bluster, Scott and his troop clattered through the peaceful Dutch towns of Long Island; threatened the astonished inhabitants; and, on the heights of Brook-

lyn, with the deep waters of the East river protecting him for the time from attack from the fort, shouted his empty defiance at the soldiers of Stuyvesant, and at the Governor himself in the distant Stadt Huys.

Into quiet New Utrecht this Puritan guerilla-band came, with all the pomp and circumstance of war, and proclaimed King Charles of England sovereign of all America, from Virginia to Boston. Into the unguarded block-house of the town, serenely resting in a time of peace, the braggart entered and boldly upset the cannon. Then, replacing one in a port-hole, which the guerrillas called "The King's Port," they fired a salute in honor of their easy victory. Jacob Hellaeckers, then a magistrate of New Utrecht, was insulted by Scott and ordered to swear allegiance to the King. This the sturdy descendant of the heroes who had fought for the rights of men in the Fatherland, refused to do. Then, with dire threats and defiant shouts, and the drawing of a sword upon the sick wife of Rutgert Joosten Van Brunt, with intimations that they would run her through with it (and they actually did pursue her, until stopped by the crowd that collected), the Puritan warriors sheathed their ignoble swords and retired to

the eastern end of Long Island as soon as they heard of the movement of Stuyvesant's soldiers.

The details of this extraordinary attack were described under oath before a magistrate by the following people of New Utrecht: Arien Willems, Harmen Coerten, Treyntie Claes (wife of Rutgert Joosten Van Brunt), Jan Cleef, Christiaan Antonis, Jan Van Deventer, Jacob Hellakers, Teunis Idens, Baltasar de Voos, and Francois de Bruyne.

A letter of protest was, thereafter, directed to Scott and the English by Governor Stuyvesant, and Nicasius de Sille and commissioners were sent to interview the English. Scott was seen and interrogated as to his threats and raids. His reply was to flaunt in their faces an unsigned document which he claimed gave him title, and proved the right of the English to all Long Island, and to the New Netherlands. These bombastic speeches made but little impression upon the Dutch commissioners, who broke up the interview with the simple statement that their governments in Europe would have to settle the matter.

Thereafter, New Utrecht devoted itself anew to the gathering of the crops and the improvement of its lands. The schepens (magistrates) of the town elected at this time were Baltasar de Vos and Francis de Bruyn.

A Change of Masters.—After the vainglorious proclamations and salutes of the Puritan raiders had died away, the little town of New Utrecht had only a few months of that quiet which furnishes no food for romantic history. On December 8th, 1664, there appeared in Nyack Bay, between New Utrecht and Coney Island, a fleet of vessels bearing the flag of England. There was still peace between England and Holland, to be sure; but the cannon of a squadron were more potent than the muskets of raiders; and, the fleet having nothing else on hand in the way of adventure more tempting, with the aid of the English of New England and of the eastern end of Long Island, accomplished successfully the piratical capture of the New Netherlands. This ignoble conquest was fitly crowned by the sale of some of the Dutch soldiers and patriots as slaves in Virginia.

New Utrecht was obliged to submit, with the other towns on Long Island, to this capture by the English, on account of the great preponderance of numbers and of arms on the side of the English; for the fleets of Holland, which but a few years before, in the war with England, had swept the English coasts and cleared the Thames to London, were all far away in the Fatherland in ignorance of English treachery. The English flag was now raised over New Utrecht, and a new Provincial English government was organized under Governor Nicolls. A few months after the capture, in the year 1665, the Governor summoned delegates from all the Dutch towns to a convention. The delegates from New Utrecht were *Jacques Corteljaeu*, or Cortel-you, and Yunker, or Squire, Fosse, or Baltasar de Voss.

A New Town Patent.—In the year 1666, the new English government, for the sake chiefly of obtaining additional fees and perquisites, declared that all the old patents which had been granted to the Long Island towns were invalid, and ordered new ones to be obtained. Accordingly, in the year 1666, New Utrecht received a new patent from the Duke of York, for which the much longed-for fees had to be paid by the villagers. In the year 1668, on August 15th, Governor Nicolls issued a new patent or charter to De Sille, which confirmed the town privileges of New Utrecht. It may be inferred that the English government, at this time, had considered the propriety of giving the town another name, probably on account of its rather difficult pronunciation by the English tongue; for, the charter recites, with gracious condescension, as though after a remonstrance or request by the inhabitants, that the town is *permitted* to retain its Dutch name. We shall, probably, never know how near the name of New Utrecht came to extinction; or, what a narrow escape the native city of Van Werckhoven had from being swallowed up in the New World by the name of New Kent or Dover, or some other English town.

A copy of the new laws of the English, called "The Duke of York's Laws" (for they were framed by him and his advisers), was sent to New Utrecht and the other Dutch towns. New Utrecht was graciously allowed to elect its own clerk. But a new tenure of the land was ordered to be obtained, by the inhabitants, from the Duke; and all of them were required to bring in and surrender their old grants and obtain the new patents. It was further decreed that, after March 1st, 1665, no purchase of lands from the Indians was to be valid, unless the Governor's leave was first obtained, and the Indian proprietor acknowledged the same before the Governor. At the same time, New Utrecht with the other Dutch towns of Long Island, was made into the district called "The West Riding of Yorkshire."

Another Change of Masters.—But the English dominion over the New Netherlands, so piratically obtained in a time of peace, did not continue long. In March, 1672, England and France declared war against the Republican States of Holland; and, on the morning of July 29th, 1673, after almost nine years of English rule, the people of New Utrecht awoke to behold another fleet in Nyack Bay. This time the ships bore the welcome standard of the Netherlands, unfurled in the war which the monarchs of England and France had declared against the republican states of the Fatherland. With joy, the flag of Holland was again raised on the flag-staff of the old block-house of New Utrecht. The chronicles of the time relate, with much sedateness, that the people welcomed their countrymen with great rejoicing; and the Dutch fleet in Nyack Bay was crowded with the sympathizing visitors who came in boats from New Utrecht.

New Utrecht was received back into the hands of

the people who had laid its foundations, and had occupied and improved its territory. On August 8th, 1673, the village formally acknowledged with great satisfaction, the old laws of the Fatherland. Governor Colve issued a new charter, and New Utrecht, and the other Dutch towns of Long Island, were formed into a new district, which is now known as the County of Kings. Francis de Bruyn, of New Utrecht, was appointed its Secretary.

On the 29th of August following, Captain Kuyff and Lieutenant De Hubert were commissioned to administer the oath of allegiance to the Dutch Government to the people of New Utrecht; and, on the same day, every man in the town took the oath with great alacrity. The number was forty-one.

On the nomination of New Utrecht, the Council of War selected as magistrates, Thomas Jansen, Jan Thomassen, Hendrik Mattysen and Jan van Deventer.

The End of the Dutch Regime.—But the war waged by England and France against Holland soon came to an end with the treaty of Westminster, entered into on February 19th, 1674. Evidently weary of war and diplomacy, the States-General surrendered their possessions in the New World, in lieu of other advantages in the Old. With bitter chagrin the settlers of the New Netherlands, destitute of arms, yielded to the formidable numbers of the English. Again, an English fleet anchored in Nyack bay before New Utrecht, on the 27th and 28th of August, 1674. It immediately attacked a sloop full of cattle, which was crossing to the Neversink in New Jersey, seized all the cargo, and then took possession of all the cattle left in New Utrecht, and laid an embargo on all the grain. The end of the Dutch dominion in the New Netherlands was celebrated that night by the feast of the English squadron on the beef obtained from New Utrecht farms; and the Dutch flag never again was unfurled from the old flag-staff. It was off the present Fort Hamilton that Col. Nicoll demanded of Stuyvesant the surrender of the New Netherlands.

The Dongan Patent.—In the year 1684 the New York Council directed the towns of Long Island once more to renew their patents. In the year 1686, New Utrecht obtained from Gov. Dongan another charter for the consideration of six bushels of good winter wheat per year, to be delivered in New York. This annual rent continued to be paid down to the close of the Revolution; when, in 1786, the supervisor paid the State Treasurer the sum of £13, 15s, in full for all arrears, and in commutation for all future rents.

Establishment of Boundaries between New Utrecht and Brooklyn.—On February 14th, 1702, the boundaries of the town of New Utrecht were fixed, and a famous "winter white oak tree" was marked as a point on the line between New Utrecht and Brooklyn. More than one hundred and forty years afterwards, in or about the year 1845, Teunis G. Bergen, then super-

visor of New Utrecht, and Martenus Bergen, then supervisor of the eighth ward of Brooklyn, placed a monument in the stump of this same white oak tree, to further mark the easterly angle of Brooklyn on the boundary line of New Utrecht.

Town-Grants, 1684.—Thereafter, the town of New Utrecht having been purchased at least three times from the savages, (without including the numerous private tenures of land,) and having been favored with six different patents or government grants, each covering about the same territory; and having passed through four changes of government, entered upon a comparatively quiet portion of its colonial history. This continued for about ninety years, until the dissatisfaction and discontent of all the American colonies with England broke out into the War of the Revolution.

Meanwhile, the town had continued to grow in population and increase in value. The area of arable land had been extended, and more buildings had been erected.

In common with the other colonists of America, the Dutch had introduced the slave-labor of Africans; and New Utrecht seems, early under the English rule, to have owned a few slaves.

In the year 1675, the dwelling-house of Cortelyou and the greater part of the village was burned. At this time the assessment-roll of the town gives a valuation of £2,852, 10s.

In the year 1679, two Hollanders visited New Utrecht, and, in the record of their travels, have preserved some interesting views of the domestic life of its people at that primitive time. The diary sets forth, with much quaintness and amusement, how their vessel, on entering the Narrows, was boarded by numerous Nyack Indians, with canoes full of fruit for sale; how they visited the wigwam of these Indians, near where Fort Hamilton now stands, and found seven or eight families of the tribe living in one hut and eating pounded maize or Indian corn; how they were hospitably received by the settlers in various plantations, where they sat down before the great fires in spacious chimney-places and feasted on peaches and melons, and other fruits strange or extraordinarily luscious to their Old World tastes.

The principal occupation of the people at this time seems to have been the cultivation of grain and tobacco, and the raising of cattle.

Increase of Population—Names of Inhabitants—1698.—In the year 1698, the population of the town had increased, from the twenty settlers of the year 1657, to the number of two hundred and fifty-nine (259), of whom forty-eight (48) were slaves.

The list of names of the people of the town in the year 1698 (about forty years after its settlement) includes very many of the ancestors of the inhabitants of the present day—names still familiar to the records of the town:

Pieter Cortelyou; Aert Van Pelt; Anthony Van Pelt; Cornelis Van Dyck; Abraham Williamsen; Direk Van Sutphen; William Jansen Van Barkeloo;

Wyllem Jansen Van Barkeloo. 1664.

Facsimile of the Signature of Wyllem Jansen Van Barkeloo.

Rut Joosten Van Brunt; Lawrens Jansen; Adriaen Lane; Jan Van Cleef; Barent Joosten; Gysbert Tysen; Hendrik Matthysen; Gerret Coerten; Gerret Cornelisen (Van Duyn); Harman Garretsen; Denys Teu-

Gerret Cornelissen Van Duyn. 1690.

Facsimile of the Signature of Gerret Cornelissen Van Duyn.

nissen; Cornelis Van Brunt; Joos De Baun; Cryn Jansen; Matthys Smack; Pieter Van Deventer, and others.

Militia.—About 1698 the militia of the town was organized with the following officers; Captain, John Van Dyke; Lieutenant, Joost Van Brunt; Ensign, Matys Smake.

In the year 1738 the population of the town was two hundred and eighty-two, of whom one hundred and nineteen were African slaves. The names of the inhabitants during this year included the following: Van Brunt, Berry, Van Pelt, Cortelyou, Denyse, Barkeloo, Stillwell, Van Dyck, Suydam, Ditmas, and Vanderveer.

About this time a regular ferry was established from Yellow Hook (near what is now called Bay Ridge), across the Narrows to Staten Island. In 1753 the ferry was kept by John Lane.

In 1749 the seines of Justice Cortelyou, at the Narrows, caught 9,000 shad.

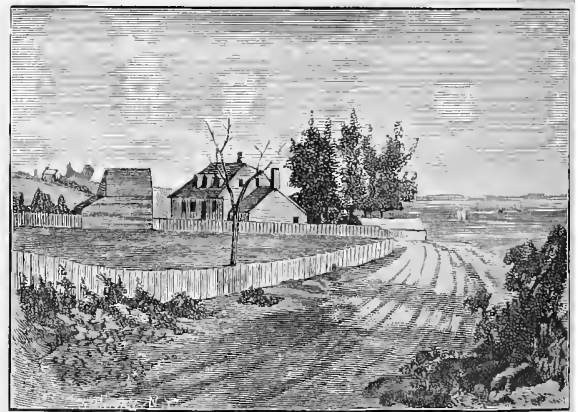
On November 26, 1759, a large bear, in attempting to swim across the bay to New Utrecht from Red Hook, was shot by Sebring of Brooklyn.

Slaves.—In the year 1755 there were sixty-seven (67) slaves in New Utrecht, which were owned by the following persons, who were then the wealthiest people of the town: Petrus Van Pelt; Jacques Cortelyou, Jr.; Denyse Denyse; Saartje Barkeloo; Caspar Cropsey; Gerrit Kouwenhoven; William Van Nuyse; William Van Nuyse, Jr.; Rutgert Van Brunt, Jr.; Andries Emmans; Joris Lot; Evert Suydam; Jacobus Van Nuys; Hendrick Johnsen; Haert Van Voerhees; Thomas Van Dyck; John Laan; Gerret Van Duyn; John Johnson; Rutgert Van Brunt; Roelof Van Brunt; Wilhelmus Van Brunt; Thomas Pollock; Neeltje Pietersen; Rebecca Emmans; Captain Petrus Van Pelt.

New Utrecht's Share in the Revolutionary War.—In the year 1776, at the outbreak of the War of the Revolution, New Utrecht was early occupied by

the British troops, who remained in possession, from the Battle of Long Island to the evacuation of New York, —a period of seven years. The troops were quartered on the inhabitants all this time; and those who joined the American ranks from New Utrecht, were forced to make night-journeys across the Bay or the Narrows, in fishing-boats, to Staten Island and New Jersey. The traditions of personal conflicts and quarrels between the villagers and the troops; and of attacks by boats at night are numerous and amusing. But, through everything, the British kept a firm hand on the granaries, cattle and crops of the village. The bluff at Fort Hamilton, called Denyse's Ferry Landing, was occupied during the time of

the Revolution by the houses of Denyse Denyse, Abram Bennett and Simon Cortelyou. Here, in August, 1776, a party of Americans established a battery of two or three twelve-pounders; and, without waiting for an attack, opened fire on the frigate *Asia*,



DENYSE'S FERRY, FORT HAMILTON, L. I.*

which headed the fleet of Lord Howe, as it arrived to subdue the rebellion. The guns of the fleet rapidly returned the compliment, and one twenty-four pound shot lodged in the wall of Mr. Bennett's house, and three in the house of Denyse, the kitchen narrowly escaping destruction. On August 22d, 1776, 16,000 British and Hessian troops effected a landing in face of the fire of the little battery. Thus, the first resistance made to the British arms in the Middle States of America, was on the soil of New Utrecht, near where the present Fort Hamilton stands.

After the Close of the Revolutionary Struggle the town began a new era of prosperity and

* Copied from engraving in *Lossing's Field-Book of the Revolution*, II, 598. The view is from the road on the high shore, a little below Fort Hamilton, looking southeast; the house in the centre belonged to Simon Cortelyou, a tory, during the Revolution. Gravesend Bay is seen beyond the house and the distant land is Coney Island B

growth. As the new laws and the new spirit became prevalent, the Dutch language began to lose its prominence, until it remained only as a historic treasure reverently guarded in every home, and used constantly as a means of secrecy, or as a bond of intimacy, under the sway of the more opulent English tongue.

Record of the War of the Civil Rebellion.—

In the time of the Civil War the town furnished many soldiers to aid in subduing the rebellion of the Southern States. Encampments of volunteers preparing for the campaign were frequently had on, and near, the Bluffs at Fort Hamilton, in addition to the regular troops who marched from that place to the war. Fort Lafayette, (formerly called Fort Diamond), situated on the reef in the Narrows, nearly opposite Fort Hamilton, became famous in the Civil War, as the prison of many a Northern man who actively sympathized with the South.

Statistics of Population, Valuations, etc.—

Gradually, in the course of later years, other villages have grown within the limits of the town. In these, greater changes have taken place in recent times, than in the original village of New Utrecht, which has firmly resisted great modern innovations, and has preserved to a large degree the same general outline for some generations. The four other villages that have thus sprung up within the limits of the present town are, Bath, Bay Ridge, Fort Hamilton, and part of Unionville.

The growth of the town in *population* for many years past is shown by the following table :

1647, 20 settlers ; 1673, 41 males took the oath of allegiance to the Dutch Government ; 1698, 211 and 48 slaves ; 1738, 282 ; 1810, 907 ; 1820, 1,009 ; 1840, 1,283 ; 1845, 1,863 ; 1850, 2,129 ; 1855, 2,730 ; 1860, 2,781 ; 1865, 3,394 ; 1870, 3,296 ; 1875, 3,843 ; 1880, 4,742.

The *valuation* of the town from £2,852. 10s. in 1675, grew to \$304,954 in 1823, and \$1,108,350 in 1870. In 1870 the town produced a value of \$214,500.

Of *improved land* the town has now nearly 1,800 acres; and the products of its crops, although they have gradually changed in kind, from the grain, tobacco and cattle raising of earlier days, to the market-gardening that furnishes the best vegetables for the New York market of to-day, are still of far more value than any of the other towns of Kings County.

The number of citizens in the town who voted for President or Governor within the last three years is as follows : In 1880, *Republican*, 993, *Democratic*, 1,324; in 1881, *Republican*, 178, *Democratic*, 402 ; in 1882, *Republican*, 202, *Democratic*, 595.

Supervisors, 1713-1797.—The following is the list of the Supervisors of the town since the year 1713 : In 1714, Joost Van Brunt ; from 1715 to 1720, Andreas Emans ; in 1721, Peter Cortelyou ; from 1722 to 1744, twenty-two successive years, Joost Van Brunt ; from 1744 to 1757, thirteen successive years, Rutgert Van

Brunt ; from 1758 to 1766, Albert Van Brunt ; in 1767, Roelof Van Brunt ; from 1768 to 1777, Albert Van Brunt.

From this year, down to the year 1782, owing to the occupation of the town by the British troops, it seems that a Supervisor was not elected.

From 1782 to 1785, Isaac Cortelyou ; from 1786 to 1788, Jacques Barkeloo ; from 1789 to 1794, Isaac Cortelyou ; in 1795, '96, and '97, Adrian Hegeman.

Constables.—The first constable after the English conquest, on the records, was Hendrick Matysen Smack, in 1669.

Overseers.—The first overseer, of which any account is preserved, was Luykes Mayerse, in 1672.

Town Clerks, Etc.—The office of *town clerk* was instituted by Governor Andross on the 3d of May, 1679. The first person recorded to have held the office was Joost de Baene, in 1686.

Justice of the Peace.—The first was Jacques Cortelyou in 1675. The first *assessors* on the records are Myndert Korten and Jan Hansen (Van Nostrand) in 1687. The first *member of the State assembly* from the town was Myndert Korten, in 1698. The first *judge of the Court of Common Pleas* of the county was Cornelis Van Brunt, of New Utrecht, in 1716 ; and Peter Cortelyou assistant judge in 1702. The first *commissioners of highways* on the records are Aert Van Pelt and Andries Emmans, in 1721. In 1775, among the *deputies* sent from Kings County to the *Provincial Congress of New York* to resist the British oppression, was Denyse Denyse, of New Utrecht.

Ecclesiastical History.—In the early days of the settlement the people worshipped with the congregation of the Reformed Dutch Churches in Flatbush, Flatlands and Brooklyn. Previous to 1677, during the pastorate of the Rev. Johannes T. Polhemus, religious services were held in a school-house, or in a private building.

First Church—In the year 1677, the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of New Utrecht was organized, the dedicatory services being conducted by the Rev. Casparus Van Zuren. The names of the first *elders* were : Jan Guysbertz and Myndert Korten ; the first *deacons* were Arian Willemsen (Bennett) and Jan Hansen (Van Nostrand). More than 26 families formed the congregation, and 27 persons were communicants at the beginning of the church organization. The following is the list of the original members : Jan Hansen (Van Nostrand) and wife ; Myndert Korten and wife ; Daniel Vorveelen and wife ; Jan Gysbertz ; Willemkje ; Neeltje ; Adrian Willemsen Bennett and wife ; Jan Pietersen Van Deventer and wife ; Nyntie Van Dyck ; Gysbert Tysz Van Pelt and wife ; Adriaantje ; Joost Du Wien and wife ; Pieter Veritie ; Jean du Pre ; Nicholas du Pre ; Lourens Jansen and wife ; the mother of Joost du Wien ; Annetje Bocquet ; Magdalena Van Pelt.

The first church edifice was erected in the year 1700. It was built of stone, octagonal in shape, with side walls of boulders, and a steep shingly roof surmounted with a belfry over the center; upon the belfry was an iron cross, surmounted by a large cock or rooster.

The bell, which was hung in the belfry then, is probably the same one which still summons the worshippers of to-day to their devotions.

Of pyramidal shape in the interior, with wooden ceiling and wainscoting; with chairs instead of the more uncomfortable pews of recent times; and with a high pulpit shaped like a tumbler and capped by a sounding-board, with a gilt dove with the olive-branch on the top, this ancient building must indeed have been a quaintly picturesque place in which to worship God.

During the revolutionary war the church edifice was used as a hospital and also as a riding-school by the British officers; as though in contempt, not only for rebels, but also for those who could worship God in any other than the English fashion.

The site of this building was in the old graveyard at the westerly end of the village. After standing for one hundred and twenty-eight years, it was torn down in the year 1828; and, in the year 1829, the present church edifice was erected.

Pastors of the Church.—The list of pastors of the church is as follows:

1667-'85, the Rev. Casparus Van Zuren; 1685-'95, the Rev. Rudolphus Varick; 1686-1702, the Rev. Wilhelmus Lupardus; 1705-'43, the Rev. Bernardus Freeman; 1714-'41, the Rev. Johannes Arondens; 1746-'84, the Rev. Ulpianus Van Sinderin; 1755-'56, the Rev. Anthonius Curtenius; 1757-'84, the Rev. Johannes C. Rubel; 1784-1824, the Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker; 1787-1818, the Rev. Petrus Lowe. In the year 1792 Dominie Lowe conducted the services in the English language for the first time. 1809-'34, the Rev. John Beattie, D.D.; 1834-'66, the Rev. Robert Ormiston Currie, D.D.; 1867-'80, the Rev. David S. Sutphen; 1880, the Rev. Alfred Brush, the present pastor.

Sabbath Schools.—In 1825 John Carpenter, M.D., organized the first Sabbath-School in the village of Fort Hamilton, and was the founder of the Sabbath-schools of New Utrecht.

On October 18, 1877, the church celebrated its two hundredth anniversary with appropriate exercises and exhibition of ancient relics. The Rev. D. S. Sutphen and the late Hon. Teunis G. Bergen delivered the addresses of the day, and read the Ten Commandments in Dutch.

The consistory of the church at that time were: Adrian Bergen, John L. Van Pelt, J. Remsen Bennett, Peter Kowenhoven, *elders*; Peter A. Hegeman, Teunis Schenck, William H. Wright, Harmon W. Cropsey, *deacons*.

The M. E. Church of New Utrecht.—The next church organized in the town of New Utrecht was the

Methodist Church. The people of that religious denomination held religious services in Bay Ridge, with the aid of members of Methodist churches in Brooklyn, for some time before any church edifice was erected. The first church building was erected by the Methodists in 1831, on Conover's Lane, not far from the extension of the line of Fifth avenue, upon land donated for the purpose by Mr. John Benham. This building in June, 1848, was destroyed by fire caused by boys. Its value was about \$1,500. The second church building was erected about the same year of the destruction of the former one, on what is now called Stewart avenue, between Ovington avenue and Bennett's lane. Its value was about \$1,200; on land given, rent free, by Mr. Simon Denyse. A third Methodist church was built in Bay Ridge, in the year 1875, on the corner of Ovington and Fourth avenues, on land formerly belonging to the Ovington estate and bought of Mr. Parsons. The name of the present church is "*Grace M. E. Church*;" and the size of the building is 32 feet by 50 feet long, exclusive of recess behind the pulpit. The value of the church and land is about \$8,500. A handsome parsonage stands on a lot on Ovington avenue, adjoining the church, and is valued, with the lot, at \$6,000.

The present trustees of the church are Jacob J. Moore, Henry Duryea, and Adrian B. Denyse. The present membership is 40; the number of scholars in the Sunday-school is about 40, and the present superintendent is Adrian B. Denyse. The present efficient and eloquent pastor of the church is the Rev. H. C. Glover.

The following is the list of **PASTORS** of this church and that of *Unionville*:

1843-'44, Rev. Lorenzo D. Nickerson; 1845, Rev. — Saulsbury; 1846-'47, Rev. Edward O. Bates; 1848-'49, Rev. James D. Bouton; 1850, Rev. James McBride; 1851-'52, Rev. Benjamin Redford; 1853-'54, Rev. Edward H. Fanning; 1855-'56, Rev. John F. Booth; 1857-'58, Rev. Richard Walse; 1860-'61, Rev. Ezra Miner; 1862-'63, Rev. Robert R. Roberts; 1864-'65, Rev. Henry C. Glover; 1866-'67, Rev. William H. Russell; 1868-'69, Rev. L. D. Nickerson; 1870-'72, Rev. Nicholas Orchard; 1873-'75, Rev. Samuel A. Seaman; 1876-'78, Rev. Alex. McAlister; 1879-'81 Rev. H. C. Glover.

The Methodist Church at Unionville, part of whose congregation are within the town of New Utrecht, was built in the year 1844, with the title "*Fisherman's Church*." It was dedicated by the Rev. Henry Chace, for many years the eloquent pastor of the Mariner's church, in Roosevelt street, New York city. The present membership of the church is 40; scholars in Sunday-School, 75. The list of pastors is the same as that of the Methodist church at Bay Ridge. The present trustees are: Stephen Mans, Garrett Wyckoff, Oscar D. Way, Cornelius Cosine and Edmund Morris.

St. John's Episcopal Church.—In the year 1834, a little Episcopal Church was organized at Fort Hamilton and called *St. John's Episcopal Church*. It was founded by the garrison at Fort Hamilton and some Episcopal families of the neighborhood. The heirs of the Denyse farm, the Rev. Hugh Smith, the Rev. Jas. P. Clark, Dr. John Carpenter, and Miss Smith, gave the land. The Rev. Jas. Dixon Carder was the first rector in 1834; he was succeeded by the Rev. Sylvanus Nash in 1845, after whom came the Rev. Michael Schofield, in 1847; the Rev. Joseph Ransom in 1861; the Rev. W. H. D. L. Grannis in 1867; and the Rev. Henry E. Hovey in 1869. The church was then without a regular rector for five years, until the Rev. R. B. Snowden was appointed in 1874, and is the rector at the present time.

This is the Garrison Church, and is also attended by many Episcopal families of the neighborhood. In this little brown wooden building many distinguished officers of the army have worshipped; such as the late General Robert E. Lee, who, then a Captain, was a vestryman in 1842. Gen. Stonewall Jackson was baptized there, after the Mexican War; and Admiral Clitz, then a Captain in the Navy, was a vestryman in 1860.

The Protestant Episcopal Church of Bay Ridge, dedicated as *Christ Church*, was started by the late Mr. J. A. Perry, of Bay Ridge, in the year 1852. Associated with him in the movement were Messrs. Theodore Sedgwick, W. C. Langley, Daniel Richards, Charles Prince and Henry C. Murphy. The church edifice was completed and the first service held in it on Trinity Sunday, May 22nd, 1853, according to the forms of the Protestant Episcopal Church, the sermon being preached by the Rev. Henry B. Bartow. The first *Church Wardens* were Messrs. Joseph A. Perry and John B. Kitching; *Vestrymen*, Messrs. W. C. Langley, Theodore Sedgwick, Daniel C. Winslow, Benj. C. Townsend, Joseph Dunderdale, Daniel Richards, James Weir and George Fletcher. The church building was originally built with the understanding that, if the Rev. Dr. Stone would not accept the rectorship, it should be dedicated to the forms of worship of any Christian church which a majority of the subscribers should determine. After the first service, a consultation was held among the members of the congregation, and it was decided that the edifice should be used as a Protestant Episcopal Church, and that the Rev. Mr. Bartow should be called to be the rector. He accepted the call and remained in charge from Sept. 8, 1853 to June 28, 1854, when he resigned. The list of **RECTORS** of the church is as follows:

The Rev. Theodore Irving, L.L.D., to February 9th, 1857; the Rev. John P. Hubbard from April 16th, 1857, to June 20th, 1859; the Rev. Uriah B. Tracy from December 20th, 1859, to November 12th, 1864. The Rev. John A. Aspinwall entered upon his duties as

rector on the first Sunday of December, 1864, and has now been for more than eighteen years in charge of the parish.

The names of the *Wardens* elected on Easter, 1881, were Messrs. J. A. Perry, (since deceased), Wm. H. Thomas; *Vestrymen*, Messrs. B. C. Townsend, Jas. Weir, Edward Kent, George Self, S. W. Thomas, W. A. Perry, S. M. B. Hopkins, F. W. Perry.

The old church building was doubled in size in 1869; and, in 1877 a large building was erected by the side of the church for a Sunday-school. The Rectory was destroyed by fire July 5th, 1873, but was rebuilt the same year, and the land purchased on which the old building stood. The cost of the church building all complete was \$20,630; the cost of Rectory and land was \$16,000; the cost of Sunday-school building, \$7,000. The number of the congregation is 320, of whom 145 are communicants. In the Sunday-school are 200 children. The names of the recent superintendents are Mr. J. A. Perry, Rev. U. T. Tracy, Mr. George Self, Mr. H. G. Hadden, Rev. J. A. Aspinwall, Mr. F. W. Perry.

On August 26th, 1881, the parish met with the greatest loss it ever sustained, by the death of Mr. JOSEPH A. PERRY, one of the founders of the church, who in the words of his pastor was "a Christian of the highest type, a man of the most exalted and lively character, and from the first even to the very last a devoted friend and supporter of the church and parish." For years Mr. Perry was the Comptroller of Greenwood Cemetery, and his charming residence on Bay Ridge Avenue was an ornament to the town of New Utrecht.

The Colored Church in Unionville, attended by many of the colored residents of the town, and called *The African Zion Methodist Episcopal Church*, erected its edifice in 1869.

The Roman Catholic Church, in the village of Fort Hamilton, has a large congregation and a substantial church edifice.

In addition to the church buildings already mentioned, several for the use of Sunday-schools have been erected and exercises are held at Fort Hamilton and Edgewood in Conover's Lane, under the auspices of the Reformed Church. The building used by the Sunday-school at Edgewood is a tasteful structure and an ornament to the vicinity.

Educational.—The schools of the town were originally under the auspices of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church; and, until the War of the Revolution, instruction was given in the Dutch language as well as in English. The Dutch always carried the schoolmaster with them, and he frequently in the olden time filled the office of clerk and bell-ringer to the congregation, read the commandments, led the singing, and dug the graves. At the present time the public schools of the town belong to the commissioner's district of the county towns of Kings county, of which

C. Warren Hamilton, Esq., is commissioner. The public schools of the town at the present time are the following: Public School No. 1, William H. Hoag, *Principal*; Public School No. 2, E. V. Cooke, *Principal*; Public School No. 3, A. Rockfellow, *Principal*; Public School No. 4, James T. Simpson, *Principal*.

In the past few years numerous improvements have been made in the school-houses. A new and commodious structure has been erected for School No. 4; and District No. 2 is to have a model building at a cost of \$10,000.

The Old Village Graveyard.—The old graveyard of the village, near where the first church edifice stood, still preserves the old lines and shows the grassy mounds over the graves of the early dead of pioneer times, as well as over the remains of those who died but a short time ago. The graceful monument erected to the memory of Drs. Du Bois and Crane commemorates deeds of noble sacrifice. In the year 1856, some shipping in the Quarantine, then opposite Staten Island, communicated the fatal seeds of yellow fever to the inhabitants of Bay Ridge and Fort Hamilton. Family after family was broken up or sadly ruined by the terrible scourge. In the endeavor to stay the ravages of the disease and help the afflicted, these two physicians bravely did their utmost until they, too, fell victims to the pest and were interred in the ancient church-yard. Since then, the quarantine hospitals have been established lower down in the Bay, near Sandy Hook; and nothing has occurred to detract from the salubrity of the air of New Utrecht throughout its whole area.

Modern Public Buildings.—Within recent years, a new building has been erected by the Young Men's Christian Association in the village. More recently a new *Town-Hall* has been built on 86th Street, near where it crosses the old highway, from the shore of The Narrows to the village. This new structure, with its pretentious form, its double towers visible from the waters of the Bay, its spacious meeting-room and court-room, and its numerous cells for prisoners in the basement, is a monument of modern political power, and an evidence that the old conservative feeling of the people has been imbued at times with another spirit. Near the Fort, on the Shore Road, rise the walls and turrets of the *Kings County Inebriate Asylum*, an imposing proof of the humane sentiment in modern government.

Hotels, Roads and Drives.—No portion of the country, within easy reach of the metropolis, has a situation more favorable as a retreat in summer from the enervating heats and offensive odors of the city, than the stretch of shore along this town, from Bay Ridge to Gravesend. For many years, the *Hamilton House* at Fort Hamilton, under the management of the late Hawley D. Clapp, was a well-known resort and much frequented by summer visitors, until its destruction by fire a few years ago.

The *Bath Hotel*, near the beach at Bath, has long been well and favorably known as a first-class house; and, surrounded by groves and summer cottages, has formed one of the breathing-places of New York. Within a few years the name of the hotel has been changed to that of *The Avon Beach Hotel*, for what reason history knoweth not.

Church's Hotel, near the Fort, *Pope's Hotel*, at Bay Ridge, *Bennett's*, near the Bay Ridge wharf, *Cropsey's*, in New Utrecht village, are among the old land-marks of the town; and *Keegan's* and *Slater's* are well known to amateur fishermen.

Before the Revolution the highway of travel from New York was through Brooklyn to Fort Hamilton, and across the Narrows to Staten Island. Thereafter, arose the old Highway from the village of New Utrecht, by the Floss-pond, to the Narrows. The Shore Road, from Bay Ridge, along the bluffs, overlooking the Bay, to Fort Hamilton, is one of the most picturesque roads in the vicinity of New York. It winds with the graceful lines of the shore, past old homesteads and modern residences, along vine-covered fences and cedar woods, at a height varying from twenty to seventy feet above the water. It may, with truth, be said, that the views from this drive are unsurpassed by those seen from any other avenue in the world. The tall spars of the ships of every clime, from the great East Indiaman to the trim coasting-schooner, the huge fabrics of excursion and river steamboats, the colossal hulls of ocean steamers, the stern sides of men-of-war, and the bright sails of pleasure-yachts and river-craft of every kind, as they move to and fro in the Bay and through the Narrows, form a picture of ever changing interest against the dark back-ground of the hills of New Jersey and of Staten Island, with the sombre ramparts of Fort Wadsworth.

On this road stand the old homes of the late Jacques Van Brunt, the late John I. Bennett, the late Remsen Bennett, the old Barkeloo family, the Ross estate, the late Chandler White, and the late Hon. Tenuis G. Bergen, whose portrait and biography will be found in the following pages.

On this same picturesque road are, also, the residences of Holmes Van Brunt, Judge Charles Van Brunt, of the New York Common Pleas Court, Isaac E. Bergen, Richard Bennett, Wm. Gelston, Thomas T. Church, the late Hawley D. Clapp, Van Brunt Bergen, Garret T. Bergen, J. Martin Bennett, John Bennett, Wm. and Adolphus Bennett, Winant Bennett, Daniel Van Brunt and the late Ruleff Van Brunt, Major Berrier, John McKay, J. Cornell White, and others.

On the ridge of the bay, from the boundary line of Brooklyn to the beginning of the Shore Road, are the residences of Henry A. Kent, Sedgwick, Wm. C. Langley, the late Michael Bergen; and, on Owl's Head, the country residence of the late Hon. Henry C. Murphy,

well known in the history of Kings County, but whose name and fame more properly belong to the annals of the City of Brooklyn. This is now the home of Mr. E. C. Bliss.

On and near Bay Ridge avenue, stand the ornate residences of the late Joseph A. Perry and Edward Kent.

On Second avenue are situated the *Bay Ridge Athenæum Building* and the beautiful and tasteful homes of B. C. Townsend, Wm. H. Thomas, that of the late Wm. Kitching, commanding a view of the Bay; and, near by, the tower of the residence of Mr. Bullock.

Not far from the Episcopal Church are the residences of Henry Hannah, Herman S. Bergen, Mr. Wilde, the floral gardens of James Weir and the residence of Mr. George T. Hope, of the Continental Life Insurance Company of New York and the Bennett and Denyse homesteads.

Along the line of the shore, beyond the Fort and towards Coney Island, are found the residences of Col. Wm. Cropsey; the summer house of the late dramatic actor, Barney Williams; and the hospitable summer residences, beyond Bath, of Mr. Robert Speir, Jr., of Brooklyn, and his distinguished sons, the well known physicians of Brooklyn, Drs. S. Fleet Speir and Robert Speir, as also the residences of Mr. Robert Benson and Mr. Archibald Young.

In New Utrecht village and on the highways leading thereto, in Church Lane and Conover's Lane, are the residences of those who still bear the names of the early settlers of the town, the Hegemans, Van Pelts, Emmanses, Conovers, Monforts, Suydams, Wyckoffs, Larzalaers, Kouwenhovens, Van Brunts, Duryeas, Bennetts, Denyses, Williamsons, Snedekers, Morrisises, Bogerts, Moores, Cropseys, Lots, Carpenters, Wrights, Lakes, and others—names which still maintain the reputation of those who founded the community and have continued the sturdiest of human virtues from generation to generation.

Railroads.—The old Plank Road, from Bath, through the village, to Greenwood and Brooklyn, was surrendered to the first railroad in New Utrecht, under the management of C. Godfrey Gunther, ex-mayor of New York City; and the railroad was continued, through Unionville, to Coney Island. Very recently, two new railroads have been established from Bay Ridge, on the estate of the late Michael Bergen, to Coney Island, viz., the *New York and Manhattan Beach R. R. Co.*, and the *N. Y. and Sea Beach R. R. Co.* The *Brooklyn City R. R. Co.*, within the last few years, exchanged its horses for locomotive engines on Third avenue to Fort Hamilton. By these roads many thousands of people are daily conveyed, through the cultivated fields and gardens of New Utrecht, to the cool shores of the Bay in the summer season; and the limits of the town are being brought into closer contact with the great commercial centre of the New World.

Through the force of politics many new roads have been ruthlessly opened as avenues, with mathematical accuracy, across the beautiful old lanes and highways of the town; and lots for residences have been staked out of late on many an ancient farm. Two or three new factories have been established, and shops and stores erected.

Manufactories.—The *Car Works of Michael Feigel*, in the village, and the *Eames Hat Manufactory*, at Bay Ridge, are among the most prominent of recent industries. Very lately a large corporation has purchased a part of the water-front, at Bay Ridge, of the estate of the late Michael Bergen, with the intention of building and fitting out vessels on an extensive scale.

The changeful and progressive spirit of the time is showing its influence more and more on the ancient Nyack Tract which Van Werckhoven purchased of the Indians. The homes of the early Dutch colonists have nearly all fallen in decay; the woods which the settlers cleared, in fear of the weapons of the Nyack and Canarsie savages, have, for the most part, disappeared; the plantations of grain and tobacco, and the pasture-fields for cattle, have given way to the highly-cultivated gardens which supply the freshest vegetables of the New York market; the quaint roofs and gables of the substantial colonial homesteads are being crowded out by the lighter and more ornamented dwellings of to-day; one by one the old land-marks are fading away, and step by step the great city is encroaching upon the old plantation of Van Werckhoven. Before many years shall have elapsed the lines of every farm will be buried beneath the wave of suburban progress.

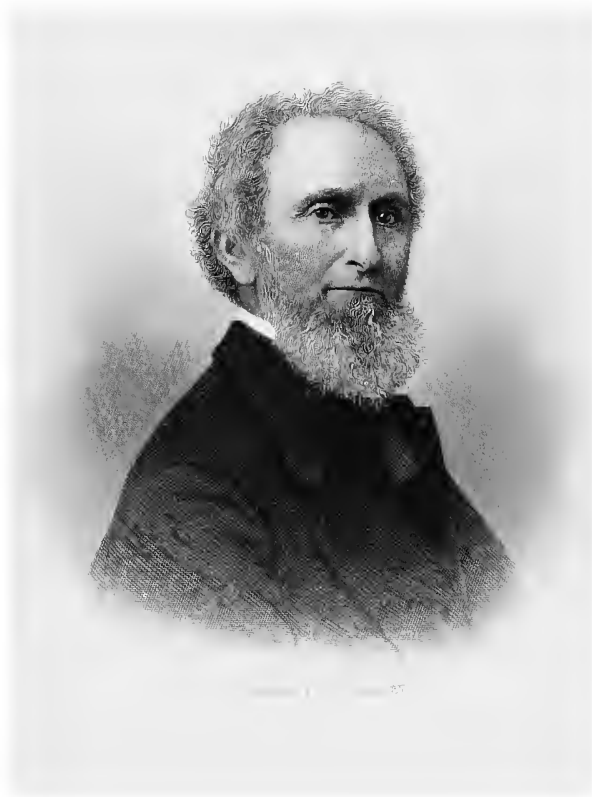
Whether these changes will prove more pleasant and beneficial than the old ways, it is not for this sketch of New Utrecht to predict; but it is certain that it will be long before any new American spirit will produce upon this soil any nobler human virtues than those which the founders of the settlement brought with them and transmitted to their families for generations, and which still preserve in the New World the name and fame of the historic UTRECHT, on the Rhine, in Holland.

Hon. Teunis G. Bergen, farmer, statesman and antiquary, was born in the town of New Utrecht, on the 6th of October, 1806. He was the eldest child of Garret Bergen and Jane Wyckoff, his wife. He clearly traced his ancestry to Hans Hansen Bergen, a native of Bergen, in Norway, who came over to the New Netherlands with Wouter Van Twiller, the second director of the colony. Bergen's wife (whom he married in 1639) was Sarah, the daughter of the Walloon emigrant, Jane Joris Rapelje, who came to this country in the ship *Unity*, in 1623, and first settled at Al-

bany; afterwards removing to New Amsterdam, and thence (1635) to the Waleboght on Long Island. Sarah was herself a historic character, being the first white female child born within the limits of the present State of New York—at Albany. Thus, from a stock not originally of the Netherland blood, but which became afterwards thoroughly incorporated with the first Dutch settlers of this county, sprang this most distinguished Dutch scholar. His early youth was mainly spent between work upon his father's farm at Gowanus, and at the common school of the district. As youth merged into manhood, he applied himself to the study and practice of surveying, in which he soon became proficient. To the main duties of an active life he added those of a farmer; and, not forgetting those he owed to the community in which he resided, he faithfully discharged such as were imposed upon him by the choice of his fellow-citizens, as soldier, civilian and statesman. He held the position of Ensign, Captain, Adjutant, Lieut.-Colonel in the militia; and, finally, that of Colonel of the 241st Regiment, N. Y. S. N. G. He was Supervisor of the town of New Utrecht for twenty-three years in succession (April, 1836, to April, 1859); and from 1842 to 1846 was Chairman of the Board. He was a member of the Constitutional State Conventions in 1846, 1867 and 1868, and was repeatedly a member of the Democratic State Conventions. He was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention, held at Charleston, S. C., in 1860, and vigorously opposed the resolutions of that body which caused the breach between the Northern and Southern Democratic party. The last and most notable public office which he held by the choice of his fellow-citizens was that of Representative in Congress from the Second Congressional District, in 1864, when he was elected by a majority of 4,800 over his opponent, the "Union" candidate. In that session of the House of Representatives his party was in the minority; but, true to his Dutch principles, he stood firm to his party to the completion of his term of service. The pages of this History of the County of Kings bear frequent witness to Mr. Bergen's many public services in behalf of the interests of the county and of its several towns, as well as of the city of Brooklyn. That he was so frequently called upon, in these public affairs, was a most striking tribute to his ability, industry and integrity.

On his retirement from public and professional duties, he devoted his leisure hours to those antiquarian and genealogical investigations which possessed, for him, so great a fascination. These investigations ran most naturally in the lines of Dutch (and Kings County Dutch) ancestry and history. In the earlier years of his life, spent among the hills and by the water-side at Gowanus, and at New Utrecht, he knew no language but the Dutch—not as spoken now-a-days, but with the idiom and pronunciation of two hundred years

ago—and corrupted, in a measure, by the gradual introduction of the English. By education, he soon became versed in the English language; but he never ceased to cultivate the language of his boyhood, which he lived to see almost eradicated, in this county, as a spoken language. It sometimes seemed to his friends as though he *thought* in Dutch, but *spoke* in English; and there was always a certain peculiar accent to his pronunciation, especially when a little excited, as if *both* tongues wrestled at his lips for precedence. By birth, and education and study he was admirably qualified to decipher the Dutch records, both public and private, which he frequently had occasion to consult. His pure character and great experience as a land-surveyor in the settling of town-boundaries and private estate-lines among the old Dutch families of the county, also, gave him access to many ancient documents and sources of information which would have been closed to any other person. So that, he early became an expert in all that related to the Dutch and their descendants, not only in the county, but upon Long Island and even in New Jersey. In the history of the Dutch families of Long Island he was not only (with the exception of RIKER) the first gleaner, but he was by far the most thorough, exhaustive and authoritative. His untiring and self-sacrificing researches into the almost obsolete records of the ancient Dutch churches of Long Island and New York have unearthed numerous and important materials for the use of modern historians; while his discoveries, in out-of-the-way places, of many of the detached birth, baptismal and marriage records, and the restoration of the same, have conferred inestimable benefits upon the genealogist and antiquary. His published writings were numerous and important. Scattered through the volumes of the NEW YORK GENEALOGICAL AND BIOGRAPHICAL RECORD will be found valuable papers on *Records of Births of the Society of Friends, Gravesend, L. I., commencing 1665*; the *Van Dyke Family*; *Marriage Records of Gravesend, commencing 1664*; a *List of Deaths in Capt. Grant's company in 1762*; the *Montfort Family*; *Pioneers of the Revolutionary War*; the *Martense Family*; *Contributions to the History of the First Settlers of Kings county*; *Memorials of Francays D'Bruynne*; the *Van Duyn Family*. Some of these formed portions of "*A Register of the Early Settlers and Freeholders of Kings county, N. Y., from its First Settlement by Europeans to 1700, with Biographical Notices and Family Genealogies*," which was published in 1881, a few weeks after his death. Before this, however, in 1866, he had issued "*The Bergen Family*," an octavo of 298 pages; in 1867, the history of his wife's ancestry, "*Genealogy of the Van Brunt Family*," in 80 octavo pages. But the crowning glory of his well-spent life, so far as family-history is concerned, was a second edition of his "*Bergen Family*," so improved and augmented as to embrace, by regular



James G. Bergen

descent and intermarriage, a large portion of the Dutch population of Southern New York and Eastern New Jersey; forming a handsome illustrated volume of 658 octavo pages. In 1878 appeared his "*Genealogy of the Lefferts Family*," 1675-1878, an octavo of 172 pages. In 1877, also, at the 200th anniversary celebration of the Reformed Dutch Church of New Utrecht, he delivered an "Address on the Annals of New Utrecht," of great historic value; and which was printed for private circulation by the consistory of the church. He left, also, in manuscript, "A History of New Utrecht," which antiquarians are hoping to see issued, in due time, by competent hands. He left, moreover, translations of several important manuscripts relating to Kings county matters.

Mr. Bergen was one of the founders of the Long Island Historical Society, and one of its officers up to the day of his death. He was, also, a member of the New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, his contributions to which have been already noted.

He was a man of simple habits and few wants. In the language of his intimate friend and neighbor, the late Hon. HENRY C. MURPHY, "he adhered always to plain, honest lines of activity; caring in no degree whatever for upstart distinctions; proud of the fact that he was a farmer, bearing upon his body the evidence that by the sweat of his brow and the labor of his hands, he earned the right to a comfortable footing in the world; his chief pride was that his neighbors had unqualified confidence in his integrity. He was a power in his rural district, because his neighbors could say of him with certainty, as Burns declared of Gavin Hamilton:

'What once he says he winna break it,
What's no his ain he winna take it.'

Because of this trust in him he came to be frequently called upon by them to do public service. In culture and interest in matters of history, he exhibited a disposition worthy of the warmest admiration. As before stated, he spoke the Dutch tongue with fluency, and delighted to dilate upon its beauties. As the President of the St. Nicholas Society of Nassau, he figured as a sort of literary and social St. Nicholas, indicating the Past and the Future, and imparting to the material struggles of every day a flavor of the pleasant but vanishing traditions of the Fatherland." Personally he was an industrious, staid and sober citizen—a thorough "Dutchman of the old school" in all things. He was a man of great method and scrupulous attention to business; and, with his patrimonial possessions, had acquired a considerable fortune, which he used prudently and most unostentatiously in the advancement of the great objects to which he devoted so much of his attention. He was a regular attendant upon the church of his ancestors, but liberal in his consideration of other men's religious belief. He died, at New Utrecht, of pneumonia, on April 24, 1881; cut down suddenly, like a sheaf of corn ripe in its season. Family, friends, neighbors and fellow-citizens long will miss his genial smile, his helpful hand, and the daily example of his sturdy character and active life. [The foregoing has been compiled from a memorial sketch, by Dr. S. S. PURPLE, in the *N. Y. Genealogical and Biographical Record*, for October, 1881; and from a manuscript biography written by Mr. Bergen's old neighbor and life-long friend, the late HENRY C. MURPHY, Esq.—EDITOR.]

HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF BUSHWICK.

BY *Henry R. Stiles. A.M. M.D.*

With the co-operation of J. M. STEARNS, Esq., Brooklyn, E. D.

ITS EARLY SETTLERS AND PATENTS.—On page 80, we stated that the territory embraced within the ancient town of Bushwick was purchased from its Indian proprietors, by the West India Company, in August, 1638 ; and, on pages 81 and 87, we indicated the beginnings of its earliest settlement (1641–1650) by certain Swedes and Norwegians, or Normans as they were called, together with a few Dutchmen. These persons, such as *Bergen* and *Moll* at the Wallabout, *Carstaensen* and *Borsin* on the East river, *Volkertse* at Greenpoint, and *Jan the Swede* on the site of the subsequent village of Bushwick, seem to have occupied and cultivated their bouweries, independently of one another, and subject directly to the authority of the director and council at Manhattan, from whom they received their patents. It is probable, indeed, that they had originally strayed into these wilds with a sort of purpose of pre-empting the lands, trusting to secure a title when the opportunity should occur. Naturally they erected their lodges, or huts, near the small creeks flowing into the East river (or, rather, subject to its tides); since these afforded convenient landing-places for small boats, which were then the only means of communication with Manhattan Island. We have no evidence of any attempt to lay out a regular settlement, or to organize a town, until 1660, a period of over twenty years from the date of the first patent.

In the consideration of Hans Hansen Bergen's patent at the Waaleboght, page 8, it will be remembered that we reached and somewhat overlapped the boundary line between the towns of Brooklyn and Bushwick, —a boundary line, which, according to the earliest patent of the town of Brooklyn, was identical with Bergen's northerly bounds. It might be designated on the map of the present city of Brooklyn, by a line drawn from the East river, following the course of Division avenue, to about at its junction with Tenth street, and from that point extending in a somewhat south-easterly direction towards Newtown.

Adjoining this land of Bergen's on the north, was a

triangular tract of land, which was granted by the West India Company, September 7, 1641, to LAMBERT HUYBERTSEN MOLL, a ship carpenter, who had purchased it from one Cornelis Jacobsen Stille, on the 29th of the preceding month. It had, even then, a house upon it, and this Stille was probably one of those "squatters" to whom we have already referred. This patent embraced, by estimation, fifty acres, though it was subsequently found to be nearer sixty. It extended along the East river, from the old Brooklyn line to a little north of the present Broadway, and from the East river front to near Tenth street. The confirmatory patent, granted by Gov. Nicolls, in 1667, clearly identifies it as including what has been more recently known as the *Peter Miller Farm*, the *Berry Farm*, and *Boerum's Woods*. Moll seems to have removed to Esopus, about 1663, and the land became the property of Jacobus Kip, of Kipsburg, in the City of New York, where he was a prominent citizen and official; and, though it was confirmed to him by Gov. Nicolls, in 1667, it does not appear that he ever resided on this farm, or even in Bushwick, nor that he paid taxes here. During his ownership, a block-house was erected, as a resort for the scattered settlers in case of hostility from the Indians, upon the high point of land which jutted into the river about the foot of South Fourth street, and which was known in the olden time as the "Keike" or "Lookout." The name came to be applied to the high land overlooking the whole shore through the present Fourth street, and southward to the Boerum land, and so down to the Wallabout Bay. In 1693, Kip's executors sold the farm to James (sometimes called Jacobus) Bobin, a resident of Long Island, who was in possession until his death about 1741. It is afterwards found, 1761, in the possession of one Abraham Kershow (Carshow, Cershaw, or Corson) who devised it to his sons Jacob and Martin, who were in possession as late as 1786, when they divided the farm, Jacob taking the northerly, and Martin the southerly half. Jacob Kershow's portion passed, by deed, to one

Peter Miller, in 1790, who devised it to his sons, David P. Miller and John P. Miller, and died in 1816. David P. Miller sold his, the northerly, portion, to Daniel S. Griswold, and it partly passed to one John Henry, who had it surveyed into city lots. John P. Miller sold his, the southerly part, in 1823, to Abraham Meserole, by whom it was subsequently surveyed into building lots. Martin Kershow's portion, by sale under a Chancery decree, in 1820, passed to Jacob Berry, who surveyed and mapped it into building lots, his map bearing the date of 1828.

That portion of the Moll Patent, subsequently known as *Boerum's Woods*, passed to Jacob Bloom, the owner of what became the Abraham Boerum farm in the present Nineteenth Ward. This land was owned by Philip Harmon, and came, at length, to one John Moore, and one Gradon, and was, probably, the latest of the Williamsburgh farm lands to be surveyed into city lots. The seven acres purchased by John Skillman, in 1807, was the subject of lively land-jobbing operations in 1836. Horace Greeley purchased lots there; and conceived them to be a mine of wealth; but, on a financial revulsion, was glad to deed them to the holder of his mortgages. So of Paul J. Fish and others, joint and several speculators there.

The next plantation to Moll's, on the north, was that ascribed by STILES (perhaps erroneously—since it is yet doubtful whether "Mareckawick," which he gives as the determining point of identification, can be definitely located) to Moll's son, RYER LAMBERTSEN (MOLL), by patent of March 23, 1646. He removed to the Delaware River (probably about 1657); and, in 1667, it was conveyed to David Jochems, by whom, in 1673, it was sold to one Van Pelt.

This farm of 107 acres, extending along the East river from near the present Broadway to North First street, with its easterly line near the present Seventh street—is first absolutely found in the possession of one Jean Meserol (Meserole, or Meserol), a native of Picardy, in France, who came to this country in April, 1663, together with his "wife and sucking child," in the ship *Spotted Cow*. No deed or patent has ever been discovered, which will determine the date or the manner of Meserole's entrance upon the occupancy of this estate. It was probably by virtue of what we understand as "squatter sovereignty." He built his house upon the "Keikout" bluff, before alluded to; and this structure was probably the same which formed the westerly wing of the "Old Miller Homestead," which, after surviving for over 200 years, was demolished about twenty years ago. This house is said to have been a favorite boarding-place of the famous Captain Kidd, who found it a convenient retreat, and yet accessible to New York, whenever he came ashore between his piratical trips. Tradition also has it that, many years before, while engaged in his nefarious voyages, he had made New York his domestic

port; and, that, amid the woods of Bushwick, he had marked the grave of one whom he had loved—the daughter of a prominent settler—and whom he had hoped to make his wife. But she died, during one of his absences; and, though he afterwards married, yet he often sought, as opportunity offered, the grave of his lost love. Whether this, or the facilities of secrecy combined with nearness to the great port across the river, drew him so frequently to the Meserole homestead, on the Keikout, can only now be a matter of surmise.

To return, however, to the Keikout Farm, no deed or patent has ever been discovered which determines the manner or time of Meserole's entrance upon its occupancy. He died in 1695; and devised his entire estate to his widow Jonica. He left a son, Jan Meserole, Junior, who was already married and domiciled at the old homestead, having two sons, John and Cornelius, and several daughters. He entered into the domestic interests of the old homestead, after his father's death, in a spirit of filial affection and kindness; and his mother declined to prove her husband's will, as against her son, thinking that as he was her heir at law, as well as heir of her late husband, he would take the estate in any event. She afterwards married a second husband by the name of Dennison, but this did not disturb the kindly relations between herself and her first-born son. Nor was the second husband aware of the existence of old Jan Meserol's will, by which he would properly have been established by courtesy in the occupancy of the estate. The old will had been cast aside, by both mother and son, with seeming confidence that it possessed no bearing upon the family interests; and Jan Meserol, Jr., came at last to consider himself in full possession, with a full title to the estate. After seventeen years, he made his will, in 1710 (proved 1712), devising the Kuykout farm to his two sons, John and Cornelius; and giving other lands to his wife, and making other provisions for his daughters. His mother survived him but five days; and his heirs having proved his will, John and Cornelius undertook the management of the Keikout farm, as tenants in common, working together in mutual harmony and good will, and so continued respecting what they admitted to be each other's rights for nearly four years. But, one day, John Meserol, the 3rd, in looking over some papers formerly belonging to his grandmother Jonica, happened to find his grandfather's unproved will. On submitting the document to competent legal advice, he found that, under the English law of primogeniture then existing in the colony, he could, by producing proofs of his grandfather's will, and making them refer back to the grandfather's death, claim the estate as sole heir-at-law of his grandmother Jonica. It was necessary to prove the will of the grandfather, who had now been dead 21 years, and the signatures of the witnesses, but one of whom survived. To make the proof more effectual, and to perpetuate

the testimony, a bill was filed in Chancery, in which John Meserol was complainant, and Cornelius Meserol, Christopher Rugsby, and the Rector, and inhabitants of the city of New York, in communion with the church of England, as by law established, were defendants. At the hearing, the proofs of the will were duly taken on interrogatories addressed to several persons produced as witnesses, and the same was fully established as a valid will before Robert Hunter, Governor and acting Chancellor of the Province of New York. The enrollment of the decree was fully certified by Rip Van Dam, one of the masters in chancery, and is of record in the files of the court of Chancery at Albany as completed on the 17th day of July, 1717.

Cornelius Meserol seems to have surrendered his claim to the farm at discretion, as he did not appear on the hearing and is said to have emigrated to New Jersey and to have been thereafter forgotten by his kindred.

John Meserol the third took possession of the entire farm, and lived at the Kuykout up to the time of his death in 1756. He left five sons, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Peter and John, and as many daughters, all of whom appear to have respectably married, to-wit: Janetta Colyer, Maritta Fardon, Sarah Skillman, Catrina Miller, and Maria Devoe, all of whom will be recognized as ancestors in the leading families of the late town of Bushwick.

But the will of this third John Meserol, as proved in 1756, intimates a remembrance of the old suit in chancery, by which the testator obtained the farm; in closing with these significant words: "Any of my children making a law-suit about my estate shall forfeit all claim to any share therein, and be entirely cut off by my executors, &c."

So ended the third generation of the Meserols at the Kuykout, and indeed the proprietorship of the name in that estate; although a small part of it, through a descendant from Catrina Miller, one of the daughters, came to the family of Abraham Meserole. Meserole's heirs subsequently disposed of the Kuykout estate (107 acres) as follows: Isaac Meserole sold to Francis Titus a parcel on the East River, on both sides of the present Grand street, from near South First to near North First street, and extending east far enough to make 12 acres. Thomas Skillman, the husband of Sarah Meserole, bought the share next south of Isaac's, above-mentioned, and extending from near South First to South Third street, as now laid out, and from the River to near Sixth street. This land was sold to Charles Titus, in 1785, and was by him devised to his son Charles, in 1802. He sold to Justus Thompson, and he sold about six acres at the river front to Noah Waterbury. The balance passed, under foreclosure, to Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, who shortly after sold it to Garret and Grover C. Furman. By them it was mapped into city lots.

Christopher Rugsby was tenant of the Meseroles in

1717, and lived on the southern half of the Keikout farm, his house being between James Robin's, at the foot of South Tenth, and the Meserole homestead at the foot of South Fourth Street. This land is believed to be identical with the sixteen or seventeen acres to which one Abraham Schenck acquired title before 1761, probably from Meserole in his lifetime. Schenck conveyed this land to Andries Conselyea, by deed, August 15, 1761; by whom it was devised to his sons, Andrew and John Conselyea, the latter being the father of the late Andrew J. Conselyea. In a mutual partition of the farm, John took that part adjoining the present Broadway and on both sides of South Sixth to a little east of Third Street. He conveyed it, 1821, to David Dunham, who died seized of it. It was subsequently partitioned and surveyed into city lots, and a map filed. Of the other portion Andrew Conselyea died seized; and, after various judicial proceedings by his heirs, it was mapped into city lots and sold on the market.

The balance of the Keikout farm was purchased by David Molenaer (*alias* Miller) the husband of Catrina Meserole. By his will (1779, proved 1789) he devised the north part of his farm to his son David; and the south part to his son William. William Miller subsequently sold his share to Frederick Devoe, who had it surveyed into city lots, afterwards dying and leaving sons, the late John and William L. Devoe, who, with their mother, sold most of this land in their life time. David Miller died in 1815, in possession of the land devised to him by his father, devising the life use thereof to his wife Maria, who survived him until her age exceeded a hundred years. He then devised most of this farm to his son David, who, though he died (1823) comparatively young, had attained distinction as a captain in the War of 1812. He left no children, and his sister, Maria, wife of Abraham Meserole, and his brother,



THE OLD MILLER HOUSE.

John Miller, succeeded to his inheritance. His widow lost her dower, as her husband had only an estate in expectancy, after the death of his mother. John Miller and Abraham Meserole (the latter in the interest of his wife Maria) divided the land between them, and mapped out their shares into city lots. The site of the old

homestead, after the old lady's death, was sold for building lots—the venerable house demolished—the earth dug down some sixty feet, and the “Old Keikout” thenceforth was only “a thing of the past.”

There remained, however, a road or bridle-path, known as the “Keikout-road,” which seems to have dated from the very beginning of the settlement. It ran from the side of the village laid out around the old Bushwick Church, and down near the present North Second street to Tenth, near Union avenue. Then, turning southerly, and with various zigzags, now touching the present Ninth street, and again, further south, intersecting Tenth street, diagonally, it came to the present Broadway near Ninth street, at the old Brooklyn line. It again turned west, along or near said line, about a rod in width, to the shore of the East River. Then, turning northerly along the East River, it extended to Bushwick Creek, then “Norman's Kill. It was, doubtless, a Pent-road, with gates, or bars, separating the different farms through which it passed.

Next came the patents comprising the land lying between the northerly line of the Meserole farm and Bushwick creek; and between the East River and a line drawn about equidistant between Fifth and Sixth streets, from the junction of that branch of the creek, which now rises near Ninth and Grand streets, to the north-westerly corner of the Meserole patent. These patents, three in number, belonged respectively to CLAES CARSTENSEN, sometimes termed “Claes the Norman,” to GEORGE BAXTER, the English secretary to the Dutch council, and to DAVID ANDRUS, or Andriese.

Carstensen's patent, which was granted to him by Director Kieft, September 5th, 1645, included 29 morgens, 553 rods.

Baxter's patent, of twenty-five morgens, was granted July 6, 1643.

Of *Andrus's* patent no record has been formed.

It is not probable that any of these individuals ever occupied their farms. Baxter became a patentee for Gravesend in 1645, was subsequently much employed in public affairs; and finally, on account of his political rascalities, was obliged, in 1656, to leave the country. Of Andriese nothing whatever is known; and Carstensen in some way became possessed of their shares of this property. This same tract, comprising some 130 acres, was, in 1647, granted by the governor and council to Jan Forbus, and in 1660 transferred to Pieter Jans de Norman, whose widow afterward married Joost Cockuyt. Paulus Richards bought the farm in 1664, and the lands do not appear in the records again for forty years. Then they are found in the hands of Teunis Mauritz Covert, of Monmouth, N. J., a son of Mauritz Covert, whose widow Antie Fonteyn married Francis Titus, of Bushwick. By him it was conveyed to Titus, in 1719. Francis Titus, a son of Capt. Titus Syrach de Vries, part owner of a grist-mill at New

Utrecht, in 1660, married a second wife, and died about 1760, leaving five sons and five daughters. He resided on what was known as the Col. Francis Titus farm, in Williamsburgh, consisting of 58 acres of upland and 4 of meadow, to which he added 40 adjoining on the easterly side, by purchase from Wm. Latin; and about 12 acres of the original Keikout farm, near the present Grand street ferry, bought of Isaac Meserole. He also bought from Joseph Skillman the northerly half (about 25 acres) of the Jacob Boerum farm, in the 16th ward of the present city, and had considerable other property east of the present Bushwick avenue, and in the New Bushwick land. This property, by his will (proved 1764), was devised to his sons, the eldest of whom, Francis, occupied the homestead farm, and also acquired some 18 acres, by purchase of David Wortman, located between the present Sixth and Ninth streets, and mostly between Grand and North First streets. He died in 1801, leaving the homestead to his son, Col. Francis Titus, who erected a house on First, near North Sixth, now torn down.

East of the farms of Meserole and Carstensen, lay that of JAN DE SWEDE, or John the Swede. It probably comprised most, if not all, of the land bounded south by the farms of Bergen and Moll; on the west by those of Meserole and Carstensen; and on the east by the ancient road known as the Swede's Fly. This road marked the easterly bounds of Jan de Swede's meadow, which is mentioned as one of the westerly boundaries of the township of Bushwick, in its patent of 1687; and was itself the easterly boundary of the first chartered village of Williamsburgh, in 1827. John the Swede's meadow, therefore, was between Eleventh and Twelfth streets; and possibly, he was, also, the original proprietor of the back lands owned by Wortmans. He seems to be first mentioned in Baxter's patent, in 1643, and was probably one of the “squatter sovereigns” whose settlement preceded grants, briefs or patents. It is to be noted that a branch of Norman's Kill, of sufficient depth to float small boats, in early times extended to, or a little south, of the present Grand street, near Ninth street; and, for the reasons stated, the inference is that his house was located near the head of navigation on this branch creek. The fact that a fresh water, clay-basin pond, since known as part of the commons, near North First and Ninth streets, favors this presumption; and STILES' suggestion that his farm extended east to embrace the subsequently incorporated Bushwick village, is contradicted by the Swede's Fly or Kuykout road, being referred to as the eastern boundary of his farm, by the charter of the town of Bushwick. In many of the patents or ground briefs, the tenure or occupation of prior settlers is recited; and we may infer that resident patentees were on the land prior to the date of their patents, or bought out others, who were in possession.

The extensive tract between Jan the Swede's land

and Bushwick avenue, comprising land, which subsequently contained nearly one-third of the city of Williamsburgh, was owned, a little more than a century ago, by one DANIEL BORDET. It is designated on modern maps as lands of John Devoe, William P. Powers, Abraham Meserole, James Scholes, Abraham Remsen, Andrew Conselyea, McKibbin and Nichols, and others.

A tract of land was, in the year 1667, patented by Governor Nicolls to one HUMPHREY CLAY, then of the city of New York.

This tract, lying on both sides of what is now Meeker avenue, adjoining Newtown creek, had just been patented to Adam Moll, in August, 1646; by him transported to William Goulding; and by him transferred to Claude Berbine and Anthony Jeroe, of Maspeth Kill. These parties, on the 7th of January, 1653, conveyed the property, "with the houseing thereupon," to Jacob Steendam. And "whereas the said Jacob Steendam," says the old patent to Clay, "hath been absent and gone out of this country, for the space of eight years, during which time the houseing, which was upon the said land is wholly come to ruin, and the land hath been neglected and unmanured, without any care taken thereof, by the said Jacob Steendam, or any that hath lawful power from him, contrary to the laws established in such cases, within this government," the said land was declared to be forfeited. And therefore, "to the intent that no plantation within this government should lie waste and unmanured, and that a house, or houses, may be built upon the old foundations, as also, for divers other good causes and considerations," the same was fully granted to Humphrey Clay. Clay probably came to New York from New London, in the colony of Connecticut, where he had been an inn-keeper, perhaps from as early a date as 1655. In 1664, he was fined 40s. and costs, for keeping an inmate contrary to law, and his wife Katherine was "presented for selling liquors at her house, selling lead to the Indians, profanation of the Sabbath, card-playing and entertaining strange men." Upon trial before the court of assistants, Mr. Clay and wife were convicted of keeping a disorderly house, and fined £40, or to leave the colony within six months, in which case half the fine was to be remitted. They chose the latter course and removed to New York; and thence, in 1667, to Bushwick.

ABRAHAM RYCKEN, or de Rycke, the progenitor of the present Rycker families of New York, New Jersey and elsewhere, received from Director Kieft, in 1638, an allotment of land which has been located by THOMPSON in Gowanus, and by RIKER in the Wallabout of Brooklyn. A closer examination of the original patent shows that it was located in the territory then recently purchased from the Indians by the West India Company, and which afterward formed the old town of Bushwick. Rycken's patent probably embraced the lands between Newtown Creek, Lombard street, Metro-

politan avenue and the old road running from the junction of Metropolitan and Bushwick avenues to Porter avenue, near Anthony street. This land of Rycken's in Bushwick, or a portion of it with an addition to the meadows as far as Luquier's mill, is afterwards found in possession of one Jochem Verscheur, who, in 1712, conveyed it to Cornelius, Johannes and David Van Catts, by whose family name it has since been known.

Greenpoint.—The greater part of the present 17th ward of the City of Brooklyn was known, from its earliest settlement, as Greenpoint, being, in fact, a neck of land embraced between Maspeth kill, now Newtown creek, and Norman's Kill, now Bushwick creek. It was originally granted, in 1645, to DIRCK VOLCKERTSEN, surnamed the Norman, who was a ship-carpenter. He lived on the northerly side of Bushwick creek, near the East River, in an old stone house, which was demolished some years since, and on the site, Messrs. Samuel Sneed and Jabez Williams built large and fine dwellings. Volkertsen, in old documents, is frequently called Dirck the Norman; and thus, from his lands and dwelling in that vicinity, Bushwick creek derived its ancient name of *Norman's kill*.

May 1st, 1670, Governor Lovelace granted a confirmatory patent to Daniel Jochems, who had become possessed of a part of this land by marriage with the widow Jacob Hey, to whom, in 1653, Volckertsen had conveyed it.

By inheritance and purchase, Captain Peter Praa, of Newtown, who had become the second husband of Maria Hey, daughter of Christina Cappaens by her first husband, subsequently became the owner of the land conveyed by the Volckertsen patent. Captain Praa, of Newtown, was the son of Peter Praa, a highly respectable Huguenot exile from Dieppe, in France, who came to this country with his family in 1659, and died in Cripplebush, March 6, 1663. Captain Praa, who was born at Leyden, in 1655, during his parent's temporary stay at that place, was a man of much enterprise and public spirit. After his marriage he spent the greater portion of his life at Bushwick, where he commanded the militia, and was especially distinguished for his superior skill in horsemanship. Captain Praa subsequently purchased the balance, in 1719, from Dirck, Philip and Nicholas Volckertsen, sons of the original patentee. He also acquired large tracts in various places, among which may be mentioned Dominies hook, in Newtown, purchased from the heirs of Anneke Jans, of Trinity Church notoriety. He lived in an old stone dwelling-house upon the farm, since of David Provoost, near the meadow on the east side of Greenpoint. This house and farm came into the possession of his daughter, Christina, wife of David Provoost, and was occupied by her during the summer months, she being a resident of the city of New York, until her death, about 1795. It was destroyed by fire in 1832 or '33, after which David Provoost, her great grandchild, and

the father of Hon. Andrew J. Provoost, built the house now occupied by his son-in-law, J. W. Valentine, on its site.

Capt. Peter Praa died in 1740, and, by will, divided his property to his children; *Catharine*; *Maria*, who married Wynant Van Zandt, and died before her father, leaving two sons, Peter Praa and Johannes Van Zandt; *Elizabeth*, who married Jan Meserole (and to whom was devised all the tract purchased from Dirck Volkertsen); *Anna*, who married 1, William Bennett; 2d, Daniel Bordet, and received all the Dominies hook property in Newtown; and *Christina*, who married 1, David Provoost; 2d, Rev. John Aronda, and who received property in the city of New York.

Two of Jan Meserole's sons, Jacob and Abraham, after the sale of the Keikout farm, removed to Greenpoint, where they settled on land which their father had purchased from Peter Praa. *Jacob* devised his share, by will, dated July 18, 1782, to his wife, for life, with remainder in fee to his sons, Peter and John; who, in 1791, made a division, Peter occupying the northerly half and John the southerly. *Abraham*, who died in 1801, was the father of John A. Meserole, who inherited the property on which he lived for many years, and died intestate, in 1833. One of his daughters, *Mary*, married Nezhiah Bliss, who resided upon this very property, to the time of his death, and in the old Meserole mansion, on the banks of the East River, which house has been recently enlarged and modernized. Thus by purchase, and through their mother, the greater part of the Praa estate came into possession of the Meserole family.

That portion granted by Praa to his daughter, *Annetie* Bodet, descended to her son, William Bennet, who died in possession, in 1805. It was by him devised to his sons, Tunis and Richard; and, in 1813, was sold at auction under foreclosure of mortgage, and purchased by Ammon T. Griffing. After his death, in 1814, it remained in possession of his heirs, until 1834, when it passed to Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, who, in 1835, conveyed it to Mr. Nezhiah Bliss, and he in 1835 and '42 transferred it to Eliphalett Nott, President of Union College.

Of the more modern history and progress of Greenpoint, the reader will be fully informed in a subsequent chapter.

"There were," says Mr. STEARNS in an article on this subject, "considerable tracts of land, to which neither patent nor possessory titles were acquired for many years after the settlement of the place. These lands were known as commons, and embraced several pieces of meadow on Newtown creek, and a space of land by Ninth street and North First and Second streets, in Williamsburgh, said to have been left open for the convenience of watering the cattle of the neighborhood, as it embraced a pond of fresh water that emanated from springs. This common embraced between one and two acres of land, and is mentioned in old deeds before the year 1700. A legal controversy concerning the title to this

common may be noticed hereafter. Besides, the meadow lands and the commons referred to, the town of Bushwick in the rights of all its several freeholders assumed to own the tract of land known as New Bushwick, embracing most of that part of the town south-east of the Cross roads, or the present Brooklyn and Newtown turnpike road.

"These New Bushwick lands were probably reservations for woodland, to supply the people with fuel, as old wills are found devising the right to cut and carry away fuel to burn, but not to sell, from parts of those lands claimed by the testators. The salt meadows that became, in separate parcels, appurtenances of the different homesteads in the town, were distributed at a much earlier date. Many of them were vested by the original patents, and all that were capable of use and improvement were made the means of sustaining the cattle of the earliest settlers through the severe winters of those times, before artificial grasses were cultivated on the uplands. Some portion of those meadows, however, were too sunken to be of use, being below the ordinary tides, and hence remained without a claimant, till they were sold by the towns of Williamsburgh and Bushwick."

Civil History, 1660–1708.—The scattered agricultural inhabitants of the territory now comprised in the eastern district of the city of Brooklyn, seem to have made no attempt towards a regular settlement, or the organization of a town government, for a period of over twenty years from the date of its purchase from the natives, by the West India Company. In February, 1660, the troublous times led to the enforcement, by the government, of stringent precautionary measures for the protection and safety of the established towns upon the western end of Long Island. "Outside residents, who dwell distant from each other," were directed also to "remove and concentrate themselves within the neighboring towns, and dwell in the same;" because, says the order, "we have war with the Indians, who have slain several of our Netherland people." A village and block-house was accordingly erected by the Waal-boght residents during the month of March, 1660, on the high point of land (Keikout) on the East River, near the foot of the present South Fourth street, before referred to.

Simultaneously, almost, the first steps were taken towards the establishment of a settlement in another and more remote portion of the territory. On the 16th of February, according to the record, "as fourteen Frenchmen, with a Dutchman, named Peter Janse Wit, their interpreter, have arrived here; and, as they do not understand the Dutch language, they have been with the Director-General and requested him to cause a town plot to be laid out at a proper place; whereupon his honor fixed upon the 19th instant to visit the place and fix upon a site."

Accordingly, three days after, on "February 19th, the Director-General, with the Fiscal, Nicasius de Sille and his Honor Secretary Van Ruyven with the sworn surveyor, Jaques Cortealeu, came to Mispat [Mespath] and have fixed upon a place between Mispat kill [Newtown Creek] and Norman's kill [Bushwick Creek], to establish a village; and have laid out, by survey, twenty-two house lots, on which dwelling-houses are to be built."

March 7th, according to the record, "Evert Hedeman, having erected the first house, between William Traphagen and Knoet Mouris, near the pond, came to dwell in the same." Other houses were erected during the same year.

A year later, "March 14th, 1661, the Director-General visited the new village, when the inhabitants requested his honor to give the place a name; whereupon," taking his inspiration, no doubt, from its immediate surroundings, "he named the town *Boswijck*, i. e., the Town of Woods.

Application was then made and granted for certain town privileges. This application was signed by twenty-three men, viz.: Peter Janse Wit; Evert Hedeman; Jan Willemse Yselstyn; Jan Tilje; Ryck Leydecker; Hendrik Willemsen; Barent Gerritsen; Jan Hendricksen; Jan Cornelisen Zeeuw; Barent Joosten; Francois de Puij; Johannes Casperse; Francisco de Neger; Pieter Lamot; Carel Fontyn; Henry —; Jan Catjouw; Jan Mailjaert; Hendrick Janse Grever; Gysbert Thonissen; Joost Casperse; Willem Traphagen; Dirck Volkertse.

The Governor also took occasion to call the attention of those living outside of the village to the great danger to which they were exposed, and to recommend their instant removal to the greater security now offered them by the erection of a number of neighboring dwellings. He, furthermore, commanded the villagers to nominate six of their number, from whom he would select three as magistrates for the town of Boswyck. The people, therefore, nominated six of the most prominent of their number, viz.: Gysbert Theunis, Jan Catjouw, Ryck Leydecker, Peter Janse Wit, Jan Cornelis Zeeuw and Jan Tilje, of whom the last three were selected by the Governor and confirmed as magistrates of Boswyck.

Boswyck, like New Utrecht, having no schout of its own, was subject to the jurisdiction of Hegeman, the schout of Breuckelen, Amersfoort and Midwout, and the district became thenceforth known as the Five Dutch Towns.

The village seems to have had a rapid accession of new settlers, for in May, 1661, we find the magistrates preferring a request for the grant of new lots and the establishment of roads.

On the 28th of December, following (1662), "the magistrates of the village of Boswyck, appeared before the council, representing that they in their village, were in great need of a person who would act as *clerk* and *schoolmaster* to instruct the youth; and, that, as one had been proposed to them, viz.: *Boudewyn Manout*, from Crimpen op de Lecq [a village in Holland] they had agreed with him, that he should officiate as *voorleser* or clerk, and keep school for the instruction of the youth. For his [services] as clerk he was to receive 400 guilders in [wampum] annually; and, as schoolmaster, free house rent and firewood. They therefore solicited, that their action in the matter might meet the approval of the Director General and Council in Nieuw Nederland, and that the Council would also contribute something annually to facilitate the payment of the said salary."

The Council assented, and promised, that, after he had been duly examined and approved by the reverend ministers of the city, they would lighten the annual burden of the village by contributing annually *f* 25, heavy money.

Manout was afterwards appointed court clerk, upon which office he entered January 5, 1663. We present here a fac-simile, taken from the old Bushwick records,

of Manout's signature, curious for its combination of the date with the name.

It is noteworthy that, in December of this year, the Director and Council, hearing that Hendrick Barent Smith, "in contempt of the published and recently renewed orders," continued to reside "on his separated plantation in the neighborhood of Boswyck, to the detriment and injury of said village," ordered him to break up his building within twenty-four hours; and in case of his default, the magistrates were empowered to demolish it.

It appears from records that during the third year of the existence of the village, its prosperity was on the increase; for, on the 8th of February, 1663, the magistrates requested the Council to compel Jean Mailjaert, a Frenchman, to part with a few of his lots for the accommodation of new comers.

After a full hearing of the case, Jan Mailjaert, "as the welfare of the village of Boswyck requires it," was ordered to give up sufficient land for six lots, each lot being six rods broad, and five and a half rods long, on payment by the new comers of 25 guilders in seawant for each lot.

Amid the numerous evidences of increasing prosperity among the settlers of Boswyck, we must chronicle the gratifying and creditable fact that they voluntarily subscribed, March 30, 1662, the sum of forty-seven guilders, "to ransom Tunis Craeyen's son Jacob, then a prisoner among the Turks."

On page 28 of the old Bushwick record, is the following muster-roll of officers and soldiers of the town in 1663: *Captain*, Ryck Lydecker (Schout); *Ensign*, Jan Tilje Casperse; *Secretary*, Boudwyn Manout; *Sergeant*, Evert Hedeman; *Corporals*, Pieter Jans Wit, Jan Hendricks, Alexander Conquerare; *Privates*, Gysbert Tunnissen (Schepen), Barent Joost (Schepen), David Jochemsen, Hendrick Grever, Jan Mailjaert, Andries Barentse, Jan Parys, Evert Mauritz, Charles Fountain, Jan Cornel Zeieuw, Corn. Janse Zeieuw, Joost Caspersen, Johannes Caspersen, Melle Caspersen, Francois de Puij, Jan Williams Essellstein, William Traphagen, Barent Gerretse; (*Drummer*), Dirck Volkertse, Volkert

Dirckse, Jan Botzer, Wessel Gerrits, Nicolaes Jones, Tunis Martin, Carel Carelsen, Claes Wolf, Wouter Gysbertsen, Jacob Gysbertsen, Cæsar Barentse, Carel Reyckwyl, Francois d'Meyer, Antoin d'Meyer.

Thus quietly engaged in agricultural pursuits, the little community of Boswyck maintained the even tenor of its way, until disturbed, in 1663 and 1664, by the political excitements which preceded the conquest of New Netherland, by the English. Throughout those times, Boswyck remained loyal to the States-General.

At a meeting of the magistrates of most of the Dutch towns in the province, convened on the 1st of November, 1663, to discuss the condition and affairs of the country, Boswyck was represented by *Ryck Lydecker* and *Gysbert Teunissen*.

January, 1664. The Council received a petition from Abraham Jansen, carpenter, requesting permission to erect a mill near the village of Boswyck. He was required to appear, together with the magistrates of that village, before the Council, and explain as to the proposed location. They did so, on 1st of February, and the magistrates of the town, on being interrogated, expressed a cordial wish to have the water-mill erected on Mispit Kill, which was accordingly granted.

In February, 1664, William Traphagen, for insulting one of the magistrates of Bushwick, by calling him a false judge, was sentenced by the Governor and Council, to appear with uncovered head before the court of Bushwick, and, in the presence of the fiscal, to beg pardon of God, justice and the insulted magistrate; and to pay, in addition, thirteen guilders to the overseers of the poor of the town, with costs.

In May, of the same year, Jan Willemsen Van Iselsteyn, commonly called Jan of Leyden, for using abusive language and writing an insolent letter to the magistrates of Bushwick, was sentenced to be fastened to a stake at the place of public execution, with a bridle in his mouth, a bundle of rods under his arm, and a paper on his breast bearing the inscription: "Lampoon writer, false accuser and defamer of its magistrates." After this ignominy he was to be banished, with costs.

On the same day, William Jansen Traphagen, of Lemgo, for being the bearer of the above insolent letter to the magistrates of Bushwick, as well as for using very indecent language towards them, was also sentenced to be tied to the stake, in the place of public execution, with a paper on his breast, inscribed "Lampoon carrier." His punishment, also, was completed with banishment and costs.

Bushwick was represented in the General Assembly of April, 1664, by *Jan Van Cleef* and *Guisbert Teunissen*. Although English authority was distasteful to the inhabitants of the town, they submitted to it with characteristic Dutch apathy; but they soon found that the petulance of Stuyvesant was far preferable to the arbitrary rule of the English governors. But little of interest is to be found in the town records of Bushwick

at that period, except evidences of the arbitrary rule of the English colonial authorities.

Jan Stryker and *Guisbert Teunissen* represented the town in the Hempstead Convention, at which the Duke's laws were promulgated.

Not only did Governor Nicols assume control of civil affairs in the town, but he issued orders regulating ecclesiastical matters; appointing clergymen, and prescribing the amount of salary to be paid by the town, and even designating the persons to assess and collect it.

"Anno 1665, the 27th of December, the minister, who was sent to preach by the Hon. Gov. Richard Nicolls, preached his first sermon at the house of Gysbert Tonissen."

The name of the minister who preached the above mentioned "first sermon" is not given in the record; neither does it anywhere appear who his successors were, or whether they were Dutch, English or French. It probably is sufficient for us now, as it was for the good people of Boswyck in their day, to know that they were the governor's favored gentry, and probably in his interest.

It is hardly necessary to say that it was the Church of England which the governor thus sought to impose on the people of Bushwick.

But, though obliged to pay the taxes, they would not attend the preaching of the person so officiously thrust upon them, and finally he and his "Beloved Roger" were withdrawn. This attempt to force an established church upon the town of Bushwick, was felt to be a galling injustice, and finally, with other infractions, led to a public meeting of the people of the county, held at Flatbush, in 1664, whereat were passed several strongly-worded resolutions, condemnatory of the English, for their faithlessness in violating the conditions of the treaty, and in compelling them to litigate in a language which they did not understand. A significant expression of the feeling of the people on this point, is found in the fact that two cases then pending before the court of sessions, were withdrawn, and referred to arbitrators appointed by the meeting; the parties alleging that they were Dutchmen, "and did not wish to have their rights adjudicated by an English court." It was, also, agreed by the meeting, that they would have nothing to do with the courts, and that they would settle all differences in future by arbitration. The inhabitants thereafter adhered so strictly to these resolutions, that the courts were seldom occupied by civil causes, and usually adjourned on the first day. No lawyer resided in the county before 1783; and the Episcopal Church was not established here until 1776, during the occupation of the town by the British, during the Revolutionary war. The Dutch churches supported all the poor of the county; all who could labor being employed, and no poor-tax was raised in the county until the year 1785.

In February, 1687, Governor Dongan granted a pat-

ent to the town of Bushwick (given at length in STILES' *Hist. of Brooklyn*, pp. 345-380), conferring on it the usual corporate privileges of towns in those days, and accurately defining its boundaries. These boundaries *did not include* the site of the subsequent village of Williamsburgh. This probably arose, not from any oversight, but from the fact that the site of Williamsburgh was originally surveyed and owned by the Dutch West India Company.

The good people of Bushwick, in common with other towns, had suffered so long from the misrule of the bigoted Duke of York, James the II, that the news of his abdication, in 1688, and the succession to the English throne of his daughter Mary, and her husband William, Prince of Orange, was received with a general outburst of heartfelt joy.

The misguided zeal or ambition, however, of certain persons who were impatient of delay, defeated the designs of the new government, and involved the province in scenes of turmoil and strife.

Although the Dutch inhabitants of Bushwick generally were peacefully inclined, and patient under the arbitrary rule of the English governors, there were among them some who were less tractable; and occasionally instances of disorderly conduct are recorded—noticeably in 1693, 1694 and 1697.

"On the 20th of August, 1693, Jurian Nagell, of Bushwick, together with two others of Brooklyn, endeavored to stir up sedition among the crowd, who had assembled at a general training of the Kings County militia, on Flatland plains. Captain Jacques Cortelyou deposed before the Court of Sessions, that, 'being in arms at the head of his company,' he heard Nagell say to the people then in arms on said plains, in Dutch, these mutinous, factious and seditious words, following, viz.: '*Slaen wij-der onder, wij seijn drie & egen een*;' in English: 'Let us knock them down, we are three to their one.' Nagell subsequently confessed his error, and was released with a fine.

The women, also, participated in the disorders of the times, for on the 8th of May, 1694, Rachel, the wife of John Luquer, and the widow Jonica Schamp, both of Bushwick, were presented before the court of sessions, for having, on the 24th of January previous, assaulted Capt. Peter Praa, and 'teare him by the hair as he stood at the head of his company, at Boswyck.' They, too, were heavily fined, and released after making due confession of their fault."

The number of settlers in Bushwick during the Dutch Regime was probably less than twenty-five families, not exceeding a hundred people, including the fourteen French emigrants, that constituted the primary village. But thirty-three names were on the tax lists in the year 1703, over forty years after the English had possession of the country. Counting five to a family, would give a population of 165; which number was scarcely doubled at the beginning of the present century.

In 1706, the improved lands assessed in Bushwick, as then in fence, were as follows:

Hackert Hendrickse (widow), 186 acres; Peter Praa, 68; Humphrey Clay, 52; Peter de Wit's widow, 96; Charles

Fountain, 50; Teunis Wortman, 97; Francis Titus, 126; James Bobyne, 50; John Meseroll, 170; Jurian Nagell, 95; Cornella Van Katts, 108; John Luquier, 108; John Luquier's Mill, 25; Philip Volkert's, 54; Peter Layston, 50; John Camp, 40; Jochem Verscheur, 60; Auck Hegeman, 40; Peter Williams, 60; Joost Dyeye, 107; Garret Cooke, 50; (Ja) Cobus Collier, 20; William West, 14; Derick Andriese, 14; Cornelius Laguson, 52; Hendrick Jansen, 54; Gysbert Bogert, 10; Dorothy Verscheur, 70; Gabon (or Galen) Laquiull, 36; Ann Andriessen, 30; Gabriel Sprong, 16; Teunis Titus, 47; Hendrick De Forest, 14; Jacobus Jansen, 20; Charles Folkerts, 110; John Hendrick, 26; Frederic Symonds, 61; Philip Nagell, 13. Total acres, 2,443.

CHAS. L. FOUNTAINE, } Assessors.
PETER PRAA, }
PETER CORTILLEAU.—Surveyor.

On the 12th of August, 1708, the town of Bushwick received from Gov. Cornbury, a new patent, confirmation of that previously granted by Gov. Dongan.

During the administration of Lord Cornbury, the colony was called upon to exert all its energy in furnishing men, provisions and munitions of war, for the earlier colonial wars. In connection with this war, tradition has preserved a most romantic and touching episode, which occurred in the town of Bushwick.

A prominent young man named Peter Andriese was about to be married to the daughter of Jan Stryker, of Flatbush, when he was induced to enlist in the army. The entreaties of his friends, and of his intended bride, failed to dissuade him from his purpose, and he departed with his comrades. Days, months and years passed, his *fiancee* every hour expecting to hear of her betrothed, but in vain. At last, overcome by sorrow and hope deferred, death made her his victim; and on the very day of her burial, Andriese unexpectedly made his appearance in town. For years he had been a captive among a tribe of the Northern Indians, and had returned too late.

Ecclesiastical History—1700 to 1824.—In the absence of any ecclesiastical records, there is no evidence of the organization of a church, or the erection of a house of worship, in this town, prior to the commencement of the last century.

Mr. STEARNS thus remarks:

"Coming out of a storm of papal persecution, in their Fatherland, the settlers of Boswyck brought with them a high religious purpose to sustain the integrity of their religious professions in this land of their adoption. But, they soon came in contact with the calculating political policy of the Dutch governors and the West India Company, to subordinate religion to the control and profit of the government. The laws enacted by Stuyvesant in 1656, against *conventicles*, show the temper of the Dutch Government—'That no person should exercise the office of a religious teacher, unless his credentials were issued by the civil authority.' The Reformed Religion as settled by the Synod of *Dordrecht* (Dort) was made the only religion to be publicly taught. Lutherans with the others were forbidden free public worship. And the settlement of *Quakers* and *vagabonds*, in the Province, without previous permission, was prohibited. With such conservative supervision, it is not singular, that the volatile *French* settlers of Boswick found few inducements to a religious

faith, whose services, if held at all, were conducted in a language they did not understand. And, while it was an offense, to be punished by the magistrate, if they met to compare views and instruct each other in religion, as they had learned it in France, it is not singular that religion degenerated among this handful of people; so that, for near forty years, after the settlement of the town, no church seems to have existed in any form of visible organization. The Dominies from Brooklyn and Flatbush occasionally visited the place, and 'comforters of the sick' visited the families and officiated at burials, from time to time. But this remote town realized more severely than other places, the general poverty of religious privileges, prevailing in all the New Netherlands. The half-dozen religious teachers of the Reformed faith in all the province, seemed especially jealous of their faith or denominational interests, to the extent of sanctioning the acts of religious persecutions, inaugurated by the government. They had neither the numbers nor the facilities for the religious teaching of the people; and yet they were so fearful of *conventicles*, or their fanaticisms, that they would constrain the people to a semi-heathenism, instead of allowing them any scope for personal inquiry and social worship. For all the forty years after the settlement of the town, there is scarcely a way-point of religious interest in its history. If preaching they occasionally had, in the town-house or private dwellings, it was doubtless of a stiff, unyielding character, more theological than religious, more dogmatical than sympathetic, more speculative than practical. The few lights from the Holland schools came to demonstrate their pedantry among these remote people of the border, rather than to instruct their hearts in the duty and peace of love to God."

"A part of the communion service still in use," says PRIME, "bears the date of 1708, from which it is inferred that the church was formed about that time. There is also a receipt extant, for a church bell, dated in 1711, which renders it probable that the house of worship had been erected not long before." This edifice was octagonal in form, with a very high and steep pyramidal roof, terminating in an open cupola or belfry, the whole greatly resembling a haystack. Externally, being constructed of frame work, it was diminutive and rustic in aspect. Internally, it was a mere inclosure, without pews or gallery, till near the close of the century; the congregation furnishing themselves with benches or chairs. In 1790, the building received a new roof; and, in 1795, a front gallery was erected, and the ground floor furnished with pews. It was taken down in 1840.

The people of Bushwick constituted a part of the Collegiate church of the county, and, as such, were ministered to by the pastors of the Five Dutch towns. According to the preceding dates, of course, Messrs. Freeman and Antonides were the first pastors, and preached here alternately every third Sabbath. There is still extant a receipt from the former, for salary, in 1709.

In 1787, the Rev. *Peter Lowe* was installed here as collegiate pastor with the Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker, who resided at Flatbush. Having withdrawn from the oversight of this church to the exclusive charge of the associate churches of Flatbush and Flatlands, he closed his labors here in the year 1808. He was succeeded in

1811 by the Rev. Dr. *John Bassett*, a native of Bushwick, where he was born, October 1st, 1764; and a man of extraordinary erudition. He was an excellent Hebrew scholar, as is attested by the fact that he was, in 1797, appointed by the General Synod of the Reformed Protestant Dutch church, to fill a professor's chair in Queen's (now Rutgers') College, New Brunswick, N. J., which position he held for many years. During this period he engaged the services of a colleague, Rev. John Barent Johnson, likewise a native of Kings county, who was installed in 1796, and who subsequently became the pastor of the Reformed Dutch Church of Brooklyn. He was, also, a thorough classical scholar, and generally had several young men in his family and enjoying his instruction. Although not gifted with great powers of imagination or eloquence, he was a sound and edifying preacher; and the history of Brooklyn during the war of 1812, attests his fervent and lofty patriotism. It may be further mentioned as a proof of his ability, that being equally familiar with the Dutch, as with the English language, he undertook the translation of *Vonderdonk's History of New Netherland*, for publication; but by some means the manuscript was lost, and the task was subsequently repeated by the late Gen. Jeremiah Johnson. Mr. Bassett, in 1824, was suspended from the ministry for intemperance, and died on 4th of February of that year.

During the Revolutionary War.—The Revolutionary history of the town is by no means so interesting as that of its neighbor, Brooklyn; and its revolutionary spirit, outspoken and free at first, was, like that of Brooklyn, also, quickly nipped in the bud by the disastrous result of the battle of Long Island, in August, 1776. Previous to that event, during the year 1775, the popular sentiment and action was at once loyal and energetic in behalf of the American cause. Bushwick was then represented in the First New York Provincial Congress, and also, at the subsequent sessions of the same body, in '75 and '76; and at the conventions of the State in 1776 and '77, by Mr. Theodorus Polhemus; and many of her prominent citizens, such as Ab'm Raust, Ab'm Luquere, John Titus, Joost Dur-yea, Alexander Whaley and others, were foremost in all county and local action which was calculated to advance the interests of their country. At the battle of Brooklyn, and in the retreat which followed, Bushwick was represented by a militia company under command of Capt. John Titus. Also, in a list of officers chosen by the different companies in Kings County, who have signed the Declaration, and taken their commission, we find among the Light Horse, Jacob Bloom, *2d Lieutenant*; and Peter Wykoff, *Quarter-Master*; Ab'm Van Ranst, *1st Lieutenant*; Peter Colyer, *2d Lieutenant*; John Skillman, *Ensign*. Wm. Van Cott, of Bushwick, shot a British officer who was engaged in reconnoitering the American lines on Fort Putnam, and then put up his gun, saying he had done his part for that day.

Bushwick During the British Occupation, 1776-1780.—After that unfortunate battle, the town was subjected to all the inconveniences and evils of an armed occupation. In November, 1776, a regiment of Hessians, under Col. Rahl, had their winter quarters here, and constructed barracks on the land then belonging to Abraham Luquere; the timber for said barracks being taken with military freedom, from the Wallabout swamp. Many of the troops were also billeted on the inhabitants. The leading patriots were either in active service, or had been obliged to leave their homes and estates to the tender mercies of the invaders; and, in some cases, to confiscation. Their families were subjected to the arbitrary authority of British officials, and to the insults or depredations of the soldiery who were quartered upon them. Their woodlands, brush-wood and fencing were rapidly appropriated to camp uses, their teams impressed into the king's service, and, in many ways, they were made to feel the power of their conquerors.

Of the auxiliary troops of the British army, Gen. JOHNSON'S *Manuscript Recollections of the Revolution* says: "Col. Rahl took up his quarters in Bushwick, with a regiment of Hessians. They constructed barracks on the land of Abraham Luquere, although many of them were also quartered on the inhabitants. The regiment of Col. Rahl made free use of the wood in the Wallabout swamp, which extended along north of the Cripplebush road, from the bay to Newtown creek." In the humane treatment of the conquered enemy, the Hessian soldiers, after they became acquainted with the people of the island, would compare with the British, much to the disadvantage of the latter. The testimony of the prisoners of the Wallabout prison ships is often highly creditable to their humanity. They had first, however, to be disabused of the conviction so craftily impressed by the British, of the barbarity and savage cruelty of the Americans. But their cupidity and proneness to commit petty robberies (appropriating every species of property upon which they could, without much personal risk, lay their hands) has begot for them the reputation of arrant thieves. "It was seldom, however," says FIELD, "that they wantonly injured the property of others, as they did in the case of Hendrick Suydam, situated upon what was then known as New Bushwick lane (now Evergreen avenue, in the Eighteenth ward) which connected the Jamaica turnpike with the Cripplebush road to Newtown. His house, which still stands, is a venerable and well preserved specimen of Dutch architecture, the lower story built of stone of sufficient thickness, almost, to serve for the walls of a fortress; and lighted by small windows with long panes of glass set in heavy sash, which give it a quaint air of peering through spectacles. Its walls, according to the traditions of the family, were erected not less than one hundred and sixty years ago, and the house was located (according to the invariable practice of the

old Holland settlers), in a little hollow where it would be protected from the sweep of the dreaded north wind. The airy sites and broad prospect, which so entice the occupants of Brooklyn soil, had no attractions for the phlegmatic and comfort-loving Dutch race. The old farmers quietly hid their houses away in the little valleys and turns of the road, much as a cautious fowl creeps into a hedge and constructs its nest for a long incubation. Hendrick Suydam, like his brother, the stout Lambert Suydam of Bedford, captain of the Kings County troop of horse, was a sound whig; though compelled, from his situation in the midst of the British camp, to take the oath of allegiance or suffer the confinement of a fetid and infected prison, with numbers of his Bushwick neighbors. He could not, however, obtain his freedom from an infection scarcely less pestiferous than the other alternative, the lodgment, in his house, of a squad of Hessian soldiers. So filthy were their habits, that, in the summers succeeding their occupancy of the houses of Bushwick, Brooklyn and Flatbush, where they had been quartered, a malignant fever ensued, which carried off numbers of the inhabitants. In consequence of their peculiar habits, so abhorrent to the fastidious neatness of the Dutch, these Hessians were termed the Dirty Blues. During the occupation of the Suydam house, a Hessian captain, for want of other occupation, or possibly to spite his Dutch host, chopped with his sword several large pieces from one of the side posts of the doorway. As a memento of the old troublous times, and to keep green the memory of the wrongs which so deeply embittered him, the old whig would never permit the defacement to be repaired. With true Dutch pertinacity, in the same humor, his descendants have very commendably preserved the tokens of the detested occupation of their domicile by a foreign enemy, and the marks of the Hessian sword are still apparent."

The greatest trouble experienced by the farmers during the war, was from the tories, or cow-boys, who were amenable to no law, and influenced by no motives of humanity or honesty. Old Mrs. Meserole, who lived on Greenpoint, used often to say that, though residing alone with a young family around her, she was never molested by the British officers, or their men; but she lived in constant dread of the tories.

Rappelje's tavern, at the Cross-roads, was the favorite rendezvous of these robbers; and, as long as they infested the towns, there was no quiet or safety in the land. After the British left the country, they disappeared, many of them going to Nova Scotia.

A battalion of guides and pioneers, composed of three companies, were quartered in the town of Bushwick, from 1778 until November, 1783. They were a set of notorious villains, collected from almost every part of the country, and organized under the command of Captains McPherson, Williams, Van Allen and Purdy. Williams and Purdy were from Westchester

county, Van Allen from Bergen county, N. J., and McPherson from the south. This command supplied the British army with guides and spies for every part of the country; and, whenever an expedition was organized to attack any place, drafts were made on this battalion. After the peace, these men dared not remain in this country, and were not wanted in Britain. Nova Scotia was their only place of refuge, and thither they went, where proper provision was made for them by the British authorities.

After the provisional treaty of peace, these guides returned to quarters at Bushwick. They numbered about one hundred and fifty under command of Capt. McPherson, and were encamped on the farm of Abm. Van Ranst, then an exile. The dwelling, which stood about one hundred and fifty yards northward from the Bushwick church, was occupied by the captain himself, who kept a guard of honor, and a sentinel constantly stationed at his door. In this connection we may relate the following anecdote, as given in the *Manuscript Recollections of GEN. JOHNSON* :

"In the month of August, 1788, on a fine evening, seven young whigs were together along the shore opposite to Corlears hook, the tide being then quite high. Two British long-boats had drifted on the shore, where they had lain for some time. It was proposed to take the boats up Bushwick creek and lay them on the meadow of John Skillman, as prizes, which was forthwith done. A few days afterwards, in the month of September, several of the party, being at the Fly Market in New York, were told that Capt. McPherson had caused the boats to be removed to his house, and had purchased paint and other material with which to put the boats in order for his own use. It was immediately resolved to remove the boats, that night, from the captain's quarters. A gallon of shrub, some crackers and a salmon were purchased for the expedition, a small hill on John Skillman's land was designated as the place of rendezvous, and nine o'clock was named as the hour. Three of the party brought up a boat with oars to row away the boats with; and, at the appointed hour, the whole party, consisting of William Miller, Joseph and Francis Skillman, John Bogart, John Conselyea, Francis Titus and the writer, were assembled at the appointed place. It was a beautiful moonlit evening and the soldiers were playing about the fields. The little party of whigs regaled themselves with their provisions, until about ten o'clock, when two of their number ventured to reconnoitre, and returned with the report that the boats lay near the house, that a party were dancing and frolicking there, and a sentinel was at the door. Meanwhile, a dark cloud was rising in the west, foreboding a violent storm. It came on, and then we went, took up the boats, carried them over a stone wall, and dragging them about one hundred and fifty yards, launched them into Skillman's creek. When we took the boats the sentinel at the door had deserted his post; we found a fine marquee pitched near by, which was trembling in the rising storm. I cut a few *sky-lights* in the top, and then severing the weather braces, which sang like fiddle strings, it fell prostrate. So violent was the lightning and rain, that we did not see a living person, besides ourselves, before we were out of Bushwick creek with the boats, which we took up the river to John Miller's, opposite Blackwell's island, and left them in his barn, returning to Francis Titus's in our boat, at sunrise. In passing down Bushwick

creek, one of our prizes filled with water, but we did not abandon her. On our arrival at the mouth of the creek, the storm was over, the moon shone brightly again, and we were hailed by a sentinel who threatened to fire upon us, to which we answered roughly, and passed on our way.

"The next day all Bushwick was in an uproar. The Yankees were charged with infringing the treaty of peace; the sentinels and guards who lay in Mr. Skillman's barn, within fifty yards of the place where the boats were launched, were charged with unwatchfulness. It was not known who took the boats, before November 25, 1783. The act was caused by the feeling of resentment which the whole party had against Captain McPherson. He was a bad man, and when his soldiers were accused by neighbors with thefts, and other annoyances, retorted upon their accusers with foul language, etc."

Mr. WM. O'GORMAN, in his admirable antiquarian sketches, in the *Long Island Weekly Star*, under date of October 8, 1880, says: "The old Skillman House, which may be considered to have been the headquarters of the expedition, is still standing, in Frost street, between Lorimer and Union avenue. Its exterior is altered from the old Dutch pattern to modern shape, but the interior is characteristic of the first settlement. Thirty years since the eye of the tourist often took pleasure in viewing the fine old house of former days, standing as it then did on a grassy knoll well planted with large trees. At that period the spring tides used to cover the marsh up to the garden of the house; and, by sunset at such times the landscape shone with the splendor of primitive time. But sad is the change for the landscape; more or less the salt meadows are being filled in and the spring-tides visit it no more. The back of the house now fronts on the street, and the old hall door (in two sections) now guards the rear entrance. Of the Van Ranst homestead nothing remains but the foundations, still to be seen on lots Nos. 245 and 247 Withers street, near Kingsland avenue, five blocks away from the Skillman House. The headquarters of McPherson and his spy-battalion were, until their removal two years since, the guard-lodge of the Cannon Street Baptist Cemetery."

Upon the occasion of the evacuation of the city of New York by the British army, and its occupation by the Americans, November 25th, '83, a number of the inhabitants of Bushwick met and appointed December 2d, as the day, and the banks of the East river, in full view of the city, as a place of rejoicing, and sent an address and invitation to Washington, who returned a courteous reply—given at length, in STILES' *History of Brooklyn*.

Among the patriots of Bushwick, we may here record the names of *John Provost* (grandfather of Hon. A. J. Provost), who escaped the pursuit of a detachment of British soldiers on Greenpoint, and was obliged to secrete himself for three days in Cripplebush swamp; during which time he sustained life by milking the cows which pastured there; of *John A. Meserole*, who was taken and confined in the Pro-

vost jail at New York; of *John I. Meserole* who was mistaken for John A., while out gunning in a skiff, and arrested as a spy, but subsequently released; and of *Abraham Meserole*, another member of the same family who was in the American army. *Jacob Van Cott* and *David Miller* were also in the service, and taken prisoners. *William Conselyea* was taken during the war, and hung over a well and threatened in order to make him confess where his money was; *Nicholas Wyckoff* was engaged in vidette duty with a troop of horse; and *Alexander Whaley* was one of those decided characters of whom we should be glad to learn more than we have been able to ascertain, in spite of much inquiry and research. He was a blacksmith, residing at the Bushwick Cross Roads, on land forming a part of Abraham Rapalye's forfeited estates, and which he purchased at the commissioners' sale, March 21, 1785. (Liber vi, *Convey. Kings Co.*, 345). The building which Mr. Whaley occupied was erected by himself, on the south side of the present Flushing avenue, his liberty-sign pole rising from a little knoll some twenty feet west of the house. His blacksmith-shop was on the site of the present house, east of the old Whaley house. He died at Bushwick, in February, 1833, in the eighty-eighth year of his age. Bold, faithful, and patriotic, and odd withal, he made his mark upon the day and generation in which he lived. His obituary notice (all too brief) says that "he was one of the pioneers of American liberty; being one of those who assisted in throwing the tea overboard in Boston harbor. He was the confidential friend of Washington, and in all the relations of life he always did his duty."

Several estates were confiscated, among which were those of *Williams*, *Rapalje* and others; the owners finding it convenient to go to Nova Scotia.

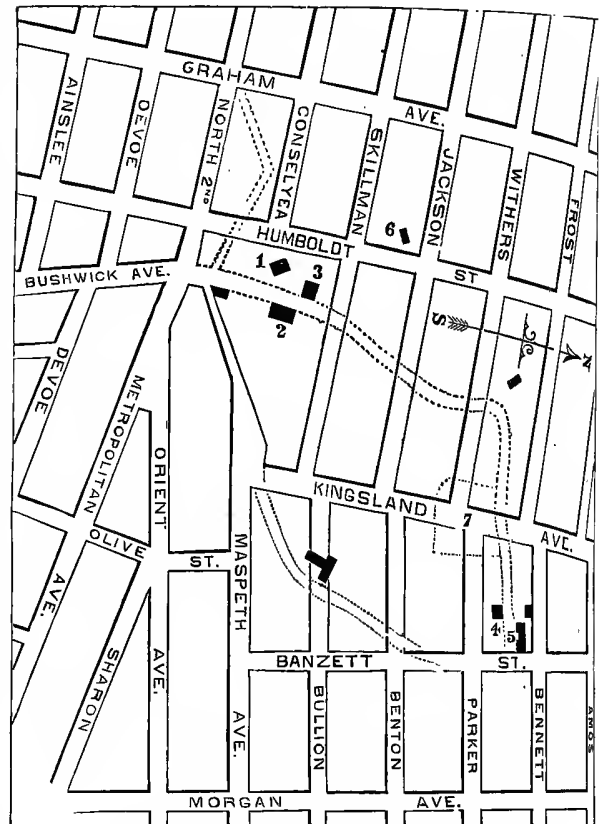
Although opposite political opinions were frequently entertained by different members of the same families, it is worthy of remark that they always acted honestly towards one another. Though a great number of the inhabitants of Bushwick were whigs, the royalists even were men of peaceable character and integrity. This fact, as recorded by a venerable eye witness of the Revolution, speaks volumes in favor of the ancestry of Bushwick.

Bushwick, from the Close of the Revolution to 1854.—There were in Bushwick, at the close of the Revolution, three distinct settlements, or centres of population, each retaining its old Dutch name, and very much of its old Dutch quaintness of appearance. These were *het dorp*, the town plot, first laid out by Gov. Peter Stuyvesant, in 1661, at the junction of North Second street and Bushwick avenue; *het Kivis padt*, since known as the Cross roads, at the crossing of the present Bushwick avenue and the Flushing road; and *het strand*, or the strand, along the East river shore.

Het Dorp, or the town plot of Bushwick, was the

centre of town life, towards which all the principal roads of the settlement verged; and, in every direction, as the citizen receded from it, he receded from civilization.

MAP D.



HET DORP, OR BUSHWICK GREEN.

- | | |
|--|---------------------|
| 1. Bushwick Church. | 4. Devoe Houses. |
| 2. Town-House. | 5. Conselyea House. |
| 3. School House. | 6. Conselyea House. |
| 7. Old Bushwick graveyard, indicated by dotted line. | |

The remains of ancient Bushwick, says the *Newtown Anti-quary*, Mr. WM. O'GORMAN, "cluster around the Dutch Reformed Church on the confines of North Second and Humboldt streets, Brooklyn, E. D., where the animosity of Governor Stuyvesant planted them in 1661, to gratify his hatred against the English Kills of Newtown. On March 14th, 1661, he probably emerged from the old Conselyea House on Humboldt street—irascible old man that he was—supporting a heavy dinner on his historic wooden leg, rather unsteadied from heavy lager, and pronounced and christened the new village 'BOSWIJCK,' which the moderns have made Bushwick, the Low Dutch name for 'heavy woods.' The venerable homestead of the *Conselyea* family stands angleways to Humboldt street; with its front looking, as of yore, on old Bushwick Church, its rear to Jackson street. It is worth a visit. Part of the building has been lately cut away. The last occupant of the name was 'Aunt Katty,' widow of And'w J. Conselyea. She died in 1873, and the family of Conselyea departed with her coffin through the old portals of the homestead, never to return. A writer of that day thus describes the rooms left vacant: 'The window sills are of sufficient capacity to seat three men comfortably, and are each one foot in depth; the window sashes are the same as were originally placed here, with nine small 6x7 panes of glass in each sash.'

The ceiling of this room is particularly worthy of notice. It is supported by five ponderous beams that measure $14\frac{1}{2} \times 7\frac{1}{2}$ inches in thickness, and are twenty feet long. They are painted brown, and give the room rather a gloomy appearance. The flooring is of boards that are 17 inches in width, and these broad boards always mark a house as very ancient. The old cupboard of 150 years ago was removed to Jamaica, and is now preserved in the house of John Conselyea, of that township; it was and is yet an ornamental piece of furniture."

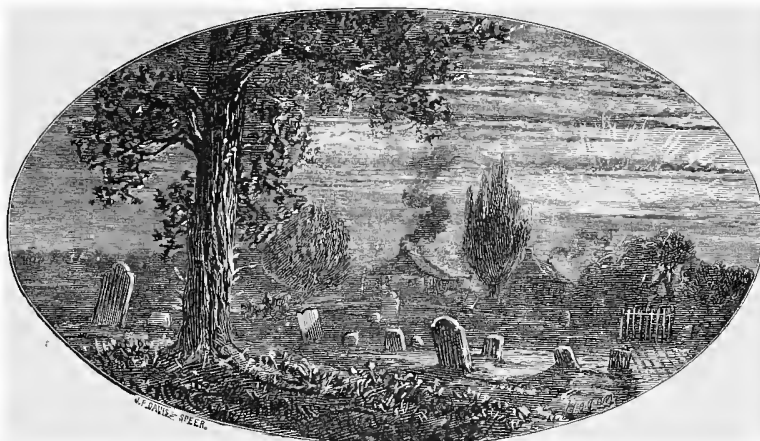
The old Bushwick church was an octagonal edifice, standing on the site of, and facing the same way as the present one. Its portrait will be found in the *Ecclesiastical History of Kings County*. The wrinkled and homely old one-story town-house, and the school-house on the opposite side of the Wood-point road, which leads from the church to a point of woods on the meadows, near Van Cott and Meeker avenues; the group of one-story Dutch cottages, with their long curved sloping roofs, marking the entrance of *Kyckout lane*, which connected Bushwick church with Kyckout or Lookout point, on the East river, crossing Grand street near Tenth; all these formed a scene of primitive Dutch life, exceedingly attractive from its simplicity and almost grotesque quaintness. And, so it remained until 1835. In 1840, the old church (Map D, Fig. 1), was replaced by the present edifice. In 1846, Maspeth avenue was opened to Newtown, and several houses erected upon it, this side of the creek. The old town-house yet stands (Map D, Fig. 2), and around it centre the memories of the ancient, civil, ecclesiastical and educational glories of Bushwick. In front of it (or more probably of its predecessor), contumacious John of Leyden was exposed to the public gaze, ignominiously tied to a stake, with a horse-bridle in his mouth, a bundle of rods under his arm and a label on his breast, stating that he was a writer of lampoons, etc. Here, too, a thief was once punished by being made to stand under a gallows, with a rope around his neck and an empty sword scabbard in his hand; and here, also, saddest sight of all, a venerable clergyman of the town, who had incautiously married a couple without observing the formalities demanded by the law, was condemned to flogging and banishment; a sentence, however, which, in consideration of his gray hairs, was commuted to that of exile from the town.

"Long after the Revolution, the old town-house continued to be the high seat of justice, and to resound with the republican roar of vociferous electors on town meetings days. The first Tuesday in April, and the fourth of July, in each succeeding year, found *het-dorp* (now Anglicized to Bushwick Church), suddenly metamorphosed from a sleepy little Dutch hamlet into a brawling, swaggering country town, with very de-

bauched habits. Our Dutch youth had a most enthusiastic tendency and ready facility in adopting the convivial customs and uproarious festivity of the loud-voiced and arrogant Anglo-American youngsters. One day the close-fisted electors of Bushwick devised a plan for easing the public burden, by making the town-house pay part of the annual taxes; and, accordingly, it was rented to a Dutch publican, who afforded shelter to the justices and constables, and by his potent liquors contributed to furnish them with employment. In this mild partnership, so quietly aiding to fill each other's pockets, our old friend Chris. Zimmerman had a share until he was ousted, because he was a better customer than landlord. At last the electors of Bushwick grew tired of keeping a hotel, and sold the venerable structure to an infidel Yankee, at whose bar the good dominie could no longer feel free to take an inspiring cup before entering the pulpit; and the glory of the town-house of Bushwick departed." (FIELD).

The school-house which stood near (Map D, Fig. 3), was occupied by a district school until within a few years past—latterly under the charge of the Board of Education.

In sight of the church, and covering the present

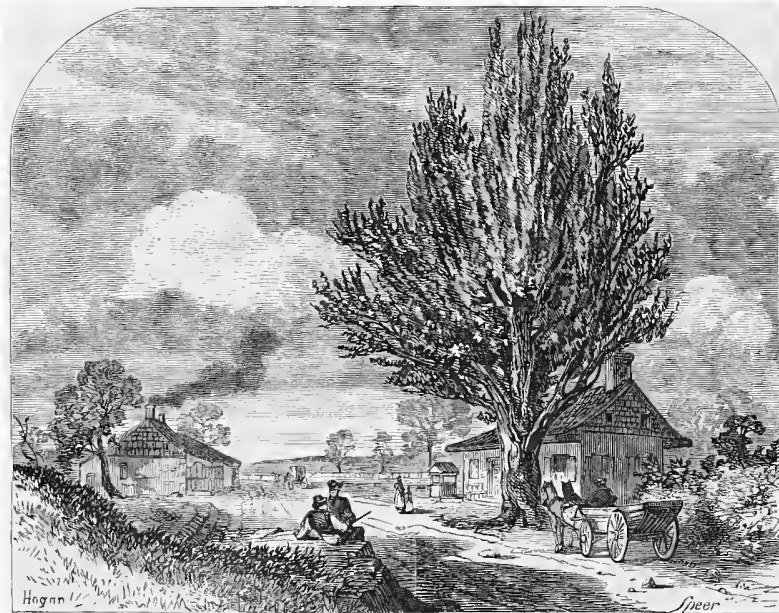


OLD BUSHWICK GRAVEYARD.

junction of Parker street and Kingsland avenue, was the ancient graveyard of the original Dutch settlement, for many years unused and its few remaining monuments neglected, broken and almost undecipherable. In 1879, Isaac De Bevoise, grandson of Isaac, who was here buried, undertook the pious duty of removing such remains as were left. He collected seven large casket-boxes of bones, whose identification was impossible; besides a few remains which were identified by neither coffin-plates or headstone. He estimated them at 250 skeletons, and he remarked that all had sound teeth—save the one tooth which used to hold the Dutch pipe. The work of removal was done at the expense of the old families, under the direction of the Consistory of the Church; and the boxes are deposited under Bushwick Church. The few inscriptions in this

old burial-place have been preserved by STILES, in *Hist. of Brooklyn*, ii. 374; and by Town-Clerk WM. O'GORMAN, in the *L. I. City Weekly Star*, Dec. 31, 1880.

From the old burying-ground, and looking along the old Woodpoint road, the two venerable De Voe houses might be seen (Map D, 4 and 5), standing (on either side the old road) between Parker and Bennett streets, near De Bevoise avenue. They are well depicted in the accompanying sketch taken in the fall of 1867.



THE DE VOE HOUSES, AS SEEN FROM THE OLD GRAVEYARD.

On De Bevoise avenue was the old De Bevoise house, later known as the residence of Charles I. De Bevoise. Here, again, we must let our Newtown friend, Town-Clerk WM. O'GORMAN describe:

"The 'Manor House' on Meeker Avenue is a good point to stroll from, when historically inclined, towards old Bushwick township. Here wound its way the Woodpoint road to the old town dock; and here, within sight of each other on opposite sides of Meeker Avenue, are the Wyckoff and DeBevoise homesteads. Each of them has its history, antedating the Declaration of Independence by many years. But each house has likewise a middle history, connecting the past generation with the present by two living and hearty links. * * In the Manor house we see the birth-place of Nicholas Wyckoff, President of the First National Bank. He was Supervisor of Bushwick town. Step across Meeker Avenue, and on the edge of the open lots stands the old DeBevoise house. Charles I. DeBevoise was born in that house, and he too became a Supervisor of Bushwick township. We believe they are the only representatives of Bushwick now remaining.

"Bushwick, from its birth under the old Dutch Governor Stuyvesant, was a lively little township, and much prone to irritate her neighbors. In fact she was a thin wedge driven from Greenpoint to the ocean, right through the extremities of several sleepy towns; and, as her humor was, she constantly kept one or other of them awake. The Supervisor of

little Bushwick of that date must be active, of an aggressive turn of mind, but withal good-humored, and endowed with the vitality of perfect health. These were the *sine-qua-nons* demanded of all candidates in her elections; which were a species of Olympic games once a year to her.

"The competitors were many, and to be successful was esteemed of great honor. Charles I. DeBevoise and Nicholas Wyckoff bore off these honors in their day. In their stock of health they out-distanced all competitors. It is doubtful if either of them has lost a tooth—they are neither of them venerable—they are merely men containing some eighty years of accurate recollections and of the best health. This represents their physical condition, the only province of the tourist. Their reputation as citizens is known of all." [Mr. Wyckoff died while these pages were passing through the press.—Editor.]

"The 'Wyckoff House' was erected by Theodorus Polhemus, of Flatbush, who married Anna Brinckerhoff here, and here settled. He afterwards became the chosen representative of Bushwick in the Congress and Conventions, from 1775 to 1777. He died in 1781, and after Independence his children sold out to Peter Wyckoff, the father of the President of the First National Bank. But the Wyckoffs still held, and still do hold, their ancestral farm on the boundary-line between Brooklyn and Newtown, beyond Metropolitan Avenue. The ex-Supervisor resided there; while the Polhemus-Wyckoff estate, with its old house, has passed to the stranger."

Of the genealogies and romances of the *Polhemus* and connected families of *Schencks*, *Rikers*, *Remsens* and *Larramores*, the TOWN-CLERK discourses most genially and instructively.

"Thirty years since and the Manor House grounds on Meeker avenue presented a Baronial appearance; the Wyckoff woods and the Wyckoff-Polhemus house had retained all its companion trees, barns and out-houses. Two immense poplars stood sentries at the gate on the Woodpoint road; they have yielded to time, and are no more. In the last stages of their decay, our thoughts often reverted to the times when the Bushwick farmers carried their produce to the old town-dock past the same trees and watched the growth of the young saplings newly planted.

Thirty years ago, and nothing was disturbed along the Woodpoint road, on its way to the town-dock of Bushwick; but, in 1880, all is uprooted, and the town-dock itself and its tide-water are traversed over by the horse-cars. The spectators of the old poplars never dreamt of such changes; but the Wyckoff house is now, as ever, a farm-house.

The DeBevoise house is also on the old Woodpoint road; and, for generations, was the homestead of the DeBevoise family, of Bushwick, descended from Carel DeBevoise, the Huguenot, who became the first school-teacher and town-clerk of Brooklyn. It still belongs to Charles I. DeBevoise, and in that house he was born, and there, too, he was married—once, if not twice; and we believe history records that his father, Isaac DeBevoise, did also endure similar experience of these changes in life. The ex-Supervisor resides in the large mansion adjoining the old house, nor have his eyes ever failed, for upwards of eighty years, to rest on the place

of his nativity—which circumstance is rather a unique experience of constancy in this our land of change. The Schenck family, of Brooklyn, are closely entwined with these DeBevoises, of Bushwick; in proof of which, on a window of the old house, remains the name of a bride from that family, cut on her wedding-day, immediately before she had assumed her new name of DeBevoise. The fifth generation are now represented in continuous residence from Carel DeBevoise, of 1736, who was a farmer, and the first of the name in Bushwick, to Charles I., and his son, Isaac DeBevoise; and, still later, to a six-year old boy, the son of this last Isaac.

The barn of the DeBevoise house is precisely as the Hessians of General Rahl had left it—warm and comfortable in a plentiful neighborhood, which these warriors of so much per head soon learned to appreciate and fully to enjoy. To the sound of the drum they trampled down, in 1776, a new clay floor; and, this accomplished, they eat, drank and smoked out their long occupation. Of the English tongue, they learned but little from the natives of Bushwick, who, indeed, knew little of it themselves; all spoke in Dutch, and in secret they cleaved together until the war was over. Few of them returned to Europe; many remained in Bushwick; Louis Warner, who lived near Cooper's glue factory, Hendrick Plaus, and Christopher Zimmerman, who, for many years, was miller at Luquere's mill, were of this number, and are yet well remembered. The Prince of Hesse made money by their absence; a Hessian lost to him was a clear gain—such being the terms of bargain and sale of that Princely Potentate with Royal George III., of England. It was a glorious bargain for all parties, save to King George, who had to pay expenses."

On Bushwick avenue, near the north-east corner of that avenue and North Second street, was the old Beadel house, now used as a grocery-store; and several other old houses long remained in the immediate neighborhood of the church. North-west of the church and close to Bushwick creek was the residence of Abram Van Ranst, a lieutenant of the Kings County Militia, who fled, with his family, to Harlem, at the time of the battle of Brooklyn. His house became the head-quarters of Mr. Pherson's corps of refugees and tories.

Het Kwis Padt, or the Cross-roads, on Bushwick avenue, between Johnson and Adams streets, long retained several of the old houses which clustered there in the olden time.

The inhabitants residing along the water-side (*Het Strand* of the olden day) at the close of the Revolution, were Martin Kershow, David Miller, Charles Titus, Andrew Conselyea, Thomas Skillman, Francis Titus, William Bennett and John Titus. Speaking of the Titus family, JOHN M. STEARNS, Esq., says:

"But as we passed northerly along the shore, we came to an ancient tavern, since fronting on First street, just south of Grand, on land conveyed to Francis Titus by Isaac Meserole, prior to 1758. By whom this celebrated public house, known for generations as the '*Fountain Inn*,' was built, I do not know. Its site was devised by Francis Titus to his son, Charles, who was known as old 'Charlum Titus,' and who kept this place for many years. Of a Saturday night, the settlers usually gathered around its bar, and contributed to a weekly carousal, and bacchanal songs, such as should have startled the sensibilities of a Christian people.

As a general result, in less than half a century, three-fourths of the farms in town had changed hands through the ruin wrought by the influence of the Fountain Inn. Passing this noted inn, our pathway leads past the old Titus Homestead, where the Francis Tituses, for three generations, lived and died. Here we pause to relate an incident illustrative of human gratitude and human selfishness. Teunis Mauritz Covert died at Monmouth, N. J., seized of the land since known as the old Titus Homestead, many years previous to 1719. Francis Titus had married his widow, and brought up his children. The eldest son, Teunis Covert, under the laws then prevailing, was the sole heir of this farm, to the exclusion of all his father's younger children. On the 16th of May, 1719, this Teunis Covert makes a deed of this farm to Francis Titus, his '*loving father-in-law*,' for his care and expense in bringing up the grantor and his father's other children; and then described the home and farm as occupied by the grantee, containing fifty-eight acres, &c. This land continued in the possession of Titus for over thirty years, but the generous step-son was not remembered in the step-father's will, made some thirty years afterwards. Devising a large estate to the testator's own children, to wit: Francis, Charles, Jan, Johannes and Titus Titus, and charging thereon legacies to his daughters, Antie, Hellen, Elizabeth, Janetje, Hyeotte and Christina, reserving an estate for life or during widowhood, to his wife, Elizabeth—yet, his step-children are all forgotten; and this Elizabeth he turns out to poverty if she marries again. The step-son, who generously gave up his estate, an inheritance from his ancestors, received not even an honorable mention when the recipient of his benefaction made his last earthly preparation for his death-bed.

Pursuing our way along the East River shore, we come to the old homestead of the *Wortmans*, who, for nearly a hundred years, had an honorable name among the denizens of Bushwick, and only ceased to be mentioned as leading citizens about 1780. This old homestead is now represented by a more modern domicile near Bushwick creek and Second street, on property now of General Samuel I. Hunt. The farm originally had ninety-six acres, some forty acres of the western part having passed to one William Laytin, and by him was sold to Francis Titus, mentioned above. The remainder was owned by one William Bennett, and was devised by him to his son William, as to the northwestern part, and to Jacob Bennett, as to the southeasterly part. The former passed to William Vail, and through him to the wife of Samuel I. Hunt; the latter was afterward known as the farm of Frost, O'Handy, Butler and Sinclair."

Subsequently, but prior to 1798, were erected the houses of Peter Miller and Frederic Devoe. In 1798, also, William Van Cotts resided at the Sweede's Fly. One by one, however, these old farm-houses have disappeared before long rows of modern brick dwellings.

The *Boerum House*, on Division avenue, between Broadway and Kent avenue (see cut on next page), and the *Remsen* house, on Clymer street, near Kent avenue, long remained as mementoes of the past.

Old Bushwick Mills—both tide mills.—*Luquere's* (later known as Master's), erected in the year 1664, by Abraham Jansen, who received a grant of the mill-site and privileges, was, with the exception of Brower's mill, on Gowanus creek, the first established in the present city of Brooklyn. It stood on a branch of Maspeth (Newtown) creek, near the junction of

Grand street and Metropolitan avenue. "A few years since," says Mr. T. W. Field, "there was no more striking scene near the metropolis than the view at this point. As the road to Jamaica struck the marsh, a rude bridge, with the most fragile railing which ever deluded a tired passenger to lean against it, crossed a narrow strait in the mill-pond. A few rods to the left stood an unpainted hovel dignified with the name of the Mill, against the side of which, and dwarfing it by comparison, hung suspended the gigantic wheel. Close to the bridge stood another tenement whose meaner appearance made the mill-house respectable. This was the toll-house, one of a class of structures which are only less universally detested than the quarantine and the pest-house. Across the broad level marsh, nearly a mile in width, rose the hills of Newtown, covered with their tall forests, amid which, here and there, open spaces of cultivated lands checkered the green expanse with squares of brown earth or crops of various colors. Through the green salt-meadow, the slumbrous tide-water currents wound their unseen courses; and, in the midst of the verdure, rose the broad sails of vessels, which appeared as incongruous with the green meadow as would a western prairie over which tall ships were sailing. A mile or more to the right, on another branch of Maspeth kill, stood



THE BOERUM HOUSE.

another structure, known as *Schenck's mill*, the site of which is only known by tradition, so completely have its ruins been concealed by alluvial deposits, swept by the rains from the cultivated fields around." Near at hand, behind the house of Mr. Nicholas Wyckoff, was still the little burying-ground where slept all of that name who heard the clatter of the mill and the splash of the sluggishly turning wheel. "The Schencks were of old Bushwick, from its settlement in the primitive times, when the Newtown tide-water ebbed and flowed to the boundary of the little plot; but now the rail-track bounds the cemetery on the one side, and the gas-lamps of Brooklyn illuminate it by night; evidences of modern habits quite inconsistent with the notions of those who spent their quiet lives to the sound of the old Schenck mill—the site of which is hardly in the traditions of the venerable Nich-

olas Wyckoff himself. The old road from John Eden's store on Metropolitan avenue around its junction with Newtown and Brooklyn retains its Knickerbocker aspect with singular tenacity; the more wonderful because the road is a frequented thoroughfare, but traffic glides past in silence and respects the repose of houses formerly much disturbed by the military tramp of the Revolution." Sixteen head-stones occupy the Schenck Cemetery; the remaining inscriptions are preserved in *STILES' History of Brooklyn*, ii, 378, but more particularly in a valuable article, by Wm. O'GORMAN, Esq., Town Clerk of Newtown, in *L. I. Weekly Star* for January 14, 1881.

The physician of old Bushwick was Dr. Cornelius Lowe, who enjoyed the practice of Bushwick, New Lotts and a part of Newtown. He was an ardent patriot, unmarried, boarded with Alexander Whalley and died about 1830. He was succeeded by Dr.

George Cox, who boarded in the Rev. Dr. Basset's family, removed to Williamsburgh after it became a village, and became connected by marriage with the Miller family.

Greenpoint since the Revolution. — Isolated by its peculiar position between Newtown and Bushwick creeks, and occupied only by a few large farms, GREENPOINT, or "Cherry-Point," as it was formerly

called, may be said to have enjoyed an almost separate existence from the rest of the old township of Bushwick. It contained, during the Revolutionary period, and for years after, only five (Dutch) families, each having its own dwelling-house, its own farm, and its own retinue of jolly negroes in field and kitchen.

On the shore of Newtown creek, on present Clay street, between Union and Franklin avenues, resided JACOB BENNETT, whose father, then quite an old man, owned and lived upon a farm on the opposite side of the creek, which he subsequently gave to his son-in-law, Mr. Hunter, from whom it derived its present name of *Hunter's Point*.

Some years after the war, another Bennett house was erected near the present bridge, and was subsequently sold to a Yankee by the name of Griffin; but this, likewise, has disappeared before the march of improvement.

On the edge of the meadows near the north-east corner of the present Oakland and Freeman streets, on premises since owned by James W. Valentine, stood the old Provoost dwelling, which was the original Capt. Peter Praa house. See page 274.

On the river bank, between India and Java streets, was the old ABRAHAM MESEROLE house; which was originally built more than one hundred and sixty years since, although the western part of it was added about 1775. John A. Meserole, a descendant of the original proprietor and a Revolutionary patriot, had possession of the place at the time of the Revolution. A troop of Hessians were quartered in the house, and made free with all the live stock on the farm, except one cow, which the family hid in the woods, in a nook since occupied by S. D. Clark's grocery store. A building known as the Baisley house was afterward erected on this estate, on the present Huron street, near Franklin.

On Colyer street, near and east from Washington, stood the house of old JACOBUS COLYER, the worthy ancestor of all of that name in this vicinity.

The last of the series of these originals was the residence of JACOB MESEROLE, near Bushwick creek, on Lorimer street, near Norman avenue.

These five buildings, with their barns and barracks, and the old slate-enclosed *powder-house*, below the hill (on the spot since covered by Simonson's ship-yard, and which was afterwards removed as an undesirable neighbor), constituted the whole of Greenpoint settlement.

Cherry Point was almost isolated because of a peculiar lack of facilities for communication with the outer world. The only road, from there to any place, began at old Abraham Meserole's barn, ran diagonally across, north-east to the east end of Freeman street, then past the Provoost premises, then south to Willow Pond, thence along the meadow to the Cross-roads, and from that point to Wyckoff's woods, so to old Bushwick church "round Robin Hood's barn" to Fulton Ferry, where the wearied traveler embarked in a ferry-scow for Coenties slip, at the city, and was thankful if he arrived there in safety, it being a little more than he had reason to expect. As for going to Astoria, it has been described as being something like taking a journey to the Moon; there being no road thither, until the erection of the Penny-bridge, in 1796, which let the people out into the mysteries of the island, and left them to feel their way around in the woods to Astoria. Each farmer, however, owned his boat with which he conveyed produce to the New York market; and, for all practical purposes of intercommunication with each other or with their friends in Newtown, Bushwick or Brooklyn, they used the boat much more frequently, perhaps, than the road.

The modern history of Greenpoint dates from the year 1832, when Nezia Bliss, in connection with Dr. Eliphalet Nott, purchased some thirty acres of the

John G. and Peter Meserole farm. In 1833, he bought the Griffin farm; and in 1834 he caused the whole of Greenpoint to be laid out in streets. In 1838 he built a foot-bridge across Bushwick creek. At about the same time the Point was re-surveyed, and the Ravenswood, Greenpoint, and Hallet's Cove turnpike was incorporated. This road, which was opened in 1839, ran along Franklin street, and was subsequently continued to Williamsburgh. Although, even as late as 1853, this road was not graded, it proved to be the opening door to the growth of Greenpoint.

The first house-builder was John Hillyer, the mason, who boldly broke ground in the field on India street, in November, 1839; the edifice, a substantial brick one, being sufficiently completed to admit of his occupying it with his family, in June of the following year. A few months after, Mr. Brightson commenced building on two lots in Java street, and almost simultaneously, three other buildings were begun, viz.: a building, which afterwards became an inn, well remembered by the oldest inhabitants of Greenpoint as Poppy Smith's tavern; the residence of Mr. Archibald K. Meserole, on the hill, north side of Eagle street, between Franklin and Washington streets; and the store-house, afterwards Vogt's paint shop, built by Cother & Ford for A. K. Meserole.

From this time buildings increased so rapidly as to defy the most active historian to keep track of their erection.

Many of these houses stood up on stilts, bearing very much the appearance of having been commenced at the roof and gradually built downward, a sufficient number of stories being appended to reach the ground. This style of building, peculiarly characteristic of Greenpoint in the earlier days, obtained mostly on the locality known by the people of that day as "the Orchard," and, also, in Java, Washington and Franklin streets, and was rendered necessary by the extreme depth of the *mud*, always the great drawback of the place.

Trade at Greenpoint commenced in the store-house above spoken of. David Swalm succeeded the first tradesman here.

A coal-yard was opened at the foot of Freeman street, on the East River, at the projection of the shore which originally gave Greenpoint its name. This establishment was purchased, in 1849, by Abraham Meserole, who transferred the business to the corner of Java and Franklin streets; and the yard was speedily followed by other lines of industry, and by various manufactories.

A Union *Sabbath-school* was established in the autumn of 1845, under the superintendence of William Vernoon; and sessions were held at various places in the village. The Episcopalians commenced here in 1846. The Methodist, Baptist, and Dutch Reformed denominations commenced their distinctive church or-

ganizations in 1847, and were followed by the Universalists and Roman Catholics in 1855.

The profession of *medicine* was first represented in Greenpoint by Dr. Snell, from Herkimer county, N. Y., who settled here in 1847. He was followed in 1850 by Dr. Job Davis, and he, in turn, by Doctors Peer and Hawley, Heath, Wells, and others.

The first magistrate and constable were appointed about 1843.

Mrs. Masquerier, in 1643, opened the *first school*. This good woman's ministrations were finally supplanted by the public-school system; and in 1846, a school-house was erected on the hill east of Union avenue, between Java and Kent streets, and which was first presided over by Mr. B. R. Davis. This was the commencement of School No. 22.

In 1850 a *ship-yard* was established by Mr. Eckford Webb (since Webb & Bell); and the first vessel constructed was a small steamer called the *Honda*, which was made to ply upon the Magdalena river of South America. Since that day he has constructed many vessels. Other ship-yards were established, until ten or twelve were at one time in active operation, turning out every variety of craft, from the humble skiff to the largest wood and iron steamers.

In September, 1852, the *Francis' Metallic Life-Boat Company* was incorporated, with a capital of \$250,000, and erected a large and commodious factory. They had a successful career, until the repeal, by Congress, of that section of the steamboat law respecting life-boats, when the demand fell off, and, so did the company.

The *ferry* between the foot of Greenpoint avenue and the foot of Tenth street, New York, was established, in 1852, by Nezhiah Bliss, and soon afterwards transferred to Mr. Shepard Knapp. Previously, all water communication with New York had been by skiffs, at a charge of four cents per passenger.

In 1853 the *Greenpoint Gas Light Company* was incorporated, with a capital of \$40,000, and a patronage at the outset of *twenty-six* customers. In the summer of 1854, what was projected as the *Greenpoint and Flushing plank-road* was first used. The intended termini of this road were the Greenpoint ferry and a point on the Astoria and Flushing railroad, half a mile from the latter place. By reason of the opposition of some Dutch farmers along the proposed route the road was not completed according to the original design; but united with the Williamsburgh and Newtown road at the end of Calvary cemetery.

(The history of Greenpoint, subsequent to 1854, is included with that of the consolidated city of Brooklyn).

Arbitration Rock.—We have thought desirable to place in permanent form, by re-producing it in these pages, the substance of a very interesting article by WILLIAM O'GORMAN, Esq., the antiquarian town-clerk,

of Newtown, published originally in the *Long Island Weekly Star*, concerning this historic land-mark between Old Bushwick and its neighbor, Newtown.

"Arbitration Rock" marked the final end of that famous fight between Newtown and Bushwick, which raged with unabated fury, from the days of Governor Stuyvesant, in 1660, to 1769. Stuyvesant loved Bushwick. He hated Newtown. He bequeathed a legacy of rancor to the two towns; but he also opened up a field on which all the brave sons of either town could display their determination to defend their boundary rights.

In Governor Cornbury's time the dispute between Newtown and Bushwick had waxed hot and furious to a white heat. It suited the Governor to a charm. He "saw" twelve hundred acres in it—he "discovered sinister practices," he realized "pernicious consequences."

The Bushwick men claimed that their boundary extended to the straight line which ran from the Old Brook School to the northwest corner of Jamaica. The Newtown men claimed that their boundary ran from the "Arbitration Rock" to the same point; or more clearly to be understood—the Newtown men claimed up to the present dividing line between Newtown and Brooklyn, where the city lamps shine on old Mrs. Onderdonk's house.

It is a long walk on a hot day from the Old Brook School to Mrs. Onderdonk's house beyond Metropolitan avenue: the longer it was, the more acres it would give to Lord Cornbury, the Governor of the province. The evidence was very conflicting between Newtown and Bushwick. The boundary line oscillated between them like a pendulum, from the arbitration rock to the Old Brook School, and so for years it had vibrated back and forward, but fastened to the same suspension point on the East New York hills in the Cemetery of the Evergreens. It was a large gore of land, and contained 1200 acres of land for Lord Cornbury. There were riots between the Bushwick men and the Newtown men, and some houses were burnt and some houses were torn down. Governor Lord Cornbury, of all men, hated "anarchy;" and he considered it to be the duty of an impartial Governor to remove the cause of such anarchy. He decided that the gore lot of 1200 acres belonged neither to Bushwick, nor to Newtown. *He also decided that the tract of 1200 acres belonged to himself, the Lord Cornbury.*

He was surrounded by a body of able counselors—Arma Bridgens, Robert Millwood, William Huddleston, Adrian Hoogland, and of course Peter Praa—Peter Praa from Greenpoint, always keen after real estate; and among these disinterested persons, or instruments, in vulgar eyes, the Governor divided the 1200 acres of Newtown land. Newtown, at this unexpected juncture, had need of trustworthy men, and on the 6th of May, 1706, the township vested all their

powers of defence in Richard Alsop,* Joseph Sackett, Thomas Stevenson and William Hallett. This law-suit lasted twenty years, and the Town House and all the public lands of the township had to be sold to fee the lawyers, a useful precedent for future Newtown officials who may have to carry on law-suits. The result of that law-suit was not decisive; the boundary line between Newtown and Bushwick remained undecided until the 7th day of January, 1769, on which day the dividing line was run out to the full satisfaction of Newtown, and so remains to the present day.

What became of the grantees after Lord Cornbury's recall is not positively known; Newtown fought them under the name of the "Faucouniers" from 1712 to 1727, in a suit in which Richard Alsop and John Coe were plaintiffs on behalf of Newtown. Peter Praa, of Greenpoint, had sold out his patent two days after it was granted. Peter was too sagacious to trust to such titles; but the name of Bridgens, true to its instincts, broke out again in 1873, as a plaintiff in the celebrated ejectment suit against the property owners of Laurel Hill, so sensationally got up by Weston, the walker. In the columns of the *Sun* he had provided an old oaken chest with an ancient will in it, both of which little adjuncts made up a little romance only to be spoiled by the fact of the same will having been in printed form for twenty-five years previously, and continuously in every house on Laurel Hill. So history repeats itself.

The following report terminated the dispute of a century:

"Pursuant to an act of the Governor, Council and General Assembly, appointing John Watts, William Nicoll and William Nicoll, Jr., Esquires, or the major part of them, or the survivor or survivors of them, Commissioners to run out and ascertain a line of division between the Counties of Kings and Queens, as far as the townships of Bushwick and Newtown extend:—We, the said Commissioners, having called the parties before us, and duly heard and considered their several proofs and allegations, do adjudge and determine that the Division Line aforesaid, shall be and begin at the mouth of Maspeth Kills, or creek, over against Dominie's Hook, in the deepest part of the creek, and so run along the same to the west side of Smith's Island, and so along the creek on the west side of that island TO AND UP A BRANCH LEADING OUT OF THAT CREEK TO THE POND OR HOLE OF WATER NEAR THE HEAD OF MR. SCHENCK'S MILL POND; AND FROM THENCE EASTERLY TO A CERTAIN ROCK COMMONLY CALLED THE 'ARBITRATION ROCK,' AND MARKED N. B., a little westward of the house of Joseph Woodward; and from said rock running south twenty-seven degrees, east to a heap of stones with a stake in the middle known by the name of the 'Arbitration Heap;' and from thence in the same direct line up the hills or mountains until it meets the line of

Flatbush, as the same is described by the survey and card hereunto annexed.

In witness whereof, we have hereunto set our hands and seals this 10th day of January, Anno Domini, 1769.

JOHN WATTS.

W. NICOLL.

Sealed in presence of us, W. Wickham, John S. Roome."

The *Annals of Newtown* tells us that the survey was performed, January 7th, by Francis Marschalk, and thus describes the boundaries:

"BEGINNING AT A CERTAIN ROCK, COMMONLY CALLED THE ARBITRATION ROCK, MARKED N. B.; said rock lies N. 16 degrees 3 minutes W. 4 chains 50 links from the northerly corner of the house, formerly the house of Frederick Van Nanda, and now in possession of Moses Beigle; running from said rock S. 27 degrees E. 155 chains to a noted heap of stones, with a stake in the middle, known by the name of 'Arbitration heap,' and from thence in the same direct line up the hill or mountain until it meets the line of Flatbush."

The *Woodward House* still stands in the same good preservation that Lord Cornwallis left it in the Revolution; and the *Beegel House* is occupied by the Onderdonk family.

After the Revolution Mr. Hendrick Beegel made another survey of the line, and in 1837, during the Supervisorship of Mr. DeBevoise, the line was again run over and monuments erected over its entire length.

The late Mr. Nicholas Wyckoff, President of the First National Bank of Brooklyn, in 1880, made a proposition to the Commissioners appointed to re-survey the boundary line between Kings and Queens Counties; to "replace, at his own expense, by a monument to be approved of by the Commissioners, the old 'Arbitration Rock,' once of such importance, but blown to pieces by some parties ignorant of its historic and trigonometrical value as a 'Bench Mark' in the survey of the base line between Kings and Queens Counties."

A note in *Riker's Annals*, page 171, has led its readers into a labyrinth of confusion, and they have propagated the error far and wide—as the *Annals of Newtown* is a standard work every way worthy of its reputation for research and accurate details. The note reads:

"This house is that now occupied by Mrs. Onderdonk. Arbitration Rock has disappeared. It stood in the meadow lying opposite this house, on the other side of the road, and early in the present century was blown to pieces, and removed by individuals who probably knew not its value as an important land-mark."

In fact, however, the Arbitration Rock is as intact and sound as when the commissioners and surveyors were vociferating around it in January, 1769.

"On November 19th, 1880, another group of excited men, the late Nicholas Wyckoff, Peter Wyckoff and Wm. O'Gorman, stood around the same old rock watching its discovery by Martin G. Johnson, Surveyor. Mr. Johnson had found the old rock, from which he had started his own survey in 1850, when he had com-

* In this connection we cannot but allude to a series of exceedingly interesting papers, by Mr. O'Gorman in the *L. I. Weekly Star*, of March and April, 1880, on the ALSOP FAMILY, of Newtown, whose ancient mansion, rich in Colonial and Revolutionary history, stood on the edge of Newtown Creek, near the Penny Bridge. It was demolished in October, 1879, and its site, as, also, that of the Alsop family burying-ground, is now within Calvary Cemetery grounds.

menced to lay out the streets and blocks of Bushwick, and mark their position with the stone monuments, still existing in the ground, all over from Greenpoint, through all the limits of ancient Bushwick as contained in the several wards now incorporated into Brooklyn. Far off through all the fields Mr. Johnson determined his angles with the theodolite and measuring-chain; from many distant points he defined the position of monuments long since ploughed over; and, when he would call out that 'here is one,' or 'one ought to be here,' there was consequent excitement to dig down and see that his calculation was correct. And, indeed, a monument was invariably found wherever the word was passed that one ought to be found. The same process through the fields revealed them in plenty; but large trees had grown up since the monuments were set in 1850, and the face of nature had changed considerably since that time. But the trigonometrical work of the young surveyor still holds good and will be the permanent base-lines for all ages to old Bushwick, no matter what name will be granted her in the vicissitudes of time."

"Finally, the converging sights of the theodolite from all the monuments intersected each other on the time-honored head of *the old Rock*, and thus established its identity beyond question. The 'Arbitration Rock' is therefore *still in existence*."

"The history of the fight between Newtown and Bushwick—a legacy bequeathed by old Governor Stuyvesant—embraces the period included between 1656 and 1769. The territory included that gore-lot of country between the old Brook School at Maspeth and the Arbitration Rock beyond Metropolitan avenue, narrowing to a point toward the hills beyond Ridgwood. In that direction there is still some undefined trouble, and the Legislature of last year issued a commission to certain persons to settle it."

HENRY BOERUM.—Among the old Long Island names is that of BOERUM—a name which the citizens of Brooklyn have perpetuated in *Boerum street*, and *Boerum place*. The emigrant of the family was a Hollander, and his descendants, for many generations, have been landed proprietors on the Island. His father, Jacob Boerum, married Adrianna Remsen, a daughter of William Remsen, at the Wallabout. They had eight children—Henry being next to the youngest, born April 8, 1793. He passed the days of his boyhood on his father's farm, and during the idle winter months, availed himself of the limited educational advantages afforded by the public schools of his time and locality. After he grew to man's estate, he managed the farm, which, at that time, meant hard work, as all the market truck had to be carried to the Wallabout in a wagon, then put in a row-boat, pulled across to the New York market, and sold out by measure as the hucksters now do. On November 21, 1827, he married Susan Rapelje, a daughter of Folkert Rapelje, at Cripplebush, of the well-known family of that name, which has been prominently identified with Long Island almost from the date of its first settlement. May 1, 1828, he purchased

two acres of land, being a part of the old Rapelje farm, at Cripplebush, for the sum of \$7,000, on account of which he paid \$2,700—money which he received as a part of his wife's dowry—and gave a mortgage for the balance, \$4,300. He was a hard worker and good manager; and, in October, 1834, he had paid off his indebtedness, the executors having given him the privilege of paying on account of the principal when he paid his yearly interest. In 1835, during the great land speculation, the homestead farm was sold, by which he secured, as his part, several thousand dollars, which, together with his earnings, amounted, in 1842, to some \$20,000. About this time, the bubble burst, taking away from him the greater part of his income. He also sold, in 1835, three and one-half acres of the Cripplebush farm for \$3,500, with which he built the house now occupied by his son, F. Rapelje Boerum. In 1853, De Kalb avenue was opened, graded and paved through the farm, and Mr. Boerum began selling lots and making loans on the property to purchasers, enabling them to erect dwellings thereon. His policy toward purchasers was a liberal one, and resulted in the rapid development of that part of the city embraced within the limits of the Cripplebush farm, and indirectly to considerable contiguous property. Within the borders of the farm now stand some 500 or 600 houses. Mr. Boerum pursued a similar policy with respect to his part of the old Boerum homestead, at Bushwick; and, it was mainly through his instrumentality that the section commonly called Dutchtown was built up and populated. In all matters of public interest he always took an intelligent and helpful part; and, although he was not, in the active sense, a politician, his judgment was often sought by those in authority, and he was many times asked to become a candidate for public honors; but he almost invariably declined, though he served two terms as Assessor, and two as Alderman of the old 9th ward. He was, from time to time, connected with numerous well-known institutions, having been an organizer and director in the old Brooklyn Gas Company, the Mechanics' and City Banks, the Mechanics', Montauk and Atlantic Insurance Companies, and as stockholder in the Brooklyn Academy of Music, and the Brooklyn Athenæum. Mr. Boerum had seven children; a son and daughter died in infancy. *F. Rapelje Boerum* was born October 26, 1829, and now occupies the old homestead. He married Diana Remsen, May 26, 1868, and has three children living. *Charles* died in boyhood. *Susan* was born February 22, 1835, and married Charles Vanderveer, deceased, and has three children. *Adrianna*, born November 27, 1836, married Charles Bush, and *Agnes*, born September 27, 1839, died October 24, 1875. Mr. Boerum was a man of plain, unostentatious manners and unquestioned integrity. His life was a busy one from boyhood, and terminated May 8, 1868. In a quiet way he did much good, was instrumental in developing a now important part of the city, and left the impress of his business capacity and high commercial honor on the times in which he lived. He was a friend and companion of the leading Brooklynites of the period during his manhood; and his name is inseparably linked with that part of the city within the borders of which he lived and died. When he passed away his death was sincerely regretted by a large circle of friends and acquaintances, and such honor was paid to his memory as was due to one who had long been an influential resident of the city. His wife died May 18, 1859, aged fifty-seven years.

HON. WILLIAM CONSELYEA.—The subject of this article is a son of the late Judge Joseph and Ann (Hopper) Conselyea,



Henry Boccum



Wm Connelley

and was born in Bushwick, Kings county, N. Y., October 12, 1804.

Mr. Conselyea's early life was spent on his father's farm and in assisting his father in the milk trade, in which the latter was extensively engaged, and his educational advantages were limited to those afforded by the common schools of Bushwick. In 1835 he embarked in hotel-keeping at the corner of North Second street and Bushwick avenue, and, in 1840, removed to the corner of Grand and First streets, Williamsburgh, where he opened a wholesale and retail liquor store. In 1845, he assumed the proprietorship and management of a hotel at the corner of Bushwick and Flushing avenues. During a portion of this period, and later, he was a well-known auctioneer until his removal to his present residence, 457 Bedford avenue, in 1870, since which time he has lived retired from active business.

In 1840, Mr. Conselyea, who had, since his majority, been a consistent democrat of the old school, but never an aspirant for office, was nominated for Member of Assembly from Kings county, but was defeated by the election of his uncle, William Conselyea 1st. In 1842, he was again nominated for the same office, and was elected, and served until the expiration of his term.

April 6, 1825, Mr. Conselyea was married to Anna Maria Griffin, daughter of A. Tabor Griffin, of Bushwick, who has borne him nine children, two of whom are living. After a happy union of fifty-eight years' duration, both Mr. and Mrs. Conselyea are in excellent health, considering their ages, and are looking forward to several years more of peaceful companionship.

HON. ADRIAN M. SUYDAM.—Jacob Suydam, grandfather of Adrian Martense Suydam, was born February 3, 1740, settled at Bushwick and married Elizabeth Leaycraft, April 14th, 1764. He was a worthy and respected citizen, and died in Bushwick, July 27, 1811. His children, who attained mature age, were George, born June 20, 1767, who married Jane Voorhees, and died at Gravesend; Gertrude, born June 25, 1770, who married Adrian Martense; Jacob, who was born March 3, 1773, and married Cornelia Farmer, of New Brunswick, N. J., and Hendrick, who was born May 16, 1778, and married Helen, daughter of John Schenck.

Jacob Suydam, son of Jacob Suydam, was the father of Adrian Martense Suydam, and died August 31, 1847. Adrian Martense Suydam was born on the old Suydam homestead, in Bushwick, where he has been a life-long resident,

November 25, 1826, and is now tilling a portion of the farm of his forefathers.

Mr. Suydam's educational advantages were limited to those afforded by the district schools of his native town; and he early began to assist on the farm, a portion of which passed into his possession, in 1844, when he was only eighteen years of age, and which he has occupied continuously to the present time.

January 5, 1852, Mr. Suydam was married to Sarah G., daughter of Nicholas Wyckoff, who died in 1862, having borne him four children, only one of whom is now living.

Mr. Suydam, having passed his lifetime thus far on the homestead of his family for generations before him, has seen many changes in his section of the city—of Brooklyn—and is, at this date, the only farmer, except one, living along the old Bushwick road, who has spent his days on the place on which he was born.

In 1869, there was no house on the Suydam farm, except the ancient residence of Mr. Suydam, out of which his grandfather was driven by the British during the Revolutionary war. During the year mentioned, Mr. Suydam, wishing to induce settlement in his neighborhood with a view to developing that section of the city, gave a man a lot on condition that he would at once erect and occupy a dwelling thereon; and, since then, his policy has been so liberal that, at the present time, there are no less than one hundred and twenty-five residences within the borders of the old homestead, bounded by Knickerbocker avenue, Vigeliuss street, Broadway and Palmetto street. Palmetto street, Woodbine street, Evergreen avenue, Ivy street and Central avenue have since been opened through the homestead, and some of them are being rapidly improved. It was years after Mr. Suydam assumed control of his farm before there was any means of reaching the ferries, except by private conveyance, and he relates that he has seen men hunting on the site of the present City Park.

In 1855, Mr. Suydam was elected alderman from the eighteenth ward, and served one term. A few years later, he served a term as a member of the Board of Education. In the fall of 1872, he was elected a Member of the Assembly of the State of New York, and twice re-elected, serving the terms of 1873, 1875 and 1877, during the administrations of Governors Dix, Tilden and Robinson, with credit to himself and to the satisfaction of his constituents. He is, at present, one of the trustees of Bushwick Savings Bank, and a director of the Williamsburgh City Fire Insurance Company and the Kings County Fire Insurance Company.

HISTORY

OF THE

TOWN OF WILLIAMSBURGH.

By

John M. Stearns

Esq.

OF BROOKLYN, E. D.

THE WOODHULL SPECULATION.—

After the close of the Revolutionary War, the farmers of Bushwick pursued in peace their occupations of raising grain and cultivating garden vegetables for the New York market. But, ere long, upon the shores of the river which formed their western border, appeared the nucleus of a village; and, even while they rubbed their astonished eyes, it expanded to the fair proportions of a city. Instead of slowly amassing money by plodding labor and close-fisted huckstering, they found fortunes fairly thrust upon them by the enhanced value of their farms; due to the enterprise of others, whom they considered as Yankee intruders. They hesitated at first, dazzled by the prospect, and suspicious of the motives of those who offered it. But *finesse* prevailed and the first purchase made—the rest was simply a matter of time.

Richard M. Woodhull, a New York merchant, of intelligent and comprehensive views, albeit somewhat speculative in his conclusions, was the pioneer in this movement. He had already established a horse-ferry, from Corlaer's Hook (near the foot of present Grand street, New York) to the foot of the present North Second street, in Brooklyn; and the concentration of trade from Long Island, at this apology for a ferry, naturally suggested to him its probable occupation, to a limited extent, near the eastern terminus of the ferry, for a village. Had he reasoned from experience as to the growth of cities, he might have been deterred from this venture. New York City, which at the period of the Revolution had but 24,000 inhabitants, possessed at this time (1800) less than 61,000. There was, indeed, a highway from the settled parts of the city to Corlaer's Hook; but Chatham street was then the margin of the built up city, and the scattered farmsteads, shops and hotels along the Bowery were mere suburbs of the town. Had he stopped to consider that from thirty to forty years would be required to crowd three square miles of vacant lands with houses, and to occupy the De Lancey and Willet farms with population, before

his projected city on the opposite Long Island shore could become a practical success, he might have saved himself from infinite trouble and ultimate bankruptcy. True, he had a ferry established. But this could not accommodate the people whose employment was in New York. A horse-ferry, with two miles of travel on the New York side, before the business portion of the city could be reached, was to most persons a formidable objection to locating so far from their employment. But Woodhull was infatuated with his scheme; and, as he could not easily, in the then temper of the old Dutch residents, purchase the much-coveted land in his own name, he employed one Samuel Titus, of Newtown, to secure the title from Charles (old "Charlum") Titus of some 13 acres of his farm, which he afterwards re-purchased from the said Samuel Titus, at cost. This land, situated in the vicinity of North Second street (then called Bushwick street) was soon laid out by Mr. Woodhull in city lots, and named *Williamsburgh*, in compliment to his friend, Col. Williams, U. S. engineer, by whom it was surveyed. A shanty ferry-house and a tavern near by, were erected; one Lewis bought some lots and put up a hay-press and scales near the present North Third and First streets, where it was intended to bale the hay-crop of Long Island for shipment and the New York market; and an auction was held, at which a few building-lots were disposed of. But the amount realized came far short of restoring to Woodhull the money he had thus prematurely invested. His project was, fully, a quarter of a century too soon. It required half a million of people in the city of New York, before settlers could be induced to remove across the East river, away from the attractions of a commercial city. Woodhull found that notes matured long before he could realize from his property; and barely six years had passed before he was a bankrupt, and the site of his new city became subject to sale by the sheriff. By divers shifts, the calamity was deferred until September 11th, 1811, when the right, title and interest of Richard M. Woodhull in

the original purchase, and in five acres of the Francis J. Titus estate, purchased by him, in 1805, near Fifth street, was sold by the sheriff, on a judgment in favor of one Roosevelt. James H. Maxwell, the son-in-law of Woodhull, became the purchaser of Williamsburgh; but not having means to continue his title thereto, it again passed under the sheriff's hammer—although a sufficient number of lots had, by this time, been sold to prevent its re-appropriation to farm or garden purposes. Woodhull and Maxwell's experience was that which is common to men who think in advance of their times; but they will ever be mentioned with respect as the "fathers of the town."

The Morrell Speculation—Yorkton.—Meanwhile, another rival was in the field, Thomas Morrell, of Newtown, who had purchased from Folkert Titus the ancient Titus homestead farm of 28 acres; and who, with James Hazard, to whom he sold a moiety, had laid it out in city lots, and had a map made of the same, whereon Grand street was laid down as a dividing line. Morrell then, in 1812, obtained from the city of New York a grant for a ferry from Grand street, Bushwick, to Grand street, New York; the same point to which Woodhull's ferry also ran. *Yorkton* was the somewhat pompous name given to the territory along the river, between South First and North Second streets; and *Loss' map of Yorkton* was dignified to the position of a public record. The Morrell ferry gradually superseded Woodhull's in the public estimation, so that both owners became rivals; and disputes ran so high between them that they would not permit each other's teams to pass over their respective lands,—all this tended to retard the progress of the village. Grand street became the permanent site of the ferry; and the old Titus homestead (on the north-east side of South First street), long known as "Old Charlum's" *Fountain Inn*, became the head-quarters of village politics, where the destinies of town and county were often discussed, on winter nights, over hot flip and brandy slings.

But, while Morrell succeeded as to the ferry, Woodhull managed to preserve the name *Williamsburgh*; which applied at first to the 13 acres originally purchased, and had extended itself to adjoining lands, so as to embrace about 30 acres, as seen in Poppleton's map, in 1814, and another in 1815, of property of J. Homer Maxwell. But the first ferry had landed at Williamsburgh, and the turnpike went through Williamsburgh out into the island. Hence, both the country people, and the people coming from the city, when coming to the ferry, spoke of coming to Williamsburgh. Thus *Yorkton* was soon unknown save on *Loss' map*, and in the transactions of certain land jobbers. Similarly, the designations of old farm locations, being obsolete to the idea of a city or a village, grew into disuse; and the whole territory between the Wallabout Bay and Bushwick Creek became known as Williamsburgh.

Williamsburgh.—At the time the ferries were established, there was no open road to the water side, except that of the Newtown and Bushwick Bridge Co., which came to the shore at Woodhull's ferry. There was no open shore-road connecting the two ferries, nor any from the Wallabout to Williamsburgh; for, blind to their own interests, the owners of the shore-land refused to have any road opened over their property along the shore. Consequently the ferries could not prosper, their cost exceeded their income, and both owners died in embarrassed circumstances, and with blighted hopes. Subsequently, the ferries were consolidated.

The Wallabout and Newtown Turnpike.—While Woodhull (and his successor) and Morrell were at variance about towns and ferries, Gen. Jeremiah Johnson had purchased the farm of Charles Titus, 2d; and in his goings to and fro between his farm and Williamsburgh, became much annoyed at having to open and shut no less than 17 barred-gates, within a distance of half a mile along the shore.* His proposition to the owners of these lands to unite with him in securing a legislative act for the opening of a two-rod road, along the front of their property from the Wallabout Bridge to the Newtown and Bushwick Bridge road at Woodhull's ferry, was not only declined, but strenuously opposed. Whereupon, taking the matter in his own hands, he himself surveyed the proposed road, gave due notice of application, got up a petition, and by personal interest at Albany secured the required authority—and, within a month the road was opened by commissioners of the two towns. The effect was magical; for, before this there had been no means of vehicular travel with Brooklyn, except by the Newtown road from the Bushwick Cross-Roads. Now the business largely increased at the ferry, and public attention began to be drawn more than ever to the many advantages of residence afforded by Williamsburgh. For, situated as it was, opposite the very heart of New York city; with a bold water-front upon the East river of a mile and a half extent (entirely under the control of its own local authorities); with a suffi-

* In this connection we quote, from a MSS. lecture by Mr. Barnes, on the Wallabout, the following description of the "old-time" route from Gen. Johnson's place, corner Kent avenue and Hewes street, to East New York: "travel up the farm-lane (Hewes street) some distance beyond the present Lee avenue church, thence south-easterly along the farm to the *then* woods, across the creek to Nostrand's lane, and up this lane (near the site of Husted & Co.'s brick stables) on Flushing avenue, then south-east to land of Henry Boerum, thence southerly to Bedford, then along old Bedford road, facing to the south of Fort Greene to Baker's Tavern on Long Island railroad to Fulton street; then a road or lane, to the ferry, six miles away—a journey of two or three hours.

This, however, was short, compared with the distance from the late Abm. Remsen's house (adjoining Scholes farm, and but one beyond Gen. Johnson's). This family had to travel up their farm line to the church at Bushwick, thence along the Bushwick road to the Cross-Roads, and along Cripplebush road to residence of Jacobus Lott, where Nostrand's lane intersects the road, and then along the Cripplebush road and Bedford road, past Fort Greene to Baker's Tavern on Long Island railroad, and to Fulton street, and so to the ferry—ten miles and taking four or five hours."

cient depth for all ordinary commercial purposes; and with the ground rising gradually from the river to the height of about forty-five feet above water-level, it seems as if, on the whole, Nature had designed the territory for the site of a city.

Village Beginnings.—The village grew apace; the M. E. Church (organized 1807) erected, in 1808, the first place of worship; the North American Hotel was built about the same time; and by 1814 the town numbered 759 persons. About 1819, a distillery was established at the foot of South Second street, by NOAH WATERBURY, whose enterprise has earned for him the appellation of the "Father of Williamsburgh." A native of Groton, Ct., he came, in 1789, at the age of fifteen, to Brooklyn, where he learned to be a shoemaker.

At the age of twenty-one years, together with Henry Stanton, he took the Catherine Street Ferry; and, after carrying it on awhile, entered into the lumber trade, and subsequently established a rope-walk. He removed to Williamsburgh, in May, 1819, where he purchased from Gen. Jeremiah Johnson the half-acre of land on which, with Jordan Coles, he built the distillery above referred to. Subsequently purchasing eight adjoining acres, he laid it out in city lots; gradually got into the real estate business; frequently loaned money to the village in its financial embarrassments; originated the City Bank, of which he became the first president; as also of the Board of Trustees of 1827; and, in many ways, promoted the welfare of the village. His life was one of enterprise, public spirit and high integrity.

It was early found that the laws relating to common highways were entirely inadequate to the opening of streets and other improvements needed by a village or city. If the plan had been adopted of opening all streets by common taxation, improvements might have been effected; and, in the end, their expense would have been equitably apportioned; that is, when the whole village plot was improved alike and paid for. But, in this new community, every person wished his particular property improved, and had rather pay the expense than have such improvements deferred till the general public were willing to assume the special burden of such improvements. Mr. DAVID DUNHAM, a merchant and citizen of New York, became interested in Williamsburgh, by purchase at the Sheriff's sale, when the right, title and interest of James H. Maxwell (Woodhull's son-in-law) were sold out on execution in favor of James J. Roosevelt; who continued to follow the property with his financial accommodations, until 1818 brought the final extinction of the original pioneer interest of these two founders of the village. Dunham shared his purchase with Moses Judah and Samuel Osborn; established the first steam-ferry from New York to Williamsburgh; and had his name applied to Grand street, as laid down on "Loss' Yorkton Map." But, though the street was soon widened ten feet on the

north side, the new name would not stick. Grand street it was, and is to this day.

In 1820, David Dunham, above named, donated land near North First street, on which a school-house was erected, known as District School No. 3, of the Town of Bushwick; and the population of the town, including the village, was, at this time, 934, of which 182 were colored. In July of this year, an advertisement in the *Long Island Star* announces a bear-shooting, at the Fountain Inn, which "the rifle companies of Major Vinton and Captain Burns are particularly invited to attend with their music. Green turtle soup to be ready on the same day, from 11 A. M. to 10 P. M." In October, following, three persons were indicted at the Kings County General Sessions *for bull-baiting at Williamsburgh!* which argues well for the moral sentiment of the new community. In 1823, the village sustained a severe loss in the death, by drowning, of Mr. David Dunham, "merchant and citizen of New York," whose efforts had "materially changed the appearance of Williamsburgh, and were adding constantly to its improvements. The Williamsburgh Ferry and Turnpike, maintained by him, are real and lasting benefits to the city and to Long Island." "Never disheartened by disappointment, nor diverted from his object by indolence or opposition," he was justly considered "the friend and founder of the village." His ferry continued to run; manufacturers (especially of whisky or rum and ship-cordage) acquired something of a foothold in the place; and there appeared one or more corner groceries and a village tavern, besides "old Charlum" Titus' *Fountain Inn*. In 1825, Garret and Grover C. Furman, New York merchants, purchased twenty-five acres on South First street, about 150 feet from what is now Grand, near corner of Second street, at \$300 per acre; and had it mapped into city lots. They then offered the Dutch Reformed congregation their choice of a lot 100 feet square upon which to erect a church, which was accepted; then building-lots began to be enquired about in that neighborhood. The first two lots were sold to Dr. Cox for \$150, after which they sold so fast that the price was advanced to \$200, and in less than six months to \$250, etc.

Village Organization.—It was not long before the necessity of a village organization, with officers possessing the power to compel the opening and improving of streets, the digging of wells and the erection of pumps, and other public conveniences, and to restrain and limit the unneighborly selfishness of particular citizens, was made fully apparent. Moreover, no general survey of a village plot had been made; and the people, in public and private, began to discuss, and gradually to agree upon the need of a village charter.

Village Charter.—Finally John Luther and Lemuel Richardson (or rather George W. Pittman), having purchased sites for two rope-walks between North Third and North Fourth streets, procured a survey of the ad-

jacent lands into street and lots, and made application to the legislature for an act which should confer upon the place the usual village powers. The desired act of incorporation was passed April 14, 1827, defining the village boundaries as "beginning at the bay, or river, opposite to the Town of Brooklyn, and running thence easterly along the division line between the towns of Bushwick and Brooklyn, to the lands of Abraham A. Remsen; thence northerly by the same to a road or highway, at a place called Sweed's Fly, thence by the said highway to the dwelling-house, late of John Vandervoort, deceased; thence in a straight line northerly, to a small ditch, or creek, against the meadow of John Skillman; thence by said creek to Norman's kill; thence by the middle or centre of Norman's kill to the East river; thence by the same to the place of beginning." The charter named five Trustees to serve till the time of the village election, viz: Noah Waterbury, Abraham Meserole; Lewis Sanford, and Thomas T. Morrell; also, John Miller, who declined serving; which Board were duly sworn in April 26th, and organized April 30th, by choosing Noah Waterbury, *President*; Abraham Meserole, *Secretary*; and Lewis Sanford, *Treasurer*. Their only noteworthy acts were the granting of several tavern licenses (the proceeds, \$10 each, accruing to the poor of Bushwick), and procuring a survey of the village to be made by Daniel Ewen, for which \$300 was raised by special tax. The first village election was held Nov. 5, 1827, and the old trustees were re-elected, by a nearly unanimous vote, except that Peter C. Cornell was elected in place of John Miller. The votes being one to six of the population gives 114 as the population of the village proper. While the new city fathers speedily evinced a commendable degree of enterprise in their efforts towards the improvement of the place, their wisdom was not altogether commensurate with their zeal. The charter itself lacked precision, in some respects, and its vagueness seems to have been often improved by the early trustees as a warrant for the exercise of extraordinary powers. This embroiled them in legal and political contentions with private owners of property, who, for the first time, became subject to municipal regulations. Thus, the attempt to open 1st street along the East River front between South 1st and South 2d streets, gave rise to a long and bitter lawsuit between Jordan Coles, as plaintiff, and the village, in which Coles was partly successful, but the open street remained in the hands of the public. Again, the Board, unwittingly, became the cats-paw of certain domestic speculators who rendezvoused at the old Fountain Inn, during the days of its decline, and these hatched schemes to possess themselves, under color of the law, of the parcels of land owned by non-residents and outsiders. By instigating taxation and assessment sales of these lands, with and without law, they were enabled to purchase them "for a song," much to the detriment

of the village, as it gave rise to much uncertainty as to land-titles. Yet the practice continued until probably 10,000 lots were sold for non-payment of taxes or assessments, while there was not law enough in these assessment or tax-titles, under which to acquire or hold the lands. But thus were matters too often managed by those who "had the ear" of the little handful of trustees, who held their sessions in a small, wooden house, with its gable to 1st street, about 75 feet north of Grand; wherein, also, was a tin and stove store, and the office of a Justice of the Peace.

In January, 1829, the village had reached a *milestone* in its career—it had a *debt*! In February it had a *post-office*, Lewis Sanford, postmaster; in June, a *hook and ladder company* was formed; and, during the year, North 3d and South 2d streets were built, and 1st street between Grand street and the Brooklyn line was opened. In 1829, a school census revealed these facts, that Williamsburgh had a population of 1,007, including 72 blacks; 148 dwelling houses, including 10 stores and taverns; 5 other stores; 5 rope-walks, 1 distillery; 1 turpentine distillery; 1 slaughter-house, and 2 butchers; 3 lumber-yards; 1 M. E. church; 1 Dutch Reformed church; 1 district and 3 private schools, etc., etc. In 1832, a Methodist Protestant church was formed by secession from the M. E. church. In 1835, a census of the town of Bushwick (inclusive of Williamsburgh) gave a population of 3,314; and 2 distilleries, 4 rope-walks, and one grist-mill, with a total of \$398,950 of raw material consumed, and \$481,272 produced—all of which (except the grist-mill) were within the village limits, as were, also, 3,000 of the population. This was exclusive of many smaller establishments, wood-yards, storehouses, etc., together with 72 village streets, of which 13 were opened, and about 300 houses. This year, also, the *W. Gazette* was started. These facts illustrate the progress the village had made, despite the errors of its trustees, the machinations of land-jobbers, and the depressing failures of its first founders. And, encouraged by these facts, its inhabitants bestirred themselves to procure an enlargement of their charter and a strengthening of their corporate authority. On their application, a legislative act was passed, April 18, 1835, extending the village limits by adding all the present 16th Ward, of Brooklyn, from the Sweed's Fly Road to Bushwick avenue, and the present 18th Ward, as well as a portion of the 18th Ward, between Humboldt street and the old Wood Point Road. The new charter created a Board of nine Trustees, to be annually elected, of which Edmund Frost was chosen President, and the energy and enterprise of the new board soon inaugurated a new era in the history of the place. Several large and substantial wharves and docks were built, new avenues of trade opened by the construction of turnpikes, more streets laid out, and (against the strenuous opposition of New York) a new ferry established to Peck Slip, a move

ment which, more than anything else, perhaps, contributed to the increase of Williamsburgh's population and prosperity—adding, as it did, an inducement to many New Yorkers to locate their residences on some of the beautiful and eligible sites covering the eastern shore of the East River.

The Era of Speculation.—Speculation had now grown to enormous proportions. In 1828, in addition to the "Williamsburgh" and "Yorkton" settlements, the Jacob Berry farm, of twenty-five acres, next to the East River and Brooklyn line, and the Frederick Devoe farm, of ten or twelve acres, extending from the river to 7th street and along South 5th and 6th streets, had been laid out in village lots and mapped. In 1833, one Holmes Van Mater, of New Jersey, having purchased the David Van Cott property, of twenty-four acres, extending from 6th street to the old Keikout road, near 10th street, and from South 3d to Grand street, and for the space of a block to North 1st and beyond, between 9th and 10th streets, including the "common" near 9th and North 1st streets, had it mapped out into lots.

John Miller had a map made of 11 acres, the northerly half of the land, inherited from David Miller, his father, being part of the old Keikout farm and of a piece of land extending from 7th to 10th streets, bought by David Miller of one Roosevelt. Maria Miller Meserole had the south half of the same land—mapped by the village and then in partition in 1849.

Nearly all of the present Thirteenth and Fourteenth Wards of Brooklyn—the original chartered limits of W.—was laid out into lots before 1834, when a general map of the village was made by D. Ewen, setting out the entire chartered village into prospective city lots. Prior to this Edmund Frost, Silas Butler, Charles O'Handy and William Sinclair had laid out twenty-five acres, extending from near North 2d street to North 10th, and from 6th street to 9th street. Sharp and Sutphen had also seventeen acres laid out from North 2d to North 7th, and from 3d to 6th street. These parcels were of irregular shape and matched to contiguous lands by irregular lines.

A company purchased several farms and combined them in a map of 939 lots of land in W., the title being vested for convenience of sale and the execution of deeds in one William P. Powers, a handsome, amiable and honest young man, who was law-clerk in the office of John L. Graham, in New York. Powers also held title to one hundred and ninety-seven lots located between 9th street and Lorimer street, and South 3d street and North 2d street, and lying on both sides of Union avenue; also, he held title to the Abraham Meserole farm, west of Graham Ave.

The greatest rivals of Powers' associates were one John S. McKibben and Thomas Nicholls, and, associated with them as banker and friend, one George D. Strong. Nearly all the land south of the Meserole farm, held by Powers as above, to the Brooklyn line and the cross-roads,

was purchased by McKibben, Nichols and Strong, and mapped into city lots, both upland and swamp. The only portion of what was made the third district of Williamsburgh, remaining to the original owners, was the part of the Meserole farm lying between Graham avenue and Bushwick avenue, the John Skillman farm, near North 2d street, to the northerly village line and to the meadows, and from Union avenue to near Leonard street—the land formerly of John Conselyea, deceased, afterward owned by Andrew J. Conselyea, as to part, and Mrs. D. W. Townsend and Mrs. Schenck as to other portions, and John Devoe as to land on the southerly side of North 2d street, from Lorimer street to Bushwick avenue. But all these several farms and lands were mapped as city property by their old farm-owners and put on the market in competition with the land-jobbers' stock-in-trade. The village had already assumed jurisdiction, under an act extending its limits, passed in 1835, and laid out the streets as they are now recognized.

Such are the matter-of-fact details of the growth of the paper suburbs of our growing town. Its springs of life were hid away in the speculating haunts of New York city in dingy upper rooms of 142 Fulton street and No. 5 Nassau street, where often at mid-day and at early night-fall gathered those who thought there was something more than Kidd's money hid away in the meadows and uplands of the old town of Bushwick.

At public and private sale large numbers of lots were disposed of, moneys were paid for margins and mortgages were taken back for part of the purchase money to twice the intrinsic value of the property. All went merrily, the land-jobbers were reputed to have become wealthy, and their customers saw fortunes in their investments. And the pasture-lands and fields which then made up nine-tenths of the territory of Williamsburgh were clothed in the hopeful imaginings of the holders of lots with all the incidents of a busy, bustling town.

During the year 1836, a company purchased the Conselyea (formerly Daniel Bordet's) farm, together with an adjoining estate, traversed by the present Grand Street, laid it out (part of map of 939 lots), and erected thereon fourteen elegant first-class dwellings, designed to be the pattern houses of a new and model city. The advance in real estate and population was unprecedented—lithographed property-maps set forth in glowing colors the unrivalled opportunities and advantages for profitable investments, which were eagerly caught up by the uninitiated, until by this time (1836) real estate in Williamsburgh actually exceeded its present value.

The Period of Financial Collapse.—Finally the bubble burst, and in the crash which followed—known as the "General Commercial Crisis of 1837," Williamsburgh suffered deeply. A perfect business paralysis

ensued, which seriously shattered the foundations of real and substantial property. Between cause and effect, intervening circumstances delayed the ultimate catastrophe to collateral investments; so that not until 1839 or '40 did Williamsburgh fully realize that the *prestige* of her second founders was lost. The fourteen model dwellings were followed by no similar erections; here and there a half-finished building, abandoned by its owner, suggested the vanity of all human hopes; the noise of the axe and the hammer was stilled throughout the village. From 1840 to 1844, the Court of Chancery was fully busied in clearing away the rubbish of private bankruptcies from investments made in these lots, that they might stand discharged from judgments and liens in the hands of responsible capitalists, and in a condition for improvement.

A New Start.—But, healthful legislation, and increasing facilities of access, gradually restored business to its wonted channels; so rapid was the progress of the village that in less than ten years, its population had doubled, and its ultimate position as a city became a fixed fact in the public mind. For, during the period (1835–1844) where political and financial history had been so unhappy, social, religious and educational advantages had rapidly increased and helped to lighten the general gloom. In 1837, the *Episcopal Church* was organized in the city; in 1838, the *Williamsburgh Lyceum* was established; in 1839, the Baptist denomination gained a foothold. In 1840, the opening of the Houston Street ferry opened a convenient transit to residents employed in the great manufactories along the eastern water front of New York City; the village press was augmented by the advent of the *Williamsburgh Democrat*; and the first omnibus line was established. The village census gave a population of 5,094. In 1841, the *Roman Catholic* denomination established itself in the Dutch village neighborhood; and the Odd Fellows organized a branch. In 1842, the First *Presbyterian*, and in 1843 the First *Congregational Church* was commenced; while during 1843–'44 the place became a favorite resort of the “Millerite,” or Second Advent craze. In 1844, an amended village charter was adopted, under which three trustees and one collector were chosen for each district. From this point, up to 1850, the social, educational and literary interests of the village assumed more definite proportions and vigor; while the number of church organizations was rapidly increased in each of the denominations; and the *Williamsburgh Bible Society* was formed. In 1848–'49, appeared the first Village Directory, published (as also the year following) by Henry Payson; and continued 1850–'5, up to — by Samuel and T. V. Reynolds; the increase of population from 1845–1850 being 19,448. The year 1851 saw the establishment of the *Williamsburgh Savings Bank*; the *Williamsburgh Dispensary*; the *Division Avenue Ferry*, and three new churches.

Civic Aspirations.—Williamsburgh now aspired to

be a city. Several motives conspired to this result. The village government had often exercised doubtful powers, in matters of public improvement. Its several charters, subjected, as they were by the courts, to the strictest construction, were found to allow of too little discretionary power, to be always available in emergencies which were constantly arising. Again, the village trustees being mostly men of limited business experience, could not readily work up to a technical and strictly constructed law. It is due, however, to the old village trustees, to say that their carelessness, as to the provisions of the charter, oftener arose from an over-ambition to serve the public in its needed improvements of the village, than from any corrupt motives of personal profit. And, not infrequently, they found themselves, as a Board, involved in litigations initiated by the very persons who had petitioned for improvements, and whose property was benefited thereby, perhaps to even double the assessments charged to it for the expenses. An unwise fostering of the fire-department, for the sake of its political influence, also gave undue influence to the *rowdy* element of the population, which soon showed itself in an increased turbulence of the town-meetings, at which alone legal taxes could be ordered. This, with the impossibility of getting, in the town-meeting, a fair expression of the real public voice—since the meetings could be so “packed” as to leave nine-tenths of the village voters out on the sidewalk—led to legislation for the establishment of a Board of Finance, which should determine the amounts to be raised for specific objects and provide for their insertion in the tax levy.

The City Charter.—Such a Board was created March 1, 1849, by act of Legislature, and consisted of the President and Trustees of the village, with the Town Supervisor and nine other men especially elected for the purpose. But this did not suffice; and finally, the required city charter, drawn by S. M. Meeker, Esq., Village Counsellor, received the sanction of the Legislature, April 7, 1851; the election for city officers was held in November following, and the charter went into effect January 1, 1852.

Street Nomenclature of the Village of Williamsburgh.—The names of public streets frequently express fragments of local history. Some are only to be interpreted by traditions. Men who lay the foundations of a city, or map the locations so to be occupied, are apt to respect a scripture example, in calling their cities “by their own names”—or, by the names of favorites and friends. Bushwick had no very conspicuous men; so, when it became the site of a future town, no local denizen had sufficient sympathy with the matter to wish to couple his name with what seemed so absurd a project. Thus, in old Williamsburgh no streets preserve the memory of the Titus, the Miller, the Meserole, the Devoe, the Berry families; nor, even that of its founders, Morrell or Woodhull.

Mr. Dunham sought, indeed, to apply his name to the present Grand street; or, at least, to sixty feet wide of the southern portion of it. But the widened street, as a centre line of departure in the designation of all the streets, took the more significant name of Grand street. And *Woodhull street*, in designating the streets by numbers, was succeeded by "North Second" street. All the regular streets of the village were designated by numbers, except Grand street and the lane known as Water street; a portion of the old road along the East River shore; and a street laid out on the Commissioners' map as "River street," whose site was over the waters of the East River and has been closed.

In the designation of the streets *First street* ran along the East River, *Second street* was parallel or nearly parallel to it, and so the streets were numbered as we went east from the East River up to Twelfth street. And north from Grand street the first street having the same general directions was *North First street*. The old Jamaica turnpike, from the old Ferry out, was *North Second*, and so on to *North Thirteenth street*, at or along Bushwick creek. Then, south of Grand street and running in the same general direction, though not exactly parallel, *South First street* to *South Eleventh street*, at the old Brooklyn line. In this use of numerals there was a certain degree of convenience; but strangers are often confused by confounding First street with North First, or South First, etc.

But it is in the present Fifteenth and Sixteenth wards, that we find the streets designated by *historical names*. *Lorimer* commemorates the middle name of John and James *Lorimer* Graham, two famous land-jobbers there in '36. *Ewen street* was named after Daniel Ewen, city surveyor, residing in New York, who surveyed both the old and new village. *Graham avenue* still flatters the above-named Grahams. *Smith street* commemorated Morgan L. Smith, and *Bushwick avenue* was the boundary between Williamsburgh and Bushwick. *N. Second street* was extended on the map of the new village to Bushwick. *Powers street*, in the present Fifteenth ward, was named after William P. Powers, a clerk in the office of John L. Graham, who was made nominal proprietor of 939 lots for the convenience of their sale and conveyance to purchasers; also of several other parcels of land. He appears on the record as the greatest land-jobber of the period. While, however, profits belonged to others, the responsibilities and losses were sometimes fathered on him. But he has always borne the character of an upright, honest and cultured gentleman. *Ainslie street* was named after James Ainslie, Esq., who for many years administered local justice in Williamsburgh. *Devoe street* represented the Devoes, who owned a block or two of land adjoining North Second street on the South side, and whose home was in Bushwick—and not Frederick Devoe, whose farm was on the East

River shore. Going north of North Second street, or the old Jamaica Turnpike, the first street parallel to it is *Conselyea street*, whose eastern portion runs through the farm late of Andrew J. Conselyea, and about an acre of land of William J. Conselyea his brother; hence the name; *Skillman street*, now *Skillman avenue* to distinguish it from Skillman street in old Brooklyn, derived its name from John Skillman, Senior, who lived and died on the same farm, at or near the present residence of Charles M. Church, son-in-law to John Skillman. *Jackson street* was probably named from Daniel Jackson, who, in connection with Graham and Reuben Withers, had some landed interests in Williamsburgh. *Withers street* was named after Reuben Withers, late proprietor of the Houston street Ferry. *Frost street* was named from Edmund Frost, who was associated with Handy, Sinclair and Butler in a tract of land in the Fourteenth Ward. *Richardson street* was named for Lemuel Richardson, whose worthy name is elsewhere mentioned as one of the pioneers in building up Williamsburgh. *Sanford street* (changed to *Bayard*) was in honor of Edward Sanford, a distinguished lawyer associated with John L. Graham in many real-estate transactions. His name had been applied to a street in the Seventh Ward, Brooklyn: hence the change. The substituted name was probably taken from the name of a street in the city of New York.

Going south from Grand street *Remsen street* was named after Abraham A. Remsen, who owned land at its junction with Union Avenue. There is another Remsen street near the City Hall, old Brooklyn, and the name of the E. D. street was changed to *Maujer street* in respect to Daniel Maujer, Esq., who, about the time, represented the Fifteenth Ward as Alderman.

Nicholas Wyckoff, the late worthy President of the *First National Bank*, has his name perpetuated, in *Wyckoff street*. *Stagg street*, with its homely name, has doubtless out-lived its patron, who is probably known to but few, if any, of the existing citizens. *Scholes street* represents the family of James Scholes, dec., late of what is now the 19th Ward. *Meserole avenue* was named from the Abraham Meserole through whose farm it ran; and not from Abraham Meserole, husband of Maria Miller of the present Thirteenth Ward. *Johnson street*, or *avenue*, commemorates the memory of the late General Jeremiah Johnson. *Boerum street* was named from old Jacob Boerum, who had a farm of 58 acres within the limits of the present Sixteenth Ward, Brooklyn. This farm was the subject of the great Cleveland law suit.

McKibben street was named after John S. McKibben, who caused a map of a part of the Jacob Boerum farm, as the land of McKibben and Nichols, to be made and filed. *Siegel street*, which (on changing the name of duplicate streets in Williamsburgh by the Common

Council of Brooklyn) superseded Marshall street, was in honor of General Siegel of the late war.

Moore street was named for the late Thomas C. Moore, a manufacturer of wire sieves and netting, who owned lands in that neighborhood. *Varette street* was named from Lewis F. Varette, a land speculator, who operated on the sale of village lots there and elsewhere.

Cooke street was probably named from an old resident near the Cross-Roads. *Debevoise street* (covering a part of the old Brooklyn and Newtown turnpike, by the Cross-Roads) was named from Charles Debevoise, who lived on Flushing avenue, near the western terminus of this street.

The custom of perpetuating the names of the oldest inhabitants by those of streets is more marked in the old City of Brooklyn than in Williamsburgh. In the latter place many whose names are thus perpetuated were really residents of the City of New York, and only interested in Williamsburgh, as speculators.

Trustees of the Village of Williamsburgh.—1827. Noah Waterbury, *Pres.*; Abraham Meserole, *Sec.*; Peter C. Cornell; Thos. T. Morrell (son of Thos. and bro. of John M.); John Miller (had a small farm of about 11 acres, below South 2d and South 4th, from the East River to near 10th street, and a large family); Lewis Sanford, *Treas.*; J. Brush, *Coll'r.*; Daniel S. Griswold, *Vill. Counsel*; David Dunham, *Clerk.*

1828. James M. Halsey, *Pres.*; John Henry (rope-maker, and owner of lands between 2d and 4th streets); John Luther; James Ainslie (for many years Justice of Peace); Samuel D. Mills (milkman); J. Brush, *Collector*; W. C. Townsend, *Clerk*; Abraham Meserole, *Treas.*

1829. Same board—except John Morrell (with his brother, Thomas T., real-estate dealer; also grocery business, conspicuous in early village affairs; was father of Francis V. and Thos. I., who carried on, for many years, the builders' hardware business, being predecessors of existing firm of C. H. Tiebout & Sons), *vice* Ainslie, and John Devoe (son of Frederick D., whose farm was between South 4th and South 6th streets, East River and 7th street), *vice* Sam. E. Mills; John Devoe; P. C. Cornell, *Clerk*; Riley Clark, *Treas.*

1830. Edmund Frost, *Pres.* (lumber dealer, and interested in lots in N. W. part of village, in company with Butler O'Handy & Sinclair); Lemuel Richardson (grocer; afterwards manufacturer of locks and builders' hardware, corner Houston and Norfolk streets, New York, of which the business of H. C. Richardson, dead., 59 Grand st., was a branch. Was a careful business man, of excellent judgment, and sterling qualities; was about the only citizen who survived the land-jobbing speculators of the village, without becoming bankrupt, which gave him a high position in the community); John Eddy; Jacob Berry (owner of Berry farm, father of Abraham J. B., the first Mayor of the subsequent city of W.—of Richard B.,

cashier of Tradesmen's Bk., N. Y.,—of Evander B. and of a dau. who m. Geo. Bell, of N. Y.); James Ainslie; Peter Way, *Clerk*; John Luther, *Treas.*; P. P. Schenck, *Coll'r.*

1831. Edmund Frost, *Pres.*; Lemuel Richardson; Sam. D. Mills; and James Ainslie; Geo. W. Pittman (cordage mfr.); Chas. H. Davis, *Clerk*; John Luther, *Treas.*; P. P. Schenck, *Coll.*

1832. James M. Halsey, *Pres.*; John Luther; John Henry; John Morrell; Richard Churchward; Jacob Berry, *Treas.*; P. P. Schenck, *Clerk*; W. J. Fish, *Clerk*, part of year.

1833. Edmund Frost, *Pres.*; Lemuel Richardson; Jas. Ainslie; John Morrell; Wm. Leaycraft (son of Rich. L. of N. Y.; father of Wm. H. L., and Mrs. Demas Strong; was a J. of P., and had an office with Justice Leonard T. Coles, in old Trustees Hall, 1st St.); John L. Graham, *Vill. Counsel* (figured largely in land-jobbing, became bankrupt 1837–40); Jacob Berry, *Treas.*; P. P. Schenck, *Clerk.*

1834. Edmund Frost, *Pres.*; Lemuel Richardson; Wm. Leaycraft; John Luther; John Eddy; P. P. Schenck, *Clerk*; J. L. Graham, *Counsel*; Lewis Sanford, *Coll.*

1835. (Most of the 15th and 16th Wards, of present City of B., added to the village; number of Trustees increased to nine).

1836. Wm. Leaycraft, *Pres.*; Daniel Wood (carpenter and wood-turner); Edwin Ferry (grocer); Jas. Guild (hotel-keeper, cor. No. 6th and 1st sts., and was a noted miniature painter); Robert B. Dikeman (rope-maker, and brother of late Hon. John Dikeman); James Ainslie; Henry Cooke; T. B. Clarke (segar mfr.); Rich. Leaycraft, *Treas.*; Alanson Ackerly, *Coll.*

1837. Edmund Frost, *Pres.*; John Morrell; John Skillman (owner of a large farm in present 15th Ward; was father-in-law of Chas. M. Church, Esq., who resides at old Skillman homestead, cor. Lorimer and No. 2d sts.; also had sons John and Joseph S., still living); Abm. Meserole; John Snyder (undertaker in 15th Ward); Lemuel Richardson; Henry Cooke; Hiram Ross; Wm. Leaycraft; P. P. Schenck; Joseph Conselyea, *Treas.*; Alanson Ackerly, *Coll.*; Ed. Sanford, *Counsel.*

1838. Edmund Frost, *Pres.*; John Skillman; John C. Minturn (distiller); Henry Cooke; John Wright (father of Mrs. Grahams Polly; a coppersmith in Cherry st., N. Y.); John Snyder; David Garrett (ropemaker and prominent in fire department); Wm. Wheaton (wheelwright); P. P. Schenck, *Clerk*; C. L. Cooke; Judge Jos. Conselyea, *Treas.*; Alanson Akerly, *Coll.* (restaurant, foot of Grand st., until very lately); Edward Sanford, *Counsel* (lost with the S. S. Arctic).

1839. John C. Minturn,* *Pres.*; John Skillman;* C. L. Cooke;† David Garrett; Henry Meiggs (of So. American R. R. fame);‡ John Cook (an Englishman, lawyer); Thos. J. Fenwick* (bookbinder, partner with one Fiori); Jas. D. Sparkman‡ (cork mfr., in Co. with Jas. L. Truslow; made a fortune; was at one time a

supervisor; became Pres. of Mfrs. Nat. Bank, which he caused to be rem. to the building of Brown Bros. & Co., Wall st., N. Y.; but complications in some new bus. ended in his bankruptcy, impairing, for a time, the standing of the Bank, which, by returning to W., with capital made good by stockholders, has since been prosperous. Mr. S. afterward became Pres. of Fireman's Fund Ins. Co., and d. a few yrs. since at Bordentown, N. J., at the old Joseph Bonaparte mansion). Eusebius Hopkins;* Wm. Frisby; J. J. Bennett;*† Jacob Backus;† Alanson Ackerly;† Samuel Cox† (flour and feed, cor. 4th and So. 1st sts.; a careful bus. man); William Golder† (builder); Henry Payson, *Clerk*; John Titus, *Treas.*; Hiram Ross, *Coll.*

1840.—Henry Meiggs, *President*; William Lake, (dock builder and contractor); Wm. Golder;* D. W. Van Cott* (milkman); Hiram Ross; And. J. Conselyea* (owned a forty-five acre farm in present Fifteenth Ward, partitioned 1853 among his heirs); Edward Neville* (kept K. Co. Hotel, corner of First and South Seventh streets—now occupied by W. City Fire Insurance Co.); John Titus* (merchant tailor, First, near Grand street); L. D. Cuddy;|| John Skillman; John Cook;|| Eusebius Hopkins; Col. Wm. Conselyea, Jr., *Treasurer*; Henry Payson, *Clerk*; Alex. S. Tuttle, *Collector* (livery stable). 544 names on poll list this year.

1841.—John C. Minturn, *President*; A. B. Van Cott (jeweler); Jasper F. Cropsey (owned property in Grand, between Third and Fourth streets), refused to serve; James Fiori (of Fenwick & F., bookbinders); L. D. Cuddy; Wm. Richardson (son of Simon R., partner of Wm. Wall, cordage manufacturer); Peter V. Remsen (son of Abraham A., lawyer for many years in Williamsburg, noted for the elegance of his chirography and the skill and exactness of the law papers which he prepared); George Doyle (builder); Richard Berry; Henry Meiggs; Edmund Frost; Noah Waterbury; Henry Payson, *Clerk*; W. Conselyea, Jr., *Treasurer*; W. D. Lowerre, *Collector*.

1842.—John C. Minturn, *President*; L. D. Cuddy; Lemuel Richardson; P. V. Remsen; James Noble (coal); Robert Seeley (restaurant, South side of Grand street, near Ferry); Daniel D. Winant (billiard-table manufacturer, New York, School Trustee in Williamsburg for two or three years; after the consolidation a member for some years of Brooklyn Board of Education); Marvin W. Fox (from Bozrah, Connecticut, teacher); Nathaniel Willett (enterprising builder—erected present Calvary P. E. Church and City Armory, and mason work of Christ's Church, on Bedford avenue; at one time owned Union Hall, corner of Clymer street and Division avenue); James N. Engel,

Treasurer (distiller, foot South Second street, mainly of burning fluid and camphene); W. D. Lowerre, *Collector*. No Counsel elected 1841 or '42: A. D. Soper acted. 670 names on poll list.

1843.—John C. Minturn, *President*; Lemuel Richardson; Peter V. Remsen; M. W. Fox; D. D. Winant; Wm. Lake; David Garrett; Eusebius Hopkins; W. D. Lowerre; Henry Payson, *Clerk*; Richard Berry, *Treas.*; Jeremiah Meserole, *Collector* (saloon N. E. cor. Gd & 1st sts).

1844.—Noah Waterbury, *Pres.*; Robert Sealy; Benj. N. Disbrow (wholesale liquor, N. Y.); John A. Burdett (had ppy. interests in Gd. st., cor. 10th—still lives at Newtown, L. I., a garden farmer); Timo. Coffin (a native of Block Island; as a shipmaster followed the seas for many years; at length, settled on shore and run a freight-line of sailing vessels to Philadelphia and Baltimore; some financial reverses came to him towards the close of his life. He became *pres.* of the Board in 1845; *coll.* of taxes in 1852 under the new city government; was a man of amiable temper, polished manners, and a kindly benevolent spirit, and an honorable, upright and honest man); Isaac Sherwood (a leather merchant of New York); A. P. Cummings (one of the proprietors of the N. Y. *Observer*, which, by his economy of expenditures, he made a financial success. He res. at cor. of So. 9th and 4th streets, where he had 24 lots of land, which passed to the hands of a Dr. Wade. The house has given place to stores, fronting on 4th st., and the other lots are now occup. by the res. and garden of Jost Moller, Esq., the sugar refiner, and that of Hon. Sigismund Kaufman); B. S. K. Richardson, *Treas.*; Grahams Polley (an extensive distiller, cor. of No. 4th and 1st sts, began life as a carman; rose to independence; took a great interest in popular education and in charity to the poor); Alfred Curtis (a book-keeper, eldest son of Lemuel R., a stage proprietor; was at one time in bus. with his father. He ran a line of stages in New York up to about the time of his death, which was sold to give place to street railroads for enough to give his family a competence. He served as village treasurer to acceptance. His wid., a sister of Andrew B. Hodges, still lives. A dau. m. Gen. Jeremiah V. Meserole, and another is now the wid. of the late Dr. John A. Brady); W. S. Wiggins, *Coll.* (Shoemaker, Ewen st.); Paul J. Fish, *Con'l* (lawyer in W. several years; came here in 1836 or 7; devoted his chief attention to real estate; was for a time Master in Chancery; shifted his residence from W. to Watertown, N. Y.; came back; then lived in Plainfield, N. J.; finally died poor).

The Village Charter was this year amended and adopted, in which three trustees and one collector were chosen for each of the Districts.

1845.—Timothy Coffin, *Pres.*; Thos. J. Van Zant (acquired a good estate in umbrella bus. as partner of Alex. McDonald, in N. Y.; at this time was in

Five trustees (*) res. this year and their places were filled by special election; † one (†) refused to serve.

Of above Board those marked * resigned before term expired; || elected at special election.

coal bus. in W., at foot of So. 5th st.; a prominent member of the First Baptist Church; lacked the education and culture fitting one for public life); Jonathan Odell (merchant in New York; had quite a plot of land N. W. cor. of So. 8th and 2d sts., which he afterwards sold to Thomas Brewster and moved away); James Dobbins (rope-maker, employed some years by Schermerhorn, Bancker & Co.); John Hanford (hatter in Grand st., betw. 4th and 5th streets, was an excellent politician; went to the legislature for several years; and, though he failed in business, his compensation of \$300 a session, as it was then, enabled him to live without employment for the balance of the year, with his wardrobe as if just taken out of a band-box); Grahams Polley; David Lindsay (carpenter in the Third district, elected as a Democrat; with limited opportunities he was a man of practical good sense, and generally respected as honorable in his devotion to public interests; became a Republican during the war; was father of David and George Lindsay, members of Assembly some two or three years); Isaiah Pittman (cordage mfr.; after selling out to Schermerhorn, Bancker & Co. the walk from 2nd to E. of 4th, betw. No. 3d and No. 4th sts., went to Connecticut, where he died some years since); James M. Aymar (stationer and bookbinder, was elected J. of the P., and afterwards devoted his attention to the office during his term. He was a man of fair intelligence, but dogmatical in his opinions); B. S. K. Richardson, *Treas.*; C. Daniels, *Coll.*; Richard Walsh, *Coll.* (a respected citizen of the present 14th ward, coll. several years; by trade a shoemaker); Isaac Henderson, *Coll.* (afterwards interested in the *N. Y. Evening Post*, from which he accumulated quite a fortune, and is the owner now of the building 206 Broadway, New York, in which the paper is published); G. E. Baker, *Coll.*; Henry Baker, *Clerk.*; P. J. Fish, *Counsel.*

There were this yr. 856 names on poll list—but a large non-voting pop. was then in the village, as the State Census the next yr. gave vill. about 11,000 pop.

1846.—David Lindsay, *President*; William Wall; Timothy Coffin; Thomas J. Van Zant; John Hanford; Eusebius Hopkins; James W. Stearns (milkman in North Fifth street); James M. Aymar; James Roper (a respectable builder); J. J. Snyder, *Clerk*; B. S. K. Richardson, *Treasurer*; Levi Darbee, *Collector* (proprietor of the *Williamsburgh Gazette*, started by Adrastus Fish, brother of Paul J. Fish, from 1835 to 1838, when it was transferred to Levi Darbee. It was continued as a weekly journal till January, 1850, when it was changed to a daily, and so continued to the time of its suspension, on the consolidation of Williamsburgh and Brooklyn; and it was superseded in the city patronage by the Brooklyn Daily Times. Mr. Darbee was industrious, but lacked the breadth of enterprise and tact essential to maintain a new enterprise); R. Walsh, *Collector*; I. Henderson, *Collector*; Homer H.

Stewart, Esq., *Corporation Counsel* (a cousin of ex-Governor John W. Stewart, of Middlebury, Vermont, a graduate of Middlebury College, and a lawyer of good practice and ability. In some special matters his services were of special utility to the village); J. Quin, *Street Inspector*.

1847.—Timothy Coffin, *President*; William Wall; Thomas J. Van Sant; William Lake; James Gallaudett (a shoemaker, afterwards a grocer in Grand street); Henry Aldworth (a coal-dealer at the foot of Grand street, noted for having written and published a book against the Bible, but was honest in his dealings); Stephen Waterman (*member* of the firm of Burr, Waterman & Co., manufacturers of patent iron strapped blocks for ships; the business was prosecuted with a fair success and after the death of Mr. Waterman by his surviving partners); John H. Gaus (a baker, at 135 Ewen street); Charles W. Houghton (mahogany dealer in N. Y.; at one time Pres. of the late *Farmers' and Citizens' Bank*); George E. Baker, *Clerk* (continued in the office for three years; went to Washington and was for several years Private Secretary to Hon. Wm. H. Seward, Sec. of State; afterwards edited and published the speeches of Mr. Seward—which had quite an extensive sale); Levi W. Ufford, *Treas.* (a respectable dry-goods merchant, in First street, and though, at one time, well off, after the burning of Central Hall, in Fifth street, which he owned and failed to have insured, he had adverse fortune, and he died about a year since, in South Brooklyn, quite poor); William H. Colyer, *Coll.* (printer and publisher; a relative, I believe, of the Harper Brothers); S. B. Terry, *Coll.*; D. Chichester, *Street, Well and Pump Insp.*; Rich. Walsh, *Coll.*; no *Atty. or Counsel* chosen.

1848.—Noah Waterbury, *Pres.*; Wm. Wall; Stephen Waterman; Wm. H. Sweezey (from Newark, N. J., who returned there soon after his official term terminated; he was a substantial citizen); John S. Trott, Jr. (with his brother was a distiller; their business was afterwards removed to Cherry street, N. Y.; but John S. Trott died some years since and his brother continued the business); Abraham D. Soper (an able lawyer who failed in retainers in cases of importance, by his almost constant practice in the Justice Courts; he subsequently represented the town in the Legislature. In whatever he undertook, his practice was adroit and generally successful. He removed to W. Virginia and purchased a large tract of land, part of which he sold to some oil speculators, at prices that gave him a competence for the rest of his days; he became a member of the Constitutional Convention, that organized the new State of W. Va.; he was one or two years in the Legislature and then became a Circuit Judge, and rode his circuit, generally, on horseback, over the rough roads of the country, till he was over eighty years of age. There is no doubt but Judge Soper's influence

and labor in the State of his adoption, was beneficial and conservative and at the same time progressive. He was the father-in-law of Nicholson P. O'Brien, who for many years was his law partner in W.; also of Addison Diossy, a lawyer in N. Y. Two daughters accompanied him to W. Va., married and settled there; he had two sons, lawyers, one in practice here and one in W. Virginia; Henry McCaddin (an undertaker, whose business was the north side of Grand street, near First street); John H. Gans; Abel Smith (for several years Colonel of the 13th Reg. of the State Militia; he carried on a liquorice factory, on Devoe street near Lorimer. At the commencement of the war of the Rebellion, Col. Smith recruited a regiment in the N. part of the State, which he intended to accompany to the front. But, in taking the cars at Ballston, N. Y., he accidentally fell under the wheels and was killed); George Joy (stone cutter); W. H. Colyer, Richard Walsh, Stephen Ryder, *Collectors*; L. W. Ufford, *Treas.*; Geo. E. Baker, *Clerk*.

1849. Timothy Coffin, *President*; Samuel M. Meeker (a lawyer, whose carefulness has realized a fortune, became identified with the *Williamsburgh Savings Bank*; the *Williamsburgh City Fire Insurance Company*; the *First National Bank*, and the *Williamsburgh Gas-Light Company*, from the organizations of each. In the current of a quiet life and quiet affairs, he has ever proved a safe counsellor, but has generally employed more positive lawyers, as counsel, to conduct his cases in the courts; has nursed his pet institutions, in their infancy, and though avoiding any speculative risks, he has made them a marked success; is now *President* of the *Williamsburgh Savings Bank*, whose deposits have increased since 1851, *from nothing*, to \$21,000,000; Wm. Bunting (a paper commission merchant, in New York); Francis V. Morrell (son of John Morrell, had a hardware store at the corner of First and North First streets, afterwards moved to the corner of First and Grand streets); John S. Trott, Jr.; Andrew B. Hodges (*Secretary* of the *Williamsburgh Fire Insurance Company*, afterwards name changed to the *Citizens*; now having its principal office at 158 Broadway, N. Y.); Henry McCaddin; C. W. Houghton; Anthony Walter (then proprietor of Union Hall, at the cor. of Meserole and Ewen Sts., now 16th ward; has since served a term as sheriff of Kings county, and one term as justice of peace); Oliver Leach (a butcher, at 105 South 4th St.); Henry E. Ripley, *Coll.* (a son of the Rev. Mr. Ripley, pastor of the Cong. church of Lebanon, Ct., came to W., and engaged in the lumber trade, foot of So. 4th st., with David Kilgour, as a partner; his business was hardly successful; but Mr. R. saved a high character for integrity, served as Collector, 1850; after the consolidation was a member of the Board of Assessors till age and infirmities admonished him to retire; purchased a handsome farm at Huntington, L. I., on which he lives, in dignified

and peaceful retirement); R. Walsh, *Coll.*; Stephen Ryder, *Coll.*; Henry Payson, *Treas.*; Geo. E. Baker, *Clerk*.

1850.—Edmund Driggs, *Pres.*; D. D. Winant; Samuel Groves (a native of Nova Scotia, followed the sea in boyhood; early came to the U. S., and served in a privateer from one of our Eastern cities, during the war of 1812; then came to N. Y., and sailed as master in merchant vessels for many years, and to all parts of the world; his wife, whose characteristics were as singular as those distinguishing sailors from landmen, accompanied him, in many of these voyages. Her kindness of heart endeared to her her husband's crews, and created in her an attachment to the sailor's home on the sea; when Capt. G. came to W. with an accumulation of over \$30,000 he abandoned the sea, and sought to follow the life of a retired gentleman. But his habits of command stuck to him; and, sometimes in public affairs, acted out his old quarter-deck disregard of the opinions of others, which interfered with his influence in public life; he was always supposed to be the original figure, of "*The meek man with the iron cane*" in the conceit of a facetious club that styled itself the *Great Northwestern Zephyr Association*, that used to hold carnivals at the Neville's Hotel cor. of 1st and So. 7th st.); Horatio N. Fryatt (had a fertilizing chemical factory at the foot of Division avenue on the site of Moller, Sierck & Co's Sugar Refinery; he was in partnership with one Campbell); Chauncey A. Lay, book-keeper and supervisor for the Messrs. Kemp, Masons & Builders for many years; afterward Sup't, for Tarence McGuiggin, Street Contractor; for several of the last years of his life he managed for his dau. in the Hoop-skirt business in Grand street near Fifth; he accumulated, including the house he occupied, some \$40,000, chiefly by careful investments in stocks); Daniel Reilly (liquor saloon); Harris Comstock (a measurer of Lumber); Thomas Green (a tanner—colored sheep-skins and morocco); Henry Oltmans (Grocery at the cor. of McKibben st. and Graham avenue. In later years has been agent and surveyor for the *Kings Co. Ins. Co.*; is Trustee of the *W. Savings Bank*; is a German and always well esteemed); Henry E. Ripley, *Coll.*; James Murphy, *Coll.* (for many years a member of the Board of Education in Brooklyn, and commands the highest confidence of the people); John W. Braisted, *Coll.* (a Jeweler in Wyckoff st.); Henry Payson, *Treas.*; John Broach, *Vill. Clerk* (then Book-keeper with George W. Smith, popularly known as "*Broom corn Smith*," see biography following).

1851.—D. D. Winant, *Pres.*; W. T. Leitch (a merchant in N. Y.); Daniel Barker (a spice grinder in N. Y.); Alexander Hamilton (builder); Daniel Riley; Harris Comstock; James Salters (carpenter and joiner); Fordyce Sylvester (eng. with Norman Francis in the manufacture of saleratus); Dan'l Lindsay; John Maerz (grocer, Meserole street); Benjamin N. Disbrow, *Coll.*;

Henry Cornwell, *Coll.* (a carman in the employ of William Wall); James Murphy, *Coll.*; W. H. Colyer, *Treas.*; John Broach, *Clerk.*

This was claimed to be a reform Board. But its capacity as a whole was far below the Board it superseded. It brought forward in public life two at least who under the first year of the city became defaulters to the city for a large amount of money.

The City of Williamsburgh—1852–1854—The first officers of the new city were Dr. Abraham J. Berry, *Mayor*; Wm. H. Butler, *City Clerk*; Geo. Thompson, *Attorney and Counsel*; Jas. F. Kenny, *Comptroller*; Horace Thayer, Edmund Driggs, Thos. J. Van Sant, Daniel Barker (First Ward); Richard White, Absalom Roper, Jesse Hobley, Harris Comstock (Second Ward); Daniel Maujer (President of the Board); Wm. Woodruff, And. C. Johnson, Edwin S. Ralphs (Third Ward); *Aldermen.* Dr. Berry, the new mayor, was well fitted for his responsible office by a gentlemanly bearing, courteous and affable manners, liberal education, political experience and personal acquaintance with previous village affairs.

This year witnessed the incorporation of the *Farmers and Citizens' Bank*, with a capital of \$200,000; the *Williamsburgh City Bank*, with a capital of \$320,000, and the *Williamsburgh City Fire Insurance Co.*; and the establishment of the *Williamsburgh Medical Society*, and (April) the *Greenpoint Ferry*.

The third issue of the *Williamsburgh Directory* contained 7,345 names, an increase of 1,742 over those of the previous year. It estimates the population of the city as over 40,000.

1853, January—The Board of *Aldermen* was as follows: Daniel Barker; Thomas J. Van Sant; Jared Sparks; Abel C. Willmarth (First Ward). Jesse Hobley; Joseph Smith; George W. Ratern; Harris Comstock, *President* (Second Ward). William Woodruff; Edwin S. Ralphs; John Maerz; Andrew C. Johnson (Third Ward).

The public-school census of persons between the ages of four and twenty-one years, shows 10,907 whites and 214 colored, total, 11,121; the population of Williamsburgh being, at this time, between 40,000 and 50,000. The aggregate number of children attending the public schools of the city, during any part of the previous year, was 9,372, of which 834 had attended the entire school year. Fifteen private schools were also reported, with an attendance of about 800.

This year showed a rapid growth in institutions; the *Fulton Insurance Co.*, with a capital of \$150,000; the *Mechanics* (now the *Manufacturers' National Bank of Williamsburgh*, with a capital of \$250,000; the *Williamsburgh Missionary Society*; the *Young Men's Association*, connected with the Third Presbyterian church; the *Third* (colored) *Baptist*; the *Grace* (Protestant Episcopal); the *First Mission* (Methodist

Episcopal); the *German Evangelical Mission*; the (Roman Catholic) *St. Mary of the Immaculate Conception*, and the *St. Paul's* (German) *Lutheran* churches.

The New York Sunday School Union's annual report credits Williamsburgh with twenty-five Sabbath-Schools of every different denomination; with four hundred and sixty-six teachers, average attendance 387; 4,600 scholars registered, with average attendance of 3,239; 6,297 volumes in Sunday-School libraries. Infant-class scholars (included in above) 465. *Bushwick* had, at the same time, ten different Sunday-Schools, ninety-eight teachers, average attendance 84; 702 scholars, average attendance 472; 1,190 volumes in libraries; 55 infant class scholars.

During this year were organized the *Children's Aid Society*; the *Howard Benevolent Society*; the *Young Men's Literary Association*; and the *Young Men's Christian Association*, of Williamsburgh; the *Bushwick Avenue Baptist*; *Third Unitarian*; *Second Congregational Methodist*; *Graham Avenue Protestant Methodist*; *Ainslie street Presbyterian*, and *German Evangelical Lutheran* churches.

1854, January—Under a change of politics, the Hon. William Wall became Mayor, on the Whig ticket. Commencing life as a journeyman rope-maker, he had become the proprietor of the largest cordage-factory in the vicinity. Shrewd and successful in business matters, he lacked, perhaps, that comprehensive judgment of the complicated interests affecting the government of a city of 40,000, which would have ensured his official success. He soon came in conflict with the Board of Aldermen, and became famous for his frequent exercise of the veto-power. A compilation of these vetoes, made under his direction, by John Broach, Esq., then City Clerk, was afterwards printed in a pamphlet of over 100 octavo pages. Failing, however, to mould the Board of Aldermen to his views by vetoing their doings, he conceived the idea of annihilating a power which he had cause to esteem so dangerous; and became, during the first year of his administration, an earnest advocate of the consolidation of the cities of Williamsburgh and Brooklyn.

This was finally accomplished, by Act of Legislature, taking effect January 1, 1855.

1854. The Board of *Aldermen* was as follows: Jared Sparks; Abel C. Wilmarth; John C. Kelly; Sam'l B. Terry (First Ward). Joseph Smith; Geo. W. Baker, *President*; Caleb Pink; John Linsky (Second Ward). Wm. Woodruff; John Maerz; Thomas Eames; Joseph Nesbit (Third Ward).

City Clerk, Wm. G. Bishop; *Comptroller*, Joseph W. Beerdon; *Commissioner of Streets and Repairs*, Leonard T. Coles; *Treasurer*, Miner H. Keith; *Collector of Taxes*, Fordyce Silvester; *Attorney*, John Dean.

The Consolidation of Williamsburgh and Brooklyn was a measure which was twenty years in advance of the time when it might advantageously have

taken place; and, for a time, it greatly injured the local trade and social *prestige* of this portion of the present City of Brooklyn. It reduced Williamsburgh to the position of an insignificant suburb of a comparatively distant city, which was in no way identified with, or informed of the needs, economies, or real interests of its new adjunct. It was said that Williamsburgh, at the time, was bankrupt; but the more than thirty miles of streets, opened, curbed, flagged and paved, at a cost of from one to two millions of dollars, was a contribution to the new City of Brooklyn which more than balanced the debts added to the common fund.

The Wallabout Canal.—One of the grandest projects for Brooklyn during the days of the "City of Williamsburgh" was first suggested by the late THOMAS W. FIELD, ESQ., viz.: the extension of what is known as the Wallabout Canal through a street, first called River street, 150 feet wide, laid out for the purpose, to the junction of Moore street and the present Broadway; and through Moore street to Newtown Creek.

The bridges were proposed to be raised so as to give some eight feet in the clear between them and the surface water of the canal. Lighter-barges would have been towed through without disturbing the bridges. But, if ships with cargoes in bulk were to pass through the canal, the bridges could be turned on the turn-tables. Basins at favorable places could have been constructed by private enterprise where vessels

could lay without encroaching on the use of the canal.

This grand project could have been chiefly constructed by the owners of the land that would have become water-front along the borders on each side. It would have afforded, when complete, four miles of such water-front that, ere this, would have been crowded with furnaces and factories, requiring facilities for heavy freighting to their doors.

Skill and science would have been required to keep this canal clear. But, it would have relieved the section through which it passed, of a large surplus of surface-water that concentrates there. A 50-foot street on each side of the canal would have given room to sewers, with outlets in the open bay, as at present. The waters of the canal might have been locked at the two termini and lighter-barges have been let in only at high tides and the waters have been kept at a uniform height and so not exposed the debris at the bottom, only when, in cold weather, it was undertaken to wash out and clean the channel. This canal was proposed to be excavated fifty feet wide, with wall of stone about a foot above the surface of the water at high tide, and a shelf was to be made about 5 feet wide on each side to serve for a tow-path either for horse or steam power. The bridges at the street crossings were to be about 100 feet in length, weighted at one end, so as to balance on a turn-table on the street outside the tow-path, so as to make the span 60 feet over the channel.

JOHN BROACH was born in Millstone, Somerset County, New Jersey, April 23d, 1812, of American parents, descended directly from Revolutionary stock; his great-grandparents having taken an active part in the struggle for American independence, and sacrificed all their worldly possessions in the cause, except a considerable amount of Continental paper money, which was handed down, and remained in possession of the family, but did not enrich them, at the time of his birth.

He received such educational advantages as the village school of his native town afforded, until about fourteen years of age; when, having lost his parents, he was obliged to do something for his own support, and procured employment as a boy of all work in a country store for a few months, after which he received some additional education; paying for his own tuition by assisting the teacher in the instruction of the smaller scholars.

In the spring of 1827, being then about fifteen years of age, he left his native village and came to the city of New York, an orphan and alone, to seek his livelihood.

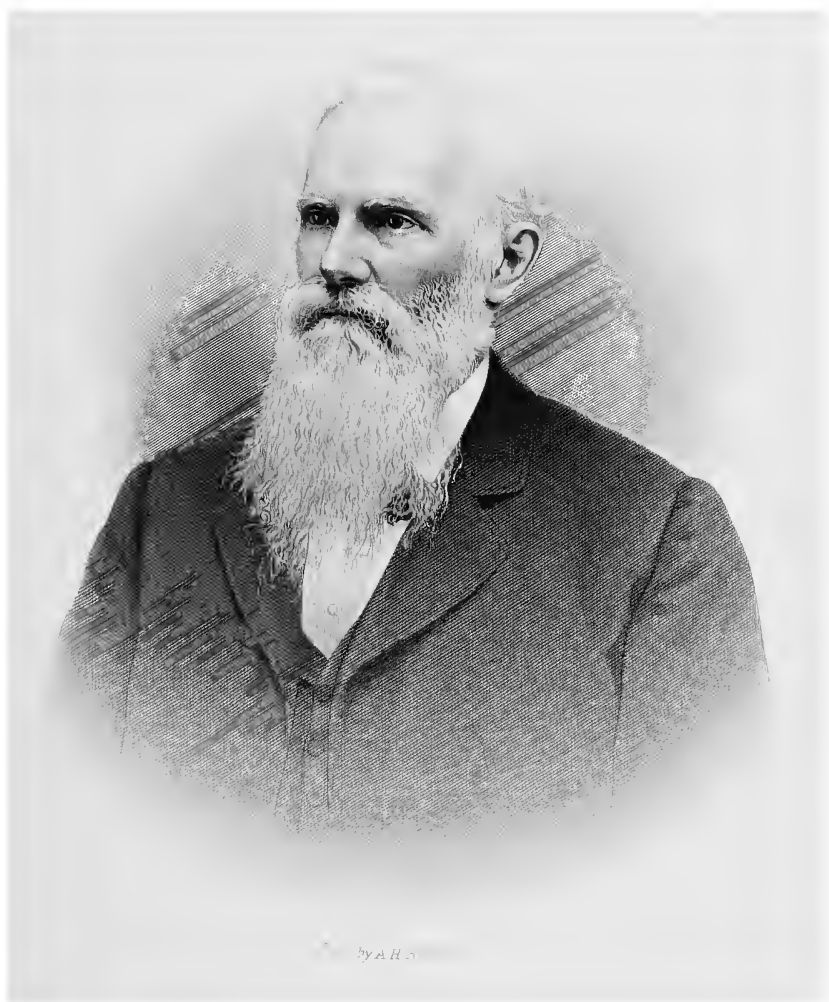
He soon succeeded in finding a distant relative who kept a grocery store in the outskirts of the city, on the old Bloomingdale road, near what was then called Love Lane, and is now Twenty-first street; a section of the city which was called the "Reef" on account of the peculiar roughness of the locality. With this relative he engaged on trial, at any wages he might prove himself to be worth, as a clerk in his store. His friend and employer was an estimable man, but probably few portions of the city could be found less favor-

able to the moral development of a youth of fifteen years of age, just from the country.

From this time until about twenty-five years of age, he engaged in various mercantile and laboring employments, and experienced the vicissitudes which a youth, left entirely to his own direction in a large city, would naturally be subjected to. In 1835, he formed the acquaintance of Miss Cordelia Knox, a most amiable young lady (his present wife), and they were married in the spring of 1836. He then began to think seriously of preparing himself to fill some more useful and respectable position in society, and attended night schools for the study of book-keeping, and other mercantile knowledge. By this means he soon fitted himself for, and obtained employment in more extensive mercantile business.

In the spring of 1845, he removed to the village of Williamsburgh, now the eastern district of the city of Brooklyn, and soon became identified with the customary associations of a growing village. He was active in the formation of the Mechanics' and Workingmen's Library Association, and was its president for some years. In 1848, he was appointed District Clerk, and in 1849 was elected Trustee of the Public Schools in Williamsburgh, and was re-elected successively, to the same office, until 1854, when the consolidation with Brooklyn took place, and his business would not permit his attendance at the Board of Education in the Western District of Brooklyn.

In the spring of 1850 he was elected clerk of the Village of Williamsburgh, being the first clerk of the village elected by the people. He was re-elected in 1851, and remained in office



John Broach



Silvester Turtur



Ernest B. Tuttle

until the city charter of the village took effect in 1852. He was one of the Charter Trustees of the Williamsburgh Dispensary, in 1851, and has remained a trustee and treasurer of that institution up to the present time. He was associated with the founders of the Industrial School Association of this district, in 1854, was one of the first trustees and is still a trustee, and has been twenty-eight years treasurer of that institution.

In 1853, the Williamsburgh City Fire Insurance Company was organized, and he was appointed Assistant Secretary of that company, and in June, 1854, was called from that position, without any solicitation on his part, to the one he has since that time and still occupies, as Cashier of the Williamsburgh Savings Bank. He was also private secretary to Hon. William Wall, while he was Mayor of Williamsburgh in 1854, and up to the time of the consolidation with Brooklyn.

In 1859, he was appointed under a special act of the State Legislature, together with Hon. Edmund Driggs and George Field, Esq., of his district, and the Mayor, Comptroller, and City Treasurer of Brooklyn, on a commission to adjust and settle all claims against the late City of Williamsburgh.

By this commission the outstanding claims against the City of Williamsburgh, which had long been a source of much annoyance and litigation, were satisfactorily adjusted and settled, and the Williamsburgh Savings Bank took the bonds of the City of Brooklyn for the necessary amount to pay off the claims allowed by the commission.

He took a deep interest in the war for the Union, and his three sons, all the children he had living, were early under arms in the field. Two of them, one in the 14th Brooklyn and the other in the 8th New York regiments, were in the first battle of Bull Run. He also assisted in fitting out several other young men for the field before the Government arrangements were completed for equipping the soldiers speedily.

In 1862, his eldest son, John H. Broach, with his father's assistance, raised a company in Williamsburgh, and joining the 173d Regiment New York Volunteers, proceeded to New Orleans and participated in the siege of Port Hudson and the battles leading thereto, and also in the Red River campaign, during which time he was commissioned as Assistant Adjutant-General.

All of his sons served during most of the war and were honorably discharged. One, however, his second son, James A. Broach, reached home only to die, within a few days after his discharge, of a fever contracted in the army at Savannah, Georgia.

Mr. Broach has been a resident of Williamsburgh thirty-eight years.

SYLVESTER TUTTLE.—The subject of this biographical sketch was born in Patchogue, L. I., September 5th, 1806, the son of Rev. Ezra Tuttle, who was an active and zealous minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church, widely known and respected in his time. The son inherited his father's strong religious feeling, which became the controlling element in his character. Before he was twenty-one Mr. Tuttle entered upon a business career in New York City. Industrious, careful and shrewd, he rose rapidly, and in a few years became sole proprietor of a large hat and fur store in Chat-

ham Square, which was one of the only two houses in the trade that was able to withstand the panic of 1837. He became interested in the coal trade in the Eastern District of Brooklyn in 1846, and soon afterwards sold out his business in New York, associating his son with him in 1855. He rapidly extended his trade until it assumed large proportions in the city of Brooklyn.

After many years of active business life, Mr. Tuttle made a tour of Europe in 1871. While abroad he contracted a malarial disease, a recurrence of which proved fatal May 25, 1874, in his 68th year. Mr. Tuttle's energy, activity and integrity enabled him to acquire a fortune, of which he made noble use. He was called to fill many responsible positions. In politics he was an active Republican. But he was best known as a sincere Christian man, whose daily walk and conversation proved him to be an earnest servant of God. In early life he became a member of the Forsyth Street M. E. Church, in New York, then an active member of the South Fifth M. E. Church. He was also a large contributor towards the erection of St. John's M. E. Church, at the corner of Bedford avenue and Wilson street, and, until his death, served as one of its Trustees. He was greatly interested in the North Third Street Mission, and devoted much of his time to personal religious work. A man of fine feelings, he responded heartily to the cry of distress, and gave freely in charity. A public-spirited citizen, he used his means for the good of the city and of his fellow men, and his memory is cherished in the hearts of all who knew him.

EZRA B. TUTTLE.—Ezra B. Tuttle, a son of the late Sylvester Tuttle, a biographical sketch of whom appears next preceding this, was born in the city of New York, May 31st, 1834. He was educated in private schools in New York and in New Haven, Conn., and at Doctor Gold's once popular agricultural school, at Cream Hill, Litchfield County, Conn.

At the age of eighteen he was placed in charge of one of his father's offices, and when he attained to his majority he became associated with his father as a partner in his business.

In the summer of 1857, Mr. Tuttle was married to Miss Frances R. Day, of New Haven, Conn., daughter of Zelotes Day, Esq. They have two sons. The elder, Winthrop M. Tuttle, was educated at the Polytechnic Institute and is now assisting his father in his business. The second son, Frank Day Tuttle, graduated with honors from the Polytechnic Institute, and has recently entered Yale College as a student.

Mr. Tuttle has long been prominently identified with the leading commercial, religious and charitable interests of Brooklyn, holding at the present time the positions of vice-president of the Brooklyn Cross-Town Railroad Company, trustee of the Williamsburgh Savings Bank, director of the Kings County Fire Insurance Company; president of the board of trustees of St. John's Methodist Episcopal Church, of Bedford avenue; vice-president of the Brooklyn Church Society; trustee of Drew Theological Seminary, Madison, N. J.; trustee of the Brooklyn Homeopathic Hospital; trustee of the Brooklyn City Mission and Tract Society; trustee of the Brooklyn Bible Society, and a member of the Missionary Board of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF NEW LOTS.

By *G. Warren Heemister*

School Commissioner of Rural District, Kings County.

ORGANIZATION.—New Lots was organized, as a town, on the 12th day of February, 1852. Prior to that date, the territory was included within the limits of the town of Flatbush, and was known as "The New Lots," in contradistinction to "The Old Lots," near the present village of Flatbush. In area, it is the smallest of the five county towns, although the largest in population, numbering, according to the census of 1880, 13,681. It contains only about six square miles. Its seniors in age, Flatbush and Flatlands, were early settled by the Dutch, the honest, hardy sons of toil, who have made Long Island what it is often rightly called, the "Market Garden of America." As years rolled over our ancestors of those neighboring townships; and, as their available lands became tilled and their families increased, they turned their eyes toward the wilderness, that then lay between them and the cypress-crowned hills of the northeast. There they beheld arable lands in abundance, and thither went their sons to till the plains, where now stand thickly populated villages.

Early Settlers.—The names of some of the old settlers are still perpetuated by descendants, who now stand in the front rank of honorable citizens, increasing the prosperity and controlling the interests of New Lots. Among those who bear the names of the early settlers, and who in some instances occupy the old family mansions, are the Vanderveers, Van Siciens, Wyckoffs, Van Sinderens, Rapaljes, the Lotts and Schencks.

The Old Village of New Lots is situated on the main road leading from the village of Flatbush, and familiarly known as the "Old New Lots Road." Here are stately mansions of recent erection adorned with modern embellishments. Here, too, stands the Reformed Church, the oldest in the town, and a two-story frame school-house. The village is noted as a pre-eminently healthy place; nearly all its inhabitants being connected with families remarkable for their longevity. Besides this, the town includes three other

villages, viz.: *East New York, Cypress Hills and Brownsville.*

East New York is the largest village in the town, both in population and area. Prior to the year 1835, the residents of the territory now embraced within the limits of the town were farmers, and most of their dwellings were situated on the New Lots road. And, where East New York now stands, there were but three or four houses; one known as the "Half Way House," and kept for many years by the Howard family. The old tavern still stands at the junction of Broadway and the Jamaica turnpike. It has stood there for over one hundred years; and, past its doors, marched a part of the British army in the eventful battle of Long Island. It was the favorite stopping-place for the farmers on their way to market, and many a merry tale has been spun within its walls, mute witnesses of the many changes in the several generations that have passed away. It is showing signs of decay and must soon give place to more modern improvements. [A view of this historic tavern—so intimately connected with the Battle of Brooklyn—will be found upon the map of that battle, opposite page 53.—EDITOR]. Another old landmark was situated at the corner of Pennsylvania and Atlantic avenues. It was a three-story dwelling, built of stone, and known as the "Old Stone Building." It was torn down a few years ago, and on the site were erected buildings of more modern structure.

Such was the place in 1835, when the late John R. Pitkin, Esq., a wealthy merchant of Connecticut, passed through it. The land was level, with just enough inclination to the Great South Bay to make the problem of sewerage easy of solution. Its nearness to the cities of New York and Brooklyn, and the general appearance of the place, impressed him so favorably, that he conceived the idea of founding a city to rival that of New York. He purchased the Linington, Wyckoff, Van Sicien and Stoothoff farms, containing a tract about two miles in length and about one mile in width. He had the land laid out into streets and city lots. He

named the place EAST NEW YORK, because it was situated east of New York City. Lots were sold varying from \$10 to \$25. The panic of 1837 proved disastrous to Mr. Pitkin's enterprise, and he was obliged to relinquish all the property to its original owners, except that portion lying between Wyckoff and Alabama avenues, which still retained the name of East New York. In July, 1853, the late Horace A. Miller and James Butler purchased about fifty acres of land lying east of Wyckoff avenue, and commenced the erection of neat and comfortable dwellings, and sold them at reasonable rates and on easy terms: thus adding largely to the population and growth of the village, which contained, according to the census of 1880, about 8,000. There are six railroads terminating at East New York: two steam and four horse roads. *The Brooklyn and Jamaica steam road*, running to Jamaica, connecting with the Long Island road from Hunter's Point to all parts of the island. Rapid-transit trains are run on this road from Flatbush avenue depot, at intervals of about twenty minutes, stopping at the Howard House and other stations in the village.

Brownsville.—This village is situated at the extreme westerly portion of the town. It takes its name from its founder, Mr. Charles S. Brown, who purchased the original land title about eighteen years ago; laid the land out into city lots and sold them to the present owners. Its streets are well laid out at a uniform width of about fifty feet. There are about three hundred and fifty frame buildings in the village, most of them comfortable cottages, occupied by a worthy and industrious class of mechanics. The close contiguity of the village to the city of Brooklyn will cause it to share largely in the rapidly increasing prosperity of the city wards adjoining it. During the past two or three years, a number of fine stores have been erected, and its business interests largely increased. Its present population is about 2,000.

Cypress Hills.—The village of Cypress Hills is situated in the north-easterly portion of the town. Fulton avenue is now extended, from East New York, throughout its entire length to the Queens County line. A horse-car road is in operation upon it, greatly facilitating travel between the village and the City of Brooklyn. The nucleus of Cypress Hills was formed around the once famous hotel of John I. Snediker, about forty years ago. *The Jewish and Cypress Hills Cemeteries* being soon after founded, extensive marble works followed, adding largely to the business of the place. The establishment of the *Brooklyn Water-Works*, buildings, pump-wells and machinery, near the village, also enhanced its material prosperity. The population of the village is about 3,000.

The enviable location enjoyed by the town of New Lots, is certain to bring to dwell within it a largely increased population, within a brief period;—so soon, in fact, as one of the various projects on foot to bring it

into rapid communication with the East River Bridge shall be accomplished. Possessed of extraordinary natural advantages, it will inevitably become the home of manufacturing industries, the establishment of which is all that is now required to give it rank among the foremost towns of the State.

Many of the residents of the town are engaged in business in the cities of New York and Brooklyn. There is, however, a large manufacturing interest in the town, which will be considerably increased on the introduction of public water, the works of which are rapidly approaching completion. Among the most important manufactories may be mentioned the *Unexcelled Fire Works Company*, which has a working force of 150, and whose paid-up capital is \$35,000; *Miles Brothers' Brush Factory*, where nearly 200 men, boys and girls, are constantly employed; *Corrigan's Brush Factory*, established in 1876, by its present owner and operator. It employs about fifty hands, turning out about 10,000 dozen leather-back horse-brushes annually. Its annual consumption of leather is about 3,000 sides; that of bristles and fibre, about three tons; *Nelson's Torpedo Factory*, where paper explosive caps are made, employs about 100 persons; the capital invested is \$250,000; *Davies & Sons' New Jersey Mills*, *Cummings & Sons' Moulding and Planing Mills*, *Rickitts' Pencil, Whip and Toy Factory*, where thirty hands are constantly employed, capital invested \$150,000; *McGuigan's Shoe-button-hole Factory* employs about fifty girls, at average wages of about eight dollars per week. There is a vast business carried on in the manufacture of clothing at the houses of the poorer inhabitants. These industrious tailors are, for the most part, Germans, and are a noteworthy, honest, frugal and thrifty class of operatives.

A great obstacle to the growth of the town has been the want of a water supply, but that is about to be furnished by the *Long Island Water Supply Company*, organized under the provisions of the laws of this State. This company has entered into a contract with the authorities of the town, and is preparing to perform its obligation. The company will expend in the construction of its system of water-works, half a million of dollars. A substantial reservoir is now in course of construction, and about twenty miles of pipes laid. Two hundred fire-hydrants are to be placed in the streets, and the public buildings supplied with free drinking-hydrants. It is expected that the works will be completed before the close of the present year.

The First Town Election was held at the hotel of John I. Snediker, Cypress Hills, on the first Tuesday in April, 1852, at 2 o'clock P. M. J. U. Forbell, F. L. Wyckoff and William H. Suydam were appointed Inspectors. Mr. Gilliam Schenck acting as Clerk.

The following Town Officers were duly elected:—*Supervisor*, Ferdinand L. Wyckoff; *Town Clerk*, Gilliam Schenck; *Tax Collector*, Samuel E. Vander-

veer; *Assessors*, Peter Rapalje, William Simmons, Williamson Rapalje; *Commissioners of Highways*, John G. Williamson, James L. Williams, John Drew; *Justices of the Peace*, Stephen P. Stoodoff, George W. Seaman, Abram S. Eldert, William H. Suydam; *Town Supt. of Schools*, J. Pascal Strong; *Constables*, Joseph H. Weeks, Thomas M. Burtis, John Duryea. Whole number of votes polled, 193.

1883, Present Town Officers.—*Supervisor*, Dittmas Jewell; *Town Clerk*, Louis Bierderman; *Tax Collector*, George W. Palmer; *Justices of the Peace*, Chas. Gertum, William Shirlock, Emil Schiellein, William Watson; *Commissioners of Highways*, Philip L. Jardin, N. Livingston Duryea, Thomas F. Ryan; *Assessors*, George Forbell, William Stoodoff, Henry I. Eldert.

The town is divided into five election districts. The total number of votes polled in 1883, at the annual election for Supervisor, was 2,249.

Union Gas Light Company.—The site upon which the works of this company are built is about one acre in extent, lying almost in the centre of the town. The buildings front on Adams street, and are solid structures of brick.

The capacity of the works are ample to meet the requirements of East New York, and the territory surrounding it, for many years to come. The facilities are now adequate to a supply of 60,000 feet every twenty-four hours. At present only 12,000 feet of gas are nightly being supplied throughout the town; but, in the winter season the demand averages about 25,000 feet.

The utmost credit is due to the Union Company for the liberal scale on which they have provided for the supply of an article so indispensable to the business interests and the home comforts of this community, as is the article of gas. That the company has acted towards the people in an unselfish, and, it were not too much to say, a generous manner—is apparent from the fact that, save one dividend, they have appropriated all the earnings of the company to the improvement of the works.

The history of the Union Gas Works extends back to 1861, in which year they were built, at an original cost of \$50,000. But, in the year 1872 it was found that the facilities were inadequate to an efficient supply, and the large gasometer, built by Thomas F. Rowland of Greenpoint, was purchased, new retorts erected and buildings added and stocked with new machinery, at a cost of about \$70,000.

Newspapers.—The newspaper enterprise of the town dates as far back as 1838, when the late John R. Pitkin, Esq., the pioneer of East New York, commenced the publication of a monthly paper called "*The Mechanic*." The office of publication was in what was then known as the "old stone building" at the corner of Atlantic and Pennsylvania avenues. The *Mechanic* was devoted to the interest of real estate in the village

of East New York, in the sale of which Mr. Pitkin was largely interested. Its publication, however, was discontinued after the first year.

In 1853, Mr. C. Warren Hamilton issued the first number of the "*Kings County Advertiser and Village Guardian*." The office of publication was also in the "old stone building." The *Advertiser* reached its third volume, when it passed into other hands, and under the name of the "*Kings County Journal*" was continued until about the year 1865. In 1866, Mr. Matthew Cooper, a practical printer, became a resident of East New York, and soon after commenced the publication of the *East New York Sentinel*—an independent paper. It is published every Saturday, and has a large and increasing circulation.

In 1870, a stock company was organized under the name of the "New Lots Journal Association," and about the first of September of the same year, issued the first number of the *New Lots Journal*, with the Rev. Joseph I. Elsegood as editor. The stock of the *Journal* was, soon after, sold to A. B. Proctor and C. Warren Hamilton. Its publication was continued by them, under the name of the *Kings County Leader*.

On the 3d of January, 1874, the stock and fixtures were sold to Messrs. A. H. W. Van Sieten and Richard Pickering, who commenced the publication of the *Long Island Record*. About a year after, Mr. Van Sieten withdrew, and its publication was continued under the proprietorship of Mr. Pickering. The *Record* is an independent family and business journal; and, under its present management is rapidly growing in public favor, as its increasing circulation gives ample proof. It is published every Saturday morning in the village of East New York.

The *East New York Laterne*, a weekly newspaper published in the German language, was established on the 10th of February, 1878, by the German Press Association of the town of New Lots, "Limited." C. W. C. Dreher, by whose efforts the paper was started, became its responsible editor; and, after the first six months, sole proprietor, he having bought out all the stockholders. The paper was then enlarged, and entered upon its era of success, maintaining among the German population of the town and neighborhood a conservative influence in all matters pertaining to the welfare of the people. Up to February 10th, 1883, it had firmly established itself, supplying a want which made itself felt among that nationality. In the spring of 1883, Mr. Philip Midas became Publisher, Editor and sole Proprietor. The *Laterna* is published every Friday, and, as an advertising medium, it is not excelled by any other paper in the town.

Police Department.—In 1870, the Metropolitan Police District was abolished, and the towns of Kings County were left without police protection. The Brooklyn Police Bill was accordingly amended, giving authority, to the Town Boards of the several towns, to

apply to the Police Commissioners of the City of Brooklyn, under a requisition for the appointment of as many men as policemen as was deemed necessary. Under this authority, the Board of the town of New Lots, in 1871, applied for the appointment of three men; who were duly appointed. In 1873, three more policemen were appointed. A building was rented, on Liberty avenue, for the use of the police as a station-house and lock-up. The building was, however, found to be entirely inadequate to meet the wants of the Department; and, as a law had been passed, giving authority to the Town Board to bond the town in the sum of \$10,000 for the purpose of erecting a Town House, in some central location, it was deemed best to proceed at once, under the provisions of the Act, to erect a building for the use of the police.

Accordingly in June, 1873, a plot of ground, 50 by 100 feet, was purchased of Horace A. Miller, on Butler avenue, between Atlantic and Fulton avenues, for the sum of \$1,400; and a substantial two-story and basement brick structure erected thereon. On the 11th day of December, 1873, the building was formally handed over to the town. A local paper, speaking of the completion of the building, says: "The building committee, Judges Dowling, Hamilton and Wolfert deserve the thanks of the citizens for the manner in which they have watched over the interest of the tax-payers of the town. The Town House is a credit to the Town Board; to the architect, Wm. T. Smith, and to the contractors, Messrs. Sullivan and Seidler; and we fully agree with the Supervisor of the town, in saying that the town has got a dollar's worth for every dollar expended."

In 1878, an Act was passed, known as the "New Lots Police Bill," authorizing the Supervisor, President of the Excise Commission, and the Justice having the shortest term to serve, to appoint three Police Commissioners to have full control of the police department. Accordingly, in June, 1878, the following commissioners were appointed: Peter Sutter, Jno. K. Powell and Henry L. Wyckoff. A vacancy soon after occurring by the death of Mr. Wyckoff, the Supervisor, who was empowered to fill vacancies, appointed Mr. Richard Pickering.

The department consisted of the following members: Wm. F. Early, *Captain*; Henry French, *Sergeant*; Peter J. Kennedy, *Sergeant*; John Fisher, *Roundsman*; Patrick Brophy, Adam Busch, William E. Dupignac, Simeon Neiger and Edward Downing, *Patrolmen*.

The present organization of the department is as follows:

Peter Sutter, John K. Powell and Richard Pickering, *Commissioners*; Benjamin Rousch, *Clerk*; Henry French, *Captain*; Patrick Brophy, *1st Sergeant*; William F. Early, *2d Sergeant*; Christian Reimels, *3d Sergeant*; John Ringshauser, Robert Kortwright, *Roundsmen*; John Fisher, Wm. E. Dupignac,* Thomas J. Herbert, Charles Nichols,* William Howard, Geo. So-

pers, John Brinsley, William Fosdick, Charles Sutter, *Patrolmen*; Samuel M. Palmer, *Keeper of the Lock-up*.

The department is well equipped with Ambulance, horses, &c., and is under most excellent discipline.

Fire Department.—On the fifteenth day of August, 1860, as F. Oscar Doremus, Samuel W. Palmer, Frank E. Rose and William B. Howard sat in the carpenter shop of Mr. Doremus, situated on the Southwest corner of Atlantic and Van Sieten avenues, reciting the many incidents connected with their experience as members of the Old Volunteer Fire Department of New York City, the subject of organizing a fire-company in the town was suggested. The idea met with a hearty response, and a meeting was held that very evening, and a company organized under the name of *Americus Engine Co. No. 1*, with the following officers: F. O. Doremus, *Foreman*; Samuel W. Palmer, *Assistant*; Charles H. Garbutt, *Secretary*; and Samuel Rose, *Treasurer*. A fire engine was purchased in Brooklyn. The company soon numbered thirty-four active members.

On the 5th day of February, 1861, the first fireman's ball in the town was held at the Hotel of Henry Zubs on the Jamaica Plank road. The ball was well attended by the best citizens of the town. The late Henry Jefferson acted as floor manager. In the early part of 1862 the engine company disbanded and organized *Union Hook and Ladder Co. No. 1*, with Geo. R. Provost, *Foreman*; Samuel W. Palmer, *Assistant*; Charles H. Garbutt, *Secretary*; and Samuel L. Rose, *Treasurer*. A truck was purchased at a cost of \$150. The company numbered 30 members.

On the 15th of March, 1864, S. W. Palmer, W. B. Howard and others, from the Truck, organized a new company known as *Empire Engine Co. No. 1*, with the following officers: F. O. Doremus, *Foreman*; Samuel Doremus, *Secretary*; and Samuel Palmer, *Treasurer*. Under the direction of Martin Bennett and his estimable lady a fair was held for the benefit of the company. A handsome sum was realized, and an engine was purchased at a cost of \$700.

Hope Hose, No. 1, was soon after organized. This company is now known as *Liberty Hose Co., No. 1*.

The Department was duly chartered by an act of the Legislature March 16th, 1865, with Samuel W. Palmer as *President*, W. B. Howard, as *Vice-President*, and Charles H. Garbutt, as *Secretary*. The first election of officers was held on the first Monday in December, 1866. Samuel W. Palmer was elected *Chief Engineer*, Geo. R. Provost, *Assistant Chief*, and Charles H. Garbutt, *Treasurer*. Up to the time of the first election, the President acted as Chief Engineer. The Department at present consists of the following companies:

Union Hook and Ladder Co., No. 1, with the following officers: John Weisbrod, *Foreman*; August Heidenrich, *Secretary*. The company numbers forty members.

*Mounted.

Neptune Engine Co., No. 1, with the following officers: William Leihman, *Foreman*; James De Clue, *Secretary*—with a roll of twenty-eight members.

Alert Pump Co., No. 1, with the following officers: John Sonnen, *Foreman*; Martin Wernert, *Secretary*. This company has had an average of forty members since its organization in 1875.

Liberty Hose Co., No. 1, with the following officers: Henry Distler, *Foreman*; William Sheriff, *Secretary*. This company numbers twenty-five members.

Independent Pump and Bucket Co., No. 2, with the following officers: John Kelley, *Foreman*; Fred Weinhardt, *Secretary*. Number of members, thirty.

Franklin Engine Co., No. 2, with the following officers: T. A. Cummings, *Foreman*, and Geo. McMannis, *Secretary*. This company numbers forty members.

The Department is under the direction of a board of trustees, consisting of four members from each company. Geo. F. Browning is President of the Board and Charles H. Smith, Secretary. John J. Kennedy is the present Chief and Geo. N. Lenfestry, Assistant Chief of the Department. The town is divided into six fire districts, with fire alarm stations in each district, connected with the police station by telegraph, from which a general alarm is given.

Churches.—There is, perhaps, no town of its size in the State that contains so many church edifices, and contributes so liberally toward their support, as the town of New Lots. Nearly all religious denominations are represented. It may well be called "the town of churches."

The Reformed Church is located on the New Lots road. It was erected in 1823; and is the oldest church edifice in the town. It was dedicated in July, 1824, the Rev. John Alburtis officiating. During the following year this church united with that of Flatlands, in calling upon the Rev. Wm. Crookshank, who in February, 1825, was ordained and installed pastor of the two churches. In April, 1835, he resigned his charge and removed to the village of Newburgh, N. Y. On the 22d of March, 1836, the Rev. J. Abeel Baldwin became pastor of these churches. He officiated among them with much acceptance for many years; finally taking charge of the Flatlands church alone. The Rev. John Van Buren was called to the pastorate of the church at New Lots, and continued in charge for nearly twelve years. He was succeeded by the Rev. C. W. Woods; who, after a successful pastorate of about six years, was followed by the Rev. N. W. Pierce, the present pastor. The Sunday-school connected with this church numbers about 150 scholars. Mr. David Hopkins, a long and zealous worker in the church, is the present Superintendent.

Reformed Church, East New York.—In 1838, a New Reformed Church was built, in the village of

East New York. It is situated on New Jersey avenue, near Fulton avenue. This church was dedicated in the Spring of 1839; Mr. Williamson Rapalje, Sen., one of the present elders, being one of the first elders elected. In May 1840, the Rev. Wm. H. Campbell was installed as pastor. He continued here until the Fall of 1841; when he removed to Albany, to take charge of the Third Reformed Church of that city. He was succeeded by the Rev. Martin V. Schoonmaker, whose pastorate continued for seven years. After an interim of about a year, the Rev. J. Pascal Strong was called to the pastorate, and served for about five years. In 1855, the present commodious church edifice was erected, as the old building had become too small to accommodate the growing wants of the community. In June, 1856, the Rev. Anson F. Munn was called; and closed his pastorate in 1867. On the 6th of May, 1868, the Rev. C. R. Blauvelt, began his ministry in the church, continuing until 1875; when he was succeeded by the Rev. William J. Hill, who after a very successful ministry of seven years, was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. Daniel Van Pelt.

The Sabbath-School connected with this church numbers 472 scholars. Its success is largely due to Mr. Ditmas Jewell, who during a period of nearly twenty years zealously performed the duties of Superintendent. Mr. Jewell was succeeded by Mr. Miles A. Brown, the present able Superintendent.

Trinity P. E. Church.—Celebrated the 25th Anniversary of its consecration, on Sunday the 23d day of November, 1879, with a "Jubilee." The services were of a highly interesting character, and at their conclusion the rector, Rev. Dr. J. I. Elsegood, delivered a historical address. In this he quoted from a letter written by the first rector of this parish, the Rev. Dexter Potter, who was prevented, by age and feebleness, from being present, the following facts:

In 1854, or a short time previous to this date, when vacant lands in and about East New York were being purchased with a view to form a village, one of those concerned in that business, the late Mr. Horace A. Miller, offered to give the lot of ground on which the church now stands, provided a Protestant Episcopal church could be erected thereon. The Rev. Dexter Potter, to whom the offer was made, after due consultation with the Bishop of the Diocese, commenced the collection of subscriptions for that purpose. While he was thus engaged, the building owned by the Dutch Reformed congregation, in East New York, became for sale and was purchased by a gentleman for other than ecclesiastical purposes. This building was purchased by the Rev. Mr. Potter, who was obliged to advance a considerable sum from his own means, in order to effect the purchase. The building was removed to the ground donated by Mr. Miller, where it now stands, and the Parish was organized September 11, 1854. The

deed of the lot was given to the Wardens and Vestry of Trinity Church, in East New York, and an excellent bell was given to the parish by Mr. D. D. Lyon, then the sexton of Trinity Church, New York City.

The consecration sermon was preached by the Rt. Rev. Alonzo Potter, D.D., Bishop of Pennsylvania. The names of the first Wardens and Vestry-men of this Parish were as follows: Lyman Cobb and Herman H. Kettenhorn, *Wardens*; Noyes G. Palmer, Robert Edmunds, James Davies, James S. Williams, James D. Davies, Augustus Ivins, Charles R. Miller and Samuel Davies, *Vestry-men*. On the 24th of March, 1857, through the decease of much a loved brother, the Rev. Mr. Potter was constrained to resign the Rectorship of the Parish and remove to Cambridge, Mass., where he still resides.

The Rev. J. F. Delaphine Cornell was then chosen Rector of the Parish. He was a young gentleman possessed of considerable talent, eloquence and zeal, and he entered upon his work amid great and many encouragements; but in October, 1858, through an over-taxation of the brain, he became suddenly and completely mentally prostrated. He was removed at once to the Insane Asylum at Flatbush, where he still continues without hope of recovery. In October, 1859, the Rev. Charles Cleveland, D.D., was called to, and accepted the Rectorship of the parish. He continued faithfully at his post until February, 1866, when he was removed by death.

In May of the same year, the Rev. T. McKee Brown accepted a call to become Rector, and continued until May, 1868, when he resigned in order that he might enter upon another field of labor. The Rev. John Morgan then became Rector, and remained until October, 1868.

In the summer of 1869, a vestibule, or porch, and a pleasant chancel were added, lancet windows were made to replace the old square ones, the organ loft was renovated, altered and improved; and the entire building within and without was handsomely renovated and refurnished. A handsome chancel window was ordered and paid for by the Sunday-school of the parish.

In 1873 the present organ was purchased and paid for by the "Ours" Association; which, with the *Ladies' Aid*, and the *Penny Aid Societies* are most important aids for church work. In 1875 the old and uncomfortable pews were removed, and the floor relaid; the present attractive pews were introduced with centre and two sides aisles.

The Sunday school connected with this church is in a very flourishing condition, numbering about 500 scholars. Much credit is due to Mr. James D. Davies, who for nearly twenty years was its kind and faithful Superintendent. About a year ago Mr. Harry E. Cluff was appointed as Mr. Davies' successor, and is the present Superintendent.

Ebenezer M. E. Church.—In the early part of

the year 1860, the Rev. Charles Fletcher, then Presiding Elder of the district embracing the town of New Lots, preached in the Lutheran German Church on Liberty avenue, East New York, to those who desired to establish, in that village, a Methodist Episcopal Church. Deep interest was manifested, a society organized, and services continued in the school-house on Vermont avenue. On the 5th day of March, 1861, a permanent organization was effected, under the name of the *East New York M. E. Church*, and the following board of trustees elected: John McKellop, Ebenezer Wilson, Wm. H. Hoyt, James Miller, and Wm. Hardenburgh.

On the 25th of July, 1863, the large Hall in the Central Buildings, corner of Atlantic and Van Siclen avenues, was rented and services were held every Sabbath. In 1865, the church at East New York was united with the M. E. Church at Cypress Hills, under the pastorate of the Rev. Curtis Graham. In 1866, the church was again separated, and re-organized as the *Methodist Protestant Church*. A new board of trustees was elected, and the Rev. E. F. Jones called to the pastorate. In this year a new church was erected on Fulton avenue, which afterwards came into the possession of the Evangelical German Church; and Brown's Hall was secured as a place of worship, with the Rev. L. D. Nicolson as pastor. At the end of two years he was succeeded by the Rev. Henry Aston. During the pastorate of Mr. Aston, through the financial aid of Mr. William Barker, a wealthy resident of Clinton avenue, Brooklyn, ground was broken on the 20th of October, 1868, and the present commodious church edifice on Williams avenue, erected—having received its present name of the "Ebenezer Methodist Episcopal Church."

The church was dedicated on the 11th of January, 1869, having been completed in the remarkably short time of twenty-one days. The dedication sermon was preached by the Rev. Abel Stephens, D.D.

PASTORS: 1870, Rev. Mr. Smart; 1871, Rev. Joseph Thomas; 1873, Rev. William Platts; 1876, Rev. C. W. Powell; 1879, Rev. B. F. Reeves; 1881, Rev. Wm. H. Russell; 1882, Rev. J. W. Simpson, the present pastor. During his pastorate, 64 new members have been added to the church; and during the last conference year, the sum of \$1,600 has been raised by voluntary subscriptions in aid of the church. Extensive repairs to the building are now in progress, and when completed, the church will rank among the first in the town. During the pastorate of the Rev. B. F. Reeves, a new parsonage was built on the lots adjoining the church, at a cost of about \$3,000.

In January, 1880, the church suffered a severe loss in the death of WILLIAM VRADENBURGH, a member of the first board of trustees; and who, for nearly twenty years, had been a faithful and zealous member and worker in the Church. On the 12th day of June, 1871, Daniel Veitch, Esq., was appointed Superintendent of

the Sunday School, and much of its present prosperity is due to his faithful work during the seven years that he had charge. The school now numbers about 300 scholars, under the able superintendency of Philip Evans, Esq.

First Baptist Church.—On the 17th of July, 1864, a number of citizens of the village of East New York met and organized a Baptist Sunday School. Charles Truax, Esq., was appointed Superintendent. He was ably assisted in his work by his estimable wife. Mr. James J. Miller and B. P. Sturges, Esq., took a deep interest in the school, and much good was accomplished. In July, 1865, a Society was organized under the name of the *First Baptist Church of East New York*, and the Rev. John Willett was chosen pastor. Soon after, a Fair was held, and the sum of \$500 realized. The success of the Fair was largely due to the kind assistance of the Washington avenue Baptist Church, of Brooklyn. John H. Tripler, of this church, donated 32 seats and cushions, and the church gave the sum of \$325.

Meetings were held in what was known as Wagoner's Hall, on Smith and Liberty avenues. On the 27th of March, 1866, it was resolved to build a church; lots were accordingly purchased on Smith avenue, near Fulton. Mr. B. P. Sturges, who had taken a deep interest in the welfare of the church, generously tendered for the use of the society a chapel, which he had erected near his residence, on Divison avenue. In the meantime, steps had been taken for the erection of a church. The society, however, met with but little success. The church was soon after completed, but the society found itself heavily in debt. In 1871, Rev. W. F. Benedict was called to the pastorate. In April, of this year, steps were taken to free the church from its heavy burden of debts; and the church was soon in a more prosperous condition. In 1873, Rev. W. F. Benedict was succeeded in the pastorate by the Rev. J. H. Dudley. But it was not till 1874, when the Rev. Charles Coleman was called to the pastorate, that the church was relieved from all financial embarrassment.

In April, 1882, the Rev. James L. Hodge was called to the pastorate. The Sabbath-School connected with the church numbers about 150 scholars, under the able superintendency of William C. Anderson, with a corp of twelve teachers.

German Lutheran Church, located at the corner of Liberty and Vermont avenues, was built in 1847. In the early part of 1848, the Rev. F. G. Zeuner was installed as the first pastor. After about two years he was succeeded by the Rev. Carl Schaum. He continued pastor for about fourteen years, and was succeeded by the present pastor, the Rev. J. F. Flath. During his pastorate the congregation has largely increased in numbers and much good accomplished. In 1868, extensive additions were made to the building, and it is now one of the largest edifices in the town.

The Sabbath-School connected with the church, under the supervision of Carl Wonnberger, Esq., is doing a most excellent work, numbering 175 scholars with nineteen teachers.

Andrews' Methodist Episcopal Church, located on Clinton avenue, Cypress Hills. This society was organized in the early part of 1851. The first meeting was held at the residence of Richard H. Pill, Sen., in East New York; and one afterward at the house of Mr. Lindsey, at Cypress Hills, over which Mr. Geo. W. Seaman presided, and Isaac B. Soper acted as Secretary. At this meeting, it was decided to build a church, the same to be 25x38 feet, and height of ceiling to be 15 feet, and with a basement. Garrett Denton, Geo. W. Seaman, Isaac U. Forbill, Richard H. Pill, Sen., and Isaac B. Sopers were elected the first Board of Trustees, all of which are now deceased, except Mr. Pill, who is nearly ninety years of age.

The first deed was executed by Joseph F. Bridges and wife to Garrett Denton and others, trustees of the Wesleyan Methodist Episcopal Church, of Union Place (now Cypress Hills), Town of Flatbush (now New Lots), County of Kings and State of New York, June 23d, 1851. About this time it was decided to break ground for the new church, its erection to commence after the 15th of September of the same year.

Pastors.—The first minister officiating at a baptism was Rev. Daniel DeVinne, then stationed at Newtown; but, in 1855 and 1856, was stationed at Union Place, now Cypress Hills. From this time until 1861 it was supplied by local ministers; 1861, Rev. Stephen Rushmore; 1862, the Rev. C. S. Williams was the preacher in charge, and in 1863 and 1864.

The first enrollment of members found was made in 1853, but no account when the classes were formed. There were three classes, numbered 1, 2 and 3. Wm. Vradenburg was Leader of 1 and 2, and George H. McCoy was Leader of Class No. 3. The first date of a probationer was January 1, 1853. The Sunday-School was organized in 1852, and George W. Seaman was elected its first Superintendent.

In 1865-66 and '67 Rev. C. Graham was the minister in charge. During his ministry a great revival occurred, and a large number were converted, both in this and adjacent communities. During 1868-69 and '70, Rev. W. Wake was in charge; and in the year 1870 the church was enlarged so that now it has seating capacity for about 350 persons. In 1871-72, Rev. C. T. Mallory; 1873 and 1874, Rev. W. Gothard; 1875, '76, '77, Rev. W. L. Holmes; in 1878 and '79, Rev. T. M. Terry; the Rev. F. Brown succeeded him and is now in his third year.

In July, 1872, the name of the Church was legally changed, and the Board of Trustees are known as "The Trustees of the *Andrews Methodist Episcopal Church of Cypress Hills*, Town of New Lots, Kings County, and State of New York." The number of members now

enrolled on its books is 109. In the Sunday-School there are 269 teachers and scholars. Its membership is composed of those who have to earn their daily livelihood, and who struggle hard to sustain the church. The Society was never in its history financially better than it is now, for which the church is largely indebted to the ladies connected with the congregation. In the early part of this church's history it was connected with the East New York charge in its Quarterly Conferences; but at the Quarterly Conference held September 8th, 1872, it was agreed to separate and have two distinct Quarterly Conferences.

The Rev. Charles Doughty, the present Superintendent of the Sunday-School, is an earnest and faithful worker in the church, and to him is due much of its success as a church.

First Congregational Church.—This church is located on Rockaway avenue, in the village of Brownsville. A little band, representing different evangelical denominations, as early as June, 1866, began to meet at private houses for social worship, in the hope of imparting and receiving mutual benefit. At length, the use of a room centrally located having been secured, a Sunday-School was organized on July 28th, 1868, numbering, besides the superintendent, seven male and four female teachers, with twenty-four male and twenty-six female scholars. The weekly prayer meeting was likewise continued, with services on the Sabbath for preaching when preaching could be obtained, or, in the absence of this, for exhortation, prayer and conference, by the few brethren who were willing to aid. At one of these meetings, held June, 1867, at the residence of Mr. G. S. Thatford, the query was incidentally raised—whether the effort ought not to be made to establish a church. The responses indicating a willingness to contribute and labor for such an object, it was at once resolved to institute the needful preliminary measures; which measures were happily crowned with success. To Mr. Havilah Mowrey, city missionary, it is only a proper acknowledgment to state that in this, as in every prior stage of the history of the church from the beginning, the citizens were largely indebted, for the result, to his wise counsels and unremitting co-operation. Although beyond the limits of his district, he seldom failed to be present at the meetings when permitted by other engagements, and about \$2,000 raised by his personal solicitation were paid by him towards defraying the cost of the building and its furniture. Much credit is likewise due to J. G. Cooley, Esq., for donating the valuable melodeon now in use, besides \$100 in money. By funds thus procured, with other sums obtained from friends residing or having interests in the neighborhood, and \$500 appropriated by the Congregational Union, the entire church property was, before the commencement of this current year, made free from debt. The ground on which the church stands was donated by Mr. G. S. Thatford, and

consists of two lots, being 50 feet front by 120 feet deep. The edifice itself, which is 30 feet front by 45 feet deep, cost \$3,500, and was dedicated on Monday, 31st of May, 1869; and an ecclesiastical organization effected under the title of the *First Congregational Church of New Lots*; it having been determined at a previous meeting, after due notice, to adopt the Congregational name and principles.

At a meeting of the church and society regularly convened, on Monday evening, December 20th, 1869, the Rev. I. S. Davison, who had for more than a twelve-month filled the pulpit once each Lord's day without pecuniary remuneration, was invited to the pastorate; and the American Home Missionary Society having commissioned him with the promise of aid in his support, arrangement was accordingly effected for one year, beginning with January 1st, 1870; when two preaching services instead of one every Sabbath were inaugurated, together with a Pastor's Bible-Class.

At the close of the Rev. I. S. Davison's charge, the Rev. I. C. Lockwood was called to the pastorate. In September, 1871, the Rev. C. N. N. Pannell became pastor, and remained until 1876, when the Rev. A. H. Kirkland took charge. He continued until 1880. In July, 1880, the Rev. H. N. Wright was called, and continued pastor eighteen months; when he was succeeded by the Rev. Curtis Graham. He remained about one year and was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. C. F. Decker. This church at present numbers about 80 members. The Sunday-school connected with the church numbers 125 scholars; and, under the able superintendency of Mr. E. E. Stewart, who has had charge for the past nine years, is doing a most excellent work.

Union Congregational Church.—This society is an offshoot of the Congregational church at Brownsville, and is at present temporarily located at the corner of Johnson and Liberty avenues. The society is at present in a very flourishing condition, and largely increasing in numbers, and is soon to erect a new church on Orient avenue near East New York avenue. It is under the charge of the Rev. Curtis Graham. Mr. E. E. Stewart is Superintendent of the Sunday-school, which numbers about 100 scholars.

St. Malachi's R. C. Church.—This church, located on Van Siclen avenue near Atlantic, was built in the year 1854, under the supervision of the Rev. Father Bown, pastor of Holy Cross, in the town of Flatbush. A parochial school was established, in 1867, by the Rev. Father Creighton, the first resident pastor. The school has been under the instruction of the Sisters of St. Joseph since 1871, the Rev. Father Carroll being then pastor. The school buildings are pleasantly located, adjoining the church. The school is under most excellent supervision and has an average daily attendance of about 200 pupils. In 1873, under the direction and supervision of the church, an *Orphan Asylum* was established. A large three-story brick building adjoin-

ing the school buildings was purchased and fitted up to meet the wants of the institution. Provision is made for both boys and girls under the careful instruction of the Sisters. In 1872 the Rev. John Purcell succeeded Father Carroll to the pastorate, and remained until 1874, when he was succeeded by the Rev. P. J. McNamara. On the 15th of August, 1877, the present pastor, the Rev. Father O'Connell, took charge of the parish. During the six years of his faithful administration much good has been accomplished, and extensive additions have been made to the church edifice.

The young men of the parish identified with the church organized, on the 6th of May, 1883, the *Young Men's Catholic Lyceum Association*, the object of which was to form a bond of social union among the young men of the church, which is in a very flourishing condition. Preliminary steps have been taken for the erection of a large hall for its accommodation. The association is a branch of what is known as the "Diocesan Union of Kings County," a body composed of representatives from the different Young Men's Roman Catholic Associations of this vicinity.

The officers of the association are as follows: *President*, John Maguire; *Vice-President*, James Sinnot; *Rec. Secretary*, Geo. Sherlock. It numbers about eighty members.

St. Michael's R. C. Church.—For several years the need of a German Roman Catholic Church at East New York, town of New Lots, had been apparent, but it was not until the 25th of January, 1860, that steps were taken by the Rev. Philip Albrecht, pastor of St. Benedict's, New Brooklyn, and St. Francis, Bedford, by calling a meeting for the purpose of considering the subject of erecting a church. At this meeting fifty of the best German families were represented.

By consent of the Right Rev. J. Laughlin, D.D., Bishop of Brooklyn, four lots were purchased on John street between Liberty and Atlantic avenues. The building was planned, and work was commenced and progressed so rapidly that the corner stone was laid on the 18th of April, 1860. The building was a small, plain, frame structure, forty feet in length by thirty feet in width, with steeple. It was dedicated by the Bishop on the 30th day of June, 1860, and placed under the invocation of St. Michael the Archangel. A bell was procured and blessed by the Bishop, assisted by the Rev. Charles Peine, on Palm Sunday, 1860. The Rev. Charles Peine was appointed first pastor of the church. The first baptism took place on August 6th, 1860; the first marriage July 8th, 1860. On the 12th of May, 1861, nine boys and three girls made their first communion in the new church. Palm Sunday, 1862, the station of the cross was erected. The first mission was held by Rev. Laufhuber, S. I., under the pastorate of Rev. Cyril Zielinski, successor of Rev. Peine, at the end of June, 1863.

Rev. Zielinski was pastor from February, until Au-

gust, 1863, when Rev. M. I. Decker succeeded him, from October, 1863, until May, 1864. Again, in May, 1864, Rev. Peine took charge of the congregation. In October, 1863, the pastoral residence was commenced by the side of the church and finished by Rev. Peine. Its first story was used for school purposes. In July, 1866, Rev. Caspar Muller was appointed pastor. The first of February, 1868, two lots on the right side of the pastoral residence were bought for a new school building.

Rev. A. Oberschneider was pastor from August, 1863, until January, 1871, when Rev. I. Michaels became pastor. He held three missions, given by the Redemptorists, Capucins and Jesuits.

In March, 1875, Rev. Aug. Maria Niemann took charge of St. Michael's. Rev. Niemann seeing the necessity of enlarging the church, since the congregation had increased very much, added sixty feet to it with the consent of the bishop in September, 1875.

This pastor was the first who introduced plain chant and it is sung to the present day. He also bought three more lots in 1876, and again another lot in 1878, and two in 1879, situated on Washington street, between Atlantic and Liberty avenues. The congregation and work becoming greater, an assistant priest was sent on the first of January, 1881.

In September, 1881, there was a mission given by the Redemptorist Fathers Keitz and Zinnen.

Evangelical German Church is situated on Fulton avenue, near Wyckoff. It was organized in 1869, with 35 male members, meeting in the church edifice, which was built by another church denomination in 1866, but was purchased by the trustees of the Evangelical German Church in 1872. The church is under the pastorate of the Rev. John Eschmann, who has had charge of the church during the fourteen years of its existence. Under his faithful charge, the congregation has largely increased in numbers and much good has been accomplished.

Connected with the church is a Sabbath-school under the supervision of the pastor. The school numbers about 150 scholars with twelve teachers. The school has a library of about 300 volumes.

Public Schools—In the early part of the year 1740, the easterly portion of the town of Flatbush, known as the "New Lots," was organized into a separate school district, known as No. 2. A small one-story frame school-house was erected near the present school-building on the New Lots road. No record can be found of those who taught in this first school-house, prior to the year 1806. At that time Peter Nufus was employed as teacher, and he was the first to teach in the English language; his predecessors taught in the Dutch language exclusively. Mr. Nufus ended his services as teacher about the year 1810. That year also ended the usefulness of the first school-house, for in the early part of the year it was torn down to make

room for a more commodious structure. The following were the building committee: Tunis Schenck, Isaac Snediker, Abraham Van Siclen, John Blake and John Williamson.

The building was a two-story frame structure, the top floor being used for the purpose of holding lectures, singing-schools, etc.; the first floor was used as a school-room. During the time the building was under construction, sessions of the school were held in the barn, now belonging to Mr. William Hopkins, Sr. The first teacher employed in the new school-house was a Mr. Sebra, succeeded by a Mr. Hall; Mr. Jacob Bergen, an efficient and successful teacher; Mr. William Lawrence, from 1835 to 1838; Mr. John Woodman, from 1838 to 1844; Mr. H. J. Hamilton, until his death, in 1853; Mr. Geo. A. F. North, 1853 to 1856; C. Warren Hamilton, 1856 to 1857; William Vradenburgh, 1857 to 1860; J. Kelley, 1860 to 1862; Abraham VanKeuren (at present connected with the school); A. G. Kimberly as the principal of the school. In 1875, Mr. Vradenburgh was again appointed as principal and remained until his death in 1879. He was succeeded by James K. Coles; he by Charles Libby; he by Thomas D. Hyatt; and he by T. S. Imaly, the present principal.

During Mr. William Lawrence's time, in 1835, the interior of the building was somewhat changed. The first floor was converted into dwelling apartments in which the teachers resided up to the time of the engagement of Mr. VanKeuren, the top floor alone being used as a school-room. In 1873, the building was again remodelled. The first floor was fitted up for the grammar department, while the top floor was used for the primary classes, and is so used at present. In 1880, two new school-buildings were erected in the district as branch schools. The following is a list of the present teachers in the district: T. S. Imaly; Abraham Van Keuren; Charles Barnes; Miss Emma Smith; Miss Annie Smith; Miss Lizzie Veitch; Miss Rebecca Clayton. The following are the present school officers: William Hopkins, Jacob Cozzine, C. G. Suydam. The number of children of school age, residing in the district, is about 1000. The assessed valuation of property in the district in 1882 was \$722,320. The school-houses and sites are valued at \$14,000.

In 1847 John B. Zabriskie, M. D., then Town Superintendent of Schools, was petitioned to set off and organize a new school district, to embrace all the territory now included in *district No. 2*, East New York, and *district No. 3*, Cypress Hills. The petition was granted and a new district organized, the school being located at East New York. The following trustees were elected: Isaac C. Schenck, William P. Stoothoff and David Storms. A site was purchased on Vermont avenue near Fulton avenue and a school-house built, which still remains, although very much changed in appearance. It was built by Henry I. Eldert at a cost

of \$479. On the completion of the building Mr. James Clegg was employed as teacher, who, after about two years, was succeeded by Isaac Sopers. In 1853 he was succeeded by C. Warren Hamilton, who remained about four years and was succeeded by Mr. A. Ketchum. Then followed Geo. A. F. North, who taught until the breaking out of the Civil War, when he enlisted; George Chapin, who remained for about five years; when Mr. North was re-engaged and is at the present time principal of the school.

About the year 1856 this district was divided, and Cypress Hills was organized as *district No. 3*. During the first ten years of its existence the school was kept in the basement of the Methodist Church of that place. The present commodious two-story and basement school building was erected in 1870 under the direction of the Trustees, Richard Pickering, A. H. W. Van Siclen and George O. Sowl. The first teacher employed was a Mr. Wiggins; after a short time Mr. A. Ketchum; Mr. Green, for a few months; Mr. Rice, for about a year; John Reed, for eight months; Alexis W. Bariteau; Mr. Isaac Bates; Mr. Abraham Van Keuren, an experienced teacher; Mr. William Vradenburgh; Mr. Buckerman; Miss Buckerman, his daughter; Mr. B. D. Graham; Mr. LeGrand Payne, during the summer of 1869; Mr. L. Remsen Lott, until 1877; Wilbur F. Morrow; Mr. Geo. W. French; Mr. A. A. Ashmun, the present principal; with the following assistant teachers: Miss Ida Byram; Miss Minnie Byram; Miss Agnes Dickerman; Miss Miriam Simonson, and Miss Helen Persons.

The following is the present Board of Trustees: F. A. Marriner, D. S. Willmarth, E. C. Grunswold. The assessed valuation of the district is \$386,520. The number of children of school age residing in the district is 540. The school-house and site is valued at \$10,000.

In 1855 a meeting was called in East New York for the purpose of taking action in reference to establishing a school of a higher grade. Those most active in the movement were the late Professor D. H. Crutten-den, then a resident of East New York; Charles R. Miller and Ditmas Jewell. It was finally resolved to organize district No. 2, East New York, into a *Union Free School District*—with a Board of Education consisting of nine members, viz., Messrs. C. R. Miller, Ditmas Jewell and the late John C. Middendorf. Mr. Miller was chosen the first President of the Board, and Mr. Jewell succeeded him, which position he held for many years, and was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Davis, now deceased. Mr. Joachim Birkner, a very efficient member of the Board, afterward held the position for a number of years.

The school-house on Vermont avenue proving too small to accommodate the increasing number of pupils, an act was passed authorizing the district to issue bonds in the sum of \$25,000 to purchase a site and

build a school-house. Accordingly, a site of eight lots was purchased on Butler avenue, near Atlantic; and a large and commodious two-story and basement brick structure was erected. This building soon proving insufficient for the wants of the district, a new building was erected on Henry avenue at a cost of \$15,000. In 1880 an Academic Department was organized in the new building with a roll of twenty pupils, under the direction of the State Board of Regents. Mr. A. A. Ashmun was appointed Principal. The assessed valuation of property in the district in 1882 was \$1,320,000. The number of school children, 3,198. The school-houses and sites are valued at \$34,000. The following is the present Board of Education: John K. Powell, *Pres.*; C. W. C. Dreher, William Busch, Samuel A. Livingston, Matthew Cooper, Witsen Colyer, William C. Anderson, John Stander and J. M. Lintz; John Smith, *Secretary*.

The present corps of teachers is as follows:—In the *Butler Avenue School*: Geo. A. F. North, Principal; assisted by Miss Rose M. Geraghty, Miss Hannah Dickerman, Miss Emma D. Weisbrod, Miss Mary A. Lee, Miss Kate Schuman, Miss Maggie Dickhaut, Miss Emma Hancock, Miss Mary Sinnott, Miss Mary E. Isabell, Miss Lizzie Hulse, Miss Timothia King, Miss Maria Allen. *Henry Avenue School*.—A. A. Ashmun, Principal; assisted by Miss Kate Sniffen, Miss Helen E. Stocking, Miss Belle L. Provost, Miss Maud Anderson, Miss Anna L. Carpenter, Miss Nina Cameron, Miss Carrie Newcome. *Vermont Avenue School*.—Miss Adelia B. Murray, Principal, assisted by Miss Selina Minard, Miss Kate R. Newcome, Miss Jenny A. Ruoff. Mr. John P. Weikam, teacher of German and drawing, in all the schools of the district, which position he has held for many years. Mr. Herman Struder, a successful teacher of German and drawing, was for several years connected with the schools of this district. He was succeeded by Prof. Charles Hetterseimer.

Connected with the schools of the town are extensive *libraries*, containing not less than 2000 volumes. From one to two hundred volumes are distributed weekly to those living in the town.

HON. WM. B. RUGGLES is Superintendent of Public Instruction, Albany, New York. MR. C. WARREN HAMILTON, of New Lots, is the present School Commissioner of the Rural District, Kings County, which position he has held for the past fourteen years.

Societies.—New Lots abounds in societies. There are literary, beneficiary, singing and church societies, shooting, yachting, turning and bowling clubs.

Among the beneficiary societies are *Progressive Lodge K. of P.*, *Continental Lodge K. of P.*, *Empire Lodge No. 1* and *Friendship Lodge No. 2* of the Order of Heptasophs, or Seven Wise Men, organized 1861; *Tyrian Lodge* and *Von Mensch Lodge F. and A. M.*; *St. Michael's Kranken Untersetzungs Verein*, connected with St. Michael's German R. C. Church;

Rainbow Lodge I. of C. F.; *Bumber Guard*; *Eintrecht Lodge*, organized 18th of October, 1868; *Herman's Sons*; *Louis M. Hamilton Post G. A. R.*; *Wilhelm Tell Lodge*; *K. of H.*; *Christine Frauen Lodge*, *Order Germania*; *Knights and Ladies of Honor Lodge*, *Eastern Star Lodge*; *Saxonia Lodge*, organized August, 1870, *Order Germania*; *Evergreen Section*, *Order of Heptasophs*; *Ivy Division*, *Sons of Temperance*; *Court Littlejohn*, *Forresters*; *Sons of St. George*; and the *Mutual Sick Aid Benefit Society*. All of these organizations give their members an allotted sum each week they are ill, and see that the members are properly interred after death. Some of them pay benefits to widows. There is also a co-operative building society, which is somewhat of a social nature.

Among the LITERARY and SOCIAL societies are the *Shamrock Literary Association*; the *Young Men's Catholic Lyceum Association*; the *Musical and Literary Coterie*, *Oxford Social*, and the *Irving Social*. The singing societies are the *Concordia*, *Harmonie*, *Concordia Gemischter Chor*, and the *Frochirin*. The bowling clubs are the *Empire*, *Ours*, *Standard*, *United*, *Nameless*, *Athletics*, *Leisure Hour*, *Pastimes*, *Manhattan*, *East New York*, the *Lady Washington* and the *Lexingtons*, the latter two being ladies' clubs.

The yachting clubs are the *New Lots Yacht Club*, Commodore William Busch, and the *Fleetwood Yacht Club*, Commodore P. H. Reid, Jr.

The sportsmen's club is the *Glenmore Rod and Gun Club*, of Long Island; president, Geo. U. Forbell.

The principal church societies are the *Ours*, connected with the Episcopal Church, which is a social organization of young people who contribute a large amount annually for the support of their church; the *Social Union* and the *Mite Society of the Baptist Church* and several aid societies connected with other churches.

THE CONCORDIA SINGING SOCIETY is the oldest German society in the town. It was first organized in 1855, under the name of the *Harmonia Singing Society*, but was re-organized on the 28th of August, 1859, as the *Concordias*. The first meeting was held at the house of Mr. Charles Heitkamp, when Mr. Francis Miller was chosen president and Prof. Hermann Kiesling as leader. Its membership comprises the most prominent and wealthy German citizens, and the Concordias ranks first among the societies of the town. Masquerades, concerts and pic-nics are annually given by the society, which are always of the highest order and well attended, adding largely to the receipts of the treasurer. The funds, however, are not entirely used for the benefit of the members. Large sums are annually donated to charitable institutions. In 1871, the society sent over \$200, for the relief of the sufferers from the Chicago fire.

Prof. Kiesling continued as leader of the society until his death in 1866, when the services of Prof. August

Bischoff were secured, to whose able leadership the success of the society is largely due. As an offshoot to this society is the "*Concordia Gemischter Chor*." This society is in a very flourishing condition, numbering about 90 members. Meetings are held weekly at the large hall of Emil Schillien on Atlantic avenue. The following are the officers: *President*, Henry Thiele; *Vice President*, Frederick Brohmer; *Secretary*, William Lutz; *Treasurer*, Emil Schillien.

PROGRESSIVE LODGE, No. 21, K. OF P.—one of the oldest lodges of the order in this State, was first instituted at Williamsburgh, Kings County, Oct. 11, 1870. After several years of prosperity, adverse circumstances set in, and finally, in 1878, its charter was surrendered. For two years every effort was made to resuscitate the lodge, but without avail, and its friends gave up in despair. At last, however, through the indefatigable energy and perseverance of Deputy Grand Chancellor W. H. Bowsby, M.D., he having previously purchased the paraphernalia of the lodge on his own account, an arrangement was effected by which the original charter was reclaimed and the place of meeting changed to East New York, where it was reinstated on the 7th day of March, 1881, by Grand Chancellor O. M. Shedd, assisted by D. D. G. C. Bowsby, with the following list of officers: *P. C.*, Henry Martin; *C. C.*, William H. Bowsby, M.D.; *V. C.*, Matthew Cooper; *P.*, Rev. B. F. Reeve; *M. of E.*, Daniel Sanders; *M. of F.*, Joseph Woolison; *K. of R. S.*, A. A. Phillips; *M. A.*, Ed. H. Wood; *I. G.*, Henry Thule; *O. G.*, James Mosette; *Physician*, W. H. Bowsby, M.D. The wisdom and foresight of this arrangement was demonstrated by the subsequent prosperity and growth of the lodge, which now numbers 150 members, representing all of the professions and the best citizens of the town. The following is a list of the present officers: A. A. Phillips, Jr., *P. C.*; Henry Martin, *C. C.*; William Stoothoff, *V. C.*; Joseph I. Elsegood, D. D., *Prelate*; James Moore, *K. of R. S.*; Daniel Sanders, *M. of E.*; R. Dillman, *M. of F.*; C. Bolton, *M. A.*; William H. North, *I. G.*; B. C. Hastings, *O. G.*; *Trustees*: M. A. Brown, A. Snelling and Geo. R. Provost; Dr. Francis Miller, *Medical Examiner*. This lodge meets weekly.

CONTINENTAL LODGE, No. 85, K. OF P., was organized May 31, 1872, with the following charter members: William B. Howard, *C. C.*; Geo. H. Paterson, *V. C.*; Matthew Cooper, *Prelate*; E. R. Groves, *K. of R. and S.*; John Orsborn, *M. of F.*; Louis J. Willis, *M. of E.*; John E. Graring, *M. at A.*; Alex. R. Paterson, *I. G.*; Peter G. Kennedy, *O. G.* This lodge is in a very flourishing condition, numbering about 140 members. Meetings are held every Wednesday evening. The present officers are as follows: *P. C.*, Geo. E. Johnson; *C. C.*, Ed J. Burrows; *V. C.*, John E. Grinsfield; *P.*, John W. Simpson; *M. of F.*, William Searsby; *M. of E.*, Jacob C. Bennett; *K. of R. and S.*, Elijah S. Searby;

M. at A., William H. Johnson; *I. G.*, David Southerland; *O. G.*, Benjamin Waters.

TYRIAN LODGE, No. 618, F. AND A. M., was instituted at East New York, June 13, 1867, with the following charter members: William Magee, Joseph Welsh, Michael Murphy, Herman Martens, Thad. L. Lewis, Francis Sanzer, Samuel W. Palmer, Louis Altenbrand, Geo. Loomis, W. E. McPherson, Joseph Altenbrand, Joseph Baker, Joseph Kaufman, and Fred D. Hart. *Past Masters*: William Magee, 1866, Under Dispensation; Joseph Welsh, 1867; H. M. Smith, 1868; Geo. W. Palmer, 1869; Charles F. Corby, 1870-71-72; Geo. W. Palmer, 1873-74; C. H. Chamberlain, 1875; John McGeehan, 1876; Geo. W. Palmer, 1877; Chas. H. Chamberlain, 1878; H. M. Smith, 1879; E. N. Richards, 1880-81; Fred W. Hancock, 1882-83. The lodge at present numbers about 90 members.

VON MENSCH LODGE, No. 765, F. AND A. M., was instituted at East New York, on the 11th of November, 1875. It is an offshoot of Tyrian Lodge and comprises among its members some of the most prominent and worthy German citizens of the town. The following are the charter members: Dr. Francis Miller; Peter Fisher; Nicholas Hoffmann; George Pflug; Bernard Braun; Bernhard Midas; Dr. C. A. Beckert; George Diseter; John C. Kehrweider; John Haubt; G. W. Ehrhardt; Morris Reichmann; J. Banzer; Jacob Kiendl; Henry Bienhauer; Daniel Sutter; William Jensen; Henry Haubt; Morris Hamburger. The charter was delivered on the 21st of June, 1876.

Past Masters: Dr. Francis Miller, 1875, Under Dispensation; Gustave Dettloff, 1877; Gustave Ehrhardt, 1879; Jacob Kiendl, 1881. Gustave Dettloff is the present Master, and much of the success of the lodge is due to the untiring energy and zeal of this brother. The other officers of the lodge are as follows: *S. W.*, Ernest Schnoppe; *J. W.*, August Klaus; *Secretary*, John C. Kehrweider; *Treasurer*, Peter Fischer; *S. D.*, Fred A. Schwichs; *J. D.*, William Jensen; *Tyler*, I. O. Hatfield.

The lodge numbers about forty members. Meets twice a week at the Masonic Hall, corner of Atlantic and Butler avenues, East New York.

RAINBOW LODGE, No. 409, U. O. S. B., installed July 23d, 1874, at Bernet's Hotel. The first officers were: John Broecker, *Noble G.*; Philip Midas, *Vice G.*; Ernest Fuchs, *Sec.*; Louis Allecke, *Fin. Sec.*; Anton Kirschner, *Treas.*; Charles Broecker, *Conductor*. The Mother Lodge is "Socrates," No. 223, of Williamsburgh, which presented to the new lodge a cheque for \$403.25 as a starter. The present *Noble Grand* is Louis Buck. Meetings are held weekly at Ferchand's Hall, corner Liberty and Wyckoff avenues.

WARTBURG HOME FOR THE AGED AND INFIRM was organized in 1876, under the direction and control of the different German Lutheran Dominations of the cities of New York and Brooklyn, is largely maintained

by subscriptions from these denominations. Its object is, as its name implies, to furnish a home for the aged and infirm. Extensive brick buildings have just been completed on Fulton avenue, corner of Sheffield, East New York. The grounds are extensively laid out and beautifully embellished and everything is done to meet the wants and comfort of the inmates of the Home. There are at present forty inmates, while the buildings have ample accommodation for sixty. The following is a list of the officers: *Pres.*, William Hauff; *V. Pres.*, Joseph Birkner; *Treas.*, E. C. Korner; *Sec.*, Rev. E. Bohm.

Connected with the Home is a hospital, was established in 1881, under the name of the *Lutheran Hospital Association of New York City and vicinity*, supported by subscriptions from the membership. The buildings are ample, and are pleasantly situated on East New York avenue, corner of Johnson. The grounds are beautifully laid out and planted with trees and shrubbery. The following is a list of officers: *Pres.*, Jacob Morsh; *V. Pres.*, J. Titjen; *Treas.*, William Dick; *Sec.* Rev. E. Bohm.

Both institutions are under the medical supervision of Albert Furgang, M.D., of East New York.

Post Office.—In 1837 a post office was established in the village of East New York. It was located in a country variety store, on the Jamaica Plank Road, near the present site of the dry-goods establishment of Mr. Adolph Bookman. This store was kept by Edwin M. Strong, appointed the first postmaster. An old shoe-box, carefully partitioned off, served as a receptacle for letters, which did not exceed half a dozen per day. Mr. Strong retained the place for many years. He was succeeded by Mr. Philip H. Reid. As the business of the office had considerably increased, Mr. Reid removed the office to his grocery store, at the corner of Fulton and Sheffield avenues, East New York, where ample accommodation was provided. After nine years of faithful service, Mr. Reid was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Wagoner, who removed the office to the corner of Liberty and Van Sielen avenues, after which it was located on the corner of Atlantic and New Jersey avenues. Mr. Wagoner held the office about four years; when Mr. Reid was again appointed, and the office removed to the corner of Atlantic and Alabama avenues. In 1869, Mr. Miles A. Brown, the present incumbent, was appointed. During Mr. Brown's term of office, many needed improvements have been

made. Letter-boxes have been located in various sections of the town, and a daily delivery of mail matter by a carrier, established.

In 1879, a neat and substantial two-story brick building was erected, on Pennsylvania avenue, by Geo. D. Pitkin, Esq., a large property owner in the town, to be used as a post office, and appropriately fitted up for the purpose.

There are at present four arrivals and four departures of the mail each day. About twelve hundred letters are daily received at the office and about the same number sent out.

The East New York Savings Bank, of New Lots, L. I., northwest corner of Atlantic and New Jersey avenues, was incorporated by the Act of Legislature passed May 8th, 1868, and commenced business May 1st, 1869, with the following officers: Gilliam Schenck, *President*; Williamson Rapalje, *Vice President*; Louis Altenbrand, *2d Vice President*; Charles J. Hobe, *Treasurer* and *Secretary*; John C. Schenck, *Attorney & Counsel*. *Trustees*: Stephen L. Vandever, Ditmas Jewell, Williamson Rapalje, Isaac C. Schenck, Christopher I. Lott, John J. Sackmann, Henry L. Wyckoff, John S. Andrews, Frederick Middendorf, Gilliam Schenck, Philip H. Reid, Adolph Bookman, Charles J. Hobe, Peter J. Bergen, C. Francis Colyer, William Kramer, James McGuire, John C. Schenck, Horace A. Miller, Williamson Rapalje, Jr., Louis Altenbrand, Martin Bennett, Jr., Joseph Schluchtaer, J. Wyckoff Van Sielen, C. Washington Colyer, Whitson Colyer, Henry Ringshauser.

Its present officers are: Isaac C. Schenck, *Pres.*; Gustave Dittloff, *Vice Pres.*; Louis Altenbrand, *2d Vice Pres.*; Charles J. Hobe, *Treas.* and *Sec.*; John C. Schenck, *Attorney and Counsel*. The law has been changed so that thirteen trustees only are required, who are as follows; Williamson Rapalje, John S. Andrews, Peter G. Bergen, Christian Middendorf, Isaac C. Schenck, Charles J. Hobe, John C. Schenck, Louis Altenbrand, Martin Bennett, Herman Brome, C. Francis Colyer, C. Washington Colyer, Henry Ringshauser.

The business of this bank has been so judiciously managed, that its ratio of surplus to deposits compares favorably with any in the State. Its officers point with satisfaction and pride to the following figures.

Amount of Deposits, Sept. 1st, 1883, \$306,000. Surplus, \$33,000.



Williamson Rapalje

WILLIAMSON RAPALJE.—The numerous and reputable family of Rapalie is descended from that of de Rapalie, which, as early as the eighteenth century, possessed large estates in Bretagne, and ranked among the *arriere-ban* of the French nobility. Some of its members were distinguished as military leaders in the crusades, others for political eminence and professional talents; but, in the religious wars of the sixteenth century, being known as Protestants, they became the victims of Papal animosity and were expelled from France. Joris Jansen de Rapalie, one of this proscribed Huguenot race from Rochelle in France, was the common ancestor of all the American families of this name. He came to this country with other colonists in 1623, in the *Unity*, a ship of the West India company, and settled at Fort Orange, now Albany, where he remained three years. In 1626 he removed to New Amsterdam and resided there till after the birth of his youngest child. On June 16, 1637, he bought from the Indians a tract of land computed at 335 acres, called Rennegaconck, now included within the town of Brooklyn, a part of which purchase was the present site of the U. S. Marine Hospital. Here Joris Rapalie finally located and spent the remainder of his life. He was a leading citizen, acted a prominent part in the public affairs of the colony, and served in the magistracy of Brooklyn. He died soon after the close of the Dutch administration, his widow, Catalyntie, surviving him many years. *Daniel*, his youngest child, was born in the city of New York, Dec. 29, 1650,

and May 27, 1674, married Sarah, daughter of Abraham Klock. He was a man of high respectability and an elder of the Brooklyn church. He died Dec. 26, 1725, and his widow Feb. 28, 1731. Their children were Joris Daniel, Catharine, Annetie, Mary and Sarah. *Daniel* was born March 25, 1691, and married Oct. 17, 1711, Aletie, daughter of Johannes Cornell, at which time he lived in Brooklyn; but he afterwards removed to Newtown, where he died March 19, 1737, his wife having died May 20, 1736. They had ten (10) children, of whom Daniel, the eldest son, bought the paternal farm in 1745, and became a leading man and a magistrate of Newtown. *Johannes*, the second son, was the father of Major *Daniel Rapalje*, who was born in 1748, and married Agnes, daughter of Johannus Bergen, and became a farmer at New Lots. About this time, by a Dutch perversion, the *i* in the final syllable of Rapalie was changed to *j*, which is still adhered to. On the opening of the Revolution he espoused the whig cause, served as a lieutenant in the Kings county troop of horse, and was in exile during the war. He died at New Lots in 1796. His children were John, Daniel, Simon and Michael. *John* married Charity, daughter of Abram Van Sickelen, and had issue, Cornelia, wife of Stephen I. Lott, and Daniel I. Simon Rapalje married Helen, daughter of Nicholas Williamson. Their children were *Williamson*, the subject of this sketch, now occupying the old homestead of Major Daniel Rapalje on the New Lots road; Daniel, who died when a young man; and Eliza, wife

of Walter Brown of Flushing. Simon Rapalje was a carpenter by trade, and owned a farm of about 60 acres. He brought his son Williamson up as a farmer, giving him, in addition to the common school, the advantages of the celebrated Erasmus Hall Academy at Flatbush, at the time when Mr. Craig was principal. When young, Williamson exhibited quite a taste and talent in drawing, with a special liking for faces and portraits. At the age of 20 he married Ann, daughter of John Vanderveer, April 10, 1823. Their children were: Simon, born Feb. 1, 1824, died May 9, 1827; Margaret Ann, born Sept. 10, 1825, still living with her father; John, born March 16, 1827, died June 14, 1828; Helen, born May 27, 1829, died May 16, 1869; Simon, born Aug. 5, 1831; John Vanderveer, born April 4, 1833, died Oct. 9, 1833; Williamson, born Sept. 8, 1834; Daniel, born April 20, 1836; Eida Vanderveer, born Sept. 20, 1838, died Nov. 16, 1842; Eliza, born Jan. 26, 1841; Henry Lott, born Aug. 15, 1843; Eida Vanderveer, born June 11, 1846, died July 31, 1852. *Williamson Rapalje, Jr.*, married Elizabeth Meserole Schenck, daughter of Isaac C. Schenck, Oct. 12, 1859. They have had one child, Catharine Ann, who was born Feb. 8, 1864, and died July 26, 1866. *Eliza Rapalje* married James, son of John Williamson, of Flatland, March 25, 1863. Their children were James Rapalje, born Dec. 18, 1869; Maria, born June 16, 1875. Their father was born April 2, 1837, and died Dec. 4, 1875. Mrs. Williamson and her two children are now living with her father on the old homestead. *Simon Rapalje* married Sarah Emmons Schenck, daughter of Gilliam Schenck, Oct. 19, 1865. *Henry Lott Rapalje* married Sarah E., daughter of Henry Eldert, Oct. 13, 1869. Their children: Annie, born Nov. 8, 1870; Henry Williamson, born March 5, 1873; Daniel Lott, born Feb. 13, 1876; Cornelia, born Feb. 25, 1879.

Daniel Rapalje and Alice, daughter of Rev. Alvin Ostrom, were married June 19, 1878. Their children have been born in Amoy, China—Ernest Harold, born April 27, 1879, and Herbert DeWitt, born Aug. 6, 1880. In early life Daniel displayed a love for study and an aversion to becoming

a farmer. His father therefore, with the excellent judgment that has characterized all his acts through life, told him to make his own choice of a life pursuit. Accordingly he chose a classical education and went to Rutgers college, at which he graduated. It is interesting here to notice the cropping out of the religious element in this family of Huguenot descent. While other young graduates were electing to be lawyers, physicians and engineers, Daniel put these worldly allurements all behind him, and chose the laborious self-denying life of a missionary. After his college course, he entered the Theological department at Rutgers, graduating from that also. Then offering his services to the Foreign Missionary Society, he was sent to Amoy, China, where he has labored most successfully for the past twenty years. During this time he has made two visits to his old home, on the latter of which he was married. His wife is the daughter of an old college friend, who also went to China as a missionary, where she was born, so she is working in and for her native land.

Ann Vanderveer, wife of Williamson Rapalje, was born November 11, 1803, and died January 25, 1868. Mr. Rapalje was born June 4, 1803, and still enjoys very fair bodily health, and the full possession of his mental gifts. His life has been active, useful, and successful. Good sense, a vigorous understanding and a most practical executive ability, joined with and controlled by a constant sense of right and justice, have been his controlling characteristics. In the exercise of these his townsmen have insisted on his serving as assessor for many terms in years gone by. In the Reformed Church, of New Lots, he has always been a leader, and for a long term an elder, which place he still fills. Politically, Mr. Rapalje has always been a Democrat. His sons have succeeded him as farmers, in which calling they are famed as being the largest and most successful in the town. They have built large and elegant houses on the old homestead, adding to the many attractions on the old New Lots road. Such families as the one of which this is an imperfect record, are the safe-guards of any country of which they are citizens.

STEPHEN LOTT VANDERVEER lives on the old farm, which has been the homestead of his ancestors for several generations. His house, originally built by his grandfather, and which he has enlarged to its present spacious proportions and fine appearance, stands in New Lots, near the lines which divide that town from Flatbush and Flatlands. His farm of 109 acres was originally well wooded, but has for many years been devoted to market gardening, familiarly called "trucking." He was born Feb. 22, 1826, and married Jane Alletta Kouwenhoven Feb. 20, 1850. Their children have been five boys and two girls. For several years his sons have managed the farm, his own industry and enterprise having resulted in a handsome competence, which he uses and enjoys much more sensibly than too many farmers who find no pleasure except continued digging in the old rut. He enjoys fishing and sailing, in proof whereof he owns a yacht, to whose soothing embrace he regularly devotes during the sailing season whole days of solid comfort. Although never a politician or an office holder, Mr. Vanderveer has always acted with the republican party. In religious matters he has been a consistent and representative member of the Reformed church of New Lots, serving for the past 20 years as its treasurer. In his school-boy days he improved the advantages of his district school and of several terms at the Jamaica academy, when the distinguished instructor, John

W. Brinkerhoff, was at its head. Mr. Vanderveer is a thick set, solidly built man of phlegmatic temperament, a picture of contentment and good health. He has a decided taste for antique relics in furniture and art, specimens of which adorn his attractive home. His wife is also active and well preserved in body and mind, and to all appearances they have many years before them in which to enjoy and to benefit their family and their friends.

The family genealogy is as follows: Cornelis Janse Vanderveer, or "from the ferry," farmer, emigrated to this country from Alckmaer or Alkmaer, a province in North Holland, in the Netherlands, in the ship Otter, in Feb., 1659. Settled in Flatbush. Feb. 1677-8 he purchased of Jan Janz, a farm. He married Tryntje Gillis De Mandeville, and had children, Cornelius, Neeltje, Maria, Hendrick, Jan, Dominicus and Michiel.

Jan Vanderveer married Femetje, daughter of Micheal Hanson Bergen, January 6, 1695. Had issue: Katrina, bap. March 29, 1696; Femetje, married Jacob Sebering, and Jan, born July 7, 1706, died Oct. 31, 1779, who married Cornelia Lott, April 29, 1732, born April 20, 1714, died Oct. 31, 1789. Had issue: Catrina, born Dec. 3, 1733, died young; Femmette, born April 4, 1737, died Feb. 26, 1808; Catrina, born Jan. 22, 1740, died April 3, 1829; Jan, born Oct. 25, 1745, died Dec. 7, 1808, married Gretye Eldert, May 25, 1765,



Stephen L Vanderveer

born Aug. 13, 1747, died March 13, 1825. Had issues : John, born May 19, 1766, died May 6, 1817, married Ann Lott, Aug. 11, 1791, born March 4, 1768, died Feb. 6, 1818; Johannes, born Nov. 22, 1768, died March 30, 1833 (single); Femmete, born Nov. 27, 1770; Cornelia, born April 5, 1775, died April 21, 1829, married Abraham Duryea; Treyntje, born May 6, 1779, died April 3, 1829 (single); Sara, born Feb. 11, 1782, died May 5, 1860, married Johannes Eldert. Children of John and Anne Vanderveer : John, born Aug. 11, 1792, died March 4, 1861, married Eida Suydam, April 23, 1818, born June 28, 1795, died Feb. 5, 1873; Stephen, born June 20, 1796, died Oct. 13, 1799; Ann Vanderveer, born Nov. 11, 1803, married Williamson Rapalje, April 10, 1823; have children living Jan., 1881—Margaret Ann, Simon, Williamson, Henry L., Eliza, and Daniel, now a missionary. Children of John and Eida Vanderveer : John J., born March 24, 1819, died Nov. 30, 1837, married Eliza E. Dubois, April 16, 1867, had

one son, John Henry, born June 29, 1869; Henry, born Nov. 25, 1821, died Nov. 4, 1857 (single); Ann, born June 10, 1824, married Abraham Vanderveer, April 23, 1845, had issue; John A., born April 19, 1849, Maria Ann, Ida Suydam and Charles; Stephen L., born Feb. 22, 1826, married Jane A. Kouwenhoven, Feb. 20, 1850, born Oct. 13, 1825, had issue; Eida Ann, born Dec. 23, 1850, married George W. Ryerson, Nov. 20, 1872, born May 27, 1849, have issues; Ella Jane, born March 20, 1874, and John Henry, born July 20, 1877; John K., born Nov. 18, 1852, married Julia R. Colyer, Oct. 10, 1877, have one daughter, Marrietta Colyer, born Feb. 24, 1879; Henry S., born Nov. 25, 1854, married Amy R. Bogart, May 24, 1876; Susan A., born Nov. 25, 1854, died Sept. 6, 1855; Peter Luke, born Feb. 18, 1856, married Marietta Lott, Oct. 29, 1879; James, born Sept. 15, 1858, married Cornelia A. Van Siclen, Dec. 6, 1882, born Sept. 28, 1858; Stephen Lott, born Sept. 30, 1861, died Nov. 11, 1861; Mary E., born Sept. 30, 1861.



Charles B. Vanderveer

CHARLES B. VANDERVEER.—The Vanderveer family on Long Island sprang from Cornelis Janse (Van der Veer)—meaning “from the ferry,” who emigrated, in 1659, from Alkmaar, in North Holland, and married Tryntje Gillis de Mandeville. He settled in Flatbush, of which town he was a magistrate in 1678 and 1680. His autograph is given on page 217 of this history. His second son, Dominicus, baptized November 16th, 1679, at Flatbush, was sheriff of Kings County in 1736, and married Elizabeth Luqueer. The Van der Veers, at an early day, acquired a fine tract of land in what is now the town of New Lots, which estate is still in the possession of their descendants. Charles B. Vanderveer was of the sixth generation who have owned and occupied the property, and was born there in 1796. His father's name was also Dominicus. Mr. Vanderveer's boyhood was passed at a time when educational advantages were limited, but he enjoyed the best then obtainable in the common schools, and afterwards added largely to his stock of knowledge by read-

ing. At about the age of twenty-one he married Miss Maria Van Sicklen, the daughter of a neighboring farmer. They reared a family of eight children, of whom all except two are living.

Though Mr. Vanderveer took no active part in politics, he was a man of strong political convictions; in early days a Whig, and afterwards a Republican. He was connected for many years with the Dutch Reformed Church at New Lots. He devoted his time to the care of his large farm, on which he cleared up and improved many acres; and to the mill which was built on the estate about 1750. In 1839, he built the substantial mansion on the place, which is now occupied by his son. His wife died in 1875 and he survived her but three years, passing away in 1878, at the ripe age of eighty-two. He was known and esteemed as a quiet, law-abiding citizen: a man of the strictest integrity, who, by industry, prudence and uprightness, accumulated wealth, and kept through a long life the highest esteem of his townsmen.



Francis Miller, M.D.

FRANCIS MILLER, M.D., one of the oldest practitioners in New York and Kings County, occupies a charming residence on Ridgewood Heights, the property fronting on Jamaica avenue, opposite Van Siclen avenue, East New York.

He was born of poor parents, in Alzey, a small city in Rheinhessen, Germany, on the 25th of October, 1817. He began his education at the public school in his native city, where he made such advancement that the preceptor, who is still living, appointed him instructor of the second class of his scholars.

After having acquired all the instruction obtainable at this school, he was admitted, in May, 1838, to the University in Heidelberg, Baden, at which institution he commenced the study of medicine, under the tuition of the great professors of that time, Gmelin, Puchelt, Tidemann, Bischoff, Chelius, Naegle, and others, which names are well known to every intelligent physician in Europe and America.

In the year 1841, he entered the University of his native State at Giessen, in the Grand Duchy of Hesse. Here he attended the lectures of the eminent Liebig, Wernher, Balser and others, and in September, 1842, passed his examination and received his diploma as Doctor of Medicine, Chirurgery, and Obstetrics.

He was thereupon offered a position in the same University as Assistant Prosector, which he declined, owing to the fact that he had two brothers and a sister living in New York, who advised him to come to America, and to bring with him his father, mother and two younger brothers, which he did, and arrived in New York on the 30th of October, 1842, after a passage of twenty days from Havre.

After his arrival in New York, he soon obtained a large practice, became a member of the Medical Society of the

State of New York, of the Medical Society of the City of New York, and also of the Academy of Medicine of New York.

He was one of the founders of the Society of German Physicians of the City of New York, and was at one time its Secretary, and later on its President.

He was surgeon of the 5th Regiment, N. G. S. N. Y., for seven years, and as a physician of the German Society for the Poor in New York, he reported in one year alone over two hundred cases, which he attended free of charge.

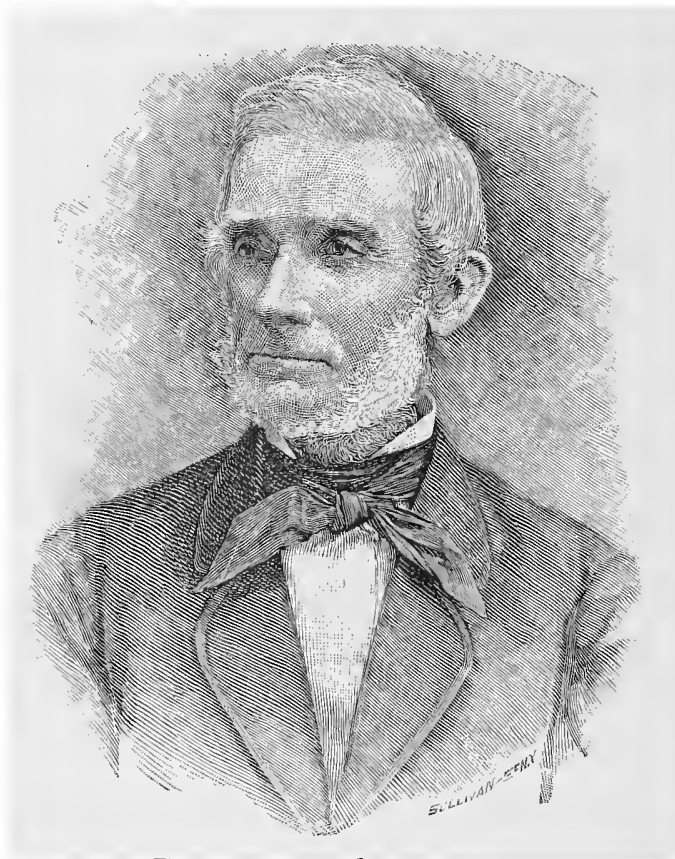
He was well acquainted and frequently in company with the greatest physicians in New York, as Doctors Mott, Francis, Van Buren, Anderson, Wood, Parker, Detmold, Gilman, Taylor, Bedford, etc.

He took an active part in school matters, and served as School Trustee for six years in the 10th Ward in New York, and also for three years in East New York.

Finally, his great practice, by day and night for twenty-two years, began seriously to affect his health, and upon consulting with his colleagues, it was deemed necessary to leave the city and remove to the country, in order to regain his strength.

After visiting a great number of places within a radius of thirty miles from New York, he at last decided to purchase the land at East New York, now occupied by him, and to erect a dwelling thereon. This house is situated on the top of a hill, overlooking the town of New Lots, and commanding an extensive view of the surrounding country, as well as of Jamaica Bay, and the Atlantic Ocean, south of Rockaway.

He was married in 1845, to a Miss Frost, of New York, who is still living, and by whom he has three children, two sons and one daughter. The daughter died in childhood, but the sons are alive and married.



Isaac C. Schenck

ISAAC C. SCHENCK.—No one familiar with Kings and adjoining counties need be told that, to a marked degree, men and women bearing the name of Schenck have worthily commanded the respect and confidence of their contemporaries. At each period, from the earlier to the present settlement of the Western part of Long Island, some member of this family has been called to assume a leading position in the management of public affairs. The genealogy of this family has been traced back to the remote period when the illustrious Charlemagne was Emperor of Germany and France, at which period Edgar de Schenken, in the year 798, filled the position of Imperial Seneschal to this great ruler.

Johannes Schenck, the progenitor of the Bushwick, Long Island, branch of the family, was born in Holland, probably the sub-district of Kessel, Sept. 19, 1656. His father was a judge of the province, which office was also held by his grandfather, his great and his great-great grandfathers. He was married in Holland and emigrated to America in 1683, landing in New York, where he remained two years. From there he went to Ulster County for five years, and then to the town of Flatbush, where he is recorded as town-clerk from 1691 to 1694, and again from 1700 to 1712.

We present herewith fac-similes of his signature, as written

Johannes Schenck
— 1694 —

Johannes Schenck
1603

by him both in Dutch and English. He used, at various periods of his career, three different seals, copies of two of which



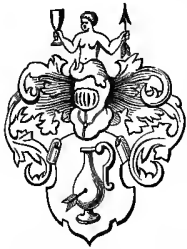
No. 1.



No. 2.

JOHANNES SCHENCK'S PRIVATE AND OFFICIAL SEALS.

we also present. No. 1 is that which he used most frequently in the earlier years of his American residence; No. 2 is that which he used during the later period of his term of office as Town Clerk.



SCHENCK (of Schencken)
FAMILY ARMS.

Both these designs were, undoubtedly, taken by him from the coat of arms of the family to which he belonged. This tankard-crest is also found on an ancient spoon belonging to him and now in possession of one of his descendants, residing in Brooklyn.

The heraldic idea intended to be conveyed by the tankard is that of hospitality; in fact, the meaning of the word Schenck, or Schenken, is butler.

During the year 1712, he left the town of Flatbush and bought the mill-property in Bushwick, which he made his final home. In the year 1719, he was supervisor of Bushwick. He died April 10, 1729. His son, Peter, who died in 1736, was the father of Teunis, born Feb. 9, 1723, who also had a son Teunis, born Feb. 15, 1767.



SILVER MARKS.

This latter was married in 1794 to Gertrude, daughter of Isaac Cornell, became Judge Teunis Schenck, and died Dec. 29, 1842. Their children were: John, born, Oct. 18, 1795; Catharine, born July 5, 1797, married Nov. 12, 1816, John Remsen, of Flatlands Neck, died 1868; Ann, born Sept. 16, 1799, married Nov. 24, 1818, Henry S. Ditmas, of Flatbush; Isaac Cornell, born January 17, 1802, who is the subject of this sketch. Peter, born Dec. 4, 1803, died April 3, 1866, single; Maria, born Aug. 19, 1805, died Feb. 15, 1875, married Oct. 19, 1824, John Meserole, of Greenpoint, who died 1843; Aletta Jane, born Jan. 4, 1808, died Aug. 11, 1881, married Laurence, of Newtown; Eliza, born July 9, 1810; Gilliam, born Jan. 16, 1813; Cornelia, born May 27, 1818, died Aug. 11, 1821.

Gilliam Schenck married, Oct. 14, 1840, Ann Maria Eldert. Issue: Gertrude C., born Aug. 12, 1841, married Feb. 22, 1860; Albert H. W. Van Sicklen; Sarah E., born March 17, 1843, married Oct. 19, 1865, Simon Rapalje.

Isaac C. Schenck married Catharine, daughter of Peter Meserole. Their children have been: John C., born Feb. 1837; Elizabeth M., born Aug. 24, 1838, married Oct. 12, 1859, William Rapalje; Walter, born Sept. 23, 1840, died Sept. 11, 1841; Catharine Ann, born June 20, 1842, died Aug. 21, 1869, single; Alletta Jane, born Oct. 3, 1844, died March 3, 1847; Maria M., born Feb. 3, 1847, died July 8, 1847; Peter M., born May 15, 1859, died Nov. 18, 1861; Cornelia, born Nov. 11, 1851; Sarah E., born March 17, 1854, married John Johnson Bergen, of Jamaica.

The record of the Schencks, during the revolutionary war, exhibits patriotic devotion, attested by active personal service. John H. Schenck, of New Jersey, raised a regiment by his own exertions and served with it through the war. John Schenck, of Dutchess County, was a captain in Col. Swarthout's regiment of minutemen, commission issued Oct. 17, 1775, and signed by Nathaniel Woodhull, President of Provisional Congress. Henry Schenck was major in the same regiment, Martin and Nicholas Schenck were captains in other regiments, and Abraham was a lieutenant. Among the several captains by the name of John Schenck there was one whose loyalty and devotion touched the high-water mark. Almost at the beginning of the war he was asked how much gold would secure his services for the royal side. His answer

was worthy of any man in any age. "The whole of Europe cannot buy me; give me liberty." Later on a reward was offered by the British of "50 guineas for the head of Capt. Schenck, dead or alive."

In civil duties we find Abraham H. Schenck, of Dutchess county, serving in the State Assembly at Albany two terms; John Schenck, of Queens county, three terms; Peter A. Schenck, of New York county, three terms, and Judge Teunis Schenck, of Kings county, three terms. Judge Abraham Schenck, of Kings, represented his county in the Colonial Legislature from 1759 to 1768. In addition to these the State Senate has contained as members, Abraham of Dutchess county, John of Washington county, and John Schenck, Jr., of Queens county. Ancient deeds in the possession of Isaac C. Schenck, show that Johannes and Peter,

Johannes Schenck
1724

the two sons of the first Johannes, were purchasers of large tracts of land in Bushwick and Newtown, at an early day. Among the conveyances to Peter is that of the land which to this day remains as the family burying ground of the Bushwick family of Schenck. In 184— Isaac C. Schenck was elected superintendent of the poor for Kings county, discharging the duties of that difficult office in the most satisfactory manner. All purchases were economically made in the interests of the tax payers, and no scandal ever hung over his accounts.

In church and school matters Mr. Schenck has always held a laboring oar. When the New Lots Reformed church was built in 1824 he was one of the most active and efficient members and workers. The first building committee was Johannes Vanderveer, John Williamson, Simon Rapalje, Abram Van Sicklen, Christian Duryea, John Blake and Joseph Smith. The timber was cut in the woods of the farmers of the congregation, who not only gave it, but cut, hewed and carted it. A part of it had to be sawed, and they dug a ditch for a pit, over which the logs were placed and sawed by hand, as saw mills were few and far away in those days. Even the painting was done by the parishioners, Mr. Schenck being one of those who painted the fence. The building cost about \$35 and was good for the times. The first minister was Rev. Mr. Crookshank.

In 1808 a school house was built in Mr. Schenck's district, the school being for a time kept in Mr. Blake's barn. This barn is now owned by Mr. Hopkins. The school house built at that time has since been moved back, but is still used. About the year 1840 John Lohman, Jacob H. Sackman and Mr. Schenck thought best to have the school district divided. Accordingly Mr. Schenck went to Flatbush and saw Dr. John H. Zabriskie, town superintendent, who came and looked the matter over and erected the new district asked. A public meeting was held in the old Half Way House, where the Fulton avenue stables now are, at which Isaac C. Schenck, William Stoothoff and David Storms were elected trustees. A contract to build a school house was made with Henry S. Eldert, which was located near the Reformed church, where it still is, plus the additions that have been made to it. A good share of the timber used in the frame of the original building was cut on Mr. Schenck's farm and hauled by his man.

Mr. James Clegg was the first teacher. He also represented the town of New Lots as Supervisor during the years 1853-'54-'55 and '57. His brother, Gilliam Schenck,

succeeded him in the same office from 1858 to 1874, inclusive, serving the long term of 17 consecutive years. In 1879 he was appointed treasurer of Kings county to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Samuel S. Powell, and at the next election he was elected for the succeeding term. During the four years of his administration of the financial affairs of this county with all its vast interests, the records show exact balances of receipts and disbursements, every dollar properly applied and accounted for. A noted characteristic of the Schencks from the earliest period has been that in public and in private duties they have always proved equal to the place and the occasion. This explains their long terms of service by the repeated choice of their fellow citizens. Cool, capable judgment, and honest, efficient administration, have been their strong points. John C. Schenck, his eldest son, after a careful and thorough education in the schools, followed by adequate preliminary reading of the great authorities, adopted the legal profession and was duly admitted to the bar. His professional abilities and success

are sufficiently attested by the fact that he is and has been, since its organization, the attorney for the East New York Savings Bank. The first existence of this bank was largely due to the persistent efforts, in the face of great opposition, of Mr. Schenck and his son, John C. Gilliam Schenck was elected its first president and John C. Schenck its attorney. John C. still remains at the old home, single. At the advanced age of 81, Mr. Schenck still retains all his mental powers and a fair share of physical vigor, Mrs. Schenck is also blessed with comfortable health, and together they are spending the late afternoon of useful successful lives, in the old homestead on the road leading from New Lots to Jamaica. The house is mostly of stone, and was built previous to 1765. This venerable land-mark does not show its age, owing to the good care of its owners. It was partially rebuilt and remodeled in 1792 by Isaac Cornell, father-in-law of Judge Teunis Schenck, who then owned it, and again in 1811 or 1812 by the Judge himself, who lived there from 1794 until his death, in 1842.

THE ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY OF KINGS COUNTY.

1628—1800.

BY *Henry R. Stiles. A.M. M.D.*

THE First Ministers of the Colony of New Netherlands.—Although the settlement of New Netherlands was undoubtedly undertaken rather as a commercial speculation than as an experimental solution of ecclesiastical and civil principles and government; and, although, in the earlier years of roving and unsystematized traffic which followed the discovery of Manhattan Island, there seems to have been no higher principle involved than that of gain; yet, as soon as a permanent agricultural and commercial occupation of the country was undertaken by the West India Company, the higher moral and spiritual wants and necessities of its settlers were fully recognized. Emigrants under their auspices, or those of the States General of Holland, were accompanied by a schoolmaster, being a pious church-member, who, in default of regular pastors, instructed the children and officiated at religious meetings, by leading in the devotions and reading a sermon. *Ziekentroosters*, or “comforters of the sick,” persons adapted by their spiritual gifts and graces to edify and comfort the people, also frequently accompanied or preceded the ministers. In 1628, the pioneer clergyman, Jonas Michaelius, came from Amsterdam, under the auspices of the North Synod of Holland, and “first established the form of a church,” which worshipped in the upper loft of a horse-mill, at Manhattan. He was succeeded, in 1633, by the Rev. Everardus Bogardus; and the small, plain church, which had superseded the horse-mill, gave place, in 1642, to a new stone edifice within the fort (now the battery). Bogardus was followed, in 1647, by the Rev. Johannes Megapolensis, eminent for his piety and talents, who served this congregation with fidelity until his death, in 1669.

The First Church on Long Island, erected at Flatbush.—For many years succeeding the first settlement of the country, the settlers on the western end of Long Island were dependent upon the city for all their civil and religious privileges. This state of things, with all its inconveniences, lasted until December 15, 1654, when the first church on Long Island was

established at Midwout, now Flatbush; and the Governor designated Dominie Megapolensis, of New Amsterdam, with John Snedikor, of Flatbush, and John Stryker, of Flatbush, commissioners to superintend the erection of a church edifice. October 13, 1654, the Governor issued a permit to the Rev. Johannes Theodorus Polhemus to preach at Midwout (Flatbush) and Amersfoort (Flatlands). February, 1655, on the request of the people of Midwout, an order was issued requiring the inhabitants of Breuckelen and Amersfoort (Flatlands) to assist “in cutting and hauling wood” for the said church. The Brueckelen people, however, while they expressed their perfect willingness to aid in the erection of the church itself, objected to work on the “minister’s house,” which it was proposed to add thereto, averring that the Midwout folks were able to do it themselves. They were finally obliged to conform to the Governor’s order, and the church, which was built in the form of a cross, 28 by 60 or 65 feet, and 12 to 14 feet between the beams, the rear to be used as a minister’s dwelling, was the first house of worship erected in Kings County. It occupied several years in construction, although it was probably sufficiently advanced within the year to allow of its being used for worship. The first entries in the deacon’s book of the church of Flatbush of collections taken on the Sabbath, begins on the first Sabbath of January, 1655, and regularly continued at intervals of seven days from that time forward; thus proving that divine service was stately performed. There is no record by which we can find when the first consistory was ordained and the church regularly organized. Until 1681 the consistory consisted of but two Elders and two deacons. The first church was on the site of the present Flatbush church, and cost 4,637 guilders (about \$1,800), of which Flatbush people contributed 427 guilders, the balance being given by New Amsterdam, Fort Orange (Albany), the other county towns, and the West India Company. As tradition avers, it was surrounded by a stockade; and, during troubles with the Indians, the settlers of Flatbush slept in the church.

On the 6th of August, 1655, Governor Stuyvesant convened the inhabitants of the county, for the purpose of ascertaining whether they approved of their "provisional minister," the Rev. Polhemus, and what salary they were willing to pay him. The Sheriff reported that they approved of him, and would pay him 1,040 guilders (\$416) per year, to be raised by tax.

Mr. Polhemus, who had previously been a missionary in Brazil, was immediately settled in Flatbush, and subsequently received a patent for a part of the premises recently owned by the late Jeremiah Lott, Esq.

Breuckelen People Object to the Church Taxes.—In February, 1656, the magistrates of Midwout and Amersfoort asked permission to request a voluntary contribution from the people of the three Dutch towns, towards the proper maintenance of the Gospel. To this the Breuckelen people respectfully objected, that, "as the Rev. Polhemus only acts as a minister of the Gospel in the village of Midwout, therefore the inhabitants of the village of Breuckelen and adjacent districts are disinclined to subscribe or promise anything for the maintenance of a Gospel minister who is of no use to them." And they solicited "with reverence" that he might be allowed to preach alternately in Breuckelen and Midwout, in which case they were "very willing to contribute cheerfully to his support, agreeable to their abilities." Otherwise they begged to be excused from contributing to his maintenance. To this the Director and Council replied that they had "no objection that the Rev. Polhemus, when *the weather permits*," should do so. On the 15th of March following, the Sheriff and Commissioners of Midwout reported to the Council they were satisfied with the decree of the Council, but that the people of Gravesend and Amersfoort had only subscribed with the understanding "that on Sundays, in the forenoon, they might hear the sermon at Midwout, both places being nearly at the same distance from one another as Breuckelen, at which place, if alternately, as the apostille said, preaching was to be held, it would be inconvenient for the inhabitants, by reason of the great distance of the places, to come there to church in the morning and return at noon home to their families, inasmuch as Breuckelen is quite *two hours walking* from Amersfoort and Gravesend; whereas the village of Midwout is not half so far and the road much better. So they consider it a hardship to choose either to hear the Gospel but once a day, or to be compelled to travel four hours, in going and returning, all for one single sermon, which would be to some very troublesome and to some utterly impossible."

It was finally arranged, by the Director-General and the Council, that the Sunday sermon should be delivered in the morning at Midwout, as being at a nearly equal distance from the other three towns; but that the usual afternoon discourse should be changed to an evening service, held alternately in Breuckelen and Amersfoort. The three towns were permitted, on application,

to levy a tax for the purpose of paying the minister's tax.

On November 29th, 1656, it had been agreed that Midwout should give annually 400, and Breuckelen and Amersfoort 300 guilders each towards the minister's salary. The people of Breuckelen, however, had become dissatisfied with the style of Mr. Polhemus' clerical services, and their grumbling finally culminated in January 1, 1657, in this plain spoken protest to the Director and Council.

"The Magistrates of Breucklen find themselves obliged to communicate to your Honors that to them it seems impossible that they should be able to collect annually 300 guilders from such a poor congregation, as there are many among them who suffered immense losses during the late war, and principally at the invasion of the savages, by which they have been disabled, so that many, who would otherwise be willing, have not the power to contribute their share. We must be further permitted to say that we never gave a call to the aforesaid Reverend Polhemus, and never accepted him as our minister; but he intruded himself upon us against our will, and voluntarily preached in the open street, under the blue sky; when, to avoid offence, the house of Joris Dirksen was temporarily offered him here in Breuckelen. It is the general opinion and saying of the citizens and inhabitants of Breucklen generally, with those living in their neighborhood, that they could not resolve, even when it was in their power to collect the money, to contribute anything for such a poor and meagre service as that with which they have thus far been regaled. Every fortnight, on Sundays, he comes here only in the afternoon for a quarter of an hour, when he only gives us a prayer in lieu of a sermon, by which we can receive very little instruction; while often, while one supposes the prayer or sermon (which ever name might be preferred for it) is beginning, then it is actually at an end, by which he contributes very little to the edification of his congregation. This we experienced on the Sunday preceding Christmas, on the 24th of December last, when we, expecting a sermon, heard nothing but a prayer, and that so short that it was finished before we expected. Now, it is true it was nearly evening before Polhemus arrived, so that he had not much time to spare, and was compelled to march off and finish so much sooner, to reach his home. This is all the satisfaction—little enough, indeed—which we had during Christmas; wherefore, it is our opinion that we shall enjoy as much and more edification by appointing one among ourselves, who may read to us on Sundays a sermon from the 'Apostille Book,' as we ever have until now, from any of the prayers or sermons of the Reverend Polhemus. We do not, however, intend to offend the Reverend Polhemus, or assert anything to bring him into bad repute. We mean only to say, that his greatly advanced age occasions all this, and that his talents do not accompany him as steadily as in the days of yore; yea, we discover it clearly, that it is not the want of goodwill in Polhemus; but as we never did give him a call, we cannot resolve to contribute to his maintenance."

The Governor was inflexible in his determination that the people of Breuckelen should pay their share of the minister's salary, but the people were obdurate, and the contest was a long one, the poor dominie, meanwhile, being put to great straits for want of his dues.

Meanwhile a new element of discord had arisen within the jurisdiction of the Dutch Government. The

Quakers, banished incontinently from all the colonies of New England (except, be it always remembered, from Rhode Island), ventured to find in New Netherlands the home and the liberty of conscience which was elsewhere denied them. Unfortunately they only stepped "from the frying pan into the fire," and brought down upon themselves a whirlwind of indignation and summary punishment from Governor Stuyvesant and his clerical advisers. In spite, however, of these severe measures, the infection rapidly spread through Long Island, Jamaica, Gravesend, and Hempstead soon developed the germs of Quakerism, which no civil persecution has ever crushed out even to this day. Symptoms of disaffection also appeared at Brooklyn—or, rather, perhaps, as is usual in a disaffected community, the new principle of non-conformity was used by many as an excuse for their non-compliance in the matter of paying the minister's tax. The Sheriff complained to the Council of abuse received, while collecting the tax, from certain parties, who, when summoned before the Council, pleaded—one that he was a Catholic, and the other that he did not understand Dutch. Their excuses were pronounced "frivolous," and they were each condemned to pay a fine of twelve guilders (\$4.80). The principal malcontent, who attempted to hire the public bellman to go around and defame Councillor Tonne-man, was obliged to beg pardon, on bended knees, of the Lord and of the court, and was fined twenty-five guilders (\$10) and costs.

The Governor finally conquered the refractory Breuckelen people, by issuing an order, on the 6th of July, 1658, forbidding the inhabitants of the three towns to remove their grain from their fields until their tithes were taken or commuted—which commutations were ordered to be paid within three days. And, when the Governor "put his foot down" in this manner, as was his wont, the people found it was useless to "kick against the pricks."

In the fall of 1658, in response to a letter sent to the Classis of Amsterdam, of the Fatherland, by Messrs. Megapolensis and Drisius, ministers to New Amsterdam, one Hermanus Blom was induced to come out, and, having accepted a call to Esopus (Kingston), returned to Holland to pass his examination before the Classis, and receive ordination.

Breuckelen People Petition for a Minister of Their Own.—Meanwhile the people of Breuckelen, in view of the badness of the roads to Flatbush, and the inability of the Rev. Mr. Polhemus, on account of his age and infirmity, to bestow any considerable portion of his labor upon them, had petitioned the Governor and Council for permission to have a minister resident in their town. The application was favorably regarded, and when (March 1) Blom left Holland on his return to New Netherland, he was accompanied by the Rev. Henricus Selyns, under appointment to preach at Breuckelen. Mr. Selyns was born in 1636, and traced his ances-

try, both on the father's and mother's side, clearly back, through a regular line of elders, deacons, and deaconesses, to the first institution of the Dutch Reformed Church as an independent establishment. And, connected by blood and marriage with distinguished ministers of that church, he could not fail to imbibe its tenets and principles, and enter with confidence and honorable ambition upon the studies which were to fit him for its service. On February 16, 1660, he was, by the Classis of Amsterdam, examined and admitted to the ministry with full powers—engaging to serve the Breuckelen church for the term of four years. On the 7th of September, 1660, Mr. Selyns was formally installed into the church at Breuckelen. "This ceremony," says his biographer, "measured by the usual standard of great events, was, indeed, insignificant; but viewed as the first installation of a minister in what is now a large and flourishing city, the third in size in the United States, and as populous as the famous city of Amsterdam herself at the present day, it was one which deserved, as it received, the attention of the authorities in an appropriate and becoming manner. It was, nevertheless, to that colony, an interesting event, and it was accompanied by proceedings calculated to give dignity and authority to the minister. The Governor deputed two of his principal officers to present the minister to the congregation—Nicasius de Sillé, a member of the Council, a man of no mean attainments, and well versed in the law, and Martin Krigier, burgomaster of New Amsterdam, who, on several important occasions, was the envoy of the Governor to the adjoining English colonies. After the presentation, Dominie Selyns preached his inaugural sermon, and then read the call of the Classis and their certificate of examination, with a testimonial from the ministers of Amsterdam, declaring that during the time he had dwelt among them, he had not only diligently used the holy ordinances of God for the promotion of his own salvation, but had also often edified their church by his acceptable preaching; and, moreover, had, by his life and conversation, demeaned himself as a godly and pious man—a character which he never forfeited." On the 7th, a letter was forwarded, "by a respectable person," to the Rev. Mr. Polhemus, informing him of Mr. Selyns's installation in the church at Breuckelen, and thanking him in courteous terms for his labors and attention to the congregation. This attention was appropriately acknowledged by the venerable pastor, who, on the 12th, sent to the new incumbent a list of church-members residing within this vicinity, numbering in all twenty-seven persons, inclusive of one elder and two deacons. The population of the village at this time was 134 persons, in thirty-one families; and the bounds of the new Dominie's charge included "The Ferry," "The Waal-boght," and "The Gujanen." Measures were taken for the speedy erection of a church, and in the meantime the congregation worshipped in a barn. As the people were not able of

themselves to pay his entire salary, they petitioned the Council for assistance, and Stuyvesant agreed personally to contribute two hundred and fifty guilders, provided Mr. Selyns would preach a sermon, on Sunday afternoons, at his "bouwery," on Manhattan Island. Under this agreement the Dominie thereafter preached at the "Director's bouwery," which was a "sort of stopping-place and pleasure-ground of the Mannhattans." After Selyns' installation at Breuckelen, Dominie Polhemus confined his services to Midwout and Amersfoort. Under Selyns' able ministrations the church in Breuckelen increased, until, in 1661, it numbered fifty-two communicants, many of whom were admitted on certificates from New Amsterdam and from churches in the Fatherland. The same year, the village of Breuckelen received from the W. I. Co., on the request of Rev. Mr. Selyns, a bell for their church, which "might also be used, in time of danger, to call the country people thereabouts together." Mr. Selyns was not, as late as 1662, an actual resident of Breuckelen, although the people desired it, and had been at the expense of building a house for him. September 21, 1662, the Council ordered the inhabitants of Breuckelen to pay 300 guilders to him, for services since August 30, 1660.

Church erected at Flatlands.—On the 12th of the same month the people of Flatlands had been permitted to build a church; making, with that of New Utrecht, the third Dutch church edifice within the county.

During this year, also, complaint was made to the Consistory of the Breuckelen Church of the exposure of the graveyards to hogs and other animals; in consequence of which, the Consistory contracted for a clap-board fence, five feet high, to enclose the entire ground, for the sum of seventy guilders.

Early in 1664, Dominic Selyns addressed a petition to the Director and Council, complaining that, in consequence of the great depreciation which had taken place in seawant and beaver-skins, he found his salary much reduced and insufficient to meet his wants. The Council finally decided, that any money paid to the Dominie on account of the 600 gl. allowed to him in the Fatherland, should be paid in beavers, at a rate not higher than 6 gl., and any commodities in seawant in proportion. The 600 gl. promised him here, in New Netherland, was to be paid with beavers, in cash, at the value of 8 gl. per beaver, agreeably to the contract of August 30th, 1660. This year, his time having expired, Mr. Selyns yielded to the urgent solicitations of his aged father in Holland; and, with the permission of the Lords Directors of the W. I. Co., was most tenderly and respectfully dismissed from his church on the 17th of July, 1664, and sailed for home on the 23d, in the ship *Beaver*, the same vessel which had conveyed him to America.

After his departure, Charles Debevoise, the school-master of the town and church sexton, was authorized

to read prayers and a sermon from some approved author, each Sabbath, in the church, for the improvement of the congregation, until another minister could be found.

The records of the church at Breuckelen during Selyns' ministry are still preserved in his own handwriting, and bear ample evidence of his devotion to his calling—chronicling, with rare simplicity, the occurrences in the government of the church and the occasions of discipline of his flock.

In some trying occasions of his life, when brought in conflict with others upon questions of authority and power, he sustained the rights and privileges of his official position with equal firmness, dignity, and force of reasoning. His pen and logic were never to be despised by his opponents.

After his return to Holland, Selyns remained unsettled for two years; and in 1666, took charge of the congregation of Waverveen, near Utrecht, a rural village of no fame. In 1675, he became a chaplain in the army of the States; but with this exception, seems to have passed sixteen years of his life in the obscurity of Waverveen, usefully and even contentedly employed; for, in 1670, upon the death of Megapolensis, of New York, he declined a call from that church to become associated with Rev. Mr. Drisius in its charge. Subsequently, the call was so urgently renewed to Selyns that he accepted, and again left his native land to spend, as it proved, the remainder of his life in America. He arrived at New York in the summer of 1682, and was received "by the whole congregation with great affection and joy." He now occupied a position among the churches of the colony which was commensurate with his talents.

Beloved by his own congregation, he was, also, on terms of friendship with the heads of the government and his colleagues in the other churches in New York, and in correspondence with distinguished men in the neighboring colonies.

Troublous days, however, came to him with the revolutionary outbreak, which placed Jacob Leisler at the head of the government. Selyns, as well as the other ministers, looked upon Leisler as a usurper, and threw all the weight of their influence against him and his party. But they committed the error of continuing their opposition to him after his power had been fully established; thus themselves becoming traitors to his government, whom he felt justified in putting down at any cost. Dellius was obliged to escape to Boston; Varick, the minister of the four Dutch towns of Kings county, was imprisoned, tried, and convicted of treason, and sentenced to be deposed from his ministerial functions; Tesschenmaker was massacred at Schenectady, in February, 1690; and Van der Bosch, of Kingston, had been deposed previously; so that Selyns was, for a considerable time, the only Dutch clergyman on duty in the province. While he had committed no overt act

rendering himself amenable to the law, he was in such close communication and sympathy with the leaders of the opposition, that he was constantly watched. He was suspected of concealing Bayard, and his house searched by public officers, for the purpose of discovering him. His service in church, of which Leisler was a member, was interrupted by Leisler himself, who there threatened openly to silence him. His letters to Holland and elsewhere were stopped in transit, and opened by order of the government. His feelings of hostility to Leisler were aggravated, no doubt, in a large degree by these circumstances, and were carried by him to the grave itself. He was one of those who approved and recommended the carrying into execution the sentence of that popular leader, when Sloughter wisely hesitated, and desired to wait until he could obtain the views of the home government on the propriety of the act. While Leisler was lying in prison, the helpless subject of a political prosecution, Selyns preached a sermon against him, from the verse of the Psalmist: "I had fainted, unless I had believed to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living." His opposition estranged from him the Leislerian portion of his congregation, and they refused to contribute to his salary; and the refusal continued, under this fresh provocation, for several years. He appealed to the Classis to interfere; and even sought, through that body, the mandate of King William, supposing that, as a Dutchman, he could be induced by the ecclesiastical authorities at Amsterdam to compel the payment of his arrears. He intimated that he would, in consequence of withholding the salary, be forced to give up his ministry here and return to Holland. The Classis, in a proper spirit, advised him to pacify and win back the alienated hearts of his flock, and to suffer and forget all in love; and also addressed a letter in the same spirit to the

consistory and congregation. The difficulty was finally arranged.

The great object of Selyns' labors, during the later years of his life, was the establishment of the liberties of his church by the procuring of a royal charter confirming its rights and privileges. This was at length accomplished, May 11th, 1696, by a charter under the royal seal, for the Reformed Protestant Dutch church in the city of New York, which is still in full force, and was virtually the charter of the Low Dutch Church in America. He had now attained his sixtieth year. "He had labored faithfully, zealously, and successfully. Amidst all his trials, no one had ventured to breathe a syllable against the purity of his life and conversation, or his fidelity to the spiritual interests of his congregation, which had increased from 450 to 650 members during his ministry among them." In 1699, he received an assistant, in the person of Rev. Gualterus du Bois, of Amsterdam; and, shortly after, in July, 1701, he died at New York, in his sixty-fifth year. In his domestic relations he appears to have been fortunate.

"He was a faithful and devoted minister, honest, sincere, and capable; learned in his profession, pious, and pure in his life. He was free from that narrow feeling which begets prejudice from mere difference of opinion. But he was fond of the exercise of power: persevering, and pursued his object with determination, and sought it sometimes for the sake of success, when, perhaps, a wise regard for the feelings of others would have led him to abandon it. He may be justly regarded as one of the founders of the Dutch Church in America, who did more to determine its position in the country than any other man; and in this circumscribed field, in which the great business of his life was concerned, his fame must mainly rest."

He never appeared as an author in print; and his

Actum Breuckelen in N. Nederlandt den 9 Jun. 1664

Uwer Eerwærdig.

Onderdanigste Broeder in Christo Jesu,

Henricus Selyns.



FAC-SIMILE OF REV. HENRY SELYNS' SIGNATURE AND SEAL.

(Translation)—"Done at Breuckelen in N. Netherland, the 9th of June, 1664.

"Your Reverences"

"Humble brother in Christ Jesus,

(Addressed to the Classis of Amsterdam.)

"HENRICUS SELYNS.

only literary remains are contained in a little volume of poems, of which a pleasant selection, translated by Hon. Henry C. Murphy, has been published in the "Anthology of New Netherland," one of the elegant issues of the Bradford Club.

After Selyns' return to Holland, the church at Breuckelen came again under the pastoral charge of Dominie Polhemus, the minister of the associated churches of the four Dutch towns of the county. The labors of this venerable and faithful servant of God ceased only with his life. He died on the 9th of June, 1676.

Church Erected at Breuckelen—1666.—During

a carriage and wagon-track passed around each end, forming an oblong circle, remitting at either end. "And a miserable road it was, filled with mud-holes and large rocks."—[Furman's MSS.]

It was a large, square edifice, with solid and very thick walls, plastered and whitewashed on every side up to the eaves; the roof, as usual, ascending to a peak in the centre, capped with an open belfry, in which hung a small, sharp-toned bell, brought from Holland shortly after its erection, and afterwards (1840) hung in the belfry of the district school-house in Middagh street, Third Ward of Brooklyn. The interior was plain, dark, and very gloomy; so that, in summer, one could not see



THE SECOND BREUCKELEN CHURCH, 1766.

his ministry, in the year 1666, the first church edifice in Breuckelen was erected in the middle of the highway, now Fulton avenue, near Lawrence street. Tradition says it was built on the walls of a stone fort, constructed in the early days of the settlement for protection against the savages. This first church remained in existence just a century, being pulled down in the year 1766.

The *second* church, which was then built, stood on the same site, in the middle of the road leading from the Ferry into the country, which road is now known as Fulton avenue. Immediately opposite to it (on the west side of that avenue, and between Bridge and Lawrence streets), was a burying-ground, unprotected by fence or enclosure. The road was spacious, and

to read in it after four o'clock in the afternoon, by reason of its small windows. These were six or eight feet above the floor and filled with stained-glass lights from Holland, representing vines loaded with flowers.

The old town of Breuckelen, it will be remembered, comprised, at this time, several divisions or settlements, each possessing local names which yet cling to them, in spite of the streets, squares and avenues of the new city of Brooklyn—*Gowanus, Red Hook, Bedford, Cripplebush, Wallabout*—and for all these the old church occupied a very central position.

"The Collegiate Dominies," says Mr. VAN PELT, "had many pious people and firm friends in Brooklyn. Almost every house was as open to them as their own homes, and one in particular, opposite the church, was

especially designated 'The Dominie's House.' This was convenient for rest between services on the Sabbath ; for receiving applications for baptism, membership, etc. ; for meeting the Consistory, Church-Masters, and others ; and for attending generally to official duties."

By the death of Dominie Polhemus, the churches of Kings County were deprived of the regular preaching of the Gospel, and the Breuckelen church invited the Rev. Mr. Nieuwenhausen, of New Amsterdam, to supply their pulpit, which he did until the year 1677. In that year the collegiate churches of the county extended a call to the Rev. CASPARUS VAN ZUREN, from Holland, who was installed on the 6th of September at Flatbush. Until that time, the members of the church residing at the New Lotts (as the eastern part of Flatbush was termed), had been represented in the government of the Midwout Church. But, in 1681, the Consistory was so enlarged as to allow an elder and one deacon to be chosen from the New Lotts membership. Of Van Zuren little is known, except that he was an industrious and systematic man. In 1685 he returned to Holland, where he resumed his former charge over the church, at Gonderac.

The records of the church at Flatbush during Van Zuren's pastorate present the following minutes, which may not be uninteresting to our readers :

"Respecting another difficulty, touching the preaching at Flatbush beyond the usual turn. It was asked, inasmuch as this [*i. e.*, a similar case] had occurred at a previous meeting, on the 15th of November, 1679, whether, when the town which has the turn shall neglect to fetch the minister, or be hindered by foul weather, such ought to pass for a turn for Flatbush—which appeared improper, because in such case the minister would then [only] sit still. After some debate between Flatbush and the other towns, the minister observed that the service on the Lord's day might not be neglected ; for it could not injure the other towns that Flatbush had an extra turn, for the other towns thereafter again took their course [*i. e.*, their respective turns]. That the minister not being fetched by anybody, evidently belonged no more to the one than to the other, and in such a case he stood free on his own feet to give the extra turn to whom he pleased ; that Flatbush received profit, but the other towns no injury, [and] that this was unjust no one could pretend ; and that Flatbush was not obligated to the other towns, but to the minister whom they remunerated, which was evident, inasmuch as they had purchased a piece of land 16 rods long and 12 broad, adjoining the parsonage ; and this ought to be duly considered, although no person ought to be a judge in his own case ; therefore the minister advised that this difference be referred and submitted to the Honorable the Consistory of New York."

On the 14th of October, 1680, the following was agreed to, being article 7 of a new agreement with the minister, viz :

"Those of Flatbush shall provide that the minister's field be enlarged two morgen, in order that the minister may keep a horse and suitably attend to the service of the Church, and also make all necessary repairs to the fences, dwelling, kitchens, well, and appurtenances, with earnest desire and integrity of heart."

The interference of the British authorities, who then held the Dutch colonies in subjection, with the concerns of the Reformed Dutch churches, produced much uneasiness and a considerable show of opposition among the inhabitants of the four towns. And in 1680 the Church Council, assembled in synod at Flatbush, formally resolved that the charge and management of church lands and property belonged to the Church Council, and was secured to them by the Charter of Freedoms ; and, furthermore, that the English officials were, by their oaths of office, bound to *protect* and not to abridge the rights of the church. They also chose church masters, to take charge of the church property ; and these officers were reappointed for several successive years.

The Rev. RUDOLPHUS VAN VARICK was the next minister of Kings County, from 1685 to 1694. During the Leislerian troubles, in 1669, he had been one of the Dutch ministers who stood out against the authority of Leisler, and was treated with much harshness, being dragged from his home, cast into the jail, deposed from his ministerial functions, and fined heavily. These severities undoubtedly hastened his death. His congregation, also, were divided, and many of them refused to pay his salary according to the terms upon which they called him from Holland—especially, as he says, in a petition to the Governor, Sept. 11th, 1691, for the six months of his imprisonment. The Court ordered the arrears of salary due him by his congregation to be collected, *by distress, if necessary*. Mr. Varick was naturalized on the 29th of July, 1686, and his posterity are to be found on the island.

Second Church erected at Flatbush, 1698.—

He was succeeded by the Rev. WILHELMUS LUPARDUS, whose ministry was terminated by death in 1701 or 2. During his ministry (1698) a sum equal to \$6,291 was raised by subscription for the erection of a new (the second) church in Flatbush. It was built upon the site of the first church ; but unlike it, was of stone, and larger, being 50x65 feet. The front was the longer side, facing toward the main road, with a high-arched doorway, with double doors, in the centre. The roof, starting from each of the four walls met in the centre, forming a high and steep "hip-roof," surmounted by a small steeple. The pulpit was in the middle of the west side of the building, facing the door. The male portion of the congregation was seated in a continuous pew along the wall, which was divided into 20 compartments, with doors to each. In the centre of the building chairs were arranged in seven rows, or blocks, for seating the females and children, each chair being numbered, or marked with the name of the occupant or family, on the back. As the first church had contained apartments for the minister, it was now necessary to erect a parsonage. This was built of stone, on the lot immediately south of, and about 150 feet from the church. This building was taken down in 1852, when the pre-

sent parsonage was built. After this church was completed, arrangements were made by which interments were allowed under the church, upon payment of a liberal fee; and the care of this matter was entrusted to the village schoolmaster, who, in addition to £4 paid to the church, for every adult interred, was to receive a stipulated sum (about \$10) for his own benefit. All the ministers, of the church, who died at Flatbush, during the time of the second edifice, were buried beneath it. It was probably completed about 1702.

Being thus again deprived of a regular ministry, the people of the four towns empowered the elders of the churches within said towns to procure a minister, "either out of the province or out of Holland," and the elders determined upon the Rev. BERNARDUS FREEMAN, of



Bernardus Freeman

Schenectady, and applied to the Governor, Lord Cornbury, for permission to call him. Their action, however, although well-meant, gave rise to a contention which was destined to distract and agitate the inhabitants of Kings County for many succeeding years. The people, always jealous of the English power, to which they were unwilling subjects, and particularly sensitive to any interference of that power with their ecclesiastical affairs, were highly indignant because the elders had seen fit to ask the Governor's permission to call Mr. Freeman. In Flatbush, the disaffected even went so far as to convene a town-meeting, whereat the regular elders of that church were deposed from office and new ones elected in their stead, who were instructed forthwith to send for Mr. Freeman; while, at Breuckelen, certain busy-bodies went around endeavoring to get signatures to a petition or call to the said Freeman, and also for the choosing of three new elders from that town, as had been done at Flatbush. Their discontent was undoubtedly encouraged by Dominie Freeman's evident desire to come among them—although in direct opposition to the expressed desire of his own church at Schenectady.

The legal examination of the contending parties before the Council, resulted in the decision by Governor Cornbury: "The petitioners should not call or receive Mr. Freeman. But they were left at liberty to send for such Minister as they should think fit, from Holland or any other place, as hath been customary."

The opposition to Mr. Freeman, from the Governor, the people of his charge at Schenectady, and the disaffected minority in Flatbush and Breuckelen, although it retarded, did not defeat his settlement in Kings County. Late in the year 1705, he received the Governor's permission, and was installed at New Utrecht; but his troubles were not yet over. While his adherents had been foistering him into the pastorate, his opponents had formally applied to the Classis at Amsterdam for a minister; and, in response to their request, the Rev. VINCENTIUS ANTONIDES arrived from the Fatherland on the first of January, 1705-6, and was duly installed at Flatbush, assuming the charge of the four churches, to which, in 1702, had been added the newly formed church of Jamaica.

The controversy between the two parties rapidly increased in bitterness and extent. Freeman's adherents, conscious of the protection of the Governor and Council, formally demanded that the church books, lands, and stock should be delivered into their keeping; to which the "original" church party very naturally demurred. The Governor issued a warrant to the authorities of the Flatbush and Breuckelen churches, to deliver up said property and books to Mr. Freeman; to which the elders of the churches of Breuckelen, Flatbush, and Flatlands replied by a counter-petition, reciting the circumstances attending Dominie Antonides' settlement, asserting that Mr. Freeman was "only called minister for the town of New Utrecht," and "has entered upon two of the same churches without any lawful call, and has continually obstructed their minister, etc., and conclude by calling for a council, composed of some of her Majesty's Council and the deputies of the Dutch churches of the province, by whom the matter may be fully examined and decided.

After a full and patient hearing of all the testimony in the case, the Council sent in majority and minority reports to the Governor. The former, finds "that Mr. Antonides is duly and regularly called minister of the said towns of Brookland, Flatbush, and Flatlands, according to the discipline, practice, and constitution of the Dutch churches of the towns aforesaid, and that Mr. Freeman is duly called minister of New Utrecht, on the said island, and we believe is likewise minister of Bushwick, though it has not been proved before us." The minority report, finds that "Mr. Freeman is justly and legally called and entitled to the ministry of the churches of Breukland, Flatbush, New Utrecht, and Boswyck." The majority report, however, in favor of Mr. Antonides, was accepted by the Governor and Council, who thereupon promulgated an order directing

that Mr. Freeman and Mr. Antonides should preach at all the said churches in Kings County, *alternately*, and divide all the profits equally, share and share alike; if either of them refused to comply with the order, he was to be dismissed.

But neither dominie or their adherents would obey, and so the weary quarrel went on, to the great discredit of human nature and the Christian religion, until it had vexed the souls of four Royal Governors and their Councils.

Near the close of the year 1714 the long contest was happily terminated by a convention of delegates from the several congregations, who mutually agreed to lay aside their ancient differences, and acknowledge Messrs. Freeman and Antonides as their ministers. Breuckelen, Bushwick, Flatbush, Flatlands, New Utrecht, and even Jamaica, were all included within the charge. It was arranged that one minister should preach on one Sabbath in Bushwick, and the other in New Utrecht; the next Sabbath, one in Brooklyn, and the other in Flatlands; on the third Sabbath, one in Flatbush, the other in Jamaica; and so on, in regular rotation. As to communions, Bushwick, Brooklyn, and Flatbush were to commune together; Flatlands, Gravesend, and New Utrecht, together; and the congregations of Queens County should form another communion. Both the dominies thereafter resided at Flatbush, in the pleasant and harmonious discharge of their duties. They were esteemed as men of respectable talents and acquirements.

It now became necessary to procure another parsonage. The congregations, therefore, purchased from Johannes Johnson a house on the main road (near the corner of Vernon Avenue, and more lately known as the Hess property), in Flatbush. This building was used as a parsonage until 1809.

During their ministry the Reformed Dutch Churches of New Netherlands were sadly agitated by the question concerning the organization of a *Cætus*, or assembly of ministers and elders, in this country, subordinate to the Classis of Amsterdam. This unhappy controversy continued until 1772, and so alienated and embittered were the opposing parties, that many would not worship together with, or even speak to, those of the other party. "Sometimes" (says STRONG, Hist. Flatbush,) "they would not turn out when they met on the road. On one occasion, it is said that two of these redoubtable opponents, belonging to Flatbush, meeting in their wagons, and both refusing to give the road, they each deliberately took out their pipes and began to smoke! How long they continued at this very pacific employment is not stated, nor is it said whether the difficulty between them was lost sight of by the cloud of smoke obscuring their vision, or whether their pipes were ever turned into the calumet of peace."

Freeman was born at Gilhuis, Holland; received a call to Schenectady, to which charge he was ordained

March 16, 1700; learned the Mohawk language, and made many Indian converts. In 1721 he published a volume of sermons entitled "The Balances of God's Grace," and printed in Amsterdam; also one called "De Spiegel der Selfkennis" (or Mirror of Self-knowledge), a collection, in the Dutch language, of ancient moral and philosophical maxims, displaying a great amount of learning and research. In 1735 he purchased seven acres of land at Flatbush, and built a house, which is still standing, although altered; and died in the year 1741. His successor in 1742 was the Rev. JOHANNES ARONDEUS, from Rotterdam, a man of contumacious spirit, and irregular life. He quarrelled with his new colleague, Van Sinderen, very soon after the latter's arrival; and, in May, 1747, he went off secretly, as was alleged, to the Raritan, where he was installed as minister; returning, however, July 31, 1748, to Kings county, where he resumed his functions, especially in Brookland and New Utrecht. His outraged parishioners brought charges against him before the *Cætus*, which he refused to notice, whereupon he was declared to be an unlawful minister of Kings County, but persisted in officiating there. On appeal to the Classis the action of the *Cætus* was confirmed, and on April 16, 1752, sentence was passed upon Arondeus, but was, however, totally disregarded by him. Proposals of peace for Long Island were offered (December 5, 1752) by the Classis of Amsterdam. On the 20th of September, 1753, the *Cætus* confirmed anew their former sentence. The last time he baptized a child, in Queens County, was at Jamaica, in April, 1754. He probably remained on the island, leading a dissolute life, until 1773.

Mr. Antonides died July 18, 1744, at Flatbush, in his 74th year. He was a gentleman of extensive learning; of an easy, condescending behavior and conversation, and of a regular, exemplary piety, kind, benevolent and

V. Antonides
Cætus; Brankalitz &c

charitable to all, according to his abilities; meek, humble, patriotic, and resigned under all afflictions, losses, calamities, and misfortunes which befell him in his own person and family, which were not a few. He was succeeded by the Rev. ULPIANUS VAN SINDEREN, a native of Holland, in the year 1746. He began to preach at Flatbush, April 19, 1747.

Upon the deposition from the ministerial office of the Rev. Mr. Arondeus, his place was filled by the Rev. ANTONIUS CURTENIUS, from Hackensack, N. J., who was intalled as Van Sinderen's colleague, May 2, 1755, and died in October, 1756, aged fifty-eight years. He was regularly educated; and remarkable for indefatigable diligence in his pastoral duties. He was succeeded by

JOHANNES CASPARUS RUBEL, a native of Hesse Cassel, Germany, who had been settled at Red Hook, until August, 1757, when he was called to be the colleague of Van Sinderen, over the churches of Kings County. He had previously led an insubordinate clerical life; was naturalized on the 23d of December, 1765; and in June, 1769, styled himself "Ecclesiastes in Kings County and in the Manor of Cortland;" and in August, 1770, "Minister of Clarkstown"—probably on the strength of his having occasionally filled a pulpit there.

Both of these gentlemen continued in the work of the ministry until after the close of the Revolutionary war. In politics they differed extremely, Mr. Van Sinderen being a firm Whig, while Mr. Rubel was as decided a loyalist. Colonel GRAYDON'S Memoirs gives us the following spirited picture of the two pastors. "The principal person in a Low Dutch village appears to be the *Dominie* or minister, and Flatbush, at this time, revered her dominie, Rubel, a rotund, jolly-looking man, a follower of Luther, and a Tory. * * * At Flatlands there was also a dominie, Van Zinder[en], a disciple of Calvin, and a Whig. He was, in person and principle, a perfect contrast to Mr. Rubel, being a lean and shrivelled little man, with a triangular sharp-pointed hat, and silver locks which 'streamed like a meteor flowing to the troubled air,' as he whisked along with great velocity in his chaise through Flatbush. He was distinguished by a species of pulpit eloquence which



REV. ULPIANUS VAN SINDEREN.

might be truly said to 'bring matters home to men's business and bosoms.' Mr. Bache assured me that, in once descanting of the wily arts of the devil, he likened him to my landlord, 'sneaking and skulking about to get a shot at a flock of snipes,' in shooting of which it seems Jacob was eminently skillful."

STRONG'S Flatbush relates that he was "too much in the habit of introducing the occurrences of the week previous in his sermons on the Sabbath, and often would allude to very trifling circumstances. On one occasion, a good elder, who had borne with the Dominie in this particular till his patience was exhausted, very injudiciously, under the excitement of his feelings, rose in his seat during divine service, and interrupted Mr. Van Sinderen by saying that they had called him to preach the gospel, and not to detail to them such matters. The Dominie, indignant at being stopped in his discourse, leaned over the pulpit and replied: 'You, Philip Nagle, if you can preach the gospel better than I can, come up here and try!'"

In 1784 the Consistory of Flatbush and the other

churches of Kings County complained to the Synod of N. Y., concerning the shortcomings of both of their ministers, Van Sinderen and Rubel, and requesting to be released from them; one (Van Sinderen) being useless from advanced age, and the other (Rubel) being of notoriously bad habits. All the witnesses agreed that they had nothing against Van Sinderen except his age, and that the breach between him and Rubel had gone so far that the old Dominie could not control his temper. Rubel was, therefore, deposed in 1784, but continued to reside in Flatbush, devoting his time to the preparation of quack-medicines, and in his advertisements styles himself "Minister of the Gospel and Chymicus." He died in 1797, and his solitary tomb-stone is still existing in the Flatbush churchyard.

Mr. Van Sinderen, at the request of the Consistory, resigned his pastoral charge in June, 1784, although he received a stated salary until his death, at Flatlands, on 23d of July, 1796, in his 89th year, and was buried there. He was a learned but eccentric man.

With Messrs. Van Sinderen and Rubel, the *European* Dutch ministry in Kings county ceased. During their ministry, in 1774, the Flatbush church was remodelled, the chairs being superseded by 65 pews, each containing six seats apiece.

In 1785, the Rev. MARTINUS SCHOONMAKER, a native of Ulster county, N. Y., then officiating at Harlem and Gravesend, accepted a call to take charge of the collegiate churches of the county, to which the church at Gravesend was then added; and, on the 28th of October, 1787, the Rev. PETER LOWE was ordained at New Utrecht as his colleague. The former officiated in the Dutch language until his death, in 1824; and the latter, in the English tongue. In their regular rotation through the county, four churches would be closed, and two open, for divine worship on the Sabbath. Such, however, is the peculiar position of the county, and the easy communication between the several towns, that, with the



REV. PETER LOWE.

exception of Bushwick and Gravesend, each of the others could quite conveniently follow the ministers, who consequently preached to full and crowded houses.

Mr. Schoonmaker, while holding the pastorate of the six collegiate churches of Kings county, received a salary of £150 per annum. He resided at Flatbush, where he spent the remainder of his life in the faithful discharge of his labors as a minister of God.

He was a man of reserved and retiring habits; more so, perhaps, from the circumstance that it was exceedingly difficult for him to hold even a common conversa-

tion without mangling most horribly the English language. Fluent and ready in the language in which he was educated, he displayed, by his manner and gestures, all the dignity and sincerity applicable to his position and functions. Courteous and polite, he was a relic of the old school, and universally respected. Indeed, it may be questioned whether the venerable old minister had a solitary enemy. An anecdote was, many years ago, in common circulation, which some may consider a slander upon his abilities and acquirements. Having celebrated a marriage, at the close of the ceremony, for the benefit of the spectators, he attempted to terminate it in English with the sentence, "I pronounce you man and wife, and one flesh; whom God hath joined together, let no man put asunder." His English failed him; yet, conscious of perfect rectitude, and the propriety of a shorter translation, with

probable that the first seal of the Flatbush church was also then adopted. This has quite an elaborate and curious design. At its top is represented the final coming of the Son of God, in clouds. In the foreground stands a preacher proclaiming the fact, as he points to the clouds, and utters the words, "Lo, He Cometh." Five skulls, at his feet, represent the dead rising from their graves at the resurrection. On his left are the lost souls peering out from the flames; while, on his right hand stand the righteous. Encircling this device is the corporate title of the church: "The Seal of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church, of Flatbush." In 1867, after the change of the corporate name of the denomination by dropping the word "Dutch" from the title, this seal was replaced by a new one, adopted Feb. 8, 1875, simply bearing the corporate title of the church.

The plan of government by trustees continued until 1804, when a special act was passed by the Legislature, providing that in the Reformed Dutch churches in the State, the minister, elders and deacons, should constitute a Board of Trustees for the congregation.

A New Church Erected at Flatbush, 1793.—In 1793, arrangements were made for tearing down the old church, which had become unsafe, because of the peculiar construction of its roof. The building, now standing, was three years in process of construction. All the stones of the old church were placed in its foundations. The stones for the wall were quarried at Hurlgate and brought to Gowanus by water, whence they were carted to Flatbush. The brown stone used in the building was found in the Brooklyn woods, and the bricks around the doors and windows were brought



OLD BUSHWICK CHURCH.

much solemnity and emphasis, he exclaimed: "*I pronounce you two to be one beef!*" He died May 20, 1824, aged 87 years. With him ceased the regular public and official use of the Dutch language in all the pulpits of the Dutch Reformed churches. He was succeeded by the Rev. PETER LOWE (his colleague since October 28, 1787), who, since April 10, 1792, had preached the afternoon service every Sunday in the English language.

"Church Masters," superseded by Trustees, 1785; and Seal of the Flatbush Church.—It may here be mentioned, also, that, in 1785, the *Church-Masters* elected, during the preceding 170 years, by the "Gemeente," or congregation, were superseded by *Trustees*, under the Legislative Act of 1784, and it is

from Holland in ships belonging to Hon. John Vanderbilt. At the completion of the church, in 1796, a fine bell, imported expressly from Holland, was presented to the church by the same gentleman. The vessel in which the bell was shipped was captured by the British and carried into Halifax. It was a singular fact that the second or third time the bell was used was at the funeral of its donor. The new church was dedicated in January, 1797.

In 1802, the Brooklyn church called a separate pastor; and, in 1808, the Flatbush and Flatlands churches called Mr. Lowe as their pastor. Thus the collegiate connection of the six Kings county churches was partially dissolved.

NOTE.—For matter in this chapter relative to the Flatbush Church, we are indebted to the Rev. R. G. STRONG, the author of the *History of Flatbush* in this work. The cut, above given, of the old Bushwick Church, represents a form of edifice not uncommon to the Dutch churches of Long Island. Those of New Utrecht, and of Jamaica, were of this octagonal, conical-roofed design.—EDITOR.

HISTORY
OF THE
BENCH AND BAR
OF KINGS COUNTY,
1668—1832.

By *Stephen* Esq.

IT was said by De Tocqueville, the profound and variously accomplished commentator on American Democracy—a work which was the result of his own personal observation—that, in our great commercial cities, the lawyers, merchants, or men of trade constitute what he deemed an aristocracy.

This is, to a certain extent, true; for experience has strongly demonstrated that when the possession of actual capital, in the various forms it is capable of assuming, becomes in any way affiliated with those classes whose native intellectual powers have been expanded and energized by education, these, for many purposes, form a single class, in which mind and money create an influence so powerful that it wields fully as much power here as the real aristocracy of Europe can command; and, if not an aristocracy, it is a powerful element in American society.

In our population of 50,155,783, as it was numbered a little over two years ago, there were 64,137 lawyers, or, one in every 782 of men, women, and children. But what is of even more significance is the fact that the ratio is an increasing one. Twelve years ago there was but one lawyer to every 946 persons in the population. Nor yet does this growing numerical statement express, even approximately, the influence on American society of its lawyers.

If this is true concerning the blended influence of merchants, their sagacity and wealth, with that of the learning, acumen and executive ability of the lawyers; the allegation that a large portion of the laws enacted in the United States owe their origin, directly or indirectly, to the legal profession, aided by the influence of the merchants and monied interests, is by no means an exaggeration. Indeed, a close and fair examination of the origin of these laws fully sustains the statement.

The administration of law in our courts of justice—in many instances really equivalent in practice to the

law-making power itself—naturally devolves upon those who have made our system of jurisprudence a study. Those who understand the philosophy of law, who are acquainted with the laws in existence, familiar with their various (often conflicting) interpretations, are presumed to be capable of deciding what new laws are necessary, or what modifications of existing laws the progress of society demands. Hence, the commercial class never fails to appeal to the large representation of the bar always found in the law-making department—the state or national legislature, for the enactment of statutes touching its interest.

The elevated character of these classes, their intelligence, their high sense of honor, their interest in the perpetuity of the nation, in all that tends to the advancement of morality, religion, and education, have resulted in the enactment and enforcement of salutary laws.

The proper enforcement of law is due, in a great measure, to a judiciary whose habits of patient, learned and impartial investigation, quick perception, power of analysis and combination, and liberal hearts, rendered them, indeed, high priests of the law, in whose censers unhallowed incense never burned.

The *legal* and *commercial* history of KINGS COUNTY demonstrates the truth of the foregoing remarks, inasmuch as the two great classes referred to have left the most indubitable evidence of their influence in developing its vast resources and in conducting it to its present high and commanding position. Its *commercial* history will be found in another part of this work; while its *legal* history, or the history of its BENCH AND BAR, will be found in the following pages.

Immediately after the formation of Kings County, in 1683, by an act of the Colonial Assembly, dividing the province into counties, and abolishing the ridings which previously existed, its bar was organized.

Upon its roll are the names of many master spirits; those who possessed the enthusiasm of poetry and elo-

quence, who were endowed with the knowledge of law, and capability of incisive, methodical, ingenious argument; those whose acquaintance with precedent, whose depth of investigation and power of penetration, and whose administrative faculties eminently qualified them for the career of the legislator and statesman; this is the solemn judgment of history.

Before the Revolution, Colonial Judges of high attainments presided over the Courts of Kings County, while lawyers of every degree of talents and learning tried cases before them. Since the revolution, Judges, whose names are resplendent in legal history, have presided over its Courts. JOHN MARSHALL, JOHN JAY, JOSEPH STORY, OLIVER ELLSWORTH, BUSHROD WASHINGTON, SAMUEL NELSON, and many other great Judicial officers of the United States Supreme Court, have sat on its bench. BROCKHOLST LIVINGSTON, JOHN SLOSS HOBERT, JAMES KENT, AMBROSE SPENCER, WILLIAM L. MARCY, ESECK COWAN, JOHN W. EDMONDS, and many other historic Judges of the Supreme Court, all of whom are numbered with the dead, have presided over its Courts. We might name an equally distinguished line of living Judges who have pronounced the law from its bench.

At its bar HAMILTON and BURR often appeared. The first seemed born for every sphere of greatness. Equally conversant with government in its principles and administrations in detail; he wrote and spoke with equal power and equal distinction. "A profound jurist; in some sense one of the founders of commercial law in this country; who, at a time when that branch of jurisprudence was *terra incognita* to the profession of New York, had explored its foundations and had become familiar with its principles; who had studied Valon and Emerigon, and was among the first to introduce those authors to his legal brethren." The latter, as Chancellor Kent said of him, was quick, acute, terse, polished, sententious; often in forensic discussions, sarcastic and ironical, and who seemed to disdain all illustration and expansion, confining himself with singular stringency to the point in discussion.

Here, too, BROCKHOLST LIVINGSTON, afterwards an accomplished Judge of the State and Federal Courts, as we have seen, and who as an advocate was "copious, fluent, abounding in skillful, sharp, analogies and beautiful reflections, with a mind familiar with the best classical productions in ancient and modern literature, and adorned by a highly cultivated taste, and whose *forte* lay in ingenious and powerful addresses to the jury, contended for his clients."

JOSIAH OGDEN HOFFMAN, DANIEL LORD, JAMES T. BRADY, OGDEN HOFFMAN, WM. CURTIS NOYES, and many others among the illustrious dead, and many among the distinguished living have, and still do, appear at this bar.

We shall now proceed to describe the Halls of Justice, or Court-houses and other buildings which have

been used in the administration of justice; some of the proceedings of the Courts, the judiciary and the bar of Kings county. We shall begin with a description of its Court-houses.

The First Court-house in Kings County at Gravesend, 1668-1687.—The first Court-house in Kings county was erected in 1668, at Gravesend. It stood on one of the squares of the original village-plat, near the present site of the Reformed Dutch Church. Here the Courts were held until 1686, when, in accordance with the provisions of an act of the Colonial Assembly, passed Nov. 7, 1685, they were removed to Flatbush. One reason assigned for this removal was the inconvenience to some people traveling so far from their residences to attend Court at Gravesend.*

First Court-house of Flatbush, 1686-1758.—Flatbush, from its geographical position, was central to all the county. Here, in 1686, the Court-house was erected, standing on ground long known as the "Court house Lot," now belonging to the estate of Hon. John A. Lott. Its site is now occupied by the fine residence of Mr. Abraham A. Lott. It was a small, unpretending building, and was wholly devoted to the use of the Courts; the Jail being separate from it. In the winter of 1757-8 one of these buildings was burned, and the other, the Court-house, was saved by the energetic efforts of the people, who extinguished the fire by throwing snow-balls upon it.

Second Court-house and Jail at Flatbush.—It was afterwards taken down and a new building erected; a part of it was used for a Court-house, and a part for the Jail. It was two stories high, well lighted; the lower floor being divided by a hall running east and west; on the south side was the jailor's room, and on the north was the jail apartment.

It was a grim and gloomy room, something between a dungeon and a block-house, and was constructed of heavy oak plank, fastened to solid timbers of the same by heavy wrought-iron spikes driven a few inches apart. The floor was made of the same material, and in the same way. The doors were also made of heavy oaken timbers, about four or five inches thick; the planks running diagonally, and defended by heavy iron bars, running horizontally across the door. Towards the top of the door was a diamond-shaped opening, of about eight inches in area, strongly bound by iron. The hinges and lock were very heavy; taken together, the door was a ponderous, unwieldy affair.

The room was lighted by two grated windows opening into the street, or common, near the jail. These grates were occasionally cut by the prisoners with instruments secretly conveyed to them by friends. It is related that on one occasion, the grates to one of these windows were cut, after a long period of secret labor; the marks made by the instrument being filled with a material which resembled the iron, until all the pieces

* See excerpt from Court Record, given on page 168.

were ready to be removed. Through the aperture thus made, three prisoners effected their escape in the night. Another attempted to escape, but being quite corpulent, he only succeeded in getting his body half way out, where he was held in limbo by the sharp pieces of the surrounding grate. The agony produced by this situation was terrible, but he endured it until he thought his fellow-captives were beyond recapture; then he made the air ring with his agonizing cries for help. As his body had swollen by the irritation of the irons against it, it was impossible to extricate him, except by the tedious process of cutting away the bars which held him. When finally rescued, he was nearly dead.

In the second story of this building was the Court-room, large and commodious for the times, with a bench for the judges, desk for the clerk, bar for the lawyers, two rows of chairs for the jurors, an antique dock for prisoners, and a large number of comfortable seats for spectators.

During the Revolutionary war, while the British were in possession of Long Island, the gay and festive English officers caused this court-room to be converted into a ball-room, by the removal of its furniture and fixtures. Here, for several years, instead of the altercations and arguments of lawyers, opinions and charges of judges, music with its voluptuous swell was heard, to whose inspiring notes, elegant English officers, with their wives, daughters, and the wives and daughters of their tory friends, joined in the dance.

The original cost of this building was £448, which was raised by assessment laid upon the taxable inhabitants of the county. "In 1792, this building was found so small and inconvenient, so much out of repair, that a more commodious court-house was demanded. Accordingly, in that year, measures were adopted for the erection of a building more suitable to the increased wealth and population of the county. It was much larger than the one we have described, though built on much the same plan. The plan, says the historian, was drawn by Mr. James Robinson, and was described in the minutes of the Board of Supervisors, as 'The Wooden Plan,' probably from the fact that plans for erecting a building out of other material had been submitted to the Board."

The commissioners to superintend the erection of this Court-house and Jail were John Vanderbilt, Johannes E. Lott and Charles Doughty, Esq. But Mr. Vanderbilt having resigned, Rutger Van Brunt was appointed in his place.

The old Court-house was sold at auction to Michael Van Cleef, who sold the timbers to Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker. He converted them into a very respectable dwelling-house, afterwards occupied for many years by his son, Stephen Schoonmaker.

The Third Court-house, at Flatbush, 1793-1832.—The new Court-house and Jail was completed

in 1793. Its architecture differed from that of the old Court-house in this: it had a double-pitch, or curved roof, and was surmounted by a small cupola. Like the former building, the court-room was on the second floor, and was used for school exhibitions, town meetings and other public gatherings. The exterior was painted red. Unfortunately for the cause of justice, the new Jail, constructed much on the plan of the old, was quite insecure; and prisoners not infrequently escaped from it, although it was frequently repaired. It was often facetiously remarked in those days, "that prisoners were in great danger of falling out of Flatbush Jail."

On November 30th, 1832, the building took fire and was burned to the ground. During the conflagration all the prisoners confined in the jail, except one, labored with great alacrity to extinguish the flames; and when all was over, voluntarily submitted to re-imprisonment, provided in another place. From that time till the erection and occupation of the jail in Brooklyn, prisoners arrested in Kings County were sent to the old Bridewell prison, in the city of New York; much to the loss of the Sheriff of Kings County, and largely to the gain of the Sheriff of New York; for the fees for conducting prisoners to Bridewell—which were quite heavy—were, by statute, given to the New York Sheriff.

From the time of the destruction of the Court-house by fire, Flatbush ceased to be the county town of Kings County; its courts and all its judicial and other business was transferred to Brooklyn.

Temporary Court Accommodations, 1832-1837.—During the five years following the burning of the Court-house and Jail at Flatbush, the courts of the county were held in the Apprentice's Library, in Nash's Exchange building, on the corner of Fulton and Cranberry streets, Brooklyn.

We shall now proceed to describe

The Early Courts of Kings County.—Courts of Justice, except the Admiralty Court, were organized in the colony of New York by the English under the authority of the code known as "The Duke's Laws," promulgated at an assembly convened at Hempstead, Long Island, by Governor Nichols, in 1665. These were a *Court of Assizes*, *Court of Sessions*, and *Town Courts*. Authority was given at the same time for Courts of Oyer and Terminer. The Dutch Courts of Burgomasters and Schepens, were changed to the Mayor's Court of New York.

The above composed what may be called the *First Judicial System*, which existed from 1665 to 1683. The Governor, however, was empowered by his commission to establish also a Court of Admiralty.

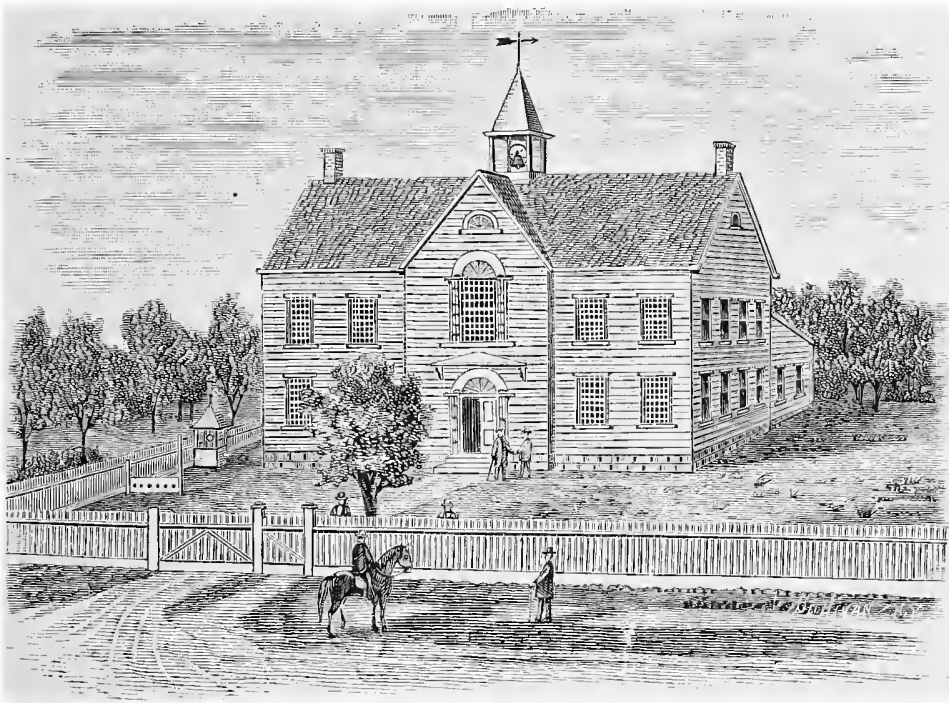
Under the *Second Judicial System* (1683 to 1691), the Town, or Justices' Courts, Courts of Session and Oyer and Terminer, were continued, and a Court of Chancery established.

The *Third Judicial System* was inaugurated in 1691, and continued during the Colonial Period. It preserved the Court previously established and added, for the first time, a Court of Common Pleas and Supreme Court, into which last, however, the Court of Oyer and Terminer was merged.

These Courts continued in existence down to the Revolution. After the formation of our Government the Court of Sessions, the Court of Chancery, the Supreme Court, the Court of Common Pleas and Court of Oyer and Terminer were continued; their procedure remaining as it was during the Colonial Period, with such modifications as the new government required, down to 1821, when more changes were made in the proceedings of the Courts.

make necessary orders or by-laws "for the welfare and improvement of their towne provided they are not repugnant to 'The Duke's Laws,' nor impose a penalty of higher than 20s. for an offence." In civil suits it had jurisdiction as high as five pounds; over that amount, an appeal lay to the Court of Sessions. In 1683 this Court was modified. It was held by three commissioners on the first Wednesday in each month, in each town in the county, and was empowered to determine causes for debt and trespass, of forty shillings and under, without a jury, unless the plaintiff or defendant at the joining of issue made a demand in writing that the case be tried by a jury.

Every *Justice of the Peace*, resident within any town in the county, assisted by one of the freeholders of the



THE THIRD COUNTY COURT-HOUSE, FLATBUSH.

By the Constitution of 1846, a radical change was made in our judicial system. The Court of Chancery was abolished; the Supreme Court re-organized; the Court of Common Pleas and the old Court of Sessions abolished; a County Court and Court of Sessions instituted; the Court of Oyer and Terminer was retained as a branch of the Supreme or Circuit Courts. The Court for the Correction of Errors was abolished, and a Court of Appeals instituted in its place.

In the county of Kings, as well as in all other counties in the State, there existed, during the Colonial Period:

Town and Justices' Courts.—The High Constable of the Town, with five, at least, of the Overseers of the Town, held a TOWN COURT. They had power to

town, was vested with power to try such small causes with a jury, provided one of the parties desired a trial by jury. Subsequently three justices (one of whom was to be of the quorum), were empowered to try without a jury any offender who did not find bail within twenty-four hours after being in custody, for any offense under the degree of grand larceny, and to inflict any punishment, so that it did not extend to life or limb. Such three justices, with five freeholders, had power, without previous indictment by a Grand Jury, summarily to try slaves charged with murder, or other capital felonies, and to punish them, even with death.

It will thus be seen that Justices of the Peace in that early day were clothed with judicial power equal to the power of our present Court of Sessions, and so

far as the trial of slaves was concerned, were equal to our present Court of Oyer and Terminer. We cannot find, however, any records or any minutes kept by these courts of any trial of a criminal, or of any civil action, except trials for inferior crimes for the recovery of small amounts.

The First Court of Record ever held in the County of Kings, of which any reliable minutes can be found, convened at Gravesend, March 17, 1668.

There were several causes tried during the sittings of this Court; one of them was a suit brought by Peter Faltus against Nicholas Jammer for "tortiously taking and converting to his own use one vehical known as ye cart with ye attendant impliments, of ye value of ten pounds." Several witnesses were sworn for the respective parties, and the cause was, apparently, exhaustively tried. The plaintiff had a verdict for the full amount of his claim, with six cents costs of suit. This pittance contrasts strongly with the heavy bills of cost now allowed to the successful party in such cases.

The proceedings of the Courts in those days were, in many respects, similar to the procedure of the Courts of the present time. They were opened by the time-worn proclamation: "O, yes! O, yes!! O, ye-es!!" &c., &c., still used in very many of our State courts.

The following is a copy of an ancient precept, issued by one of the Justices of the Peace, of the County of Kings, exhibiting one form of legal documents of the olden time:

KINGS COUNTY, } ss. Thomas Sanders, Esq., Justice of the
[L. S.] peace for said County Assigned.

To all constables and other officers as well, within the said county as elsewhere within the Colony of New York, to whom the execution hereof doth or may concern, Greeting:

WHEREAS, I have Received Information and Charge against one James Jones Lately Come from Lebanon In ye County of Windham, in ye Collony of Connecticut and Liveing, It is Said in Kings County, at the house of one Alexander Griggs Calls himself a Weaver a Lusty Well-Sott Likely man full faced Browne Complexioned and wears a Black Wig Irish man; by birth by the brogue on his Speech Who is Charged before me to be a Dangerous person and is suspected to have Stolen a Silver Spoon or the biggest part Silver Spoon; as by a Warrant Produced and the complaint of William Dreddy in Lebanon County Connecticut aforsed some time in ye month of this present November.

Notwithstanding Sevvorall Indeavors for apprehension of him he hath not as yett been apprehended but hath withdrawn himself and fled—Lately from Lebanon in ye county of Windham in ye Colloney of Connecticut and is come of one County of Kings These are therefore in his majesty's name to Command You and Every of You to make diligent Search Within your Severall Prescincts and Districts for Said James Jones and to make hue and Cry after him from Towne to Towne from County to County and that as well by horseman as footman According to Law. and if you shall find the said James Jones That then you do Carry him before some one of his magisties Justices of the Peace Within the County or place Where he shall be taken to be Dealth withall According to Law Hereof fails not at your perils—Given under my hand in Dutchess County this 17th day of

November, in the fourth year of our reaign, and In The Year of our Lord God Everlasting Ano 1730.

THOMAS SANDERS, Justice.

To Adrien Hageman, High Sheriff In Kings County.
Pursue After the Person In This Hue and Cry.

Long before the Revolution, magistrates or justices courts, with limited criminal and civil jurisdiction, were tribunals of considerable importance. Each town had a number of magistrates, appointed by the Governor-General of the colony.

Some idea may be gained of the nature of the courts held by them from an entry in the records of the town of Bushwick of a singular sentence pronounced by a magistrate of that town upon Jan Van Leyden, as related in the *History of Bushwick*, page 277.

The trial of a clergyman before a magistrate for improperly marrying a couple is also recorded. The trial resulted in his conviction, and he was sentenced to flogging and banishment. But on account of his advanced age, his punishment was commuted to banishment.

At New Utrecht, in October, 1696, a man was tried and convicted of stealing a cow-bell. He was sentenced to stand, for the space of three hours, under a gallows, with a halter around his neck and an empty scabbard in his right hand.

In the record of Kings County Court of Sessions, for November 12th, 1695, an order was made that Mad Jane should be kept at the expense of the county, and that "the deacons of each towne within the same, do forthwith meet together and consider about their *propercons* for maintainence of said Jane."

See also pages 166 and 168 for other extracts from the diary of Gravesend Town Courts and Court of Sessions.

It is a singular fact, that this Court of Sessions had a sort of military jurisdiction, as appears from the following:

At a Court of Sessions held at Gravesend on the 2d day of January, 1643, a soldier was brought to trial before that court for leaving his station while doing duty as a guard or sentinel, for the purpose of getting a drink of beer. He was found guilty. After a due consultation the court sentenced him to sit on a wooden horse during a parade, a pitcher in one hand and a drawn sword in the other, to show that he liked beer better than his duty, and that his courage was always in proportion to the quantity of beer he drank.

Supreme Court.—The Supreme Court of the State of New York was originally established by an act of the Legislature, May 6th, 1691; continued by divers acts, which, having expired by limitation in 1698, the court was continued by proclamation January 19th, 1699, and finally by an ordinance of the Governor and Council, dated May 15th, 1699.

It was empowered to try all cases, civil, criminal or mixed, as fully and amply as the English Courts of Kings Bench. Any action amounting to upwards of

twenty pounds could be commenced in, or removed to it. It could correct the errors or revise the judgments of inferior courts. Appeals lay from it to Governor and Council for any judgment above £100 sterling, which sum was increased to £300 sterling. It had four terms in a year and always held its sittings in the City of New York. The judges were *ex-officio* judges of Nisi Prius, or trial courts. As from two to three terms of these courts were held in each county—called circuit courts, for the reason that judges made the circuit through the counties to hold them—these judges, at the same time, held a court of Oyer and Terminer and general jail delivery, in which some of the common pleas judges of the county in which the court was held joined.

This court consisted, at first, of five judges, two of whom, together with the Chief Justice, constituted a quorum. From 1701 until 1758, it was composed of a chief justice and two associate, or *prisine* judges.

In 1691, the salary of the chief-justice was £130, and one associate £100; the other associate did not receive a salary. In 1702, the chief-justice received a salary of £300 and the fee of ten shillings on the first motion or opening of every cause. The second judge £150, and the associate £50.

In 1774, the chief-justice received from the Crown £500 sterling, and £300 New York currency from the province. The associate justices each received £200 provincial currency, and fees.

The manner in which attorneys in all the counties were admitted to practice in all the courts of the State were as follows: Gentlemen who had served seven years under an attorney, were granted licenses to practice by the Governor, under his seal, on the recommendation of the chief justice, and on subscribing the usual oaths, which, among other things, contained a clause that the persons taking the said oaths would never be concerned in a duel.

We have thus given a history of the Colonial Supreme Court, because part of its procedure took place in the County of Kings, as in all other counties of the State. The judges of the court were appointed from the different parts of the colony of New York. We find among them no names from the County of Kings; we shall therefore omit the names of these judges as they were not judicial officers residing in Kings County.

Court of Common Pleas.—By an act of the Colonial Legislature, passed in 1691, a Court of Common Pleas was established in every county of the State, and this was an early tribunal in the history of Kings County. At first it was composed of one judge, with three justices associated, but in 1702 it was ordered that the judge be assisted by two or more justices, in holding the court.

This court had cognizance of causes above £5. The first or presiding judge held a Court of General Sessions of the Peace, for the trial of criminals; it was

held at the sittings of the Common Pleas. Its practice assimilated both to the English King's bench, and Common Pleas at Westminster. Its errors were corrected in the first instance by writs of error. Appeals were allowed to the General Term of the Supreme Court, from any judgment where the amount involved exceeded the amount of £20. The first judge and justices thereof were appointed, at first, by the Governor and Council of the Colony of New York, and afterwards by the Governor of the State. These courts were continued, without any material change; except, after 1821, there were five judges in each county, of whom one was designated as "first judge." By the Constitution of 1846, the Courts of Common Pleas in all the counties were abolished, and a COUNTY COURT was instituted in its place. Little of the proceedings of the Court of Common Pleas of Kings County can be found recorded till after the appointment of Nicholas Covenhoven, which took place March 28th, 1785. The judges and other officers for Kings County will be found in another place.

County Courts.—The Constitution of 1846 and the present Constitution provides for the election in each of the counties of the State, except the city and county of New York, of one County Judge, who shall hold the County Court, and shall have such jurisdiction in cases arising in Justices Courts, and in special cases, as the Legislature may prescribe; but shall have no original civil jurisdiction except in such special cases. The Legislature may confer upon him equity jurisdiction in special cases. In pursuance of these provisions the Legislature has given the County Judge jurisdiction in actions of debt, assumpsit and covenant, not exceeding \$2,000; in cases of trespass and personal injury not to exceed \$500, and in replevin suits \$1,000. The Legislature has also conferred upon the County Court Equity jurisdiction for the foreclosure of mortgages, the sale of real estate of infants, partition of land, admeasurement of dower, satisfaction of judgment whenever \$75 is due on an unsatisfied execution, and the care and custody of lunatics and habitual drunkards. The new Judiciary Article of the Constitution continues the County Courts with the powers and jurisdictions they before possessed, subject to the action of the Legislature. They were also given original jurisdiction in all cases where the defendant resides in the county, and in which the damages shall not exceed \$1,000. The Legislature may confer additional original appellate jurisdiction. The tenure of the County Judge in each county was extended from four to six years. The salary is fixed by the Board of Supervisors, respectively.

Court of Sessions.—The Constitution associates with the County Judge of each county two Justices of the Peace, to be designated by law, to hold Courts of Sessions, with such criminal jurisdiction as the Legislature shall prescribe, and perform such other duties as may be required by law.

* The County Judges who have been elected since the formation of the County Court in the County of Kings are : Wm. Rockwell, elected in June, 1847 ; Samuel E. Johnson, declared by the Supreme Court elected in place of Rockwell ; Henry A. Moore, elected Nov., 1851 ; Samuel D. Morris, elected Nov., 1855 ; Samuel Garrison, elected Nov., 1859 ; James Troy, Nov., 1867 ; Henry A. Moore, Nov., 1871 ; by re-election continued in office down to the present time, Aug., 1883.

Several interesting cases were tried in the early Courts of Kings county after the Revolution. For several years there was a somewhat bitter dispute known as the "*Bruyn (or Brume) controversy*," between those who had by purchase become owners of what was known as the Bruyn patent (which included the right of free fishing in certain waters bounding the town of Gravesend), and the town of Gravesend.*

In 1789 Albert Voorhees became the owner of said patent which, as he contended, restrained the inhabitants from fishing in said waters, except under certain limitations. The inhabitants of the town, however, insisted that the patent did not legally prevent them from freely fishing, and continued to take fish against the orders of Mr. Voorhees, the assignee of the Bruyn patent, who, relying upon the power contained in the patent to restrain free fishing in the waters described in it, brought an action in the Supreme Court against several of the prominent citizens of the town who had, in derogation of the patent, insisted upon fishing in the restricted waters. Of course it was an action of great importance, and, according to some ancient documents still existing in the town of Gravesend, was entitled as follows:

SUPREME COURT.

Albert Voorhees	} <i>Kings County, ss.:</i>
vs.	
Albert Jerline,	
Hendrick Wyckoff,	
Inhabitants of Gravesend.	

Action for trespass for erecting fish huts, treading down grass, &c., &c.

At that time Aaron Burr was in the midst of his splendid practice at the bar—one of the most distinguished lawyers in the nation. To him the town of Gravesend applied for council as soon as the action commenced. They propounded to him several questions touching their rights in regard to the matter in controversy between themselves and Mr. Voorhees. In reply to these questions, answering other things, Col. Burr said : "I recommend to the people of Gravesend to continue to fish as usual, and by no means to suffer any new encroachment by Mr. Voorhees or any one claiming under him ; all open violence, however, should be avoided ; but if Mr. Voorhees attempts to engross more of the fishery than the town has usually allowed, he must not

be quietly permitted to do so, whatever may be the consequences."

Mr. Burr closes his reply with this characteristic advice : "As the suits are near a conclusion, and the rights and privileges of each party will then be definitely determined, it will be more prudent in the meantime to suffer some small inconvenience than to give occasion to more controversies by breaches of the peace."

It is stated that the town was willing to concede to Mr. Voorhees a patentee's right to one thirty-ninth of the commonage to the said waters, but not the existence of the right to inhibit them from freely using all other parts of the fisheries.

As the case really tendered an issue between the town and Mr. Voorhees, a requisite panel of jurors was, under the statute in such cases made and provided, summoned from Queens County. The town of Flushing, Jamaica, New Town and Oyster Bay furnished the jurors. According to the practice of the Courts at that time, the jury were directed to view the premises and examine the patents. This was done on the 14th of September, 1789, seven of the jurors being present.

On the 15th of September the trial began at a term of the Supreme Court held at Flatbush. It was closely and ably contested, occupying three whole days, resulting in a verdict for the town. Col. Burr appeared for the defendants, in whose hands "the law was a whole armory of weapons, in the use of which his daring was only equalled by his skill, his close, terse logic, and varied legal learning."

The minutes used by Col. Burr in his summing up to the jury are still in the possession of a distinguished citizen of Gravesend, together with that great lawyer's receipt for his services as counsel in the case.

"The argument of Col. Burr," says the gentleman to whom we have referred, "is a clear and forcible presentation of the rights of the town evidently satisfactory to the jury, as their verdict clearly indicates."

The following is a copy of the receipt, courteously furnished for this work by a prominent citizen of Kings County, long its careful custodian :

"Received, New York, 15th March, 1790, by the hand of Mr. Albert Terhune, Twenty pounds in full for my services in the suit brought by Albert Voorhees against sundry inhabitants of the town of Gravesend. Received at the same time, Fifteen pounds for advice given under a general retainer."

AARON BURR.

Thirty pounds, says our informant, was paid to the hotel-keeper at Flatbush, for entertaining the people of Gravesend during the trial, and also the amount of Col. Burr's bill at the said hotel for board while conducting the trial. It is proper to add that the plaintiff in the case, Mr. Voorhees, not satisfied with the verdict of the jury, took an appeal to the General Term of the Supreme Court, where, after long arguments, the verdict was affirmed with costs.

*NOTE.—See *History of Gravesend*, page 158-9, and *History of Coney Island*, page 189-191, of this volume.

A still later case, which created much excitement at the time, was the following: In the year 1834, while some laborers were excavating a ditch at the side of a highway in New Utrecht, more than a wagon-load of Indian stone arrow-heads were discovered lying together, under circumstances that induced the belief that a large manufactory of these indispensable articles of Indian warfare once existed at this place; they were of all sizes, from one to six inches in length, some perfect, others partly finished. There were also a number of blocks of the same kind of stone found, in the same rough state as when brought from the quarry. But, where was that quarry? They had the appearance of ordinary flint and were nearly as hard. Not only arrow-heads, but axes, and other articles of domestic utility, were found made from these stones.

Out of this discovery grew a legal contest, more exciting than any event that had agitated that ancient town. The men who found the relics claimed them by the right of discovery, while the owner of the land on which they were found claimed them as a part of his domain, insisting that they were his property quite as fully as were the stones and the dirt which were excavated with them. "Suppose," said the owner of the land, "that a valuable iron mine had been discovered by the men, would they have any right to it?" John Smalley, Esq., and William B. Waldo, Esq., two very respectable lawyers of Brooklyn, appeared in the case as counsel for the respective parties, the former for the plaintiff, and the latter for the defendant. The case was finally decided in favor of the owner of the soil.

The First Circuit Court, and Court of Oyer and Terminer held in the county of Kings after the organization of the Government, of which any minutes can be found, held its sittings at Flatbush on June 6th, 1800. Hon. Egbert Benson, one of the Justices of the Supreme Court, presiding. But there must have been Sessions of the Supreme Court in the county previous to this term, the minutes of which have been lost.

Judge BENSON, who presided at the Circuit Court, to which we have alluded, was one of the most illustrious jurists of his times. He rendered eminent service during the whole period of the Revolutionary War. In 1777 he was appointed Attorney-General—the first Attorney-General of the State. In that office, in the Legislature, and in Congress, his devotion to the public interest was unremitted, and in the able, constant, accurate discharge of all his official duties, he scarcely had an equal. As a lawyer he was possessed of the highest qualifications—qualifications which he carried to the Bench, where they were blended with many judicial accomplishments. He discharged the duties of Attorney-General until January 28th, 1794, when he was appointed a Justice of the Supreme Court. In January, 1802, he was appointed an Associate Justice of the United States Supreme Court, and resigned his seat on the bench of the State Supreme Court.

Judge Benson's charge to the Grand Jury, at this term of Circuit Court held by him, to which we have referred, was regarded as a model production. There was in it a prophetic glance at the future, which has been most signally fulfilled. He said: "In proportion as your County, gentlemen, increases in wealth and population; as it advances in public improvement, in education, in arts, science, commercial prosperity, which must flow from its unsurpassed resources, there will be a corresponding growth of crime—the inseparable companion of great public prosperity.

"Your County, gentlemen, over which the smoke of battlefields has but recently floated, has before it a magnificent future. Upon grand juries; upon courts of justice; upon all officers of courts, and upon all persons connected with the administration of the laws, rest solemn responsibilities, which are to tell on that future; for now is the seed time—now is the ground fallow which is to yield fruit for generations to come. See to it, then, gentlemen, that the responsibility with which the law clothes you is properly executed and directed."

The Clerk of the Court of the County at this time was Leffert Lefferts, Jr., appointed April 5th, 1800. The Sheriff was Cornelius Bergen, appointed February 17th, 1800.

The Kings County bar at this time consisted of about fifteen lawyers. For many years its growth in numbers was very slow. As late as 1836 it numbered but twenty-one members. They were James B. Clark, Richard D. Covert, George C. Dixon, John Dikeman, Theodore Eames, Gabriel Furman, Wm. A. Green, Nathan B. Morse, Henry C. Murphy, Nathaniel Porter, Alpheus P. Rolph, Gilbert Reed, Wm. Rockwell, John Smally, Cyrus P. Smith, Wm. B. Waldo, and Nathaniel F. Waring. Fisk and Bridgeman was a successful law firm at Williamsburg.

But, to return to the Circuit we have been describing. The first cause tried was that of John Van Nuys v. Peter Duryee. Peter R. Livingston, of Dutchess County, distinguished in the history of the State as a lawyer and legislator of commanding ability, appeared for the plaintiff. But, learned and sagacious as he was, a Kings County lawyer by the name of Rupp, succeeded in non-suiting him.

The last Court held at Flatbush was opened Monday, May 4th, 1832. As there was no judge present, the Sheriff, under the provisions of the Statute in such case made and provided, directed an adjournment until the next morning at 9 o'clock, when the Hon. Ogden Edwards, one of the Circuit Judges of the State, appeared and organized the Court in the usual manner, and the trial of causes commenced.

Judge Edwards was really the father of the Constitutional Convention of 1821, and one of the artisans of that instrument. In January, 1818, as member of the Assembly from the City of New York, he brought a

bill into that body for calling a State Convention for the purpose of changing the Constitution, in regard to the appointment of officers by the abominated Council of Appointment, and in other matters. The bill for a convention passed, and it commenced its sittings August 28th, 1821. Judge Edwards was one of the delegates from New York. The delegate from the County of Kings was John Lefferts.

In this Convention, which enrolled among its members a large number of the most illustrious men, Judge Edwards took an active part in forming a new Constitution; in which, among other things, the Courts and the Judiciary were reorganized, and he was, as we have seen, made one of the Circuit Judges of the reorganized Supreme Court.

The first Court held at Brooklyn held its sittings at the Apprentices Library. It was opened November 1st, 1832, Judge John Dikeman presiding. Abraham Vanderveer was clerk of the County, and *ex-officio* Clerk of the Court. John Lawrence was Sheriff, having been appointed March 15th, 1831, in place of John T. Bergen, who resigned the office of Sheriff early in March, 1831. Mr. Bergen was appointed February 12th, 1821, by the old Council of Appointment, being the last officer for Kings County appointed before it was constitutionalized out of office. In November, 1822, he was, at the first election held under the new Constitution, elected to the sheriffalty, discharging his duties with singular ability. At the general election, held in November, 1828, he was again elected to that office, serving from January 1st, 1829, to March 1st, 1831, when he resigned, having been elected in November, 1830, a representative in Congress from the then Second Congressional district, which included the County of Kings.

The Kings County bar, at this time (1883), numbers about twelve hundred members. We have already referred to the high character of this bar in the past. From an actual and pleasing acquaintance with many members of the present bar, it is no affectation to say that it loses nothing when compared with the most brilliant bar in the State.

It would be quite impossible to write a history of Kings County without some description of those whose lives are more or less interwoven with it; for it is impossible to write biography without writing the history which its subjects contributed to make. Thus, the history of the American Revolution could not be written without the biography of Washington; that of England, without a personal description of Henry Eighth, Elizabeth, Cromwell, Pitt, Fox, and Victoria; that of the Erie Canal, without a description of De Witt Clinton; the history of the Great Rebellion without the biographies of Lincoln and his compatriots.

Biographies of Deceased Members of the Kings County Bar.—Biography is history in minia-

ture, occupying, perhaps, only a brief space, yet it is more or less connected with the great drama of human life. The personal reminiscences of some may be confined almost entirely to the vale of obscurity; while those of others may be so interwoven with public affairs that it may be difficult to determine where biography ends, and where history begins.

The task of gathering the fast fading reminiscences of those who have, in the past, adorned the Bench and the Bar of this County, and whose places have been rendered vacant by death, has been one of much toil and difficulty, with a success somewhat limited. For, in this preoccupied age, the all-absorbing incidents of the present, and the intensified hopes of the future, create forgetfulness of the past.

It is, for many reasons, scarcely less difficult to arrange the incidents connected with the career of the living members of the bar for biographical purposes. The former will first occupy our attention.

We begin with one who, over half a century ago, not only adorned the bar of Kings County, but one who had no superior in the ranks of the profession in the State or Nation. This was:

JOHN WELLS, for many years the acknowledged leader of the bar of the State of New York, was born at Cherry Valley, Otsego County, N. Y., in the year 1770. His father, John Wells, was a farmer of Cherry Valley, who, with his whole family, was murdered in Brandt's descent upon that place in November, 1778. Nearly every resident of the village shared the same fate, young Wells escaping death at the hands of the savages only by a miraculous intervention of Providence.

"Cut off at this early age from the tenderest attachments of life, and, like Logan, left without one living mortal who was naturally interested in his fate, young Wells would have been either abandoned to poverty, or bent down to the ordinary drudgery of life, had it not been for an affectionate aunt, who interposed in his behalf and formed him to a higher destiny. Through her influence and aid he was placed at a Grammar School in Schenectady, where he remained several years. His aunt removed to Brooklyn, and young Wells was placed under the instruction of Rev. Mr. Cutting, of Jamaica, an accomplished scholar and an eloquent preacher. He pursued his studies diligently with Mr. Cutting two years, with such success that he was fully prepared to enter Princeton College, from whence he graduated in 1778, taking both degrees, A. B. and A. M.

Choosing the legal profession for his calling in life, he entered the office of Mr. Edward Griswold, an eminent counsellor of the city of New York, as a student at law. Mr. Griswold, after attaining a high position at the bar, retired from practice and became a resident of Hempstead, Queens County, N. Y. Col. Aaron Burr used to say of Mr. Griswold, that he was the only man he ever saw who loved the black-lettered lore of the common law for its own sake. The example alone of such a man was of great advantage to Wells."

On concluding his clerkship he was thrown upon his own resources; and these were nothing beyond his profession. His residence was in Brooklyn, but he opened an office in Pine street, New York. He was located among a large number of lawyers, who, in a measure, monopolized business; and for a long time, his prospects were discouraging. He had been in business but a short time when he was united by

marriage to Miss Mary Lawrence, daughter of Thomas Lawrence, of Newtown, Queens County, New York. To use the language of another: "If his bride did not bring him a fortune, she brought what was more important—evenness of temper, patience and fortitude, which enlightened, sustained and smoothed his passage along an obscure and rugged path to fortune and eminence; illumed the gloomy period of adverse vicissitude, and cheered his rising hopes with the smile of sympathy and affection." But so slow was Mr. Wells' progress in his profession, that between the years 1801 and 1804, he often said that he had serious thoughts of abandoning it.

About this time he began writing anonymously for the journals of the day. Such was the strength, beauty and interest of his productions, that they soon gave him flattering distinction.

Alexander Hamilton, having read some of Mr. Wells' articles, so greatly admired them that he sought out their author and personally complimented him on the genius he had displayed as an essayist. This flattering attention, from a personage so illustrious, greatly encouraged the young lawyer, and his pen became his employment and a source of income until he took his proper place at the bar. An opportunity for this was soon afforded. Mr. Cheetham, editor of the *American Citizen*, a leading Journal in New York, had been prosecuted by Mr. W. S. Smith, the son-in-law of President Adams, for a libel published in his paper. This action created great interest throughout the nation. It grew out of the heated condition of the politics of that day, involving the reputation and fortunes of several persons now illustrious in history.

"Mr. Cheetham, it is said, reasoning from the force with which Wells had wielded his pen in certain political and other articles, retained him as his counsel for the defense—not merely his counsel, but the leading counsel in the case. This was a great surprise to all of Cheetham's friends; but the result shows that he made no mistake in his selection of counsel. The cause came on for trial in the city of New York early in 1804. The prosecution was conducted by several of the ablest lawyers then at the bar. The defense of Cheetham, by his young and apparently inexperienced counsel, as has well been said, was masterly; it would have added luster to the reputation of Wirt. The result was highly favorable to his client. The damages against him were mitigated to a trifle, compared with what was confidently expected on one side and feared on the other." Nothing could exceed the surprise which this splendid—we may say triumphant defense—created in the public mind; and the young advocate at once took that high and commanding place at the bar for which his talents so admirably fitted him. From a stunted business and a few clients, whose visits had hitherto been "few and far between," he was daily retained in cases of importance and of pecuniary value to him. Not long after the trial of Smith vs. Cheetham, he was retained in an important case tried at Flatbush, in which he displayed skill, learning and eloquence that added largely to his fame. His opponent was Col. Aaron Burr, who often appeared in the Kings County Courts. After the trial Burr said, "I was aware of Mr. Wells' power and astonishing ability as a writer, but I did not think he possessed, as he really does, the genius of an Erskine as a lawyer."

We have not the space to recount the splendid professional achievements of Mr. Wells; suffice it to say that they led to his appropriate place among the great lights of the American bar; and that, for many years, his name was intimately associated with every volume of our judicial history. For a time he was a partner of that great and brilliant jurist, Josiah Ogden Hoffman, always his friend and admirer.

It is singular that, possessing so many rare gifts as a writer, orator, and legist, he never entered, to any extent, the political arena; but, like Nicholas Hill, Daniel Lord, Rufus Choate, and many other historic names of the bar, the solid honors and emoluments of his profession out-weighed the evanescent honors of the politician. His law books and cases had a decided preference with him, though they by no means excluded the pursuit of elegant literature.

Mr. Wells was regarded as a model of legal eloquence, at that period when the eloquence of the bar was so successfully cultivated. In those days, it was necessary for an able lawyer to be an eloquent speaker—not a gushing, pompous declaimer, but a chaste, polished orator, possessing logical reasoning powers. His arguments at the bar were conducted with direct and sober earnestness; so framed as to convince rather than amuse. Sometimes they were terse and condensed, at others full and illustrative.

In his person, Mr. Wells was slightly above the middle size. He bestowed greater attention upon its neatness, and his dress was more fashionable and better adjusted, than is generally deemed consistent with his habits of study and abstraction. His form was erect, solid, firm, well proportioned, and apparently fitted to endure great muscular exertion.

He loved professional labor almost to excess, and devoted himself to it with much assiduity long after he had amassed a very considerable fortune; and so he continued to work on until summoned to join the majority in the presence of Him at whose right hand there is rest ever more.

On the evening of September 23d, 1823, after a laborious day in court, he returned to his family complaining of extreme weakness and languor, for which it was difficult to account, as he had felt its approach but a few minutes. This debility increased until September 26th, though without any fears of a fatal termination; but, as the day wore away, it began to increase to an alarming extent, and, like one falling asleep, he passed away.

Thus lived and thus died one of the earliest and most illustrious members of the Kings County bar—of the bar of the State of New York.

At the time of his death, Mr. Wells was counsel for the defendant in the great case of *Seymour vs. Ellinson*, then pending in the court for the Correction of Errors of the State of New York, at Albany. The case was called for argument before that court, Gen. Erastus Root presiding, September 11th, 1823. Hon. Samuel R. Betts, then judge of the Second Circuit, and a member ex-officio of the court, announced the death of Mr. Wells, whereupon the court adjourned, and in due time appropriate and impressive honors were paid to the memory of the great departed jurist, in the Court of Errors; while large meetings of the bar assembled at many of the county seats of the State, and at other places, for the purpose of expressing sorrow at the death of a great lawyer and a good man.

GEORGE M. WOOD was one of the most eminent lawyers, not only of the Kings County Bar, but he was equally distinguished in the State of New York. As an equity lawyer he had few equals and no superior.

He was a native of Trenton, New Jersey, born in 1788. He attained a high reputation at the New Jersey bar and was considered as one of its leaders. He removed to Brooklyn in the spring of 1837, and at once began the practice that led to the highest distinction and great wealth.

His practice extended not only to the highest courts in the State, but to the United States Supreme Court. Some of the cases conducted by him in the latter court are leading

causes, and will long be remembered in legal history. Among these was that of *Martin v. Waddell* (16 Peter's, U. S. R., 376). "His argument in this case," says a distinguished writer, "is a beautiful, exhaustive and unanswerable exposition of the law on the subject of the right of the sovereign—or the State—to lands under water." It also is a fine dissertation on the subject of eminent domain, or the paramount right of the public to take and occupy the land of private individuals for easements and for other public use. The whole case is one of great interest to the legal profession. It is said, by a distinguished member of the Brooklyn bar, who knew him well, that for over half a century Mr. Wood's opinion in regard to *real-estate law* was an unquestioned oracle.

He possessed some peculiarities which deserve especial notice. He was not possessed of an imagination remarkable for vigor, splendor or fertility; seldom attempting declamation or what is known as pathos. When he did so, he always failed; but his powers of reasoning on facts and law were almost unequalled, always commanding the closest attention of his auditors. He was especially successful before Courts in Banc; his language was always simple, well chosen, and if not impressive, was the vehicle of the profoundest logic, and rendered affluent by learning. In this sense Mr. Wood was peculiarly eloquent. It must not be understood that his elocution was unpleasing; on the contrary, it was attractive and free from all superfluities. Few men ever used purer English than he. The balance of his mind; his vast research; his sound, practical, good sense, with the other attributes we have already described, gave him supremacy as an advocate.

We have referred to him as a very able equity lawyer. Chancellor Walworth, speaking of Mr. Wood, said: "He is a walking library of law. He seems formed by nature for a chancery lawyer. His arguments flow in one stream, clear and bright, but without a ripple, and he knows all there is touching his cases."

Personal rivalry created enemies for him, and envy often rendered them aggressive and troublesome. They used to say he was heavy and quiescent at the bar, resembling a cow looking over a stream. "Musing, perhaps; or perhaps dreaming."

He was once the opponent of Daniel Webster in the argument of a very important case in the Supreme Court. A few days before it came on for hearing, Webster inquired who was to conduct the case against him, and was informed that it was a lawyer by the name of Wood, a dull, drowsy man, who seems to be always asleep.

"Is it George M. Wood?" asked Mr. Webster. "Yes, that's his name."

"Well, then, pray don't awake him, for when George M. Wood is fully awake he is one of the most troublesome opponents I am in the habit of meeting," said the great constitutional lawyer.

One of the last cases which Mr. Wood conducted as counsel was that of *Cleveland v. Boerum*, in which there were at least five hundred defendants. The action was a bill in equity to redeem from a mortgage foreclosed by Henry Boerum, *et al.*, against John S. McKibben, and George D. Strong, made on eighty-eight acres of land, now in the sixteenth ward of Brooklyn, formerly the homestead farm of Jacob Boerum, deceased. Large numbers of the lots were sold by McKibben and Strong before the eighty-eight acres had been released from the foreclosed mortgage, and three hundred and ten lots were sold and conveyed and left subject to the mortgage. The bill for foreclosure was filed in February, 1842, in which Strong and McKibben and others,

their grantees, holding portions of said premises subject to the said mortgage in the *lis pendens* notice of said action, which was filed in the office of the Clerk of Kings County, March 7th, 1842. On the 16th of June, 1842, McKibben and Stone were declared bankrupts. The complaint was not amended so as to make the assignee in bankruptcy a defendant, but the plaintiff proceeded to judgment, which was entered on the 22d day of November, 1842, under which the property was sold by a Master in Chancery, and duly conveyed to a large number of purchasers. Perhaps no case ever tried in the City of Brooklyn created greater excitement than this, for it vitally affected the right and title of a large number of lot owners to their homes.

After the sale we have referred to, the assignee in bankruptcy sold and conveyed the right of McKibben to Charles Cleveland. This sale took place on the 24th day of November, 1845, and George D. Strong's interest therein was conveyed, by two deeds, to John D. Clute, March 4th, 1846. Clute conveyed his title to Cleveland. Here, then, were two sets of claimants to the title of the original Boerum homestead farm; the first claiming title by the foreclosure of the mortgage we have described, and otherwise; the other through the sale of the premises, which was subsequently made by the assignee in bankruptcy.

It was contended that the assignee in bankruptcy conveyed the property more than two years after McKibben and Strong were declared bankrupts, and that the bankrupt law then in existence, restricted the assignee's jurisdiction to an order of court to be executed within two years from the date of the bankruptcy; hence, if the assignee was not concluded by the *lis-pendens* filed before the making of his deeds, his jurisdiction was gone, and no title passed to his grantees, Cleveland and others. Thus more than two years had passed after the foreclosure sale before Cleveland commenced his suit to have his title made paramount to that of the purchasers by the foreclosure we have described. Mr. Wood appeared for Cleveland in the case, and several other lawyers for the defendants. The only point made by Mr. Wood was that the notice of *lis-pendens* did not bind the trustee on whom the title to the land was cast during litigation by operation of law; or, in other words, *lis-pendens* did not, in any way, stop Cleveland from enforcing his title acquired through the assignee in bankruptcy.

The answer to the complaint of Cleveland contained the averment that "The right of eminent domain in the State of New York is vested in the *people* of said State, and is not subject to any jurisdiction under judgment of United States Court, save such as is allowed by the State laws, and that all such decrees and judgments follow the remedies prescribed by State laws, as in respect to the State courts, or as is specially set forth in State laws, with respect to the judgments of the courts of the United States; and that the provisions for a notice of *lis-pendens* to be filed in any State or federal proceedings with respect to land is binding on intervening incumbrances pending the litigation, whether the title be cast by deed by purchaser or a trustee; or, what is the same thing, an assignee by operation of law."

The doubts as to the title of so many supposed owners of portions of the Boerum farm rendered a speedy trial of this case, and all dilatory pleas, such as defect of parties, were waived, and it went to immediate trial before Mr. Justice Strong, who decided the case in favor of the defendants. But the case was appealed by Cleveland to the General Term of the Supreme Court, where the case was argued for him by Mr. Wood.

It has been said that Mr. Wood, great and learned as he was as a lawyer, appeared to much disadvantage in the argu-

ment of the case; that his ability and power of condensation, logical aptitude, quick, ready discernment and legal eloquence, had apparently deserted him, and that he had survived his generation. He appeared, himself, to comprehend all this, for he never again appeared in court after the termination of this great case.

By the decision of the General Term, Cleveland was again beaten; he removed the case to the Court of Appeals, where the same fate awaited him. The case will be found fully printed in 24th New York, 618.

Mr. Wood came to Brooklyn poor; but as we have said, through his immense practice he acquired a very large fortune. At the time of his death he was the owner of forty-three houses and lots in Brooklyn, all of them very valuable; besides a large amount of money, stocks, bonds and mortgages, and other securities. He died at his residence, in Brooklyn, in 1861, in the 73d year of his age.

GABRIEL FURMAN.—Among the members of the senior bar of Brooklyn whose memory comes to us from the past, associated with much that forms the history of Kings county—that relates to the triumphs and vicissitudes of professional life—much that concerns the amenities of social life, and much that awakens in our hearts sorrow and regret, is that of Gabriel Furman. He was born at Brooklyn, in 1800; his father was HON. WM. FURMAN, of whom a brief biographical note will be found on page 108 of the present volume, as also on page 41 of *Stiles' History of Brooklyn*. He was succeeded as Judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Kings county by Hon. Leffert Lefferts. It is said that Judge Furman was bred to law, and there is some evidence of his having been for a time actively engaged in the practice of his profession. He was a man of finished education; strong, practical, good sense. Paramount traits in his character were love of justice, perfect integrity, impartiality and a close perception of human nature. It will therefore be seen, he possessed the qualities of a useful and upright Judge; his popularity with the bar, and the high esteem in which he was held by the public, plainly attest his character as a Judge and as a private citizen. He represented Brooklyn on the Board of Kings County Supervisors for several successive years. In the fall of 1825 he was elected member of Assembly from Kings county, entering upon his legislative duties January 3d, 1826. That illustrious statesman, Samuel Young, was speaker; the peculiarities of Mr. Young as a legislator have become matters of history. He was in every sense unlike Judge Furman, and yet, there always existed a warm friendship between these gentlemen; there is one fact which attests this in a strong manner; he was appointed by Mr. Young Chairman of the Judiciary Committee, and second on the Committee of Ways and Means.

Judge Furman was President of the Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company, incorporated in 1824. There was scarcely any public improvement touching the welfare of the then village of Brooklyn that Judge Furman was not more or less identified with. He was a lifelong, undeviating friend of De Witt Clinton, strongly sustaining him in that great policy that inaugurated and constructed the Erie Canal.

The legislative session of 1826 was one of the most exciting and important in the history of the State. The four-cornered presidential conflict between General Jackson, Mr. Adams, Mr. Crawford and Mr. Clay, culminated that year. It entered largely into the Legislature of the State, leading to frequent collisions. In these Judge Furman largely participated. On the whole he was one of the most active and influential members of that session. He was tendered the

re-nomination the next year, but declined. Among his associates in the Assembly, whose names have passed into the history of the State, were Ogden Hoffman, then a resident of Orange County; Francis Granger, from Ontario; John Tracy, from Chenango, and Erastus Root, of Delaware. After retiring from the Legislature Judge Furman retired entirely to private life, a highly esteemed citizen, influential and active in all that concerned the interest and advancement of the society in which he moved.

Such was the father of Gabriel Furman; such was the influence which surrounded his youth and early manhood, and which gave promise of a brilliant and useful career in his life. In his boyhood he was attracted to the Court-house where his father, as presiding Judge, pronounced the law from the bench. The contests of the bar were full of interest to the lad. There he heard the mysteries of persuasive speech, witnessed the quick insight, the tact and ingenuity of opposing counsel, until the desire to become a lawyer took possession of his whole soul. Accordingly, as soon as he completed his classical studies, he entered the office of Elisha W. King, Esq., a leading member of the New York bar, as a law student. This was in 1823; he soon became a favorite of Mr. King, who took especial pains with his legal education, explaining to the young man that part of the "Black letter law" which, without explanation, is to the student a sort of legal labyrinth, which he is quite unable to explore with any profit. This enabled young Furman to go to the bar well prepared to enter successfully upon his practice.

He took his legal degree at a general term of the Supreme Court in May, 1826. "From his father's social position and large acquaintance with the bar, young Furman secured to a large extent the confidence of the Dutch families, and of the old residents of that day, and a brilliant professional future seemed opening before him."

In 1820, while yet a student, he, with several young gentlemen of Brooklyn, organized a debating society, which became a very popular institution. Often, when some especially exciting subject was to be discussed, the hall in which the society held its meetings was thronged with the elite of the village, anxious to listen to the young and brilliant debaters, foremost among whom was young Furman. It is said, that in this intellectual arena, he displayed an argumentative and classic mind, a prodigality of knowledge, and an attractive elocution quite beyond his years. So prominent did he become as a speaker; that, at the great celebration which took place at Brooklyn on July 4th, 1824, he was selected as the orator of the day. His oration was pronounced at the Dutch Church, in Joralemon street, before an immense and delighted audience.

The friendship which Gov. Clinton had for the father was bestowed with equal warmth upon his son. Early in the year 1827, the Municipal Court of Brooklyn was established, and Furman, who had been at the bar but a little over a year, was appointed, by Governor Clinton, one of its judges. He discharged the duties of this office for the term of three years.

At the general election of 1838, Mr. Furman was nominated and elected a State Senator from the first district; in this body he did not disappoint the high expectation of his friends. He exhibited all the qualities of a useful, high-minded and competent legislator. Peter R. Livingston was then Lieutenant-Governor, and, of course, the presiding officer of the Senate, and an accomplished parliamentarian; his appreciation of Mr. Furman's abilities is attested by many official recognitions, and by placing him upon many standing committees. The records of the Senate, for the four years in which Mr. Furman was one of its members,

are the best evidence of the usefulness of his legislative career. Several of his speeches delivered in the Senate were warmly commended by the press in all parts of the State for their statesmanlike strength, their originality and eloquence.

In 1841, he prepared two lectures on the *discoveries of the Northmen*, and on *Aboriginal Remains in America*. These lectures were written in a happy, nervous and attractive style, and were fine specimens of condensed learning and beauty of diction. They were delivered first in Brooklyn, afterwards in New York, Albany, Utica, and several other cities.

In 1842, his prominence in the Whig party led to his nomination for Lieut.-Governor of the State; this nomination was made at a Whig State convention, held at Herkimer, in September, 1842. Luther Bradish received the nomination for Governor. But the Whig party was defeated. William C. Bouck and Daniel S. Dickinson, the Democratic nominees for Governor and Lieut.-Governor, were elected. This, we believe, was the last time that Mr. Furman was a candidate for any official position. There was nothing in his defeat, however, that was at all discouraging. He fell with his party, retaining all his personal popularity with it; but, from the period of his defeat, there seemed to be an unfortunate change in all his prospects.

"He began," says Dr. STILES, in his admirable *History of Brooklyn*, "to manifest irregularities and infirmities, which pained and astonished his friends, and which, no doubt, had their source in the use of opium, which he had begun to use in very small quantities during the cholera summer of 1852. Without going into detail, we may say that all personal ambition seems to have died out; his law business became sadly neglected. Always retiring and secluded in his habits, he gradually became unsocial, buried himself among his books and manuscripts, or hid himself in out of the way nooks and corners, where the eyes of even his one or two intimate friends could not find him. Friends and clients, of course, became estranged; business fell away; public opinion—ever uncharitable to what it cannot understand—said harsh things about the erratic scholar, whose ways were past finding out, and whose inattention to his business was not only annoying to his clients, but imperiling to their interests. Finally, his mood became more reckless, his property passed away, his family were left without the protection of a roof, his sister and aged father were left helpless and dependent upon others, his much-loved books passed under the sheriff's hammer, and his own misused life went out amid clouds and darkness, November 11, 1854, in the City Hospital."

"Yet Furman was, in no sense, a vicious man. The pernicious influence of the lethean drug, combined with an *overweening love of study for its own sake*, seemed to have benumbed his sense of duty and of responsibility to the community, to his family, and to himself; and in the grateful seclusion of his study, he became selfishly forgetful of all outside realities. What this feeling was, we may, perhaps, best learn from the following extracts from his manuscript memoranda, in early life:

'As to politics and contest for office, they are entirely dissimilar to my habits of feeling and very unpleasant, and nothing but an imperious sense of duty to my country would ever induce me to enter at all into them, or to have any sort of connection with them. My wish would be, if possible to be attained, to pass my life as a literary man, and a humble inquirer into the history of my country; never to mingle in political life; never to hold an office of any kind, but quietly to while away my time among my books and papers; and when it pleased the Almighty Disposer of all events to call

me hence, to lay my head upon the pillow of death in peace with all men. There is nothing on earth to compare, in the least degree, with the joy and comfort which attends literary research; with the inward satisfaction which results from a day thus spent. It strikes me that a man truly literary can never be immoral.'

Again, in speaking of the love of books:

'It is a passion which gains strength by what it feeds on, and affords an unalloyed pleasure, far, very far, transcendently far, beyond what can be afforded by any other pursuit in this life. It also renders a man, to a great extent, independent of the world for his happiness and enjoyments. Society with its pleasures is not with him, as it is with thousands, everything. He has another world, unaffected by toils and troubles, in which there are no storms nor tempests, but everything is peace, calm and sunshine; an eternal spring and summer, having at once the promise and the fruition.'

"These sentiments," continues Dr. STILES, "bespeak the enthusiastic and pure-minded scholar; but, alas, as we have seen, the promise of his springtime and summer never reached its full fruition. Yet there remains enough of the results of his labor to make us thankful that he once lived among us. In the library of the Long Island Historical Society is a little row of bound volumes of manuscript, fairly transcribed in his own clerkly chirography, and comprising almost every conceivable topic of curiosity, or inquiry, from the most scientific to the most absurd and trivial, all thrown together without order in a perfect chance-medley. Yet, amid this mighty mass of miscellaneous matter, which curiously illustrates the scope and composition of his mind, Furman, fortunately for us, carefully jotted down all that occurred to his observation in the elementary condition and progress of his native city. In the well-chosen words of one of his most intimate earlier friends, to whom we are indebted for most that is known about him, 'his mind early turned towards its characters, traditions, revolutionary reminiscences, and the facts of its earlier settlement and population, agriculture and trade. He seemed to have an intuitive and prophetic sagacity as to the importance of describing, recording and fixing the dates of many things of his own time, which could change with progress and be forgotten. The minuteness of some of these details may look like folly and simplicity, but still the better critics will admit that they go to make up his reputation as an antiquarian of the best character, who knew that these details would be the very things that posterity would delight in. Already, in the rapid march of population for the past thirty years, since Brooklyn assumed the character of a city, the old buildings and landmarks have been swept away, and, but for Judge Furman's 'Notes,' published in 1824, it would be well-nigh impossible for us to trace the beginnings of our 'goodly heritage.' In person, Furman was of middle height, well formed, with fine, high forehead, and Roman features, strongly resembling the best portraits of Pascal, the eminent French philosopher and Christian. He was always neatly dressed, generally in frock-coat of dark greenish hue, with light pantaloons and vest, shoes with spatterdashes, and a black fur hat, turned up at the side and carefully brushed. His necktie, a little gay and ornamental, added grace to his otherwise somewhat quaint and trim attire; and his *tout-ensemble* was that of the polished gentleman, and suggestive, also, of a scholar and antiquary."

GRENVILLE TUDOR JENKS, an honored name in the legal history of Kings County, was born at Boston, Mass., July 24, 1830. His father was Rev. Francis Jenks, a highly respectable clergyman, who died when Grenville was two years old.

His mother, Sarah H. Jenks, was a woman of strong common sense, possessed of all the accomplishments that adorn the character of a wife and mother. Two years after his father's death, she married Professor Alonzo Gray, principal of the Dover Academy, Mass., under whose instruction young Grenville acquired his elementary education, and by whom he was fitted for college.

In July, 1847, he entered the New York University, where he remained some time and then became a student in Williams College. Like many who have distinguished themselves at the bar and in all the learned professions, young Jenks became for a time a common-school teacher. The benefits derived from this occupation are of great value to a young man. It gives his mind peculiar and salutary discipline, especially in the art of self-government and the government of others. But it requires a peculiarity of thought, expression and temperament. It is said that Jenks possessed many qualifications that rendered him a successful teacher, but as he intended to adopt the legal profession for his future occupation in life, he renounced the business of an instructor, and commenced the study of law. He became a student in the office of the distinguished law firm of Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt, in Brooklyn, N. Y. Afterwards, he entered the office of those eminent lawyers, Storrs & Sedgwick, in New York. From this office he was, in the spring of 1851, called to the bar.

Opening an office in the City of New York, he entered laboriously into the practice of his profession. His industry, his learning (for he was deeply read in all the erudition of his profession), his talents, soon brought a sure reward. Few young lawyers leap, Pallas-like, into full professional honors and emoluments. Of that few, Grenville T. Jenks was one. At first the older members of the bar wholly occupied the circle to which his ambition aimed, but he rapidly approached it, and though his career at the bar was terminated by an early death, he attained a brilliant distinction which, as we have already said, made his name honored in the annals of the bar.

After practising alone some time he formed a copartnership with Hon. James Emott, and for a time he was a partner of Joshua Van Cott and Calvin E. Pratt. This last partnership was formed after he came to Brooklyn. Dissolving his relations with Judge Pratt, he formed a copartnership with Frederick A. Ward. His business connection with the distinguished lawyers we have named were pleasant and profitable. All of them recognized in Mr. Jenks a mind of singular versatility and power. All acknowledged the supremacy of his eloquence and those other rare accomplishments that rendered him so powerful in the legal arena, so attractive, estimable, and, may we not say, without affectation, fascinating as a friend and companion?

The personal reminiscences of the mere lawyer have few charms to captivate the popular mind, even though he may to some extent control events; like him who moves the ever shifting panorama of the stage, he is lost amid the very events he creates. But a nearer view of Mr. Jenks as a lawyer, and of the endowments that gave him superiority, cannot fail to be profitable and interesting; for this reason the history of his bright career belongs to the public.

To use the beautiful language of one of his highly distinguished law partners, Hon. Joshua Van Cott; "Everything about Mr. Jenks had unusual bulk, magnitude, manifestation of vitality and force. He was a character, if we ever had such a character at our bar, that was original, unique, apart by itself, and memorable for its intense individuality and personality. He was fortunate in the kindness of his nature, fortunate in the gifts of great constitutional

vigor, fortunate in the endowment of prodigious memory and powers of analysis and comprehension united in the same large measure. He was also fortunate in the associations of his early life, in the distinction of kindred, in his academical and collegiate education. And so, with such endowments and such preparation, he came to the contests of the bar. But considerable time passed before he became conspicuous in the trial of causes. Beneath his dominating force of character there was a latent modesty which made him distant himself, until use and familiarity rendered him willing to assume the great responsibilities of counsel before juries. I remember the first occasion in which he had a gleam of consciousness of his great forensic powers. In the division of labor between himself and his law partner, his senior took upon himself the trial of their causes. He had been taking notes of the testimony in an important case—trial being conducted by his senior. A sudden emergency called his associate from the city, and the conclusion of the trial devolved upon Mr. Jenks."

"The court adjourned for the day. The next morning, at the usual hour for business, all the counsel associated with the trial were in their places except the partner of Mr. Jenks. When that gentleman proposed to proceed with the case, the Judge, with an air of surprise that he should presume to conduct an important case alone, and ignorant that the leader had been called from the city, told him he had better wait until his associate should arrive. After waiting half an hour, the Judge, in an impatient manner, asked him when he expected his associate, and was quietly told he did not expect him at all. 'Go on, sir, go on; the court can wait no longer,' said his honor."

"Mr. Jenks did go on, and with such skill in the examination of witnesses, and with such demonstrative power in summing up to the jury, that no court ever after thought of inquiring whether he had associate counsel or was to fight the cause alone. From that day the junior became the senior in the trial of the causes of his firm."

To the trial of every cause he brought a careful, independent, pungent, keen discrimination, a quick and ready use of legal learning. Wit, ridicule and invective he employed as circumstances required. He analyzed and dissipated an adverse argument with clearness and vigor.

That such a man should have supremacy at the bar—supremacy wherever eloquence and intellectuality are admired—is not strange; nor is it strange, that with other attractive endowments, he should be, as he was often called, the favorite of the bar. He was familiar with the whole range of English literature, and with ancient and modern history. This wide and varied circle of reading not only gave a liberal expansion to his mind, in all directions, but it endowed him with great wealth of choice but unstudied language, and enabled him to command a richness of illustration in elucidating whatever subject he was considering. This taste for reading was formed in early life.

"Mr. Jenks on the most exciting occasions could be cool and free from irrepressible restlessness; but it was the calm of high resolve, persistent and tenacious in its triumph over passion and sentiment. He was nevertheless susceptible to the gentle influences; a most genial companion, gentle, tender, and affectionate in his family—had delight in the elegant arts—sculpture, painting, and poetry."

We have spoken of his talents and virtues—should we speak of his faults? for he was mortal and had faults, perhaps many, and shared in the common infirmities of our nature; or, shall we observe the charitable maxim "*nisi mortuis nisi bonum*?" to say nothing of the dead except that which is good.

Error and frailty mark the life of man. If this were not so, earth would be heaven; for, what could add to the happiness of life free from error? Therefore, whatever of error and frailty belonged to Mr. Jenks, took their color from common humanity.

In the midst of his brilliant career, at a comparatively early age in life, Mr. Jenks was removed from earth by the hand of death. He died at Saratoga on the 14th day of August, 1870, aged forty years. The unusual demonstrations of sorrow that followed the announcement of his death, not only in Brooklyn and New York, but in many other places, attested the high esteem in which he was held.

The moment his death was made known at Saratoga, a large meeting of the Brooklyn sojourners at that famous resort took place at Congress Hall. Very many of the well known citizens of Brooklyn were in attendance. Appropriate resolutions were adopted, which feelingly and touchingly memorialized him as a man and a lawyer. On the evening of August 15th, the Brooklyn Club, of which he was a member, assembled at the rooms of the club, where resolutions of respect for his memory and sorrow for his death were adopted.

All the courts in session in the city immediately adjourned on the announcement of his death. The ablest and most distinguished members of the bar pronounced heartfelt and appropriate eulogies to his memory, talents and worth. In the Supreme Court, then in session in the city of New York, the death of Mr. Jenks was announced in language fitted to the occasion. At the conclusion of the announcement, the court in respect to his memory adjourned. His death was also announced in the Westchester County Court, after which that tribunal adjourned in respect to the eloquent departed. It is sometimes said that the maxim, "*nil mortuis nisi verum*" may be applied to the proceedings of lawyers on such occasions, but let us see how Mr. Jenks was regarded by one of the most distinguished divines of the day—Henry Ward Beecher—who officiated at his funeral. He said:

"I only speak of Mr. Jenks as one friend might speak of another. Born with gifts that were not small, cultured in every faculty, surrounded by friends, a member of a profession always known as intellectual, he had, in our midst, developed into a ripe manhood, and had discharged the duties of his profession in such a way as to win both fame and admiration, and what is not easily won, great love and trust. Perhaps I may say that not many are trusted as he was, and there are none who were loved more than he, for he had this gift more especially—it could not be accident or device—there was that in his nature which produced confidence and personal affection. He was an upright, honest, man; faithful in the discharge of his duties with more than ordinary faithfulness, more especially in speaking for those who had nothing with which to pay him, he labored for them without money and without price. So he drew around him the admiration, the trust, the gratitude of the multitude, who learned to love the generous advocate who spared not himself in their cause."

JOHN A. LOTT.—Englebert Lott emigrated from Holland and settled in New York in 1680. Two years later he removed to Flatbush, Kings County, where he spent the remainder of his life. He is represented as a man of strong native intellect, fair education, energetic, enterprising, and of an unsullied reputation; he died at an advanced age, a highly esteemed citizen. His descendants, numerous and honorable, are well known in the history of Kings County; prominent among them was John A. Lott, whose career we are now to trace. He was born at Flatbush in 1805. He was the only son of Abraham and Maria Lott, of that town. His elemen-

tary education was obtained in the schools of that place, and after a thorough academic course he was admitted to Union College. A fertile intellect, retentive memory, devotion to his studies, and a scholastic ambition, enabled him to graduate with high honors; he took his degree in 1825, at the age of twenty years. Having chosen the legal profession for his avocation in life, he entered the office of Henry E. Warner, Esq., a respectable lawyer of the New York City bar; here a course of three years' study prepared him for a practicing lawyer. Mr. Lott immediately opened an office in New York; his talents were happily adapted to his profession, and soon secured him a respectable and remunerative clientele.

While practicing in New York he made the acquaintance of the eminent lawyer, legislator and large minded citizen, Hon. Henry C. Murphy, whose life and career form an important and interesting part of Kings County, which will appear in another chapter. This acquaintance ripened into a fortunate and pleasing friendship.

Early in 1835, Mr. Lott became a law partner with Mr. Murphy, removing to Brooklyn.

The next year Judge Vanderbilt entered the office as a partner—the firm thereafter being known under the name and style of Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt. This became not only a leading but highly distinguished law firm, uniting in it such versatility of talent and legal accomplishments that it soon gained a State reputation. It existed for over twenty years, with undiminished popularity and success. At length, Mr. Murphy received the appointment of United States Minister to the Hague. After this the firm was known as Lott & Vanderbilt. This relation continued down to 1857, when Mr. Lott was elected Justice of the Supreme Court of the State for a term of four years. Judge Lott devoted himself with untiring industry to his profession. To him jurisprudence was a science that delighted his polemical mind, he studied it with avidity and pleasure, and the student was never lost in the practising lawyer. His deep reading was exhibited in his legal arguments and opinions, rendering his briefs, and all his legal productions, beautiful specimens of legal logic and learning. Few lawyers ever applied themselves to the duties of the profession more devotedly than Mr. Lott. In the contests of the bar he was occasionally defeated, but he never lost a cause by inattention or neglect. His advocacy of whatever case he espoused was able and effective. As his examinations of them were exhaustive, he rested firmly upon the result of his conclusions concerning them, and he never willingly relinquished their vindication until the final and authoritative judgments of the courts were pronounced upon them. In July, 1878, Vanderbilt died, and after his death Judge Lott continued his practice alone. Like most lawyers, Mr. Lott entered ardently into politics, but never to the neglect of his profession. His political career, though long and distinguished, is so intimately connected with the history of those party dissensions—still so freshly remembered—that to enter into a consideration of them would be a work of supererogation. It is sufficient to say that he early allied himself to the Democratic party, and was long regarded as one of its effective leaders in the State and nation.

Notwithstanding his somewhat harsh and aggressive manner, the frankness of his nature, the ease with which he was approached, his broad and ready sympathy, rendered him always popular with the masses, whether in office or out. Another reason for his popularity was his deep sincerity, his honest belief in his political principles; always meaning what he said, and saying what he meant.

He was never, in any sense of the word, a demagogue, and when placed in comparison with those simulators of patriotism

—politicians of expediency and intrigue, approaching the people with artifice, and addressing them in the ambiguous language of a trimmer—his character shone with peculiar luster.

On April 13, 1838, John A. Lott was appointed by Governor Marcy, First Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, of Kings County. This was the first office of any importance which he ever held. As the Court of Common Pleas in those days was nearly equal in dignity and importance to the Circuit Courts, the office of First Judge of the former court demanded of its incumbents learning and judicial ability equal to that of the Justices of the Supreme Court. These qualities Judge Lott carried to the bench in an eminent degree. He occupied the bench of the Common Pleas until January 27, 1843, when he was succeeded by that honored jurist and highly esteemed citizen of Brooklyn, Hon. John Greenwood. In the Autumn of 1841, Mr. Lott, while discharging his judicial duties, was elected member of Assembly from Kings County. His colleague was Wm. L. Udall. He took his seat in the Assembly, January 4, 1842. Levi S. Chatfield was Speaker of the House. Between this accomplished parliamentarian and Judge Lott there existed a warm friendship; the former, holding Judge Lott in the highest esteem for his abilities as a jurist and excellent qualities as a man, gave him the second place on the Committee of Ways and Means, and made him chairman of the Judiciary Committee.

The Legislature of 1842 is remembered for the large number of its members distinguished in the history of the State, and for the importance of the legislative business it disposed of. Among the historic names which appear upon the records of the Assembly of that year are those of Horatio Seymour, Sanford E. Church, John A. Dix, John A. Lott, Michael Hoffman, Levi S. Chatfield and Samuel G. Hathaway, Jr. Among the eminent members of the Senate were Erastus Corning, Gabriel Furman and Andrew B. Dickinson.

Mr. Furman was a citizen of Brooklyn, long and favorably known in its history. He represented the First Senatorial District of the State, then consisting of the counties of Kings, Richmond and New York, from January 1, 1839, to December 31, 1842, with marked ability. Senator Furman's successor in the Senate was Judge Lott, who in the Autumn of 1842 was elected Senator from the First District for its sixty-sixth session. He entered upon his senatorial duties January 3, 1843. Daniel S. Dickinson, subsequently a distinguished senator in Congress, was Lieutenant Governor, and President of the Senate. The Democrats were largely in the majority in both branches of the Legislature that year, and John A. Lott was the acknowledged leader of that party. Lieutenant Governor Dickinson exhibited his appreciation of him as a legislator, by making him the chairman of the Ways and Means, and other important committees.

The statesmanlike abilities with which Judge Lott discharged all his senatorial duties were generally recognized, rendering him, as we have already said, the leader of his party. His capacity for administration appears in all his senatorial career, proving indubitably that he possessed the qualities of a legislator in no secondary degree. He was invaluable in the committee and on the floor of the Senate. Strength of conviction, strength of purpose, strength of method, strength of logic and of statement were endowments with which he was liberally furnished, and he has left their impress not only on the records of the Senate, but in the history of all his official life. And we may well say that the history of Kings County will never lose the impress of his characteristics. He sought no felicity of phraseology, except a direct, square expression of his meaning; he had little taste for the lighter graces of rhetoric; quite abominated grandilo-

quence and legislative pyrotechnics; but of that manly, unaffected speech, thoroughly in earnest to enforce conviction upon the hearer, he was a master. In regard to eloquence he coincided with Bolingbroke, who said: "Eloquence must flow like a stream that is fed by an abundant spring, and not spout forth a frothy stream on some gaudy day, remaining dry for the rest of the year."

There was much in the personal appearance of Judge Lott that enforced respect and attention. In stature he was tall, well formed and commanding; his countenance, if not attractive at first, soon became as eloquent as his language. His career in the Senate contributed much to evolve the latent powers of his mind, roused and elevated by the collision with powerful talents, and the ardent investigation of important questions; these were examined by him with a most laborious application, revolved again and again with ardent and unremitted meditation.

It was almost impossible to divert his attention toward any other object before he had thoroughly formed his conclusions on the subjects which thus engaged his attention. When he had once definitely made up his opinion, after this mature and impartial examination, he was so immovably firm in his purpose that he was often thought somewhat strenuous and uncompromising in support of them, but the purity of his motives was never doubted.

In February, 1839, a bill providing for a cheaper publication of the reports of the State courts was introduced into the Senate, eliciting an animated debate. Judge Lott favored the bill in a brief but characteristic speech, in which he said: "I am strongly in favor of cheap law and cheap law-books. I think it quite as important that a knowledge of law should be brought within the reach of the people as the knowledge of any other science—for law, as has well been said, 'is the rule of human action.' We have read of the Roman Emperor who caused his code to be written in fine letters on tablets, placed on towers so high that none could read it. Those who favor the other side of this question, do indirectly what that Emperor did. Sir, I do not desire to emulate him in any degree. I cordially indorse the language of a great English law reformer who said: It was the boast of Augustus—it formed a part of the glare in which the perfidies of his early years were lost—that he found Rome built of brick and left it marble; but how much more noble will be the Sovereign's boast when he shall have it to say that he found law dear and left it cheap; found it a sealed book, left it a living letter; found it the patrimony of the rich, left it the inheritance of the poor; found it the two edged sword of tyranny and oppression, and left it the staff of honesty and the shield of innocence." This bill passed the Senate, but was lost in the Assembly.

Judge Lott's senatorial term ended December 31, 1846, and he retired once more to private life and the duties of his profession. So useful was he to the Democratic party that he still retained his position in it as one of its leaders, whose voice and influence was potent in its council and in directing its campaigns. Official positions of high grade were frequently tendered him, but he preferred the solid honors of his profession to the ephemeral glamor of official distinction. In 1857, however, he was once more called upon to assume judicial robes. With some reluctance he accepted the nomination from his party, of Justice of the Supreme Court, for a four years' term. He was elected by a large majority, and entered upon his judicial duties January 1, 1858.

As a judge at Nisi Prius, or the Circuit, Judge Lott's mind seemed to be singularly adapted to the disentangling of complex questions of law and fact, and to the attainment of sure and satisfactory conclusions; quite as much by the exercise

of penetrating common sense as by the rules of logic and the subtlety of law. It is not denied that his manner of presiding at the circuits subjected him to some criticism, founded more upon some asperity and harshness of manner than anything else. Still, with a large majority of the bar, he was highly popular. He brought to the bench a drastic, physical and mental strength that enabled him to endure the most ardent and wearing judicial labors. The large number of opinions written by him when a Judge of the Supreme Court, and Judge of the Court of Appeals, exhibit the amount and extent of his labors, his abilities as a judge, and his accomplishments as a writer.

In December, 1862, his judicial term expired. In 1869 Judge Lott was elected an Associate Justice of the Court of Appeals. Hon. John K. Porter had been appointed a justice of that court January 2, 1865, to fill the vacancy made by the resignation of Hon. Henry R. Selden. After holding the office a little over a year, Judge Porter, greatly to the regret of the bar and his brethren of the bench, resigned; and Hon. Lewis B. Woodruff was appointed in his place, and served till the next ensuing election, when Judge Lott was elected in his place. Having served out his term, he was appointed by the governor a judge of the Commission of Appeals, and was made Chief Commissioner, or Chief Justice. He entered on the duties of his office July 5, 1870, serving until December 31, 1875, when the commission expired.

This commission was created to relieve the Court of Appeals from the immense pressure of business which had been accumulating for a long time, emphatically delaying the adjudication of cases in it to an extent ruinous to the interests of suitors. How ardently successful, and with what learning and acumen this commission discharged its duties, is known not only to the legal profession, but to the business world. Its decisions and written opinions have enriched the learning of the American bar.

After Judge Lott retired from this commission, he never again held any office; but in such high repute was his judicial ability held by the bar, that he was often selected as referee to hear and determine important cases. One of these cases—the last one he ever heard—was that of *Kingsley & Keeney vs. The City of Brooklyn*; a case too well remembered to need any description here.

Judge Lott was distinguished for his public spirit and enterprise. Many public and private institutions, many of the improvements tending to the wealth and aggrandizement of Kings County, owe their origin, in a considerable degree, to him. Down to a short time before his death, he was constantly engaged in some public enterprise, among which were the Brighton Beach Hotel and Railroad. The happy and effective speech he made on the opening of that hotel is remembered as being made on the occasion of his last appearance in public before his death. He was for many years president of the St. Nicholas Society, and, it is said, never absent from its annual dinners.

Judge Lott enjoyed nearly a half century of married happiness, in a home presided over by a woman peculiarly qualified to adorn and brighten the life of her husband. She was his cousin, a daughter of Jeremiah Lott, a prominent character in the history of Kings County. Five children were born of this marriage—three sons and two daughters. It was said that he was misunderstood by the people of Brooklyn, some of whom regarded him as a bluff, harsh man, dealing little with the pleasantries and amenities of society; but this was doubtless a mannerism and not a characteristic, for, though he did not strive to seek popularity by the fawning of a sycophant, though he was somewhat reserved in private life, shrinking instinctively from general acquaintance and

notoriety in the crowd, in the social circles in which he appeared he was an interesting and welcome guest. Those who knew him best found it difficult to understand how he could be regarded as cold, selfish and rough. Whatever sternness there was in his character, whatever of roughness in his demeanor, whatever apparent irritability in his temper, lay only on the surface of his character, disappearing in the presence of his friends, unknown in his home life, where his kindness and affection were inexhaustible.

He was sometimes called "ugly;" but, as Chauncey Shaffer used to say of him: "There is a flavor in Judge Lott's ugliness that I like. It comes from an honest heart, and never savors of hypocrisy."

To use the language of the *Brooklyn Eagle* concerning John A. Lott as a judge: "He regarded the members of the bar as the friends of the court, and he had no respect for those who brought discredit upon it by sharp practice, trickery and fraud; indeed, he could hardly disguise his hatred of such men, and his manner of exhibiting it was, perhaps, one of his faults as a judge." To such lawyers he was, indeed, as ugly as the ugliest. Usually, he was courteous, dignified and patient to lawyers practising before him. Like all positive, successful men, he had his faults and made enemies. But it must be remembered that men who possess his characteristics, while they have enemies, will never be without strong and powerful friends. Society has little respect for a man who has not enough character to make enemies, for he has not enough to make friends who will stand by him in the collisions and vicissitudes of life.

Judge Lott died suddenly, at Flatbush, July 20, 1878. He had been complaining of indisposition, and called Dr. Zabriskie, who after a short consultation left him, regarding his symptoms as entirely favorable, indicative only of slight illness. When the doctor left he retired to his bath-room, where his lifeless remains were soon discovered.

The sensation which the sudden death of such a man produced may be easily imagined. As was said by an eminent writer, touching the death of Sir Robert Peel: "The falling of the column revealed the extent of the space it had occupied."

WILLIAM ROCKWELL.—For thirty years no name was more conspicuous in the legal history of Kings County than that of William Rockwell. He began his practice as a lawyer when the entire Bar of Kings County did not number over twenty practising attorneys; he was, therefore, almost one of the architects of that Bar, leaving on its history the evidence of his high intellectual endowments, his skill and success as a lawyer, his rare accomplishments as a judge.

Mr. Rockwell was born at Canaan, Conn., January 4, 1802. His father was Dr. William A. Rockwell, of Canaan, a man of commanding talents and of extraordinary learning; he served as Assistant Surgeon-General during the Revolutionary War, and afterwards was the author of several works on surgery, justly and highly commended for their ability, research and attractive style. He was for many years at the head of the medical profession in Connecticut.

At the early age of sixteen young Rockwell entered Yale College, from whence he graduated at the age of nineteen. As he had decided upon the legal profession as his occupation for life, immediately after graduating he entered the office of Hon. Seth P. Staples, a leading member of the Connecticut Bar, and a prominent legislator; he remained with Mr. Staples until after his call to the bar, as an assistant. In April, 1827, Mr. Rockwell became a resident of Brooklyn, and a law-partner of Hon. Nathan B. Morse. The firm of Morse & Rockwell controlled a very large business,

and was regarded as eminently successful and influential; both members of the firm attained a high distinction as lawyers and as judicial officers. The senior member of the firm, Mr. Morse, was appointed first Judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Kings County, in 1833, serving till April 13th, 1838, when he was succeeded by Hon. John A. Lott.

One year after leaving the bench of the Common Pleas, Mr. Morse was appointed District Attorney of Kings County, serving until June, 1847, when he was succeeded by Gen. Harmanus B. Duryea. In June, 1847, he was elected a Justice of the Supreme Court, from the Second Judicial District, for the term of six years. He discharged the duties of all these offices faithfully, and with marked ability. The name of Nathan B. Morse is, therefore, an honored one in the history of the past. When he was appointed District Attorney of Kings County, the firm of Morse & Rockwell was dissolved. In those days District Attorneys were appointed by the Judges of the Common Pleas, and none but the ablest members of the bar were tendered that appointment.

As we have said, Judge Morse was appointed first Judge of Kings County Common Pleas, April 30th, 1833, and Mr. Rockwell was appointed District Attorney May 3d, 1833. He continued to discharge the duties of District Attorney until June 1st, 1839, when he was succeeded by Judge Morse. At the first judicial election under the Constitution of 1846, which took place in June, 1847, Mr. Rockwell was elected County Judge of Kings County, serving until 1848, when he was succeeded by Samuel E. Johnson. We say "succeeded" by Mr. Johnson—Rockwell and Johnson were opposing candidates for the office of County Judge at the judicial election to which we have referred, and Mr. Johnson, claiming to have been fairly elected, applied to the Supreme Court for the confirmation of his election. After a long contest the Court decreed that he was entitled to the office of County Judge and that Rockwell was not entitled to it. Accordingly on October 28th, 1848, Johnson took his seat upon the bench, and Rockwell retired from it.

Judge Rockwell now applied himself with renewed energy to his profession, his retainers extending to distant parts of the State, giving him a State reputation as a lawyer; he was much of the time before the General Term of the Supreme Court and in the Court of Appeals, and was regarded as an eminently successful lawyer. In the fall of 1853 he was brought prominently forward as a candidate for Judge of the Supreme Court of the State, for the Second Judicial District. From the beginning his election was assured: he entered upon his judicial duties January 1st, 1854. The manner in which he discharged his duties evinced his high judicial abilities and his ripe learning. If he was highly distinguished at the bar, he was equally successful in obtaining commendation as a Judge.

But his exalted career on the bench suddenly terminated. On the 12th of July, 1856, Mr. Waring, a friend and neighbor of the Judge, called upon him at his residence. While engaged in an agreeable conversation Judge Rockwell was suddenly attacked with a violent pain in the chest, instantly followed by a copious vomiting of blood. As he was falling from his chair, Mr. Waring caught him in his arms, but death ensued almost instantaneously. The sudden death of this distinguished Jurist produced a profound sensation throughout the State. Everywhere large meetings of the bar were called, to attest respect for his memory. The bar and the laity vied with each other in doing honor to a learned, able, pure and exalted Jurist who as a Judge had honored the bench, and whose career as a lawyer had especially ornamented the bar.

One of the largest gatherings of the bar that ever took place in Kings County, met for the purpose of paying respect to the memory of Judge Rockwell, and to make arrangements to attend his funeral in a body. His early partner and life-long friend, Hon. Nathan B. Morse, presided; his remarks upon taking the chair were peculiarly touching and appropriate. Addresses were made by Messrs. Sanxay, Lott and Spooner. The addresses of these gentlemen were more than ordinarily affecting and interesting. All of those eloquent speakers have since been removed from the scenes of their labors and their brilliant career by death.

Kings County feels a just pride in perpetuating the memory of her great Jurists, whose career has shed such honor on her history.

CYRUS P. SMITH, and CHARLES J. LOWREY.—On the 24th day of February, 1877, a solemn and impressive meeting of the Bar of Kings County convened to honor the memory of two of its ablest and most eminent members, who had just departed this life—CYRUS P. SMITH and CHARLES LOWREY. The meeting was called to order by Gen. B. F. Tracy, on whose nomination Chief Justice Neilson was made chairman. Ex-Judge Troy, and Philip S. Crooke were chosen secretaries. A feeling of unusual sadness pervaded the meeting. Judge Tracy, in calling the meeting to order, and in nominating Judge Neilson for chairman, dwelt in the most feeling and touching manner upon the characteristics of the lamented dead, which especially endeared them, not only to their brethren of the bar, but also to the Bench.

"We cannot," he said, "but sympathise with the bar in a bereavement which has taken from us such associates and friends, whose rare gifts contributed to throw so much luster upon their lives, and upon their profession."

Judge Neilson, on taking the chair, alluded in beautiful language, deeper and more touching than the common language of eulogy, showing that his words were the outcome of a sorrowing heart. Addresses were also made by many of the members of the bar, among whom were Hon. John Winslow and Hon. Henry C. Murphy. The tributes pronounced by these eminent gentlemen were so just, so affluent in that kind of language which such occasions require, and yet so chastened by good taste, so adorned by pleasing and touching diction, that their eulogies—if such they may be called—have never been forgotten. We regret that space prevents us from giving any portion of these admirable productions. It remains only to be said that, for fifty years, CYRUS P. SMITH was identified with all that was best and prominent in the interests of Brooklyn. When he came to Brooklyn, the city contained less than 10,000 inhabitants, and there were very few lawyers, among whom were James P. Clark, C. J. Doughty, John Greenwood, and Nathan B. Morse. Mr. Smith was the first Corporation Counsel of Brooklyn. He was Mayor of Brooklyn in 1839, and under his guidance, Myrtle Avenue, Court Street, and some of the most important streets and avenues were opened.

In the autumn of 1854, he was nominated and elected to the State Senate, from the 2d Senatorial District, serving for the term of two years. He exhibited on the floor of the Senate, in the services he rendered on important committees, all the qualities of a high-minded, able and useful legislator. At the close of his term he was tendered a renomination, which, to all appearances, now, would have been unanimous, and his election would have been certain. But professional duties prevented him from accepting the proffered office. Mr. Smith was what may well be called an industrious lawyer—industrious in applying the law to his cases, and in preparing them for trial or argument. His briefs were

admirable models of labor and research. His arguments evidently came from a well-stored mind; ingenious, effective, pointed. If, to convince is the end and object of eloquence, Mr. Smith was eminently eloquent, for his arguments always carried conviction with them. He died February 22d, 1877.*

MR. LOWREY was a lawyer whose learning and ability was justly recognized by the bar and the public. He made no pretension as an advocate, and seldom appeared in Court. When he did it was to make a purely legal argument to the Court *in banc*, and he addressed the Court more in a colloquial style than in the oratorical; and yet, so profound and solid were his remarks that they always commanded the attention of the judges. In his office, as a counsellor, he was unsurpassed, as he was a deep student, delighting in the study of the law. He was familiar with its philosophy and its precedent. Hence his counsel was often sought by the ablest members of the bar. Whenever a difficult, or new question, occurred, which lawyers were unable to settle, or agree upon, they used to say, "Go to Lowrey; for if there is any precedent for it, or anything in the books touching it, he can tell you precisely where to find it." And this was so. He had a way of going straight to his library, and without any apparent reflection, putting his hand at once upon the authority he desired. He was, undoubtedly, the ablest real-estate lawyer of his times. Some of his briefs made in real-estate cases are still extant, exhaustive and learned treatises, instead of briefs, showing his wonderful research, and his analytic power in harmonizing the complicated law touching real-estate precedent. Like Cyrus P. Smith, he possessed those attractive qualities of head and heart that rendered him a valued and highly estimable citizen. It is singular indeed that these two men, so prominent in their profession, and as citizens, should be summoned from earth and the scenes of their usefulness, from their homes, around which centered so many affections, so nearly at the same time. It is no affectation to say of them that their lives were beautiful; that in death they were not divided.

ALDEN J. SPOONER.—Among the law students admitted to the Supreme Court at the June term for 1833, held in the City of New York, was a young man whose name has long been identified with the history of Brooklyn by a useful, active career as a lawyer learned and prominent in his profession; as a scholar of fine attainments; as an accomplished writer and journalist, and as a literateur of high capacity, exquisite taste and chaste, well disciplined, imagination. To use the language of a great city daily: "No man took a keener interest in the progress of Brooklyn, whose growth, from narrow limits, he had watched with pride and pleasure. No man was more intimately connected with the events which marked her earlier progress; and the impress of his keen and active intellect, and the influence of his genial and hearty sympathy, remain in more than one of the institutions which are the boast and pride of our city. To speak of the earlier days and later progress of *The Long Island Historical Society*, *The Hamiltonian Society*, and many other public institutions, is to bring Alden J. Spooner prominently before the mind."

He was born at Sag Harbor, L. I., February 10th, 1810. His father, Col. ALDEN SPOONER, was an eminent citizen of Long Island, distinguished as the editor and proprietor of the *Long Island Star*, the first newspaper ever published on Long Island. This journal, of acknowledged ability, was published many years in Brooklyn.

On April 26th, 1841, Col. Spooner was appointed Surrogate

* See biographical notice on page 148.

of Kings County. Though not bred to the bar, he discharged the delicate and difficult duties of that important office in a highly acceptable manner, not only to the legal profession, but to the general public for five years. It is true he had a learned, judicious and highly capable counsellor in his son Alden; but Col. Spooner's strong, well cultured mind, quick sense of justice and equity, rendered him quite capable of discharging the duties of his office with self-reliant success, and without frequent recourse to the advice of others. (A fuller notice of Col. Spooner's life and services will be found in our chapter of *The Press of Kings County*—also on pages 927 to 980 of Stiles' History of Brooklyn, Vol. III.)

One of young Spooner's earliest instructors was John Dikeman, afterwards prominent at the Kings County Bar, and for several years first judge of its Court of Common Pleas.

Mr. Spooner commenced the study of the classics under the instruction of the Rev. Samuel Seabury, a highly educated and respectable clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church, and subsequently editor of the *Churchman*.

It was with some difficulty that he pursued the study of Latin and Greek, but the perseverance with which he conducted those studies, exhibits that concentration of purpose, that intellectual superiority, which exemplified themselves in every phase of his future life.

His next instructor in the classics was that distinguished teacher of languages, L. E. H. Eighenbrodt. Under this accomplished instructor Mr. Spooner made rapid proficiency—so rapid, that at the age of fourteen he had acquired an excellent knowledge of Greek and Latin, and he was also a good mathematician. Mr. Spooner completed his preparation for college at the Cambridge Academy, in Washington county, N. Y.

The early, studious and retired habits of young Spooner convinced his father that his taste and mental endowments fitted him to enter one of the learned professions. As time went on he exhibited characteristics that seemed to gravitate toward the legal profession, as the congenial calling of his life. Anxious to begin its study, it was decided that he should dispense with what was called a full collegiate education, and commence his legal course at once.

George Jermain, a highly respectable counsellor-at-law, was a maternal uncle of young Spooner, and it was in his office that he entered upon the study of his profession. In after life he used to relate with amusing minuteness, the difficulties he encountered in his first efforts to comprehend Blackstone. "I found it," he says, "far more difficult to understand a page of that elegant commentator, than a page of Horace, Tacitus or Euripides. As for Coke, for a long time he was an unfathomable mystery to me."

As Mr. Webster has said: "A boy of twenty, with no previous knowledge of law, cannot understand Coke; his propositions are so abstract, his distinctions so nice, and doctrines embracing so many distinctions and qualifications, that it requires an effort, not only of a mature mind, but of a mind both strong and mature, to understand him."

But young Spooner brought to the study of these authors the same industry and perseverance which had enabled him to overcome the difficulties in his way in pursuing his classical studies; and in a short time the dull black-letter of the law had strong fascinations for him, and the beautiful science of jurisprudence easily unrolled its treasures to him.

After remaining with his uncle a year he went to Brooklyn, N. Y., and entered the office of Clarence D. Sacket, Esq., of that city, with whom he remained till he was called to the bar.

Not long after his admission to practice he became a member of the Queens and Suffolk County Bars, and such was

the progress he made in the profession, that he secured a respectable clientage in those counties, and in the county of Kings.

His first case at the Queens County Bar was one of great difficulty, full of knotty, legal questions; and, in addition to this, his opponent was one of the ablest lawyers of his times.

Mr. Spooner had associated with him a very able and experienced lawyer, who was to try the case before the jury. But, being taken suddenly ill, the whole responsibility of the case rested upon the young advocate. With many misgivings he entered the contest; but as the struggle deepened, his timidity vanished, confidence and self-reliance took its place, and after a long and bitter contest his efforts were crowned with a triumph that greatly advanced his professional prospects.

In May, 1836, the celebrated case of the *People v. John Nichols* was tried at the Suffolk Term of Oyer and Terminer, the Hon. Ogden Edwards presiding. Nichols had been indicted for an assault, with an intent to kill, and for burglary. The crime was committed under circumstances of great atrocity. Spooner appeared for the defense, interposing the plea of insanity for his client. The case is remembered as one in which an unprecedented number of eminent physicians were sworn as witnesses for and against the prisoner; those for the defense established beyond a doubt his insanity, while an equal number testified that he was perfectly sane. Under this conflict of evidence Spooner went to the jury. With great ingenuity he took advantage of this marked conflict in the professional evidence, thereby raising a reasonable doubt as to the guilt of the prisoner.

"Gentlemen of the jury," said he, "you have the testimony of ten respectable physicians showing the insanity of my client. It is true you have an equal number of equally respectable physicians who testify to his sanity. Notwithstanding this, will you take the responsibility of convicting a man of a charge as serious as this, whom ten scientific physicians have pronounced insane? They may be right, gentlemen—quite as likely to be right as those who have testified against them. Here, then, gentlemen, is such a reasonable doubt of my client's guilt that you cannot convict him; for, gentlemen, when doctors disagree, who can decide?"

His whole plea was a masterly effort, and so pronounced by the bar and spectators present. He was followed by the Hon. Selah B. Strong, District Attorney of Suffolk County, afterwards one of the Justices of the Supreme Court of the Second Judicial District of the State.

Judge Strong made a very able and eloquent reply to Mr. Spooner's argument, but the Jury rendered a verdict of "Not guilty," and the prisoner was discharged. This was a signal victory for the young lawyer.

As a speaker, Mr. Spooner had a full share of advantages in personal appearance, in oratorical and reasoning powers, and in clear voice. These united qualities commanded respect and attention, and often produced conviction in the minds of his hearers. With his pen he was a more powerful dispenser of eloquence than with his lips. Possessing a fine literary taste, strengthened and enlarged by classical lore, and an extensive knowledge of books, he ranked among the most able writers of his times.

His capacity for intense application to literary labor seemed exhaustless. All his literary efforts exhibit vivacity and strength of mind, quickness of perception and great purity of taste. Books were his constant companions, and he was ever a close student of the Greek and Latin writers. He used to say: "I am pleased with Livy, for his inimitable manner of telling a story; with Sallust, for his entering into

those internal principles of action which arise from the characters and manners of those he described; with Tacitus, for displaying those outward motives of safety and interest which give birth to the whole series of transactions he relates." A more pleasing and truthful description of these elegant writers could hardly be given.

His literary taste gradually led him from the duties of his profession. As has well been said: "The literary and artistic features of Mr. Spooner's character were an especial and profitable phase in his life. He wrote much and well. In his earlier years, beside the work of editing the *Long Island Star*, he was a frequent and valuable contributor to that greatly admired periodical, *The Knickerbocker Magazine*. The history of Brooklyn and Long Island always interested him deeply. He furnished a loving, tender, biography of the author to a re-print of Gabriel Furman's *Notes, Geographical and Historical, relating to the Town of Brooklyn* (annotated by Dr. H. R. Stiles), which was published in 1865. He also edited a re-print of *Silas Wood's Sketch of the First Settlements of the Towns of Long Island*. Of both of these works small editions on large paper, for private distribution, were issued by the Faust Club (consisting of Alden J. Spooner and Henry R. Stiles), in 1865.

A more recent work was the article on Brooklyn in *Johnson's Encyclopædia*, published a few years ago—a very complete sketch; and he also contributed articles on other topics for the same work.

Mr. Spooner's interest in public affairs dates back to his earlier years. When, on the 18th of November, 1830, the *Hamilton Literary Society* was organized, Mr. Spooner, then a youth of twenty years, was one of the active promoters of the movement, and was elected first president of the Hamilton. With him were associated at that time, in the organization of the society, such men as Henry C. Murphy, A. A. Low, Seth Low, John T. Howard, Prof. Raymond—afterwards president of the Polytechnic and Vassar College—Joshua A. Van Cott and Hon. John Greenwood, of the City of Brooklyn.

One of the pleasantest instances in the literary career of Mr. Spooner was the semi-centennial of the *Hamilton*, on the evening of Jan. 19th, 1880, held in the Art Gallery on Montague street. "As one of the founders of the society and its first president," says the *Brooklyn Eagle*, "Mr. Spooner was one of the honored guests of the evening, and there led in that old song so dear to all Hamiltonians,

'When we all ate the oyster-fries
'Way down at Johnny Joe's.'"

He was the writer of that song, and it has been sung at the annual banquets of that society for years. It carries the memory of many a gray-haired and revered citizen back to his younger days, and to the pleasures and companions of his youth.

Mr. Spooner loved the Hamilton Society as a parent loves its offspring; and he was always the hearty friend of the young men who, year after year, swelled its ranks and participated in its exercises.

His connection with the establishing of the *Long Island Historical Society* is one of the main features of his career. The idea was present in his brain long before the initial step was taken, and his name is signed to the call for the meeting held on the 16th of Feb., 1863, when the project took shape and form, and he was among its first officers. He drew largely from the shelves of his own library to contribute to the infant library of the institution. He presented pictures and objects of interest to the gallery and museum of the society, and he was always its earnest, steadfast friend; and his

leisure hours were largely passed in its alcoves. The following minute was adopted by the Board of Directors of the Long Island Historical Society, Oct. 11, 1881; as expressive of their sense of the loss which the society had sustained in his death:

"Alden J. Spooner, one of the councillors of this society, died suddenly in the month of August last. His life was most absolutely that of a Long Islander. He was born in Suffolk County, passed the greater part of his life in Kings, and died and was buried in the County of Queens. His tastes were always predominantly literary, and his busier years were divided between journalism and the practice of the law. He was a wide reader, and wrote with facility and finish in both prose and verse. He was a delightful companion, and abounded in anecdote, fun and genial humor. He was humane and generous up to the full measure of his means. From early manhood down to his death, on the very verge of old age, he sympathized with all measures and efforts which aimed to make men wiser, better and happier in their lives. Beyond most of his contemporaries, he had a prescience of the rapid growth and prosperity of this city, and of its needs of libraries, lyceums, schools of art, and other institutions for culture and pleasure; and he was always a prompt, eager and enthusiastic participant in all combined efforts to make adequate provision for such needs. The early Apprentices' Library, the City Library, the Athenæum, and the Hamilton Literary Association, are among his debtors, and should hold him in grateful and honorable remembrance. The circular which convened the earliest meeting for the organization of this society was from his pen, and bears his name, and he was not only among the first, but among the most zealous of those to whose public spirit the society owes its existence. Prominent and active members of the existing institutions of the city—who shared his genial companionship and liberal aims—have united to pay a parting tribute to his cultivated tastes, his broad humanity, his devotion to the welfare of the city and the island, and to his high character for integrity in his relations to his fellow-men."

Mr. Spooner was also largely interested in establishing the Brooklyn Institute, on Washington Street. Indeed, there is scarcely one among the older institutions of Brooklyn in which he was not actively interested.

The latest offspring of his efforts in this direction was the Society of Old Brooklynites.

As a judge of art, Mr. Spooner had few superiors among amateurs. Painting and sculpture were equally a study with him, and he had an intelligent appreciation of their finer points.

In his later years he was engaged in collecting, arranging in chronological order, and uniting together a mass of historical incidents relating to Long Island, which he had been years in gathering. It was his intention, had his life been spared, to have written a comprehensive history of Long Island; but death came to him suddenly at his residence in Hempstead, on the evening of August 2d, 1881.

He never had any taste for politics, consequently never sought political distinction or official promotion. The only office he ever held was that of clerk of the Brooklyn City Court. As has well been said: "always too ready to yield to the advancement of others, he put aside positions he would have splendidly adorned with his magnificent intellect."

Mr. Spooner's life was one of spotless integrity, and the rigid honesty of his business dealings always secured him absolute confidence, not only with his clients, but with all classes of business men. He was a fascinating and instructing conversationalist; one of those persons in whose society intelligent men and women became still more intelligent. He could draw out persons, if there was anything in them to draw out; if there was a subject about which they knew more than he did, nothing pleased him so much as to have it introduced. He seized quickly upon characteristic traits, and by an anecdote would put one in possession of the real character of the man better than an extended biography.

His sunny, genial nature, rendered him a general favorite.

GENERAL PHILIP S. CROOKE.—Among the members of the Kings County Bar, whose life and career is identified with the legal and civil history of the county, was Gen. Crooke. He was born March 2d, 1810. After receiving a competent education he prepared himself for the bar of the Supreme Court of the State, obtaining his license to practice in May, 1833. He early became a resident of Flatbush, Kings County, where he practiced with marked success the remainder of his life.

Few men ever succeeded in inspiring the people with higher confidence in their integrity and abilities than he; as an evidence of this he represented the town of Flatbush on the board of Supervisors of Kings County for nineteen successive years. Although the office of Supervisor is not one requiring the highest abilities to discharge it, eliciting no oratorical powers, and reflecting no distinguishing honors upon its incumbent, it is one of great importance. The Board of Supervisors is, in fact, the legislative body of the county, requiring in its members the strictest integrity, plain, direct, common-sense, practical judgment, and good business talents.

Speaking of the extraordinary length of time that Gen. Crooke represented his town on the Board of Supervisors, *The Brooklyn Eagle* used the following pertinent language.

"It would be difficult to express more in brief compass concerning his trustworthy qualities than is expressed in the fact that he was chosen for nineteen years to represent a people like those of the town of Flatbush. It may not distinguish him for brilliant endowments, but it establishes the fact that he was a man held in the highest esteem by an enlightened and enterprising people, to whom he was very intimately known through the vicissitudes and associations of nearly a half century.

"After all that is said and done, there are no tributes of respect so serviceable and valuable, so likely to be deserved, as those implied in the continued confidence exhibited by a public man's neighbors in his integrity. Many circumstances may conspire to deceive the general public in regard to a man. Plausibility may secure favor. Malice may procure distrust. What neither malice nor plausibility can do, is to make honest people long mistake a rogue for a good-minded, honest man, if they have dealings with him from day to day, for any considerable space of time.

"The real aim of earthly ambition should be the desire to obtain and deserve the approbation of the faithful, sincere, intelligent people about him."

Gen. Crooke was one of those who thus wisely circumscribed their desire for applause, and yet his career at the Bar distinguished him in no ordinary degree, and paved the way for high political honors.

Among Gen. Crooke's many business relations, we may name that of his partnership with John H. Bergen, which began about the year 1862. As we have said in another part of this work, "this relation was advantageous to both parties. The learning, industry and talents of young Bergen, the acknowledged ability, large experience and legal accomplishments of Gen. Crooke, gave the firm a very high position." In the year 1867 the firm was changed by adding to it that eminent jurist, Calvin E. Pratt, now one of the justices of the Supreme Court of this State. The new firm was styled Crooke, Pratt & Bergen. The legal standing of Judge Pratt added largely to the influence and popularity of the firm. In 1869, Mr. Pratt was nominated and elected a justice of the Supreme Court of the State for the Second Judicial District—a position which he still holds by re-election. (His biography appears in another part of the work). The election of Judge Pratt brought another change to the firm, and N.

H. Clement became a member. This new firm was known as Croke, Bergen & Clement. This relation continued until 1873, when the senior member was elected a Representative in Congress from the District, and the firm was dissolved. In Congress, Gen. Croke was soon distinguished for those acquirements, talents, and for that moral worth and purity of character, which rendered him so popular at the Bar and as a private citizen.

He was a member of those committees to which were confided such subjects as were deemed of vital importance to the Nation. There are several reports prepared by him remarkable for their correctness, comprehensiveness and power. At the end of his term he returned to the practice of his profession in Brooklyn, which, as he used to say, had more attractions for him than any office which could be given him.

Gen. Croke was a military man, and rose to his high rank in the Militia and in the National Guard. As commander of the 14th Regiment he distinguished himself as an able, popular and very valuable officer.

During the recent war, though not actively engaged in the field, he rendered most efficient service in raising and forwarding troops to the field. As Chairman of the Board of Supervisors of Kings County, his patriotism was prominently exhibited in everything that tended to promote the success of our army in the field.

It should be stated that Gen. Croke represented Kings County in the Legislature as member of the Assembly for the session of 1864. It is a remarkable fact that five of Gen. Croke's colleagues in that year were residents of Brooklyn. They were John O'Connor, Edward D. White, John C. Perry, Andrew Welsh and Jacob Worth. Angelo Newton, another member from Kings County, was from Williamsburgh, now part of Brooklyn.

In considering the character of Gen. Croke, his claim to remembrance is founded mostly on his career as a lawyer, and his high integrity as a man. In the preparation and trial of a cause, he discovered great tact; and although not what may be called an orator, he exhibited a mind of great energy and logical powers, enforced by a retentive memory, and a ready knowledge of the law. There was no man who understood the strong points of his own case, and the weak ones of his opponent's, better than he; he was seldom taken by surprise, or overthrown by *coup d'état*. He went straight to the point of his case in his own peculiar way, always powerfully protecting the rights of his clients. No circumstance, no legal points, and no presumption which tended to their advantage, was ever overlooked by him.

We have said Gen. Croke was not distinguished as an orator; by this, we mean that he did not possess the brilliant imagination, the creative fancy and flexible rhetoric that constitute the admired orator; but when he addressed juries, legislative or popular assemblies, he always commanded attention by his clear common sense, and ingenious reasoning.

One of his efforts that is remembered with pleasure, was his announcement of the death of that distinguished and eloquent lawyer, Grenville Tudor Jenks, before the County Court of Kings County. While it is one of the shortest of the many and beautiful tributes paid to the memory of Mr. Jenks, it is, at the same time, one of the most appropriate and effective.

Gen. Croke died at Flatbush, March 17, 1881, aged 71 years and 15 days. The intelligence of his death produced a profound sensation throughout the State, for his long, useful and prominent career had given him a State reputation.

In the relation of husband and father, citizen and friend, he was what may be termed, without affectation, a model.

He had faults—perhaps many; but it is a beautiful principle of human nature to forget the weaknesses and frailty, and to preserve the memory of virtues and the accomplishments of the dead. Even so we make virtue a principle that outlives the grave, always fresh, vital and attractive.

JOHN DIKEMAN was born at Hempstead, L. I., in the year 1795. His father was a small farmer. When about 15 or 16 years old, his son John removed to Brooklyn and entered a store as clerk. At that time Brooklyn was a small village, and did not extend beyond the site of the present City Hall. It was incorporated and governed by a Board of Trustees.

The business was neither profitable nor congenial to the young man, and he left Brooklyn and went to Philadelphia, where he engaged in business for a time. Returning to Brooklyn he began the study of law under the direction of Judge Radcliffe, at that time a prominent lawyer. The exact time he commenced his legal studies is not known, but it must have been in 1814.

Young Dikeman had few advantages for obtaining an education, and, like many others who have gained eminence in the legal profession, was compelled to rely upon his own energy and perseverance; happily this was sufficient. The little schooling he had received poorly fitted him for the arduous work of a lawyer. But those were days when young men were not deterred by such obstacles. If he did not possess the requisite education, he studied, early and late, to obtain it. Public education at that time had not reached any thing like its present development, and schools were not numerous. Young Dikeman made good use of his opportunities, and acquired an excellent common school education. During the time he was studying law he supported himself by teaching school. When he came to Brooklyn there was no public or district school in the village, and its educational facilities were confined to private institutions.

In 1816 he married Miss Susan Remsen. In May of that year the citizens united in establishing a common or district school. It opened on the 6th of May in the lower part of Thomas Kirk's printing office, on Adams street, near Sands. Mr. Kirk was the publisher of the first newspaper printed in Brooklyn. Dikeman was selected as teacher of the school, which opened with 70 scholars. There were at this time about 550 children in the village of sufficient age to attend school. In the course of the summer of 1816, a two-story frame school-house was erected on the corner of Concord and Adams street, on the site now occupied by public school No. One, and the school was removed there. From that school has grown the immense and complex public-school system of Brooklyn. Judge Dikeman was, therefore, the principal of the first public school opened in that city, and through his long and active life he never lost his interest in educational matters.

Nor were his efforts confined to secular affairs. He was a devout and earnest member of the Methodist Episcopal Church from early manhood, and in the Sunday-school of his day he was a constant and successful teacher. The early history of the Sunday-schools of Brooklyn is somewhat obscure, but it seems that there was a school of that character as early as 1816.

With ardent devotion young Dikeman pursued his legal studies until he was called to the bar. He decided to make Brooklyn the scene of his future professional career; accordingly he opened an office near the corner of Henry and Fulton streets, and by close attention to business, and the possession of a natural legal mind and method, his success did not long remain doubtful. His public spirit and enterprise were early exhibited in the interest he took in all public measures. He

was elected clerk of the village in 1821, the first office he ever held. In the year 1824 his name appears to a public ordinance published by the trustees of the village, touching the cleaning of certain streets. At that time he was twenty-nine years old.

In the year 1830 he was appointed first judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Kings County. Under the Constitution of 1821 these judicial officers were appointed by the governor. As we have seen in another part of this work, that Court was abolished by the constitution of 1846, and the county court established in its place.

Judge Dikeman was an earnest and enthusiastic Jacksonian Democrat, and took a prominent part in the political affairs of Kings county, sustaining his party nominees on the rostrum.

On the 27th of June, 1833, the Washington street Methodist Episcopal Church was organized. The new church was an outcome of the Sands street M. E. Church, which had grown too small for its accommodation. One colony had already left the parent church, establishing the York street M. E. Church, and now another scion of the vigorous old stock was successfully transplanted. Judge Dikeman had received from conference the appointment of local preacher, in which capacity he frequently officiated. Active, earnest and progressive, Judge Dikeman left his religious *Alma Mater*, and went with the new colony, and his subsequent life is fully identified with it.

Judge Dikeman served five years as first judge of the county, with credit to himself and the satisfaction of the bar and the public.

In 1865 the Native American party was prominent in politics and enlisted his sympathies. He received the nomination from that party for the office of Member of Assembly from Kings county, and was elected. He discharged his legislative duties with fidelity and marked ability. At the close of his term he declined a renomination, and devoted all his time and energies to his profession, which was now extensive and very lucrative.

The city of Brooklyn was then growing rapidly, stretching out in all directions; new enterprises and institutions were springing into being in every direction.

In 1839 the New York and Brooklyn Ferry Company was organized, uniting under its management a number of the ferries which had previously been conducted by individual companies. Judge Dikeman was one of the original lessees and directors in the new company. It lasted until 1844, when the present ferry company was organized, and Judge Dikeman was out of the board of managers of the new enterprise. His connection with it was terminated by an incident which very well illustrates the uncompromising integrity of his character. Some time after the organization of the company the ferriage was raised to two cents. Judge Dikeman opposed this measure, contending that one cent was enough, but the measure prevailed and the fare was raised from one to two cents. The Judge sold his stock in the company because he could not be a party to what he considered radically wrong.

The constitution of 1846 changed the method of choosing judges.

In 1863 Judge Dikeman was nominated for county judge of Kings county. He was elected, succeeding Judge Samuel Garrison, now deceased.

The term was for four years. His opponent was ex-Judge Troy. At the expiration of his office he was again nominated against Judge Troy, by the Democrats, and defeated. Thus terminated his connection with active politics. He also virtually withdrew from the practice of his profession.

When the Kings county *Home for Inebriates* was organized, in 1867, Judge Dikeman was chosen first vice-president of the board of managers.

Judge Dikeman was a man of strongly marked characteristics. He was distinguished for the perseverance and decision of his character, and for his self-reliance. He was considered one of the best *nisi prius* lawyers at the bar, and was noted for his skill and acuteness in the cross-examination, esteemed for his sound judgment, keen discrimination, firm in his opinion. He died August 23d, 1879.

HON. HENRY C. MURPHY.*—There was one lawyer whose recent death has been widely mourned, whose legal career forms a large part of the history of Kings County bar for nearly half a century; whose political life during that period may be said to be its civil and political history; whose public spirit, liberality, taste and enterprise adorned his native city somewhat as Athens was adorned in the age of Pericles. This was Henry C. Murphy, a descendant of a long line of ancestors, whose immigration to this country ante-dates the Revolution by many years.

Prominent among these was Timothy Murphy, a native of Ireland, a man of letters, of fine literary attainments, a highly intelligent physician and surgeon. In 1766 he came to America, and became a resident of Monmouth County, New Jersey. A natural love of agricultural pursuits predominating over his professional ambition, induced him to adopt, in his new home, the occupation of a farmer, in which he attained much success. At the period of his emigration he was unmarried, but he soon found in Maria Garrison—a grand-daughter of Richard Hartshorne, a distinguished official of New Jersey—a young lady whose personal and mental attractions gained his affections, and who became his wife. At the commencement of the Revolutionary war, Dr. Murphy entered the patriot army. Inspired by an innate love of liberty, he proved his devotion to his adopted country in those fields of strife where the "death bolts flew deadliest." On the field of Monmouth, on White Plains, and in other battles, he exhibited valor of which his descendants have ever been proud.

Among his four sons was JOHN GARRISON MURPHY, the father of Henry C. Murphy. He enjoyed only the advantages for attaining an education which were afforded by the institutions of that early day.

Leaving school, he began learning the business of a mill-wright, in which he became eminently successful. Immediately after commencing business for himself, he was united by marriage to Miss Clarissa Runyon, of Princeton, New Jersey, and removed to the then small village of Brooklyn. This was in the Spring of 1808.

"As a mill-wright he was concerned in the construction or repairs of nearly all the old tide-mills which then existed in the neighborhood of Brooklyn, and in conjunction with Mr. Rodman Bowne he patented the machinery of the horse or team-boats which were used to cross the East River at the ferries, first at the Catherine or 'New ferry,' before the introduction of steam. He built all the machinery, not only for the horse-boats on the Brooklyn ferries, but for many places throughout the United States, on the Mississippi River, and also in Canada."

Mr. Murphy possessed, in an eminent degree, the confidence of his fellow citizens, whom he served for many years as a Justice of the Peace, and as Judge of the Municipal Court,

* The writer is largely indebted to the eloquent and beautiful biographical sketch of Mr. Murphy written by HENRY R. STILES, A.M., M.D., Editor-in-Chief of this history, from the pages of which he has been permitted to make extensive extracts.

after Brooklyn became a city, and as school commissioner. In politics he was a staunch Jeffersonian Democrat; few men wielded greater influence in the councils of that party in Kings County.

He was a tall, fine-looking man; his character was marked by prudence, industry, reticence, and self-reliance. He died in 1853, in the 70th year of his age, leaving four daughters and two sons. To the life and career of the eldest of these sons the following pages are devoted.

HENRY C. MURPHY was born in the village of Brooklyn, July 5, 1810—two years after the removal of his parents to that place.

To use the language of Dr. Henry R. Stiles, the accomplished historian of Brooklyn, in his memoir of Mr. Murphy: "While he was growing up amid all the advantages of a moral life and surroundings, he was, by virtue of his parents' watchful care and social standing, brought in contact with all that was best in the society of the village, as well as with that higher strata of culture and intellect to be found in the limited circle of New York people who, summer after summer, sought in the charms of Brooklyn residence a delightful retreat from the cares and the heat of the city. His growing years gave early indications of abilities which his subsequent life so fully developed."

After closing his preparatory course at the High School of the City of New York, he entered Columbia College. While there he was distinguished for close and thorough application to his studies, with something of thoughtful reserve in his manner, which he at times exhibited in after life. He was popular with the faculty and with the students, revealing in the occasional altercations and disputes, incident to college life, a generous intrepidity and those flexible muscular powers which always render a student popular in college. But his chief delight was in the privacy of his room, where his books were his favorite companions. To him they were never failing well-springs of intellectual delight.

He was a frequent contributor to *The Balance*, a college journal conducted with marked ability. This laid the foundation for his future eminence as a writer. His contributions to *The Balance* had so little of the sophomoric style, were marked by such breadth of thought and literary finish, that their paternity was assigned by some to a distinguished clergyman, one of the alumni of the college. But the professors knew them to be the offspring of young Murphy's intellectual labor. With such devotion to his studies, such natural and acquired endowments, he closed his collegiate life in a brilliant graduation.

While in college, young Murphy's favorite place of resort was the City Hall, where the courts held their sittings. Here he listened to the thrilling eloquence of Ogden Hoffman, the powerful legal rhetoric of Graham, the calm, ornate and pleasing arguments of Daniel Lord, and to the first brilliant efforts of James T. Brady. As might have been expected, these made a strong impression upon the young student's mind, and from that day till the close of his life, he never ceased to admire the eloquence of the bar. Fortunately for him, he fully appreciated the nature of that eloquence.

He felt that there is no scene of public speaking where real eloquence is more necessary, and he understood that the subtlety and dryness of the subjects generally agitated at the bar, require more than any other a certain kind of eloquence in order to command attention; in order to give proper weight to the arguments employed, and to prevent anything which the pleader advances to pass unregarded; that there is as much difference in the impressions made upon judges and jurors, by a cold, dry and confused speaker and that made by

one who pleads the same cause with elegance, order and strength, as there is between our conceptions of an object when it is presented to us in a dim light, and when we behold it in a full and clear light.

As might have been expected, young Murphy determined to enter the legal profession; accordingly, soon after leaving college, he entered the law office of Hon. Peter W. Radcliffe, then one of the most eminent lawyers practicing at the New York city bar. The student and the practitioner in pursuing his legal researches is surprised to find in the early report of our courts, State and Federal, such various memoranda of the professional labors and learning of Mr. Radcliffe. Mr. Radcliffe, although practicing at the New York city bar, was a resident of Brooklyn. He was in every sense peculiarly fitted to become the legal preceptor of a man like Mr. Murphy.

In seeing how causes were tried and argued by this gifted and skillful lawyer, the young man learned how to conduct with success the contests of the bar.

While a law student, politics—the natural sphere of lawyers—began to have strong attractions for young Murphy. At that early age he favored the Democratic party, which found in him, young as he was, a decided and influential partisan. His pen was an habitual dispenser of eloquence and reason exerted in its behalf.

To the columns of *The Brooklyn Advocate and Nassau Gazette*, a strong and influential Democratic paper, Mr. Murphy was a valued contributor; many of its most pungent and forcible leaders, written with intuitive grace, and which attracted general attention, were the productions of his pen; written, not for emolument, but out of a sense of duty to his party, and for the exercise it gave his intellectual powers. It is impossible to read them, as they now appear in the files of that journal, without being struck with the view they exhibit of the writer's mental richness and activity. "Even before entering upon his legal studies," says Dr. Stiles, "he had been conspicuous in the preparation of the constitution and organization of a literary and debating society, known at first as *The Young Men's Literary Association of Brooklyn*, a name which a year later was changed to *The Hamilton Literary Association of Brooklyn*, of which he was chosen the first President. Edgar J. Bartow, G. W. Horace, W. and J. C. Dow, J. Tasker Howard, Joshua M. Van Cott, Alden M. Spooner, J. H. Raymond and Francis P. Sanford, and others,—all men of mark—some of whom have passed over to the majority—while others still remain.

The Hamilton Literary Association was, for over a quarter of a century, one of the vital forces of Brooklyn life and interest. It organized a system of volunteer lectures, which became the commencement of the lecture system of the cities of the Union. From it also sprang the Brooklyn Lyceum, since the Brooklyn Institute.

In May, 1833, Murphy was called to the bar, and entered upon his practice in Brooklyn. The next year he was married to Miss Amelia, the daughter of Richard Greenwood, Esq. He came to the bar with rare faculties, ready for its contests, its vicissitudes, defeats and success. His qualities as a lawyer and advocate, as his practice developed them, were penetrating judgment, quick perception, and even control of his temper, intuitively seizing upon the strong points of a case, and presenting them to the court and jury, with remarkable earnestness and effect. The facility with which he acquired the forms of business were very early exhibited. Business flowed in upon him, until he found himself in the midst of an extensive and lucrative practice.

In 1834, when he had been at the bar but one year, he was appointed Assistant Corporation Counsel, which was the first office he ever held. In the Autumn of that year, he was

chosen a delegate to the Democratic State Convention, held at Herkimer. Immediately upon its organization, he was made, young as he was, chairman of the Committee on Resolutions. This was a splendid compliment to the standing and abilities of the young lawyer; but he was not merely a nominal chairman of that committee, he was its intellect, its brains.

Those were the days of President Jackson's war on the United States Bank; days when timid, temporizing men stood aghast, when bold and far-seeing ones only acted. Among these was Murphy, who reported to the convention a resolution denouncing the bank, and favoring the policy of Jackson. The peculiar language of this resolution brought on a long and exciting debate, in which Mr. Murphy participated, displaying abilities as a political debater that gave him a State reputation as a politician.

That illustrious statesman, Wm. L. Marcy, was then Governor of the State, which was Democratic by a very large majority, and it was therefore natural that the policy of Gen. Jackson should be endorsed by the Herkimer Convention, in the passage of Mr. Murphy's resolution. But, as we have said, exceptions were taken to some of its *verbiage*, which aroused the debate. After its passage, "it was eventually smothered in the report of the convention's proceedings."

It was not long after this before Mr. Murphy was appointed counsel for the city of Brooklyn, which had then just been incorporated.

As Mr. Murphy's father had been instrumental in incorporating Brooklyn as a village, so the son contributed of his best efforts to secure for his birth-place higher civic dignity.

In 1835 Mr. Murphy formed a partnership with John A. Lott, then the leading lawyer in Brooklyn, and subsequently distinguished in the judicial and political history of the State of New York. After some time had elapsed, Judge Vanderbilt came into the firm, and, to use the language of another, "the celebrated firm of Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt commenced a career of honor and prosperity, which continued for over twenty years, enjoying the best practice of Long Island." The firm became wealthy, and soon became the controlling influence of the Democratic party on the Brooklyn side of the East River.

To attempt to note the political career of this firm, would be to write a political history of Brooklyn. Of this political management, Murphy was the master spirit, Lott the legal mind, and Vanderbilt—handsome in person and winning in address—figured as the favorite son of Kings County, and the firm's candidate for Governor for many years. Enough has been said to show that, in that little Front Street office, for a period of over twenty years, many a man's political fortune was made or marred.

Mr. Murphy was active in the formation of the Brooklyn Library. In October, 1841, the *Brooklyn Daily Eagle* and *Kings County Democrat* was started by several prominent Democratic politicians, as a campaign organ. As it proved an unexpected success, its proprietors continued it as a daily paper. In April of the following year, it passed into the hands of Mr. Isaac Van Arden, and it has become, under the name of the *Brooklyn Eagle*, one of the most able and influential papers of the times. Mr. Murphy never lost his interest in this journal, and the contributions of his pen, to it, were frequent, interesting and able.

In 1842 he was chosen Mayor of Brooklyn; he was then 32 years of age. His career as chief magistrate of this city has passed into history. His administration was economical and profitable. As an example of economy, he reduced his own salary as mayor, inaugurating a system of retrenchments

which confined the expenditures of the city within the limits of its income. Under his administration, also, Myrtle avenue, now an old and popular thoroughfare, was opened and paved; and by his hand the acts which may be said to have secured the colossal ware-house system on Brooklyn's water-front, were prepared. In 1844 he was one of the organizers and officers of the Brooklyn Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor.

His administration as Mayor was so popular that he was brought forward as a candidate for Congress, and elected a member from the Second Congressional District. He entered upon his Congressional duties Dec. 4, 1843, closing them March 3, 1845. He was one of the youngest, yet one of the most distinguished of the representatives in that body from New York. Two of his colleagues, Hamilton Fish and Washington Hunt, were afterwards elected Governors of the State.

He at once ardently entered into the duties of his office. On the question of free trade, that of the annexation of Texas, and other great questions that occupied the attention of Congress that year, Mr. Murphy took a distinguished part. He was a free trade advocate, and favored the annexation of Texas, provided Mexico might be afforded an opportunity to give her assent. Through his influence an appropriation for the building of the Naval Dry Dock at Wallabout Bay was secured.

He was a candidate for re-election for the next term, but notwithstanding his singular success on the floor of Congress, he was defeated by Henry L. Seaman. But Mr. Murphy's Congressional career is one of the features of history.

In the year 1844, one of the great measures before the people of the State of New York was a proposed convention for the amendment of the Constitution. There were many things to be said for and against this proposed measure. At this time the Democratic party was approaching the period of its great schism, a division into the Hunker and Barnburner factions. It was then largely dominant in the State, but these factions in the Autumn of 1846 led to its defeat.

A bill for the proposed convention passed the Legislature in 1845, after an exciting and singularly interesting debate.

The convention assembled at the Capitol in the City of Albany, on the 1st day of June, 1846. The delegates from Kings County were Henry C. Murphy, Tunis G. Bergen and Conrad Schwackhammer. This body is remembered in history as enrolling among its members some of the most distinguished jurists in the State.

The career of Mr. Murphy in this convention was a matter of pride to his constituency. He entered the convention with a legislative experience and ability which was at once recognized. On the 30th of June, in committee of the whole, having in consideration the powers and duties of the executive, one of the most important debates of the session took place. The question involved the limitation of the powers of the Governor, the qualifications which rendered a person eligible for that office, and the term for which he should be elected. The ablest members of the convention participated in it, among whom were Charles O'Connor, Ira Harris, Henry C. Murphy, John K. Porter and Alva Worden.

Such was the interest the debate created that the galleries, lobby, and every accessible place in the Assembly chamber were occupied by attentive and interested listeners. It raised those who participated in it above the limits of local reputation to the rank of statesmen. Mr. Murphy's speech was one of the marked features of the debate. Though slightly and imperfectly reported, it attracted general commendation. The State, its institutions, policy, interest and destiny, as connected with its executive, were the topics to which he

gave his attention, and he confined himself to them with an intensity of thought, earnestness of purpose, and cogency of reasoning, that exhibited the statesman, patriot and orator.

In the debate on the questions of the re-organization of the Judiciary, the re-construction of the courts, the abolishment of the Court of Errors, and the abolishment of the Court of Chancery, giving equity powers to the Supreme Court, the election of judges by the people, Mr. Murphy took an important and responsible part; and he will ever be regarded as an able and efficient artisan in the construction of the important measures that subsequently became fundamental laws of the State. His labors in the convention found such ready and hearty recognition, that in the Autumn of 1846 he was elected to Congress by an astonishingly large majority.

It would be the work of supererogation to follow Mr. Murphy's course in his second Congressional term. Suffice it to say he was one of the most conspicuous, laborious and efficient workers of the thirtieth Congress. At the close of his term he was tendered a re-nomination, but his large and rapidly increasing legal business compelled him to decline it. He had little to do with politics until the presidential campaign of 1852 opened. In the Democratic convention held at Baltimore that year he was a prominent candidate for the presidency. Franklin Pierce was his opponent. On the forty-seventh ballot the latter was nominated. Mr. Murphy entered ardently into the canvass in favor of Mr. Pierce, one of its most effective leaders, as he was afterwards in the canvass which resulted in Buchanan's election.

One of the first acts of President Buchanan was the appointment of Mr. Murphy as minister to the Hague. As he had long been identified in the work of rescuing from oblivion the early history of our State, particularly that part which relates to our first colonization by Holland, there was something in the opportunity which this appointment offered eminently congenial to his historic and literary taste, and this was the paramount reason for his accepting the position. Before leaving for this new sphere of action, a farewell banquet was given him at the Mansion House, Brooklyn. It took place August 5, 1857. A large number of his fellow citizens of all parties were present to testify to their high respect for him. The occasion will long be remembered as one of the happiest social events that ever took place in Brooklyn. In response to a sentiment he made a brief, touching, farewell address, in the course of which he used the following prophetic language, which recent events have proved singularly true: "It requires," he said, "no spirit of prophecy to foretell the union of the two cities, of New York and Brooklyn, at no distant day; the river which divides them will soon cease to be a line of separation, and, bestrode by the Colossus of Commerce, will form a link which will bind them together."

During his absence of three years at the Hague, he found time to communicate a series of thirty-five most interesting letters upon Holland and other parts of Europe, for the *Brooklyn Eagle*, many of which were extensively copied in other papers. While in Holland, all hopes of compromising the pending difficulty between the North and the South ended; and, in "accordance with instructions from our Government, in an address to the government of the Hague, he presented an elaborate exposition of the relationship of the States to each other, and to the General Government, clearly pointing out the supremacy of the latter in all matters committed to it by the Constitution, and the equally absolute rights of the States over all matters not delegated to the United States by that instrument; and he also showed that the Rebellion owed its origin chiefly to sectional hate, and the

ambition of its leaders." This paper was published in the *Diplomatic Correspondence* of 1861-2, and was generally considered as the clearest and most statesman-like of any of the statements at that time, made by our representatives abroad.

At the beginning of President Lincoln's administration, he was recalled. Born in a locality which had been hallowed by scenes and associations of the Revolution, almost on those historic fields where Washington, with his feeble army, contended against the steady valor of the British soldiers; not far from the Wallabout, the scene of indescribable suffering and agonizing deaths of thousands of American patriots; living where grand memories thronged about him, his soul was imbued with a lofty love for the Union, and vivid veneration for the great men, the strong men, and the suffering men who won victories which led to the creation of that Union. It is not strange that he returned to his native country, determined to sustain it with every effort, and at all sacrifices.

He was immediately elected to the State Senate, as a Union man, representing his district in that body for ten successive years, and in that body was one of the strongest supporters of the Federal government during the war. Not by words only, but by deeds, did he sustain the Union cause. He encouraged enlistments, paid private bounties to soldiers entering the service, and, through his exertions mainly, the 3d Senatorial Regiment and the 159th New York State Volunteers were put in the field in fighting order. As happens in most cases of eminent jurists and statesmen, occupying places of commanding influence, Mr. Murphy became a subject of invidious comment, by which dull or prejudiced men seek to disparage those gifts, and that influence, which is beyond their own reach; and there were those who sought to injure Mr. Murphy, in attaching blame to certain acts of his while at the Hague, and even launching the arrows of detraction at him while at home.

But these were of short life, and his fair fame emerged from them, and he continued to exercise great influence, much of which was exerted in behalf of his native city; indeed, in no place were improvements deemed to be more necessary than in this city. As has been said, "the war had turned the direction of men's thoughts another way." But upon its close, plans for its improvement began to be suggested, for it was the worst paved, worst lighted, and worst sewered city in the country. To prepare, urge forward and bring these plans to a successful conclusion, the laws necessary for that purpose were entrusted to Senator Murphy. For the space of twelve years' service in the Senate, most of these great measures intimately connected with the advancement of Brooklyn and the County of Kings, were projected by him. It is impossible to turn in any direction, in the city of Brooklyn, without coming in contact with the impress of his hand; his influence is felt on every page of its charter, and it is not too much to say, that Henry C. Murphy's best monument is the city of Brooklyn and what she contains.

"Inscribe my name on the splendid edifices that adorn Athens, which I have aided in erecting," said a great Athenian statesman, "and I will see that the city be relieved from every expense of their erection." "It needs no name of thine inscribed upon them to perpetuate thy name or memory, for both will live immortal and eternal, when the Acropolis and the Parthenon shall have crumbled into ruins," was the reply. So we may say that the name of Henry C. Murphy will live fresh in history, when the splendid adornments of Brooklyn—largely the creation of his intellect and genius—have passed away before "time's effacing finger."

His conspicuous political career in 1866 and again in 1868 brought his name forward as a prominent candidate for Gov-

ernor, but Tweed and his myrmidons defeated his nomination. In 1875, on the expiration of Mr. Fenton's term in the United States Senate, Mr. Murphy's nomination to that place was strongly urged by his friends. Francis Kernan, sustained by the overwhelming influence of Horatio Seymour, was his opponent. For a long time the contest was doubtful, but at last Mr. Kernan was elected. With that struggle, Mr. Murphy's political career mainly ended.

Mr. Murphy represented Kings County in the Constitutional Convention of 1867, as one of the delegates at large. Illness prevented his attending the Convention except a limited time, but in that time, brief as it was, he was one of the most active, eloquent and respected members. This was Murphy's last public official service. It has been said, perhaps with much truth, "that his political career actually culminated with his retirement from the Ministry to the Hague, that the party of his adhesion passed out of power in 1861, and that for Henry C. Murphy there was not, for years, a field for national action.

Entering the State Senate was, after all, entering a narrower field than that in which he had previously won renown. It is true he served his fellow citizens with power and effect, yet for all that, there was a check in his upward career. It must be concluded that for a man having within him the great possibilities he had, his after career was a disappointment. He sought the Governorship; none denied him the abilities to fill the position with honor to himself, and benefit of the people whose choice he apparently was, but the mysterious influences of manipulating politicians, now better understood by the people, thwarted their ambition. With his disappointment in the contest for Senator of the United States, he withdrew from the participation in the politics of the party in which forty years of his life had passed. He escaped the ranks of the highest distinction by the merest chances, and though his life was full of honor and of great deeds, he doubtless felt himself a disappointed man. His temperament may have been an element in this result, for he was neither warm enough nor sympathetic enough to attach to him that devoted following, historical in Henry Clay and Horatio Seymour, and yet both of these men failed in their aspiration for the Presidential chair, as have other great men of the Nation. Mr. Murphy only failed as a politician; in all else his life was a grand success.

The history of the Nation presents few cases where men have been what may be called fully successful in politics; if successful at all, it was only for a brief period, in which, like actors on the stage, they assume habiliments of official superiority, mounting some bad eminence, clothed in brief authority, only to be pushed off into oblivion by some ambitious struggler beneath, who, in his turn, perches upon the slippery place to meet the doom of his predecessor; and so the political struggle goes on, and will go on, in which little, ambitious men, are more likely to achieve success than men of commanding abilities and high attainments.

Place the career of men who have attained political distinction only, against the solid honors won by Henry C. Murphy, and which is the most to be envied? The first was a glittering, ephemeral triumph, followed by forgetfulness; the last is imperishable fame and honor.

A few more words in regard to Mr. Murphy's large-hearted public spirit and enterprise, which have left their impress in the history of his native city, will bring us to another feature in his character and career. Touching his public spirit, we shall use the following language of Dr. STILES, from his memoir of Senator Murphy before mentioned.

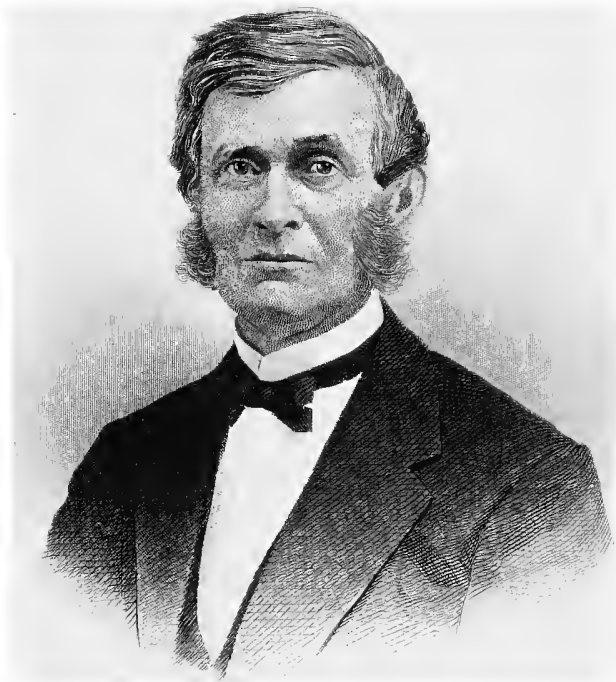
"Shortly after the war the plan of a bridge over the East River was projected, the founder of which was William C.

Kingsley. Into this enterprise Mr. Murphy threw himself with great energy, and enlisted the interest of his friends. In its inception it was a private enterprise, and all who engaged in it invested their private funds. He was chosen president of the company at the beginning, and when it was changed from a private undertaking to a public work, he was made one of its trustees, and the president thereof, which position he retained to the last. The history of this enterprise is too fresh in the minds of the people to require extended remarks. To it he gave more of his personal attention than to any of the other affairs in which he was engaged; and in the minds of the people, superficially at least, his name will be more closely identified with this work than with anything else in the future. Next to this he took great interest in the recent development of Coney Island, and as president of the Brooklyn, Flatbush and Coney Island Railway Company, assumed the personal charge of the more important matters connected with its business, even to the repair of its rolling stock, and the extension of its accommodations for the public at Brighton Beach. To the Bridge office, the Coney Island Railway office, and those of the Brooklyn City Railroad and the Union Ferry Company, he made a visit almost every day—showing activity in attention to business remarkable for one of his years."

Thus with fidelity and diligence, not exceeded by any man in public or private life, for at least thirty-five years, Henry C. Murphy gave his powers, learning and acquirements to the public service with a purity, zeal and ability which, however men may have differed with him politically or in regard to some of his measures, entitle him to the honor and gratitude of posterity. As was said of Rufus Choate: "He did not, like most eminent lawyers and legislators, content himself with the learning or the fame of his profession, or that of the politician; he was true to his scholarly instincts and habits through his whole life—in a word, he was a man of letters. He was familiar with the whole range of English literature, and the literature of antiquity." His wide and varied circle of reading not only gave a liberal expansion to his mind, but it endowed him with a wealth of choice, but unstudied language, and a facility of illustration quite equal to most of the public speakers and writers of his day. His contributions to the press were always highly appreciated and admired, read with avidity, and greatly enriched contemporary literature; many of his productions have a standard existence, and will have a place in the history of the future.

He was for a long time, as we have seen, editor of the *Brooklyn Advocate*, afterwards the *Brooklyn Eagle*, of which he was, for several years, the proprietor. His pen embellished and enriched the pages of several of the leading American monthlies, among which were the *Democratic Review*, *The North American Review*, the *Atlantic Monthly*, and the *Historical Magazine*.

His specialty of study was the early history of America, particularly upon the explorations upon the coast which led to the settlement of the country by the Europeans; and this led him to greatly delight in studying the relations of the Dutch Republic upon the opening and settling of this New Continent. With these subjects in view, he commenced at an early period in his life, the collection of a library from which he could draw his material. Of this collection we have a memorial modestly entitled, "*A Catalogue of an American Library, Chronologically Arranged*," consisting of fifty-eight pages (18mo, large margin) giving 589 titles. A manuscript note on the fly-leaf of the copy in the possession of the Rhode Island Historical Society bears the following note: "This catalogue contains a list of books relating to



HON. HENRY C. MURPHY.

America, printed before 1800, in my library at the time it was prepared, about ten years ago. Since that time the number has been greatly enlarged, but I have as yet not catalogued it. June, 1863. H. C. M." This may be considered his first printed work. A description, even a brief one, of all the writings and published works of Mr. Murphy would occupy several pages. We will, however, mention one or two, viz.: *Henry Hudson in Holland. An Inquiry into the Origin and Object of the Voyages which led to the Discovery of the Hudson River. With Bibliographical Notes* (8vo, 72 pp. Portrait of Dirckvan Os).

In 1867, the appearance of a fine volume, entitled "*A Journal of a Voyage to New York and a Tour in Several of the American Colonies, in 1679-80. By Jasper Dankers and Peter Shuyter, of Wiewerd, in Friesland. Translated from the Original Manuscript in Dutch, for the Long Island Historical Society, and Edited by Henry C. Murphy, Foreign Corresponding Secretary of the Society*," testified at once to his continued interest in the historic lore of the Nieuw Netherlands, and to his love for the society of which he was a founder and a distinguished member. This was the translation of an exceedingly curious manuscript, which by some fortuitous circumstance had escaped damage and destruction, and which he discovered in the possession of Mr. Frederick Müller, a book-seller of Amsterdam, by whom its intrinsic historical interest does not seem to have been appreciated. It forms the first of three volumes of Transactions, which this young but energetic Society has thus far published.

In regard to Mr. Murphy's connection with the Long Island Historical Society, the distinguished writer to whom we have so often referred says: "His name stands at the head of the eight persons who, on Feb. 14, 1864, issued a circular calling for a meeting to establish a 'Long Island Historical Society,' which should 'discover, procure and preserve the three-fold Indian, Dutch and English History of the Island, and whatever may relate to the general history, to the natural, civil, ecclesiastical, and literary history of the United States, the State of New York, and more particularly of the counties, towns, cities and villages of Long Island.' His life-long friend, Alden M. Spooner (to whom the credit of the suggestion is preëminently due), Judge John Greenwood, John Winslow, Judge Joshua M. Van Cott (representing Kings County), R. C. McCormick, Jr., and Henry Onderdonk, Jr., the historian (representing Queens County), and Judge Henry P. Hedges (of Suffolk County)—all but one of whom were lawyers—were those who were connected with him in this movement. In the first three years of the Society's existence, during which I was its librarian, I saw much of Mr. Murphy. His office was on the floor below the Society's rooms, in the Hamilton Building, and was easily reached by a rear door from our rooms. It was then a very usual thing for Mr. Murphy, as he came in from Bay Ridge in the morning, if he had any little business at our rooms, to pass through the library on his way to his office; and not infrequently, he would escape from the cares of business, to spend an hour amid the books, or in chatting pleasantly with some of his old friends upon historic and literary matters. No one who has only seen Mr. Murphy in public, or in business relations, can imagine how changed a man he appeared in these infrequent hours of ease. Usually, in the street, or in his office, his countenance wore a wearied, stern and somewhat disappointed aspect, which did not invite approach. But seated in some snug corner of the library, surrounded by the bookish atmosphere which he loved so well, and by old friends and tried, all this hardness fell off from him, and his face was transfigured for the time by animation and humor.

His contributions of books, from time to time, were numerous and valuable; and I recall how carefully he remembered, amid a great pressure of private business, to attend to the calls which I occasionally ventured to make upon him for the loan of some choice book or rare pamphlet. He seemed never to forget any promise of this sort. I cannot but incorporate on these pages the discriminating estimate of his relations and services to the Long Island Historical Society, expressed in the Minute adopted by that body, December 11th, 1882, as follows:

"His interest in the institution, from its commencement to the present, has been of essential and continual benefit to it, and to its library. He has been a generous contributor to it, both in books for its collection, and of money for its treasury. He has personally and successfully solicited aid for it at the different conjunctures when it has been in urgent need of relief or of enlargement. His counsels concerning its administration have always been intelligent, liberal and candid, marked by an affectionate solicitude for its welfare, and the desire for constant expansion in its plans and work. His attendance at the meetings of the Board and of the Society has been regular and punctual, when public duties have not altogether occupied his attention; and his courtesy in discussion has uniformly corresponded with his generosity in action, and with the courageous wisdom of his plans."

It need not, perhaps, be added, from what we have seen, that Mr. Murphy was, to a wonderful degree, industrious—prompt and faithful in the discharge of all his duties, public and private. He was honest in the full Roman meaning of that word—free from tricks and fraud. No one could suspect the purity of his motives, or seek by improper means to influence his conduct. He might be misled by prejudice, or party bias, or local interests, but never by personal interest, or by hope of it. He was not a politician in the sense of the word as it is now used—a man of platitudes, sophistry and low cunning; he did not always use the artifice of silence; he was a politician versed in the science of government, familiar with all the laws and usages which govern our intercourse with foreign nations, interested in questions affecting internal improvements, and carefully informed on all financial subjects. His popular addresses drew the attention of willing, earnest listeners, which soon found through the press a far wider acceptance. His arguments at the bar and in the Legislature were always strong, effective, pregnant with meaning, unadorned with rhetorical drapery, and like a Tuscan column, beautiful in their elegance, and grand in their simplicity.

Mr. Murphy's home life was the most hearty, cheerful and affectionate which could be imagined, and in that circle where men are best known he was most loved and most appreciated. Kind, familiar, often jocose; sensitive, with almost feminine susceptibility, his home was his retreat from the cares and turmoil of business, and he loved it as few men love their homes.

But in the midst of all his usefulness and activity he was, after a brief illness, summoned from the scenes of earth. He died at his residence in Remsen street, Brooklyn, on the morning of December 1st, 1882, leaving surviving him his widow, and his only children, Henry C. and George I. Murphy. These gentlemen are highly respectable members of the Brooklyn Bar, and were for several years associated with their distinguished father in the practice of law.

We need not say that he died deeply lamented; it could hardly be otherwise with a man who had stood so long and prominently before the public. The numerous public demonstrations of respect to his memory, by the bar, the judicial

tribunals, deliberative bodies and popular assemblies, which followed the announcement of his death, attested the high esteem in which he was held and the most unfeigned sorrow for his loss. In private circles, too, evidence of profound sorrow was everywhere manifested. The world's applause, which had sounded loudly in his ears, subdued by sorrow, was mingled with the requiem for the dead.

Finally, deducting whatever truth may demand for his faults—a deduction he never omitted—there remains the imperishable record of a memorable career. Though he did not grasp all that his ambition prompted, he attained much that the highest ambition aims to grasp, and that heroes die to obtain—a fadeless, historic name.

List of County Officials.*—Having given a history of the county buildings of Kings County used in the administration of Justice, a history of the early courts, periods of their organization, and a description of some of the trials and other proceedings conducted therein, with biographical sketches of the judges, lawyers and other officers of these courts, with the present bar of Kings County; we now proceed to name the judicial, ministerial and other officers who were, and are, connected with the machinery of justice in the County.

JUDICIAL OFFICERS. (WEST RIDING, UNDER THE
"DUKE'S LAWS.")

John Manning,	James Hubbard,
Richard Betts,	Ellert Elbertson,
Samuel Spicer,	James Cortelleau,
	Rulof Martin.

JUSTICES UNDER THE COMMISSION OF GOVERNOR
ANDROS, 1688.

Stephen Van Cortland, *Judge of the Court of Pleas.*
James Cortelleau, William Morris,
Gerardus Beekman, Nicholas Stillwell.

JUSTICE OF THE QUORUM.

Under the law of 1691, and the ordinance of 1699:
Gerardus Beekman.

JUDGES OF THE COMMON PLEAS.

APPOINTED	
Gerardus Beekman.....	1700
Jacobus Van Cortland.....	Oct. 1702
Nicolas Stillwell.....	1710
Cornelius Seabring.....	Nov. 13, 1716
Cornelius van Brunt.....	1718
Peter Strycker.....	1720
Daniel Polhemus.....	1722
Peter Cortileau.....	1724
Samuel Garretsen.....	1729
Ryck Suydam.....	1732
Christopher Codwisc.....	Feb. 24, 1738
Johannes Lott.....	1742
Abraham Lott.....	1745
Isaac Seabring.....	1749-'52
Samuel Garretsen, Barnabus Ryder, Chas.	
De Bevoise, 1752-61.....	Oct. 13, 1749

* Biographies of other members of the Kings County Bar will appear in the *History of the Bench and Bar of Brooklyn*, in another part of this work.

APPOINTED	
Abraham Schenck.....	Oct. 9, 1767
John Lefferts.....	May 9, 1770
John Lefferts, Jeremiah Remsen, Philip	
Nagil.....	1770-77
Englebert Lott, Jeremiah Vanderbilt,	
Theodorus Polhemus.....	1777-80

JUDGES OF THE COMMON PLEAS (*since the Revolution*).

APPOINTED.	
Nicholas Covenhoven.....	March 28, 1785
Johannes E. Lott.....	June 11, 1793
John Skillman.....	March 15, 1805
Wm. Furman.....	Feb'y 28, 1808
Leffert Lefferts.....	Feb'y 10, 1823
Peter Radeliff.....	Feb'y 21, 1827
John Dikeman.....	April 21, 1830
Nathan B. Morse.....	April 30, 1833
John A. Lott.....	April 18, 1838
John Greenwood.....	Jan. 27, 1843
John Vanderbilt.....	May 1, 1844

COUNTY JUDGES UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1846.

Wm. Rockwell awarded the certificate of election, June, 1847—the first election under the Constitution of 1846. His election was contested by Samuel E. Johnson, in whose favor the Circuit Court decided on Oct. 28, 1848.

ELECTED.	
Samuel E. Johnson.....	Oct 28, 1848
Henry A. Moore.....	Nov. 1851
Samuel D. Morris.....	" 1855
Samuel Garrison.....	" 1859
John Dikeman.....	" 1863
James Troy.....	" 1867
Henry A. Moore*.....	" 1871

DISTRICT ATTORNEYS.

By an act passed Feb. 12th, 1796, the State was divided into seven districts, in each of which an assistant Attorney-General was to be appointed by the Governor and Council, to hold during their pleasure, and to perform the duties previously required of the Attorney-General and his deputy. Kings County, with Suffolk, Queens, Richmond and Westchester, were embraced in the 1st district. Nathaniel Lawrence, appointed Feb., 1796, and Cadwallader D. Colden—afterwards a distinguished mayor and judicial officer of the city of New York—were the prosecuting officers for the 1st district.

In 1801 the office of District Attorney was created, the State being divided, as before, into seven districts. The prosecuting attorneys under this law were

Richard Ryker.....	Appointed Aug. 19, 1801
Cadwallader D. Colden.....	" Feb. 13, 1810
Richard Ryker.....	Re-appointed Feb. 10, 1811
Barnet Gardinier.....	Appointed March 5, 1813
Thomas Lester.....	" April 8, 1815

* Served by re-election down to present time, 1883.

As the County of Kings was retained in the 1st District, these gentlemen, under this law, as well as under the previous law, appeared in the criminal courts of this county, conducting in them the trial of criminals.

On the 21st of April, 1818, each county was made a separate district. Under the Constitution of 1821, District Attorneys were appointed by the Court of Common Pleas and General Sessions in each county. By the provision of the Constitution of 1846, they were elected by the people, for the term of three years.

DISTRICT ATTORNEYS APPOINTED BY THE ACT OF 1818,
AND UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1821,
FOR KINGS COUNTY.

APPOINTED	
James B. Clark.....	March 2, 1819
Nathan B. Morse.....	April 26, 1830
Wm. Rockwell.....	— —, 1833
Nathan B. Morse.....	June 3, 1839

DISTRICT ATTORNEYS ELECTED UNDER THE CONSTITUTION OF 1846, IN THE COUNTY OF KINGS.

APPOINTED	
Harmanus B. Duryea.....	June, 1847
Richard C. Underhill.....	Nov., 1853
John G. Schumaker.....	Nov., 1856
John Winslow.....	Nov., 1859
Samuel D. Morris.....	Nov., 1862
Winchester Britton.....	Nov., 1871
Thomas H. Rodman.....	Feb. 21, 1874
John Winslow.....	May 9, 1874
Winchester Britton.....	Nov., 1874
Isaac S. Catlin*.....	Nov., 1877

COUNTY CLERKS.

These officers, under the Colonial Government, were appointed by the Governor-General. Their duties differed from the present clerk, in many respects. They were, however, clerks of some of the courts.

After the Revolution, they were appointed by the Council of Appointment, and they performed the duties of Clerks of the Court of Common Pleas. By an act, February 12th, 1796, they were made Clerks of the Supreme Court at Nisi Prisi, or trial terms, and of the Oyer and Terminer in the different counties. The present Constitution makes them Clerks of the Supreme Court in their several counties. Since 1822, they have been elected for a term of three years.

COUNTY CLERKS FOR KINGS COUNTY.

APPOINTED	
John West.....	1671
Peter Smith.....	1682
John Knight.....	1684
Jacobus Vandewater.....	1687
Henry Filkin.....	1704
John M. Sterling.....	1715
Adrien Hageman.....	1726
Simon Boerum.....	1750

* Re-elected 1880.

APPOINTED	
John Rapelje.....	1775
Jacob Sharpe, Jr.....	1784
Leffert Lefferts, Jr.....	April 5, 1800
Abraham Vanderveer.....	Feb. 24, 1816

ELECTED	
Joseph Dean.....	Feb. 14, 1821
Abraham Vanderveer.....	Nov., 1822
Charles E. Bulkley.....	" 1837
Adrian Hegeman.....	" 1840
John M. Hicks.....	" 1843
Francis B. Stryker.....	" 1849
Charles A. Denike.....	" 1852
Wm. H. Campbell.....	" 1855
Charles W. Thomas.....	" 1858
John N. Stearns.....	" 1861
John J. White.....	" 1864
George G. Herman.....	" 1870
George G. Herman.....	" 1873
John Delmar.....	" 1876
Charles B. Elliott.....	" 1879
Rodney Thursby.....	" 1882

SURROGATES.

The Court now known as Surrogate's Court, which concerns itself only in the probate of wills, and matters relating to the administration of the estates of intestates, was known, during the Colonial Period, as THE PREROGATIVE COURT.

Then, the authority to grant probates of wills was vested by the Duke's Laws, in the Court of Assizes; Courts of Sessions; the Mayor's Court also exercising like jurisdiction. Where the estate exceeded £100, the will and other instruments of administration, were recorded with the Provincial Secretary in the city of New York. Granting probates being a part of the royal prerogative, was subsequently reserved, by the royal instructions, to the Governor, or person administering the government. In accordance with this principle, the Legislature passed a law, November 11th, 1692, directing that all probates and letters of administration be thenceforth granted by the Governor or his delegate, under the seal of the prerogative office, and that two freeholders should be elected or appointed in each town, to have charge of the estates of intestates, which duty, under the Duke's Laws, had been performed by the constable, overseers and justices. All wills relating to estates in Kings, and several other counties, were to be proved at New York; in the more remote counties, the Court of Common Pleas was authorized to take the proof and transmit the papers to the record office for probate. In 1750, the provision was extended to Orange, and subsequently to the more remote northern counties. Surrogates, with limited powers, were appointed in other counties at an earlier date.

After the Revolution, Surrogates were appointed for an unlimited time by the Council of Appointment,

until 1821, when the appointing power was given to the Governor and Senate, and the term limited to four years.

The Constitution of 1846 directs the duties of Surrogate to be performed by the County Judge, excepting those counties whose population exceeds 40,000, in which the Legislature may provide for the election of a separate officer to perform the duties of Surrogate.

The Surrogate, or Judge of Probate, is one of the most important judicial officers in the State of New York. Cases of greater intricacy come up for adjudication in his court than that of any other tribunal; for the law touching the proof and construction of wills, of the settlements of estates, the powers and duties of executors and administrators, and often that of trustees, are among some of the questions that are constantly submitted to the Surrogate for his adjudication.

The *first* SURROGATE of Kings County, after the Revolution, was Johannes E. Lott, appointed April 6th, 1787. His successors were :

APPOINTED.	
James Lefferts.....	June 11, 1793
William Livingston.....	Jan. 16, 1800
John C. Vanderveer.....	March 16, 1814
Jeremiah Lott.....	March 29, 1814
Richard Cornwell.....	Feb. 26, 1832
Alden Spooner.....	April 26, 1841
Alonzo G. Hammond.....	May 3, 1845
Andrew B. Hodges*.....	June, 1847
Jesse C. Smith.....	Nov., 1850
Rodman B. Dawson.....	" 1854
Roswell C. Brainard.....	" 1858
William D. Vedder†.....	" 1866
Walter L. Livingston‡.....	" 1876
Abraham H. Daily.....	May 12, 1877
Walter L. Livingston.....	Nov., 1877

SHERIFF.

The office of sheriff is one of the oldest known in the history of the State, as well as the most important. He is an executive officer. Among his many duties are those of enforcing order in a court-room, and executing the writs, other processes and orders of the court; he has custody of the jail and its inmates; and of the court-house. In fact, through him the whole, or nearly the whole, procedure of the bench and the bar and the other machinery of justice are carried into effect. Under the Dutch government, the only divisions in the State were the city and towns. In 1665, a district or

* Mr. Hodges resigned January 1st, 1850, and Jesse C. Smith was appointed in his place.

†At the expiration of his term, Mr. Vedder was re-elected for another term.

‡There was a contest over the election of Mr. Livingston, which occupied the attention of the Supreme Court for a long time, resulting in an order for his removal from the office. Mr. Livingston appealed from the judgment of the Supreme Court removing him from office to the Court of Appeals, which reversed the judgment of the Supreme Court and granted him a new trial, and making an order re-instating him in office pending the new trial. But, as Mr. Livingston's opponent abandoned the contest, the new trial never took place, and Mr. Livingston was left in quiet enjoyment of his office.

Sheriffalty, called Yorkshire, was erected. It comprised Long Island, Staten Island, and a part of Westchester county. For judicial purposes, this sheriffalty was divided into three *Ridings*. The East Riding comprised the county of Suffolk; the West Riding, Staten Island, Kings county, Newtown and a part of Westchester; the North Riding, all the present county of Queens, except Newtown. A sheriff was appointed for each of these Ridings.

The Ridings were abolished by the act of 1683, and *counties* erected in their place, as follows: Albany, Cornwall, Dukes, Dutchess, Kings, New York, Orange, Queens, Richmond, Suffolk, Ulster and Westchester.

In each of these counties the office of sheriff was retained, with duties and powers as we have described.

The first sheriff of Kings County was Richard Stillwell, appointed in 1705, by Edward Hyde, Lord Viscount Cornbury, Governor of the colony of New York.

The successors of Stillwell were

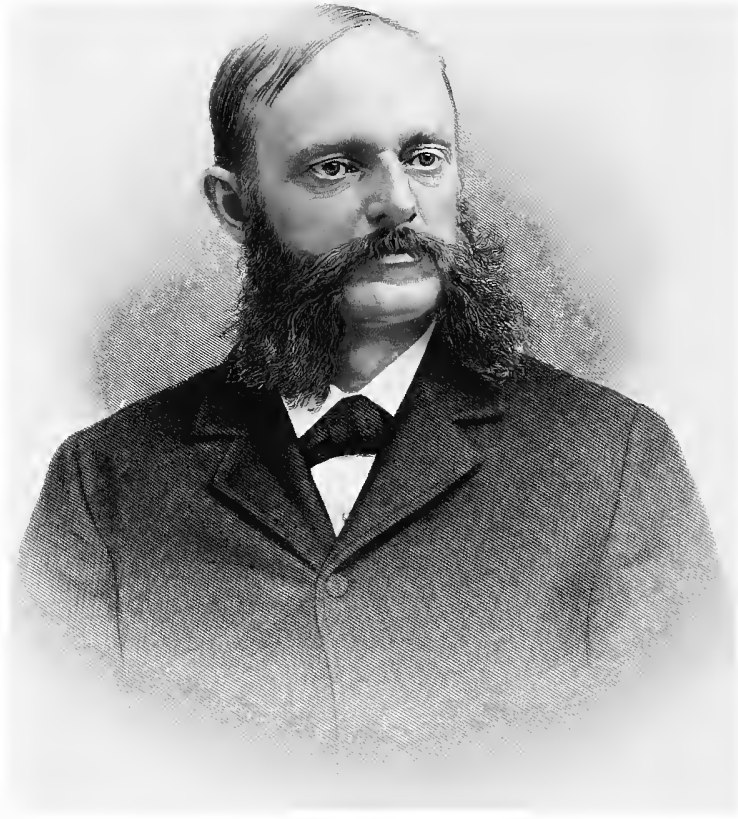
APPOINTED	
Tunis Lott.....	1717
Dominicus Vanderveer.....	1717
Jacob Rider.....	1749
Moweris Lott.....	1754
Rem Vanderbilt.....	1760
Jeremiah Vanderbilt.....	1763
Alexander Forbus.....	1767

Rutger Van Brunt, appointed February 4th, 1770—the last of the colonial sheriffs—himself and all his predecessors were appointed by the colonial governors. Andrew Elliot, the last colonial governor of the colony of New York, in assuming to discharge the duties of that office in 1783, appointed a person by the name of Cornelius Vincent, sheriff of Kings County; but the government under the Continental Congress, refused to recognize Elliot as governor, having been appointed by the Crown. The people of Kings County, therefore, utterly disregarded Vincent as Sheriff of the county. He made a few attempts to discharge the duties of the office, but was violently resisted by the people, as a tory officer under the British King.

From 1775 to February 4th, 1784, there is no record of a sheriff having been appointed in Kings County, though doubtless such an officer was appointed during the Revolutionary war, by some act of the State Legislature.

The *FIRST* SHERIFF appointed after the Revolution, of which there was any record, was William Boerum, appointed Feb. 4, 1784. His successors in office were :

APPOINTED	
Peter Vandervoort.....	Sept. 28, 1785
Charles Turnbull.....	Dec. 29, 1788
John Vanderveer.....	March 8, 1791
Cornelius Bergen.....	Feb. 18, 1793
Peter S. Cortelyou.....	Feb. 7, 1797
Cornelius Bergen.....	Feb. 17, 1800
John Schoonmaker.....	Feb. 16, 1804



engr. by H. P. H. 1872

Lewis R. Stegman

	APPOINTED
Benjamin Birdsall.....	March 9, 1807
John Dean.....	Feb. 26, 1810
Abiel Titus.....	Feb. 5, 1811
William D. Creed.....	June 5, 1811
John Dean.....	March 23, 1813
Lawrence Brower.....	March 28, 1815
Jacob Garrison.....	March 19, 1817
John Wyckoff.....	Aug. 29, 1817
John F. Bergen.....	Feb. 12, 1821
John T. Bergen.....	Nov., 1822
John Wyckoff.....	" 1825
John T. Bergen.....	" 1828
John Lawrence.....	March 15, 1831
John Van Dyne.....	Nov., 1834
William M. Udall.....	" 1837
Francis B. Stryker.....	" 1840

	APPOINTED
William Jenkins.....	Nov., 1843
Daniel Van Voorhies.....	" 1846
Andrew B. Hodges.....	" 1849
Englebert Lott.....	" 1852
Jerome Ryerson.....	" 1855
Burdett Stryker*.....	" 1857
George Remsen.....	April, 1857
Anthony F. Campbell.....	Nov., 1860
John McNamee.....	" 1863
Patrick Campbell.....	" 1866
Andrew Walter.....	" 1869
Aras G. Williams.....	" 1872
Albert Daggett.....	" 1875
Thomas M. Riley.....	" 1878
Lewis R. Stegman.....	" 1881

NOTE.—We desire to express our obligation to Rev. R. G. STRONG, the author of the *History of Flatbush*, in this volume, for details concerning the early county court-buildings in that town, which we have incorporated in this chapter. Also, for the sketch of the old court-house on page 341, which was *constructed* (there being no picture of it extant) from his careful investigations, aided by the recollections of a few "oldest inhabitants."

L. B. PROCTOR, Esq., *Author*.

HENRY R. STILES, M. D., *Editor*.

LEWIS R. STEGMAN.—Col. Stegman was born January 18th, 1840, in the city of New York, on the site of the present Produce Exchange, at the corner of Water and Moore streets. He comes of old Hanoverian stock, his parents being originally from the banks of the Weser river, tracing their family back six hundred years to the old Saxon times. The colonel, when a boy, received a thorough academical education, which was followed by extensive journeyings through the States; thus he early in life gained the knowledge and experience that laid the foundation of future success. He chose the law as his profession, but ill-health from overwork compelled him to relinquish his studies for a time and adopt an out-of-door pursuit, civil engineering. He made one of the most complete maps of New York State ever published. During these years he was also connected with the press of New York and New Jersey as reporter, editor and sketch-writer. Young as he was, his abilities and progressive ideas made him a member of the firm of Bailly and Stegman. For two years he was associated in business with the renowned and genial poet, Edmund C. Stedman, giving rise to a warm friendship which still exists. Returning to the law, he practiced until the breaking out of the rebellion in 1861, when he patriotically joined the ranks as a private. His colonel sent him on a recruiting expedition in which he was successful, and he was made captain of the company he had raised, departing with his regiment, the 102d N. Y. Volunteers, to the seat of war. He participated in the defense of Harper's Ferry, and the repulse of "Stonewall" Jackson from Maryland

Heights. At Cedar Mountain, August 9th, 1862, he was shot in the head and carried from the field as dead. Partially recovering, he rejoined his regiment, and with bandaged head, fought at Antietam, in September, 1862.

He went through the engagements of Winchester, Hillsboro' and Chancellorsville, under General Henry W. Slocum. At Gettysburg, after his colonel was shot, he took command of his regiment, though wounded in the neck. In the same year he fought through Wauhatchie, Tenn., and Lookout Mountain, when he led the skirmish line by General Geary's especial direction, and with Lieut. E. G. Davis, was the first commissioned officer to reach the summit. These battles were soon followed by Mission Ridge, Pea Vine creek, and Ringgold, where he led the last charge in the Chattanooga campaign, capturing and saving two bridges under severe fire, preserving the Union communications and receiving special mention from "Fighting Joe" Hooker and General Geary. At the close of this campaign he was specially detailed to take his regiment home on veteran furlough. In midwinter, through many difficulties, he landed them in New York without the loss or injury of a man. In 1864 Sherman's "march to the sea" was made with young Stegman as major, promoted for gallant conduct at Lookout Mountain. Next came the battles of Rocky Face Ridge and Resaca, where, in the face of the whole Confederate army, he captured four guns of the famous Washington battery of Louisiana. At Cassville and New Hope Church, he was selected by General Hooker to lead the "forlorn hope" against the enemy's batteries. At Ackworth bridge

and Pine Mountain he commanded the advance, in the latter engagement receiving a wound in the right thigh, which disabled him for the remainder of the campaign. After his recovery, he joined General Hancock in the Shenandoah valley, and there received from President Lincoln his commissions as lieutenant colonel and colonel by brevet. In the field he was the most popular officer in his division, and probably the best known in the corps, as he not only took a prominent part in every engagement, but also served as Judge Advocate on the staffs of General Geary and General Hancock with such ability as to receive the commendation of Judge Advocate General Holt. At the close of active service following Lee's surrender, Colonel Stegman was placed in command of Fort Marshall, near Baltimore, and then of Fort McHenry. Here he was again engaged as Judge Advocate in one of the heaviest cases prosecuted by the government. Returning to civil life in 1866, though tendered a position in the regular army, he took up his residence in Brooklyn. Instead of resuming the law he entered the shipping business for three years. Under President Grant's administration he filled for five years a responsible and onerous position in the naval office, New York city, with credit for his able management and receiving several promotions.

In every position in life he has manifested great executive ability and power in accomplishing results. In 1872 he was one of the main promoters and managers of the very successful "Kings County Fair" at the Rink, being afterwards elected recording secretary of the incorporated society. While in the naval office he devoted his leisure to editing two papers, one of which, the "*American Journal*," was published nearly three years.

The colonel afterwards engaged in mercantile pursuits, until appointed under-sheriff of Kings County by

Sheriff Albert Daggett. In 1878 he was a prominent candidate for sheriff, but was defeated by Jacob Worth in the convention by a few votes. He was elected to the assembly of 1879 from the old sixth district by a handsome majority. Returning to the law, he made admiralty practice a specialty, also interesting himself in the southern lumber trade. In 1881 he was triumphantly elected sheriff on the republican ticket by 5,000 majority, though his democratic opponent, Francis A. White, was a very honorable and capable gentleman. Col. Stegman still holds his office, and discharges its duties as thoroughly and acceptably as he has done in his former positions.

In Masonry, Col. Stegman has taken the various degrees of the Blue Lodge, Royal Arch Chapter and Knight Templar, belonging to Joppa Lodge, Manhattan Chapter, St. Elmo Commandery. He was formerly a prominent member of the Grand Lodge of the Knights of Pythias. He has been identified with the Grand Army of the Republic since its inception in the State, filling responsible positions in subordinate and state bodies. He has been called to places of trust in several of the great charitable organizations of the day. In Brooklyn, in New York and other States he is well known as a speaker and lecturer, in the latter case always for church or charity benefits. Col. Stegman is a member of the Lutheran church, and takes a decided interest in all church work, irrespective of denomination. In person, Col. Stegman is above the medium height, with spare frame, light complexion and a blue eye, beaming with kindness and generosity that accord well with his many brave deeds in tent and field. Of unassuming manners, his genial disposition, grand military record, and unimpeachable character have won for him hosts of friends among all classes of men, and unbounded respect wherever his name is known.

JOHN DELMAR.—Ex-County Clerk John Delmar was born in Ireland, September 6th, 1838, and accompanied his parents to the United States in 1849, since when he has been continuously a resident of Brooklyn.

About 1860, Mr. Delmar engaged in the milk trade, opening an office at the corner of Second avenue and Ninth street, and continued in the business about three years.

Mr. Delmar, who had long taken an active interest in local and municipal affairs, was appointed chief clerk to Superintendent of the Poor, John Delany, and served in that capacity about four years. In 1867, he was elected Justice of the Peace of the first district to fill an unexpired term, and was re-elected to the same office for two subsequent terms. In 1876, he was elected County Clerk of Kings County, serving

with credit and to the satisfaction of all classes until the expiration of his term.

In 1881, Mr. Delmar opened a real estate and insurance office at the corner of Fifth avenue and Ninth street, which has become well known in his section of the city, and also deals quite extensively in wood and coal.

For several years Mr. Delmar was connected with the old Volunteer Fire Department of Brooklyn, and during two years was foreman of Eureka Hose Company, No. 14, which position he resigned in 1867.

Politically, Mr. Delmar has been a life-long Democrat, and has, since his majority, been active in the conduct of the affairs of the Twenty-second ward, having for some years past been the recognized leader of his party therein.



John Delmar



Ex. 2, A.H. F. 1001

Chas. D. Lewis

CHARLES B. ELLIOTT, Ex-County Clerk.—It is natural for Americans to honor and respect the self-made man in all vocations of life; but especially is this the case in one whose duties and positions have made him a citizen of prominence among his fellow-men. Judge Charles B. Elliott's career is a type and an emblem of that experience which many young men are called on to pass through in their battle of life; and its perusal not only points its own moral, but serves as an encouraging example to others. He was born in the city of New York, in 1829, but when a mere boy of fourteen his parents died, leaving him, thus early in life, with scant resources, to face the world. But, blessed with great self-reliance and perseverance, he overcame all obstacles. It is unnecessary to remark that he has retained these qualifications, in a marked degree, through life. When a young man he was a member of American Engine 6, of New York, and subsequently, after his removal to Brooklyn, he was assistant engineer of the Brooklyn Fire Department for four years. During the civil war he held a commission, as captain of the Fire Zouaves, in Gen. Sickles' brigade, serving with honor and distinction for two and a half years.

Charles B. Elliott has always been prominently identified with the aquatics of this country, especially its boating interests. Nearly a quarter of a century ago he engaged in building racing shells; and his boats, in consequence of being built from his own drawings and lines, on mathematical and scientific principles, soon won distinction and favor for their lightness, speed, and perfect models. A combination of such qualities in his shells soon rendered him the most popular builder in the country; and Harvard, Yale, and all the principal colleges, gave his shells the preference, particularly when they desired boats for important championship contests. All the crack boat clubs in this section of the country who made any pretension to racing had Elliott's shells, and professional oarsmen vied with amateurs in their appreciation of his boats. One secret of his great success arose from the fact of his being the first builder to depart from the English model, and build on original, or American lines. His swivel row-locks and patent steering gear are not only popular, but have been universally adopted in this country and abroad.

As a patron and promoter of rowing he has had no superior; and for the status which we enjoy to-day in this respect, both at home and abroad, we are indebted to him as much as to any other individual. In the days when the regattas on the Harlem river attracted thousands of spectators and general public interest, he organized some of the most noted four-oared crews ever known in New York waters; among them we can recall the "Skylark," "Americus," "Hop Up," and the "George J. Brown."

Mr. Elliott accompanied the Harvards to England. In addition to his shell, which they took over with them, he lined out a boat here, taking the draft and frame of her over in a trunk, and building it and launching it in fourteen days. The model, lightness, workmanship, and the short time in which the boat was put together, excited universal comment; but the experts in boats and boat-building in England pronounced the model and workmanship superior to anything they had seen previously. The race was rowed on the 27th of August, 1869, in four-oared shells, over the Putney-Mortlake course. The Harvards were Joseph S. Fay,

Francis O. Lyman, W. H. Simmons, and A. P. Loring, stroke; Arthur Burnham, coxswain. The Oxfords were F. Wilan, A. C. Yarborough, J. C. Tinne, S. D. Darbshire, stroke; J. H. Hall, coxswain. Oxford won, after a good race, by a length, in 22m., 20 $\frac{3}{4}$ s.

His penchant for yachts and yachting is only second to his love for boating, and his celebrated sloop "Mistake," one of the fastest boats of her size in our waters, demonstrated that he possessed the same talent and skill for modeling yachts which he displayed for so long a period in designing racing shells. In a number of races the "Mistake" has displayed sailing qualities which place her, beyond question, in the front rank among the crack boats of her dimensions. And a noted and experienced critic on yachting—Captain R. L. Coffin—on the occasion of her launch, spoke in great praise of her model and lines. The fact of the "Mistake" being a clinker-built boat instead of smooth sides, was deemed by a great many an innovation. But her sailing qualities, in competition with our best boats, fully justified her builder's theory and originality. Previous to building the "Mistake," he turned out a most excellent boat in the sloop "Charles A. Cornell," for the Americans Club. This craft, when in racing trim and rig, always exhibited first-rate sailing and weatherly qualities.

Among his models, nothing has attracted greater attention from those interested in ocean steam navigation than the one he has constructed which is designed to cross the Atlantic in six days. This model is sixty feet long, nine feet wide, and three feet deep. Mr. Lorillard is so favorably impressed with this model, that he intends building a large steamer on similar lines, which vessel will be the pioneer of a new and fast line of ocean steamships.

Although the pastimes of a nation may be deemed by some a matter of trifling import, the stern fact remains unchallenged that a people who excel in the broad field of health-giving recreations also lead the world in science, commerce, manufactures, intelligence, and universal progress. Judge Elliott can enjoy the proud reflection that he has, during his long career, without neglecting an iota of his public duties, by voice, action, and example, labored zealously in every vocation; thereby contributing his full quota towards placing our fair land in its present proud position in the world of ennobling exercises.

We have only space to glance at the various positions which he has been called on to fill repeatedly, by his fellow citizens. In 1867 he was elected an Alderman of the Seventeenth Ward, and at the close of his term of two years was re-elected for a second term. In 1871 he was elected Police Justice of the Fourth District of Brooklyn, E. D., and filled the office so acceptably that at the expiration of his term of four years he was re-elected, serving for about three and a half years, when he resigned to accept the office of County Clerk of Kings County, to which position he was elected in the fall of 1879. In a notice of this kind it is not proper to make more than a passing allusion to his political life. But we may mention the fact that whenever his name has been placed before the people they have responded with zeal and alacrity, and he has never known defeat. This is his greatest eulogy; and his fellow citizens render him this tribute because he has ever, at all times, and under all circumstances, faithfully studied their interests and the public good.

LEGISLATIVE OFFICERS FROM KINGS COUNTY.

By *Matthew* Esq.

WE have thus given a history of the Civil Officers of the County of Kings, in connection with the procedure of the courts, &c. We now proceed to give an account of the LEGISLATIVE OFFICERS of Kings County from the earliest colonial times down to the present, viz.: *Members of the Convention at Hempstead, L. I., 1665; Members of the Colonial Legislature; The Provincial Convention; The Provincial Congress; Members of Congress under the 1st, 2d, and 3d Constitution; Members of the State Senate and of the Assembly; of the different Constitutional Conventions; also the Presidential Electors, and Regents of the University.*

Hempstead Convention of 1665.—An assembly consisting of two deputies, chosen by the freeholders of each town upon Long Island (except Southampton), and from the town of Westchester, was convened at Hempstead by Governor Richard Nicolls, February 28th, 1665, the first governor of New York under the English dominion, and successor of the famous governor Peter Stuyvesant, the last Dutch governor.

This convention was called to settle the affairs of the government under the changes made by the English in taking possession of the colony of New York. It promulgated a code known as the "Duke's Laws," and established a shire, styled Yorkshire, which was subdivided into three ridings, as we have shown in another part of this work.

This was a very important and memorable assembly; the first convocation under the power of the English Crown, in the State of New York.

This assembly consisted of the following deputies; those from Kings County are printed in Italics:

DEPUTIES.

Thomas Baker.....	Southampton.
Roger Barton.....	Brookhaven.
Thomas Benedict.....	Jamaica.
<i>Richard Betts.....</i>	Newtown.
<i>John Bowne.....</i>	Gravesend.
<i>John Coe.....</i>	Newtown.
Richard Cornhill.....	Flushing.
<i>Jacques Cortelleau.....</i>	New Utrecht.
Daniel Denton.....	Jamaica.
Elias Doughty.....	Flushing.
<i>Elbert Elbertson.....</i>	Flatlands.
<i>John Evertsen.....</i>	Brooklyn.
<i>Hendrick Gucksen.....</i>	Flatbush.

Mathias Harvey.....	Oyster Bay.
John Hicks.....	Hempstead.
<i>Younger Hope.....</i>	New Utrecht.
<i>James Hubbard.....</i>	Gravesend.
<i>Richard Dove.....</i>	Gravesend.
Robert Jackson.....	Hempstead.
John Ketchum.....	Huntington.
Daniel Lane.....	Brookhaven.
<i>Hendrick Lubbertzen.....</i>	Brooklyn.
<i>Reloffe Martens.....</i>	Flatlands.
John Quimby.....	Westchester.
<i>John Steelman.....</i>	Bushwick.
John Stratton.....	Easthampton.
<i>John Stryker.....</i>	Flatbush.
<i>Gisbert Tunis.....</i>	Bushwick.
John Underhill.....	Oyster Bay.
William Wells.....	Southold.
John Woods.....	Huntington.
John Youngs.....	Southold.

Colonial Legislature.—Under the Colonial Government, the legislative power was vested in a General Assembly, elected by the freeholders, and a Council appointed by the King of Great Britain, and removable at his will. This Council enjoyed a judicial authority upon writs of error and appeals, analogous to that of the Senate under the State Government prior to the adoption of the Constitution in 1846. They also had an executive power as advisors of the Governor. When full, the board consisted of twelve members, some of whom resided in England; the duties usually devolved upon two or three, rendering them powerful and arbitrary personages in the government. The elections for members of the Legislature during the colonial period, and until March 27, 1778, were held at one place in each county designated by law before the sheriff and inspectors nominated by each candidate.

Voters for representatives in the General Assembly were required to be resident citizens, possessing a freehold worth £40, owned at least three months before the day of election. Roman Catholics were prohibited from voting. Members of the General Assembly for many years held their offices subject to the will of the Governor, and elections were ordered as often as suited his caprice or interest. In 1734, a law was passed limiting their term to three years, but this was revoked by the King. Finally, a Septennial Act was passed, in 1743, which remained in force through the Revolution.

The per diem compensation for members of this Assembly differed with different counties. The member from Kings, Queens, Richmond and Suffolk received nine shillings per diem. The Colonial Legislature met in the city of New York. The King retained an unqualified veto power over every law passed by the Legislature or General Assembly, and also imparted this power to the Governor.

Representatives in the Colonial Assembly. from Kings county, from 1691 to 1777 :

Nicholas Stillwell.....	elected 1691 to 1693
John Poland.....	" 1691 to 1693
Coert Stuyvesant.....	" 1693 to 1694
Johannes Van Ecklen.....	" 1693 to 1698
Henry Filkin.....	" 1694 to 1695
Cornelius Seabring.....	" 1695 to 1698
Myndert Coerton.....	" 1698 to 1699
Gerardus Beekman.....	" 1698 to 1699
Cornelius Sebring.....	" 1699 to 1726
Cornelius Van Brunt.....	" 1699 to 1716
Samuel Gerretson.....	" 1716 to 1737
Richard Stillwell.....	" 1726 to 1727
Johannes Lott.....	" 1727 to 1761
Abraham Lott.....	" 1737 to 1750
Cornelius Lott.....	" 1750 to 1751
Dominicus Van Derveer.....	" 1750 to 1759
Abraham Schenck.....	" 1759 to 1761
Simeon Boerum.....	" 1761 to 1775
John Rapalje.....	" 1767 to 1775

Convention of 1754.—The Convention that met in Albany, June, 1754, to discuss "A Plan of Union," may be considered as the earliest attempt at a consolidation of strength in the American colonies, and was regarded with jealousy by the mother country, as tending to independence. Wm. Johnson, from Kings county, was a representative in this Convention.

The first Congress of the American colonies that met to oppose the assumptions of the British Parliament, assembled in New York, October 7, 1765.

Provincial Convention.—A Provincial Convention assembled at the Exchange, in the city of New York, April 20, 1775, in pursuance of a call for the purpose of choosing delegates to represent the colony in Continental Congress. It continued in session ten days; the votes were given by counties, in which New York had four, Albany three, and the other counties two voices. Philip Livingston presided. The members from Kings county were Simeon Boerum, Denice Denice, Theodorus Polhemus, Richard Stillwell, John Van der Bilt.

The New York Provincial Congress and Convention of the State of New York.—The deputies elected from Kings county by the Convention we have described were :

Colonel Nicholas Covenhoven, John Leffertse, Leffert Leffertse, Theodorus Polhemus, Jeremiah Remsen, Richard Stillwell, Rutger Van Brunt. The foregoing

Convention assembled in the city of New York in 1775, 1776 and 1777. The delegates thereto being elected for the term of three years.

Continental Congress.—A Continental Congress assembled at Philadelphia September 5, 1774, and adjourned October 26, 1774. There were nine delegates from the State of New York to this Congress, among whom was Simeon Boerum, of Kings county. In the Congress that assembled May 13, 1777, there were five delegates from the State of New York, none of which were from Kings county.

The delegates in Congress under the "ARTICLES OF CONFEDERATION AND PERPETUAL UNION." (Adopted in Congress November 15, 1777, and recognized by an act of the New York legislature, February 6, 1778). Delegates were appointed annually by the several State legislatures, and were liable to be re-called at will. Delegates to Congress were appointed under this act until October 5, 1779. It does not appear that during this time there were any delegates to Congress from Kings county.

After this time, and until after the close of the Revolutionary war, and till the adoption of the present Constitution, delegates to the Continental Congress were chosen at Conventions held in the several States.

Congress under the Constitution.—This instrument provides that two Senators shall be chosen by the Legislature of each State, who shall hold their office six years; at the first session they were to be divided into three classes, so that one-third might be chosen every year; and vacancies that might occur in the Legislature of any State are to be filled by the executive thereof, until the next meeting of the Legislature.

From the adoption of the Constitution down to the present time, no United States Senator has been chosen from the County of Kings.

The State is divided by the Legislature as soon as practicable after each federal census, which takes place every ten years. It was not till after the act of March 23d, 1797, that the Congressional Districts were regularly numbered, and these numbers are changed by the Legislature as convenience or policy requires.

REPRESENTATIVES IN CONGRESS, under the Constitution, from Kings County.

The first Congress assembled March 4th, 1789. There appears to have been no member of Congress elected from Kings County from that time until 1803; this was JOSHUA SANDS, a resident of Brooklyn, who who served until 1805. The next Representative in Congress from Kings County was John Lefferts, of Brooklyn, elected in 1812, serving in that body until 1815. The following is a list of members of Representatives in Congress, from Kings County, since 1815:

Henry Crocheron.....	elected 1815 to 1817
Joshua Sands (2d Dist).....	" 1825 to 1827
Jeromus Johnson (3d Dist).....	" 1825 to 1827

Jeromus Johnson.....	elected	1827 to 1829
Abraham Vandervere.....	"	1837 to 1839
Daniel A. Bokee.....	"	1849 to 1851
Thomas W. Cumming.....	"	1853 to 1855
James Humphry.....	"	1859 to 1861
Moses H. Odell.....	"	1861 to 1863
Moses H. Odell.....	"	1863 to 1865
James Humphry.....	"	1865 to 1866
Wm. E. Robinson.....	"	1867 to 1869
Henry W. Slocum.....	"	1869 to 1871
John G. Schumaker.....	"	1869 to 1871
Henry W. Slocum.....	"	1871 to 1873
John G. Schumaker.....	"	1873 to 1875
Philip S. Croke.....	"	1873 to 1875
John G. Schumaker.....	"	1875 to 1877
Archibald Bliss.....	"	1875 to 1877
Simeon B. Chittenden.....	"	1875 to 1877
Archibald Bliss.....	"	1877 to 1879
Simeon B. Chittenden.....	"	1877 to 1879
William D. Veeder.....	"	1877 to 1879

State Legislature.—This branch of the Government is modeled after that of the Colonial period already referred to, and has always consisted of a Senate and Assembly; the former composed of fewer members, elected from larger districts, for longer terms, and the latter chosen annually from the people and supposed to represent their immediate local interests.

From the organization of the Government down to 1822, there existed a powerful body, possessing legislative powers, restricting or controlling the acts of the Legislature; this was called the

Council of Revision.—consisting of the Governor, Chancellor, and Judges of the Supreme Court, or any two of them, with the Governor, who approved of every bill before it became a law, unless it was passed by a two-thirds vote of both Houses, notwithstanding their objection. During its continuance, this Council rejected 169 bills, fifty-one of which were passed, notwithstanding its objections, among which was the law for holding the Convention of 1821. The Constitution of 1821 abolished this Council of Revision. No member of this body was ever taken from the County of Kings.

Council of Appointment.—Under the first Constitution of the States, the Assembly, once in every year, openly nominated and appointed one of the Senators from each of the districts, who formed, with the Governor presiding, a Council of Appointment. The Governor had a casting vote only, and, until 1801, alone possessed the power of originating nominations. The Constitutional Amendment of that year gave a concurrent power of nomination to the several members. The patronage of this Council was immense, including all civil, military and judicial officers. Most of them were liable to removal at will. In 1821, 8,287 military and

6,663 civil officers held their commissions from this Council. In the Constitutional Convention of 1821 it was abolished without a dissenting vote. John Vanderbilt and Joshua Sands, Senators from the County of Kings, were members of this Council. John Vanderbilt was appointed January 18, 1787, and Joshua Sands appointed January 9, 1797. These were the only members of that Council from Kings County.

Bills may originate in either the Senate or the Assembly, but to become a law must be passed by both, and be approved by the Governor, or, if he objects, by two-thirds of the members present in both Houses.

Members of Assembly, from the County of Kings, (*Since the Revolution*).—After the adoption of the Constitution, April 20th, 1777, Kings County was in possession of the British until the close of the war, and all action of the county laws was suspended, and it could not, as a county, elect members to the assembly. But William Boerum and Henry Williams, residents of the county, who had retired within the American lines were, May 8, 1777, appointed by a Constitutional convention to represent the county in the assembly. Accordingly they took their seats in the assembly at the first meeting it ever held, which began at Kingston, N. Y., September 1, 1777, and closed June 30, 1778. These gentlemen continued to represent the county in the assembly down to January 21, 1784, when the British retired from Kings County, and it resumed its place among its sister counties under the Constitution and laws of the State. The first members of the assembly elected after this were:

Johannes E. Lott and Rutger Van Brunt, who served from January 21, 1784, to May 12, 1784. This was the seventh session of the Legislature.

LIST OF MEMBERS FROM KINGS COUNTY, from 1785 to the present time; the time of entering upon, and the close of their office:

Charles Doughty and John Vauderbilt. Official duties began October 12, 1784; ended April 27, 1785.

Charles Doughty and John Vauderbilt. Re-elected January 12, 1786; ended May 5, 1786.

Charles Doughty and Cornelius Wyckoff. Began January 12, 1787; ended April 11, 1787.

Charles Doughty and Cornelius Wyckoff. Began January 9, 1788; ended March 22, 1788.

Aquila Giles and Peter Vandevoot. Began December 11, 1788; ended March 3, 1789.

Aquila Giles and Peter Vandevoot. Began July 6, 1789; ended April 6, 1790.

Aquila Giles and Peter Vandevoot. Began January 5, 1791; ended March 24, 1791.

Charles Doughty. Began January 4, 1792; ended April 12, 1792.

Aquila Giles. Began November 6, 1792; ended March 12, 1793.

Peter Vandevoot. Began January 7, 1794; ended March 27, 1794.

Peter Vandervoort. Began January 9, 1795; ended April 9, 1795.	Wm. Conselyea, jr. Began January 1, 1823; ended April 24, 1823.
Peter Vandervoort. Began January 6, 1796; ended April 11, 1796.	William Furman. Began January 26, 1824; ended November 27, 1824.
Peter Vandervoort. Began November 1, 1796; ended April 2, 1797.	William Furman. Began January 3, 1826; ended April 18, 1826.
Peter Vandervoort. Began January 2, 1798; ended April 6, 1798.	Clarence D. Sacket. Began January 2, 1827; ended April 17, 1827.
Johannis I. Lott. Began August 9, 1798; ended April 3, 1799.	Clarence D. Sacket. Began January 21, 1828; ended December 10, 1828.
Jacob Sharp, Jr. Began January 28, 1800; ended April 8, 1800.	John Wyckoff. Began January 6, 1829; ended May 5, 1829.
Jacob Sharp, Jr. Began November 4, 1800; ended April 8, 1801.	Coe S. Downing. Began January 5, 1830; ended April 20, 1830.
John C. Vanderveer. Began January 26, 1802; ended April 5, 1802.	Coe S. Downing. Began January 4, 1831; ended April 26, 1831.
John Hicks. Began January 25, 1803; ended April 26, 1803.	Coe S. Downing. Began January 3, 1832; ended April 30, 1832.
John Hicks. Began January 31, 1804; ended April 10, 1804.	Coe S. Downing. Began January 1, 1833; ended April 30, 1833.
John Hicks. Began November 6, 1804; ended April 10, 1805.	Philip Brasher. Began January 7, 1834; ended May 5, 1834.
John Hicks. Began January 28, 1806; ended April 7, 1806.	Philip Brasher. Began January 6, 1835; ended May 11, 1835.
John Hicks. Began January 27, 1807; ended April 7, 1807.	John Dikeman. Began January 5, 1836; ended May 26, 1836.
John Hicks. Began January 26, 1808; ended April 11, 1808.	Joseph Conselyea and Richard V. W. Thorne. Began January 3, 1837; ended May 6, 1837.
Jeremiah Johnson. Began November 1, 1808; ended March 30, 1809.	Cornelius Bergen and Benjamin D. Silliman. Began January 5, 1838; ended April 18, 1838.
Jeremiah Johnson. Began January 30, 1810; ended April 6, 1810.	Cornelius Bergen and Jeremiah Lott. Began January 1, 1839; ended May 6, 1839.
John C. Vanderveer. Began January 20, 1811; ended April 8, 1811.	Jeremiah Johnson and Adrian Hegeman. Began January 7, 1840; ended May 14, 1840.
John C. Vanderveer. Began January 28, 1812; ended March 27, 1812.	William Conselyea and Jeremiah Johnson. Began January 5, 1841; ended May 25, 1841.
John C. Vanderveer. Began November 3, 1812; ended November 11, 1812.	John A. Lott and William M. Udall. Began January 4, 1842; ended April 12, 1842.
Jeremiah Lott. Began January 25, 1814; ended April 15, 1814.	William Conselyea, jr. and William M. Udall. Began January 3, 1843; ended April 18, 1843.
Tunis Schenck. Began September 26, 1814; ended April 18, 1815.	William Burbank and Jacob L. Rapalye. Began, January 2, 1844; ended May 7, 1844.
The County of Kings was not represented in the Assembly in the session which began January 30, 1816, nor in the session that began November 5, 1816; ending April 5, 1817.	
Cornelius Van Cleef. Began January 27, 1818; ended April 21, 1818.	Richard L. Wyckoff and Daniel D. Wynant. Began January 7, 1842; ended May 15, 1845.
Tunis Schenck. Began January 5, 1819; ended April 13, 1819.	Gamaliel King and John A. Voorhees. Began January 6, 1846; ended May 13, 1846.
Tunis Schenck. Began January 4, 1820; ended April 14, 1820.	John A. Emmons, Ebenezer W. Peck, and Abraham D. Soper. First meeting began January 5; ended May 13, 1847. Second meeting began September 8; ended December 15, 1847.
Jeremiah Lott. Began November 7, 1820; ended April 14, 1821.	Ebenezer W. Peck, Edwards W. Fiske, and John A. Cross. Began January 4; ended April 12, 1848.
Jeremiah Lott. Began January 1, 1822; ended April 17, 1822.	Joseph Broughton, Edwards W. Fiske, and John A. Cross. Began January 2; ended April 11, 1849.
	Joseph A. Yard, Edwards W. Fiske, and John Parker. Began January 1; ended April 10, 1850.

- George E. Baker, Howard C. Cody, and Edward L. Backhouse. First meeting began January 7; ending April 17, 1851. Second meeting began June 10; ending July 11, 1851.
- John Berry, Waldo Hutchins, and Samuel E. Johnson. Began January 6; ended April 16, 1852.
- Nicholas O'Brien, George A. Searing, and James H. Hitchens. First meeting began January 4; ending April 12, 1853. Second meeting began May 24; ending July 21, 1853.
- John G. Bergen, Samuel D. Backus, and Samuel D. Morris. Began January 3; ending April 17, 1854.
- Augustus H. Ivans, George A. Searing, and John H. Rhodes. Began January 2; ended April 14, 1855.
- John Hanford, Francis B. Spinola, and Edward T. Wood. Began January 1; ended April 9, 1856.
- John Hanford, Thomas Mulligan, and John H. Funk. Began January 6; ended April 18, 1857.
- John A. Voorhees, Moses S. Beach, Harmanus B. Duryea, Daniel M. Chauncy, John A. Dayton, John Hanford, and George W. Bleecker. Began January 5; ended April 19, 1858.
- Joseph Wilson, Marcus D. Moore, Harmanus B. Duryea, Thomas Gardener, Lucius C. Andrus, Abraham Meserole, and Franklin Tuthill. Began January 4; ended April 19, 1859.
- Andrew A. Meyers, Charles Kelsey, Theophilus C. Callicott, James Darcy, William C. Jones, Chas. M. Briggs, and George H. Fisher. Began January 3; ended April 17, 1860.
- Andrew J. Provost, Marquis D. Moore, Nathan Comstock, James Darcy, Lucius C. Andrus, Joseph Nesbitt, and George H. Fisher. Began January 1; ended April 16, 1861.
- Andrew J. Provost, Richard J. Lalor, Wm. M. Thomas, James Darcy, Chas. L. Benedict, Samuel T. Maddox, and Edgar McMullen. Began Jan 7; ended April 23, 1862.
- John Paulding, Bernard Hughes, Samuel E. Johnson, James Darcy, Theophilus C. Callicott, Henry C. Boswell, and Charles P. Leslie. Began January 6; ended April 25, 1863.
- Philip S. Croke, John O'Connor, Edward D. White, Andrew Walsh, John C. Perry, Angelo Newton, and Jacob Worth. Began January 5; ended April 23, 1864.
- Jarvis Whitman, William D. Veeder, Stephen Haynes, Patrick Burns, John C. Perry, Henry C. Boswell, and Jacob Worth. Began January 3; ended April 28, 1865.
- John Oakey, Wm. D. Veeder, Morris Reynolds, Andrew Walsh, Wm. W. Goodrich, Ira Buckman, Sr., and Jacob Worth. Began January 2; ended April 20, 1866.
- Patrick Burns, Theodore Hinsdale, Patrick Ready, Stephen Haynes, Caleb F. Buckley, John Raber, Henry M. Dickson, John Oakey, and John C. Jacobs. Began January 1; ended April 20, 1867.
- Patrick Burns, William S. Andrews, Patrick Ready, Francis A. Mallison, William C. Jones, John Raber, Patrick Worth, Caleb L. Smith, DeWitt C. Tower, and John C. Jacobs. Began January 7; ended April 6, 1868.
- Hugh M. Clark, Henry J. Cullen, Jr., Dennis O'Keefe, Wm. W. Moseley, James R. Alaben, Andrew B. Hodges, George D. Fox, DeWitt C. Tower, and John C. Jacobs.—Began Jan. 5, ended; May 10, 1869.
- Hugh M. Clark, Henry J. Cullen, Jr., Dennis O'Keefe, Wm. W. Moseley, Wm. C. Jones, Bernard Haver, Samuel T. Maddox, Joseph Droll, and John C. Jacobs. Began Jan. 4; ended April 26, 1870.
- David C. Aitken, Smith C. Bayliss, Dominick H. Roche, Wm. W. Moseley, Wm. W. Goodrich; Bernard Haver, Wm. Wainwright, Samuel F. Conselyea, and John C. Jacobs. Began Jan. 3, ended April 21, 1871.
- David C. Aitken, Edw. D. White, Dominick H. Roche, Wm. W. Moseley, Eugene D. Berri, Peter G. Peck, Charles B. Morton, George C. Bennett, and John C. Jacobs. Began Jan. 2; ended May 14th, 1872.
- Jas. F. Donohue, David C. Van Cott; Dominick H. Roche, James Watt, Albion P. Higgins, Jacob Worth, Frederick Cochue, Adrian M. Suydam, and John C. Jacobs. Began Jan. 7; ended May 30, 1873.
- James F. Donahue, John J. Allen, Michael Coffey, Theo. N. Melvin, Eugene D. Berri, Jacob Worth, Stephen J. Colahan, George C. Bennett, and John McGroarty. Began January 6; ended April 30, 1874.
- Daniel Bradley, John R. Kennedy, Michael Coffey, T. V. P. Talmadge, John H. Burtis, Jacob Worth, Michael O'Keefe, Bernard Silverman, and John McGroarty. Began Jan. 5; ended May 22, 1875.
- Daniel Bradley, Jonathan Ogden, Michael Coffey, T. V. P. Talmadge, Albion P. Higgins, Jacob Worth, Charles L. Lyon, Adrian M. Suydam, and John McGroarty. Began Jan. 4; ended May 3, 1876.
- Daniel Bradley, Richard Marvin, John Stanley, James G. Tighe, Wm. W. Stevenson, John M. Dillmeier, Charles L. Lyon, Adrian M. Suydam, and John McGroarty. Began Jan. 3d; ended April 21, 1877.
- John M. Clancy, John B. Myenborg, John Stanley, Charles J. Henry, Wm. H. Waring, Jacob Worth, Maurice B. Flynn, John W. Douglass, and John H. Bergen. Began Jan. 1; ended May 15, 1878.

John M. Clancy, Jonathan Ogden, Thomas J. Sheridan, Charles T. Trowbridge, William W. Stephenson, Lewis R. Stegman, Maurice B. Flynn, John H. Douglass, Daniel W. Talmadge. Began January 8; ended May 23, 1879.

John Shanley, John McTernan, Lawrence J. Tormey, John M. Clancy, Thomas J. Sheridan, Patrick J. Tully, George Wren, David Lindsey, Charles H. Russell, Richard J. Newman, Daniel W. Talmadge, Erastus D. Benedict. Began January 7; ended May 28, 1880.

John Shanley, John McTernan, Lawrence J. Tormey, John M. Clancy, Thomas J. Sheridan, Patrick J. Tully, John Reitz, Moses Engle, Charles A. Russell, Richard J. Newman, William H. Waring, Jaques J. Stillwell. Began January 5; ended July 24, 1881.

John Shanley, Michael J. Hannan, James G. Tighe, Daniel M. Kelly, Thomas J. Sheridan, Patrick H. McCarren, George H. Lindsay, Moses Engle, James N. Monk, Richard J. Newman, Alfred C. Chapin, Jaques J. Stillwell. Began January 3; ended June 3, 1882.

Michael E. Butler, Bernard J. Mulholland, Charles J. Henry, Patrick Burns, Thomas Jefferson Sheridan, Patrick H. McCarren, George H. Lindsey, David Lindsey, Alfred Hodges, James Taylor, Alfred C. Chapin, Mortimer C. Earl. Began January 2; ended May 4, 1883.

Michael E. Butler, Richard Nagle, Peter J. Kelly, Patrick Burns, Michael Coffey, Thomas J. Farrell, George H. Lindsey, George H. Mason, Alfred Hodges, Samuel T. Freeman, Edwin Heath, Mortimer C. Earl, 1884.

HISTORY OF THE BOARD OF SUPERVISORS, 1714—1884.

Nature and importance of the office of Supervisor.—The office of Supervisor in the State of New York is of very ancient origin. It existed in the colonial period, during which time the duties of these officers were confined to auditing the accounts brought against the county by town officers and others,—electing County Treasurers, Loan officers and a Clerk,—very ancient offices in this State. The Boards of Supervisors in the different counties are now legislative bodies, having the same relation to the counties that the Assembly has to the State. From time to time, since the organization of the government, their powers have been extended over local matters, until many important local laws touching the interests of their respective counties had, and still have, their origin in them.

For many years they have formed the board of canvassers for each county, meeting for that purpose very soon after the general election in November of each year. The Supervisors for each town were first appointed by the Governor-general of the Province; and after that, each board, in the respective counties, with the Judges of the county—the first Judge acting as chairman—possessed the power of electing a Supervisor for each town in the county. The day appointed for the annual election was the first Tuesday of April, and their annual meeting took place on the first Tuesday in October. Supervisors were appointed or elected, as we have stated, until after the formation of the Federal government; after that a Supervisor was elected in each town by *viva voce* votes, until by the act of February 13th, 1787, the mode of voting

by ballot for Senators, Members of Assembly and other officers below them, was introduced.

The First Board of Supervisors for the County of Kings, of which there is any record, and probably the first board that ever convened in the county, met at Gravesend, April 1st, 1714, under an ordinance or warrant made by Gen. Robert Hunter, then the acting Colonial Governor of the Province of New York, by which warrant the following persons were appointed Supervisors for the different towns in the county, as appears from this entry taken from the Records of Supervisors:

“REGISTER OF THE SUPERVISORS FOR KINGS COUNTY, first ordered by

Martin Schanck,
Joost Van Brunt,
Ryck Handerson,
Joris Raplya,
Derick Anderson,
Samuel Gerretsen,
Supervisors.

First introduced by Samuel Gerretsen, the clerk of the Supervisors, in the year of Our Lord, Anno 1714.”

After this entry there appears the following poetic address of the clerk to the members of the board:

“My loving friends and brethren of this board, that you by this advise may regulate and save your own estates with love of one accord, with true obedience to your superior Lord, preserve your rights with obedient deeds, employing men of justice, law and sense.”

This quaint entry continues as follows :

"KINGS COUNTY.

On this 6th day, being the first Tuesday in April, Ano Domino, 1714, was chosen Supervisors for said county, viz.:

For *Flatlands*, Martin Schanck,
New Utrecht, Joost Van Brunt,
Flatbush, Ryck Hendrickson,
Brookland, Joris Raplya,
Bushwick, Derick Anderson,
Gravesend, Samuel Gerretsen,

and met together in ye county towne at the County Hall, made choice of John Vanderbelt for Treasurer for the ensuing year.

Made choice of Samuel Gerretson for clerk for the ensuing year, and did raise a fund for discharging the debt of said county amounting to the sum of £71:0:6, that the particulars are as follows:

To Col. Stillwell for proclaiming the King.....	£9: 16: 3
Cornelius Van Brunt for serving 31 days as a reporter	
Peter Cortelyea for surveying the county.....	3: 0: 0
Samuel Garretson for officiating as clerk and for buying this book.....	3: 2: 0

These entries are followed up by others sufficient to make up the said sum of £71:0:6.

"The quotas for each respective town," continues the entry, "in the above said sum of £71:0:6, is as follows: "

For <i>Brookland</i>	£19: 9: 3
For <i>Flatbush</i>	15: 1: 6
For <i>New Utrich</i>	09: 18: 9
For <i>Flatlands</i>	08: 14: 9
For <i>Bushwick</i>	09: 3: 0
For <i>Gravesend</i>	08: 15: 3

The Record continues as follows:

"The contents of the acres of land in every respective town in said county, viz:

Brookland.....	5193
Flatbush.....	4060
New Utrecht.....	2635
Flatlands.....	2313
Bushwick.....	2443
Gravesend.....	2304

Rated at 18948

Second Meeting, 1715.—

"On the first day of April in the year of our Lord 1715 was chosen Supervisors for said county, viz.:

Cornelius Vanderpoole, for Flatlands.	
Andrew Emans, " New Utrecht.	
John Vandeerveer, " Flatbush.	
Jacob Hanson, " Brookland.	
Derick Anderson, " Bushwick.	
Samuel Giretson, " Gravesend.	

"And did meet together at Flatbush at County Hall the fourth day of October, it being the first Tuesday of said month, and made choice of John Vanderbelt for Treasurer for the ensuing year, and made choice of Samuel Girritson for Clerk for the ensuing year."

At the business meeting of the board of supervisors, held October, 1714, which we have described, John Vanderbelt was, as we have seen, chosen treasurer of the county for the then ensuing year; he was therefore the *first Treasurer* of Kings County. This responsible position, as we shall see, he held for twenty-two years,

justifying, by his integrity and the exact discharge of his duties, the confidence reposed in him by the board and his fellow citizens.

At the same meeting Samuel Gerritson was chosen Clerk of the board of supervisors. He was the *first supervisor's clerk* of said county. At the second business meeting of the board in October, 1715, Vanderbelt and Gerritson were appointed for the ensuing year.

The careful and exact manner in which these fathers of the county managed its fiscal affairs, is seen in the following entries, copied from the record of the proceedings of the above meeting.

"A fund was raised to discharge the debts of the county, which amounts to the sum of £7:17:2½ as follows, viz.:

For the commissioners of said county.....	£3: 10: 0
Viz: to each of them 4 shillings.	

For Samuel Gerritson for serving as clerk for the supervisors for that year	£1: 12: 0
---	-----------

The quotas for each respective town in said county of the above said sum of £7: 17: 2½:

For Brookland.....	£2: 3: 8
For Flatbush.....	1: 13: 10
For New Utrecht.....	1: 2: 00
For Flatland.....	0: 19: 4
For Bushwick.....	1: 00: 4½
For Gravesend ..	0: 19: 3

£7: 17: 2½

Third Meeting, 1716.—The board consisted of the same members as last year; Samuel Gerritson was chosen clerk, and John Vanderbelt, treasurer.

Among the charges against the county this year were the following:

To Cornelius —, Esq., for serving the county in ye assembly.....	£23: 41: 0
To Samuel Girritson, for serving the county in ye assembly.....	£21: 12: 0
To Thomas B. Vandewater, high sheriff for all services of ye county.....	£04: 10: 0

The board adjourned until the 28th day of December following, at which meeting

"The supervisors found that ye money of ye collectors of each town was not brought to ye treasurer of this county, therefore it is adjourned till the second Saturday in February next ensuing, 8 o'clock in ye morning."

The board met accordingly at the time named at the last meeting. Among the proceedings recorded is the following:

"The supervisors examined ye books of ye treasurer, John Vanderbelt, and found great satisfaction."

Fourth Meeting, 1717.—On the first Tuesday of April, 1717, the following supervisors were chosen:

Hermann Kemper, for Brookland,	
Martin Schenck, " Flatlands,	
Joost Van Brunt, " New Utrecht,	
Peter Para, [Praag] " Bushwick,	
Jacob Suydam, " Flatbush,	
John Griggs, " Gravesend.	

J. M. Sterling was chosen clerk of the board, and John

Vanderbelt was appointed treasurer for the then ensuing year. The board met and adjourned until the 24th day of February, 1718. Among the recorded proceedings of the board on that day is the following:

"The supervisors have this day taken all the reckoning of the treasurer, John Vanderbilt, and found that he has done as an honest man, and we think he is an honest man, and he is discharged of all accounts for the reckoning he had of the supervisors, and is found that he had honestly paid over all money wherewith he had been entrusted.

Fifth Meeting, 1718.—The supervisors for this year were:

Hermann Ransom, [Remsen]	for Brookland.
Peter Para, [Praa]	" Bushwick.
D. Vanderveer,	" Flatbush.
Joost Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
S. Coverts,	" Gravesend.
Cornelius Vanarsdale,	" Flatland.

The board met and adjourned until the 26th day of December, 1718. John Vanderbilt was again chosen treasurer, and Samuel Gerritson clerk of the board.

Among the accounts audited against the county by the board this year, were the following:

To Cornelius ———, Esq., for serving ye county in ye assembly.....	£21: 00: 0
To Samuel Gerritson for serving ye county in ye assembly.....	20: 14: 0
To charges about Dart Van Pelt, negro man slave, he being dangerous and troublesome..	02: 10: 6
To charges of a prisoner making false and foul money, and causing Sheriff Clark and Constable Howes troubles, and resisting of ye said prisoner.....	03: 10: 0

The supervisors again examined the accounts of the treasurer, Mr. Vanderbilt, and again unite in saying that they find him an honest man.

Sixth Meeting, 1719.—The supervisors chosen this year were as follows:

Joost Van Brunt,	New Utrecht.
Samuel Hubbard,	Gravesend.
Philyp Nagel,	Flatlands.
Peter Navinns,	Flatbush.
Maj. Herminn Remsen,	Brookland.
Johannes Schenck,	Bushwick.

John Vanderbilt was again made treasurer, and Samuel Gerritson clerk. At this meeting the matter of constructing the *new prison* house was taken into consideration. Accordingly, the supervisors met with the justices of the peace of the county. Being unable to agree, a stormy meeting took place, ending, according to modern parlance, in "a row," as is shown by the following entry in the record of this year.

"The supervisors met with the justices of the peace of the county of Kings, concerning the building of a new prison house, much needed, and the said justices not being reasonable could not agree, and therefore the supervisors *left it*."

Seventh Meeting, 1720.—The board of supervisors of the county, in 1720, consisted of the following members:

Joost Van Brunt,	Samuel Hubbard.
Herminn Remsen,	Cornelius Cornwell,
Nicholas Volkertess.	

Samuel Gerritson was chosen clerk of the board and John Vanderbilt treasurer. The current expenses of the county this year amounted to £40: 00: 00.

We have, now, thus given a detailed account of the boards of supervisors for the seven years succeeding the year 1714, the date of the assembling of the first board of supervisors of Kings county. We shall not give a full list of the members of the succeeding boards until after the organization of the Federal government, when the members of the different boards of supervisors of the county, from that period down to the present time, 1883, will be given in full.

It is proper, however, to add that John Vanderbilt, the first Treasurer of King's County, was annually re-appointed by the supervisors from October, 1714, down to April 1736, when he was succeeded by Peter Lefferts.

It is a singular fact that the board, every year during the long period which Mr. Vanderbilt discharged the duties of treasurer, caused an entry to be made in the records testifying the high esteem in which he was held, not only as a treasurer, but as a citizen.

At the close of his twenty-second term the office was again tendered him, but he declined to accept it, much to the regret of the members of the board, who unanimously ordered the following testimonial of their great respect for him to be entered on the records of their proceedings:

"Whereas, we, the members of the Board of Supervisors, in great regret for the fact being made known to us that it has become the choice of Mr. John Vanderbilt, who has served this Board and this County as the Treasurer thereof, with so much care, prudence and honesty, to retire from the duties of the office, and serve therein in that capacity no longer, therefore, be it solemnly resolved, that he hath, by his truthful, honest, upright conduct as an officer of this Board, and as a man, set an example for all his successors who shall serve this Board and this County in like *capacitie* which they will do right well to follow."

The Board then made choice of Peter Lefferts, as treasurer, in the place of Mr. Vanderbilt. Samuel Gerritson continued to discharge the duties of clerk with great acceptability, down to March 18th, 1726, when he declined to serve any longer, and was succeeded by Adrian Hageman.

The supervisors met at Flatbush, October 4th, 1737, and appointed Peter Lefferts treasurer of the county, Mr. Vanderbilt having declined a reappointment.

The debts of the county this year amounted to one hundred and seven pounds, eighteen shillings, six and halfpenny.

From 1737 to 1740, the supervisors continued to meet at County Hall, Flatbush. Peter Lefferts was chosen each year as treasurer of the county, and Adrian Hageman as clerk of the board.

The debts of the county this year amounted to £63: 3: 2, and which was apportioned as follows :

Brookland.....	£17: 6: 2½
Flatbush.....	13: 10: 0
New Utrecht.....	8: 15: 0
Flatlands.....	7: 14: 2
Bushwick.....	8: 2: 10½
Gravesend.....	7: 13: 7

£63: 3: 2

1750. The Supervisors elected this year at the election on the first Tuesday of April, met at the house of Barnet Anderson, in Flatbush, on the first Tuesday of October, 1750.

Peter Lefferts having served as a treasurer, and having been appointed annually since 1737, was reappointed, and Adrian Hageman, who had served as clerk during that time, having been appointed annually, was reappointed for the ensuing year.

The indebtedness of the county this year amounted to £26: 1: ½, which was apportioned to the county as follows :

Brookland.....	£7: 2: 3
Flatbush.....	5: 10: 1½
New Utrecht.....	3: 11: 0
Flatlands.....	3: 2: 2
Bushwick.....	3: 5: 6½
Gravesend.....	3: 3: 0½

The following interesting item appears on the record of the proceedings of the board this year :

Kings County, ss: According to two particular acts of the General Assembly of the Province of New York, &c., &c.,—the one entitled an act for raising the sum of twenty-eight thousand pounds, &c., and also another act for raising the sum of forty thousand pounds, &c., the supervisors of Kings County, according to the two said acts are met together at the house of Barnet Anderson, Flatbush, the fourth day of June, 1740, who are as follows :

Samuel Cortilyou,	for Gravesend.
Isaac Sobing, [Sebring]	" Brookland.
Rutger Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
Martin Schenck,	" Flatlands.
Joshua Lott,	" Flatbush.
Abraham Schenck,	" Bushwick.

Supervisors.

And they give out their warrant accordingly under the said two acts as loving subjects of our Lord, the King, should do, and the particulars are as follows :

Brookland.....	£147: 1: 5½
Flatbush.....	113: 9: 9½
Flatlands.....	64: 4: 0
New Utrecht.....	73: 6: 5½
Bushwick.....	67: 10: 0
Gravesend.....	65: 4: 10½

The board also passed an unanimous resolution expressing the entire confidence of all the members in the treasurer, Mr. Peter Lefferts.

At the annual meeting of the board, October 3d, 1752, Simon Boerum was chosen clerk, and Peter Lefferts was chosen treasurer.

1755. At the General Election held this year, on the first Tuesday of April, the following persons were chosen Supervisors for Kings County.

Samuel Garretson,	for Gravesend.
Rutger Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
Isaac Sebring,	" Brookland.
Johannes Lott, jun.,	" Flatbush.
Abraham Schenck,	" Bushwick.
Garret Covenhoven,	" Flatlands.

At the annual meeting of the said board, held at Flatbush on the 7th day of October, 1755, Mr. Peter Lefferts, who had been annually re-appointed since 1750, was re-appointed treasurer, and Mr. Simon Boerum, who had been annually re-appointed clerk since 1750, was re-appointed.

The debt against the county this year amounted to £86: 12: 7, which was assessed to the several towns as follows :

Brookland.....	£24: 3: 6	Fees at 0/9
Flatbush.....	18: 7: 5	" 0/2½
New Utrecht.....	15: 19: 0	" 0/3
Flatlands.....	10: 10: 8	" 0/4
Bushwick.....	11: 1: 7	" 0/3
Gravesend.....	10: 10: 5	" 0/9

Kings County, ss: According to three particular acts of the General Assembly of the Province of New York, entitled an act for raising the sum of forty thousand pounds, the other for raising the sum of forty-five thousand pounds, &c., and the other for raising the sum of ten thousand pounds, &c., the supervisors of the said county, according to the said three acts, met together at Flatbush, at the house of Barnet Anderson, the first day of June, being the first Tuesday of said month, Anno Domino 1755, and the said supervisors give out their warrant, according to the said three acts, as good and loving subjects of our gracious Lord and King, &c., &c., should do, as follows :

Brookland.....	£160: 7: 6	Fees at 4½
Flatbush.....	130: 15: 11	" 2½
New Utrecht.....	85: 1: 5	" 3
Flatbush.....	74: 7: 1½	" 2
Bushwick.....	78: 7: 5	" 1½
Gravesend.....	76: 6: 0	" 9

The entry concludes as follows :

"For Barnet Anderson, Inn Keeper, Flatbush, the sum of one pound two shillings and three pence, for entertaining the justices, supervisors and loan officers of the said county, which he did in the most hospital and excellent manner."

Among the charges against the county this year were :

"Mr. Peter Lefferts, Treasurer of the county, is appointed for the ensuing year to serve for two shillings less than half of the fees which is allowed a treasurer by an act of the General Assembly of the Province of New York, in that behalf, made and provided ; we thinking that said act allows too much, and we decide that our clerk, Mr. Simon Boerum, shall have for his services, for the ensuing year, the sum of two pounds ten shillings.

Col. Johannes Lott, for 119 days service done in General Assembly, at six shilling a day, £35: 14.

Domencus Vanderveer, for 112 days service in the General Assembly, at six shillings a day, £33: 12.

Eight inquisitions brought in by Barant Van Deventure, Coroner of said county, for three boys buried.

John Covenhoven, for entertaining a sick woman, Jenny Litefoot, 9 days at six shillings a day, and one shift provided.

Coryden Stegeman [Hegeman?], Constable of Flatbush, for transporting 4 vagrants to New York, where they belong, and tavern expenses.

The supervisors of this county do let to Barnet Van Deventure the County Garden Spot of ground for seven shillings and eleven pence, one year, to begin the 30th of October."

1758. Among the entries in the record of the Board of Supervisors for Kings County in the year 1758, is the following :

Kings County, ss: According to three particular acts of the General Assembly of the State of New York, &c., the one entitled an act for raising the sum of forty-five thousand pounds, &c., &c., the other for raising the sum of ten thousand pounds, &c., the other for raising the sum of eight thousand pounds.

The supervisors of the said county, owing to the said three acts, are met together at Flatbush, at the house of Barnet Anderson, on the sixth day of June, being the first Tuesday of said month, Ano Domino 1758, and the said supervisors, as obedient subjects, give out their warrant, according to the aforesaid three acts, as follows :

Brookland.....	£170: 0: 6	Fees at 4
Flatbush.....	134: 4: 2	" 3½
New Utrecht.....	86: 12: 9	" 2
Flatlands.....	75: 19: 6	" 2
Bushwick.....	80: 4: 11	" 2
Gravesend.....	77: 19: 9	" 9

1759. On the record of the proceedings of the Supervisors of this year, the following entry appears :

Kings County, ss: According to five particular acts of the General Assembly of the Province of New York ; the one entitled an act to raise the sum of eight thousand pounds, &c., the other for raising the sum of ten thousand pounds, &c., the other for raising the sum of forty-five thousand pounds, the other for raising the sum of one hundred thousand pounds, &c., and the other for raising the sum of one hundred thousand pounds.

The supervisors, according to the said five acts, are met together at Flatbush, at the house of Barnet Anderson, the fifth day of June, being the first Tuesday of the said month, Ano Domino 1759.

PRESENT.

Isaac Sebring,	for Brookland.
Andries Stocokholm,	" Bushwick.
Nicholas Stillwill,	" Gravesend.
Dirck Remsen,	" Flatlands.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
-----,	" Flatbush.

And give out their warrant, according to the five said acts, as true and loving subjects should, as follows :

Brookland.....	£425: 19: 1½	Fees at 4
Bushwick.....	199: 2: 3½	" 2½
Flatlands.....	187: 14: 6	" 1½
Gravesend.....	193: 1: 9	" 9
Flatbush.....	333: 14: 8	" 4½
New Utrecht.....	214: 11: 7	" 2½

1760. The reader, doubtless, has already been sur-

prised at the frequent demands of the General Assembly upon the County of Kings, for large sums of money, which the board of supervisors readily directed to be raised, according to the quota of the county, in accordance with the several acts of the General Assembly. As the opening scenes of the Revolution began to develop themselves, these demands for money increased in frequency, and in amounts.

At the General Election, held the first Tuesday of April, Ano Domino 1760, the supervisors chosen for the County of Kings, were as follows :

Isaac Sebring,	for Brookland.
Jeremius Vanderbilt,	" Flatbush.
Theodorus Polhemous,	" Bushwick.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
Richard Stillwill,	" Gravesend.
Dirck Remsen,	" Flatlands.

"The board," says the record, "are met together at the house of Barnet Anderson, in Flatbush, on the seventh day of October, being the first Tuesday of the said month, Ano Domino 1760, and made choice of their treasurer, Peter Lefferts, for the ensuing year, to serve two shillings less than half the fees which is allowed a treasurer by the acts of the General Assembly of the Province of New York."

Thus it will be seen by the above, and several previous entries in the record of their proceedings that, while they, the supervisors, readily and generously obeyed the mandates of the General Assembly, in regard to raising money, they confined themselves to the most rigid economy in their own expense.

At this session of the board, they made choice of Simon Boerum as their clerk for the ensuing year, fixing his salary at three pounds.

Among the charges against the county this year were the following :

"To John Bengs, 13 days watching the Baious* amounting in all to.....	£ 1: 12: 0
To Abraham Emens, 13 days similar service at the same price.....	
To Col. Johannes Lott, for 92 days service in the General Assembly.....	27: 12: 0
To Barent Deventure, Coroner, for eighteen inquests brought in for dead bodies buried in said county.....	
The county credited cash which Col. Johannes Lott received of the Government money concerning the watch.....	28: 0: 0
The said county yet in debt, £44: 11: 0, as follows :	
Brookland.....	£18: 1: 9
Flatlands.....	6: 4: 6
Flatbush.....	11: 2: 9
Bushwick.....	6: 11: 8
Gravesend.....	7: 2: 7½
New Utrecht.....	7: 2: 7½
	£55: 18 6½

The said supervisors do let the County Garden Spot to Barent Deventure for seven shillings, which he does from the 30th of October, 1760, to the 30th of October then next following.

* This means, no doubt, the bayous along the coast—the tidal channels, creeks, &c., which flow from the bay.

To Barnet Anderson, Inn Keeper, two pounds sixteen shillings for entertaining the supervisors, which he does do right well and hospitably.

1761. The supervisors elected for Kings County this year were the following persons:

John Cowenhoven,	for Brookland.
Jeremias Vanderbilt,	" Flatbush.
Theodorus Polhemus,	" Bushwick.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
Richard Stillwill,	" Gravesend.
Dirick Remsen,	" Flatlands.

June 2d, 1761, we, the treasurer and clerk, met together, according to orders given by the supervisors, and have examined the books, and found the treasurer honest in his proceedings, and there is left in cash in his hands the sum of eight pounds nineteen shillings and one penny, which we do think safe in his hands.

The board this year had presented to them, in the form of four particular acts of the General Assembly of the Province of New York, a demand for Kings County's proportion of seventy-two thousand pounds; for which they issued their warrants, to be collected as follows:

Brookland.....	£349: 6: 7	Fees 4
Flatbush.....	272: 18: 3	" 4½
New Utrecht.....	175: 16: 3	" 2½
Flatlands.....	154: 3: 4	" 2½
Bushwick.....	162: 9: 9	" 2
Gravesend.....	156: 10: 7	" "

Barent Anderson was allowed the sum of two pounds, fifteen shillings, and five pence, for entertaining the Justices, Supervisors and Loan officers of the county.

Peter Lefferts was chosen treasurer of the county for the ensuing year, "to serve two shillings less than half the fees which is allowed a treasurer by an act of the General assembly, in that case made and provided, we the Supervisors honestly thinking the General Assembly allowed too large a sum for said services."

Simon Boerum was chosen clerk for the ensuing year, and "resolved that he shall have the sum of three pounds for his services."

Among the charges against the county were the following :

"To Coll. Johannes Lott for 17 days Service in the General Assembly at 6s. per day.....	£ 5: 2: 0
To Simon Boorum for 39 days service done in General Assembly at 6s. per day.....	11: 14: 0
To said Simon Boerum as clerk of the Supervisors..	3: 00: 0
To Barent Van Deventure, Coroner, for five Inquisitions of <i>Did</i> Bodies buried in said County.....	
To the Deacons of New Utrecht church for maintaining an Indian <i>Squa</i> taken with the small pox at the house of George Lott.....	
To Cornelius Lagroff for money advanced by him to take care of a man in the small pox, ordered paid by Justices Williams and Lefferts.....	

The amount of indebtedness against the county this year for all accounts presented and audited was £52: 7: 10½.

The following curious entry, made in the record of the proceedings of the board of Supervisors of this year, show that while determined to punish tardy members, they were not afraid to look "upon wine when it is red" or upon wine of any other color.

"Ordered by the said supervisors to be entered, that for any time hereafter, if any of the Supervisors, Treasurer, or Clerk for the time being, shall not appear at Flatbush at the usual place of business, by the hour of ten o'clock in the forenoon of the days appointed for the said supervisors to meet: Every one so neglecting shall forfeit one bottle of good wine."

Then comes the following entry, which, as the reader will observe, had almost become a matter of course.

"*Kings County, ss:* According to five acts of the General Assembly of the province of New York, etc., two thereof are acts entitled to raise by each act one hundred thousand pounds, etc. The other for raising the sum of sixty thousand pounds. The other for raising the sum of fifty-two thousand pounds, and the other for raising of ten thousand pounds, etc., which said ten thousand pounds,—the *cota* [quota] thereof for the said county of King, is £431—ought to have been raised last June which was omitted."

The supervisors then proceeded to fix the quota of each town in the county on the said sum ordered, to be raised by the said five acts of the General Assembly as follows, for which they drew their warrants:

Brookland.....	£600: 19: 8
Flatbush.....	460: 17: 2½
New Utrecht.....	302: 0: 9½
Flatlands.....	264: 5: 10
Bushwick.....	280: 6: 9
Gravesend.....	271: 15: 1

During the past year Barent Anderson, the highly esteemed and "hospital" innkeeper of Flatbush, died. He had annually, for many years, furnished the justices of the peace, the treasurer of the county, the supervisors, their clerk and loan commissioners, with abundant good cheer, and, according to tradition, "with his wit, humor, and anecdotes, made them joyful and merry;" his death was, therefore, a great loss, and he was much mourned, as they said "a loss, not only to them, but to all the public having need of a good tavern with the best of everything for the inner man."

But they found in Dominicus Vanderveer, a worthy and an acceptable successor of the departed Anderson, their host of many years, as the following entry in the record of their proceedings this year shows:

"For Dominicus Vanderveer, the new innkeeper of Flatbush, the sum of two pounds, ten shillings, and nine pence, for entertaining the Justices, Loan Officers, Supervisors, Treasurer and Clerk, which he did do right well."

1762. Peter Lefferts was chosen this year for treasurer, to receive two shillings less than one half the fees which is allowed therefor by an act of the General Assembly. Simon Boerum was chosen clerk of the board, his pay being three pounds per annum.

The following entry appears on the record of the proceedings of the board of supervisors this year.

Kings County, ss: According to four particular acts of the General Assembly of the Province of New York, two thereof are entitled to raise by each act one hundred thousand pounds. The other to raise a subsidy of fifty-two thousand pounds, and the other to raise a subsidy of sixty thousand pounds.

The said supervisors, according to said four acts, are met together at Flatbush at the house of Dominicus Vanderveer, on the seventeenth day of June, 1762, and the said supervisors give out their warrant according to the aforesaid acts, and the particulars are as follows :

Brookland.....	£562: 1: 3½
Flatbush....	351: 8: 0
New Utrecht....	226: 12: 9½
Flatlands.....	200: 3: 9½
Bushwick.....	210: 10: 8
Gravesend....	203: 11: 3

1763. The Board of Supervisors met this year at the house of Dominicus Vanderveer, in Flatbush, on the fourth day of October.

Peter Lefferts was chosen treasurer on the same terms as last year, and Simon Boerum was chosen clerk. The following appears on the records of the proceedings of the Supervisors this year :

Kings County, ss.: According to four particular acts of the Governor and General Assembly of the Province of New York, &c., two thereof are acts entitled to raise by each act, one hundred thousand pounds, &c.—the other to raise a subsidy of fifty-two thousand pounds, &c. The other to raise a subsidy of sixty thousand pounds, &c.

It is proper to add that the sums raised as subsidies went directly to the King.

"The said Supervisors give out their warrants according to the aforesaid four acts, and the particulars are as follows :

Brookland.....	£561: 6: 11
Flatbush.....	351: 8: 0
New Utrecht....	227: 2: 4½
Flatlands.....	199: 19: 8
Bushwick.....	210: 1: 8
Gravesend..	203: 11: 3

The Supervisors allow to Dominicus Vanderveer for entertaining the Justices, Loan Officers, Supervisors, Treasurer and Clerk the sum of four pounds, five shillings, six pence.

1764. The Supervisors this year met at the inn of Dominicus Vanderveer, on the second day of October and made choice of Peter Lefferts as treasurer, to serve for the same pay as last year. They also made choice of Simon Boerum as clerk, whose salary was fixed at three pounds. Among the charges against the county this year were :

To Abraham Schenck, Esq., for 34 days' service at the General Assembly, at 6s. per day.....	£10: 4: 0
To Simon Boerum for 37 days' service, done in the General Assembly, at 6s. a day.....	
To said Simon Boerum, as clerk to the Supervisors	3: 0: 0
To Barent Johnson, Esq., for two warrants and having one thief whipped.....	0: 12: 0

To Dominicus Vanderveer, for victualing Bowman and his wife in goal.....	0: 2: 6
To Alexander Forbush, constable, for his tending the justices four several times; to having one thief whipped, including Shephard.....	0: 13: 0
To John O'Rourke for whipping one person, twice right hand the last time.....	0: 6: 0
To John O'Rourke for being public whipper for said county for one year and an extra good one.....	0: 15: 0

The following entry in the record of the proceedings of the Supervisors this year shows the constantly increasing demand of the General Assembly of the Province upon the county for money.

Kings County, ss.: According to four particular acts of the General Assembly of the Province of New York, &c. Two thereof are acts to raise by each act one hundred thousand pounds, &c.; the other for raising a subsidy of sixty thousand pounds; and the other for raising a subsidy of fifty-two thousand pounds.

The Supervisors of the said county, according to the said four acts, and according to an act appropriating the sum of fifty-nine thousand two hundred and fifty pounds of the monies therein mentioned for calling in, sinking and canceling Bills of Credit of the Province to that amount, for the omissions therein mentioned—passed the 20th day of October, 1764—are met together at Flatbush on this the 4th day of June, 1765. And the said Supervisors give out their warrants according to the aforesaid acts and the particulars are as follows :

Brookland.....	£292: 17: 11
Flatbush.....	171: 16: 0
New Utrecht.....	110: 18: 4
Flatlands.....	97: 13: 4
Bushwick.....	102: 14: 4
Gravesend.....	96: 13: 6
	£872: 13: 5

The treasurer and clerk met together this 1st day of October, 1764, and examined the books and accounts of the treasurer, and find the treasurer strictly honest, and that he has in hands of public money, four pounds two shillings and half-pence.

1765. At the general election held at Flatbush on the first Tuesday of April, 1765, the following Supervisors were chosen :

Johannes Bergen,	for Brookland.
Richard Stillwell,	" Gravesend.
Dirick Remsen,	" Flatlands.
Johannes Lott, Jr.,	" Flatbush.
Theodorus Polhemus,	" Bushwick.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.

At their annual meeting in October following, they chose Peter Lefferts treasurer for the ensuing year, whose compensation was fixed at two shillings less than the fees fixed by an act of the General Assembly, the Supervisors thinking, as their predecessors did, the provincial government too liberal in the fixing the salaries of county officers. They also made choice of Simon Boerum for their clerk, fixing his salary at three pounds.

Among the charges against the county this year are the following items :

To Abraham Schenck, Esq., for 45 days service done in the General Assembly at 6s. per day	£13: 10: 0
To Simon Boerum for 45 days service done in the General Assembly, at 6s. per day	13: 10: 0
To the said Simon Boerum, as Clerk of the Board of Supervisors	3: 0: 0
To Jacobus Vandeventure, Coroner, for 3 inquisitions	4: 5: 0
To John Lefferts, Esq., for repairing the goal of said county and putting it in a condition to keep the prisoners therein from falling out	2: 17: 7
John Lefferts, for trying a free negro man, and having him whipped with forty lashes, he being a thief	4: 2: ½
To Dominicus Vanderveer, for entertaining the Supervisors, Clerk, Treasurer and Loan officers two meetings	5: 13: 11

The whole indebtedness of the county this year is £49: 10: 1, and awarded to be paid according to the following quotas:

Brookland	£14: 13: 0
Flatbush	10: 0: 6
New Utrecht	6: 14: 10
Flatlands	6: 2: 4
Bushwick	6: 2: 6
Gravesend	5: 16: 11

— — —
49: 10: 1

After the *cota* was divided upon the several towns, there was added to the *cota* of Brookland the sum of £13: 17: 5.

This year the demand upon the county for money by the General Assembly was as follows: Three acts to raise a subsidy by each act, one hundred thousand pounds, and the other for raising a subsidy of sixty thousand pounds, for the collection of which the Supervisors gave out their warrants, the quotas of each town being as follows:

Brookland	£292: 17: 11
Flatbush	174: 16: 0
New Utrecht	111: 9: 11
Flatlands	98: 9: 8
Bushwick	100: 2: 0
Gravesend	96: 9: 6

The vote for imposing this sum upon the respective towns in the county did not pass this year without a somewhat heated discussion. Several Supervisors had caught the spirit of opposition to the encroachments of the Crown, which was manifesting itself in New York, Boston, and other parts of the country.

1766. The Supervisors chosen this year at the general election, held on the second Tuesday of April, met at Flatbush, on the seventh day of October following, and chose Peter Lefferts as Treasurer of the County, to serve on the terms fixed at the last and other preceding meetings of the Board. They also made choice of Simon Boerum for Clerk of the Board, with the usual salary of three pounds.

Among the charges against the county this year were the following:

To Abraham Schenck, for 49 days services done in the General Assembly, at 6s. per day	.....
To Simon Boerum, for 52 days services in the General Assembly, at 6s. per day	.....
To said Boerum, as Clerk to the Supervisors, for his services	£3: 0: 0
To Jacobus Van Deventure, Coroner, for 3 inquisitions of dead bodies buried	4: 7: 0
(and six shillings extraordinary)	
To Adrian Hegeman, Jr., for transporting one vagrant to Wm. Berrys; for transporting him before to Staten Island, and keeping the man 3 days and other expenses	0: 10: 0
To Dr. Vandewater, for medicine and attendance on the sick vagrants	2: 10: 0
To Dominicus Vanderveer, for entertaining the Supervisors, Treasurer, Clerk and Justices and Loan Commissioners right well	2: 19: 6

Kings County, ss.: According to three particular acts of Lieutenant-Governor Cadwallader Colden, acting as Governor General, with his Council and the General Assembly of the Province of New York, &c., two thereof are for raising a subsidy by each act of one hundred thousand pounds, &c., and the other raising a subsidy of sixty thousand pounds, the Supervisors do vote to give their warrants for collecting the quota for Kings County as follows:

Brookland	£282: 1: 3
Flatbush	175: 6: 0
New Utrecht	113: 10: 8
Flatlands	100: 6: 0
Bushwick	105: 10: 11
Gravesend	98: 8: 8
— — —	
	£875: 3: 6

So bitter was the opposition of the people of Kings County, and the Province of New York generally, to the payment of these frequent and exorbitant demands of the General Assembly, and so rapidly was the spirit of independence gaining everywhere in the Colonies, that the foregoing amount of £875: 13: 6, ordered to be paid by this Board, was the last sum of money ever paid by the Supervisors of Kings County, by order of the General Assembly, representing the British Government.

Peter Lefferts paid to Dominicus Vanderveer for entertaining the Justices, Supervisors, and Loan officers of the said county, £2: 9, and Dirick Remsen, Supervisor for Flatlands, is to pay to the said Vanderveer, the sum of £1: 5 for the same purpose, there being extras in his bill.

The Treasurer and Clerk met together and examined the books, and found there is in the hands of the Treasurer in cash the sum of 4s. 4½d.

1767. The Supervisors elected at the general election this year, on the first Tuesday of April, at their annual meeting, held October 6th, made choice of Peter Lefferts for Treasurer for the ensuing year. They also made choice of Simon Boerum as their clerk. This Board having more regard for the act of the Governor-General, and the General Assembly of the Province of New

York, than their predecessors, gave the Treasurer the fees established by that body, which were very remunerative.

Among the charges against the county this year were the following:

To Simon Boerum, for 40 days services in the General Assembly, at 6s. per day.....	
To the said Boerum, for sundries as Clerk of the Supervisors.....	£3: 0: 0
To Jacobus Vanderventure, Coroner, for five inquisitions of dead bodies buried in the county, at 27s.....	6: 15: 0
To Dr. John Lodiwick, for attending a sick man from the 19th of December, 1766, to April, 1767, and for his medicine.....	
To the Deacons of Brookland church, for money advanced for entertaining the said sick man, which was done right well, so that with the care and medicine of Dr. Lodiwick he has got quite well.....	
To Peter Stryker, for mending the goal, which it needed very much.....	
To Dominicus Vanderveer, for entertaining John Becket and his wife, in Goal, and for three rails for fence around the same.....	9: 16: 6
To Derrick Remsen for money he had advanced for entertaining John Becket in Goal.....	
To John O'Rourke, public whipper for said county, from the first day of October, 1766, to the first day of October, 1767, and for whipping several bad thieves and other criminals.....	3: 10: 0
Expenses for entertaining the Justices, Supervisors Treasurer and Loan Officers.....	9: 10: 10

The said supervisors do let the county garden spot to Barnet Van DeVenture, for one year, for seven shillings, which begins the 30th of October, 1767, to the 30th of October then next following.

1768. *Kings County*, ss: On the first Tuesday in June, 1768, the Supervisors of said county met at Flatbush, together with the Loan Officers and Justices of the said county, to close the Loan Officer's books, and said Loan Officers rendered a true and just account to the Supervisors and Justices of the said county and the said books were closed accordingly.

The following curious entry in the record of the proceedings of the Supervisors this year, exhibits the exact manner, in which the acting *excise commissioners* were dealt with in those days.

Theodorus Polhemus, appointed Commissioner for the excise of strong liquors for Kings County, aforesaid, by an act of Sir Henry Moore, signing himself "Baronet," with the Council and General Assembly of the Province of New York, wherein and by the said act, he is obliged to render under oath to the Supervisors a true and exact amount or list of all the moneys he receives for the said excise, yearly, and now he swears upon oath to the said Supervisors, to a true list or amount for the year 1765 the sum of £36, which is one pound eight shillings over what he is to pay for that year. And also rendered a true account or list or amount upon oath to the said Supervisors for the year 1766 the sum of £35: 16, sixteen shillings over; and also rendered a true list or amount upon oath to the said Supervisors for the year 1767 the sum of £32: 5: 6, and also rendered a like true account of all moneys received for the year 1768, which is £36: 12: 0. So there is

over thirty-two shillings in the whole, and you therefore see that the said Commissioner is indebted to the Supervisors in the sum of one pound, one shilling, and sixpence, which we do direct that he pay into the hands of the treasurer without any delay.

October the 17th. We the treasurer and clerk have met together to examine the books, and find that the County is indebted to the Treasurer, Mr. Peter Lefferts, in the sum of £7: 15: 2½, which we do direct him to collect under our warrants, given this day, and the said Commissioner, Theodorus Polhemous, has paid the said sum of one pound, one shilling and sixpence to the Treasurer.

The account of Dominicus Vanderveer, of five pounds, five shillings and sixpence, his charges for entertaining the Supervisors, Justices of the County, and Loan Commissioners, is hereby directed to be paid.

1768.—The supervisors elected at the general election held on the first Tuesday of April, met at their annual meeting of the said board, at Flatbush, on the fourth day of October, and made choice of Mr. Peter Lefferts as treasurer for the ensuing year, to receive the very liberal fees voted several years before by the General Assembly. They also made choice of Mr. Simon Boerum as their clerk. His fee this year was fixed at fifty shillings.

Among the charges against the county this year were the following:

To Simon Boerum, for 68 days services done in General Assembly at 6s. per day.....	
To said Boerum as clerk to the Supervisors....	£ 2: 10: 0
To said Simon Boerum for money he advanced for one Tub in the Goal.....	5: 0: 0
To Abraham Schenck, Esq., for sixty-eight days services done in the General Assembly at 6s. per day. Also for two certificates for said services furnished by the said Clerk, which was omitted last year for 45 days service at 6s. per day.....	
To Richard Stillwill, for transporting John Becket and wife to Pensicola, fifteen pounds, and the interest on the same 18 months.....	16: 17: 0
To Dominicus Vanderveer, for iron work done to the Goal and iron shackles for Cæsar, the criminal lately hanged, and other services about the hanging of Cæsar.....	1: 10: 6
To John Losee, for making eight new constable staffs.....	16: 0
To John O'Rourke, for whipping one man.....	
To the deacons of Brooklyn church, for money advanced for entertaining one sick man.....	3: 15: 0

All the charges allowed against the county this year amounted to £103: 6: 10.

1769. The supervisors elected this year at the general election, which took place on the first Tuesday of April, met at Flatbush on the third day of October, and made choice of Mr. Peter Lefferts as Treasurer of the county, to have the full fees allowed by law for his services. They also elected Simon Boerum clerk of the board, with a salary of fifty shillings.

Among the charges against the county this year are the following:

To Simon Boerum, for 97 days service done in General Assembly at 6s. per day.....	
---	--

To said Simon Boerum, for services as Clerk of the Supervisors.....	£2: 10: 0
To John Rapelyea, Esq., for 96 days services in General Assembly, at 6s. per day..	.....
To Rutgert Van Brunt, sheriff, for keeping watch at the Goal over the criminal, strangled.....	.....
To John O'Rourke, as public whipper of the county, from the first day of October 1768, to the first day of October, 1769.....	3: 16: 0
To the said O'Rourke, for whipping one person—a hard case.....	3: 0
To the Sheriff, for cleaning the court-house, and one load of wood.....	2: 1: 0

The whole indebtedness against the county this year was £91: 14: 8.

The proceedings of the board this year closes with the following imperative entry in the record of their proceedings.

Dominicus Vanderveer must have the sum of two pounds fourteen shillings and eleven pence out of the money now in hands of the Treasurer, and the Treasurer shall then deliver his notes, and a warrant is issued against the said Treasurer to pay the same.

1770. On the first Tuesday in April, Anno Domino 1770, were chosen Supervisors for Kings County:

Johannes Bergen,	for Brookland.
Richard Stillwill,	" Gravesend.
Dirck Remsen,	" Flatlands.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
Theodorus Polhemous,	" Bushwick.
Johannes Lott,	" Flatbush

The annual meeting of the said board took place on the first Tuesday of October, 1770, at the house of Mrs. Elizabeth Vanderveer, widow of Dominicus Vanderveer, Inn Keeper, at Flatbush, who had so long and so acceptably entertained the Supervisors, Justices, Treasurer and Loan Commissioners of said county, and who, since the adjournment of the board, had gone the way of all mankind to the unseen world.

At this meeting, Peter Lefferts was chosen Treasurer for the ensuing year, to serve for the salary allowed by the General Assembly.

Simon Boerum was chosen Clerk of the Board for the ensuing year; his salary was fixed at fifty shillings per year.

The following were among some of the charges against the county this year:

Simon Boerum, for 57 days services in the General Assembly, 6s. per day.....	£17: 2: 0
To said Boerum, as Clerk to the Supervisors.	2: 10: 0
To Simon Boerum, for a book or record furnished for said county.....	1: 0: 0
To John Rapelyea, for 52 days services done in General Assembly, at 6s.....	15: 12: 0
To Leffert Lefferts, Coroner, for six inquisitions for dead bodies buried in said county, at 27s..	8: 2: 0
To Philip Nagle, Esq., for transporting one free Negro wench to Jamaica*.....	0: 2: 0

*In the year 1755, a census of slaves was taken in all the counties, except Albany and Suffolk. There were in Brooklyn, 50; Bushwick, 43; Flatlands, 39; Flatbush, 35; New Utrecht, 67; Newtown, 87. This number of slaves did not increase very much in the next ten years.

To Cornelius Wykoff, for transporting one vagrant to New York city, where he belongs, and to notify the authorities of said city.....	0: 5: 0
To John O'Rourke, public whipper, from the 5th day October, 1769, to October 5th, 1770, and for whipping several thieves and other criminals.	4: 0: 0

The following entry appears on the records of the proceedings of the Supervisors this year, at a special meeting held in March, 1770:

"Whereas, there is in the city of New York, and in other parts of this Province, and in the Colonies Generally, a Spirit of resistance and opposition to the King, which doth threaten to break out into armed resistance, quite alarming, which is alleged by those engaged in it, to be upon good cause and just reason, on account of unjust taxations, and other alleged wrongs, therefore—

Resolved, That we, the Supervisors, representing the Several towns in this County, will still adhere to our Loyalty, until better informed as to the causes of all this disturbance, in which some of the people of the county have taken a part, particularly in the liberty-pole fight in New York.*

There were members of the Board who strongly advocated the amendment of this resolution, so it would read as follows:

That we do solemnly sympathize with those good citizens of New York, and elsewhere, who do, in all candor, honesty and equity oppose the unjust measures of England, and her rulers, taken in regard to her colonies in America.

*The Liberty-pole fight, alluded to in this resolution, took place on the 13th of January, 1770. A large number of the people of Brooklyn crossed the river, and joined the citizens in the contest against the British soldiers, stationed in New York, which grew out of the following circumstance: A part of the 16th Regiment, Royal Infantry, attempted to destroy the Liberty Pole, which stood near Bowling Green, by blowing it up with gun powder. The citizens interfered, and the soldiers desisted, but, with fixed bayonets they charged on the citizens, driving them into a tavern near by, a favorite resort for the "Sons of Liberty." The soldiers soon demolished the furniture, broke the windows, and greatly damaged the building. On the night of the 16th, three days after, the soldiers succeeded in prostrating the pole, cutting it into pieces, and piling them up against the tavern—the rallying place of the Sons of Liberty. The next morning the alarm bells rang, and three thousand citizens, many of whom were from Kings County, rallied at the scene of the outrage, and adopted a resolution that, "all British soldiers, found in the streets after roll call, should be treated as public enemies." During the ensuing night, the soldiers busied themselves in posting up insulting placards, daring the people to carry out this resolution. Many of these placards found their way over the river, and were posted up in Brooklyn. Some were found at Flatbush. In the course of the day, three soldiers were caught in the act of posting up more of these placards. They were immediately arrested by the citizens; a fight ensued, and the citizens were victorious. But a reinforcement of twenty soldiers came upon the ground, and another fight with cutlasses, clubs and pistols, took place. The military were compelled to give way before the unarmed citizens, the former retreating slowly towards Golden Hill, now John Street, between Cliff Street and Burling Slip. Here, some of the English officers appeared, and the soldiers were ordered to their quarters. Though the soldiers were driven, several of the citizens were dangerously wounded, among whom was one Victor Camp, a citizen of Brooklyn. One citizen was instantly killed by a sabre stroke of a British soldier. After this the Mayor issued a proclamation, forbidding the soldiers to leave their barracks, unless accompanied by a non-commissioned officer. Not long after this, another Liberty Pole was erected, which stood until the British took possession of Long Island and New York, in 1776, when their soldiers destroyed it. It will therefore be seen, that the people of the city of New York, aided by citizens of Kings County, struck the first blow for liberty, and shed the first blood in its defense for this fight, sometimes called "the Battle of Golden Hill," took place sometime before the Boston massacre which took place in Kings Street in that city.

The amendment, however, was lost, and the foregoing resolution received the sanction of the majority of the board.

The total amount of indebtedness against the county this year amounted to £55, for the collection of which the Supervisors issued their warrants as follows :

Brookland	£18: 14: 9
Flatbush	11: 16: 3
New Utrecht	7: 12: 6
Bushwick	7: 2: 5
Flatlands	6: 13: 11
Gravesend	6: 11: 1

To the Widow Vanderveer, the sum of of £5: 7: 6,
for entertaining the Supervisors, Justices, and
Treasurer and Loan Officers.....

1771. The following named persons were chosen Supervisors, at the general election held at Flatbush the first Tuesday of April, 1771.

Johannes Bergen,	for Brooklyn.
Richard Stillwill,	" Gravesend.
Dirck Remsen,	" Flatlands.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
Theodorus Polhemous,	" Bushwick.
Johannes Lott,	" Flatbush.

At their annual meeting, which took place at Flatbush, October 1st, 1771, Peter Lefferts was made Treasurer, to serve for the then ensuing year, at the salary fixed by law, and Simon Boerum was chosen Clerk for the ensuing year.

Among the charges against the county this year were the following:

To Simon Boerum, for his services done in the General Assembly, 58 days, at 6s. per day.....
To the said Simon Boerum, for his services as Clerk for the Supervisors
To John Rapalye, for 50 days services done in the General Assembly, at 6s. per day

It will be seen that Kings County continued to be regularly represented in the General Colonial Assembly of the Province of New York, notwithstanding the disturbed state of the country. "But this body, representing the people of the Province, was not always in harmony with the Governor-General, who represented his majesty, the King, in the Colonial Government, and the Council, which acted in a two-fold capacity; first, as advisory; and second, as legislative. It was sometimes called a privy Council to the Governor. The origin of those political difficulties in New York, which continued with greater or less acrimony until the separation from the parent country, was the persistent attempt which some of the Governors made to obtain grants of revenue to the Crown for life. Occasionally grants were made to the officers of the Crown for a term of years, but, as time went on, the General Assembly grew more refractory upon the subject of grants for revenue—pertinaciously insisting that they would vote the salary for the officers of the Crown only with the annual supplies.

This was a principle which the Governors, as representatives of the Crown, felt bound to resist, as being an infringement of the royal prerogative. Thereafter, until the colony cast off its allegiance, the struggle in regard to revenue and its disposition, was almost constantly before the people in one form or another; and in some years, owing to the obstinacy of the representatives of the Crown on one side, and the inflexibility of the people on the other, supplies were not granted at all." The Provincial Assemblies, which by repeated enactments ordered the Supervisors to raise such immense sums of money by taxing the people of the county, were more subservient to the demands of the royal governors than any of their predecessors.

The famous Wm. Tryon was now Governor-General of the Province. Of all the Colonial Governors, he was the strongest advocate for the high prerogative of the Crown in America—a most relentless enemy to the rights of the colonists. "On the 8th of July, 1771," says Colonel STONE, "Sir William Tryon, Bart, having rendered himself odious to the people of North Carolina by his petty tyranny, arrived in New York, bearing his Majesty's commission as Governor-General and Commander-in-chief, in the place of Lord Dummore, who, as Governor-General, had been very popular." Tryon's administration at first gave much satisfaction, and tended largely to induce the Supervisors and the people of Kings County to look with some disfavor upon the spirit of hostility to the Crown which was manifesting itself. But the high-handed measures of the British ministry (with which Tryon strongly sympathized), in attempting to foist the odious stamp-act upon the colonists, soon caused the new Governor-General to be an object of popular hatred. On the 17th of July, 1771, he visited Flatbush with his suite, for the purpose of reviewing "the train bands," as the militia companies of those days were called, in sort of general muster. He was received, and entertained by the Judges, the Supervisors of the county, and the members of the General Assembly. In a speech which he made after the review, he took occasion to congratulate the people of Kings County upon "their undoubted and steady loyalty to their Sovereign," which, he said, "had all the appearance of permanent continuance." He promised to see to it "that all their rights and privileges should be carefully guarded and maintained." This plausible and eloquently delivered address tended largely to keep the officials, particularly the Supervisors, loyal to the King, for a time at least.

The charges against the county continue as follows:

To Abraham Brower, for money he has been obliged to pay to the constable of New York for charges for apprehending Sarah, the wife of Cæsar, the negro man that was lately strangled, for things which the said Sarah had stolen in Kings County, she having concealed the same in Kings county, said charges amount to.....£ 1: 19: 6

To Peter Antonious, for mending the locks and keys to the said goal, they having been torn and broken by James Domes and Samuel Fairbanks, prisoners, who had escaped out of said jail..... £1: 10: 10
 To Peter Colyer, constable of Boswick, for transporting one vagrant person to Brookland ferry..... 0: 5: 0
 To John O'Rourke, public whipper, from the first day of October, 1770, to the first day of October, 1771..... 3: 0: 0

"There is at present no money in the hands of the Treasurer, and it will be indebted after Lefferts, the Coroner, is paid out of the cash in the hands of the Treasurer;* therefore, we raise the sum of £55."

The whole amount of indebtedness against the county this year amounts to the sum of £58: 13: 2, for the collection of which the Supervisors issued their warrants.

The Supervisors allowed John Benham, the successor of Dominicus Vanderveer, as innkeeper at Flatbush, for entertaining them, the sum of £6: 11: 5.

1772. At the general election held at Flatbush this year, on the first Tuesday of April, the following persons were chosen Supervisors of the county:

Dirck Remsen,	for Flatlands.
Richard Stillwill,	" Gravesend.
Johannes Bergen,	" Brookland.
Theodorus Polhemus,	" Bushwick.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
Johannes Lott, Jr.,	" Flatbush.

At their annual meeting, held October 6th, 1772, Jeremias Vanderbilt was chosen Treasurer for the ensuing year in place of Peter Lefferts, who declined to serve any longer. Mr. Lefferts was, as we have seen, first chosen Treasurer at the annual meeting of the Supervisors, October, 1735, the successor of John Vanderbilt. He discharged the duties of Treasurer, with marked correctness and ability, thirty-seven years. His predecessor, Mr. John Vanderbilt, the first Treasurer of the county, appointed by the first Board of Supervisors, served twenty-one years. Jeremias Vanderbilt, the Treasurer appointed this year, was a son of John Vanderbilt.

The Supervisors, at their annual meeting aforesaid, made choice of Simon Boerum as their clerk.

Among the accounts presented against the county this year were the following:

To Simon Boerum, for 65 days service done by him in the General Assembly, at 6s. per day..... £2: 10: 0
 To said Boerum, as Clerk of Supervisors..... £2: 10: 0
 To Leffert Lefferts, Coroner, for three inquisitions of three bodies buried in said county..... 3: 9: 0
 To Rutgert Van Brunt, High Sheriff, for locks and keys for the goal, the locks and keys thereof having been tampered with and injured by the prisoners anxious to escape from prison.....

* There is some inconsistency in this entry, as the reader will see. It alleges that there is no money in the hands of the Treasurer, and yet it says "after Lefferts, the Coroner, is paid out of cash in the hands of the Treasurer the county will be indebted, &c."

To John Rapelye, for services done in General Assembly, 65 days, at 6s. per day..... £2: 10: 0
 To Michael Stryker, for keeping a vagrant person who fell sick and died at his house, and was buried by him..... £2: 10: 0
 To Dr. Van Buren, for medicine for the said person 0: 15: 0
 To Cornelius Cornell, for ditto for his burying.... 0: 5: 9
 To David Strong, for burying the said person.... 0: 12: 0
 To Jacob Lefferts, for things for burial of said person..... 0: 7: 8
 To John Benham, for a coffin for said person..... 2: 0: 0

From the items in this account, it is certain that the people of Kings County, in those days, treated the vagrant poor in rather a luxurious manner.

To John O'Rourke, public whipper of said county, from the first day of October, 1771, to the first day of October, 1772 £3: 0: 0
 To said O'Rourke, for cleaning the Court House and goal during that time.... 0: 16: 0

The whole amount of the demands against the county this year was £58: 13: 2, for the collection of which the Supervisors gave their warrants.

1773.—At the general election, held on the first Tuesday of April, 1773, the following were chosen Supervisors for the respective towns:

Dirck Remsen,	for Flatlands.
Richard Stillwill,	" Gravesend.
Johannes Bergen,	" Brookland.
Theodorus Polhemus,	" Bushwick.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
Johannes Lott, Jr.,	" Flatbush.

At the annual meeting of the Board, in Flatbush, October 5th, Jeremias Vanderbilt was chosen treasurer and Simon Boerum, clerk.

Among the charges against the county this year were the following:

To Simon Boerum, Esq., for 51 days service, done in General Assembly, at 6s. a day.....
 To John Rapelyea, Esq., for 51 days service, done in the General Assembly of the Province of New York,.....

It is a singular fact that the spirit of resistance to British usurpation against the rights of the colonists was not shared in by the members of the General Assembly, a majority of whom were more subservient to the officers of the crown than ever, and continued to vote for raising large sums out of the people. But the Supervisors of Kings County did not take any measures to enforce the collection of its pro rata share of the said sums of money, directed to be paid by the General Assembly.

The account against the county continues as follows:

To Simon Boerum, as clerk to the Board of Supervisors..... £2: 10: 0
 To Mathias Vandyck, late Coroner, for six inquisitions of six dead bodies, buried in said county @ £1: 7: 0..... 8: 2: 0

To Barnet Johnson, Jr., present Coroner, for two inquisitions.....	£2: 14: 0
To Leffert Lefferts, late Coroner, for one Inquisition.....	1: 7: 0
To Cornelius Wycoff, for entertaining one sick woman eight days, and for the boarding of an Indian boy and his mother six days and transporting them with horses and wagon to John Smith's, on the limits of Brookland....	0: 58: 0
To John Smith for entertaining an Indian boy and his mother—the boy died—and for burying the boy.....	3: 6: 0
To John O'Rourke, public whipper, from the first day of October, 1772, to the first day of October, 1773, and for whipping three hen thieves*.....	

The whole indebtedness against the county this year is £56 15s. 6d., for the collection of which the Supervisors issued the usual warrant.

The Board voted John Benham, innkeeper of Flatbush, seven pounds eighteen shillings for entertaining the Judges, Supervisors, Treasurer and loan officers.

1774.—At the general election, on the first Tuesday of April of this year, the following persons were chosen Supervisors of the county :

Dirick Remsen	for Flatlands.
Richard Stillwill	" Gravesend.
Johannes Bergen	" Brookland.
Theodorus Polhemus	" Bushwick.
Albert Van Brunt	" New Utrecht.
Johannes Lott	" Flatbush.

At the annual meeting of the Board, held at Flatbush on the 4th day of October, Jeremias Vanderbilt was chosen treasurer, and Simon Boerum was chosen clerk of the Board.

The following are among the items of account against the county this year :

To Simon Boerum, for 62 days services in the General Assembly, at 6s. per day.....	
To said Boerum for his services as clerk of the said Board.....	£2: 10: 0
To William Boerum, Coroner, for two inquisitions	2: 14: 0
To Samuel Skidmore, constable of Brooklyn, for transporting several vagrants to New York, and to Flatbush, where they belong.....	
To Jeremias Vanderbilt, Treasurer of the County—the same being indebted to him—ten shillings and eleven pounds.....	
To John O'Rourke, public whipper, from the first day of October, 1773, to the first day of Octo-	

* No official under the English government in Kings County discharged his duties longer or more faithfully than O'Rourke, the public whipper of the county. His services were highly appreciated; for, through the lapse of many years, we find his bill for services before the Supervisors—always promptly audited and paid—and we often find entries in the record of their proceedings, complimenting him for the effectual manner he applied "the cat" to the backs of criminals. O'Rourke did not cease to discharge his duties until 1783, when the British were driven out of the country. He lived many years after this, always insisting that a good whipping was the best punishment that could be given to some rascals. "Such whippings as I used to give them they didn't soon forget, I tell you," he used to say.

ber, 1774, and cleaning the Court House and goal.....	
The excise money paid in by Mr. Polhemus, Excise Commissioner of the county is.....	£33: 00: 11
The whole indebtedness against the county this year amounts to.....	33: 00: 11
Credit by Excise Money.....	33: 00: 11

Indebtedness.....£00: 00: 00

1775. At the general election held on the first Tuesday of April of this year, the following persons were chosen Supervisors of Kings County:

Johannes Bergen,	for Brookland.
Johannes Lott,	" Flatbush.
Richard Stillwill,	" Gravesend.
Garret Kovenhoven,	" Flatlands.
Theodorus Polhemous,	" Bushwick.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.

At the annual meeting of the board held at Flatbush, October 3d, 1775, Jeremias Vanderbelt was chosen Treasurer, and Johannes Lott, Clerk, in place of Simon Boerum, who had served as Clerk since October, 1752. Such was the happy capacity of Mr. Boerum for discharging the duties of Clerk of the Board, that he was one of the most popular officers of that department known within the history of Kings County. During most of the time he served as Clerk to the Board he was a representative of the county in the General Assembly.

The fees of the Clerk this year was fixed at thirty-three shillings.

The following were among the accounts presented against the county this year.

To John Rapelye, 126 days service done in the General Assembly, at 6s. a day.....	
To Simon Boerum, 70 days services done in the General Assembly, at 6s. a day.....	
To said Boerum for services done as Clerk of the Board of Supervisors.....	£2: 10: 0
To John O'Rourke, public whipper of the County, from the first day of October, 1773, to the first day of October, 1775, and for cleaning the goal and whipping two thieves.....	4: 2: 0
To Nicholas Cowenhoven, Esq., for prosecuting and transporting vagrant persons.....	3: 6: 0
To John Benham, Esq., for entertaining the Judges, Supervisors, and Loan Officers, and Treasurer.....	5: 19: 1
To Jeremias Vanderbelt, the Treasurer, the County being indebted to him.....	4: 8: 5
Excise money paid into the County by Theodorus Polhemous, Excise Commissioner.....	126: 12: 9
By Cash.....	32: 10: 8
	£94: 2: 1

1776. There is no record of any election for Supervisors this year in the county at the annual election on the first Tuesday in April, or at any other time; nor is there any record of any meeting of the Supervisors after the third day of October, 1775, until the first Tuesday of October, 1777. It is probable that, owing to the

occupation of Long Island by the Continental Army, after the breaking out of hostilities between the Colonies and England, down to August 29th, 1776, when the British troops took possession, the Supervisors of the county found it somewhat difficult to conduct their annual meetings, in conformity to the laws of the General Assembly of the Province, though, as we have seen, they did so with regularity down to October, 1775. But owing to the disordered state of things in Kings County, occasioned by the movement of the British and Continental armies in 1776, all the machinery of government in the county was suspended, until after the British took possession of the county, when the Supervisors resumed their meetings, according to the following entries in the record of their proceedings :

October the 7th, 1777. We the Treasurer and Clerk of the County met together and examined the books and found the county in debt to the Treasurer, Jeremias Vanderbelt, Esq., in the sum of £0: 6: 7.

On the first Tuesday of October, 1777, the Supervisors of Kings County met together at the house of John Benham, in Flatbush, and adjourned until the 24th of the same month of October.

Kings County, ss: On the 21st of October, 1777, the Supervisors of said County, according to the said adjournment, met at the house of the said John Benham to-wit:

Johannes Bergen,	for Brookland.
Johannes Lott,	" Flatbush.
Albert Van Brunt,	" New Utrecht.
Theodorus Polhemous,	" Bushwick.
Dirick Remsen,	" Flatlands.

The county now being in full possession of the British troops, this board met and acted under the Colonial laws, although the Provincial or Colonial government had been annulled by the adoption of the State Constitution, April 28th, 1777, by which the Province became a State under the Declaration of Independence and the acts of the Continental Congress, and laws enacted by the first State Legislature, which convened at Kingston, September 9th, 1777. This Legislature was, after a session of about one month, dispersed by the British, who took and burned Kingston, October 7th, 1777. The Legislature, however, in due time, assembled again at Poughkeepsie, and its annual sessions have continued down to the present time.

1777. At the adjourned meeting of the Supervisors on the 24th of October, 1777, they made choice of Jeremias Vanderbilt as Treasurer for the ensuing year, voting that he was to receive his fees "*according to an act of the General Assembly of the Province of New York in that case made and provided.*"

Thus it will be seen, that this board, notwithstanding the existence of the Federal and State governments, the

adoption of the constitutions to which we have referred, and the acts of the Legislature of 1777, still recognized the Colonial Government and the acts of its General Assembly. But we must remember that Kings County, all of Long Island and the city of New York, were in possession of the British, who, by force of arms, could and did keep the Colonial government in operation.

Among the accounts brought against the county at the adjourned meeting of the Supervisors, October 21st, 1777, were the following:

To Peter Antonious, for locks and repairing the goal, now much out of order.....	£3: 12: 0
To Philip Nagal, for one lock on the goal.....	0: 8: 6
To John Benham, for work on the Court House...	0: 4: 0
To the deacons of Flatbush church, for maintaining a vagrant person that died, and for burying him.....	3: 1: 1
To John O'Rourke, public whipper, from the first day of October, 1775, to the first day of October, 1777, and whipping three criminals.....	3: 16: 0
For property of Jeromias Klein destroyed in a riot.....	
To T. Johnson, for cleaning the Court House and goal, and for maintaining the Supervisors the 24th of May, 1777.....	1: 1: 9
To John Benham, for maintaining the Judges and Supervisors the first and third Tuesdays of October, 1777.....	10: 18: 4

1778. There is no record of any election for Supervisors in the county at the usual time for holding the election, the first Tuesday of April, or at any time during the year 1778; but the following entry in the journal of the proceedings of the Supervisors that year, show that a Board met at the time fixed for its annual meeting, the first Tuesday of October.

Kings County, ss: On the first Tuesday of October, 1778, the Supervisors of said county met at the house of John Benham, in Flatbush, and made choice of their Treasurer, Jeremias Vanderbilt, Esq., for the ensuing year, and have his fees according to an act of the General Assembly of the Province of New York, in that case made and provided; and also made choice of their Clerk, Johannes Lott, for the ensuing year; that the said Clerk shall have for his services the sum of 35s. per year, and the said Supervisors met together to discharge the county debts, and the particulars are as follows:

To Dirick Remsen, for 30 shingles for the Court House.....	£0: 8: 0
To John Benham, for mending the Court House, broken by prisoners escaping, their friends on the outside helping them.....	0: 10: 0
To Johannes Lott, for services done as clerk.....	1: 15: 0
To John O'Rourke, public whipper from the first day of October, 1777, to the first day of October, 1778.....	3: 0: 0
To John Benham, for entertaining the Judges, Supervisors, and the Secretary of the Governor General, William Tryon, and other officers.....	4: 2: 1
The charge was found the year before for this, it being a county charge*.....	26: 19: 1
	36: 14: 2

* Tryon—on April 7th, 1774, alarmed at the turn affairs had taken in the colonies, sailed for England to represent to the ministry the alarming state of things in America, and ascertain their policy in regard to the matters—returned July 1st, 1775, assured by the ministry that the rebellious colonists must be chastised into submission. He was therefore, on July 28th, 1775, reappointed Governor-General. As he was a man of practical policy, he saw the necessity, owing to the proximity of Kings County to New York City, of keeping her citizens loyal to the British ministry and the Crown; hence, he and her officers were often present with the county officials, and was entertained, as we have seen, at the expense of the county.

The Supervisors agreed to raise the sum of £40 out of the county for charges, and the quota thereof for every town of said county is as follows:

Brookland.....	£12: 16: 10
Flatbush.....	8: 0: 4
New Utrecht.....	5: 4: 0½
Flatlands.....	4: 11: 4
Bushwick.....	4: 16: 5½
Gravesend.....	4: 11: 0

£40: 00: 00

"The several sums of every township after being raised, were preserved by me, Johannes Lott, Clerk of the said Supervisors, according to the orders of said Supervisors, and the particulars paid out by me to the several persons to whom they are due."

June 30th, 1779, then paid to Joseph Varick, for work done to the Court House of Flatbush... £ 1: 12: 0
Paid out of the forty pounds..... 36: 14: 2

£40: 00: 00

38: 6: 2

There remains in my hands.....£1: 13: 10

There was no list of the names of the Supervisors who attended the meetings, the proceedings of which we have given. The reader will observe that among the charges presented against the county at the last three meetings of the Board of Supervisors, there appears no charges for the service of any member of the General Assembly of the Province. The county, no doubt, was never represented in that body after the year 1774; its last representative being Simon Boerum.

1779. There was no election for Supervisors in the county this year, of which there is any record. But the following entry in the journals of the Board shows that a Board of Supervisors were, at the time, appointed for the annual meeting of the Board of Supervisors.

Kings County, ss: On the first Tuesday of October, 1779, the Supervisors of said county met at the house of John Benham, in Flatbush, and adjourned until the first Tuesday of November next. And said Supervisors, according to their said adjournment, met together at the house of said John Benham, and made choice of their Treasurer, Jeremias Vaudebilt, Esq., for the ensuing year, and to have his fees as the year before, and also made choice of their Clerk, Johannes Lott, for the ensuing year, to have for his services as before. And the Supervisors found the county indebted in the following particulars:

To Barent Johnson, Coroner, for inquisition..... £1: 7: 0
To John O'Rourke, public whipper, from the first day of October, 1778, to the first day of October, 1779, and for whipping four persons..... 3: 0: 0
To John Benham, for entertaining the Judges and the Supervisors, and their visitors, on the first Tuesday of October and November, 1779 9: 5: 0

13: 12: 00

It will be seen from the foregoing that all the charges against the county, except about £3: 7, was for entertaining the Judges, Supervisors and their visitor two days.

1780. There is no record of any election of Supervisors this year, but the following entry in their minutes shows that a Board met at that time and place fixed for the annual meeting of the Supervisors, though only three members were present:

Kings County, ss: On the first day of October, 1780, the Supervisors of the said county, namely, Derick Remsen, Theodoros Polhemous and Johannes Lott, the Treasurer, Jeremias Vaudebilt, and Judge Nagel, met together, and the said Supervisors found the county indebted to wit:

To Johannes E. Lott, for repairing the Court House.....£35: 6: 6
To Justice Polhemous, for maintaining a vagrant woman 7 weeks, at \$2 per week... 5: 12: 0
To John O'Rourke, as public whipper from the first day of October, 1779, to the first Tuesday of October, 1780..... 3: 12: 0
To John Benham, for entertaining the Judge and the Supervisors the first Tuesday of October, 1780..... 2: 15: 1
The county charges the year before being..... 13: 12: 0
To Albert Vanbrunt, for keeping a vagrant..... 5: 0: 0

£67: 00: 7

The Supervisors agree to raise the sum of £70 out of the county for county charges, and the quota thereof being for every town of said county as follows:

Brooklyn.....	£22: 9: 6
Flatbush.....	14: 0: 7
New Utrecht.....	9: 2: 1
Flatlands.....	7: 19: 10
Bushwick.....	8: 8: 10
Gravesend.....	7: 19: 2

£70: 00: 0

1781. There are no minutes of any election for Supervisors in the county this year, nor is there any record of a meeting of any Board of Supervisors.

1782. On the first Tuesday of April, 1782, there was an election of Supervisors in the county, and the following named persons were elected:

Johannes Bergen,	for Brooklyn.
Philip Nagel,	" Flatbush.
Isaac Cortelyou,	" New Utrecht.
Dirick Remsen,	" Flatlands.
Albert Terhune,	" Gravesend.
Abraham Luquer,	" Bushwick.

Kings County, ss: The Supervisors met together at the house of John Benham, on the first Tuesday of October, 1782. The Supervisors who were present adjourned until the 15th day of said month, and then met again and made choice of their Treasurer, Jeremias Vanderbilt, Esq., for the ensuing year, "and to have his fees according to an act of the General Assembly of the Province of New York, in that case made and provided;" and also made choice of their Clerk, Johannes Lott, for the ensuing year, and to have for his fees the sum of 35s., and the Supervisors found the county indebted as follows:

To Johannes E. Lott, for providing lodging and other necessities for a certain John Brewer, who fell sick at his house and died, together with the funeral expenses.....£10: 10: 0

To the estate of Roelof Lott, deceased, for attending a vagrant with the small-pox, who died at his house, and funeral expenses.....	5: 8: 0
To the estate of Paul Vanderworth, for two coffins made for poor persons who died at Bushwick.	4: 14: 0
To the estate of Johannes Lott, deceased, for his services done as Clerk of the Supervisors.....	1: 15: 0
To John Benham, for entertaining the Judges, &c., four several times	17: 8: 8
	£40: 3: 8

The Supervisors agree to raise the sum of £42 out of the county for county charges, and the quotas of every town is as follows :

*Brooklyn ..	£13: 9: 8
*Flatbush.....	8: 8: 4½
*New Utrecht	5: 9: 3½
*Flatlands.....	4: 15: 11
*Bushwick.....	5: 1: 3½
Gravesend.....	4: 15: 6½
	£42: 00: 1½

Those towns marked with a star did not pay.

This is the last entry in the record of the proceedings of the Supervisors of Kings County, under the General Assembly of the Colonial Government. It is probable that the proceedings were not assented to by the people, for we see by the record that none of the towns, except Gravesend, paid the quota of the expenses of the county assessed against them.

We have now traced the history of the Supervisors of Kings County from the first organized board in 1714, through the colonial period after that date, down to 1782, the date of the last meeting of the board, under the General Provincial Assembly, summoned by warrants of the Royal Governors.

During all this time, they continued loyal to the Crown, even, as we have seen, after the adoption of the State Constitution, April 20th, 1777, but not without frequent opposition by the patriotic citizens of the county.

Soon after the Battle of Lexington, a meeting of the citizens of the county was held at Flatbush, in which five of the towns in the county were represented, for the purpose of uniting with the people in other parts of the colonies in a call for another convention, favorable to the cause of freedom.

"Flatbush," says a local historian, "by the voice of Nicholas Cowenhoven, declined any complicity in the proceedings of the convention, but expressed a design of remaining neutral during the struggle, which was clearly approaching.

"Theodorus Polhemous, Richard Stillwill, Nicholas Cowenhoven, John Vanderbilt, Henry Williams and Jeremiah Remsen, most of them members of the board of Supervisors, were chosen to represent the county in the convention. There were many other prominent citizens of the county who took an active part in the proceedings of the convention, but their names are not found on the record of the meeting, or on the list of delegates to congress."

On the 20th day of May, 1775, a general town meeting, largely attended, was held at Brooklyn, for the purpose of taking into consideration the proper course to pursue, in relation to the position in which the country stood towards the course pursued by the British Ministry. Jeremiah Remsen was chairman, Leffert Lefferts was secretary. At this meeting a resolution was passed favorable to holding a Provincial Congress, "to advise, consult, watch over and defend at this alarming crisis, all civil and religious rights, liberties and privileges, according to their collective prudence."

Henry Williams and Jeremiah Remsen, Esqrs., were elected deputies for Brooklyn, to meet May 22d, with other deputies, in a provincial convention in the city of New York.

But the British took possession of Long Island in August, 1776, and continued in possession until November 25th, 1783; and, as we have seen, the civil laws, under the State Constitution, were entirely suspended during that time, a period of seven years.

Kings County under the Federal Government and the Constitution of the State of New York.

—By the 29th Section of the State Constitution, adopted April 20th, 1777, and an act of the legislature passed, the office of Supervisor was retained in all the towns of the State under the following provisions :

The Town Clerks, Supervisors, Assessors, Constables, Collectors, and all other officers heretofore eligible, in manner directed by the present or future acts of legislatures.

Loan Commissioners, County Treasurers, Clerks of the Supervisors, shall continue to be appointed in the manner directed by the present or future acts of the legislature.

The powers and duties of Supervisors, under the constitution of 1777, and the acts of the legislature of that year under it, were nearly the same as under the Colonial laws. They were auditors of charges against the county, assessed these charges against the different towns, according to their quotas, granting warrants for their collection; and, in examining the accounts of the Loan Officers and County Treasurers, their powers and duties were greatly enlarged by subsequent acts of the legislature, as we shall see, and they were afterwards elected by ballots.

1784. The first entry that appears on the record of the proceedings of the Board of Supervisors of Kings County, after the Evacuation of Long Island, November, 1783, is the following :

We, the Supervisors of Kings County, do hereby authorize, nominate and appoint Rutgert Van Brunt and Isaac Cortleyou, to meet the Conference of Supervisors at the place appointed, Flatbush, July 1st, 1784.

Philip Nagle. Charles Titus.
Abraham Vorhees. Tunis Bergen.
Supervisors.

When these Supervisors were elected, or what was the nature of the Conference of Supervisors, to which

Messrs. Van Brunt and Cortelyou were appointed to meet, does not appear.

The next entry on the record of the proceedings of the Kings County Supervisors, is the following :

"The aforesaid Judges and Supervisors, having examined the books of Rutgert Van Brunt and John Cowenhoven, Loan Commissioners of said county, agreeable to the act of the legislature for loaning monies to the State, passed April 18th, 1786, the said Rutgert Van Brunt and John Cowenhoven, have produced to us, the said Judge and Supervisors, a full discharge of the said Loan Officers, with thanks for their services rendered to said county for the faithful discharge of their duty.

1784. The first regular meeting of the Board of Supervisors for Kings County, after the withdrawal of the British troops from Long Island, took place July 14, 1784. As this meeting was of great importance, embracing much of the history, the laws and the families of that day, we give the proceedings entire, as follows:

At a meeting held this 14th day of July, 1784, at Flatbush, in Kings County, present :

Philip Nagel,	for Flatbush,
Tunis Bergen,	" Brooklyn,
Charles Titus,	" Bushwick,
Abraham Voorhees,	" Flatlands,
Rutgert Van Brunt,	" Gravesend,
Isaac Cortlyou,	" New Utrecht,

We have unanimously chosen Jeremias Vanderbilt, of Flatbush, in the County of Kings, aforesaid, Treasurer of Kings County, and Nicholas Cowenhoven, their clerk, and then adjourned till the next meeting."

It does not appear when the above Supervisors were elected, nor to what time and at what place the said board adjourned.

We find the proceedings of a meeting of the Board of Supervisors which took place at Flatbush, December 12, 1784, which board was composed of the same members as the last meeting of the board, July 14th.

Jeremias Vanderbilt, the Treasurer, and Nicholas Cowenhoven appointed at that meeting, were present, and signed their names to the entry of the proceedings; so that the meeting of December 12th, 1784, was an adjourned meeting of the July previous.

The following entry in their record shows the amount of the indebtedness of the county for the year 1784.

The above Supervisors agree to proportion the several sums as follows: for the several townships, to be raised, assessed, and collected, as the law directs, the sum of £6,500, and the sum of £6,500, being in whole £13,000, and the Supervisors have agreed to proportion the different townships as follows, viz.:

Brooklyn township, the sum of.....	£3,932: 7: 1
Flatbush " " " ".....	2,567: 12: 11
Flatlands " " " ".....	1,625: 00: 00
Bushwick " " " ".....	1,625: 00: 00
Gravesend " " " ".....	1,625: 00: 00
New Utrecht " " " ".....	1,625: 00: 00

£13,000: 00: 00

The above is all agreed to, this 14th day of December, 1784.

Philip Nagel,	Isaac Cortelyou,
Charles Titus,	Abraham Voorhees,
R. Van Brunt,	
All Supervisors of Kings County.	

Jere. Vanderbilt, Treasurer,
Nicholas Cowenhoven, Clerk.

The sum of money thus assessed against the county would seem to be excessively large compared with the sums assessed against it during the Colonial period. But it must be remembered that no bills had been presented and audited against the county since October, 1782, and the towns, except one, refused to pay the said bills. During the time the county was in possession of the British, the court-house and jail were greatly damaged and other public property destroyed, so that expenses of repairing these buildings, greatly enhanced the expenses of the county. The record of the proceedings of the Supervisors at this meeting continues as follows, by which it will be seen the Brooklyn Supervisor attempted to have the assessment against his town reduced on account of the "Brooklyn Exiles," meaning the Tories, who were compelled to leave the county when the British evacuated Long Island.

"Tunis Bergen, the Brooklyn Supervisor, strongly desires that some small sum, say £300 or £500, ought to be taken from their proportion, because the Brooklyn Exiles were exempt from the £100,000 tax. But the other Supervisors would not, by any means, agree that he should have anything taken from the sum £3,932: 7: 1 (the proportionment of Brooklyn) because they all agree, in opinion, that the taxes would still come lighter on Brooklyn, than any other township in the county, this was their opinion.

Nicholas Cowenhoven, Clerk,"

"The Supervisors have also agreed to raise the further sum of two hundred and twenty-four pounds, seventeen shillings and one-half pence for repairing the court-house and goal of the said county, and other contingent charges and expenses to be raised, assessed, and collected, and have agreed to the following expenses, and proportioned it for the different towns as follows, and have agreed that each township shall raise their arrears as follows:"

Here follows the items of the account against the county, which was duly audited. We find the following item among the accounts thus audited:

For printing a patriotic address.....£3: 4: 0.

"The said Supervisors have also resolved that, and agreed that if any poor person, or vagrant, comes to expense in any town, that each township bears its own expense. Also resolved that all Judges and Assemblymen, are to be desired to meet from time to time with the Supervisors.

On supposition, the following is the quantity of land on a calculation made in 1775 in Kings County:

	NO. ACRES.
Brooklyn.....	5,193
Flatbush.....	4,060
New Utrecht.....	2,635
Flatlands.....	2,313
Bushwick.....	2,443
Gravesend.....	2,304
	<hr/> 18,948

It is also further agreed that if the burden of taxes come harder on the inhabitants of the one town than the other, in such case, such matters to be considered, and redress given by the Supervisors to lower such proportionment, with the intent that all bear an equal proportion of taxes according to circumstances, abilities, etc., etc.

It is further ordered that the contingent expenses of the taxes, for collecting, assessing, and other charges thereon, not pointed out, be retained in the hands of the treasurer and collectors, ordered to be raised as the other contingent charges of the county, and can and may be brought in by each supervisor for his own town, or can bring the whole together in the county tax if they like. But the whole to be done as the law of the State of New York directs.

N. COWENHOVEN, Clerk."

Immediately after making the foregoing entries in the proceedings of the board this year, Mr. Cowenhoven, having been appointed by the Governor, first Judge of the county, resigned the clerkship of the county of Kings, according to the following entry:

"Whereas, Nicholas Cowenhoven, Esq., cannot consistently act longer as clerk of the supervisors, he therefore desires to be discharged therefrom, which was done, and we have nominated and appointed Jacob Sharp, Jr., the clerk of Kings County, to be their clerk in the room and stead of Nicholas Cowenhoven, who however resigned, considering his appointment to be incompatible with the office of first Judge of the county."

Thus ended the first regular meeting of the Board of Supervisors of Kings County, under the Federal Constitution, and the law and constitution of New York.

Thereafter, we shall only give an abridged history of the proceedings of the supervisors of the county, viz., the names of those constituting the various boards and the names of their clerks, treasurers, loan officers, &c., briefly describing the most important of their proceedings, noting the changes made in regard to them by different acts of the Legislature of the State.

1785.—The Supervisors elected in the county this year met at Flatbush, on the first Tuesday of April. The board consisted of the following members:

Philip Nagel,	for Flatbush,
Vernundes [Ferdinandus] Suydam,	" Brooklyn,
Charles Titus,	" Bushwick,
Rutger Van Brunt,	" Gravesend,
Ulpianes Van Sinderen,	" Flatlands,
Isaac Cortelyou,	" New Utrecht.

The county was indebted in the sum of £112: 16: 0, according to bills presented, which was ordered paid according to law.

1786.—The Supervisors met this year, and the following were the members of the board:

At a meeting of the Judges and Supervisors, the 29th day of May, 1786, present: Nicholas Cowenhoven, Johannes E. Lott, Peter Lefferts, and John Vanderbilt, *Judges*.

Ferdinand Suydam,	Supervisor for Brooklyn,
Charles Titus,	" Bushwick,
Philip Nagel,	" Flatbush,
Jaques Barklow,	" New Utrecht,
Albert Terhune,	" Gravesend,
Ulpianus Van Sinderen	" Flatlands.

The board with the judges appointed Philip Nagel and Rutger Van Brunt loan officers of the county, according to law.

Philip Nagle having been appointed treasurer, John Cowenhoven was appointed loan officer in his place. Jacob Sharp was continued in the office of clerk. There were three meetings of the board this year, May, July and September. The indebtedness of the county this year was in all £2,493: 17: 6.

1787.—The Board of Supervisors met this year, January 20th, and consisted of the following members, with the judges of the county.

Philip Nagel,	for Flatbush,
Ferdinand Suydam,	" Brooklyn,
Charles Titus,	" Bushwick,
Ulpines Van Sinden,	" Flatlands,
Albert Terhune,	" Gravesend,
Jaques Barklow,	" New Utrecht,
	Jacob Sharp, Jr., clerk.

This meeting adjourned until the 2d day of March, 1787. Present, as before.

"The above supervisors and judges find the county entitled to a piece of ground lying about the court-house in said county, and have nominated and appointed Johannes E. Lott, Peter Lefferts and John Vandervoort, Esqs., commissioners for to view the premises, and report as soon as convenient to the clerk of the said supervisors what they had found belonging to the county. By order of the supervisors,

JACOB SHARP, Jr., Clerk."

"At an adjourned meeting of the Board, held on the 27th day of April, the commissioners reported that they found that the said land did belong to the said county, and that they had let it with the remainder of the county-house lot to J. Van Buren for one year, for the sum 40 shillings." The indebtedness of the county this year amounted to £23: 0: 0.

The Board had four meetings this year. The first, Jan. 20th; the second, April 27th; the third, Sep. 4th; the fourth on the 1st day of October. At the October meeting the supervisors settled with John Cowenhoven, and Rutger Van Brunt, in pursuance of an act of the Legislature entitled "An act for emitting £200,000 in bills of credit, for the purpose therein mentioned," passed April 18th, 1786. Jacob Sharp was continued in the office of clerk.

1788.—The supervisors for this year were: Ferdinand Suydam, Albert Terhune, Charles Titus, M. Schenck, Jaques Barklow, Johannes I. Lott; Jacob Sharp, Clerk.

The board met April 7th, 1787. By an act of the Legislature, boards of supervisors of the respective counties in the State were constituted *boards of canvassers* to canvass the ballots for member of Assembly and for delegates to a Convention.

April 7th, 1787. The board of supervisors of Kings County, having met, according to law, for canvassing the ballots for members of Assembly and delegates to the Convention, find that Peter Vandervoort and Aquila Giles are elected mem-

bers of Assembly, and that Peter Lefferts and Peter Vandervoort are elected delegates to the Convention.

The charges against the county this year amounted to £44: 12: 0; which the supervisors audited.

1789.—The Supervisors this year elected were: Ferdinand Suydam, Charles Titus, Johannes I. Lott, Isaac Cortelyou, Nicholas Schenck, Albert Terhune. The Supervisors agree to raise money for building a gallery in the court-house.

The indebtedness against the county this year amounted to £75: 8: 9, which they allowed and directed to be paid.

Jacob Sharp was retained as clerk of the board.

1790.—The Supervisors this year elected were: Ferdinand Suydam, Albert Terhune, Isaac Cortelyou, Nicholas Schenck, Johannes I. Lott.

The accounts against the county this year amounted to £18: 2: 6.

1791.—At a meeting of the judges and supervisors of Kings County, held April 12th, agreeable to an act of the Legislature, entitled an act for building a court-house and goal in said county, passed March 10th, 1791. Present: Nicholas Cowenhoven, Peter Lefferts and John Vanderbilt, *Judges*. Ferdinand Suydam, Albert Terhune, Isaac Cortelyou, Johannes I. Lott, Nicholas Schenck, *Supervisors*.

The Judges and Supervisors appointed three commissioners to superintend the building of the said court-house and gaol. John Vanderbilt, Johannes L. Lott, and Charles Doughty, were appointed such commissioners. The Supervisors further resolved to raise the sum of £1,200, agreeable to the aforesaid act; that is to say, £800 on or before the 1st day of June next, and the remaining part on or before the 1st day of October next.

The Board adjourned until the 16th inst.

At a meeting of the Supervisors, held April 16, 1791, to fix the quotas of each town in the expense of building the new court-house and goal, apportioned the said amount as follows:

Brooklyn.....	£256: 1: 0
Flatbush.....	189: 5: 10
Flatlands.....	98: 1: 1
Gravesend.....	77: 1: 1
New Utrecht.....	100: 3: 2
Bushwick.....	98: 2: 7

£840: 2: 7

The indebtedness against the county this year, aside from the expenses of the new court-house and goal, is £50: 18: 9. Jacob Sharp, clerk.

The matter of building the new court-house and jail in the county was one of great importance to the Supervisors this year, requiring several meetings of the Board. After the plans and specifications had been adopted, it was proposed to change them, increasing the expense largely. The Board finally adjourned *sine die*, August 30, 1791.

1792. The Supervisors elected this year were Ferdinand Snyder, Albert Terhune, Nicholas Schenck, Isaac Cortelyou, Charles Titus, Johannes I. Lott. Jacob Sharp, Jun., was chosen clerk; Rutger Van Brunt and John Cowenhoven were elected loan officers. The expenses of the county this year were £48: 13: 3. In addition to this sum, £300 was raised to complete the court-house and jail; this was in addition to the amount already raised.

1793. The Supervisors elected this year were Albert Terhune, Nicholas Schenck, Johannes I. Lott, John Skillman.

The first meeting of the Board took place May 28, at the court-house, in Flatbush; Jacob Sharp, Jr., was chosen clerk.

The accounts against the county this year amounted to £62: 0: 6.

1794. The Supervisors elected this year were Ferdinand Suydam, Albert Terhune, Nicholas Schenck, Johannes I. Lott, John Skillman; Jacob Sharp, Jr., was chosen clerk.

The accounts against the county this year amounted to £25: 9: 3.

1795. The Supervisors elected this year were Ferdinand Suydam, Albert Terhune, Nicholas Schenck, Johannes I. Lott, and John Skillman; Jacob Sharp was chosen clerk of the Board. The accounts against the county this year amounted to £26: 10: 8.

1796. The Supervisors elected this year were Albert Terhune, Ferdinand Suydam, Nicholas Schenck, Adrian Hageman, John Skillman, Johannes I. Lott; Jacob Sharp, Jr., was chosen clerk.

The accounts against the county this year amounted to £14: 10: 0.

The Supervisors voted to apportion the sum of £188, granted for the schools of Kings County, which will be payable to the treasurer of said county on the 3d Tuesday of March, 1797. This is the first appropriation for the support of common schools, of which there is any record.

1797. The Supervisors elected this year were Johannes E. Lott, Albert Terhune, Ferdinand Suydam, Adrian Hageman, Johannes I. Lott; Jacob Sharp, Jr., was chosen clerk.

The accounts against the county this year amounted to £78: 7: 0.

1798. The Supervisors elected this year were Ferdinandus Suydam, Albert Terhune, Nicholas Schenck, Adrian Hageman, John Skillman, Johannes I. Lott. Jacob Sharp, Jr., was chosen clerk of the Board.

The accounts against the county this year amounted to £93: 14: 7, exclusive of the amount proportioned to the different towns for the support of common schools,

1799. The Supervisors elected this year were Adrian Hageman, Ferdinandus Suydam, John Skillman, Rem. Williamson, Nicholas Schenck, and Johannes I. Lott.

At a meeting of the Board, held May 28th, Jacob Sharp, Jr., was chosen clerk. The accounts against the county this year, exclusive of the school accounts, were the following:

To Michael Van Cleif, for boards for the court-house..£2: 5: 0
To Michael Van Cleif, as per account..... 2: 7: 6
To Rutgert Van Brunt, Coroner, 2 Inquisitions.

At an adjourned meeting, held October 29th, items of account were presented and allowed, amounting to £40: 13: 1.

1800. The Supervisors elected this year were Adrian Hageman, John Skillman, Rem. Williamson, Jeremiah Johnson, and Hendrick Lott. At a meeting of the Board, held June 24th, Jacob Sharp was chosen clerk. The accounts presented and allowed against the county this year amounted to £75: 2: 4.

Among these accounts was the following:

Supervisor's fees, each 32s.....£8: 16: 0
Clerk's fees..... 2: 0: 0

1801. The Supervisors elected this year were John Skillman, Johannes Remsen, Rem. Williamson, Jeremiah Johnson. At a meeting of the Board together, 1st Judge Johannes E. Lott, and Associate Judges Adrian Hageman and Johannes I. Lott, and Rutgert Van Brunt and John Cowenhoven, Loan officers, Jeremiah Lott was chosen clerk. At this meeting, the accounts of the Loan officers were examined, and found correct.

According to an act of the Legislature, then recently passed, the accounts against the county were to be rendered separately by the towns in which the account accrued, similar to the present practice. In addition to this, there were items which were charged against the county. All accounts were aggregated against the county, and the sum total was apportioned against each town, according to its quota. It also now became the duty of the Board of Supervisors to take up the Assessment Rolls of the different towns, and complete the same according to a statute passed since the last meeting of the Board, in 1800; so that the present duties of Boards of Supervisors have not become much more laborious and important than formerly. The whole amount of indebtedness of the county this year, 1801 was £213: 3: 4.

1803. The Supervisors elected this year were: Johannes I. Lott, Adrian Hegeman, Johannes Remsen, John Terhune, Jeremiah Johnson.

The Loan Commissioners were: Rutgert Van Brunt and John Cowenhoven. At the annual meeting of the Board, held 1st Tuesday of October, Jeremiah Lott was chosen Clerk of the Board.

The charges against the several towns in the county amounted to the sum of \$253.11.

1804. The Supervisors of the county this year were: Adrian Hegeman, *New Utrecht*; John Skillman, *Bushwick*; Johannes Remsen, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah John-

son, *Brooklyn*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*. Jeremiah Lott was chosen Clerk of the Board.

The contingent expenses of the county this year were \$307; the town charges, \$1,311.66—total, \$1,618.66.

1805. The Supervisors this year were: John Skillman, Jeremiah Johnson, John Terhune, Engelbert Lott, John C. Vanderveer.

At a meeting of the Board, on the 30th day of March, Jeremiah Lott was made Clerk. Loan Commissioner Col. Rutgert Van Brunt having resigned, and Loan Commissioner John Cowenhoven having died since the last meeting of the Board, there were no Loan Officers in the county. At an adjourned meeting, held on the 30th March, John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott were chosen Loan Officers. The contingent expenses of the county this year were \$340.02; the indebtedness of the different towns, \$2,121.12.

1806. The Supervisors this year were: John Skillman, *Bushwick*; Johannes Remsen, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; Engelbert Lott, *New Utrecht*. Jeremiah Lott was chosen Clerk.

Johannes I. Lott having resigned the office of Treasurer of the county, Hendrick I. Lott was appointed in his place.

The following statement of the aggregate amount of real and personal estate in the county was transmitted to the Comptroller of the State, according to the statute in such case made and provided:

Brooklyn, \$1,084,190; Flatbush, \$377,612; Bushwick, \$275,000; New Utrecht, \$272,874; Flatlands, \$192,600; Gravesend, \$178,477. Total, \$2,380,753.

The charges against the county for contingencies this year were \$419.50, which was, as usual, apportioned among the several towns in the county.

The town charges this year were as follows:

Brooklyn, one election.	\$35 00
To maintenance of the poor.....	1,000 00
To Building a House of Correction....	1,000 00
Assessor's fees.....	28 00
Town Clerk's fees.....	6 00
Copying assessment roll.....	3 00

Total.... ..\$2,072 00

Flatbush town charges, \$225; Bushwick, \$128.75; New Utrecht, \$51.25; Flatlands, \$242.50; Gravesend, \$51 81.

1807.—The Supervisors this year were John Skillman, *Bushwick*; Johannes Remsen, *Flatlands*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; Engelbert Lott, *New Utrecht*.

The Board met June 2d, 1807, when the following resolutions were passed:

Resolved, That the debtor's room in the goal of this county is not sufficiently secure for the confinement and safe keeping of prisoners who cannot, or will not, pay their honest debts; several having escaped.

Resolved, That the walls and doors in the said room, or

such parts thereof as may be adjudged necessary, be cross-barred with iron, and that the floor of the said room be planked with oak, said planks being spiked down.

It is very evident that the Supervisors of that day were determined that men should pay their debts, or, in default, languish in jail.

The Board met again on the second Tuesday of October, electing Jeremiah Lott, Clerk. The contingent expenses of the county this year amounted to \$892.48; the expenses for the town of Brooklyn were \$2,259. One item of this account was \$1,000 for maintaining the poor. Another item was \$1,200 for a *fire engine*, to be taxed in the first fire district.

Flatbush expenses, \$238.38; New Utrecht, \$46.50; Bushwick, \$111.25; Flatlands, \$107.50; Gravesend, \$36.25.

1808. The Supervisors this year were: Elias Hubbard, Jr., *Judge*; John Skillman, Johannes Remsen, Jeremiah Johnson, John Terhune, John C. Vanderveer, Engelbert Lott, —Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan officers*.

The contingent expenses of the county this year amounted to \$761.90; Brooklyn town expenses were \$3,059. Among the items making up this sum are the following:

To maintaining the poor, \$1,000; To building an almshouse, \$3,059; Flatlands, \$67.50; New Utrecht, \$50; Flatbush, \$288.75; Bushwick, \$61.25; Gravesend, \$36.25.

1809. The Supervisors this year were Garret Stryker, *Judge*; John Skillman, Johannes Remsen, Jeremiah Johnson, John Terhune, John C. Vanderveer, Engelbert Lott, *Supervisors*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*. The contingent expenses of the county this year were \$423.49; Brooklyn town expenses, \$3,247.12. Among the items that make up this amount were:

For maintaining the poor, \$1,500; Flatbush, \$350.62; New Utrecht, \$50; Bushwick, \$61.25; Flatlands, \$77.50; Gravesend, \$36.25.

1810. The Supervisors this year were: Garret Stryker, *Judge*; John Skillman, Johannes Remsen, John Terhune, John C. Vanderveer, Engelbert Lott, *Supervisors*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan officers*. The contingent expenses of the county this year were \$300.74.

1811. The Supervisors this year were: Elias Hubbard, *Judge*; John Skillman, Johannes Remsen, Jeremiah Johnson, John Terhune, John C. Vanderveer, Engelbert Lott, *Supervisors*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John Terhune, Jeremiah Lott, *Loan officers*.

The contingent expenses of the county were \$1,083.75; Brooklyn town expenses, \$2,924. Among the items are the following:

To maintenance of the Poor, \$2,600; Flatbush expenses, \$390.75; New Utrecht, \$50.50; Bushwick, \$61.25; Flatlands, \$102.50; Gravesend, \$70.12.

1812. The Supervisors this year were: William Furman, Elias Hubbard, Tunis Schenck, *Judges*;

John Skillman, *Bushwick*; John Remsen, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; Engelbert Lott, *New Utrecht, Supervisors*; *Loan Officers*, John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott; *Clerk*, Jeremiah Lott; *Treasurer*, John Lefferts. Mr. Lefferts had been Treasurer from the first meeting of the Board under the constitution and laws of the State down to the present time. He continued to act as Treasurer, as we shall see, for several years after this date.

The contingent expenses of the county this year were included in the town expenses. Brooklyn expenses, \$3,004; \$2,600 of this amount was for maintaining the poor.

Flatbush expenses, \$311.25; New Utrecht, \$75; Bushwick, \$86.25; Gravesend, \$61.25; Flatland, \$112.50.

This year the Supervisors, through their clerk, executed a conveyance to Cornelius Bergen for the land claimed by the county, on the south side of the line fence between the Court House, and the land of Cornelius Bergen; and the said Bergen conveyed to the county the land which he claimed, on the north side of the said line fence.

An allowance was made by the board this year for dividing the second story of the jail into secure cells for the safe keeping of the prisoners. These were in addition to the cells in the lower story.

1813. The Supervisors this year were John Skillman, *Bushwick*; Jeremiah Remsen, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatlands*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; Engelbert Lott, *New Utrecht*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; *Loan Officers* the same as last year.

The contingent expenses of the county this year amounted to \$969.69½.

Brooklyn Town Expenses, \$2,216; Flatbush, \$108; Bushwick, \$40; New Utrecht, \$294; Flatlands, \$124.40; Gravesend, \$69.45.

John Lefferts, because of failing health, sent a communication to the board resigning the office of treasurer, the duties of which he had discharged so long and so acceptably. His resignation was accepted, and John C. Vanderveer was elected treasurer in his place. Jeremiah Lott was elected *clerk*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott were appointed *Loan Officers*.

1814. The Supervisors this year were Johannes Remsen, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; Engelbert Lott, *New Utrecht*; William Counsel-yea, *Bushwick*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan Officers*.

The board met at the Court House in Flatbush on the first Tuesday of August, 1814, under, and in pursuance of an act of the Legislature passed April 5th, 1813.

The contingent expenses presented against the county this year amounted to the sum of \$1049.51.

The town expenses allowed were as follows :

Brooklyn.....\$2485 88.

Among the items that make up this amount are the following :

To purchasing a lot of ground for the town.....	\$687 50
To Fire District Expenses.....	300 00
To School Commissioners.....	230 00

Flatbush Expenses.....	\$147 75
New Utrecht Expenses.....	187 10
Bushwick Expenses.....	102 75
Gravesend ".....	63 10
Flatlands ".....	84 30

By the act of the Legislature entitled "An Act for the better establishment of Common Schools," passed April 15th, 1814, the office of *School Commissioner*—three in each town—was created and their fees were made town charges.

"Jeremiah Lott, Clerk of the Board of Supervisors, reported that he had received a notification through the County Clerk from the Superintendent of Common Schools, stating that a distribution of the interest of the school fund had taken place; that in pursuance of such distribution the sum of \$432.88 had been allotted to the County of Kings, and that he had apportioned the same among the several towns in the county."

The Clerk also reported, that in obedience to an act for the assessment and collection of taxes, he had transmitted a statement of the aggregate amount of the real and personal estate of the several towns, in the county, of which the following is a copy :

Brooklyn, \$11,896.79; Flatbush, \$3,690.01; New Utrecht, \$2,770; Bushwick, \$2,702.12; Flatlands, \$1,928; Gravesend, \$1,736.

An appropriation was made this year, to cause the several jail rooms, for the confinement of criminals, to be made more comfortable.

1815. The Supervisors this year were Johannes Remsen, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; Engelbert Lott, *New Utrecht*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan Officers*.

The contingent charges against the county this year amounted to \$722.00.

Brooklyn town expenses, \$1,914.50; Flatbush, \$96; New Utrecht, \$288.25; Flatlands, \$124.90; Bushwick, \$116; Gravesend, \$63.70.

1816. The Supervisors this year were Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; Engelbert Lott, *New Utrecht*; John Lott, Jr., *Flatlands*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan Officers*.

The contingent expenses of the county this year were \$159.02.

For some reason the town expenses were not presented this year.

1817. The Supervisors this year were: Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; Garret Kouwenhoven, *Flatlands*; John Lefferts, *New Utrecht*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; Jeremiah Lott and John Terhune, *Loan officers*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

The contingent expenses of the county allowed this year by the Board amounted to the sum of \$1,082.83.

Brooklyn town expenses, \$1,914.50; Flatbush, \$451.25; New Utrecht, \$188.25; Flatlands, \$84.90; Bushwick, \$409; Gravesend, \$109.34.

In addition to this, there is a State tax of two mills, upon every dollar of the valuation of the real and personal estate which is to be raised and collected, with the contingent expenses against the county.

An interesting report from the Comptroller of the State, estimating the quantity of land in Kings County, which we have condensed, was submitted to this Board.

An estimate of land in Kings County is as follows:

19,290 acres, including improvements, at \$100 per acre.....	\$1,929,000
8,080 acres woodland and swamp, at \$100 per acre.....	808,000
495 acres salt meadows at \$20 per acre.....	99,000

ADDITIONAL VALUATION OF LOTS IN BROOKLYN.

Village on 200 acres, at \$1,000 per acre..... \$200,000

This estimate of lands in Kings County is sufficiently high. The county is nearly all agricultural, with the exception of the village of Brooklyn, which is of but small extent. Any one acquainted with husbandry and the ordinary productions of a farm, must be well satisfied that \$100 per acre for land is altogether too high. While one-tenth of the land may sell above \$100 per acre, nine-tenths of it will fall far short of that sum.

A wonderful change has taken place in the valuation of lands in Kings County since the above report was made, especially in Brooklyn.

1818. The Supervisors this year were: Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; John Lefferts, *New Utrecht*; Garret Kouwenhoven, *Flatlands*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan officers*.

The contingent expenses allowed against the county this year were \$569.77.

Brooklyn town expenses, \$1,914.55; Flatbush, \$105.75; New Utrecht, \$188.25; Flatlands, \$189.90; Bushwick, \$159; Gravesend, \$65.

1819. The Supervisors this year were: Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; John Lefferts, *New Utrecht*; Garret Kouwenhoven, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan officers*.

At the annual meeting of the Board, changed to the first Tuesday of August, the Clerk presented the following, which was ordered entered on the Record:

In pursuance of "an act for the support of Common Schools, passed April 12th, 1819, of the act entitled to change and increase the fund for the support and encouragement of Common Schools, April 13th, 1819, notice has been given by the Superintendent of Common Schools, that the sum of \$80,000 has been apportioned among the different counties of the State, and that the share apportioned to Kings County is \$591, which has been duly apportioned among the different towns."

The contingent expenses allowed against the county this year amounted to \$1,274.44.

Brooklyn town expenses, \$1,973.09; Flatbush, \$132.75; New Utrecht, \$408.40; Bushwick, \$274.85; Flatlands, \$146.69; Gravesend, \$333.99½.

1820. The Supervisors this year were: Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; John L. Lefferts, *New Utrecht*; Garret Kouwenhoven, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan officers*.

The contingent expenses of the county this year were \$796.36. Among the items are the following:

To Samuel Williams, jailor, for jail expenses.....	\$473 04
To Rike Reid, for constable expenses.....	23 00
To William Alger, cost for attending Court.....	5 00
A bill was presented by John Drew, and duly audited, to half the material for making the bridge at Spring Creek.....	
	4 50

Brooklyn town expenses, \$337.84; Flatbush, \$275; New Utrecht, \$164.90; Bushwick, \$378.60; Flatlands, \$121.19; Gravesend, \$456.87.

1821. The Supervisors this year were: Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; William Conselyea, *Bushwick*; John L. Lefferts, *New Utrecht*; Garret Kouwenhoven, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

The contingent expenses audited against the county this year amounted to \$156.85. Five suitable chairs were ordered to be purchased for the Judges while attending court.

Brooklyn, town expenses, \$714.59; Flatbush, \$301.50; New Utrecht, \$139.90; Bushwick, \$458.60; Flatlands, \$156.69; Gravesend, \$329.85.

1822. The Supervisors this year were: Jeremiah Johnson, *Brooklyn*; John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, *Flatlands*; James Cropsey, *New Utrecht*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

The contingent expenses of the county this year were \$2,000. Brooklyn town expenses, \$1,510.63. Among the items are the following:

To William Furman, Esq., for the appointment of commissioners to appraise a road to the Wallabout	\$2 00
To commissioners for appraising said road.....	22 50
To the proprietors and owners of land for damages sustained by laying out said road through their lands.....	257 00

Flatbush town expenses, \$254.84; Bushwick, \$334.70; Flatlands, \$109.83; Gravesend, \$273.87; New Utrecht, \$123.80.

This year John C. Vanderveer, Treasurer of the county, through Jeremiah Lott, Clerk of the Supervisors, settled with Benjamin Knowler, State Treasurer, for the amount due the State, for State taxes. The following is a copy of the receipt given by the State Treasurer. It is countersigned by John Savage, then Comptroller, afterwards Chief Justice of the State, one of the most illustrious of New York's great jurists.

TREASURER'S OFFICE,
STATE OF NEW YORK. }

Received from John C. Vanderveer, Treasurer of Kings County, per Jeremiah Lott, eighteen hundred and thirty-two and $\frac{7}{16}$ dollars, in full, of the balance due from said county for State taxes to the first day of May, 1819, with interest thereon to this date.

B. KNOWLER, *Treasurer*.

JOHN SAVAGE, *Comptroller*.

Dated Albany, May 24th, 1822.

Previous to the year 1823, Justices of the Peace and Commissioners of Deeds, in the various towns in the State, were appointed by the Governor and Council of Appointment. By the Constitution of 1821 the Council of Appointment was abolished, and these appointments were nominated by the Supervisors of the respective counties and the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas. The nominations were made by the Supervisors separately, and also separately by the Judges, after they met and compared their nominations.

At a meeting of the Supervisors on the third Tuesday of February, 1823, pursuant to an act entitled "an act regulating the time and manner of electing general State officers, Justices of the Peace, and prescribing the number of Coroners to be elected in each county by the people. Passed April 12th, 1822."

The following resolution was adopted:

Resolved, That Garret Bergen, John G. Murphy, John Garrison and Samuel Smith, of the town of Brooklyn; Joseph Conselyea, Charles De Be Voice, John P. Van Cott and Gabriel De Be Voice, of the town of Bushwick; Johannes Remsen, Jr., Gerrit L. Baxter, Jeremias Lott and Cornelius Bergen, of the town of Flatlands; John I. Ditmas, John Van Sinderen, Jacob Rappelye and Garrit L. Martens, of the town of Flatbush; Garrit Stryker, Jacobus Lake, John S. Garritsen and George Stillwill, of the town of Gravesend; and Thomas Hegeman, George Van Nuyse, Albert Van Brunt and Daniel Barre, of New Utrecht, be and they are nominated Justices of the Peace in and for the county of Kings.

Very soon after making these nominations the Supervisors met the Judges of the county, to wit: Lefferts, Teunis Schenck, John Skillman and Teunis Joraleman, and, on comparing nominations, it was found that they agreed in the nominations of all the above persons except

Jeremiah Lott, Cornelius Bergen, John J. Ditmas, Jacob Rappelye, Garrit L. Martens, Garrit Stryker, Jacobus Lake, George Stillwill and Daniel Barre; whereupon it was

"Resolved, That the first named persons were nominated and appointed Justices of the Peace of the said towns in the county, and that a certificate of their nomination be filed in the Clerk's office of Kings County, and a copy thereof in the office of the Secretary of State at Albany, N. Y., and that the names of the persons upon whom the Supervisors disagreed be transmitted to the Governor of this State, according to the form of the statute in such case made and provided."

1823. The Supervisors this year were: John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, *Flatlands*; James Cropsey, *New Utrecht*; Evert Barkulow, *Brooklyn*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan officers*. At a meeting of the Board, with the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas, on the first day of October, 1823, the Supervisors proceeded to nominate and appoint two Commissioners in each town to take the proof and acknowledgment of deeds, &c., according to an act of the Legislature, passed April 19, 1823, after which they proceeded to audit the accounts presented against the county for contingent expenses, which amounted to \$2,600.

Brooklyn town expenses, \$1,575.63; Flatbush, \$226.09; New Utrecht, \$148.80; Bushwick, \$137.20; Flatlands, \$122.33; Gravesend, \$339.75.

Further accounts for contingent expenses against the county were examined and audited, which amounted to \$1,650.40.

1824. The Supervisors this year were: John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; Garrit Kouwenhoven, *Flatlands*; James Cropsey, *New Utrecht*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan officers*.

The contingent expenses of the county this year were \$317.50. Among the items were the following :

To Samuel Williams, jailor, for maintaining and supporting debtor prisoners who had been committed to jail for not paying.....\$93 25
To John T. Bergen, for proclaiming Courts*..... 16 00

Brooklyn town expenses, \$3,193.13; Flatbush, \$447.96; New Utrecht, \$438.96; Bushwick, \$194.20; Gravesend, \$367.37; Flatlands, \$62.33.

The Board, with the Judges of the county, nominated suitable persons for Justices of the Peace in the several towns, according to an act passed April 12th, 1822.

1825. The Supervisors this year were John C. Vanderveer, *Flatbush*; John Terhune, *Gravesend*; William Conselyea, Jr., *Bushwick*; James Cropsey, *New Utrecht*;

*This duty is now performed by criers, appointed by the County Judges in the respective counties. The proclamation in those days commenced in these words: "O! yes! O! yes! O! yes!" (Oyez! Oyez!) but now is as follows: "Hear ye! hear ye! hear ye!"

Garrit Kouwenhoven, *Flatlands*; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan officers*.

At the annual meeting of the Board this year the question of removing the county seat from Flatbush to Brooklyn came before it, in the form a petition, numerously signed, and which had been published in the *Long Island Patriot*, and in the *Star*. It was presented by the chairman of a committee formed of leading citizens. The presentation of this petition to the Board created great excitement, and we add indignation. A resolution was unanimously adopted by the Board, "that a memorial be immediately presented to the Legislature, in session at Albany, remonstrating against the removal of the Court House and jail, as contemplated by the petitioners." The reasons against the removal were then set forth, and subsequently incorporated in the remonstrance. The ability which characterizes this remonstrance, the strength, energy and grace of its diction, leave no room to doubt, that it was the work of a master hand. It urged among other things, that the meeting of citizens, where the petition originated, and who appointed the committee that prepared it, was composed of citizens of Brooklyn, including one person from the town of Bushwick, and these constituted the said alleged county meeting, caused to take measures to remove the county buildings, &c., &c. The memorial further alleged "that the dense population of the village of Brooklyn, and its commercial situation, renders it subject to pestilence or contagious diseases with which it has heretofore been visited, and it is, therefore, an improper place for the location of a Court House and jail." It was charged by the petitioners that "male and female, white and black, were often confined together in the same apartments in the jail, greatly to the disgrace of the county." This the Supervisors indignantly denied, "but, if this is true," they said, "it is the fault of the sheriff or jailor, and not the people's." The memorial is very lengthy, and contains seven distinct allegations against the proposed removal. Finally it was

Resolved, That James Lott, the Clerk of the Board, incorporate these allegations in a memorial, and transmit the same to the Legislature, subscribed by himself on behalf of the Board.

This, we believe, was the first effort ever made to remove the county buildings to Brooklyn. The decisive action of the Supervisors at this meeting, effectually defeated the effort for the time being.

The contingent expenses this year amounted to \$2,517.

For some reason there were no town charges from Brooklyn presented. The other towns, however, presented their accounts against the county as follows: *Flatbush* town expenses, \$214.09; *Bushwick*, \$194.20; *New Utrecht*, \$148.80; *Flatlands*, \$74.08; *Gravesend*, \$213.13.

Before the adjournment of this Board of Supervisors *sine die*, the question of removing the county seat from Flatbush to Brooklyn arose. It was passed by the friends of the measure with increased vigor, determination and influence. The Board met on the sixth day of March, 1826, before the election of the new Board for that year, for the purpose of deliberating upon the proper course to pursue in regard to the matter. Resolutions opposing the removal were unanimously adopted, and remonstrances to it prepared under another resolution of the Board, and forwarded to the Legislature, then in session. This remonstrance was the same in substance as the one they had previously sent to that body. Resolutions were also adopted directing repairs to be made on the Court-house and jail at Flatbush.

But the friends of the removal were so successful in their efforts that they succeeded in securing a passage of a bill removing the place of holding the *Courts of Common Pleas and General Sessions of the Peace* to Brooklyn.

1826. The Supervisors this year were John C. Vanderveer, Supervisor and Judge, Flatbush; Jeremiah Johnson, Brooklyn; John Terhune, Gravesend; William Conselyea, Jr., Bushwick; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

At a meeting of the Board, on May 27th, the report of John Terhune was adopted, by which he informed the Supervisors that, as a committee for making arrangements for the accommodation of the Court of Common Pleas and General Sessions of the Peace, he had come to an understanding with the trustees of the Apprentices' Library, Brooklyn, and the rooms of said library were fitted up so as to make convenient rooms for holding said courts, at which place said courts were thereafter held until directed by law to be held elsewhere.

The accounts for contingent expenses against the county, presented and audited by this Board, amounted to \$3,059.74.

Another bill for contingent expenses, amounting to about the same as above, was afterwards presented to the Board and duly audited.

Town expenses: Brooklyn, \$4,168.13; Flatbush, \$368.99; Bushwick, \$249.20; New Utrecht, \$148.20; Gravesend, \$117.37; Flatlands, \$62.33.

Jeremiah Lott, the Clerk of the Board, at a meeting thereof, held September 5th, presented a statement containing the aggregate valuation of the real and personal estates of the several towns in the county this year, and also a statement of the incorporated companies in the county this year, by which it appeared that the value of real estate amounted to \$4,292,468; that the personal estate amounted to \$1,246,760; which, aggregated, amounted to \$5,539,228; that there were then the following incorporated companies in the county:

Tax.	NAME OF COMPANY.	Capital.	Real Est.	Personal.	Aggregate.
	Long Island Bank.....	\$300,000	\$3,000	\$297,000	\$3,000,000
\$500 00	Brooklyn Fire Insurance Co.....	150,000	.....	150,000	150,000
250 00	Brooklyn and Wallabout Co.....	3,500	.....	.....	3,500
5 83	Toll Bridge Co.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
1 06	Newtown and Bushwick Bridge.....	.....	.....	800	800
	Newtown and Bushwick Road Co.....	.....	.....	9,000	9,000
	Williamsburg Ferry Co.....	.....	3,000	5,500	55,000
	Gravesend and Coney Island Road and Ferry Co.....	.....	5,640	.....	5,640

1827. SUPERVISORS: John C. Vanderveer, Flatbush; Jeremiah Johnson, Brooklyn; John Terhune, Gravesend; William Conselyea, Jr., Bushwick; Garret Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Jas. Cropsey, New Utrecht; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

At a meeting of the Board, held May 19th, a resolution was passed providing for keeping the future terms of the *Court of Common Pleas and General Sessions of the Peace* in the Apprentices' Library, Brooklyn. Another resolution provided that all bills exhibited against the county should be referred to a committee, consisting of Jeremiah Johnson and John Terhune, to examine them in detail, &c. Also the Board resolved to raise the sum of \$3,000 in the several towns for future contingent expenses.

Brooklyn town expenses, \$8,467.57.

Among the items that make up this amount were the following: For maintaining the poor, \$3,000; to making cells under Brooklyn market for the confinement of prisoners, \$800; to making road to Bedford, \$500; to Supervisors, to pay a debt due the Long Island Bank, \$2,500. Flatbush town expenses, \$287.15.

Among the items making up this amount are the following: To a scraper for the old town, \$5; to scraper for the new town, \$5; to William Hegeman, for examining 8 paupers, \$6; to Assessor's fees, \$16.25. Bushwick town expenses, \$304.27; Flatlands, \$85.87; Gravesend, \$111.49; New Utrecht, \$250.

At a meeting of the Board on November 24th, measures were taken for erecting a fire-proof clerk's office for the security and safe keeping of the public records and other papers and documents appertaining to the county of Kings; and that application be made to the next Legislature to authorize the Board of Supervisors to raise by tax a sum not exceeding \$4,000, for the purpose of purchasing a site and building the said Clerk's office.

1828. SUPERVISORS: John C. Vanderveer, Flatbush; Jeremiah Johnson, Brooklyn; John Terhune, Gravesend; William Conselyea, Bushwick; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; James Cropsey, New Utrecht; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

The following resolution was adopted:

Resolved, That the sum of \$12,500 be raised in the several towns in the county to be applied in payment of the contingent expenses thereof.

Town expenses: Brooklyn, \$5,417.57; Flatbush, \$343.40; Bushwick, \$409.27; New Utrecht, \$275.75; Gravesend, \$136.49; Flatlands, \$71.37.

At a meeting held December, 13th, the necessary steps were taken for erecting in the village of Brooklyn a building suitable for the accommodation of the *Courts of Common Pleas and General Sessions of the Peace*, according to an Act of the Legislature passed April 13th, 1826, directing that there should be annually two additional terms of the Court of Common Pleas and General Sessions of the Peace to be held in the Apprentices' Library, Brooklyn.

At a meeting of the same board held on the 5th day of February, 1829, before the election of a new board, it was

Resolved, That the Courts of Common Pleas and General Sessions of the Peace shall be holden in every year as follows: At the court house in Flatbush, on the third Monday in August, and at the Apprentices' Library in Brooklyn on the third Monday of December, and there shall be holden in the same place three additional terms of the said Court of Common Pleas on the third Monday of February, June and October, for the test and return of processes and the rendering of judgments, and entering rules of cause.

Arrangements were made at this meeting for establishing a *county poor-house*.

1829. SUPERVISORS: John C. Vanderveer, Flatbush; Jeremiah Johnson, Brooklyn; John Terhune, Gravesend; James Cropsey, New Utrecht; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Noah Waterbury, Bushwick; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

It will be seen that there was a change this year in members of the Board of Supervisors, Noah Waterbury appearing for the town of Bushwick instead of William Conselyea, Jr., who had represented that town with marked ability since 1814. He died prior to the adjournment of the last board.

At a meeting of the Board on August 4th, a committee was appointed to ascertain a suitable site in the village of Brooklyn for the location of the new court-house. It was also ordered by the board that the sum of \$17,000 be raised to meet the contingent expenses of the county for the ensuing year.

Brooklyn town expenses, \$7,285.82. Among the items making up this amount were the following: To expenses of Bedford road, \$500; to support of town rights \$500; to maintenance of the poor, \$5,000. Flatlands town expenses, \$62.82; Flatbush town expenses, \$425.90; New Utrecht, \$450.75; Gravesend, \$161.49; Bushwick, \$519.27.

The question of a new Court-house and Clerk's Office to be erected in Brooklyn, occupied the attention of the Supervisors this year. At their meeting of Sept. 1, 1829, a carefully worded preamble and resolution expressed the opinion of the board that as "the greater part of the expense to be incurred in erecting the same will necessarily be chargeable upon Brooklyn, it is in-

expedient to put the village of Brooklyn and the County to the expense of erecting a new Court-house," but if the future board "shall hereafter think otherwise, then we urge that the location be as near the business centre as may be practicable, and that it be so constructed as to accommodate all municipal concerns."

Jeremiah Johnson, John Terhune and Noah Waterbury were appointed on the part of the board with full power to confer with Fanning C. Tucker, Henry Waring and Lossee Van Nostrand, the committee on the part of the Trustees of Brooklyn, having in charge the business of constructing a Court-house.

In joint committee the Brooklynites submitted three propositions, one of which was that the Supervisors should pay the Trustees of the village of Brooklyn \$9,000, for accommodations for the Court of Common Pleas in the Apprentices' Library. This was a fire-brand which ended the conference summarily for the time.

On the 7th of April, 1830, before the official term of the Board expired, the Supervisors met again, pursuant to notice, with the *Superintendents of the Poor*.

This important office had existed several years previous to this, but their acts and doings are only incidentally referred to in the records of the proceedings of the Supervisors, and their names are not mentioned. This year the Superintendents are named in proper order in the record as follows: "Samuel Smith, David Johnson, Michael Schumaker, *Superintendents of the Poor of Kings County*."

A committee appointed by the Supervisors to examine the common jail of the county at Flatbush, reported that it was deficient in many respects, but no action was taken in regard to a new one, or to a new Court House.

1830. SUPERVISORS: John C. Vanderveer, Flatbush; Jeremiah Johnson, Brooklyn; John Terhune, Gravesend; James Cropsey, New Utrecht; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Noah Waterbury, Bushwick; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; John Terhune and Jeremiah Lott, *Loan Officers*.

Ordered, That the sum of \$8,000 be raised to meet the contingent expenses of the Poor-house establishment for the ensuing eighteen months.

Ordered, That \$8,000 be raised to meet the contingent expenses of the County this year. This last amount was exhausted in the payment of sixty-three different bills against the County audited by the Board, among which is one for the "support of foreign poor by the town of Brooklyn, amount \$1,500.80;" another, "for one-half year's rent of Alms-house and furniture, \$1,062.81.

Town expenses: Brooklyn, \$1,632.57; Flatlands, \$74.12; Flatbush, \$115.65; Bushwick, \$124.52; Gravesend, \$162.74; New Utrecht, \$332.00.

The Superintendents of the Poor were ordered to procure estimates and plans for the erection of a poor-

house and penitentiary, to be connected together. Jeremiah Johnson and David Johnson were appointed a committee to confer with the corporation of the City of New York, and ascertain if it would be willing, at a stipulated price, to receive the criminals of Kings County, convicted of crimes in the several courts of this county, at the city Penitentiary on Blackwells Island. The sum of \$9,000 was placed at the disposal of the Superintendents of the Poor, to enable them to erect a county poor-house and penitentiary on the county farm.

The number of paupers under the charge of the Superintendents of the Poor, on the 7th of April, 1830, was 122, of whom 63 were males and 59 females. Among these, 79 were foreigners, 62 of whom were from Ireland. A school was established in the Poor-house with a daily average attendance of 14 white and 8 colored children. The keeper, Mr. Thos. Baisely, with his wife, were faithful, competent, industrious and very kind. From the grounds attached to the Poor-house there were raised 750 bushels of potatoes, 170 bushels turnips, 13 bushels onions, 750 cabbages, 4 tons of hay, and 13 hogs, weighing 2,130 pounds. The average number of paupers maintained during the year was 144, making the cost of each pauper 56 cents per week, or \$29 per annum, or 8 cents per day.

The Board of Supervisors expressed themselves satisfied with the successful operation of the plan of supporting the poor as a county charge; "that this plan has met their most sanguine expectations, and that these benefits are largely attributable to the diligent and persevering attention of the Superintendents of the Poor of the county."

The sum of \$600 was allowed them for their services the past year, to be apportioned among them.

We have been somewhat particular in giving the foregoing, because it was the commencement of a new system in regard to the poor of the county.

1831. SUPERVISORS: John C. Vanderveer, Flatbush; Jeremiah Johnson, Brooklyn; John Terhune, Gravesend; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Joseph Conselyea, Bushwick; Egbert Benson, Jr., New Utrecht; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; Samuel Smith, David Johnson and Michael Schoonmaker, *Superintendents of the Poor*.

John C. Vanderveer, Esq., the Supervisor for the town of Flatbush, was President of the Board. This is the first appointment of a President or Chairman of the Board of Supervisors of which there is any record. In the colonial days, and we believe for several years after, some one of the judges, or a justice of the peace, presided at the meeting of the Board. Afterwards a chairman was appointed for every day during meetings. In April, 1831, a law was enacted, providing for the appointment of a president of each and every Board of Supervisors in the state. This appointment was to be made from some member of the Board, at the annual meeting.

The Board, with the judges of the Court of Common Pleas, continued to appoint at its annual meetings proper persons to serve in the county as *Commissioner of Deeds* and *Town Collectors*. Justices of the Peace were now elected by the people.

The sum of \$16,000 was allowed to be raised by tax for the contingent expenses of the county for the ensuing year.

Town expenses: Brooklyn, to Commissioners of Common schools, \$667.57; Bushwick, \$230.27; Flatbush, 114.15; New Utrecht, \$122.00; Flatlands, \$64.12; Gravesend, \$81.33.

An interesting matter came before the Board at its meeting, September 26th, 1831, in regard to an attempt of the Master of the Ship *Galaxy*, of Cronstadt, to deposit its cargo at Fort La Fayette, within this county; the said ship hailing from a port infected with cholera. Stringent measures were taken to prevent such a disposition of the cargo. The matter was presented to the Grand Jury, and a memorial sent to the United States Government in regard to the matter. The officers of the ship and owners of the cargo were determined to deposit it in the fort; but by the prompt action of the Board of Supervisors, were prevented from so doing.

Seventy-five cents per day was ordered to be paid to the grand and petit jurors, whose names were drawn from the county jury boxes, for every day's attendance at the courts of record to be held in the county.

The bill of Justices Murphy, Dean and Furman, of the Municipal Court of Brooklyn, was presented to the Board, and ordered to be laid over for future consideration.

The Board took into consideration the propriety of employing convicts capable of hard labor, and resolved to authorize the keeper of the jail to employ them upon the public avenues, public highways, streets, &c.

1832. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, Brooklyn, *President*; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Joseph Conselyea, Bushwick; John Wyckoff, Flatbush; Nicholas R. Van Brunt, New Utrecht; John Terhune, Gravesend; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; *Superintendents of the Poor*, same as last year.

The sum of \$30,000 was ordered to be raised for contingent expenses.

Town expenses: Brooklyn, to the Commissioners of Common Schools, \$802.13; Bushwick, \$174.40; Flatbush, \$408.30; New Utrecht, \$167.15; Flatlands, \$64.80; Gravesend, \$291.00.

The board this year provided for the preservation of old books of record in the County Clerk's office.

The bill of John Lawrence, Sheriff of the County of Kings, amounting to \$249.50, was presented, but after a somewhat stormy debate, was rejected.

The Board of Supervisors met for the first time in Brooklyn, on Jan. 12, 1833, at the Apprentices' Library.

A troublesome, but important matter came before the board this year, in regard to the allowance of certain bills—those of constables and marshals, for serving criminal processes issued by the justices of the municipal courts of Brooklyn. By a resolution of the board this subject was submitted to H. W. Warner, Esq., a very able and learned counsellor-at-law, of Brooklyn, who decided that the justices of said courts had no criminal jurisdiction, and that warrants signed by them were absolutely void. The President and Trustees of the village, by its charter, had the power of committing for criminal offences, while to justices of the municipal court no such powers were given in it. The justices of the municipal courts, the constable and marshals of Brooklyn having presented their bills, the Supervisors expressing doubts as to their power, or right, to pay them, they were withdrawn. On motion, Mr. Warner was appointed counsel for the board.

The proposition to build a new road in the village of Brooklyn, commencing at the junction of Henry and District streets, and running thence in a south-westerly direction, in continuation of Henry street, to Red Hook lane, involved this and the preceding board in a serious and expensive litigation. A mandamus, in which Charles Hoyt and others were the relators, had been served on the board, requiring them to impose a tax on the town of Brooklyn, to pay the amount assessed by a jury, for drainage and for lands taken for said public road.

The court-house at Flatbush having been destroyed by fire, it was proposed to divide the county into two shires, or jury districts, with a court-house at Brooklyn and one at Flatbush, the one recently destroyed to be immediately rebuilt. A resolution favorable to this was adopted by the board, but the measure was strongly opposed by Brooklyn, and one or two other towns in the county. At a subsequent meeting, John Lawrence, Joseph Moser and Gabriel Furman, of Brooklyn; General L. Martense, of Flatbush, and Samuel Richardson of Williamsburgh, were appointed a building committee, for the purpose of erecting a court-house and jail in the village of Brooklyn, on the site already designated.

1833. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, *President*, Brooklyn; John Terhunc, Gravesend; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; John Wyckoff, Flatbush; Nicholas R. Van Brunt, New Utrecht; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; Elias H. Hubbard, Flatlands; Coe H. Downing, Brooklyn, and David Johnson, of Flatbush, *Superintendent of the Poor*. At the annual meeting of the said board, held at the Apprentices' Library, Brooklyn, August 6th, 1833, a list of persons in the county, liable to serve on juries, was made out. The amount allowed for contingent expenses this year was \$10,546,06½. Town expenses were taken up and audited as follows: Brooklyn town expenses, Commissioners of Common Schools, \$802,13;

Bushwick, \$301,40; New Utrecht, \$115.65; Flatbush, \$108.80; Flatlands, \$80.33; Gravesend, \$103.19.

The appointments of commissioners of deeds and town collectors were then made.

One hundred dollars were paid into the County Treasury from *lottery* venders.

The sum of \$1,605,07 was received to the credit of the county this year from *excise and bastardy cases*.

Among the bills presented and audited against the county this year were the following:

For cholera bills, \$7,712,24; from this will be seen the great mortality of the cholera in the county during the year ending August 6th, 1833.*

Money drawn this year by the Superintendents of the Poor, \$2,300.00; for the support of prisoners in jail in New York, \$185.30.

To Henry Warner, Esq., counsel fees, written opinion, etc., \$75.

The Superintendents of the Poor presented their annual report, by which it appears that the number of persons in the poor-house, April 7, 1833, was 180, of whom 85 were females and 95 males. Of the number relieved and supported during the year, there were 168 foreigners, 7 lunatics. There occurred 482 cases of disease, and 24 deaths. The school in the alms-house was reported to be in an exceedingly prosperous condition.

First Meeting of the Board of Supervisors of the County after the Incorporation of Brooklyn as a City.

1833. The Board of Supervisors for the year 1833-'4 met at the Apprentices' Library, in the city of Brooklyn, on Tuesday, the 27th day of May, 1834, pursuant to notice. Present: Jeremiah Johnson, Henry Waring, David Anderson, John Dimon, Obadiah Jackson, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; Martenus Bergen, 8th and 9th wards; John Terhunc, Gravesend; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Joseph Conselyea, Bushwick; John Wyckoff, Flatbush; Nicholas R. Van Brunt, New Utrecht.

The Clerk, Treasurer, and Superintendents of the Poor were, as we have seen, appointed at the first annual meeting of the board, August 6th, 1833.

At this meeting, a select committee, appointed by the Common Council of the city of Brooklyn, for the purpose of taking measures for the erection of a city hall, to be used as a court-house, appeared before the board and asked its concurrence in the project. The matter was immediately referred to a committee appointed by the Supervisors.

The joint committee of the Board of Supervisors and of the Common Council of the city of Brooklyn recommended the land at the junction of Joralemon and Fulton streets, belonging to the estate of Henry Remsen, deceased, as a suitable situation for a city hall and court house, and the city property at the Wallabout as a proper situation for a jail.

The Supervisors having previously entered into a contract for purchasing a site for a jail and court-house in Washington street, the joint committee recommended that the same be rescinded on the best possible terms.

* A full and interesting account of the ravages of this disease will be found in Dr. STILES' valuable History of Brooklyn, Vol. II.

The proposition to build a new court-house at Flatbush was defeated, and the court-house lot and grounds at that place was leased to Simon Voorhies.

It is proper to add that the act for building a court-house and jail in Kings County was passed April 25, 1833.

1834. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, *Chairman*, Henry Waring, David Anderson, John Dimon, Obadiah Jackson, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; Martenus Bergen, 8th and 9th Wards; John Terhune, Gravesend; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Joseph Conselyea, Bushwick; John Wyckoff, Flatbush; Nicholas R. Van Brunt, New Utrecht; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

The contingent expenses of the city of Brooklyn this year, as audited by the Board, were \$22,352.13. Expenses to be levied on the whole city, \$11,802.13; first five wards, \$3,623; first seven wards, \$6,927.

Town expenses: Bushwick, \$480.40; Flatbush, \$203; New Utrecht, \$235.40; Flatlands, \$98.96; Gravesend, \$95.94.

The Board, at its meeting in Brooklyn, the 27th day of June, 1835, took measures for building a hospital on the county farm. Jeremiah Johnson, Chairman of the Board, reported that he had procured a *Seal of the County of Kings*, with a device thereon exhibiting the scales of justice, and upon which is inscribed the words, "Board of Supervisors of Kings County." This report was adopted, and, by another resolution, the Clerk of the Supervisors was made the custodian of said seal.

By another resolution, concurred in by the Judges of the county, the Common Council room, in the Exchange Building, in the city of Brooklyn, was designated as the proper place for holding the courts of the county, and it was resolved to pay the city of Brooklyn \$200 per annum for the use of said rooms, that being the sum required by the Common Council of the city.

1835. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, *Chairman*, Silas Butler, Peter Conover, John Dikeman, Jonathan Trotter, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; Martenus Bergen, 8th and 9th Wards; John Terhune, Gravesend; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Joseph Conselyea, Bushwick; John Wyckoff, Flatbush; Nicholas R. Van Brunt, New Utrecht; Jeremiah Lott, Esq., *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

The annual meeting of the Board took place at the time fixed by law, the first Tuesday in August. Since the first meeting of the Supervisors in the county of Kings, in August, 1714, down to the present time, and long after, as we shall see, the first Tuesday of that month was the time appointed for the annual meeting of the Board.

The Supervisors and Judges met as usual to appoint Commissioners of Deeds and Collectors for the several towns in the county.

The contingent expenses for the city of Brooklyn, which were audited by the Board, were \$30,000. A large part of this amount consisted of county expenses. In addition to this, the sum of \$2,350 was raised in the city of Brooklyn for the support of common schools, under an act amending the charter of the city, passed in April of this year.

Town expenses: Flatlands, \$64.80; New Utrecht, \$155.40; Flatbush, \$108.80; Gravesend, \$72.94; Bushwick, \$819.40.

At the adjourned meeting of the Board, on the 15th of September, 1835, John Dikeman, of Brooklyn, appeared in place of Peter Conover.

By a report made to the Board at this meeting, it appears that the estimated value of the real estate of the county was \$28,020,644; that the value of the personal property was \$3,920,288; that the proportion of county taxes was \$28,280; that the proportion of town taxes was \$39,090.93; that the rate of taxes upon \$1 of valuation for the 1st, 3d and 6th Wards,

was 2½ mills, and 2½ mills for the 2d, 4th, 5th and 7th Wards.

The corporations existing in the county this year, according to the report of Jeremiah Lott, Clerk of the Board, presented at this meeting, were the following; Long Island Bank, capital, \$300,000; Brooklyn Bank, \$200,000; Long Island Insurance Co., \$200,000; Brooklyn Fire Insurance Co., \$102,000; Brooklyn White Lead Co., \$40,000;* Brooklyn Crown Glass Co., \$25,000;* Wallabout and Brooklyn Bridge Co., \$12,000;* Newtown and Bushwick Bridge Co., \$906; Newtown and Bushwick Turnpike Road Co., \$8,256;* Gravesend and Coney Island Road and Bridge Co., \$600.

According to a resolution of the Board, Jeremiah Lott was allowed 10 cents per folio for recording its proceedings, and John C. Vanderveer, Treasurer of the county, was allowed \$2 per day for his attendance with the Board.

1836. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, *Chairman*; Clarence D. Sackett, Peter Conover, John U. Masely, Joseph Herbert, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; Martenus Bergen, 8th and 9th Wards; John Terhune, Gravesend; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Joseph Conselyea, Bushwick; John Wyckoff, Flatbush; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John C. Vanderveer, *Treasurer*.

Among the matters of business transacted by the Board at the annual meeting was the following:

Joseph Conselyea, Clarence D. Sackett, and Peter Conover were appointed a committee of arrangements, for the ceremony of laying the foundation stone of the new Jail and fire-proof Clerk's Office; ordered that the sum of \$32,000 be raised to meet the contingent expenses of the current year.

Town expenses: Bushwick, \$690.90; Flatbush, \$59.55; New Utrecht, \$1,439.15; Flatlands, \$160.50; Gravesend, \$537.20.

The Apprentices' Library Association having wound up their affairs and disposed of their building to the Common Council of the city of Brooklyn, the rent for the same for a county clerk's office was required, and payment therefore was ordered. The payments into the treasury on account of excise this year were \$1,938.90.

Abraham Vanderveer, clerk of the county, at a meeting of the Board, held on the 20th December, 1836, reported that the fire-proof building erected by the Common Council of Brooklyn, for the safety of public records, books and papers, was now ready for occupation, with the exception of a few fixtures, which the Board ordered furnished.

1837. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, *Chairman*, Peter Conover, William M. Udall, William H. Hale, Henry Patchen, for the first seven wards of the city of Brooklyn; John Terhune, Gravesend; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Teunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Isaac Cortelyou, Flatbush; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*.

At the annual meeting, the chairman laid before the Board the resignation of John C. Vanderveer, the treasurer of the county.

Mr. Vanderveer had served as treasurer of the county since August 5th, 1813, continuously, a period of twenty-four years, with more than ordinary ability and satisfaction to the people of the county. His resignation was, therefore, reluctantly accepted, and followed by a unanimous vote of thanks for his very able and faithful services.

The Board elected John A. Lott Treasurer, in place of Mr. Vanderveer.

The contingent expenses of the city of Brooklyn this year, as audited by the Board, amounted to \$81,231.15.

Town expenses: New Utrecht, \$115.13; Flatbush, \$231.04; Gravesend, \$105.42; Bushwick, \$1,428.28. The Board or-

* Secured by real estate.

dered the sum of \$40,000, to be raised by tax, to meet the ordinary expenses of the whole county.

The Board made arrangements to raise a loan on the credit of the county, amounting to \$25,000.

1838. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, *Chairman*, Cyrus P. Smith, John Dikeman, David Cooper, Samuel H. Mason, for the first seven wards of the city of Brooklyn; Martenus Bergen, 8th and 9th Wards; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Isaac Cortelyou, Flatbush; Nicholas Wyckoff, Bushwick; Samuel G. Stryker, Gravesend; John A. Lott, *Treasurer*, and Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*.

It was resolved that the sum of \$42,341.39 be raised by tax for the ensuing year to meet the current expenses of the city of Brooklyn, and also that the sum of \$18,500 be raised by tax on the first seven wards of the city, to meet the expenses incident to the fire and watch districts.

Town expenses: Bushwick, \$1,303.26; Flatbush, \$201.04; Flatlands, \$88.37; Gravesend, \$135.17; New Utrecht, \$265.13.

During this year several murders had been committed within the county. As none of the perpetrators had been arrested, the Board authorized the Sheriff of the county to offer rewards for their apprehension and conviction equal to the amount offered for the same purpose by the city of Brooklyn.

1839. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, *Chairman*, Cyrus P. Smith, John Dikeman, David Cooper, Samuel M. Moser, for the first seven wards of the city of Brooklyn; Gerrit Kouwenhoven, Flatlands; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Samuel G. Stryker, Gravesend; Jacob Rappelye, Flatbush; Abraham D. Soper, Bushwick; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*, and John A. Lott, *Treasurer*.

The Judges of the county this year were John A. Lott, 1st Judge, Joseph Conselyea, Tunis Joralemon, Samuel Smith, and John Bergen. Under a recent act of the Legislature creating the office of County Sealer of Weights and Measures, the Supervisors appointed Barzillai Russell, of Brooklyn, to that office.

The committee appointed to investigate the affairs of the Building Committee of the new jail reported favorably on the said Building Committee's bill, amounting to \$10,019.88, and the County Treasurer was authorized to pay the same. The compensation of grand and petit jurors attending the various courts of record in the county was fixed at \$1 per day.

The contingent expenses of the City of Brooklyn this year amounted to \$63,815.55, and a resolution that the said amount be raised by a tax on the whole City of Brooklyn, and that the sum of \$30,700 be raised by a tax on the first seven wards of the said city, to meet the expenses of the fire and watch districts, was adopted.

Town expenses: Bushwick, \$1,708.12; Flatbush, \$414.40; New Utrecht, \$410.53; Gravesend, \$240.69; Flatlands, \$278.48.

Corporations existing in Kings County this year: Long Island Bank, amount of stock, \$290,000; Brooklyn Bank, \$107,000; Atlantic Bank, \$470,000; Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company, \$102,000; Long Island Insurance Company, \$183,555; Brooklyn White Lead Company, \$52,460, secured by real estate; Union White Lead Company, \$36,600, secured by real estate; Williamsburg Fire Insurance Company, \$147,400; Newtown and Bushwick Road and Turnpike Company, \$5,727; Gravesend and Couey Island Road and Bridge Company, \$6,000.

According to a report submitted to the Board by a proper committee, the number of acres of land in the county was 19,220, the valuation of which was \$27,198.069. The valua-

tion of the personal estate in the County was \$3,905,144. The aggregate amount of taxation was \$155,644.91.

By a resolution of the Board, Coroners were allowed the sum of \$3.00 for every inquest held by them, and the sum of \$5.00 for coffin, burial of the corpse and incidental expenses.

1840. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, *Chairman*; David Cooper, Samuel H. Moser, Nicholas R. Van Brunt, Sylvanus White, for the first seven wards of the City of Brooklyn; Tunis S. Barkaloo, 8th and 9th Wards; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Samuel G. Stryker, Gravesend; Jacob Rappelye, Flatbush; Leonard F. Coles, Williamsburg; Andrew Emmans, Flatlands; Nicholas Wyckoff, Bushwick; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; and John Skillman, of Brooklyn, *Treasurer*. John A. Lott was made *Taxing Officer* of the Board, to tax the District Attorney's, and all legal bills.

The contingent expenses of the County this year were \$32,500, which the Supervisors directed to be raised by taxation on the property of the County.

1841. SUPERVISORS: Jeremiah Johnson, *Chairman*, David Cooper, Sylvanus White, Nicholas R. Van Brunt, Samuel Oakley, for the first seven wards in the City of Brooklyn; Peter G. Bergen, 8th and 9th Wards; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Samuel G. Stryker, Gravesend; Nicholas Wyckoff, Bushwick; Andrew Emmans, Flatlands; Leonard T. Coles, Williamsburg; Isaac Cortelyou, Flatbush; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John Skillman, *Treasurer*.

A Jail Committee was appointed this year, consisting of three members of this Board, to wit, David Cooper, Sylvanus White and Isaac Cortelyou.

The County Treasurer was directed by the Board to ascertain whether it was lawful for the judges of the county courts to charge for two days' services, when a court of sessions, and a court of common pleas, or county court are both held on the same day. Subsequently the Treasurer reported that it had been the custom for a long time to make such charges, but that there was no statute to authorize the same. Whereupon, the Treasurer was directed to pay each judge for every day he had actually attended court, and no more.

The contingent or incidental expenses for especial purposes, for the City of Brooklyn, amounted to the sum of \$81,000. The Board also resolved to raise the sum of \$12,600 for sites and school-house in districts No's 1, 4, 5, 8, and 9. An appropriation of \$6,925 was made for the various school districts in the city. The further sum of \$34,500 was raised by tax on the first seven wards of the city to meet the expenses of the fire and watch district.

Town expenses: New Utrecht, \$99.50; Gravesend, \$99.75; Flatlands, \$49.50; Bushwick, \$82.57; Williamsburg, \$1,200; Flatbush, \$100.

It was ordered that the respective amounts be raised by the town in which the expenses accrued.

1842. SUPERVISORS: Joseph Sprague, William M. Udall, William Ellsworth, John E. Cammeyer, Stephen Haynes, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; A. O. Millard, 8th and 9th Wards; Tunis G. Bergen, *Chairman*, New Utrecht; Leonard T. Coles, Williamsburg; Samuel G. Stryker, Gravesend; Nicholas Wyckoff, Bushwick; Andrew Emmans, Flatlands; Isaac Cortelyou, Flatbush; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; and John Skillman, *Treasurer*.

At the annual meeting, the thanks of the Board were unanimously tendered to Hon. Jeremiah Johnson, late its *Chairman*, for the distinguished ability with which he had from time to time discharged the responsible duties of that station, and also for the eminent services he had rendered the county of Kings as Supervisor for more than forty years.

At the same meeting, John F. Garrison, of the city of Brooklyn, was elected Treasurer in place of John Skillman.

The County Treasurer reported a balance in the Treasury in favor of the county, arising from all sources, of \$53,930.23.

Ordered, That the sum of \$28,000 be raised to meet the contingent expenses of the county for the ensuing year.

At a meeting of the Board on the 1st day of September, 1842, pursuant to adjournment, the additional sum of \$35,000 was ordered to be raised by tax, to meet the contingent expenses of the current year.

Town expenses: New Utrecht, \$272.82; Gravesend, \$229.21; Flatlands, \$162.21; Bushwick, \$242.84; Williamsburgh, \$1,676.74; Flatbush, \$280.16.

By resolution, the office of Deputy Superintendent of Common Schools, having been attended with beneficial results, was continued; and it was further ordered that the Board of Supervisors fit up court and jury rooms in the county jail, the cost not to exceed the sum of \$2,000.

1843. SUPERVISORS: William M. Udall, *Chairman*, William Ellsworth, Stephen Haynes, Daniel A. Robbins, James Freel, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; A. O. Millard, 8th and 9th Wards; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht, *President*; Samuel G. Stryker, Gravesend; Andrew Emmans, Flatlands; Jacob Rapelye, Flatbush; Martin R. Meeker, Bushwick; Jeremiah Lott, *Secretary* of the Board; John Garrison, *Treasurer*; and Hon. John Greenwood, *Taxing Officer* of the Board.

A Committee on Accounts was appointed this year to estimate the necessary sum, to be raised by tax, to pay the contingent expenses for the present year; a Committee on the Equalization of the Assessment Rolls of the several towns, wards and districts, in the county; also one "to examine the assessment rolls for the purpose of ascertaining whether the valuation of real estate, in the several towns and wards, bear a just relation to the valuation in all the towns and wards in the county."

At a Board meeting, September 1st, \$45,000 was ordered to be raised by tax, to defray the contingent expenses of the county for the ensuing year.

Town expenses: New Utrecht, \$61; to support of common schools, \$145.26; total, \$226.26. Gravesend town expenses, \$91; to support of common schools, \$90.46; total \$181.46. Bushwick town expenses, \$151.50; support of common schools, \$146.62; total, \$298.12. Williamsburgh town expenses, \$1,300; to support of common schools, \$576.74; total, \$1,876.74. Flatbush town expenses, \$63.50; to support of common schools, \$237.66; total, \$301.16. Flatlands town expenses, \$119.13; to support of common schools, \$91.71; total, \$210.84.

1844. SUPERVISORS: Cornelius B. Bergen, *Chairman*, William M. Udall, Daniel A. Robbins, James Freel, Amos P. Stanton, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; Peter Wyckoff, 8th and 9th Wards; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht, Jacob Rapelye, Flatbush; Martin R. Meeker, Bushwick; Francis V. Morrell, Williamsburgh; John A. Voorhees; Flatlands; Bernardus I. Ryder, Gravesend; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John F. Garrison, *Treasurer*.

The Supervisors at this meeting provided for the erection of a new Lunatic Asylum, under the provision of an act of the Legislature, passed April 26, 1844.

The Board ordered that the sum of \$64,722.25 be raised by tax the present year on the whole city of Brooklyn to meet the expenses of the said city generally, and that the sum of \$31,000 be raised by tax on the first seven wards of Brooklyn to meet the expenses of fire and watch district, and that the sum of \$5,660 be raised by tax on school districts No. 1, 4, 6, 8 and 10.

Town expenses: Gravesend, \$391.26; Flatlands, \$245.46; New Utrecht, \$663.32; Williamsburgh, \$1,988.88; Bushwick, \$812.62; Flatbush, \$335.91.

1845. SUPERVISORS: William M. Udall, Daniel A. Robbins, James Freel, Amos P. Stanton, Henry C. Conkling, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; William H. Campbell, 8th and 9th Wards of Brooklyn; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; John A. Voorhees, Flatlands; Bernardus I. Ryder, Gravesend; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Eusebius Hopkins, Williamsburgh; Henry D. Woodward, Bushwick; Jeremiah Lott, *Clerk*; John F. Garrison, *Treasurer*.

The *Brooklyn Eagle* and *Democratic Advocate* were chosen as the newspapers to publish the laws of the county under an act of the Legislature.

At a meeting of the Board of Supervisors in the county court-room, in Brooklyn, after the minutes of the last meeting were read, an incident occurred in relation to the present and past history of the Supervisors, of which an account cannot fail to deeply interest all who read it. This was the resignation of Mr. Jeremiah Lott, the venerable clerk of the Board. His letter read as follows:

"To the Board of Supervisors of the County of Kings:

Fellow Citizens:—Having officiated as clerk of the Board of Supervisors for a period of over forty-four years, it cannot be surprising that I should have acquired a growing attachment to a body forming such an important link in the internal administration of this State. I can bear ample testimony of the wisdom and intelligence which the people of this county have constantly displayed in their judicious selection of Supervisors. Men have been invariably returned to the Board, fully competent to regulate and control the fiscal concerns of their constituents with prudence, economy, ability and with due regard to public interest. In looking upon the various Boards of Supervisors, with whom I have from time to time been associated, many of whose members are numbered with the silent dead, I am induced to indulge in the pleasing consolation that I have, in some good degree, merited their approbation and esteem, a renewal of which I have so recently received from you. A few days ago I was attacked with a fever which has now in some measure abated—yet, my recovery must of necessity be slow and uncertain. The apportionment of taxes, one of the important duties of the clerk, will soon have to be attended to, and cannot admit of delay. I have therefore thought it an imperative duty on my part to resign the office of Clerk of the Board of Supervisors of the County of Kings, and now respectfully ask your acceptance of my resignation. The books and papers appertaining to the office, I will deliver to the person who shall be authorized by you to receive them."

After referring to some matters of unfinished business, pertaining to his office, Mr. Lott closes his letter as follows:

"In taking a final and affectionate farewell of you, my fellow citizens, in your collective capacity of a Board of Supervisors, I am truly sensible that I am cutting a tender tie. But duty to the public, duty to you, and duty to myself demand it, and I obey its mandates. Accept of my best wishes for the health and happiness of every individual member of the Board, and with unabated esteem I subscribe myself
Your obedient servant,

Flatbush, Sept. 9th, 1845.

JEREMIAH LOTT."

It would be useless to attempt any description of the emotions which the reading of this admirable letter produced in the minds of every member of the Board. Mr. Lott's resignation was accepted in appropriate and feeling language, uttered by several members, and a resolution ordering the letter to be inserted in the records of the proceedings of the Board was unanimously adopted. The Board elected Philip S. Crooke its Clerk in place of Jeremiah Lott, resigned.

The Board of Supervisors having assumed the proportions of a large legislative body, in which a rapidly growing city, with its many diversified interests is represented, we shall hereafter only give the names of the members of succeed-

ing Boards, their officers, the names of the treasurers of the county; and, once in every five years, a brief tabulated estimate of the value of the personal and real estate, in the county; with a list of the corporations, and a few other incidents that should have a place in the history of Kings County.

The proceedings of the Superintendents of the Poor, intimately connected with that of the Supervisors, forming an exceedingly interesting and instructive part of the history of the county, will be found in another chapter, under the head of "*Superintendents of the Poor.*"

From a table prepared by the Clerk of the Board, showing the value of the real and personal estate in the county, we extract the following:

Value of real estate, \$26,708,402; value of personal estate, \$4,039,870. Aggregate taxation, \$182,436.55.

The following were the corporations existing in the county in November, 1845.

Long Island Bank, stock, \$31,000; * Brooklyn Bank, stock, \$11,260; * Atlantic Bank, stock, \$37,387; * Brooklyn Fire Insurance Co., stock, \$13,416; * Long Island Insurance Co., stock, \$15,000; * Williamsburgh Fire Insurance Co., stock, \$2,100; * Brooklyn White Lead Co., stock, \$52,250; * Union White Lead Co., stock, \$30,490; * Red Hook Cotton Manufacturing Co., stock, \$7,300; Gravesend & Coney Island Road and Bridge Co., stock, \$6,000; Bushwick & Newtown R. R. and Bridge Co., stock, \$1,200; Atlantic White Lead Co., stock, \$15,000.*

1846. SUPERVISORS: Seth Low, *Chairman*, Charles J. Taylor, George S. Howland, John Skillman, Barnet Johnson, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; John G. Bergen, 8th and 9th Wards; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Bernardus I. Rider, Gravesend; James De Bevoise, Bushwick; Andrew B. Hodges, Williamsburg; John A. Voorhees, Flatlands; A. B. Hodges, *Clerk*; John F. Garrison, *Treasurer*.

At a special meeting of the Board, held June 15th, 1846, A. B. Hodges, Clerk of the Board, resigned, and Charles C. Bulkley was elected to fill the vacancy. At a subsequent meeting, Crawford S. Smith, of Brooklyn, was elected *County Treasurer*, in place of John F. Garrison.

A meeting of the Board of Supervisors for 1846 was held at the court-house in Brooklyn, January 4, 1847, pursuant to the directions of the 5th Section of the 3rd Article of the Constitution of 1846. President Low in the chair.

This was the first meeting of the board under the new constitution of 1846, which, with subsequent acts of the legislature, made several changes in the legislative and other powers of the Board of Supervisors. Among other duties assigned to Boards of Supervisors by that Constitution, was that of dividing their respective counties into assembly districts, in such counties as were then entitled to more than one member of Assembly.

The said boards were directed to meet on the first Tuesday of January following the adoption of said Constitution.

Another duty assigned them was fixing the salary of the county judges and surrogate in counties where the office of judge and surrogate was combined in one person, and of those officers acting separate.

Section 17, of Article 3rd of said Constitution, empowered the legislature to confer on Boards of Supervisors such further powers of local legislation as they shall from time to time prescribe.

By a subsequent act of the legislature, the Supervisors were to meet on the Tuesday next following the election, and

* Secured by real estate.

canvass separately the votes for Governor, State Senators, Representatives in Congress, Members of Assembly, Sheriffs, and all other county officers, and for any proposed amendments of the Constitution.

In the early history of the State, as we have seen, Boards of Supervisors were given power to canvass the votes cast for members of Assembly only. The duty of canvassing the votes for all other officers above Members of Assembly was conferred upon the Secretary of State.

At the meeting on the 5th of January, 1847, the question of dividing the county into assembly districts under the provisions of the new Constitution, came before the Board, and after a long discussion, on motion of Mr. Tunis G. Bergen, the county was divided into *three* assembly districts. The *First*, consisting of a population of 21,570, was formed from the First, Second, Third and Fifth Wards of Brooklyn; the *Second*, representing a population of 21,093, was formed from the Sixth and Eighth Wards of Brooklyn, the towns of New Utrecht, Flatbush, Gravesend, Flatlands and Bushwick. The *Third* District, representing a population of 19,239, was composed of the Seventh and Ninth Wards of Brooklyn, and the town of Williamsburg.

As the population of the County of Kings exceeded 40,000, it was left to the Board of Supervisors to decide whether the duties of the county judge and surrogate should not be divided and be performed by separate individuals, to wit, a county judge and a surrogate. Having decided that these two offices should be divided, the Board fixed the salary of the county judge at \$1,200, and that of the surrogate at \$1,500, the same to be paid quarterly.

1847. SUPERVISORS: Charles J. Taylor, *Chairman*, Barnet Johnson, David Barker, David B. Baylis, John I. Studwell, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; Rem. Lefferts, 8th and 9th Wards; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Bernardus I. Ryder, Gravesend; Charles I. Debevoise, Bushwick; Andrew B. Hodges, Williamsburg; Charles E. Bulkley, *Clerk*; Crawford C. Smith, *Treasurer*.

The treasury receipts for the fiscal year, ending July 31, 1847, were \$115,191.41, and the disbursements were \$114,284.17, leaving a balance in the treasury of \$907.24.

Sheriff Voorhees was paid this year the sum of \$500 for board of prisoners in the jail.

It was ordered, on motion, that the sum of \$71,400 be raised by tax during the present year on the whole city of Brooklyn, to meet the expenses incident to the said city; and that the further sum of \$50,250 be raised for the expenses of the fire and watch districts of the said city.

1848. SUPERVISORS: Charles J. Taylor, *Chairman*, Barnet Johnson, David B. Baylis, George W. Prince, Nicholas B. Rhodes, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; Rem. Lefferts, 8th and 9th Wards; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Bernardus I. Ryder, Gravesend; John A. Voorhees, Flatlands; Leonard T. Coles and Daniel Maujer; Williamsburgh; Charles I. Debevoise, Bushwick; Charles E. Bulkley, *Clerk*; Crawford C. Smith, *Treasurer*.

By an act of the Legislature, the Board of Supervisors were authorized to employ the prisoners sentenced to hard labor in the county jail in the erection of the penitentiary and work-house. This caused a spirited debate, but finally the provisions of the act were complied with.

Treasury receipts this year, \$144,988.95; Disbursements, \$144,985.95. *Ordered*, on motion, that the sum of \$91,185 be raised by tax, to defray the ordinary and contingent expenses of the county, and for the erection of a new hospital.

The following is a list of the corporations existing in Kings county January 1, 1849, according to a report pre-

sent to the Board of Supervisors, and adopted by that body:

Long Island Bank, amount of stock, \$288,000; Brooklyn Bank, stock, \$85,000; Atlantic Bank, stock, \$24,000; Brooklyn Fire Insurance Co., stock, \$88,816; Long Island Insurance Co., stock, \$185,000; Williamsburg Fire Insurance Co., stock, \$50,000; Kings County Mutual Insurance Co., stock, \$25,000; Brooklyn White Lead Co., stock, \$52,250; Union White Lead Co., stock, \$32,270; Atlantic White Lead Co., stock, \$50,000; Gravesend and Coney Island Bridge Co., stock, \$6,000.

Valuation of the real estate in the county, per report made to Board, January 2, 1849, \$33,770,772; valuation of personal property, \$4,519,842.

At the last meeting of the Board for the year 1848, held March 30, 1849, the new hospital was reported as completed, at a cost of \$20,894.80.

1849. SUPERVISORS: Nicholas B. Rhodes, Samuel Smith, Anthony P. Ostrom, Wm. S. Dillingham, William Seaman, for the first seven wards of Brooklyn; John G. Bergen, 8th and 9th Wards, *Chairman*; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Bernardus I. Ryder, Gravesend; John A. Voorhees, Flatlands; Charles I. Debevoise, Bushwick; Daniel Maujer, Williamsburg; Charles E. Bulkley, *Clerk*, and Crawford C. Smith, *Treasurer*.

At the annual meeting, August 7, 1849, the *Brooklyn Daily Advertiser* and the *Democratic Advocate* were appointed for publishing the laws of the State.

Received into the treasury for the year ending July 1, 1849, \$156,347.09; disbursed \$155,659.76.

An act was passed by the Legislature of the State, April 27, 1847, authorizing the opening of Washington Park, and, at a meeting of the Board of Supervisors, held October 10, 1849, a resolution was adopted ordering a tax upon the several wards of the city to raise the funds for paying for the same, the estimated cost of which was \$121,540.42.

1850. SUPERVISORS: Joseph Sprague, Samuel Sloan, Abram Verplanck, James M. Seabury, John G. Bergen, *Chairman*, Brooklyn; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Bernardus I. Ryder, Gravesend; John A. Voorhees, Flatlands; Charles I. Debevoise and Abram J. Berry, Williamsburg; Charles E. Bulkley, *Clerk*.

At a special meeting of this Board, a law was passed for the *protection of game and fish in the county*.

The *Brooklyn Eagle*, and the *Independent Press*, of Williamsburg, were designated as the newspapers in the county to publish the laws of the State.

The Treasury Receipts were \$212,055.85, and the disbursements \$184,729.67, leaving a balance of \$27,995.30.

1851.—SUPERVISORS: Conklin Brush, 1st ward, Brooklyn; Francis B. Spinola, 2d Ward; Samuel Booth, 4th Ward; Frederick Morris, 5th Ward; George W. Stillwell, 6th Ward; Henry A. Kent, 8th Ward; John S. Rider, 9th Ward; John Williams, 10th Ward; William M. Muchmore, 11th Ward; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; James V. Schoonmaker, Flatbush; John A. Voorhees, Flatlands; Bernardus I. Ryder, Gravesend; Charles I. Debevoise, Bushwick; Abraham J. Berry, *Chairman*, and James D. Sparkman, Williamsburg; Charles E. Bulkley, *Clerk*; Crawford C. Smith, *Treasurer*.

The salary of the County Judge was fixed at \$1,600 per year.

The treasury receipts were \$238,519.56, and the disbursements \$227,550.

1852.—SUPERVISORS: Conklin Brush, Francis B. Spinola, Samuel Booth, George W. Stillwell, John S. Rider, John Williams, William M. Muchmore, Brooklyn; James V.

Schoonmaker, Flatbush; Ferdinand L. Wyckoff, New Lots; John A. Voorhees, Flatlands; Bernardus I. Ryder, Gravesend; Charles I. Debevoise, Bushwick; Abraham J. Berry, *Chairman*; Thomas J. Van Sant, Edwin S. Ralphs, Williamsburg; Crawford C. Smith, *Treasurer*; Charles E. Bulkley, *Clerk*.

By an Act of the Legislature, March 19th, 1852, the County Treasurer was authorized, under the direction of the Board, to borrow, on the credit of the town, \$50,000 for the building of a Penitentiary, and by an Act passed April 14th, 1852, an equal amount for the erection of a Hospital building on the County farm at Flatbush.

The treasury received \$312,799.97, and disbursed this year \$298,544.90.

1853.—SUPERVISORS for Brooklyn: Horatio N. Holt, 1st Ward; R. C. Brainard, 2d Ward; Eli Merrill, 3d Ward; Samuel Booth, 4th Ward; Patrick Henry Morris, 5th Ward; George Remsen, 6th Ward; Patrick Graham, 7th Ward; Peter Wyckoff, 8th Ward; Joseph Oliver, 9th Ward; Elisha W. Hinman, 10th Ward; John A. Dayton, 11th Ward; James V. Schoonmaker, Flatbush; Isaac Schenck, New Lots; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Bernardus I. Ryder, Gravesend; John A. Wyckoff, Flatlands; Martin Kalbfleisch, Bushwick; Abraham J. Berry, *Chairman*, Edwin S. Ralphs, Thomas J. Van Sant, Williamsburg; Charles E. Bulkley, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *Treasurer*.

At a special meeting of the Board, Sept. 29th, 1853, the death of Charles E. Bulkley, *Clerk of the Board*, was announced, and the usual resolutions were adopted.

At the next meeting, Oct. 7th, 1853, A. W. Osborn was elected *Clerk* in the place of C. E. Bulkley, deceased. The Board was notified that the Penitentiary was ready for the confinement of Prisoners. The amount paid into the treasury this year was \$383,186.80. The amount disbursed \$275,486.35.

Under an Act of the Legislature, passed April 12th, 1851, providing for the establishment of free schools throughout the State, the Board of Supervisors resolved to raise by tax the sum of \$50,935.08, in accordance with the provisions of the said act.

At a meeting held December 29th, the resignation of Hon. A. J. Berry, as chairman, was presented and accepted.

1854.—SUPERVISORS: Brooklyn, Horatio N. Holt, 1st ward; Roswell C. Brainerd, 2d Ward, *Chairman*; Eli Merrill, 3d Ward; Samuel Booth, 4th Ward; John J. White, 5th Ward; Geo. Remsen, 6th Ward; Samuel Graham, 7th Ward; Peter Wyckoff, 8th Ward; Joseph Oliver, 9th Ward; Elisha W. Hinman, 10th Ward; J. A. Dayton, 11th Ward; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; James J. Schoonmaker, Flatbush; Isaac C. Schenck, New Lots; Wm. Bennett, Gravesend; John A. Wyckoff, Flatlands; Martin Kalbfleisch, Bushwick; William Wall (Mayor of the city of Williamsburg) and Geo. H. Andrews, James Nolan, and Edwin S. Ralphs, Supervisors for Williamsburgh; Albert H. Osborn, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *County Treasurer*.

Receipts of the county Treasury for the year ending July 31st, 1854, \$538,962.46 and expenditures, \$548,567.88.

The *Brooklyn Daily Eagle* and the *Williamsburg Daily Times* were designated as the papers to publish the laws.

At the meeting on December 12th, 1854, the death of Joseph Sprague, for many years a much respected and useful member of the Board, was feelingly announced, and appropriate resolutions of sorrow for his loss were adopted.

1855.—SUPERVISORS: Brooklyn, Wm. Hinman, 1st Ward; Seth Bradford, 2d Ward; Amos P. Stanton, 3d Ward, *Chairman*; Isaac Allen, 4th Ward; Jacob B. Stryker, 5th Ward; Wm.

C. Heaton, 6th Ward; Edward Rowe, 7th Ward; John Farrell, 8th Ward; John S. Bogert, 9th Ward; Benj. P. Middleton, 10th Ward; Thos. S. Denike, 11th Ward; John Garland, 12th Ward; Wallace E. Caldwell, 13th Ward; James Nolan, 14th Ward; John B. Thursby, 15th Ward; David Lindsay, 16th Ward; H. Bartlett Fenton, 17th Ward; Henry D. Woodworth, 18th Ward; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Jas. V. Schoonmaker, Flatbush; Ditmas Jewell, New Lots; William Bennett, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Albert H. Osborn, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *Treasurer*.

The tabulated report of the valuation of the real and personal property of the county for the year 1854 was presented to the Board, as follows: Real property, \$82,927,793; Personal property, \$11,116,300. By another tabulated report for the year 1855, the increase in the said valuation was shown as follows: Real property, \$88,679,160; Personal, \$11,313,667.

Receipts of the county Treasury, \$169,387.20; Exclusive of the sum of \$500, from Bastardy cases, produce of Poor-house farm, board of lunatics, and Commission of Emigration; Disbursements, \$182,367.42.

Hon. Nathan B. Morse, John P. Rolf, and Richard Ingraham, of Brooklyn, Counsellors-at-law, were appointed *Commissioners of Records* with full power to examine into the condition of the records, documents, maps and indices in the office of the Clerk, Register and Surrogate of said county, and to have the same copied and printed in such form as they deemed proper.

1856—SUPERVISORS: Brooklyn, Geo. Hall, Mayor and *ex officio* Supervisor; William Hinman, 1st Ward; R. C. Brainard, *Chairman*, 2d Ward; John J. Studwell, 3d Ward; Benjamin F. Thomas, 4th Ward; Foster Pettit, 5th Ward; Thos. Mulligan, 6th Ward; Samuel Graham, 7th Ward; Peter H. Wyckoff, 8th Ward; John S. Bogert, 9th Ward; Samuel Smith, 10th Ward; James Miller, 11th Ward; John Heissenbittel, 12th Ward; Wm. Wall, 13th Ward; F. C. Batterman, 14th Ward; Wm. Marshall, 15th Ward; David Lindsay, 16th Ward; Geo. W. Kelsey, 17th Ward; Henry D. Woodworth, 18th Ward; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; James V. Schoonmaker, Flatbush; Isaac Schenck, New Lots; Wm. Bennett, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Albert H. Osborn, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *Treasurer*.

Receipts of the Treasury, \$412,495.30; disbursements, \$437,789.48. Showing a deficiency of \$25,294.18.

1857. SUPERVISORS: Samuel S. Powell, Mayor, Brooklyn; William Hinman, 1st Ward; Hugh McLaughlin, 2d Ward; John J. Studwell, 3d Ward; Thomas A. Jerome, 4th Ward; John J. White, 5th Ward; James Bell, 6th Ward; Geo. W. Bleeker, 7th Ward; Gordon C. Adams, 8th Ward; Thomas Hamilton, 9th Ward; Samuel Smith, 10th Ward; Felix Campbell, 11th Ward; John Delaney, 12th Ward; William Wall, 13th Ward; John McCloskey, 14th Ward; Thomas Cummings, 15th Ward; David Lindsay, *Chairman*, 16th Ward; John A. Boutelle, 17th Ward; Henry D. Woodworth, 18th Ward; John A. Cross, 19th Ward; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; James V. Schoonmaker, Flatbush; Isaac C. Schenck, New Lots; William Bennett, Gravesend; John N. Ryder, Flatlands; Albert H. Osborn, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *County Treasurer*. The expenses of the county (estimated) for the fiscal year commencing August 1st, 1857, were \$451,650. The following entry in the records of the proceedings of the Supervisors, under date of September 1st, 1857, shows the debtor side of the account of the county with the Treasurer: Dr., the County of Kings in account with James M. Seabury, *County Treasurer*, balance account from August 1st, 1856, to July 3d, 1857, \$993,112.90. We have omitted the items of the account. The credit side of

the account does not appear in the records of the Supervisors.

1858. SUPERVISORS: Brooklyn, Samuel S. Powell, (Mayor) *ex officio*; William Cagger, 1st Ward; Francis Markey, 2d Ward; John J. Studwell, 3d Ward; S. Warren Sneden, 4th Ward; Elisha Theall, 5th Ward; Wm. Salem, 6th Ward; Stephen C. Jackson, 7th Ward; John G. Bergen, 8th Ward; John S. Bogert, *Chairman* after August 3d, 9th Ward; Samuel Smith, 10th Ward; Felix Campbell, *Chairman* May 11th to August 3d, 11th Ward; John Delaney,* 12th Ward; Wm. Wall, 13th Ward; John Flaherty, 14th Ward; Thos. Cummings, 15th Ward; Edwin S. Ralphs, 16th Ward; Thos. C. Dicks, 17th Ward; H. D. Woodworth, 18th Ward; John A. Cross, 19th Ward; Tunis G. Bergen, New Utrecht; Philip S. Croke, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Samuel G. Stryker, Gravesend; Jno. L. Ryder, Flatlands.

At a special meeting called pursuant to order, held May 11th, 1858, Felix Campbell was chosen Chairman of the Board, to serve until the next annual meeting, to be held August 3d, 1858; Albert H. Osborn, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *Treasurer*. Treasury disbursements, \$977,507.77. The receipts exceeded this amount by \$46,203.18.

The Board this year appointed a committee to investigate into the large sums of money disbursed for stationery of all kinds, which they found to exceed the sum of \$1,200.

1859. SUPERVISORS: Brooklyn, Samuel S. Powell (Mayor), *ex officio*; Luther Eames, 1st Ward; Francis Markey, 2d Ward; John J. Studwell, 3d Ward; Samuel Booth, 4th Ward; Edward B. Cadley, 5th Ward; James R. Del Vecchio, 6th Ward; Stephen Crowell, 7th Ward; Levi C. Hildreth, 8th Ward; John Fitzsimmons, 9th Ward; Samuel Smith, 10th Ward, *Chairman*; James Kenmore, 11th Ward; John Riley, 12th Ward; William Wall, 13th Ward; John Flaherty, 14th Ward; Thomas Cummings, 15th Ward; James Campbell, 16th Ward; John T. Williams, 17th Ward; John Garrison, 18th Ward; William H. Jenkins, 19th Ward; William J. Cropsey, New Utrecht; Philip S. Croke, Flatbush; Samuel G. Stryker, Gravesend; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Albert H. Osborn, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *Treasurer*. Treasury receipts, \$1,154,582.45; and disbursements, \$1,154,582.45.

1860. SUPERVISORS: Brooklyn, Hon. S. S. Powell (Mayor) *ex officio*; Luther Eames, 1st Ward; William Mullen, 2d Ward; John J. Studwell, 3d Ward; Samuel Booth, 4th Ward; Patrick Carberry, 5th Ward; Wm. Coit, 6th Ward; Stephen Crowell, 7th Ward, *Chairman*; Garret G. Bergen, 8th Ward; Owen Foley, 9th Ward; Samuel Smith, 10th Ward; Francis C. Kirby, 11th Ward; Edward McGlynn, 12th Ward; Benj. W. Willson, 13th Ward; John Flaherty, 14th Ward; Charles C. Talbot, 15th Ward; Robert Milnes, 16th Ward; Jonathan Moore, 17th Ward; John Garrison, 18th Ward; James D. Sparkman, 19th Ward; William J. Cropsey, New Utrecht; Philip S. Croke, Flatbush; William G. Stryker, Gravesend; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; John L. Ryder, Flatlands.

Albert H. Osborn, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *Treasurer*.

The County Treasurer reported a deficiency in the collection of taxes in the several wards and towns in the County, amounting to the sum of \$453,406.33. This was in the taxes of 1859 to May 1860.

At a meeting of the Board, held October 3d, 1860, the Clerk presented a comparative statement of the valuation of the taxable property in the County for the years 1859 and 1860, showing a net increase of \$2,601,105.

1861.—SUPERVISORS, Brooklyn: Hon. Martin Kalbfleisch

* At the annual election for town and ward officers this year, there was no successor elected for Mr. John Delaney, Supervisor of the 12th Ward of Brooklyn.

(Mayor) *ex officio*; Lawrence Hanley, 1st Ward; James A. Duffy, 2d Ward; John J. Studwell, 3d Ward; Samuel Booth, 4th Ward; Patrick Carberry, 5th Ward; William A. Furey, 6th Ward; James H. Pratt, 7th Ward; Tunis V. P. Talmage, 8th Ward; Thomas T. Green, 9th Ward; William H. Hazzard, 10th Ward; Francis C. Kirby, 11th Ward; George A. Newsam, 12th Ward; Joseph Adams, 13th Ward; Martin Murray, 14th Ward; Charles C. Talbot, 15th Ward; Francis Campbell, 16th Ward; Jonathan Moore, 17th Ward; William Tuttle, 18th Ward; James Gridley, 19th; William J. Cropsey, New Utrecht; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush, *Chairman*; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; James Seabury, *Treasurer*.

We have now reached that period in the history of the Supervisors of Kings County, when the war for the Union shook the Republic with terrible commotion. The present Board of Supervisors, and all subsequent Boards during the war, exhibited a patriotic devotion to the Union which gave their county distinguished preeminence over other counties in the State.

After the organization of the Boards, a resolution was adopted, ordering the sum of \$50,000 to be raised and appropriated for the relief of families of those from the County of Kings, who should serve their country in the army of the United States. After this, other appropriations were made for the same purpose, and by a report presented at a meeting of the Board held September 3d, 1861, it was seen that to this date there had been paid out for the relief of said families the sum of \$68,163.50.

1862.—The Board of Supervisors for this year consisted of the same members as last year. Owing to the peculiar unfinished business before the Board for the year 1861, the different wards and towns in the county re-elected the members of that Board, at the annual election for town and ward officers.

At the annual Board, held May 5th, 1862, Philip S. Crooke was re-elected *Chairman*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *County Treasurer*. It appears by a report presented at a meeting of the Board, June 3d, 1862, that during the past year there had been 1,214 licenses to sell spirituous liquors granted in the County, at \$30 per license, from which the sum of \$36,420 was paid into the treasury. A very large part of the business before the Board this year was connected with the civil war, the raising of troops, providing for the payment of bounties, and support of the families of soldiers who had volunteered. From a tabulated report presented to the Board, it appeared that the total amount paid into the Relief Fund for the families of soldiers for the period beginning March 26, and ending April 30, 1862, was \$25,566.20.

1863. By a resolution of the Board at the meeting January 6, 1863, the time of annual meeting was changed from the 1st Monday of May to the 1st Tuesday of January.

At a meeting held January 13th, pursuant to adjournment, the following members appeared and took their seats: Hon. Martin Kalbfleisch, *Mayor (ex-officio)*, Hobart Ford, John Shearon, John J. Studwell, Samuel Booth, Patrick Burns, Wm. J. Osborne, George Herman, Wm. H. Hazzard, Francis C. Kirby, John Driscoll, Chas. W. Cheshire, John Dolan, Chas. P. Talbot, John Hanson, Wm. Piepenbring, Chas. A. Canavella, James Gridley, Wm. J. Cropsey, Gilliam Schenck, Jaques J. Stillwell, John L. Ryder, E. Wilson Bloom, Francis McGrath. William J. Osborne was elected *Chairman*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; James M. Seabury, *Treasurer*.

1864. SUPERVISORS: Hon. A. M. Wood, *Mayor (ex-officio)*, Hobart Ford, John Shearon, John J. Studwell, Samuel Booth, Patrick Burns, William J. Osborne, E. Wilson

Bloom, Francis McGrath, George G. Herman, Thos. Swany, Francis C. Kirby, Thomas Foran, Charles W. Cheshire, Charles C. Talbot, Samuel J. Stewart, James Gridley, William Mayo Little, Philip S. Crooke, *Chairman*; Gilliam Schenck, Jaques J. Stillwell, John L. Ryder, Martin Phelan, and Wm. Piepenbring; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Thos. A. Gardiner, *County Treasurer*.

1865. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Alfred M. Wood, *Mayor (ex-officio)*; 1st Ward, Alex. Macgrotty; 2d Ward, John Shearon; 3d Ward; John J. Studwell; 4th Ward, Samuel Booth; 5th Ward, William A. Furey; 6th Ward, Wm. J. Osborne; 7th Ward, E. Wilson Bloom; 8th Ward, Francis McGrath; 9th Ward, George G. Herman; 10th Ward, Thomas Swany; 11th Ward, A. J. Hicks; 12th Ward, Thomas Foran; 13th Ward, Charles W. Cheshire; 14th Ward, Martin Phelan; 15th Ward, Charles C. Talbot; 16th Ward, John Hanson; 17th Ward, Stephen Clark; 18th Ward, Samuel J. Stewart; 19th Ward, Frederick Scholes; 20th Ward, Wm. Mayo Little; Peter Wyckoff, New Utrecht; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush, *Chairman*; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *Treasurer*.

1866. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Samuel Booth, *Mayor (ex-officio)*; 1st Ward, Alexander Macgrotty; 2d Ward, James Hanley; 3d Ward, John J. Studwell; 4th Ward, Edward D. White; 5th Ward, William A. Furey; 6th Ward, William J. Osborne; 7th Ward, E. Wilson Bloom; 8th Ward, Francis McGrath; 9th Ward, Geo. G. Herman; 10th Ward, Dominicus S. Voorhees; 11th Ward, A. J. Hicks; 12th Ward, Thos. Foran; 13th Ward, Charles W. Cheshire; 12th Ward, Stephen I. Simmons; 15th Ward, Charles C. Talbot, *Chairman*; 16th Ward, Henry Wills; 17th Ward, Stephen Clark; 18th Ward, Abram Vandervoort; 19th Ward, Frederick Scholes; 20th Ward, William Mayo Little; Peter Wyckoff, New Utrecht; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *Treasurer*.

1867. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Samuel Booth, *Mayor (ex-officio)*; Cortland A. Sprague, 1st Ward; James Hanley, 2d Ward; Dwight Johnson, 3d Ward; Edward D. White, 4th Ward; Peter Donnelly, 5th Ward; Wm. J. Osborne, 6th Ward; E. Wilson Bloom, 7th Ward; Francis McGrath, 8th Ward; James Cassidy, 9th Ward; Dominicus S. Voorhees, 10th Ward; James Howell, Jr., 11th Ward; Thomas Foran, 12th Ward; Howell Smith, 13th Ward; Stephen I. Simmons, 14th Ward; Geo. A. Dugan, 15th Ward; Henry Wills, 16th Ward; Stephen Clark, 17th Ward; Abraham Vandervoort, 18th Ward; Frederick Scholes, 19th Ward; Wm. Mayo Little, 20th Ward, *Chairman*; Wm. J. Cropsey, New Utrecht; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands. Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*.

1868. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Martin Kalbfleisch, *Mayor (ex-officio)*; Cortland A. Sprague, 1st Ward; Robert Nelson, 2d Ward; Dwight Johnson, 3d Ward; Evan M. Johnson, 4th Ward; Peter Donnelly, 5th Ward; Wm. J. Osborne, 6th Ward, *Chairman*; E. Wilson Bloom, 7th Ward; James Woodhead, 8th Ward; James Cassidy, 9th Ward; James B. Hall, 10th Ward; James Howell, Jr., 11th Ward; Thomas Foran, 12th Ward; Howell Smith, 13th Ward; John L. Murphy, 14th Ward; George A. Dugan, 15th Ward; Henry Wills, 16th Ward; Stephen Clark, 17th Ward; Lawrence A. Whitehill, 18th Ward; Fred'k Scholes, 19th Ward; William Mayo Little, 20th Ward; Wm. J. Cropsey, New Utrecht; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Thomas A. Gardiner, *Treasurer*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*.

1869. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Martin Kalbfleisch, Mayor, (*ex officio*); Charles D. Hutchins, 1st Ward; Robert Nelson, 2d Ward; Dwight Johnson, 3d Ward; Edmund A. Kollmyer, 4th Ward; Thos. Shevlen, 5th Ward; Wm. J. Osborne, 6th Ward, *Chairman*; Thaddeus Buck, 7th Ward; James Woodhead, 8th Ward; James Cassidy, 9th Ward; James B. Hall, 10th Ward; James Howell, Jr., 11th Ward; Thomas Foran, 12th Ward; Howell Smith, 13th Ward; John L. Murphy, 14th Ward; Joseph Wilkeyson, 15th Ward; Henry Wills, 16th Ward; Joseph Droll, 17th Ward; Lawrence A. Whitehall, 18th Ward; Marvin Cross, 19th Ward; Wm. Mayo Little, 20th Ward; Charles B. Tobey, 21st Ward; James W. Walsh, 22d Ward; Wm. J. Cropsey, New Utrecht; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *County Treasurer*.

The Treasury receipts for the year were \$2,833,983.87. There was a deficiency of \$104,721.01.

1870. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Martin Kalbfleisch, Mayor (*ex officio*); Charles D. Hutchins, 1st Ward; Robert Nelson, 2d Ward; Dwight Johnson, 3d Ward; Edmund A. Kollmyer, 4th Ward; Thomas Shevlen, 5th Ward; William J. Osborne, 6th Ward, *Chairman*; Thaddeus Buck, 7th Ward; Charles H. Foley, 8th Ward; James Cassidy, 9th Ward; James Duffy, 10th Ward; James Howell, Jr., 11th Ward; Thomas Sheridan, 12th Ward; Howell Smith, 13th Ward; John L. Murphy, 14th Ward; Joseph Wilkeyson, 15th Ward; Henry Wills, 16th Ward; Joseph Droll, 17th Ward; James Fletcher, 18th Ward; Marvin Cross, 19th Ward; John W. Harman, 20th Ward; Charles B. Tobey, 21st Ward; John Hall, 22d Ward; William J. Cropsey, New Utrecht; Philip S. Crooke, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *Treasurer*.

1871. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Martin Kalbfleisch, Mayor (*ex officio*); Charles D. Hutchins, 1st Ward; Robert Nelson, 2d Ward; Dwight Johnson, 3d Ward; Edmund A. Kollmyer, 4th Ward; Thomas Shevlen, 5th Ward; William J. Osborne, *Chairman*, 6th Ward; Peter Milne, Jr., 7th Ward; Charles H. Foley, 8th Ward; Richard J. Newman, 9th Ward; James Duffy, 10th Ward; James Howell, Jr., 11th Ward; Thomas Sheridan, 12th Ward; John W. Coe, 13th Ward; John L. Murphy, 14th Ward; Joseph Wilkeyson, 15th Ward; Henry Wills, 16th Ward; Thomas Devyr, 17th Ward; James Fletcher, 18th Ward; Robert Fairchild, 19th Ward; John W. Harman, 20th Ward; Wm. S. Searing, 21st Ward; John Hall, 22d Ward; Francis Hopkins, New Utrecht; J. V. B. Martense, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *Treasurer*.

The report of the taxable property of the county this year showed the following figures: Real, \$196,758,764; personal, \$19,726,751; total, \$216,485,515. Compared with 1870, this was an increase on real estate to the amount of \$2,656,372, and on personal to the amount of \$620,886.

An act of the Legislature, passed April 26th, 1871, provided for the election of an *Auditor of the County of Kings*, to hold office for the term of three years from the first day of January next after his election, and prescribed that all accounts and claims against the county were to be (and they still are) audited by that officer. The act provided for his election at the general State election. The first election for Auditor was held in November, 1871, and under the Act, the Register, Clerk and Treasurer of the county appointed Maurice Fitzgerald, on the 26th day of April, to perform the duties of the Auditor until the election should take place. His term of office expired on the first day of January, 1872. The

Auditor receives an annual salary of \$3,000, which is a county charge.

1872. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Samuel S. Powell, Mayor (*ex officio*); Charles D. Hutchins, 1st Ward; Owen Murphy, 2d Ward; Dwight Johnson, 3d Ward; Frederick J. Hosford, 4th Ward; Thomas J. Shevlen, 5th Ward; James W. Naughton, 6th Ward; Peter Milne, Jr., 7th Ward; Charles H. Foley, 8th Ward; Richard J. Newman, 9th Ward; Samuel Frost, 10th Ward; James Howell, Jr., 11th Ward; Thomas Sheridan, 12th Ward; John W. Coe, 13th Ward; John Carroll, 14th Ward; Joseph Wilkeyson, 15th Ward; Mathias J. Petry, 16th Ward; Thomas Devyr, 17th Ward; James Fletcher, 18th Ward; Robert Fairchild, 19th Ward; John W. Harman, 20th Ward; William S. Searing, 21st Ward; Geo. W. Richards, 22d Ward; Francis Hopkins, New Utrecht; J. V. B. Martense, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Hon. Wm. J. Osborne, Supervisor at large, *ex officio President*.

A law having passed, providing for the election by the Board of a President pro tem, James Howell, Jr., was elected such President for the ensuing year, Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *Treasurer*.

1873. SUPERVISORS: Hon. William J. Osborne, Supervisor at large and (*ex officio*) *President* of the Board; Hon. Samuel S. Howell, Mayor (*ex officio*); John Prentice, 1st Ward; Owen Murphy, 2d Ward; Dwight Johnson, 3d Ward; Fred'k J. Hosford, 4th Ward; Thomas Shevlen, 5th Ward; James W. Naughton, 6th Ward; Wm. L. B. Steers, 7th Ward; Charles H. Foley, 8th Ward; Daniel O'Connell, 9th Ward; Samuel Frost, 10th Ward; Edward B. Fowler, 11th Ward; Thomas Sheridan, 12th Ward; John W. Coe, 13th Ward; John Carroll, 14th Ward; John H. Snyder, 15th Ward; Mathias J. Petry, 16th Ward; Herman Cottrell, 17th Ward; James Fletcher, 18th Ward; George H. Fisher, 19th Ward; John W. Harman, 20th Ward; David H. Fowler, 21st Ward; George W. Richards, 22d Ward; Adolph Gubner, New Utrecht; Jacob V. B. Martense, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; John W. Coe was elected President *pro tem*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *Treasurer*.

1874. SUPERVISORS: George L. Fox, Supervisor at large and (*ex officio*) *President*; Hon. John W. Hunter, Mayor (*ex officio*); 1st, Ripley Ropes; 2d, William Dwyer; 3d, Joseph Platt; 4th, Alfred Dorlon; 5th, John M. Clancy, Edward A. Gardner; 6th, Thomas H. Rodman, John Dobbin; 7th, Edward Fry, A. Stewart Rowley; 8th, John McIntyre; 9th, Daniel O'Connell; 10th, Jacob J. Bergen, Charles T. Trowbridge; 11th, James Howell, Jr., William M. Shipman; 12th, Daniel O'Reilly, James Donovan; 13th, Demas Strong, Wm. A. Ray; 14th, Francis Nolan, Thos. J. Kenna; 15th, John H. Snyder, John T. Parker; 16th, Mathias J. Petry, Henry Kiefer; 17th, John A. Connolly; 18th, Henry Eckert; 19th, John H. Zindel; 20th, Abijah Whitney, Chas. H. K. Smith; 21st, George Brown; 22d, Wm. Richardson; 23d, Francis B. Fisher; 24th, Wm. C. McKinny; 25th, Robert Hill; Adolph Gubner, New Utrecht; Jacob V. B. Martense, Flatbush; Gilliam Schenck, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands. James Howell, Jr., was elected President *pro tem*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *County Treasurer*.

1875. SUPERVISORS: George L. Fox, Supervisor at large, and (*ex officio*) *President*; John W. Hunter, Mayor of Brooklyn (*ex officio*); 1st, Ripley Ropes; 2d, Wm. Dwyer; 3d, Joseph Platt; 4th, Robert Black; 5th, John M. Clancy, Edward A. Gardner; 6th, James Kane, John Dobbin; 7th, Edward Fry, A. Stewart Rowley; 8th, John McIntyre; 9th, Daniel O'Connell; 10th, Jacob I. Bergen, Chas. T. Trowbridge; 11th,

James Howell, Jr., Wm. M. Shipman; 12th, Daniel O'Reilly, James Donovan; 13th, Demas Strong, Wm. H. Ray; 14th, Patrick Clark, Thos J. Kenna; 15th, John H. Snyder, John T. Parker; 16th, Mathias J. Petry, David Acker; 17th, John A. Connolly; 18th, Horatio N. Balderson; 19th, John N. Zindel; 20th, John French, Chas. H. K. Smith; 21st, George Brown; 22d, Charles E. Vaughan; 23d, Francis B. Fisher; 24th, Wm. C. McKinny; 25th, Robert Hill; Adolph Gubner, New Utrecht; Peter L. Williamson, Flatbush; A. H. W. Van Siclen, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Hon. James Howell, Jr., Esq., *President pro tem.*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk.*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *County Treasurer.*

The County Treasurer's receipts were, \$4,613,347.04, and his disbursements, \$4,448,344.60. Balance, August 1st, 1875, \$165,002.46.

1876. SUPERVISORS: Hon. James Howell, Jr., Supervisor-at-Large and *President (ex officio)*; Hon. F. A. Schroeder, Mayor (*ex officio*); Rodney C. Ward, 1st Ward; Patrick Breslin, 2d Ward; D. S. Quimby, Jr., 3d; George C. Sexton, 4th; Andrew P. Coates, 5th; John B. Byrne, 6th; Edward Fry, 7th; Daniel Ryan, 8th; Henry Hawkes, 9th; John T. Moran, 10th; Christian Hohn, 11th; John Curran, 12th; Demas Strong, 13th; James Tierney, 14th; John H. Snyder, 15th; Victor Eger, 16th; Stephen Clark, 17th; George G. Brown, 18th; A. J. McDonald, 19th; G. W. Harman, 20th; John M. Phelps, 21st; Samuel C. Yeaton, 22d; Ernst Nathan, 23d; Henry Steers, 24th; Peter Van Cott, 25th; Adolph Gubner, New Utrecht; Peter L. Williamson, Flatbush; A. H. W. Van Siclen, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; John L. Ryder, *President pro tem.*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk.*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *County Treasurer.* The report of the County Treasurer gives a statement of a balance in the treasury Aug. 1, 1876, of \$71,810.80.

1877. SUPERVISORS: Hon. James Howell, Jr., Supervisor-at-Large and *President (ex officio)*; Hon. F. A. Schroeder, Mayor (*ex officio*); Rodney C. Ward, 1st Ward; John Gallagher, 2d; D. S. Quimby, Jr., 3d; George C. Sexton, 4th; Andrew P. Coates, 5th; John B. Byrne, 6th; Edward Fry, 7th; Daniel Ryan, 8th; Henry Hawkes, 9th; John T. Moran, 10th; Christian Hohn, 11th; John Curran, 12th; Demas Strong, 13th; James Tierney, 14th; John H. Snyder, 15th; Victor Eger, 16th; Stephen Clark, 17th; George G. Brown, 18th; A. G. McDonald, 19th; Alex. Walker, 20th; John M. Phelps, 21st; Edward Egolf, 22d; Ernst Nathan, 23d; William H. Fleeman, 24th; Peter Van Cott, 25th; Adolph Gubner, New Utrecht; Peter L. Williamson, Flatbush; A. H. W. Van Siclen, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; John L. Ryder, *President pro tem.*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk.*; Thomas A. Gardiner, *County Treasurer.*

1878. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Samuel Guthrie, Supervisor-at-Large and *President (ex officio)*; John T. Moran, 10th Ward, *President pro tem.*; Hon. James Howell, Jr., Mayor (*ex officio*); Allen I. Ormsbee, 1st Ward; John Gallagher, 2d; Joseph Quick, 3d; George C. Sexton, 4th; John Cullen, 5th; John B. Byrne, 6th; William J. Rider, 7th; Daniel Ryan, 8th; John J. Ladley, 9th; John T. Moran, 10th; James Hyde, 11th; John Curran, 12th; Alden S. Crowell, 13th; James Tierney, 14th; John H. Snyder, 15th; Victor Eger, 16th; Hugh Zoble, 17th; George G. Brown, 18th; Albert G. McDonald, 19th; Alexander Walker, 20th; George W. Anderson, 21st; Edward Egolf, 22d; Ernst Nathan, 23d; William H. Fleeman, 24th; Peter Van Cott, 25th; Adolph Gubner, New Utrecht; Peter L. Williamson, Flatbush; A. H. W. Van Siclen, New Lots; Jaques J. Stillwell, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk.*

At a meeting of the Board, July 1st, 1878, Thomas A. Gardiner, *County Treasurer*, tendered his resignation, which was accepted.

Subsequently, at a meeting held July 25th, 1878, Mr. Samuel S. Powell was duly appointed *County Treasurer.*

At a meeting of the Board, held December 12, 1878, the Treasurer reported the balances in the Treasury December 1st to be as follows: Tax levy, 1878, estimated expenses for fiscal year ending July 31, 1879, \$1,406,886.66; cash received and balances from old accounts, \$167,097.00; payments from August 1st to November 30th, 1878, \$490,860.39; balance of appropriation unexpended December 1st, 1878, \$1,083,123.27.

1879. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Samuel Guthrie, Supervisor-at-Large and *President (ex officio)*; John T. Moran, Esq., 10th Ward, *President pro tem.*; Hon. James Howell, Mayor (*ex officio*); Allen I. Ormsbee, 1st Ward; John Gallagher, 2d; Joseph Quick, 3d; George Russell, 4th; John Cullen, 5th; John B. Byrne, 6th; William J. Rider, 7th; Daniel Lake, 8th; John J. Ladley, 9th; John T. Moran, 10th; James Hyde, 11th; Peter Bennett, 12th; Alden S. Crowell, 13th; Hugh McKeever, 14th; John H. Snyder, 15th; Henry Hanselman, 16th; Hugh Zoble, 17th; Geo. J. Armstrong, 18th; Albert G. McDonald, 19th; Alexander Walker, 20th; George W. Anderson, 21st; Edward Egolf, 22d; Ernst Nathan, 23d; Samuel Van Wyck, 24th; Peter Van Cott, 25th; Charles C. Bennett, New Utrecht; Peter L. Williamson, Flatbush; A. H. W. Van Siclen, New Lots; John Y. McKane, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands. Gilliam Schenck was elected *County Treasurer*, in place of S. S. Powell, deceased, and Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk.*

Annual report of the Treasurer of Kings County for the fiscal year ending with July 31st, 1879:

Balance in Treasury, August 1st, 1878.....	\$80,681 50
Receipts during fiscal year.....	3,152,218 94
	<hr/>
	\$3,232,900 44
Payments during the same period.....	\$3,139,428 62
Balance in treasury, August 1st, 1879.....	93,471 82
	<hr/>
	\$3,232,900 44

1880. SUPERVISORS: Hon. John B. Meyenborg, Supervisor-at-large and (*ex officio*) *President*; Hon. James Howell, Mayor (*ex officio*); 1st Ward, Allen I. Ormsbee; 2d, John Gallagher; 3d, Richard Lauer; 4th, George Russell; 5th, John Cullen; 6th, John B. Byrne; 7th, James H. Pratt; 8th, Daniel Lake; 9th, Edward C. Murphy; 10th, John T. Moran; 11th, John H. Doscher; 12th, Peter Bennett; 13th, Geo. W. Light; 14th, Hugh McKeever; 15th, Peter F. Cullinan; 16th, Henry Hanselman; 17th, Stephen Clark; 18th, Geo. J. Armstrong; 19th, Alfred Hodges; 20th, Alexander Walker; 21st, Geo. W. Anderson; 22d, Edward Egolf; 23d, John H. Atwater; 24th, Samuel Van Wyck; 25th, James Fitzgerald; Charles Bennett, New Utrecht; Peter L. Williamson, Flatbush; A. H. W. Van Siclen, New Lots; John Y. McKane, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; George Anderson, *President pro tem.*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk.*; Gilliam Schenck, *Treasurer.*

Annual report of the Treasurer, for the fiscal year ending with July 31st, 1880:

Balance in Treasury, August 1st, 1879.....	\$93,471 82
Receipts for the fiscal year ending July 31, 1880.	3,751,990 69
	<hr/>
	3,845,462 51
Payments during the same period.....	\$3,715,607 98
Balance in the Treasury, August 1, 1880.	129,854 53
	<hr/>
	\$3,845,462 51

1881. SUPERVISORS: Hon. John B. Meyenborg, Supervisor-at-large and (*ex officio*) President; Hon. James Howell, Mayor (*ex officio*); 1st Ward, Allen I. Ormsbee; 2d, John Gallagher; 3d, Richard Lauer; 4th, Joel Smith; 5th, John Cullen; 6th, Edward Toohill; 7th, James H. Pratt; 8th, Daniel Lake; 9th, Edward C. Murphy; 10th, John Lyman; 11th, John H. Doscher; 12th, Peter Bennett; 13th, Geo. W. Light; 14th, John Carroll; 15th, Peter F. Cullinan; 16th, Louis Bossert; 17th, Stephen Clark; 18th, Geo. J. Armstrong; 19th, Alfred Hodges; 20th, Lewis A. Myers; 21st, Geo. W. Anderson; 22d, Theodore H. Babcock; 23d, John H. Atwater; 24th, John E. Greany; 25th, James Fitzgerald; Cornelius Ferguson, New Utrecht; Peter L. Williamson, Flatbush; C. Washington Colyer, New Lots; John Y. McKane, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands; George W. Anderson, *President pro tem*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Gilliam Schenck, *Treasurer*.

1882. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Wm. A. Fritz, Supervisor-at-large and (*ex officio*) President; Hon. Seth Low, Mayor (*ex officio*); 1st Ward, Theodore B. Willis; 2d, John Gallagher; 3d, Thomas W. Wood; 4th, Joel Smith; 5th, John Cullen; 6th, Edward Toohill; 7th, John A. Egolf; 8th, Daniel Lake; 9th, Thomas F. McDonald; 10th, John Lyman; 11th, Thomas Harold, Jr.; 12th, Peter Bennett; 13th, Robert Adamson; 14th, John Carroll; 15th, John H. Westervelt; 16th, Louis Bossert; 17th, George Rowland; 18th, Geo. J. Armstrong; 19th, Alfred Hodges; 20th, Lewis A. Myers; 21st, Lester

W. Beasley; 22d, Theodore H. Babcock; 23d, John H. Atwater; 24th, John E. Greany; 25th, J. Worden Gedney; Cornelius Ferguson, New Utrecht; Peter L. Williamson, Flatbush; C. Washington Colyer, New Lots; John Y. McKane, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, *President pro tem*, Flatlands; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*; Gilliam Schenck, *Treasurer*.

1883. SUPERVISORS: Hon. Wm. A. Fritz, Supervisor-at-large and (*ex officio*) President; Hon. Seth Low, Mayor (*ex officio*); 1st Ward, Theodore B. Willis; 2d, Neil F. Dougherty; 3d, Thomas W. Wood; 4th, Edward J. Thomas; 5th, John Cullen; 6th; Henry O. Collard; 7th, John A. Egolf; 8th, Daniel Lake; 9th, Thomas F. McDonald; 10th, John Lyman; 11th, Thomas Harold, Jr.; 12th, Peter Bennett; 13th, Robert Adamson; 14th, Hugh Rehill; 15th, John H. Westervelt; 16th, Theodore Maurer; 17th, George Rowland, *deceased*, and Timothy Y. Lockwood; 18th, Geo. J. Armstrong; 19th, Jacob Bennett; 20th, Lewis A. Myers; 21st, Lester W. Beasley; 22d, Frank C. Chamberlain; 23d, John Atwater; 24th, John E. Greany; 25th, J. Worden Gedney; Cornelius Ferguson, New Utrecht; Peter Pigott, Flatbush; Ditmas Jewell, New Lots; John Y. McKane, Gravesend; John L. Ryder, Flatlands. Hon. John Y. McKane, *President pro tem*; Edward B. Cadley, *Clerk*.

ASSISTANT CLERKS OF THE BOARD. 1867-1874, James L. Connelly, Messenger; 1874, James L. Connelly, Clerk's Assistant and Messenger; 1875, James L. Connelly and Robert Nelson, Clerks; 1876-1883, James L. Connelly and Jaques S. Stryker, Clerks.

Representatives in Congress of the U. S.—The House of Representatives is composed of members elected by districts from each State, for the term of two years. The number varies with each federal census; as soon as practicable after each census, the State is divided by the Legislature into Congressional Districts for the election of Representatives in Congress. The Constitution of the United States directs an actual enumeration of inhabitants to be made every ten years, which has been fixed at those ending with a cipher (Art. 1, Sec. 3). The Constitution of the State of New York directs a similar census to be taken at the same intervals, but midway between the former (Art. 3, Sec. 4).

The State of New York entered the Union by adopting the Constitution of the United States, July 26, 1788, and the first Congress under the Constitution assembled at Federal Hall, in the City of New York, March 4, 1789. There was no member of Congress elected from Kings County until the 8th Congress, which assembled in March, 1803. The Representative to this Congress was from Brooklyn, then in the 2d Congressional district.

	District.	Congress.	Years.
Joshua Sands.....	2d	8th	1803-1805
John Lefferts.....	1st	13th	1813-1815
Henry Crocheron.....	1st	14th	1815-1817
Jeromus Johnson.....	3d	19th	1825-1827
Joshua Sands.....	2d	19th	1825-1827
Jeromus Johnson.....	3d	20th	1827-1829
John T. Bergen.....	2d	22d	1831-1833
Abraham Vanderveer....	2d	25th	1837-1839
Henry C. Murphy.....	2d	28th	1843-1845

	District.	Congress.	Years.
Henry C. Murphy.....	2d	30th	1847-1849
David A. Bokee.....	2d	31st	1849-1851
Thomas W. Cummins....	2d	33d	1853-1855
James S. T. Stranahan....	2d	34th	1855-1857
George Taylor.....	2d	35th	1857-1859
James Humphry.....	2d	36th	1859-1861
M. F. Odell.....	2d	37th	1861-1863
Moses F. Odell.....	3d	38th	1863-1865
Martin Kalbfleisch.....	2d	38th	1863-1865
James Humphry.....	3d	39th	1865-1867
Demas Barnes.....	2d	40th	1867-1869
Wm. E. Robinson.....	3d	40th	1867-1869
Henry W. Slocum.....	3d	41st	1869-1871
John G. Schumaker.....	2d	41st	1869-1871
Henry W. Slocum.....	3d	42d	1871-1873
Thomas Kinsella.....	2d	42d	1871-1873
Philip S. Croke.....	4th	43d	1873-1875
John G. Schumaker.....	2d	43d	1873-1875
A. M. Bliss.....	4th	43th	1875-1877
John G. Schumaker.....	2d	44th	1875-1877
Simeon B. Chittenden....	3d	44th	1875-1877
Simeon B. Chittenden....	3d	45th	1877-1879
Archibald M. Bliss.....	4th	45th	1877-1879
Wm. D. Veeder.....	2d	45th	1877-1879
Daniel O'Reilly.....	2d	46th	1879-1881
Simeon B. Chittenden....	3d	46th	1879-1881
Archibald M. Bliss.....	4th	46th	1879-1881
William E. Robinson....	2d	47th	1881-1883
J. Hyatt Smith.....	3d	47th	1881-1883
Archibald M. Bliss.....	4th	47th	1881-1883
William E. Robinson....	2d	48th	1883-1885
Darwin R. James.....	3d	48th	1883-1885
Felix Campbell.....	4th	48th	1883-1885



J. H. Campbell

HON. FELIX CAMPBELL was born in Brooklyn, February 28th, 1829. He is of Scotch-Irish extraction, his father having been John Campbell and his mother Jane Corr. He attended the common schools of the day until he was twelve years of age, when he entered the *Brooklyn Eagle* office to learn the printer's trade. There he remained two years, when, under the inducement of an increase of wages from \$1.50 to \$2.50 per week, he entered the service of the old time printer, Mr. C. Alvord, at the corner of John and Dutch Streets, New York. Three years later, he connected himself with the House of Walworth, Nason & Guild at No. 79 John Street, New York, to learn the mysteries of engineering and steam-heating. After his term of apprenticeship, he worked at the bench and lathe for nearly two years, and was then made foreman in recognition of his skill as a workman and his devotion to the interests of his employers.

Ten years Mr. Campbell was thus employed; then he engaged in business for himself, in the store in which he had learned his trade, and is still carrying on the business at the same place. The development of this branch of trade and industry is remarkable. At the date of the beginning of Mr. Campbell's apprenticeship, the establishment with which he connected himself was the only one of the kind in New York. They are now so numerous as to render them impossible of enumeration. But Mr. Campbell, though one of the pioneers in the business, has always kept ahead rather than abreast of the times, and has continuously led the van in the march of improvement. Lighting, heating, and ventilation, as applied to architecture, must be regarded as the three most important factors in securing health, comfort and convenience. To these objects, Mr. Campbell has devoted the well-directed and systematic study of years, and he is justly credited with being especially well informed in all matters of art and architecture. Apropos of this genius for sanitary engineering, *Watson's Art Journal*, speaking of Mr. Campbell's appointment as a member of the New York State Advisory Board of the Centennial Commission, in 1876, said :

"Hon. Felix Campbell, the commissioner from Brooklyn, is the only member of the State Board who has any practical knowledge of a kind to be used in preparing the designs and specifications for a building, to be paid for by, and intended to represent worthily, the great State of New York. * *

* * He has for many years been a member of the Brooklyn Board of Education, and Chairman of the important committee on lighting, warming and ventilation. * * Mr. Campbell made a visit to the Vienna Exposition for the purpose of perfecting his knowledge in these Departments of Architecture, in the interests of education. He has erected a large, sensible and commodious residence at 1315 Pacific street, Brooklyn, which is lighted, warmed and ventilated more perfectly and scientifically than any other building, public or private, we have ever seen ; and the immense school edifices in which his plans have been adopted, are models and examples of what such buildings should be, where thousands of teachers and children are assembled daily throughout the year. There is not a school building in New York that can compare in these respects. The Clerk of the Assembly, Hon. Hiram Calkins, to whom was delegated the duty of improving the ventilation of the Senate and Assembly Chambers of the old Capitol, has found in Mr. Campbell's plans the most effective remedy possible to be applied to improve these pest holes, where mephitic air and carbonic acid gas hold high revel with the skull and marrow bones of Death, when the Legislature is in session. Mr. Campbell has also been invited to look after the lighting, warming, and ventilation of the new Capitol Building at Albany. He has a plan which he proposes to carry out at his own expense, for the lighting, warming and ventilating of our State Centennial Building, designed to illustrate the advance of our knowledge on these important subjects involving the health, comfort, convenience and life of every man, woman and child, in every civilized community under the sun. Among the illustrations he proposes to give, is one perfectly carried out in his own residence, which will be duly appreciated by all anti-tobacco smokers and by the smokers of the filthy weed themselves. This is the preparation of a smoking-room, where gentlemen may use the weed to any extent, while the

escaping smoke is constantly passed out from the room, leaving the air comparatively pure and unincumbered with the fumes and dead smoke so disagreeable and poisonous to the lungs."

The facts set forth in the above extract fully attest Mr. Campbell's eminence as a sanitary engineer. The increasing magnitude of his very extensive business is sufficient evidence of his ability as a man of affairs.

It will be seen that Mr. Campbell is conspicuous among the self-made men of the city and country. He literally made his own way in the world, during a number of years, when boys of his own age more fortunately situated were in school and in pleasant homes, without toil and without care. His career has been that of the man whose honest and persistent endeavor has won its legitimate reward. With the struggling poor his sympathies have always been strong, and the amelioration of their condition as a class, their material advancement, and their general education have long been his most ardent wishes. Everywhere in Brooklyn he is known as the workingman's friend. He knows the trials and troubles incident to the life of the man who earns his bread by the sweat of his brow, and has shown by his own exertions what an American boy can accomplish. He has been in every sense a Brooklyn boy and man. All that he cherishes and holds dear is among the people of his native city. His views in regard to the relations of labor and capital are that they are and must be reciprocal—progress to either is impossible without the aid of the other, and they must necessarily go hand in hand, the causes for any antagonism between them being imaginary or artificial rather than real. For years he has been a large employer of labor, and his experience has not been without its lesson to him of the mutual duties and interests of employers and employed. Since the day he began business, every one of his hundreds of employes has received his salary weekly, without fail. Monopolies of all kinds have long had in Mr. Campbell a stern and unyielding foe. Upon questions of finance and mercantile affairs he is so thoroughly informed that he is regarded as a valuable counsellor in legislation or national questions. His financial position is such as to place him beyond the influence of pecuniary considerations in connection with political affairs, and his character for strict integrity is unimpeachable. His social position is excellent, and he is always prominent in good works, and liberal in his subscriptions to all deserving charities.

In 1856 and 1857, Mr. Campbell was Supervisor of the Eleventh Ward, Brooklyn, and though the youngest member, was chosen President of the Board at its second yearly meeting. He also served a full term as member of the old Volunteer Fire Department, and was for thirteen years President of the Board of Trustees of the Widows' and Orphans' Fund Association, connected therewith. He is a director of and large stockholder in the Mechanics' Insurance Co., Brooklyn, and was one of its incorporators ; is also a director of the Brooklyn Life Insurance Co., and connected with the American District Telegraph Co., Brooklyn, of which he was one of the incorporators, and with the Brooklyn Safe Deposit Co. He was also a Fire Commissioner under the old *regime*. His life-long residence in the city has compassed the period of Brooklyn's advancement from that of a village to that of the third city in the United States in point of population, and he is a member of the Society of Old Brooklynites, one condition of admission to which is that the applicant must have been for fifty years a resident of the city.

Another question in which Mr. Campbell takes a profound interest is that of public education. For twelve years he was an influential and untiring member of the Board of Education of the City of Brooklyn. His record in this connection is too well known to require much attention in this sketch. From first to last he labored assiduously and unceasingly for the advancement of the best interests of the public schools, and his achievements concerning the sanitary condition of the various school buildings are referred to in a preceding paragraph. In 1892 Mr. Campbell was nominated as the Democratic candidate for the Forty-eighth Congress in the Fourth District of Brooklyn, comprising the county towns and the Ninth, Fourteenth, Fifteenth, Sixteenth, Seventeenth, Eighteenth and Twenty-fourth Wards. His nomination awakened great enthusiasm among all classes, and was followed by his triumphant election, having received the largest majority ever given in that district. If public approbation of the course of a popular representative assures his advancement to still higher trusts, it is confidently believed that Mr. Campbell's political star is still in the ascendancy.

DARWIN R. JAMES was born at Williamsburg, Mass., May 14, 1834, of parents whose ancestors were among the early settlers of that State, on his father's side, dating back to 1639. In the year 1847 his family removed to Williamsburg, now Brooklyn, E. D., leaving the subject of this sketch at Amherst, Mass., where he was attending a boarding-school, in which he remained for three years, receiving an education to fit him for a business career, in accordance with his father's plans.

At the age of 17 he was clerk in a large wholesale house in New York city, rapidly acquiring a knowledge of mercantile affairs, and advancing in his career, until, at the early age of 23, he formed a co-partnership with his friend, Mr. Mitchell N. Packard, under the firm name of Packard & James.

This business union has proved a highly successful one, the trade of the firm having developed to enormous proportions during the ensuing twenty-six years, reflecting the greatest credit upon the wise and honorable management that has characterized its existence.

It is engaged in the importation of indigo, spices, and other East India goods, and owns a large drug and spice mill in Brooklyn.

Its trade is very widely extended, and for many years it has been the leading house in this line in the United States.

In 1868-9, Mr. James made the tour of the world in the interests of his firm; crossing the continent before the completion of the railroad to the Pacific, he sailed from San Francisco to Japan, carefully studying the social and commercial features of interest in these two great nations.

Thence he visited the Phillipine Islands, Singapore, Penang, etc.

In India he traveled extensively; finally crossing the country to Bombay, he next touched at Aden, then Suez, and passing through Egypt to Alexandria, he pursued his journey, through France and England, homeward, having greatly benefited by this extended tour of observation.

As a business man Mr. James has been very successful; not that he has accumulated much money, for that never was his aim; but, for honorable dealing, integrity, and strict conformance to the unwritten law of equity, few business men in the city stand higher.

But not alone in mercantile life has his career been marked; of an active temperament, imbued with the cardinal virtues of industry and perseverance, few business men have given so much time to outside matters as he.

Possessed of an unusually clear and logical intellect, with broad intelligence, varied sources of knowledge being laid under contribution by him; his views of the great questions of the day, and his influence, have been sought upon many occasions in the public interests.

Of this more anon. Being held in high esteem by his fellow men for his sterling qualities as a citizen, he has been honored by being chosen to fill many important positions of trust.

He has been for several years president of the *East Brooklyn Savings Bank*, the growth and prosperity of which has been remarkable. He was one of the founders of the *Bushwick and East Brooklyn Dispensary*, of which he was president for a number of years. As treasurer of the *Brooklyn Bureau of Charities*, of which he was also a founder, he has the satisfaction of seeing it develop upon a sound working basis.

He was also chosen a member of the executive committee of *The Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor*, also of *The Good Samaritan* charity, and is a member of the advisory and finance committees of *The Brooklyn Industrial*

School Association, one of the city's most practical efforts to teach the children of the poor how to help themselves.

For six years he served as a *Brooklyn Park Commissioner*, and for more than eight years he has been the secretary of the *New York Board of Trade and Transportation*, out of which has grown the *State and National Anti-Monopoly Leagues*. It is a fact of historic importance that Mr. James called the preliminary meetings resulting in the organization of the Kings County Anti-Monopoly League, whose influence has since been strong in the right direction.

For eight years, Mr. James, associated with others, who saw the giant strides of Monopoly as exemplified in the tyranny and injustice of our great railroad corporations, labored at Albany in an effort to have a *Board of Railroad Commissioners* appointed, and at last their patience and perseverance were rewarded in March, 1883, at which date the first Board was organized, and from which great results are confidently anticipated, for the benefit of the people of the State of New York.

He was a member of the committee of "One Hundred" in the years 1872-3, and took part in its efforts for municipal reform, and in the preparation of the existing charter of the city of Brooklyn.

He was a member of a committee appointed by citizens, at a meeting held at the Polytechnic Institute, December 4, 1876, and had charge of the corps of volunteer visitors in the Fourth District during the winters of 1876-7 and 1877-8, whose duty it was to visit families applying to the Commissioners of Charity of Kings County for out-of-door relief. This was one of the first steps taken by the citizens to correct the great abuses in the Department of Charity in Kings County. With a few others, who were a self-constituted committee, he took an active part in the effort which resulted in the breaking up of the system of out-of-door relief.

For fifteen years Mr. James served in the militia of the State of New York, seven years being a private in the Seventh Regiment, and eight years on the staff of the Eleventh Brigade, General J. V. Meserole commanding.

But one of the most successful fields of labor in which he has engaged, is that of the Mission Sunday School work. He has been a practical philanthropist from boyhood, for at the age of eighteen he commenced visiting the poor and needy in the outlying parts of the city, and gathering the children into a Sabbath school, in which noble work he has continued for thirty-one years. For twenty-seven years he has been the superintendent of this Sabbath school—the Throop Avenue Mission—and has had the pleasure, in connection with a band of self-denying teachers, of developing it to its present prosperous condition.

The outgrowth of this work, humble in its inception, has been, thus far, two flourishing churches and four Sabbath schools.

Mr. James' public career has not been that of a politician; but, with that fidelity to known duty, which has always been a distinguishing trait in his character, he has never shrunk from manfully doing what he considers every citizen's duty in primaries and ward meetings; taking that interest in the honest and righteous government of the land which is rightly termed patriotic. His unselfish devotion to the public interest, his wide grasp of thought and range of knowledge, coupled with his irreproachable, unspotted commercial career, did not escape the notice of an observant community, and in 1880 he was urged to be a candidate for Congress, but though appreciating the high honor intended, he declined, because of the stress of his many other duties.

However, in 1882, he was unable longer to resist the call to a higher sphere of duty, and having been unanimously nom-



Darwin R James

inated by acclamation at the Republican Convention in District Number Three, was duly elected by a majority of 2,398 as its Representative to the Forty-eighth Congress, where scope will be given him, not only to represent his constituents ably and faithfully, but to influence legislation in the broader field of a Nation's needs, as questions incidental to every feature of her growth come up for discussion.

Esteemed alike in the mercantile, the philanthropic, and the most refined social circles of these great centres of wealth and intelligence, for his many excellent qualities of mind and heart, Mr. James can look back over a long career of usefulness to his fellow men; while the threshold of the future invites to new fields of toil and conflict, where the duties of a statesman will be required of him in his unselfish service to his country.

Presidential Electors.—Under the Constitution, each State chooses as many Electors of President and Vice-President as it has Senators and Representatives in Congress. These Electors were first appointed within thirty-four days before the first Wednesday of December of every fourth year, and are required to meet on that day, at the State Capitol, as an Electoral College. They elect a President and Secretary from their number, sit with open doors, and record their proceedings in a journal. One Elector is designated in each Congressional District, and two others to represent the State at large. They are, however, all elected upon one general ticket.

The State of New York, at the time of the first presidential election, not having ratified the Constitution, chose no Electors; consequently, the State did not have the honor of casting its vote for George Washington at his first election as President of the United States, although he was inaugurated in its metropolis. In 1792 the New York Legislature directed Electors to be chosen in the same manner as Senators in Congress, and fixed the time of their meeting at Poughkeepsie. Each Senatorial district being entitled to three Electors, except the southern—which included the county of Kings—which was entitled to four. In 1829, the mode of electing Electors by Districts was changed to that now in use; the time of their election is now fixed in all the States, except South Carolina, on the Tuesday after the first Monday of November; in that State the Electors are still appointed by the Legislature, as they formerly were in this State.

From the adoption of the Constitution down to 1812, a period of twenty years, there was no Presidential Elector chosen from the county of Kings, though there were three chosen from the county of Suffolk, four from Queens and one from Richmond counties.

The first Elector chosen from Kings county was Cornelius Bergen, November 9, 1812. The next was John Garrison, chosen November 4, 1828.

Henry Waring, chosen November 6, 1832.

Philip S. Crooke and Electus B. Litchfield, chosen November 2, 1852.

Amos P. Stanton and James Kennedy, chosen 1856.

Edwards W. Fiske, chosen November 6, 1860.

James S. T. Stranahan and George Richards, chosen November 8, 1864.

Isaac Van Anden and George L. Fox, chosen November 3d, 1868.

Simeon B. Chittenden and Horace B. Claffin, chosen November 5, 1872.

Thomas H. Rodman, Edward Rowe and Thomas D. Jones, chosen November 7, 1876.

William H. Beard, Joseph C. Howland and Ditmas Jewell, chosen November, 1880.

Regents of the University.—The office of Regent of the University was first created by an act of the Legislature, passed May 1, 1784, amending the Charter and changing the name of Kings College to Columbia. The citizen members of the Board were named in the act, several officers appointed, *ex-officio*, and each denomination in the State was allowed to appoint one clergyman, but it is not known that any availed themselves of the privilege. The Governor, Lieutenant Governor, Secretary of State, Attorney-General, Speaker of Assembly, Mayor of New York and Mayor of Albany were, and still are, *ex-officio* members of the first Board of Regents, though now the Superintendent of Public Instruction is a member, by virtue of his office.

Matthew Clarkson and Rutger Van Brunt were members of this Board from the County of Kings.

It being found that a quorum could not be assembled, in consequence of the distance of the residence of the respective incumbents, the system was changed November 12th of the same year, and new appointments made, constituting a second Board of Regents. John Vanderbilt was appointed member of this Board. This system continued but little over two years, when, being found inoperative, it gave way to the present one, created April 13, 1787, and has been continued, without material change, until the present time.

The Board consists of nineteen persons, elected by the Legislature, in the same manner as Senators in Congress. They hold their office for life, have no salaries, and among other duties, inspect the Academies of the State, prescribe rules for rendering their returns, apportion the money annually distributed among them, and report to the Legislature the statistical returns of colleges and academies, the power of filling vacancies in the office of presidents of colleges and principals of academies, appoint professors of the Colleges of Physicians and Surgeons, etc., etc.

There appears to have been no Regent of the University appointed from Kings county from 1784 until February 5th, 1861, when J. Carson Brevoort, LL.D., of Brooklyn, was appointed.

County Superintendents of Common Schools. On the 17th of April, 1843, a law, creating the office of County Superintendent of Common Schools, was enacted. It directed the appointment, by the Board

of Supervisors in each county, of two Superintendents, whose term of office was to be three years. Under this law Theodore F. King and Samuel E. Johnson were elected Superintendents of Common Schools for Kings County.

On March 13, 1847, this office was, by an act of the Legislature, abolished. Under the laws of 1856 a bill passed the Legislature, creating the office of School Commissioner, to be elected by ballot, at general elections. The first election under this law took place in November, 1859.

School Commissioners elected in Kings County under this Act.—John Carpenter, Homer L. Bartlett, Frederick C. DeMund, Voorhees Overbaugh, Timothy M. Ingraham, C. Warren Hamilton.

School Commissioners elected in 1876 till 1879.—C. Warren Hamilton, East New York; Thomas W. Field, City Superintendent, Brooklyn.

Commissioners from 1879 to 1883.—

County Treasurers.—This office has existed from the formation of the government down to the present time in all the counties of the State. Before the adoption of the constitution of 1846, County Treasurers were appointed by the Boards of Supervisors in the several counties. Since then they are elected by the people.

The following is a list of the County Treasurers elected since the adoption of the Constitution of 1846:

Ebenezer W. Peck.	Nov., 1848
Crawford C. Smith.	" 1850
James M. Seabury*.	" 1853
Thomas A. Gardiner†.	" 1862
Samuel S. Powell.	" 1877
Gilliam Schenck.	" 1879
Henry H. Adams.	" 1881

HON. JOHN J. KIERNAN, State Senator and Chairman of the New York Senate Insurance Committee, is a native of the district comprising a large portion of Brooklyn and three Kings County towns, which he represents, and in which he was raised and educated. Senator Kiernan entered on the struggle of life as a clerk in the Western Union Telegraph office. He was there when the first successful Atlantic cable began to flash instantaneous intelligence between the hemispheres, and the notion occurred to him to utilize that great medium for financial and commercial purposes. He promptly placed himself in communication with active spirits at all the great European business centres and the principal cities on this continent, and soon opened a news agency in Wall street. From his office there he began forwarding hourly to such bankers, brokers and merchants as he secured as subscribers, news from all over the world calculated to affect trade or monetary affairs. His bright idea met with the development and brought him the prosperity it was worthy of, and "Kiernan's Wall Street Financial News Bureau" is one

of the leading institutions of the city. It was not much of a surprise to "the Street" when, some years afterwards, there appeared in every down-town office and place of business of any importance an automatic telegraph instrument, rolling off on a roll of tape full details of the movements, as they occurred, interesting to the business community. For this extraordinary product of the age the public is indebted to Mr. Kiernan. As an outgrowth of his furnishing financial news for all parts of the world, came the business of newspaper advertising, and he became a member of the firm of Frank, Kiernan & Co., an agency which now transacts a large share of the financial, insurance and general commercial advertising of New York and other cities. In politics he is a Democrat of the most pronounced and orthodox sect, and has spared neither labor nor expense in support of his party in Kings county; but he never occupied any public position before now. In his late Senatorial canvass, Senator Kiernan ran largely ahead of his ticket, receiving 8,316 majority in a total vote of 31,606. Mr. Kiernan was married in 1866, and was left a widower with four children a year ago, by the death of a lady whose pleasant face was well known to everybody interested in works of charity and piety in the City of Churches.

The following extract from the *Brooklyn Daily Eagle* of May 12th, 1883, speaking of the Honorable Senator, is well worthy of reference, indicating, as it does, the sentiments of all good citizens:

"The Senator is one of the most characteristic men sent by Brooklyn to the Legislature in many a day. Nature did not make him to be lost sight of in a crowd. Alert, level-headed, companionable, outspoken, and with no end of courage, even when wrong, he attracts attention as naturally as many other men drop from any eminence they may be set upon into obscurity. He is a man of large means, gained by honorable exertion and wholly by his own efforts; and it is not the least of the things to his credit that his less fortunate neighbors all bear testimony that in his case, at least, money has not changed the manner or spoiled the heart. Made up in this way, it was quite certain, when he took his seat in the Senate, that he would not return with a record which any considerable number of men would agree to either praise or blame in bulk. That he has done several things which the *Eagle* is quite sure he ought not to have done, our readers know; but there is no man who will dream of attributing an improper motive to him. There never was the slightest danger of his going wrong through any sordid influence. His weakness does not lie in that direction. But there was some danger of his erring through good nature, and in that way he has erred. The measures like his bill for the reorganization of the Excise Board, which have made him the subject of considerable adverse criticism, he defends with the utmost frankness on the ground that he is a Democratic partisan, and believes in seizing the patronage for the benefit of his party. Knowing that the Republicans had pursued a similar course when they had the power, he could see no reason why he should not follow their example, on the principle of what is sauce for the goose is sauce for the gander. As the *Eagle* has dealt with this view of the case a good many times heretofore, it is not necessary to enter upon any refutation of it now. What, however, is to be said of Mr. Kiernan as a legislator, local political matters apart, is that he, from first to last, is pre-eminently the representative in the Senate of the business interests of both cities, and of the commerce of the port. He early addressed himself to the work of abolishing our absurd Usury law, of exposing the abuses of the insurance receivership ring, and of guarding our warehouse system against the attacks made upon it by men who, under

* James M. Seabury re-elected each subsequent term.

† Thomas A. Gardiner also re-elected.



John F. Herman

pretense of serving the people, were striking at the public welfare. By his exertions in these respects he has made the two cities and the State his debtors."

What was thus said of Senator Kiernan by the *Eagle*, Brooklyn's leading paper, fitly expresses the high estimation in which he is held by his fellow citizens. This newspaper, though opposing some of the bills advocated by him, thus closed the editorial from which we have made extracts above:

"He comes back to his constituents as clean as when they elected him, and with, upon the whole, an increased title to their confidence."

Registrar.—The office of *Registrar of Deeds* is the oldest in Kings county. The Registrar now has charge of records of deeds, mortgages and all conveyances touching the alienation of real estate; and his is a most important office. When it was first established the Registrar had charge of and recorded all deeds, wills, and inventories of property.

The office was first created in the county of Kings, by the colonial Governor-General, in the month of November, 1679. The first book for recording deeds, wills, etc., was opened December 3d, 1679, a little over two hundred and five years ago.

The first deed of land in the county of Kings was recorded December 3d, 1679. The following is a copy of this venerable record, with the entries made by the Registrar:

"This bill of sale was recorded at the request of Mr. Thomas Barker, the third day of December, 1679."

Know all men by these presents, that I, Floris Willemsen, farmer, inhabitant of Flatbush alias Midwout, in the West Ryding of Yorkshire, on Long Island, doe own and confess for me, my heirs, executors and administrators and assigns, to have alienated, bargained and sold, and set over and delivered unto Thomas Barker, inhabitant of the West Ryding of Yorkshire, on Long Island, to him, his heirs, executors, administrators and assigns, all my housing and land and meadow within the jurisdiction of Flatbush, on the south side of the hill, near to Mr. Richard Betts, his land, with a lot of meadow near the third hill, by Hendrick Strykers Lott of meadow, with all the winter corn that is in the ground, and all orchards, wells, fences, with all privileges and appurtenances thereunto belonging or shall hereafter belong to the said land and meadow; the upland is three score acres of upland. And I doe further engage to bring up and deliver a copy of the said land out of the secretary's office at New York. And I doe own to have received full satisfaction for the said housing and land and premises of the said Barker; and I doe promise and engage to warrant and defend the sale of the premises against any person or persons whatever, except a farr invasion, and for the true performance of this, my act and deed, I have hereunto set my hand and seal.

Was signed

FLORIS WILLEMSSEN KROM. [Seal]

A true copy, per Peter Smith, Clerk.

Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of us,

November the 4th, 1679.

Witness, ELIAS DOUGHTY,

WILLIAM MORRIS.

It will be seen by the foregoing, that Peter Smith, by his signature affixed to the said deed, was then the

acting clerk of the county; but when and by whom appointed there is no record to show.

The first clerk or Registrar of the county, of whose appointment there is any record, was JOHN KNIGHT, appointed March 20th, 1683, by Col. Thomas Dongan, Lieut.-Governor and Vice-Admiral of the colony of New York.

The following is a *verbatim* copy of Mr. Knight's commission as clerk and register:

"COLL. THOMAS DONGAN," Lieut.-Governor and Vice-Admiral under his Royal Highness, Duke of York, and dependensys in America. By virtue of a power devised unto me, I do hereby authorize and appoint you, John Knight, to be clerk and register for Kings county, and to act and officiate in the said employ as a clerk or register ought to do according to law and practice, this commission to be in force during my will and pleasure only.

Given under my hand and seal at Fort James, in New York, this twentieth of March, 1683.

THOMAS DONGAN.

Passed the office,

JOHN SHRAGG,

Secretary.

A true coppie, ex'd
the 5th day of April, 1884,

by JOHN KNIGHT,
Register.

The first will ever recorded in Kings County is a curious document. It is what may be called a *nuncupative* or an unwritten will, made verbally to two witnesses, and afterwards reduced to writing, subscribed and sworn to, and then recorded the same as though duly probated. There were no Surrogates or Judges of Probate, at this time, nor any commissioners of deeds; and wills, deeds, mortgages and all conveyances that now require recording, were (at the request of two respectable citizens known to the clerk) placed on record in one book.

The will to which we have alluded is dated April 10, 1685, and is in these words:

"No all men by these presents, that we underwritten, Jan. Tennesse and Pieter Hendricks, carpenters, do certify and declare, upon ye request of Mistress Hendrickse Stockells, widdow of Mister Michael Hainelle, deceased, that the said Hainelle, at the time that we, deponents, were building ye wind mill within ye jurisdiction of Brewklin, for the above said Mister Heinelle, that the said Mister Heinelle then being sickly and lying before ye fire, in his house, but by his full understanding, for so much we could see, did desire and recommend us underwritten that in case he came to depart from this world and go to a better, that we should be helpful to his widdow, and to give her encouragement for building and finishing ye said wind-mill; and further, that it was his will that after his death which he did expect soon, his widdow should be possessor and remaine in possession of ye whole estate until remarriage, and that his widdow before the performing of an other marriage, if she did contract thereof, should part with ye half of ye whole estate for ye use and behoof of ye children, and the said Mister Heinelle did decease but five days after that time, all of which we declare to be the truth, and willing to take oath upon this our deposition also past at Flackland this 2d day of March, 1685.

Tester,

RANDOLPH EVANS,

JAN AERTSAN.

Signed,

JAN TENNISSE,

PIETER HENDRICKS.

Pfacklands, in Kings county, the 2d day of March, 1684, came Jan Tennesse and Pieter Hendricks and made oath that the within affidavit is true before us.

Received for record
this 8th day of April, 1685.
John Knight, Cl'k.

The following curious document was recorded April 4, 1689; and is very important as exhibiting old landmarks and boundary lines:

"To satisfy whom it may concern, that I being with Mister Jacobus Coertland about the twentyeth day of November, 1684, Employed by brewkland and flatbush to view and run out ye line between ye two townes to the South of ye hills ffound that ye line run fformerly by Cap't. Jacques Cortel-you and Mister Stillwell is right and just which we both being agreed give in our approbation of ye same.

"Staaten Island in the
County of Richmond,
the 4th day of Aprill, 1689.

ELBERT ELBERTSON,
ROLLOFF MARTENSE.

PHILIP WELLS,
Surveyor.

"Recorded by order of summe of the inhabitants of Brewcklyn." (See page 216.—EDITOR.)

An old mortgage recorded August 7, 1686, begins as follows:

"To all Christian People to whom this present writing shall come, Pieter Giliemsen, of Flatbush, in Kings County, and Margaritiem, his wife, send Greeting in our Lord God Everlasting. Know ye that for and in consideration of the sum of one hundred and eighteen pounds, twelve shillings current money, to them in hand paid by Maria Van Renssilar, of ye town of Albany, widow, &c., have sold, bargained," &c., &c.

The description of the lands mortgaged is then given, and the mortgage closes in these words:

"In witness whereof the said Pieter Giliemsen and Margaritiem, his wife, have hereunto set their hands and seals at New York the first day of January, in the second year of the reign of our sovereign, Lord James the Second of England, Scotland, ffrance and Ireland, King, defender of the faith, &c., and in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred eighty and five six."

This mortgage was dated July 20, 1686, and recorded August 7, 1686. We have given the first mortgage which was recorded in Kings County; the following is the first appraisement of property of a decedent recorded in the county.

"An appraisement of the estate of John Smith, deceased, lying in and about Bedford within the jurisdiction of the towne of Brewklin appraised by us underwrit in obedience of the order of the most worshipful Court of Sessions, bearing date, the 7th day of October, 1684.

Imprimis.—Forty acres of upland, two lott of meadow, a house lott, with a house there-upon all valued at. £70
A mare with saddle and Piecterm. 4
The clothes, according to inventory. 8
The bedding, according to inventory. 25
One Walts. 4
Wooden Ware, according to inventory. 2
Tools and Iron work, according to inventory. 12-13-0
Brass and Couper, according to inventory. 7
The pewter, according to inventory. 3
Tin wares and others, according to inventory. 3-3-0

In all. £145-0-0

Also appraised by us under written by order as above mentioned at ye house of Mister Smith, deceased, the twenty-seventh day of March, 1685, in Bedford, in the jurisdiction of Brewklin within the Kings County.

THOMAS LAMBERTSE,
the mark x of JAN GERRITS,
the mark x of JOHN DAMEN,
TENNIS JANSEN,
DANIEL RAPALIE.

In presence of Jacob Vander Warter, Clerk. Recorded by order of the Court of Sessions, dated the 7th day of April, 1685, by me.
JOHN KNIGHT, Cl."

John Knight (appointed by the Governor-General of the colony, to hold the office during the pleasure of that magnate) held the office of Register until the 11th of April, 1687, when he was removed, and Samuel Bayard, of the city of New York, was appointed in his place. Mr. Bayard never discharged the duties of the office, but held it as a sinecure, the Governor-General having made it very lucrative. He appointed JACOBUS VANDER WATER his deputy, who discharged all the duties of the office until 1704, a period of seventeen years.

An Old-Time County Clerk's Commission.—The following is the commission of Mr. Bayard, constituting him clerk of Kings county:

"THOMAS DONGAN, Capt. Generall Governr in Chieffe, &c., and General in and over the province of New York and territory and dependencies there-on in America under his Majesty James the Second by the grace of God of England Scotland ffrance and Ireland, King, defender of the faith, &c. By virtue of the authority derived unto me I do hereby authorize empower and appoint you Samuel Bayard of the city of New York, gentleman, to be Clerk and Register for Kings County giving you full power and authoritie to act and officiate therein as clerk or Register therein ought to do. And this commission to continue during my will and pleasure only.

"Given under my hand and seal with the great seal of the Province at Fort James in New York the 11th day of April, 1687, in the third year of his Majestie's reign by command of his excellancy

THOMAS DONGAN.

Recorded by Jacobus Vander Warter, Deputie Clerk and Register ffor the Kings County the 30th day of June, 1687."

We have now given the original history and manner of conducting the office of the Clerk of the county of Kings, an office in which the whole real and much of the personal property of the county, with all the vast alienations of lands by way of mortgage or deed absolute, are recorded; the archives of the title of every landholder and grantor in the county from the origin of titles.

County Registrars.—In another place, in the history of county officers, we have given a list of the *Clerks of the County*, from John Knight, appointed, as we have seen, in 1684, down to the last clerk elected to that office in the county. But that does not contain a list of the *Registrars* of said county, from the fact that down to 1852 the Clerks of the county were, as they had been from the first, the custodians of all the records now in the custody of the registers.

On March 22, 1852, an act was passed by the legislature providing for the election of a Register of Deeds for the county of Kings. The act provides that this officer shall be elected at the general election to be held in the county in November, 1852, his election to be the same as all other county officers; his term of office was fixed by the said act for three years from the first day of January following his election, and until his successor should be duly qualified. Before entering upon the duties of his office, he must give security by filing in the office of the County Clerk his bond in the penal sum of \$5,000, executed by himself, with at least two sureties, freeholders in said county, and shall justify in double the penalty. The Register may appoint a deputy, in like manner as the deputies of county clerks are appointed, with the like powers, duties and responsibilities. The Register performs all that part of the duty of County Clerk of the county of Kings which, in the city of New York is required to be done by the Register of Deeds in said city and county of New York; and the County Clerk of Kings county is forbidden to discharge any of the duties of the Register. His fee is fixed by law. For every paper required to be recorded he shall receive the sum of six cents for every hundred words, and no more. This act took effect July 1, 1852.

At the general election held in November, 1852, WILLIAM MARSHALL was elected, under the provisions of the act, Register of Deeds for the county. Mr. Marshall entered upon the duties of his office January 1, 1853, and all the records of deeds, mortgages and other instruments touching the alienation and purchase of lands heretofore kept in the office of the Clerk were removed to the office of the Register. The Clerk of Kings county is now, as he was previous to the said enactment, the Clerk of the various courts of record of the county, excepting the City Court of Brooklyn and the Surrogate's Court; he is therefore the custodian of all judgments, decrees, *Lis pendens*, and finally of all legal papers and documents required by the statutes, the rules, orders and practice of the said courts, to be entered and filed in his office.

As we have seen, William Marshall was the first register elected in Kings county, serving from January 1, 1853, to December 31, 1855. His successors were: JACOB MESEROLE, elected November, 1855, serving for the years 1856-7-8; HOWARD C. CADY, 1859-60-61; HUGH McLAUGHLIN, 1862-1867 (two terms); CHARLES SCHURIG, from 1868 to 1870; HUGH McLAUGHLIN, from 1871 to 1873; WILLIAM BARRE, from 1874 to 1879 (two terms); THOMAS CARROLL, from 1880 to 1882; SAMUEL RICHARDS, from 1883 to 1885.

Commissioner of Jurors.—Previous to the year 1858, the duty of selecting and summoning jurors for the grand and petit juries was performed in the county of Kings, as it now is in most of the counties of the state, by the County Judge and the Clerk of the county; but, by an act of the legislature, passed April 17, 1858,

the duty of selecting and summoning juries was given to one person to be appointed by a board, which, by the provisions of said act, were to consist of the County Judge, the District Attorney, the Sheriff, the Surrogate and the Justices of the Court of Sessions. The person so appointed was to be known as the *Commissioner of Jurors* of the county of Kings. The first meeting of the said appointing board was held, according to the law, on the second Monday of May next succeeding the passage of this act. The clerk of the Board of Supervisors is required by said act to attend the meetings of the said board, and act as clerk thereof, and keep a record of the proceedings. The act makes it the duty of the assessors of the city of Brooklyn, and of the assessors of the several towns in the county, after the first day of May in each year, to select and return to the Commissioner of Jurors so appointed, the names and places of residence and occupation of all persons in the said city and towns respectively, liable under said act to do jury duty. Such returns shall be made in writing, subscribed by the assessors of such city and towns, and shall be delivered to the Commissioner of Jurors on or before the first day of July of the same year. The Commissioner shall also, at the same time, proceed to select from the names of persons residing in the county of Kings suitable persons to serve as jurors; in making such selection the said assessors and the said Commissioner shall take the names of such as are, first, male inhabitants of the county, not exempt by this act from serving on juries; second, of the age of twenty-one years or upwards and under sixty years old; third, in possession of their natural faculties, and not infirm or decrepit; fourth, free from all legal exceptions, of fair character, of approved integrity, of sound judgment, and well informed.

The first Commissioner of Jurors was WM. H. CAMPBELL, appointed May 2, 1858; he was succeeded by ALDEN J. SPOONER, who was appointed May, 1862, and who served three years; his successor was NELSON SHURMAN, who served from May 5, 1865, to May, 1871; and he was followed by JOHN LINSKY, May, 1871, and by reappointment serving till 1877; WM. A. FURY was his successor, appointed May, 1877, and serving one term, and who was reappointed and is the incumbent of this office at the present time.

By an act of the legislature, passed April 26, 1866, the act creating the office of Commissioner of Jurors, passed April 17, 1858, was amended so that the appointment of such a commissioner was vested in a board consisting of the Sheriff, County Judge, District Attorney and Judge of the City Court of Brooklyn. The act subjects the Commissioner of Jurors to very severe punishment for any malfeasance in the discharge of his duties, and works a radical change in the former practice of drawing jurors, making the office of commissioner one of the most important and delicate of any in the county.

County Auditor.—The County Auditor is a new officer in the county of Kings. It was established by an act of the legislature, passed April 26, 1871, and it was created for the purpose of relieving the Board of Supervisors of one of its most difficult and onerous duties—that of auditing the immense number of bills annually presented to the board. The act creating the office makes it the duty of the County Auditor to carefully examine all bills presented against the county of Kings for payment, including all bills incurred by the Commissioners of Charities, and to certify to the Board of Supervisors the result of this examination, stating whether sufficient money is in the treasury of the said county to the credit of the account to which such bills are chargeable; also, whether such bills have been incurred under the authority of law; also, whether the services have been rendered, or materials furnished, for which such bills had been presented, and whether the charges are just, reasonable and proper; and if, by a majority of all said supervisors elected, and the approval of the Supervisor-at-Large, the said bill shall be approved, they shall be paid by the proper officers of the said county.

Down to the present writing, there have been only three incumbents of this office, viz.: MAURICE FITZGERALD, FRANCIS A. BIGGS, and DANIEL LAKE. Mr. Lake is the present incumbent of the office. The salary of the auditor is fixed at \$3,000 per annum.

County Interpreter in the Courts of Kings County.—By an act of the legislature, passed May 2, 1864, the Board of Supervisors of the County of Kings were authorized and empowered to designate and appoint some suitable person, making it his duty to attend the courts of record in said county, in which witnesses are sworn and testify, to interpret all testimony or evidence given by witnesses who cannot speak intelligibly the English language. The salary of said officer is fixed at the sum of \$1,200 per annum. He is to hold his office during good behavior. CHRISTIAN VOLKMAN was the first interpreter appointed under this act, receiving his appointment May 17, 1864. By a subsequent act of the legislature three interpreters were provided for the county of Kings—one for the County Court, Court of Sessions and Surrogate's Court; one for the Supreme Court of the second judicial district and the City Court of Brooklyn; one for the Italian, French and Spanish languages, to serve as interpreter of these languages in all courts in the county. Under this last act ADOLPH GUBNER was appointed interpreter for the County Court, Court of Sessions and Surrogate's Court; JOHN SMITH, for the Supreme Court and City Court of Brooklyn; and LORENZO CRISCOLA as interpreter of the

Italian, French and Spanish languages. These gentlemen are, at this writing, serving as such interpreters. Their salaries are \$1,200 each per annum.

Supervisor-at-Large.—On the 4th of March, 1871, an act passed the legislature of the state creating the office of "Supervisor-at-Large," an elective office by the people. He has the power of a casting vote, but no power to present any motion or resolution, or to take any part other than as presiding officer of said board, excepting the power of a casting vote. He holds his office for the term of two years, from the first day of January of 1872, with a salary of \$3,000—a county charge. "Every act in the proceedings of the said board shall be submitted to the said officer within five days after its passage; to take effect after ten days after its submission, if he shall not object thereto, or sooner, upon his approval of the same, but shall in no case take effect if he shall file objections thereto in writing, with the reasons therefor, with the clerk of the said board, within said ten days, unless the said board shall, within thirty days after the filing of such objections, by a vote of at least two-thirds of the members of said board, again pass the same, notwithstanding such objections." The said act provides that "the said Board of Supervisors shall, from time to time, elect a president *pro tem.* from its own members, whose term of office shall expire at the same time as that of the Supervisor-at-Large then in office, unless the term for which such president *pro tem.* was elected as a member of such board shall sooner expire. The said officer shall have and possess the same powers as the Supervisor-at-Large in case of his sickness, absence from the county, or inability to attend the duties of his office." We have now given the various duties and powers of the Superintendents of the Poor and of the two boards which succeeded them.

Thus closes the history of the BOARD OF SUPERVISORS of the county of Kings. In another portion of the work (page 463) will be found the history of the *Superintendents of the Poor*; their successors, the *Commissioners of Charities*; and their successors, the *Commissioners of Charities and Corrections* for the county of Kings—these respective bodies having always been under the supervision of the Board of Supervisors.

In connection with this chapter upon the Board of County Supervisors, we sincerely acknowledge our indebtedness to the lively interest and courtesy manifested in our work by EDWARD B. CADLEY, Esq., the gentlemanly and able Clerk of the board, as well as by Messrs. James L. Connelly and Jaques S. Stryker, *Assistant Clerks*, and James Doyle, *Messenger* of the department.

CIVIL LIST

OF

OFFICERS OF THE TOWN AND VILLAGE OF BROOKLYN.

1671-1833.

TRUSTEES AND OVERSEERS.

- 1671-'74 (inclusive)—Frederick Lubertse, Pieter Perniedeau.
 1675—John Piertersen, Mackhike Jerome De Rapostelley.
 1676-'78 (inclusive)—Tunis Guis Bergen, Thomas Lambertsen.
 1679—John Harrill, Martyn Reyandsen.
 1680-'82 (inclusive)—Symon Aeresen, Michael Harsen.
 1683—John Aeresen, Daniel Rapellje.

TRUSTEES AND COMMISSIONERS.

- 1684—Thomas Lambertsen, Randolph Emans, John Aeresen.
 1685—Tunis Guis Bergen, Daniel Rapelje.
 1686—Michael Hansen, Jeromus Rapalje.
 1687—Adriaen Bennet, Thomas Lambertsen, Jan Geritsen Dorland.
 1688-'89—Simeon Aeresen, Claes Barensen, Michael Hansen.
 1689—Simeon Aeresen, Machael Hansen, Claes Barensen.
 1690-'98 (inclusive)—Joris Hansen, Hendrick Claasen, Jan Gerbritse.
 1699—Benj. Vandewater, Joris Hansen, Jan Garretse Dorland.
 1700-1702 (inclusive)—Hendrick Vechte, Jacob Hansen, Cornelius Vanduyk.

TRUSTEES.

- 1703-1708 (inclusive)—Hendrick Vechte, Jacob Hansen, Cornelius Vanduyk.
 1709-'26 (inclusive)—Hendrick Vechte, Cornelius Vanduyk, John Slatts.
 1727-'52 (inclusive)—Jeromus Rapelye, Jacobus Leffertse, Rem Remsen.
 1753-'55 (inclusive)—Jacobus Leffertse, Peter Vandervoort, Jacob Remsen, Rem Remsen, Nicholas Vechte.

- 1756-'66 (inclusive)—Rem Remsen, Leffert Leffertse, Jeromus Rapelye.
 1767 and '68—Jeromus Rapelye, Rem Remsen, Leffert Leffertse.
 1769—Leffert Leffertse, Rem Remsen, Jeromus Rapelye.
 1770 and '71—Rem Remsen, Leffert Leffertse, Jeromus Rapelye.
 1772—Rem Remsen, Jeromus Rapelye, Leffert Leffertse.
 1773-'75 (inclusive)—Jeromus Rapelye, Leffert Leffertse, Rem Remsen.
 1776—Rem Remsen, Leffert Leffertse, Jeromus Rapelye.

(No records during the Revolutionary War.)

- 1784-'87 (inclusive)—Fernandus Suydam, Teunis Bergen, Charles Doughty.
 1788 and '89—Fernandus Suydam, Charles Doughty, Peter Vandervoort.
 1790—Charles Doughty, Peter Vandervoort, Fernandus Suydam.
 1791—Peter Vandervoort, Fernandus Suydam, Charles Doughty.
 1792-'95 (inclusive)—Joshua Sands, Fernandus Suydam, Peter Vandervoort.
 1796—Lambert Suydam, Peter Vandervoort, Jeremiah Johnson.
 1797—Peter Vandervoort, Jeremiah Johnson, Lambert Suydam.
 1798—Lambert Suydam, Peter Vandervoort, Jeremiah Johnson.
 1799—Theodorus Polhemus, Lambert Suydam, Jeremiah Johnson.
 1800—Lambert Suydam, Theodorus Polhemus, Jeremiah Johnson.
 1801—Lambert Suydam, Jeremiah Johnson, Theodorus Polhemus.
 1802—Theodorus Polhemus, Lambert Suydam, Jeremiah Johnson.
 1803—Lambert Suydam, Theodorus Polhemus, Jeremiah Johnson.

1804—Walter Berry, Theodorus Polhemus, Jeremiah Johnson.	1810—Jeremiah Johnson, Theodorus Polhemus, David Seaman.
1805—Theodorus Polhemus, Walter Berry, Jeremiah Johnson.	1811 and 1812—Theodorus Polhemus, Jeremiah Johnson, David Seaman.
1806-1808 (inclusive)—Walter Berry, Theodorus Polhemus, Jeremiah Johnson.	1813—Jeremiah Johnson, Theodorus Polhemus, John Cornell.
1809—Walter Berry, Jeremiah Johnson, Theodorus Polhemus.	1814 and '15—Theodore Polhemus, John Cornell, Jeremiah Johnson.

PRESIDENTS AND TRUSTEES OF THE VILLAGE, 1816-1834.

1816— <i>John Garrison</i> ,* Andrew Mercein, John Dean, John Doughty, John Seaman.	Van Nostrand, Richard Wells, David Leavitt, Eliakim Raymond, Wm. Rushmore, James H. Clarke.
1817— <i>Wm. Furman</i> , Henry Stanton, William Henry, Tunis Joralemon, Noah Waterbury.	1828— <i>Joseph Sprague</i> , Henry Waring, Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, John Doughty, Robert Bache, Richard Wells, O. J. Lucas, David Leavitt, Eliakim Raymond, James H. Clarke, John F. Walton.
1818— <i>Wm. Furman</i> , Henry Stanton, Wm. Henry, Tunis Joralemon, Amie J. Barbarin.	1829— <i>Joseph Sprague</i> , Henry Waring, Robert Bache, D. L. Lucas, Losee Van Nostrand, Ralph Malbone, Henry Stanton, James H. Clark, John F. Walton.
1819— <i>Wm. Furman</i> , Henry Stanton, William Henry, Tunis Joralemon, John Doughty.	1830— <i>Joseph Sprague</i> , Robert Bache, Richard V. W. Thorne, Joseph Moser, Losee Van Nostrand, Wm. C. Smith, Francis Van Dyke, Conklin Brush, Henry Waring, James H. Clarke, Samuel Hart.
1820— <i>Wm. Furman</i> , Henry Stanton, William Henry, Tunis Joralemon, John Doughty.	1831— <i>Joseph Sprague</i> , Richard V. W. Thorne, Robert Bache, Losee Van Nostrand, Joseph Moser, Silas Butler, Isaac Moser, Samuel H. Moore, James H. Clarke, Samuel Hart, Francis Van Dyke.
1821— <i>John Doughty</i> , Fanning C. Tucker, Joseph Moser, Tunis Joralemon, Abraham Vanderveer.	1832, <i>Geo. Hall</i> , Zachariah Lewis, David Stanford, Robert Bache, Edward Copland, Losee Van Nostrand, Joseph Moser, Nathan B. Morse, Francis Van Dyke, James H. Clarke, Wm. M. Udall.
1822— <i>John Doughty</i> , Joseph Moser, Fanning C. Tucker, Geo. S. Wise, Jr., Abraham Vanderveer.	1833— <i>Geo. Hall</i> , Zachariah Lewis, David Stanford, Robert Bache, Edward Copland, Losee Van Nostrand, Joseph Moser, Nathan B. Morse, Francis Van Dyke, James H. Clarke, William M. Udall.
1823— <i>John Doughty</i> , Joseph Moser, Fanning C. Tucker, Geo. S. Wise, Jr., Abraham Vanderveer.	
1824— <i>Joshua Sands</i> , John Doughty, Joseph Moser, John Moore, Samuel James.	
1825— <i>Joshua Sands</i> , John Doughty, Joseph Moser, David Anderson, Joseph Sprague.	
1826— <i>Joshua Sands</i> , Fanning C. Tucker, Henry Waring, Jehiel Jagger, Joseph G. Swift, Geo. Hall, James H. Clarke, Clarence D. Sackett, John Garrison, Wm. Rushmore, John Seaman.	
1827— <i>Joseph Sprague</i> , Henry Waring, Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, Jehiel Jagger, John Doughty, Losee	

* Names thus italicized denote the President of the Board.

HISTORY OF EDUCATION

IN

KINGS COUNTY,

1659—1883.

BY *Henry R. Stiles. A.M. M.D.*

FOR MANY YEARS succeeding the settlement of Brooklyn, in 1636, the scattered settlers on the western end of Long Island were dependent upon the embryo city, across the river, for all their civil and religious privileges. This state of things, with all its inconveniences, lasted (as regards civil matters) until the investiture of Breuckelen with municipal powers in 1646, and (as regards ecclesiastical matters), until the erection of a church edifice at Flatbush, in 1654. In the meantime, it cannot be supposed that the peculiar toils, embarrassments, and privations incident to life in a new settlement, afforded the first settlers much opportunity to attend to the education of their children, except such as could be given them at home. In 1659 (possibly in 1653), Flatbush seems to have had a schoolmaster; and in July of the following year (1660), Breuckelen, probably through the influence and exertions of its first minister Selyns, obtained the services of its first school-master, Carel (Charles) de Beauvois. The range of studies pursued in the schools

during the English colonial period which succeeded, education received little or no attention or support from the government. It was the church that was the true foster-mother of education in the early Dutch colonial period.

The following amusing document, an agreement between the town of Flatbush and Johannes Cornelius Van Eekkelen, *accepted* school-master and chorister, is quoted to illustrate the intimate relation between the school and the church at an early period.

“ART. 1.—The school shall begin at 8 o'clock and go out at 11; shall begin again at 1 o'clock and end at 4. The bell shall be rung before the school commences.

“ART. 2.—When the school begins, one of the children shall read the morning prayer, as it stands in the catechism, and close with the prayer before dinner, and in the afternoon the same. The evening school shall begin with the Lord's prayer and close by singing a psalm.

“ART. 3.—He shall instruct the children in the common prayers and the questions and answers of the catechism on Wednesdays and Saturdays, to enable them to say them better on Sunday in the church.

“ART. 4.—He shall be required to keep this school nine months in succession, from September to June, one year with another, and shall always be present himself.

“ART. 5.—He shall be the chorister of the church, keep the church clean, ring the bell three times before the people assemble, and read a chapter of the Bible in the church between the second and third ringing of the bell. After the third ringing he shall read the Ten Commandments and the twelve articles of our faith, and then set the psalm. In the afternoon, after the third ringing of the bell, he shall read a short chapter or one of the psalms of David as the congregation are assembling; afterwards he shall again sing a psalm or hymn.

“ART. 6.—When the minister shall preach at Brooklyn or Utrecht he shall be bound to read twice before the congregation from the book used for the purpose. He shall hear the children recite the questions and answers out of the catechism on Sunday, and instruct them therein.

Carel de Beauvois
Schoolmaster

Facsimile of Signature of Carel de Beauvois, the first School-master of Brooklyn.

of De Beauvois' period was extremely limited; being, in fact, simply confined to reading, writing, and the religious doctrines of the church. Under the encouragement given to schools by bluff old Peter Stuyvesant, the last Dutch governor, their number and quality increased in New Netherland; but,

"ART. 7.—He shall provide a basin of water for the administration of holy baptism, and furnish the minister with the name of the child to be baptised, for which he shall receive twelve stivers in wampum, for every baptism, from the parents or sponsors. He shall furnish bread and wine for the communion at the charge of the church. He shall also serve as messenger for the consistory.

"ART. 8.—He shall give the funeral invitations, dig the grave and toll the bell, and for which he shall receive for persons of fifteen years of age and upwards, twelve guilders, and for persons under fifteen, eight guilders; and if he shall cross the river to New York, he shall have four guilders more.

THE SCHOOL MONEY.

"1st.—He shall receive for a speller or reader, 3 guilders a quarter, and for a winter, 4 guilders, for the day school. In the evening 4 guilders for a speller or reader and 5 guilders for a writer, per quarter.

"2nd.—The residue of his salary shall be 400 guilders in wheat (or wampum value), delivered at Brooklyn Ferry, with the dwelling, pasturage and meadow, appertaining to the school.

"Done and agreed upon in consistory under the inspection of the honorable constable and overseers this 8th day of October, 1683. Signed by Casper Van Zuren and the consistory.

"I agree to the above articles and promise to obey them.

"JOHANNES VAN ECKKELEN."

Teachers of the present day, if required to discharge all these duties, would not regard their positions as sinecures.

When, however, early in the beginning of the seventeenth century, the tide of immigration set toward this shore from the British Islands, education received a new impulse, slight indeed, yet indicative of progress. As the population of New Amsterdam and the surrounding towns became more cosmopolitan, there arose a Babel of languages; English, Welsh, Irish, Scotch and Dutch were spoken; until, in the opinion of Smith, the historian of the colony, the language was "hopelessly corrupt." Even in the New England colonies there was no uniform standard; with scarcely an exception, the schools were illy conducted, and the few competent instructors were secured only by those families whose hereditary wealth enabled them to secure the best advantages for their children. The Dutch, meanwhile, fought vigorously against the inroads which the English language and customs were making upon their own; and, determined to keep at least one sample on hand of the real pure old stock, the consistory of the Dutch Reformed Church of New York, as late as 1755, sent to Holland and imported from thence a genuine Dutch school-master and chorister, John Nicholas Whelp, by name, who served them until his death, eighteen years after. Sad to relate, however (and perhaps it hastened his death even before the close of his career), the English language was introduced into his school as a separate branch of study; and his successor, in 1773, was especially directed to instruct the scholars in the English as well as in the Dutch tongue.

Our Brooklyn ancestors, being removed from immediate contact with New York city—for there were no regular running steam ferry-boats in that day, and no city railroad lines offering commutation to school children—probably did not keep up with the advance of their metropolitan neighbor in educational matters. Things went on in pretty much the same old jog-trot fashion, and the Dutch, pure and undefiled, was spoken by teacher and pupil, and the catechism of the reformed church was held in high esteem.

The Dawn of a Higher Education.—Toward the middle of the seventeenth century, however, even the darkness of these rustic parts, Kings and Queens counties, began to dissipate before the illumining rays of a brighter and better educational dawn. The old newspapers reveal more than can be learned elsewhere of the schools of this period.

1749. July 3. "Notice is hereby given that at New York Ferry, upon Nassau Island, is carefully taught reading, writing, vulgar and decimal arithmetic, the extraction of the square and cube root, navigation, and surveying. French and Spanish taught and translated, and sufficient security given to keep all writing secret, by John Clark, Philomath; where there is likewise boarding for youth."—*N. Y. Post Boy*.

1758. April 17. "Wanted, a person qualified to teach Dutch and English, both reading and writing. Any such person, inclining to keep school, may meet with good encouragement by applying to Philip Nagle and Englebert Lott, at Flatbush. And, also, wanted such another person for the New Lots; but, if this last be well qualified to teach reading and writing only, he may have good encouragement by applying to John Vanderveer and Johannes Lott, living in the aforesaid precinct of Flatbush."—*N. Y. Post Boy*.

1763. March 31. Jacob Sebring, of Red Hook, and Aris Remsen, owner of the old mill at the Wallabout, and John Rapelye, the rich old loyalist, who owned nearly the whole of the fourth and fifth wards of the present city, advertised that they had "hired Punderson Austin, A.B., of Yale College, to teach *Greek* and *Latin* at the Ferry, Brooklyn.

1773. January 4. The Flatbush Grammar School is advertised as kept by John Copp, where Latin and Greek are taught, it being particularly mentioned that "boarders have the advantage of being taught geography in the winter evenings, with many other useful particulars that frequently occur to the teacher."

The orthodox Dutchmen of that town, however, were not to be distanced by any new teacher with his Latin and Greek and the other dimly-hinted-at "useful particulars that frequently occur to the teacher." And, during the following summer, they advertised for "a school-master who is capable of teaching the English and Dutch languages," carefully adding as an "N. B. It will be of advantage to him if he is capable of serving as clerk to the Dutch church."

Schools During the Revolutionary War.—But shortly the revolutionary war broke out, and during its seven years duration, the iron heel of military occupation was held upon New York and Long Island; while the peculiar excitements and exigencies of war times pretty effectually closed the schools and

caused the writing-copy and spelling-book to be exchanged for the more practical exercise of the manual of arms. Of course, the existing schools kept in operation, as well as the exigencies of the times would permit; but there is sufficient evidence to show that, as a rule, the rising generation mostly ran wild during the revolutionary war.

Educational Revival after the Revolutionary War.—When, however, after the evacuation of New York and Long Island by the British forces, the people began to look around them, to revive their former industries, and to provide for those important interests of government, religion, and education, upon which rested the hopes of their new and dearly-purchased liberties, Long Island was certainly not behind any other portion of the State in her attention to the educational wants of the people. At Easthampton, in 1784, was established the Clinton Academy, which was chartered in 1787, being the first institution of the kind incorporated by the regents of the University of the State of New York. Erasmus Hall, at Flatbush, was erected in 1786, its charter bearing the same date as that of the Easthampton Academy; and, in 1791, Union Hall was erected at Jamaica, being the sixth chartered in the State. The first public exhibition of Erasmus Hall, at Flatbush, was held on the 27th of September, 1787; and the scene was graced by the presence of the Governor of the State, several members of the Assembly, and a large concourse of prominent gentlemen of the vicinity. Walter Minto, LL.D., described as “a mathematician who has traveled in Europe,” was then principal; but was soon called to occupy the mathematical chair at Princeton College, where he died in 1791.

In March, 1791, the following advertisement appeared in the newspapers:

“Education—lately established in Brooklyn, an academy in which the Greek and Latin languages, with the higher branches of literature, are taught by Isaac W. Crane; and spelling, reading, and writing elegantly, the English language and grammar, arithmetic, and the art of Book-keeping, by Henry Davis. The healthful situation of the village, its vicinity to New York, the cheap rate of genteel board, and, above all, the sobriety and learning of the teachers, recommend this academy to the public. The moral and mental culture of the pupil is inspected by the Rev. Elijah D. Rattoon and by George Powers, John Van Nostrand, Nehemiah Allen, John Cornell, and John Doughty, Jr., trustees.”

The suggestive allusion to the sobriety of the teachers, although having a curious sound now-a-days, was perhaps not without its influence upon the parents of that day, who might be anxiously seeking a good school to which they could send their children. Mr. HENRY ONDERDONK, Jr., himself an old Long Island teacher, says: “Our teachers were usually from the old country, too fond of strong drink, and kept blue Monday. Some had their bottle hid in their desk, and imbibed at pleas-

ure. Their *forte* was figures, and they were generally better arithmeticians than the New England teachers who superseded them.”

The subject of public instruction continued to be agitated in the public prints and the pulpit; and the attention of the legislature was repeatedly called, by the governor's messages, to the paramount importance of having a regular school system throughout the State. Finally, in 1795, that body passed “an act for the encouragement of schools;” and with it an appropriation of \$50,000 per annum, for five years, “for the purpose of encouraging and maintaining schools in the several cities and towns in this State, in which children of the inhabitants residing in this State shall be instructed in the English language, or be taught English grammar, arithmetic, mathematics, and such other branches of knowledge as are most useful and necessary to complete a good English education.” Public attention, about the same time, was also called, by the operations of the Manumission Society, of which Governor Jay was president, to the propriety of furnishing the blacks with the elements of education, a measure in which, as will be seen, Kings County subsequently took an active part. In 1798, New York city had a Teachers' Association; in 1805 was incorporated the Free School Society of the City of New York; which, owing its origin to the untiring efforts of the Female Association for the Relief of the Poor, ultimately became the Public School Society of the City of New York. In 1805, also, the Common School fund of the State was established.

Early Educational Advantages, and Methods.—Brooklyn and the Kings County towns were, as might be expected, considerably behind their metropolitan neighbor in educational progress; yet it cannot be denied that there was progress. But the schools of that day were far different from what they now are. The circle of knowledge usually taught was confined mostly to the “three R's, Reading, 'Riting, and 'Rithmetic.” Yet, even this had its advantage; for, where the range of studies was so limited, they could hardly be otherwise than well taught and well learned. “The great book of the day,” says Mr. ONDERDONK, “was Dilworth's spelling-book, which kept its ground till after the revolution, when Noah Webster's supplanted it. Dilworth was a teacher at Wopping, England, in 1740, and the author of several school-books. His arithmetic held its ground longer than his spelling-book, but was supplanted by Daboll, after a thirty years' struggle. Reading-books were more varied. After the easy lessons of the spelling-books had been mastered, then came the Psalter, Testament and Bible. In some schools were the Child's Instructor, the Young Gentleman's and Lady's Monitor, etc., then the American Preceptor; and latterly, Murray's Introduction, English Reader and Sequel. When the New England teachers came, elocution was attempted, and the Columbian Orator was used as a text-book. Writ-

ing was well attended to ; and it was a good, legible round hand. The labor of making pens from quills (for steel pens were unknown), was not inconsiderable ; nor had the writing-books been ruled with blue ink as at present. Hence the industrious teacher was at his desk every morning, a half hour or so before the formal opening of the school, to mend and make pens, rule the writing-books with a leaden plummet, and set copies. The art of teaching the English grammar was but little understood in those days. Navigation was taught in the common schools, for many of the young men in those days went to sea ; some as sailors, some as supercargoes ; some studied medicine and established themselves in the West Indies till they had acquired a fortune, when they returned and settled in their native place. Therefore navigation was a favorite study. Surveying, also, was not neglected. Latterly, geography was taught after a fashion, almost without maps. Guthrie and Salmon were text-books ; superseded finally by Morse. In common schools Dwight's geography, by question and answer were used. Some of the books used in the academies before 1800 were Blair's Rhetoric, Stone's Euclid, Martin's Trigonometry, Warden's Mathematics, etc."

But, to return. When, in 1805, the Public School Society of New York was formed and the public school was established in that city, there were those in Brooklyn who were watching the experiment with intelligent and hopeful eyes. When New York's second public school-house was established, in 1811, the watchful villagers, perhaps, took heart to talk up the matter of free education in Brooklyn. And though they met with much opposition, especially from those who feared an increase of taxes, yet they so far succeeded, that, about 1813, they secured the election of three school trustees, viz., Andrew Mercien, John Seaman, and Robert Snow ; to whose patient but preserving labors Brooklyn owes the commencement of her public schools. They gave their services to the work gratuitously, visiting every house in order to examine for themselves the condition of the children and invite the parents ; and although the village paid school taxes for three years, yet, during that time, their endeavors to overcome the opposition to the free education plan was unavailing. Early in 1816, measures were at length adopted, at a public meeting of the villagers, for organizing a public school to be taught on the Lancasterian plan, and the sum of \$2,000 was appropriated for the purpose, payable by a tax on the inhabitants of the district. On the 1st of May, 1816, public notice was given by the trustees (above named), that on the ensuing Monday (6th), a school for District No. 1 would be opened on the lower floor of Mr. Thomas Kirk's printing office, in Adams, near Sands street, which would accommodate from thirty-five to forty children, at \$1.50 per quarter, including everything necessary for instruction ; but no colored children would be admitted until the completion of the new building which it had been resolved to erect. Two days after (on

May 3d), a public meeting was held at Tommy Langdon's at which the three trustees were deposed from office, because they had proposed to divide the tax in such a way that it should be paid in two years, and that upon each tax-payer should be levied an average assessment of five dollars. The trustees appointed to fill their places, were: Benjamin Smith, John Harmer, and Jacob Patchen. On the 6th of May, however, the district school, then, and subsequently known as No. 1, was opened ; there being, at that time, five hundred and fifty-two children in the district who did not attend school. Judge John Dikeman, one of the most highly respected residents, was the first teacher of this school, which commenced operation on the first day with seventy-three scholars ; and a two-story frame edifice was erected, as soon as possible, on the corner of Concord and Adams streets, the subsequent site of Public School No. 1.

This district, in 1821, comprised the whole of the then village of Brooklyn, having one thousand two hundred and eighty children between five and fifteen years, of which only one hundred and eighty-eight had received instruction, at an expense to the public of \$454, half of which came from the town. In 1823, the town received from the State its portion (\$413.13) of the appropriation for common schools. In 1824, upwards of two hundred children were taught in the school of the district, the price of tuition being not above \$4 per annum, and from that amount to nothing, according to the abilities of the parent. One thousand one hundred and fifty-seven out of one thousand six hundred and seven children in the district (between five and ten years of age) attended the public or private schools. The school was continued on the Lancasterian plan until about 1836. In this system, thus named after its inventor, Joseph Lancaster, of England, the seats and tables were arranged in the centre of the school-room, leaving a passage clear around the outside ; on the walls hung stiff cards or pasteboards, containing the lessons ; so that the class, standing in a semi-circle, could learn to read and spell from the same card. The tables were divided into partitions or shallow boxes, filled with sand, and occupying the spaces in front of each scholar. The child was taught the letters and to make them, by drawing them in the sand with a stick, cut sharp at one end and flat at the other, so that light and heavy lines could be made without having to re-trace them. The sand was smoothed over, with a rule of exactly the same width as the partition ; and the lines to rule the sand were made by little pegs in the ruler, on the other side, which was used after the sand had been smoothed. After learning to trace the letters in the sand, the scholars were given slates and pencils, afterwards pens and ink. Monitors from the higher classes were assigned classes to teach ; being changed frequently, so that teaching might not occupy too much of their time, to the detriment of their own studies. Musical instruction was introduced into this school in

1836, by the late lamented Theodore Dwight, who served as a volunteer teacher, and the first words ever sung in a Brooklyn public school, were by the scholars of this school, in the song commencing,

Softly now the light of day,
Steals upon my sight away, etc.

Early Private Schools.—Of private schools, between 1800 and 1816, there had been no lack. Of such, probably, was the following, thus advertised in May, 1802: "The Brooklyn school is now open, where are taught reading, writing, arithmetic, geography and book-keeping; also, if required, Greek, Latin, History and Belle-Lettres. Trustees: John Doughty, Robert Hodges, John Vandewater, John Dean, and Dr. George A. Clussman." In 1809, there was in the place, George Hamilton's select school, where "students were taught to make their own pens." Hamilton was shortly succeeded by one John Gibbons, at the same place, who kept an "academy for both sexes," where the various branches of education were taught "on unerring principles." Mrs. Gibbons, also, undertook to aid her husband by instructing little girls in spelling, reading, sewing and marking; and an evening school for young men was proposed by Mr. and Mrs. Gibbons, and "N. B. good pronunciation." In the next year, 1810, Brooklyn seems to have been still better supplied with private schools. One Whitney kept school opposite the Post Office; Mr. John Mabon taught the Brooklyn Select Academy, of which the trustees were Joshua Sands, S. Sackett, and H. I. Feltus; and Platt Kenneday's scholars were advertised to hold an exhibition on Christmas Eve, at Benjamin Smith's old inn. But of all these, and their successors, and their name is legion—Evan Beynon, Samuel Seabury, John Swinburne, and other notable instructors—there is not the space to recite their histories, or to celebrate their praises.

In 1813, an enterprise originated which ultimately resulted in the establishment of the first Public School. A number of charitable ladies (Mrs. Sands, Mrs. Onderdonk, Mrs. Miller, Mrs. Moffat, Mrs. Ireland, and others), formed an organization and established a school known as the *Loisian Seminary*, named after Lois, the grandmother of Timothy the Apostle, and by whom he was instructed in the first principles of the Christian Religion.

It was an association for the free instruction of poor children in reading, writing, arithmetic, knitting and sewing.

It was governed by a Board of five Trustees, who solicited donations of books, and of cash for the rent and ordinary expenses of the school; and the tuition was given by young ladies of the village, who volunteered for the purpose. The school continued on this plan for some years. Some of the teachers married, others tired of their duties; and, finally, a lady was engaged to teach at a salary, agreeably to a suggestion of Mr. Andrew Mercein, whereby the school was converted into a Public School under existing law. The last teacher of the Loisian School was Mrs. Abrams, wife of an old-time undertaker of St. Ann's Church.

But, here we trench upon the limits of the admirable sketch of *The History of Public Education in the City of Brooklyn*, prepared by our esteemed friend, TUNIS G. BERGEN, Esq., President of the Board of Education of the city, which will be found in a later portion of this work.

The local historians of the several towns represented in this History, have given ample information concerning the schools of their respective towns; see Flatlands, p. 75; Flatbush, p. 249; Gravesend, p. 173; Bushwick, p. 276; New Utrecht, p. 265, and New Lots, p. 314. See also, Index, for many incidental items relating to educational matters.

HISTORY

OF THE

MEDICAL PROFESSION

OF KINGS COUNTY,

1644-1822.

BY *Frank B. Green, M.D.*

OF BROOKLYN.

THE TERRIBLE INDIAN WAR of 1643-44, which devastated and very nearly extinguished the rising settlements of the New Netherlands, under Kieft's ill-starred management, was virtually ended, in July, 1644, by the arrival of the ship "Blue Cock" from Curacao. The 130 soldiers which she brought—and which Petrus Stuyvesant, then governor of that island, had been glad to get rid of, as having no use for them, and fearing a threatened famine—added strength and confidence to the sorely pressed colonists. And, availing themselves of the breathing spell thus afforded them, attempts were made to establish a permanent peace with their savage neighbors.

In this vessel, also, probably, came a surgeon, PAULUS VAN DER BEECK, of Bremen, who had served in the West India Company's ships, and at its station at Curacao. He was, probably, the second medical man in the colony, Hans Kierstede, also one of the W. I. Co.'s surgeons, having settled in New Amsterdam as early as 1638. A pushing man, shrewd and "with an eye to the main chance," was the ex-ship-surgeon; for, in October of the same year, some three months from the date of his arrival, he married Mary Thomas or Baddie, who had already been the wife, successively, of Willem Arianse Bennett and of Jacob Verden. Her first husband, Bennett, was one of the first settlers in the present limits of the City of Brooklyn, having, with Jacques Bentyen, in 1636, purchased (STILES' Brooklyn, i. 52) a large tract of land which he had cultivated, and on which he built (about at the intersection of the present Third avenue and Twenty-eighth street) a home. He was killed by the Indians at the beginning of hostilities, his buildings burned, and his stock stolen or destroyed. In 1644, however, peace being made with the Indians, the settlers gradually returned to their ruined farms. The widow and her new husband soon returned again to Long Island, and Bennett's deserted farm was cultivated, and buildings erected

upon it by Surgeon Van Der Beeck, who took up his residence there, probably, before 1653; for in that year he, with others, was chosen by the neighbors to represent them in a convention and as a delegate to Director Stuyvesant. This convention framed a petition, strongly worded, insisting with sturdy Dutch determination on their rights, as citizens, to have a voice in the government of the province.

In a sparsely populated colony, among settlers who, from the necessity of the case, must be rugged with health, but little call existed for medical skill. Every man became not alone his own doctor, but each was virtually a "jack of all trades;" no one pursued one avocation to the exclusion of others. So with Paulus Van Der Beeck; we read of him as "Mr. Paulis, surgeon and farmer." Danger seemed to have no terror for him, for he lived far from the protecting walls of the fort. Like a shrewd man, he cast his eye upon the public crib, and for many years fed at it. In 1656 he was collector or farmer of the revenues; 1661-'62 finds him farming out the Excise and Tenths on Long Island; at the same time he was ferry-master. He prospered and grew rich. In 1675 he was assessed on £133 10s., and there were only nine citizens with higher rates. In 1676, he is rated £140, an acre of land passing at £1 wampum values; and, in a previous year—1657—the church having fallen behind in the dominie's salary, Van Der Beeck is rated as "in easy circumstances and well off," and taxed ten florins. But one break did occur in a life seemingly so full of success. In 1663, his step-sons, the children of Bennet, petitioned for a re-possession of their patrimony; and, by the order of the Director-General and Council, Sheriff Hegeman put them in control of part of the land.

Surgeon Paulus Van Der Beeck died previous to 1679; for in that year the much bereaved Mary was once more a widow, and as such conveying lands.

GERARDUS WILLEMSE BEEKMAN, a physician and

ician, is recorded as the next doctor in Kings county. His father, Wilhelmus Beekman, emigrated to Hessel in 1647, and held many public offices in Amsterdam. Gerardus settled in Flatbush, and in November, 1678, was chosen one of the deacons of the Reformed Dutch Church of that place. Of his medical labor nothing is recorded. As others followed in calling besides their trade or profession, Beekman braced politics and remained an office-holder till the day of his death. In 1687 he took the oath of allegiance as a native, while two years earlier he was appointed a colonel in the militia and justice of the peace. It was his destiny to be in active life during the ill-fated Leisler controversy, and he was a firm adherent of Leisler's cause. When the justices in New Amsterdam refused to administer the oath of allegiance to William and Mary, 1689, Jacob Leisler sent to Long Island for Captain G. Beekman, Justice of the Peace, to perform that duty. A year later Dr. Beekman was one of Leisler's Counsel of Ten. Ere another year passed, however, a change in the administration occurred. In October, 1691, Beekman was placed under arrest, but released under a bond of £500 not to depart the province and for good behavior. But he was too long a partisan to be quiet, and issued a spirited denunciation of Leisler's actions. Brought to trial with five more of Leisler's staunch supporters, he was found guilty and sentenced to death. Now it was that his sterling character became apparent; Governor Slaught offered him a free pardon if he would but apologize for his adherence to Leisler; and his friends implored him to accept the proffered clemency, pointing out that Leisler and Milborne had already been executed; and that, owing to delay of communication with the home government, Slaughter was practically in absolute control; and, that whatever the result of after investigation into his actions might be, Beekman's life could not be restored. Perhaps, finding him still obdurate, they suggested that the apology would only be a form, and that as soon as advices could be received from England, Slaughter would be recalled. He declined to take their advice and suggestions, and firmly facing the result, refused to ask the proffered pardon, because he believed the cause of Leisler a just cause, and his own conduct in the matter, right. He, with his comrades under sentence, were at length pardoned by order of the King. For several years after this we hear but little of Beekman in public life. Not till 1705-'6 did he again hold office; then he appears as a member of Lord Cornbury's council, and in the latter year as a commissioner for the Mohegans in their claim against Connecticut for certain tracts of lands. In 1709, 1711 and 1715 he was a member of Governor Hunter's council; and he was acting governor of the province from 1709 to 1710. He died in November, 1724, at the age of 71 years.

An amusing incident relating to Beekman has been

preserved to us, by a letter of one H. Filkins. A controversy had arisen between the congregation of the Breuckelen church and their dominie, Mr. Freeman; hot words, followed by hotter actions, disturbed the quiet of the community, and at last the law was invoked by the clergyman. Justice Beekman rendered the decision that Mr. Freeman should preach. A few days later Colonel Beekman and H. Filkins met on the ferry, coming to Breuckelen, and, on landing, stopped at the ferry-tavern to drink a glass of wine. One glass followed another till both gentlemen were well fuddled; then the subject of Rev. Freeman's preaching came under discussion. Mr. Filkins was also a justice of the peace, and bitterly opposed to Dominie Freeman. The controversy grew more irritating, till Beekman finally asserted that service should be continued as heretofore. To this Filkins retorted that he was also a justice, and Beekman's peer. Then Col. Beekman's wrath blazed out; and, as Filkins states in his letter, he "gave me the lie, calling me a pitiful fellow, dog, rascall, &c." Such language poured upon a temper already inflamed by the infusion of "Dutch courage," naturally caused an outbreak, and Filkins goes on to state "which caused me, being overcome with passion, to tell him I had a good mind to knock him off his horse, we being both at that time getting upon our horses to goe home, but that I would not goe; I would fight him at any time with a sword." "I could wish," he adds "that these last words had been kept in, and I am troubled that I was soe overcome with passion and inflamed with wine. The work of these Dutch ministers is the occasion of all our quarrells."

Ere Beekman's death, a Dr. JOHN NERBURY was residing at the Brooklyn ferry. Little can be learned of him. In 1710 a Palatine child was indentured to him. In 1732 he presented a bill against the county, amounting to £6, 4s, for taking care of a poor man at Mr. Stryker's, of Flatbush; later he deeded a wood-lot in Flatbush to Johanna Dewitt, and still later, in 1746, evidence exists that he was living on Staten Island.

HENRY, or HENDRICK VAN BEUREN is the next practitioner of whom any record can be found. In 1754 he presented a bill to the county, for setting the shoulder of Mary Ann Smith, and for after attendance, valuing his services at £1, 12s. Another bill of his for "doctoring" the "French neutrals," for 14s., bears date of 1765. These "French neutrals" were some of the two thousand unhappy Acadians whom England had deported from their homes in 1755, and scattered in the New England provinces, and as far south as Pennsylvania. Another bill against the county, in 1770, and one in 1772, attest that he was engaged in active practice. Busy as he was, however, he found time to protest against the doings of the numerous "irregulars" in his vicinity. In the *New York Gazette, or Weekly Postboy*, for May 20, 1754, he appears in this letter:

"*Vita brevis, ars vero longa : sec occasio momentosa magni momenti ; empirica periclitato periculosi judicium difficile.* HIPPOCRAT. APHORIS.—The daily and innumerable Abuses that are committed on the Bodies of our Fellow-creatures, in the Practice of Physic and Surgery, by the unskilful Pretenders to both ; and the deplorable instances of the Havock and Devastation, occasioned by such intestine Enemies (destructive to any State, as a raging Pestilence), is obvious to all Men of Judgment and Observation. How solicitous ought every Monarchy, and Commonwealth, to be, about the health and Preservation of every Individual? The ancient Romans were very singular in this way. Any one who had the good Fortune to save the Life of any Roman citizen, was dignified with an Oaken Garland. Even the diminutive Republic of St. Marino, in Italy, in our days, is very remarkable for the judicious Choice in a Physician, under whose Hands the Commonwealth thrives. A proper Regulation in this Respect, so necessary in this Province, will be likely never to take place, without the attention and concurrence of the Legislature.

"Every pitiful Fellow, now-a-Days (more dexterous at murdering or maiming his Patients, than at terms of Art), assumes to himself, with no small Arrogance, the Appellation of *Doctor* ; far from being due to *Quacks* and *Medicators*, and only so to the Gentlemen of the Faculty, the undoubted sons of *Æsculapius*. So venerable a Distinction is become rather a Term of Reproach to those to whom it peculiarly belongs, who have taken the highest Degree in that Art, or Science, in some University ; or, at least, ought to be qualified for so doing.

"Well may a Gentleman of the Faculty, in the City of New York, particularly distinguished for his uncommon merit, disdain the appellation, when he must share it with *numbers* who can have no Pretension to it at all ; and even with Apothecary apprentices, before they have finished their elaborate studies and application of *Three long years*."

It may not be amiss to notice these impostors, who, at this time, so irritated Dr. Van Beuren and others, as to call forth frequent protests in public prints. The demand for medication was evidently on the increase, and the emoluments of the profession becoming more valuable. The immunity from climatic change that the settlers had at first enjoyed, had given place to an outbreak of intermittent fever and of dysentery in the summer, and to lung and throat affections in the winter. Already small-pox had appeared among the colonies, and swept through the province more than once. Yellow fever had also been introduced and added to the death rate. These maladies were widespread, and doubtless carried great alarm to the worried colonists. The modesty of charlatans has never been conspicuous, and such an opportunity to prey upon human fear and credulity was no more neglected two centuries ago, than it is to-day. Legislation did not interfere with their action, and their pretensions, however absurd, were believed by a people not too well educated. Any one might set up as a practitioner of medicine, and succeed. That many did so, we may judge from the indignant protests of the few educated physicians who had cast their lot here. A writer in the "*N. Y. Independent Reflector*," 1753, says : "That place (N. Y.) boasts the honor of above forty gentlemen of the faculty, and

far the greatest part of them are mere pretenders to a profession of which they are entirely ignorant." Another, in a New England colony, writes, in 1757 : "Few physicians amongst us are eminent for their skill. Quacks abound like the locusts in Egypt, and too many have recommended themselves to a full and profitable practice and subsistence. This is the less to be wondered at, as the profession is under no kind of legislation. Loud as the call is, to our shame be it remembered, we have no law to protect the lives of the King's subjects from the malpractice of pretenders. Any man, at his pleasure, sets up for physician, apothecary and chirurgion. No candidates are either examined or licensed, or even sworn to fair practice." In the light of these statements, Dr. Van Beuren's strong letter seems fully justified, and affords us, also, a glimpse of the writer's character. He was an educated physician, conscientious in his life's work, and detesting, with an honest man's contempt, the claims of impostors.

After the battle of Long Island, most of the Kings County people hastened to renew their allegiance to the crown ; among them was Henry Van Beuren. In *Rivington's Gazette*, June 30, 1781, "James Rankin, chairman of the Board of Refugees, requests the Loyal Refugees of Kings County to appear at the home of Dr. Van Beuren, Flatbush, on Wednesday next at noon, to consult on matters of importance."

Contemporary with Van Beuren is found the name of DR. JOHN LODEWICK. His record is extremely slight ; for, with the exception of two bills against the county, nothing can be learned of his existence. The first bill, bearing date of 1759, is for tending a sick woman at Peter Lott's, in Flatbush ; the next, in 1767, is for tending a sick man from December 19, 1766, to April, 1767, and for medicines, and amounts to £9, 5s. 6d.

Another contemporary of that time, and the last pre-revolutionary physician of whom I find record, is DR. HARRY VAN DE WATER. One of his bills against the county bears date 1766, and is for medicine and attending on a sick vagrant person at Justice Theodorus Polhemus' (of Bushwick), £2, 10s. Another, date 1769, is for medicine and attendance on a vagrant person for two weeks. His death occurred from disease contracted on board one of the prison-ships. A history is in these last few words. Long Island was in complete control of the British, and the cause of the colonists was at its lowest ebb. Van De Water's neighbors, and some, at least, of his professional comrades, were staunch royalists ; to be patriotic at such a time, implied the loss of property, social ostracism, perhaps imprisonment and death. He accepted the issue for what he believed to be right.

The War for Independence brought many army surgeons into Kings County. At the date of the battle of Long Island, the medical officers of the Eastern division, supposed to have been present, were Drs. Wm.

Shippen, of Pennsylvania, chief physician of the "flying camp;" Department Director General Isaac Foster; Physician General of hospital Ammi R. Cutler, of Mass.; Surgeon General of hospitals Philip Turner; and Physician and Surgeon General of the army Wm. Burnett.

At the close of that disastrous August day, the following American surgeons were prisoners in the British lines: John and Joseph Davies of the First Penn. Battalion; Dr. Holmes of Huntington's regiment, and Dr. Young of Atlee's regiment. After the battle, Boerum's bolt-house, the house on the Heights known as the Livingston or Joralemon house, and the Remsen house, then occupying the site of Grace church, were used as Brooklyn military hospitals; while in New Utrecht and Flatbush, the churches were used both as hospitals and prisons. Sad was the fate of the wounded prisoners at first. In Flatbush, they were neglected and unattended, wallowing in their own filth, and breathing infected air. After ten days of this misery, Dr. Richard Bailey of the Staten Island hospital was appointed to care for them; and he, assisted by Dr. Silas Holmes of Norwich, Conn., a prisoner of war, did all in their power to alleviate the suffering. Under their charge the wounded were daily visited; a sack-bed, sheet and blanket was obtained for every prisoner, and the overcrowded church was relieved by distributing the captives into the neighboring barns.

During the progress of the war, *Rivington's Gazette* was largely used for advertising lost or stolen property; among the advertisements is that of a reward of two guineas, by Surgeon A. Bainbridge of the New Jersey Volunteers, for a runaway slave; and one of Dr. Allemand, for the recovery of a lost mouse-colored horse. In the mortality list on the British side, stand the names of Wm. Poole, chief physician of the Naval hospital in Brooklyn, who died in 1778, and Surgeon John Howe, who died in 1782.

War has ever been a great incentive to the medical profession. Its necessities call for more recruits, its agonies and deaths for increased skill, to alleviate the suffering caused by its wounds, and combat the diseases incident upon camp life. Our war for independence was no exception to the rule; and, at its close, we need feel no wonder at the increased number of practitioners of medicine. At least three army surgeons took up their residence in Kings County at the close of the war; one in Flatbush, whose name is given as Dr. Beck, and JOHN J. BARBARIN and JOHN DUFFIELD, in Brooklyn.

Of Dr. Beck so little is known authentically that even the correctness of his name is in dispute. That an English army surgeon settled in Flatbush at the close of the war is, however, beyond dispute. He was a man of ability and obtained a successful practice, to which he attended, till an accident or illness prevented active labor. After this he seems to have become dissipated

and poor, and for some time before his death to have been dependent on charity. His end was tragic; his body was found in an old well, and it is unknown whether he fell in by accident or committed suicide. Either contemporary with this physician, or succeeding him by but a short time, were the brothers JAMES J. and JOHN H. VAN BUREN. James lived in the old Duryea house, now owned by the Brooklyn City R. R. Co.; John was a bachelor, and lived with another brother, who kept a hotel near the old jail. In the Supervisors' proceedings for 1787, is a resolution that Dr. Van Buren attend upon a sick person in the county jail at Flatbush, and that £4 be allowed him; and a strong probability exists that at this time Dr. Van Buren was the keeper of and occupied the county courthouse and jail. James Van Buren died in 1802, followed by his brother nine years later.

At this time Flatbush was the principal town and county seat of the county. In Brooklyn, we have already seen that Drs. Duffield and Barbarin cast their lot at the end of the war. Of the former, little can be learned, save that he died in 1798, and that a street was named after him. JOHN JOEL BARBARIN was in the British service during the Revolution; before its close he married a daughter of Lodowick Bamber of Brooklyn, and shortly after resigned from the service and settled here in practice. In Nov., 1784, he petitioned the Assembly to grant him the right of citizenship. A MS. record of accouchment cases attended by him, from 1791 to 1796, was kept by the doctor in the French language, and is reported to be still in existence. Barbarin was one of the first trustees of the incorporated village of Brooklyn. A street, now Lawrence street, was originally named after him. From his portrait, he seems to have been a man of fine physique, with dark complexion and black eyes; his dress was plain, but rich, and garnished at the wrists with lace.

During the first decade of the present century the profession in Flatbush was augmented by the coming of Dr. WM. D. CREED. He was born in Jamaica, L. I., became a licentiate in 1809, and began active practice in the county towns. He was elected to the office of sheriff for one term. At the close of his term of service, he moved to New Utrecht, where he again practiced his profession. In the epidemic of Asiatic cholera in 1832, he was a member of the Board of Health of Flatbush, with Drs. Zabriskie and Vanderveer of that village, and Dr. Robert Edmond of East New York.

In Brooklyn, at the period between 1800 and 1822, are found the names of GEORGE A. CLUSSMAN, J. G. T. HUNT, MATTHEW WENDELL, CHAS. BALL, BENJAMIN LOWE, SAMUEL OSBORNE and JOHN CARPENTER. The first mention found of Dr. CLUSSMAN is in a bill against the county, in 1779, for £5, 4s. In one of the copies of the *Long Island Weekly Intelligencer*, for 1806, William Vander Veer, apothecary, advertises that he is regularly educated in his business, having studied in

Amsterdam, and that his store is in the house of Dr. Geo. A. Clussman, who, with Dr. Samuel Osborne, will guarantee his ability and drugs. Dr. Clussman further seems to have been deeply interested in educational matters.

JOSEPH GEDNEY TARLTON HUNT was born in Westchester, N. Y., in 1783. He studied medicine with Drs. Whitehead, Hicks and Bard, was licensed in 1804, and appointed Asst. Surgeon in the navy. In a short time he was promoted to be full surgeon. He served in the Algerian war, under Decatur; was on board the Chesapeake when she was captured by the Leopard. At length he was stationed at the Brooklyn Navy Yard; here he not only attended to his official duty, but acquired a considerable private practice. In 1820, he resigned from the service, and made his home on the corner of Concord and Fulton streets. He was one of the earliest members of the Kings County Medical Society, of which he was President from 1825 to 1830, inclusive. In 1824, he was appointed the first Health Officer of Brooklyn, with a salary of \$200 a year, and was re-appointed, without intermission, till the time of his death, in August, 1830. Dr. Hunt was small in stature, with a brusque manner, but he redeemed this approach to curtness by many agreeable social qualities.

SAMUEL OSBORNE (previously mentioned as vouching for apothecary Vander Veer), son of John Osborne, M.D., of Middletown, Conn., studied medicine, settled in Brooklyn, and became a physician of some repute. A bitter newspaper controversy was maintained between him and Drs. Wendell and Ball, during the yellow fever epidemic of 1809; a controversy ending in the indulgence of outrageous personalities between the disputants. Shortly after this, Osborne removed to New York city.

From about 1790 to 1805, Dr. PETER, or Peters, was living at New Utrecht, and built on the high ground, midway between Fort Hamilton and the village of New Utrecht, a large edifice for an academy. Here he kept a school in addition to his practice. This building, later known as "the De Karsy House," was torn down in 1872. His practice covered the town of Gravesend. It is said that it was his custom to go to the hotel, upon his arrival in town, and to ring a large dinner-bell, to notify those needing his services that he was in readiness for consultation. In 1805, Dr. FRANCIS HENRY DUBOIS, who became a licentiate in 1802, settled at New Utrecht, and acquired a large practice, which he retained till his death, in 1834.

Kings County Medical Society established.—We have at length reached the period at which the

desultory and disconnected detail of sometime practitioners ceases; and the medical men of Kings county formed an organized society for their own protection against impostors, and for the benefit of the people in their mutual reports and discussions of diseases, and in their closer acquaintance and fraternity with each other. In 1806, the Legislature of New York enacted a law allowing the incorporation of a state and of county medical societies. Under this act, the State Medical Society was organized at once. The medical men of this county did not act in the matter, however, for several years, and it was not till 1822 that organization was attempted. On Monday, February 22, 1822 Drs. Chas. Ball, Matthew Wendell, John Carpenter, Wm. D. Creed, Francis H. Dubois and Adrian Vanderveer, practicing physicians in this county, met in the village of Flatbush to discuss the propriety of forming a county society. After informal discussion they adjourned to meet in Brooklyn on March 2. At the March meeting it was decided to organize a society, and the following officers were elected: Cornelius Low, *President*; Matthew Wendell, *Vice-President*; Adrian Vanderveer, *Secretary*; John Carpenter, *Treasurer*. At the same meeting, By-Laws for the government of the society were adopted. On April 2, 1822, the following physicians, with the officers already named, founded the society: Francis H. Dubois, J. G. T. Hunt, Chas. Ball, William D. Creed, Thomas Wilson Henry. From the organization of the society till the present time, the following gentlemen have been its *Presidents*:

Cornelius Low, 1822 to '25; J. G. T. Hunt, 1825 till his death, in 1830; Thos. W. Henry, 1831 to '33; Chas. Ball, 1833 to '35; Isaac I. Rapelye, 1835; Matthew Wendell, 1836; Adrian Vanderveer, 1837 to '39; John B. Zabriskie, 1839; Purcell Cooke, 1840 to '42; Theodore L. Mason, 1842 to '44; Bradley Parker, 1844; Purcell Cooke, 1845; J. Sullivan Thorne, 1846; Lucius Hyde, 1847; Chauncey L. Mitchell, 1848; Henry J. Cullen, 1849; James H. Henry, 1850; Samuel J. Osborne, 1851; George Marvin, 1852; Andrew Otterson, 1853 to '55; Geo. I. Bennet, 1855; T. Anderson Wade, 1856; Samuel Boyd, 1857; Channcey L. Mitchell, 1858 to '60; Daniel Brooks, 1860; C. R. McClellan, 1861; Samuel Hart, 1862; Dewitt C. Enos, 1863; Joseph C. Hutchison, 1864; John T. Conkling, 1865; Andrew Otterson, 1866; Wm. W. Reese, 1867; R. Cresson Stiles, 1868-'70; J. H. Hobart Burge, 1870-'72; Wm. Henry Thayer, 1872-'74; A. J. C. Skene, 1874-'76; A. Hutchins, 1876-'79; J. S. Prout, 1879; Charles Jewett, 1880, '83; G. G. Hopkins, 1883.

TRAVEL AND TRANSIT

IN

KINGS COUNTY.

STAGES AND RAILROADS.

By *L. P. Brockett M.D.*

FACILITIES FOR TRAVEL IN KINGS COUNTY. The growth of a city is most surely and palpably demonstrated by the increase in its means of ready and rapid communication with its suburbs and the country adjacent. In 1833, fifty years ago, Kings County, including the village of Brooklyn, had a population of about 26,000. There were three ferries, two of them but recently established, to connect it with the city across the East river. The mails were brought to and from New York to the growing village, daily, and to the suburban towns, from once to three times a week, according to their remoteness and the amount of their population, and a one horse-wagon sufficed to carry the whole.

Stage and Omnibus Lines.—There were, it is true, stages running somewhat irregularly to the principal villages of Queens and Suffolk Counties, but these were not sufficiently frequent for local travel. Two licensed hackmen, with perhaps five or six extra carriages for weddings or funerals, were able to furnish all necessary transportation to those citizens who were not provided with vehicles of their own, or did not prefer to traverse the roads leading to the remoter districts, on their own stout limbs. A line of omnibuses, started between 1830 and 1840, were so irregular in their time-tables, and so dilapidated and worthless, that they obtained little patronage. This line and its privileges, as well as some others just starting, were, about 1840, bought up by Mr. Montgomery Queen, who being interested with others in developing a large property in the Bedford neighborhood, then quite out of town, found that the great hindrance to securing desirable purchasers for his lots was the lack of regular and efficient communication between Bedford and Fulton ferry. He established the first really effective line of stages (omnibuses) in the county, having good and new vehicles, excellent horses, and running promptly and regularly on time. Mr. Queen's first route was through Fulton street and its eastward extension as far as Bedford. Regularity brought pub-

lic confidence and secured patronage, and this stage line contributed largely to the growth of the city in the Bedford district. When city railroads were established, Mr. Queen became their warm supporter, and was largely identified with the Brooklyn City Railroad Company. Soon after 1840 he established other lines through Flushing avenue, and a little later through DeKalb and Flatbush avenues. On this last-named avenue the stages ran regularly to the village of Flatbush. There was also a stage line through Myrtle avenue, owned and operated by Seymour L. Husted, which was maintained only at a great pecuniary sacrifice. In 1851 the first regular line of stages from Flatbush, was run by "Old John Roe," of Canarsie, who made two trips daily from Canarsie *via* Flatbush to Fulton ferry, changing horses at Flatbush. It was through the efforts of the parishioners of "the Holy Cross" that this stage line was first established, and it was maintained until the Flatbush route of the Brooklyn City Railroad took its place in 1860.

The historian of Coney Island and Gravesend has kindly furnished us with the following facts relative to stages and staging in *Gravesend*:

Fifty years ago, and even less, it was a day's journey to go to Brooklyn and return; consequently due preparation must be made the day beforehand for such an undertaking. The lumbering stage-coach was the only public conveyance at that time. Neither was there a direct public highway to the city then as now, but people were compelled to go through Flatlands and Flatbush before they could reach Brooklyn. The stage left Gravesend in the morning and did not return again until night. The journey became, therefore, a matter of dread, rather than pleasure, to those compelled to undertake it.

Mr. Church, of Fort Hamilton, ran a line of stages from the Fort, through Gravesend to Brooklyn, some fifty years ago. We have no knowledge of any public conveyance to the city before this period. In 1834 Mr. James W. Cropsey ran a stage line from Coney

Island to Fulton Ferry, a distance of eleven miles. He was then the proprietor of the Coney Island House, and the same year built the first horse railroad on Long Island, running from his hotel to the shore, some eighty rods, for the accommodation of his guests.

Mr. Cropsey continued the stage line for six years, and then sold out to one Felter; who, after some years, was succeeded by John Carll, who, in addition to passengers, carried also the mail. Carll gave place to Pat Breslin, well remembered to-day as a jolly and accommodating stage driver.

In 1879 a line of stages was started by Mr. Stiles, to run from the corner of Grand and Lafayette avenues to the City Hall. He afterwards extended the route, and formed a stock company called the *Lafayette Avenue Stage Company*. April 23d, 1882, H. Hamilton bought the line of stages, with all its appurtenances, and now runs them between Bedford Station and Wall Street Ferry. He is sole proprietor, and owns twenty stages, eighty-five horses, and employs twenty-five men.

In the Eastern District of the present city, the first omnibus was started in the year 1840 by a Mr. Williams, a painter, who resided in South Fifth street, near Twelfth. Unlike the systematic management of the present lines of stages, the first omnibus was driven promiscuously through the different streets, and straggling pedestrians picked up and conveyed to or from the Peck Slip Ferry, which was the business focus of this new enterprise. Mr. Williams continued the running of his omnibus about six months, when, not having sufficient patronage to defray the incurred expenses, he abandoned the enterprise, and thus the inhabitants of Williamsburgh were again left to their own traveling resources. Since then, lines of stages have been successfully and profitably run through Grand, First, South Fourth and South Seventh streets, and to East New York; Fulton and South Ferries, Brooklyn, Bushwick, Maspeth, Newtown, Greenpoint, Astoria and Flushing.

In 1836 the **Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad**, which had been chartered in 1832, was opened from the South Ferry to Jamaica, a distance of about twelve miles; and not long after the **Long Island Railroad**, chartered April 26, 1834, ran cars over the same track, reaching some of the towns in Suffolk County. The route was along Atlantic street, and what is now Atlantic avenue. But although this road was a great advance on all previous modes of locomotion, its value, as a means of local travel, was limited to the immediate vicinity of the street through which it passed, and it served even this need imperfectly. It is not to be supposed that it had attained to the efficiency of the railways of the present day. The best locomotive in this country at that time, seldom exceeded a speed of twelve miles an hour, and the Long Island Railroad, having no competition to fear, was not then, nor for

many years subsequently, equipped in the best manner. More than twenty years later, in its passage through Atlantic avenue, an active boy or man found no difficulty in keeping up with its express trains for two or three miles. As to its local support, in its route through Kings County, it was much less valuable than a horse railroad would have been. From the vicinity of the ferry, for nearly a mile, it ran through a tunnel, or a sunken arcade, where it could receive no passengers, and at the road or street-crossings beyond, its high platforms, and the difficulty of entrance or exit to and from the cars, made the local patronage very meagre. It is to be remembered also that it could afford accommodation to only a small portion of the inhabitants of Kings County, had its facilities been much greater than they were.

There was a settlement of moderate extent, near the present junction of Flatbush and Atlantic avenues; a village of somewhat larger size at Bedford, around the crossing of the Clove road with Fulton street; and another near the eastern border of the county, then known as the town of New Lots—now the populous suburb of East New York. These three points were all of any importance in the county, reached by the Long Island Railroad. Its moderate business was mainly with Queens, and later also with the western portion of Suffolk County.

Although chartered in April, 1834, the main line was not opened for travel through to Greenport until July 29, 1844. It was designed to be a direct route between New York and Boston, by connecting at the eastern end of Long Island with a line of steamers for the main land, but the completion of the New Haven all-land route diverted the through travel. The Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad, leased from its completion in 1836, extended its line to the South Ferry in Brooklyn. The new line to Long Island City, having been completed in 1861, the line in the city of Brooklyn was abandoned, but was rebuilt in 1876 as far as the intersection of Flatbush and Atlantic avenues. In 1881, the Long Island Railroad Company was formed for the purpose of uniting the various lines under one management. At this time the old project of a steam ferry from the east end of the route to Block Island, Newport and Providence was revived, but after one season's trial was again relinquished. The road was for some time in the hands of a receiver, but was discharged by order of the Supreme Court, October 17, 1881. During the past two years, the company has largely increased the equipments of the road, purchased 10,000 tons of steel rails, and acquired valuable dock privileges at Long Island City. The capital stock was increased from \$3,260,700 to \$10,000,000, of which about \$9,000,000 was used in retiring the old indebtedness of the road, and in the improvements already mentioned.

The OFFICERS for 1882-'83 are Austin Corbin, *Pres.*; J. R. Maxwell and B. S. Henning, *Vice-Presidents*; F.

W. Dunton, *Treas.*; E. B. Hinsdale, *Sec.*; I. D. Barton, *Supt.*; J. Carlsen, *Auditor*. In the winter of 1882-'3 arrangements were completed by Mr. Austin Corbin and his associates, by which the Manhattan Beach Railroad, also owned and controlled by them, was leased by the Long Island Railroad, and its track widened, so that it could be run in connection with that road, thus opening a direct route to and from Coney Island, to all parts of Long Island. The extension to Montauk is to be completed during the autumn of 1883, and limited express parlor-car trains run through to Sag Harbor in two hours and twenty minutes. On the first of June, 1883, maps and papers were filed for a *Long Island Trunk Railroad Co.*, having substantially the same stockholders and managers as the Long Island Railroad Company, and intended to connect the Long Island Road with the newly-opened Bridge; and, as soon as possible, with the Hudson River and other railroads coming into New York, by means of an elevated railway, which they proposed eventually to continue to Jamaica, Long Island. The purpose of this connecting link was to enable any person on Long Island (in Brooklyn or elsewhere) to go without change of cars to any part of the continent, even to the Pacific coast. This project will meet with strong opposition, but in some form will probably be carried into effect. The capital of the new road is to be five million dollars.

But to recur to the early history of travel in Kings County; the omnibuses had a monopoly of the business of local passenger travel, for about thirteen years, when the

Brooklyn City Railroad Company was incorporated (Dec. 17, 1853). This road bought out most of the old stage lines, including the Myrtle Avenue line, which Mr. Seymour L. Husted had so long struggled to maintain. There were, however, one or two of these running as late as 1859 or 1860, and between 1875 and 1883 two or three new stage lines have been established. Of these, the *Lafayette Avenue Stage Co.* and the *Montague Street Cab-line* are still in existence.

Four of the Brooklyn City Railroad's routes, viz., the Fulton Avenue, Myrtle Avenue, Flushing Avenue and Court Street, were in operation for two or three miles of their length by the 3d of July, 1854. This company now have twelve car routes, beside transfers, all starting from Fulton Ferry, and radiating thence in every direction to the city line, and several of them to and beyond the county line. These are, in alphabetical order: 1. The *Flatbush Line*, from Fulton Ferry to Prospect Park and Flatbush. 2. The *Flushing Avenue Line*, from Fulton Ferry to Sands street and Flushing and Van Cott avenues. This line transfers passengers at corner of Classon and Flushing avenues to Greenpoint and to City Hall. 3. *Fulton Street to East New York*. 4. *Furman Street Line*, from Fulton Ferry to Erie Basin. 5. *Gates Avenue Line*, by Fulton, Greene and Gates avenues to Ridgewood.

6. *Greenpoint Line* via *Classon Avenue*, from Fulton Ferry to Newtown Creek. This is a transfer to Graham avenue. 7. *Greenpoint Line* via *Washington Avenue*. This is much the same as the preceding, except a short cut across the Wallabout through Washington avenue to Kent. It is *not* a transfer line. 8. *Greenwood Line* via *Court Street*, to Third and Fifth avenues, to Greenwood Cemetery, and connecting with steam-cars for Coney Island. 9. *Hamilton Avenue Line*, from Hamilton Ferry to Greenwood at 25th street, and by steam-cars to Bay Ridge and Fort Hamilton. 10. *Myrtle Avenue Line*, from Fulton Ferry through Myrtle avenue to Ridgewood. 11. *Putnam Avenue Line*, from Fulton Ferry, and Fulton street to Putnam avenue and Halsey street, to Broadway and by transfer to Ridgewood. 12. *Third Avenue Line*, from Fulton Ferry to Flatbush and Third avenues, to 25th street and Greenwood Cemetery. Its routes have an aggregate length of 43 miles. Messrs. S. L. Husted, Henry C. Murphy, Henry G. Pearson and Algernon S. Sullivan were among its leading promoters; and the two first named, together with Charles Whitson, Whitson Oakley, William Benson, John Kellum, J. O. Whitehouse, George S. Harland, Thomas J. Cochran, Jeremiah Johnson, George L. Bennett, Henry W. Conkling and Thomas Brooks, were the first Directors of the company. Mr. Montgomery Queen, the energetic stage proprietor, finding his occupation gone, became identified with the railroad company at an early date, and was for many years its efficient superintendent. The first officers of the company were S. L. Husted, President, and Charles C. Betts, Secretary.

The Board of OFFICERS in 1883 consists of S. L. Husted, *Prest.*; William M. Thomas, *Vice-Prest.*; William B. Lewis, *Sec. and Cashier*; Daniel F. Lewis, *Asst. Sec. and Treas.* The number of cars in use is 625; of horses, 2,500; employment is given to 1,500 men. The total number of passengers carried in 1882 was 34,000,000. The capital, originally fixed at \$2,400,000, was reduced by legislative permission in 1855 to \$1,000,000.

The **Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad** was, as we have noticed above, of earlier date than the Brooklyn City Railroad, having been chartered in 1832 and opened in 1836; but it and its congeners, the Brooklyn Central and Jamaica, Flushing, New York and Flushing, and South Side, were steam, not horse railroads. All of them, with the exception of the Atlantic Avenue, an organization of later date, though running over the same tracks, are now leased to or consolidated with the Long Island Railroad.

The **Atlantic Avenue Railroad Co.** first operated in 1859 and reorganized in 1873, has now six routes, viz.: the *Atlantic Avenue Line*, from Fulton Ferry,—the cars run by steam-motors from Flatbush avenue to Jamaica. 2. The *Adams Street and Boerum Place Line*, to Prospect Park, Coney Island and Greenwood,

passing over the Atlantic avenue tracks from Boerum Place to Fifth avenue and Greenwood, and with a branch at 15th street to Ninth avenue and Greenwood, eastern entrance, and transferring to and from South and Wall Street Ferries at 15th street. 3. *The Butler Street Line*, passing over the Adams and Atlantic street routes to Washington avenue, thence to Butler street and Nostrand avenue. Transfers to and from South and Wall Street Ferries. 4. *The Greenwood and Coney Island Line*, from Fulton Ferry through Furman street and Atlantic avenue and Fifth avenue, connecting at 27th street with Bath and Coney Island Steam Railway. 5. *The Prospect Park Line*. Over the same route as preceding, to Fifth avenue, and Flatbush avenue to Prospect Park, and along Ninth avenue to Greenwood, connecting with Prospect Park and Coney Island Steam Railroad at 20th street. 6. *The Seventh Avenue Line*, following the Adams street route to Fifth avenue, thence by Flatbush avenue, along Seventh avenue, to Greenwood, at 29th street, thence to Ninth avenue and Prospect Park and Coney Island steam-cars at 20th street. Transfers are made here to and from South and Wall Street Ferries. These lines are leased to and controlled by William Richardson.

The Grand Street and Newtown Railroad Company was chartered August 18th, 1860, with a capital stock of \$200,000, which was afterwards reduced to \$170,000. A double track, from the foot of Broadway along First and Grand streets, was completed to Bushwick avenue in October, 1860, and afterwards extended to Maspeth and Newtown. The present route of the main line is from Grand street to Humboldt street, to Meeker avenue and to Calvary cemetery, while a branch road continues on the original track from Grand street to Newtown. The whole length of the road is 8½ miles. The company has 50 cars and 180 horses. Nearly 2,000,000 passengers were carried last year. This road was much indebted to its originator, Ira Buckman, Jr., for its successful struggle against many obstacles and much opposition.

Its present officers are: Nicholas Wyckoff, *Pres.*, Edmund Driggs, *Vice Pres.*, William E. Horwill, *Sec.* and *Treas.*, and R. B. Sturges, *Supt.*

The Broadway Railroad Company was the first one organized in the eastern district. Its charter is dated August 20, 1858, but the road was not established till 1860. Its original officers were Thomas G. Talmage, *Pres.*, R. O. Cromelin, *Sec.* and *Treas.*, Augustus Ivins, *Supt.*, L. R. Miller, *Att'y.* The company's route extends from Roosevelt street ferry up Broadway to East New York. They have also two branch lines, one from Broadway to Reid avenue and Utica avenue to Atlantic avenue and return, and the other from Broadway through Sumner and Troy avenues to Bergen street. The length of track is 7 miles. The company employs 350 men and uses 120 cars and 625 horses. The number of passengers carried last year was 5,790,755. An extension from East New York to Cypress Hills, a distance of two miles, is operated as a steam-road, and is owned jointly by the Broadway and Brooklyn city companies.

The Brooklyn and Coney Island Road, usually known as the Smith street route, is chronologically next in order, but we will postpone the consideration of that till we take up the Coney Island roads together.

The Brooklyn City and Newtown Railroad Co. comes next. The articles of association of this company were filed May 22, 1860, with the following officers: R. B. Catherwood, *Pres.*, E. Pell, *Vice Pres.*, C. O. Richardson, *Sec.*, S. R. Phelps, *Treas.*, and Samuel McElwly, *Eng'r.* Its route extends from Fulton Ferry through Fulton, Front, Washington, entering Fulton again at Myrtle, thence to DeKalb avenue to Myrtle avenue, a distance of 4½ miles. At first and for several years its route was from Front street to Bridge, to Willoughby and to DeKalb, and returning from DeKalb to Gold, to Front and Water, only touching Fulton at Gold street. These routes were definitely abandoned in 1877. Since the opening of the Bridge, they have been partially revived in connection with a short line to the Bridge approach in Sands street. This road is said to run the finest cars in the city. Officers, Samuel Hutton, *Pres.*, Louis Fitzgerald, *Vice Pres.*, H. A. Schultz, *Sec.* and *Treas.*, and H. W. Bush, *Supt.*

The South Brooklyn Central Railroad Co. is next in the order of time. The first company operating the route now controlled by this company was known as the *South Brooklyn and Park*, and was organized in 1865. It was long known as the Sackett street and Bergen street line, and did not attain any considerable success. The road was foreclosed and sold; the company reorganized under its present name and chartered August 7th, 1877. Its capital stock is \$125,000. Its line from Hamilton ferry to Kingston avenue is 7 miles in length, of which 4½ are in operation. It has recently opened a branch through Bergen street, Flatbush avenue to Prospect Park. At Nostrand avenue it connects with the Williamsburgh and Flatbush line to foot of Broadway, E. D. The number of passengers transported last year was 1,500,000. Officers, D. B. Mangam, *Pres.*, R. W. Adams, *Treas.*, John O. Adams, *Sec.*

The Bushwick Railroad Company was chartered March 20th, 1867, with a capital stock of \$200,000, and the following officers: F. W. Kalbfleisch, *Pres.*, A. M. Bliss, *Treas.*, H. S. Bellows, *Sec.*, Ira H. Moore, *Supt.* The company operates three horse routes: the *Bushwick*, from Grand street ferry to city line; the *Greenpoint*, from Tenth and Twenty-third street ferries, Greenpoint, to Bushwick avenue, and the *Tompkins Avenue*, from South 7th and Grand street ferries to Bergen street, Kingston avenue and Brighton Beach junction. It also runs two steam lines, from City line to Cypress Hills, and from the city line to the Lutheran cemetery. The total length of its lines is about 13 miles. The company employs five motors, 140 cars and 475 horses. Officers, Wm. H. Husted, *Pres.*, Frederick Cromwell, *Vice Pres.*, Augustus Ivins, *Treas.*, S. D. Hallowell, *Sec.*, Wm. N. Morrison, *Supt.*

The Van Brunt and Erie Basin Railroad Co.—Organized February 15th, 1861, with a capital of \$50,000, which was afterwards increased to \$150,000. Its first officers were: Robert Middleton, *Pres.*, and Andrew Foster, *Sec.* Its route extends from Hamilton Ferry to the Erie Basin, one and one quarter miles. It transfers its passengers by Brooklyn City Railroad to Fulton Ferry, passing all ferries. It employs 20 men, and with 25 horses and 6 cars carried nearly a half million of passengers last year. Officers, 1883: Jas. Binns, *Pres.*; Edmund Terry, *Treas.* and *Sec.*; John Cunningham, *Supt.*

The Brooklyn Cross-town Railroad Co.—In 1868 the *Nassau Railroad Co.* and the *Greenpoint and Williamsburgh Co.* were merged in the *Brooklyn City, Hunter's Point and Prospect Park Co.*, with Gen. H. W. Slocum, *Pres.*, Demas Strong, *Treas.*, and C. F. Estee, *Sec.* In 1874 the company was changed to the *Brooklyn and Crosstown Railroad Co.*, with a capital of \$200,000 in \$50 shares. Its length of track from Hunter's Point to Erie Basin is eight miles. Its route tra-

verses the whole length of the city from North to South, connecting all the great manufacturing and commercial establishments, and crossing all the numerous East and West lines. The company started originally with 8 two-horse cars and 76 horses. In 1876, one-horse cars, leaving every two minutes during the day, were substituted for the larger cars running at longer intervals. The company now employs 240 men, 400 horses and 75 cars. It carried five million passengers last year. *Officers:* Gen. H. W. Slocum, *Pres.*, John R. Connor, *Sec.* and *Treas.*

The North Second Street and Middle Village Railroad Co. was first organized in 1864 as the *Metropolitan Railroad*. In 1869, its name was changed to the *Grand Street Ferry and Middle Village R. R.*; and on Oct. 10, 1870, when it first commenced an active existence, it took the name of the *North Second Street and Middle Village Railroad Co.* It absorbed whatever there was to absorb (not very much) of the *Brooklyn, Winfield and Newtown Co.*, and commenced the construction of its road from the foot of Broadway, E. D., through First to North Second street, along North Second to Metropolitan avenue, to the Lutheran Cemetery and to Middle Village, Queens Co. Its track is seven miles in length; capital stock is \$150,000, and it has a funded and floating debt of \$186,000. It carried, in 1881, 1,375,488 passengers. The *Pres.* of the road is R. H. Greene; the *Sec.*, William T. Graff.

New Williamsburgh and Flatbush R. R. Co.—This company organized in 1866 as the *Williamsburgh and Flatbush*, with the following officers and directors: J. C. Hazelton, *Pres.*; Edward Boddy, *Sec.*; C. H. Wilkins, *Treas.*; J. T. Conover, H. A. Merrill, W. V. Studdiford, J. C. Oatman, C. H. Smith. The company was re-organized in 1873, and chartered October 18, 1873. The length of the road from the South Seventh street Ferry to Prospect Park is four and a half miles. Its route is from foot of Broadway to Fifth street, Division avenue, Lee avenue, Nostrand avenue, Malbone street and Prospect Park. It employs 220 horses and 56 cars, and transported two million passengers last year. *Officers and directors:* Geo. W. Van Allen, *Pres.*; Wm. B. Wait, *Sec.*; C. B. Cottrell, *Treas.*; Wm. H. Van Allen, D. W. Binns, W. A. Jones, C. B. Cottrell, R. W. Adams, *Directors*.

Grand Street, Prospect Park and Flatbush Railroad Co.—The first officers of this company were Loftis Wood, *Pres.*; Walter G. Hovey, *Sec.*; P. H. House, *Supt.* The road was sold on foreclosure Dec. 23d, 1869. The company was re-organized with a capital of \$200,000, and a new charter obtained April 13th, 1870. This company leases the *Prospect Park and Flatbush Road*, which was organized in 1878. Its length of track, in 1882, was 4½ miles. It employs 125 men, 250 horses and 60 cars, and last year carried nearly 2,000,000 passengers. *Officers:* Loftis Wood, *Pres. and Supt.*; Thomas Ennis, *Treas.*; Samuel Parkhill, *Sec.* In the beginning of 1883 this company again changed hands, Mr. Loftis Wood and his associates withdrawing from it entirely. The new company have laid new track, equipped it throughout in the best manner, and extended the route to the Eastern entrance to Greenwood, a distance of nearly two miles, making its entire track over six miles. It now passes around the east and south sides of the park, between it and Windsor terrace, and reaches the new and beautiful eastern entrance to Greenwood. It connects at Bedford station with the Manhattan Beach and Brighton Beach Railroads, and at Ninth avenue and Twentieth street with the Culver road. Its original capital stock was \$200,000, and its funded debt of the same amount. The new company has increased the capital and probably the funded debt.

Before entering upon the *Coney Island Railroads*, some of which are also largely engaged in local transportation in Brooklyn, there is one more route, part railway and part steamboat, which deserves mention. It is:

The Brooklyn, Canarsie and Rockaway Beach Railroad and Steamboat Route. During the summer, trains run half hourly or hourly between the Howard House, East New York, and Canarsie Bay, and connect with steamers running to and from Rockaway Beach. D. C. Littlejohn is president of the company. Both the Rockaway beaches are now reached by branches of the Long Island Railroad and by steamers plying regularly from New York, passing and landing also at the Coney Island piers; and the Canarsie route has not met with such an extraordinary increase as some of the other modes of reaching these famous beaches. A part of this road is or has been leased to the Manhattan Beach Railway.

The following are the railways which have one or both of their termini at Coney Island:

The Coney Island and Brooklyn Railroad Company was chartered December 10th, 1860. Its first President was David M. Talmage, and first Secretary, Garret P. Bergen. Its capital stock was \$300,000, which was afterwards increased to \$500,000. It has a funded debt of \$381,000. Its length from Fulton Ferry to Coney Island is ten and a half miles, with a branch of one mile to Hamilton Ferry. It passes through Water, Main, Prospect, Jay and Smith streets, and Ninth street to Ninth avenue before reaching the city line, and has a large local patronage aside from its Coney Island business. Horses are used within the city limits and steam motors are employed for the remainder of the distance. The company owns 91 cars and 295 horses. The present officers are General James Jourdan, *President*; Edward F. Drayton, *Secretary*, and William Farrell, *Superintendent*. The number of passengers carried in 1881 was 4,208,107.

Brooklyn, Bath and Coney Island Railroad Company.—This company was organized in 1862 with a capital stock of \$100,000 and the following officers: Alfred H. Partridge, *President*; G. P. Bergen, *Treasurer*, and C. R. Alton, *Secretary*. The road was sold upon mortgage foreclosure in 1868, and operated by the owners until 1879, when the present company was organized. Its charter bears date January 22, 1879. The capital stock was increased to \$500,000, of which, however, only \$300,000 has been subscribed and paid in. It has a funded debt of \$80,000. The whole number of stockholders is 7. The road is seven miles in length, and employs eight engines and thirty cars. It carried last year a half million passengers. *Officers* are C. Godfrey Gunther, *President*; George A. Gunther, *Secretary and Treasurer*; Wm. Kaval-ski, *Engineer*.

The Prospect Park and Coney Island Railroad Company, chartered Oct. 9, 1874, was the next of the Coney Island roads. It was formed by the consolidation of several other roads, among which was the *Park Avenue*, chartered in 1870, and the *Greenwood and Coney Island*, chartered in 1872. Mr. Andrew R. Culver has been its leading and effective spirit from the first. Its original capital authorized by the charter was \$500,000, but this was reduced by the stockholders in 1880, to \$250,000, all paid in. It has a funded debt of \$750,000, and the cost of the road and equipment has been about \$1,300,000. The road is 12 $\frac{7}{10}$ miles in length and extends through Water to Bridge, Concord, Navy, Park avenue, Vanderbilt avenue to Ninth avenue and Greenwood Cemetery, connecting with steam cars there for Coney Island. It has

been a prime factor in the building up of Coney Island. It has leased one or two short railroads on Coney Island, and Mr. Culver has been actively engaged for two or three years past in the effort to obtain a charter for an elevated Rapid Transit road through Brooklyn, to connect with his steam railroad from Greenwood to Coney Island. His plans, though urged with great moderation and regard to the rights of property holders, have not yet been successful, but in the new deals consequent upon the completion of the Bridge, his turn may come. He has at present ten locomotives and fifty steam passenger cars; seventy-five horse cars, and about 275 horses. He transported in 1881, 3,645,281 passengers, and about the same number in 1882.

The New York and Manhattan Beach Railroad Company was chartered October 28, 1876, and was in operation in the early summer of 1877. Its capital stock is \$800,000, of which \$750,000 has been subscribed and paid in. Its funded debt in 1881 was \$834,600. It has two routes, one from Greenpoint, E. D., to Manhattan Beach, crossing the 23d Street Ferry, New York; the other from foot of Whitehall street, New York, by steam ferry, to Bay Ridge, and thence by rail to Manhattan Beach. It also leases a part of the old Canarsie line already mentioned, and several other short lines. Its length of road operated was in 1881, 18 $\frac{25}{100}$ miles. It had that year eight locomotive engines and 79 passenger cars. In 1880, it transported 1,227,597; in 1881, 945,871; in 1882, less than 900,000. The number of stockholders is 35. Officers: Austin Corbin, *President*; J. Baxter Upham, *Vice President*; G. S. Moulton, *Secretary and Treasurer*; Daniel C. Corbin, *Superintendent*. In the Winter of 1882-1883, Mr. Austin Corbin, who had, in 1881, become a large stockholder in the Long Island Railroad Company, and its president, arranged for leasing the Manhattan Beach Railroad to that company, and perhaps for an eventual consolidation with it. This arrangement required some changes of track, stations, &c., but the two are now run practically as one road, and there is free and ready access to and from all parts of Long Island and Manhattan Beach. This change has undoubtedly largely increased the travel over this road the past season.

The Brooklyn, Flatbush and Coney Island Railroad Company was formed October 5th, 1877, by the consolidation of the Coney Island and East River Railroad Company, with the Flatbush, Prospect Park and Concourse Railroad Company. In its organization there were twenty-six directors; the officers were: *President*, John A. Lott; *Treasurer*, Charles C. Betts; *Secretary*, Monroe B. Washburn; *Superintendent*, Robert White. Trains were run from Prospect Station to Coney Island July 2nd, 1878, and from Flatbush avenue on the 20th of August following. The company owns about fifty acres of land at its terminus on Coney Island, which, with the Hotel Brighton, it has leased for a term of years. The statistics of the railway are as follows: Its terminus is at the Hotel Brighton, Brighton Beach. Its capital stock is \$500,000, all paid in; its funded debt is \$1,000,000. There are 155 stockholders. The cost of road and equipment in 1881 has been \$1,546,893. The length of track of main line is 7.50 miles. Some branches owned or leased add more than a mile. The number of passengers carried in 1880 was 1,004,502; in 1881, 1,024,629; in 1882, about a million. The season of 1883 was unfavorable; high prices diminished travel. The number of locomotives in 1881 was seven; of passenger cars, 44. There are four stations in the town of Gravesend, and two in Flatbush and Brooklyn. The late Henry C. Murphy was the leader in this enterprise.

The New York and Sea Beach Railway Company, chartered in September, 1876, was not completed till 1877 by Mr. M. McCormack, Col. James Smith, and other New York capi-

talists, who held large landed interests at Mapleton, down a road from Bath junction, on Gunther's road, to Coney Island, which was operated one season with a single train. In 1879 the company was strengthened; Colonel Ricker was elected President, and a fine water-front at Bay Ridge was purchased, together with the right of way from Bay Ridge to Bath. The road was opened for through business to Coney Island July 19, 1879. In 1883, the company was re-organized, and the following officers elected: Charles Seidler, *President*; W. O. McDowell, *Vice-President and General Manager*, and C. W. Douglas, *Superintendent*. The length of the road is six miles, connecting at Bay Ridge with a line of steamers for New York. The company also owns several acres of land at Coney Island, on which are the Sea Beach Palace Hotel, and a number of other structures devoted to the entertainment of visitors to the beach, under the superintendence of E. D. Myers, general manager. They have five locomotives and thirty-one cars. Passengers carried, in 1880, 389,000; in 1881, 411,490; 1882, about 450,000. The corporation is distinguished for its attention to the wants of the traveling public, and shows an interest in its employes which has resulted in better service and increased patronage. The road has a large proportion of the carrying trade between New York and Coney Island.

Its capital stock is \$500,000, of which \$402,767 has been subscribed and paid in, in 1881. Its funded debt the same year was \$429,788. The number of stockholders is 53. The cost of road and equipment to the close of 1881, was \$776,365. The officers are Frederick A. Potts, *President*; John S. Barnes, *Vice-President*; G. A. Hobart, *Treasurer*; Edmund C. Stanton, *Secretary*; C. W. Douglas, *General Manager*.

The Marine Railway, on Manhattan Beach, intended to extend from Sheephead Bay to Brighton Beach, owned and run in the Corbin interest, is a paying investment; narrow-gauge, inexpensively built, but carrying 871,898 passengers in 1881, almost paid for itself in a single year. Its officers are the same as those of the Manhattan Beach R. R.

The other railways in operation on Coney Island, are CULVER'S, from West Brighton Beach to Coney Island Point, and an *Elevated Railroad* from Brighton to West Brighton. The last was chartered in 1880, is one mile in length; capital stock, \$115,900, all paid in; funded debt, \$144,835; forty-nine stockholders; cost of road and equipment, in 1881, \$236,048.79; number of passengers in 1881 (two months, eighteen days), 137,461; six locomotives, seven passenger-cars. Officers: Seth R. Keeney, *President*; Isidore M. Bon, *Treasurer*; Clarence A. Barrow, *Secretary*; James L. Morrow, *Superintendent*. Other roads have been projected, but none of them are now in operation.

The following table, prepared with great care from the latest report of the State Engineer and other official sources, embodies, it is believed, as completely as possible, all the particulars which go to make up the history of the railroads of Kings County, with their condition and officers on the 1st of January, 1882, the latest date for which reports have been received. The footings of the columns and the general summary which follows the table, serve to show that while railroads have had an immense development within the county, and transported, in 1881, 92,826,786 passengers, they have been, as a rule, not very profitable to the stockholders. Only \$520,641.50 was paid in dividends that year on a paid-up capital stock of \$20,576,250, or less than 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ per cent., while the actual excess of re-

ceipts over expenditures was only \$128,000. The prospects for a greater measure of success in the future for some of these roads is brighter now than it was one or two years since. Very many companies have failed and become extinct, while only four or five roads have paid large dividends, the Brooklyn City paying the largest, 14 per cent. per annum. Yet most of these roads are worked to their full capacity, and there is a demand, which must soon be met, for some mode of transportation which shall combine greater speed, better facilities for entrance and exit to and from the cars, and more ample accommodations for passengers. Whether the elevated steam roads can fulfill all these conditions is still an unsolved problem.

There have been several attempts made to build *elevated railroads*, and one was partially constructed, but became bankrupt; its management being so tainted with suspicions of fraud that it was abandoned, and a prejudice excited against all elevated railroads, which has thus far prevented the prosecution of any similar

enterprises. Eventually there will probably be some elevated roads built on principles which shall be just and fair to the citizens and property owners, as well as to the stockholders of the roads. There were two or three *plank-roads* in existence so late as 1870, and there are traditions of them still among the oldest inhabitants, but like plank-roads everywhere else, they were long since abandoned.

There are, in the county, two principal *boulevards*, the Ocean Parkway, from Prospect Park to Coney Island, and the Sackett street boulevard or Eastern Parkway, extending from the Park to East New York, each two hundred and fifty feet wide, with rows of trees, macadamized, or rather telfordized, and forming the finest drives on the continent. Several of the principal streets of the city, notably Flatbush avenue, Bedford avenue, Clinton avenue and Clinton street, and Third street, are of exceptional width, well paved and lighted, and forming attractive routes for carriages, etc., to and from Prospect Park.

BROOKLYN FERRIES AND FERRY RIGHTS.

By *Henry R. Stiles. A.M. W.D.*
Editor.

The Earliest Ferry established between Long Island and New Amsterdam, was from the foot of the present Fulton street, Brooklyn, to the foot of the present Peck Slip, New York. This was what was subsequently known as the Old Ferry. At that early day, the time occupied in crossing the river, as well as the difficulties and labor of rowing across a strong current, were so great, as to necessitate the location of the ferry at this point, where the two shores come nearest together; although at a considerable distance above the then settled portion of New Amsterdam. The first regular ferryman of whom there is any mention, was Cornelis Dircksen, who, in 1642, kept a small inn near the present Peck Slip, where he owned a farm. It is a somewhat curious coincidence that our fellow citizen, Mr. HENRY E. PIERREPONT, whose whole life has been so intimately associated with the history of Brooklyn ferries, is a lineal descendant of this Dircksen, who seems also to have owned a small piece of land, with a house and garden, on Long Island, near the present Fulton Ferry, which, in 1643, he sold to one Willem Thomasen, together with his right of ferriage, provided the director would give his consent, for 2,300 guilders, in cash and merchandise. Willem Thomasen may possi-

bly have been the same as, or the predecessor of Willem Jansen, who is next found in charge of the ferry. The embryo city of New Amsterdam, at this period, afforded the country people of Long Island their only market for sale or purchase, and the travel of passengers and produce across the ferry gradually increased to such an extent, as to attract the attention of the prudent burgomasters of the city, who, on the 13th of February, 1652, applied to Gov. Stuyvesant for the ferry franchise, as a legitimate source of revenue, with which to defray the municipal expenses. Their petition, however was refused; the Director perhaps, considering it as one of his own perquisites. Two years later, July, 1654, in consequence of the "daily confusion occurring among the ferrymen on Manhattan Island, so that the inhabitants are waiting whole days before they can obtain a passage, and then not without danger, and at an exorbitant price," the director and council found it necessary to enact an ordinance, the first on record relative to ferries. It comprised the following provisions:

1. That no person shall ferry from one side of the river to the other without the license from the magistrates, under the penalty of £1 Flemish, for the first offence; £2 for the second, and £3, with confiscation of boat and corporal pun-

ishment, for the third infraction of this order; one-third of this fine to be paid to the legal ferryman, one-third to the attorney-general, and one-third to be at the disposal of the judge.

2. The ferryman shall always keep proper servants and boats, and a lodge on both sides of the river, to protect passengers from the weather.

3. The ferryman is to be allowed:

	Fl.	St.
For each wagon or cart, with two horses, or oxen,	2	10
For one cart or wagon, with one horse.....	2	
For one cart or plough.....	1	
For one pig, sheep, buck or goat.....		
For two, eight stuivers, and what is above that, each	3	
For every man or woman, Indian or squaw.....	6	
For two or more persons, each one.....	3	
For a child under ten years, half fare.....		
For one horse, or four footed horned beast.....	1	10
For one hogshead of tobacco.....	16	
For one ton of heer.....	16	
For one anker of wine or liquor.....	6	
For a tub of butter, soap or such like.....	6	
For a mud (4 bushels) of grain.....	4	

And what exceeds that is one half a stuiver for skeple. Other articles not specified above, in proportion, as parties shall agree.

4. The ferryman cannot be compelled to ferry anything over before he is paid.

5. The hours of the ferry shall be from 5 o'clock, A. M., to 8 P. M., in summer; "provided the windmill (on the battery of Manhattans) hath not taken in its sail;" after this last mentioned hour, double ferriage.

6. From 7 o'clock A. M., to 5 P. M., in winter, but he is not to be obliged to ferry during a tempest, or "when the windmill hath lowered its sail, in consequence of storm or otherwise."

7. The Director and members of the council, the court messenger, and other persons invested with authority, or dispatched by the Executive, are to be exempt from toll.

In the year 1655, Egbert Van Borsum leased the ferry from Governor Stuyvesant (whose perquisite it seems to have been) for three years, and erected a ferry-house, or tavern, the first erected on the Brooklyn side. On the 19th of March, 1658, he renewed his lease, for the term of three years from the last of May ensuing, at a rent of 300 guilders per annum. By the terms of his contract, he was obliged to furnish, within four or five months, a large scow at his own expense. He was in possession of the ferry as late as June 15, 1663, at which time the governor allowed him fifty guilders, for public services as ferryman.

Ancient Ferry Rights.—It is quite evident, from the above facts, that the ferry to Long Island, although regulated by legal enactments, *was never held by the city of New Amsterdam, as a municipal right and possession, during the continuance of the Dutch government.*

On the 6th of September (27th of August, O. S.), 1664, the New Netherlands capitulated to the British arms, and on the 8th the City of New Amsterdam was formally surrendered to Col. Richard Nicolls. On the 18th of October, 1667, Nicolls, then the first English

governor of the colony of New York, granted to the inhabitants of Brooklyn a patent, wherein they were fully and amply *confirmed* in all the rights and privileges of a town.

This patent itself is evidently *confirmatory* of some previous general patent of the town, under the Dutch government, which is now lost, and, it must be remembered, antedates the first (or Nicolls') charter of New York some eighteen years.

In August, 1673, the New Netherlands were retaken by a Dutch squadron, under command of Captains Bencke and Evertsen, and in August, 1674, again passed, and finally, into the hands of the English.

In 1667, the ferryman and his son, or servant, at the Long Island ferry, was excused from training.

From January, 1674, to January, 1675, the ferry was leased by C. Dyre, at £103 per annum. "From that time to Mr. Leete's taking it, Otto Garrets took it, but giving no security, Mr. Wells received it, at £259.10."

In 1674, Sir Edmund Andros assumed the government of the colony, and the same year confirmed all its rights and privileges to the New Netherlands, and, in October, 1675, gave to New Amsterdam its first mayor, aldermen and sheriff. He was succeeded by Sir Thomas Dongan, who arrived on the 25th of August, 1683.

By his orders was convened, October 17, 1683, the first colonial assembly, elected by the people. On the 9th of November a petition was presented to him, by the mayor and aldermen of New Amsterdam, asking for a charter, and reciting the ancient customs, privileges and immunities of the city, which, they asserted, had been confirmed and granted to them by the late Governor Nicolls, *no mention, however, being made of any ferry.* The petition was granted; and, emboldened by the governor's liberal attitude toward them, the authorities, on the 30th of the same month, presented an additional request for certain other rights and privileges, as desirable sources of revenue. Among these are mentioned, *for the first time*, "all the vacant lands within this island to low water mark," and "the ferry now between the said city and Long Island, or that hereafter shall be appointed." In his reply, the governor, though intimating his surprise "at so suddenly receiving another petition" from them, inasmuch as he had so recently granted to them almost "every particular of a large and considerable petition," expressed his willingness to oblige them "as far as can be reasonably done;" and informs them that "the ferry is granted with the promise that two boats for passengers be kept on each side of the river, and one boat for cattle each side of the river also." Also, "that no ferry in any other place allowed, but what is already." As to vacant lands within the city to low water mark, he informs them that they are "already disposed of." The discussion which ensued resulted in the grant, in 1686, of what is known as *Dongan's Charter*, by which the

corporation became vested with divers sources of immediate income. Among these were the ferry, and an extension of jurisdiction in vacant lands to low water mark *all round* Manhattan Island, but not a word is mentioned concerning the land between high and low water mark on the Brooklyn shore. Indeed, it would seem as if the governor entertained some doubts as to his right even to grant the ferry, for it contains an express saving of all the rights of other persons, bodies politic and corporate, their heirs, successors and assigns, in as ample a manner as if that charter had not been made. And, in fact, the charter for which Dongan received the sum of £300 from the corporation, was never confirmed, and its validity was even afterwards disputed by Dongan himself.

On the 13th of May, 1686, only a few days after the granting of this charter, the freeholders and inhabitants of Brooklyn, actuated, perhaps, by fear of encroachments by New York, obtained from Governor Dongan a patent under the seal of the colony, fully confirmatory of that granted them, in 1667, by Governor Nicolls. In this patent the land and water boundaries of the town are set forth as in the former, the rights of the citizens are enlarged, and a quit rent is reserved.

In the step thus taken by the Brooklyn people to protect their rights, we see the first evidence of those conflicting claims and interests which have made the ferry question, from that day to this, a bone of contention betwixt the two municipalities. Notwithstanding the specious claims set forth in the *New York charter* of 1686, that the ferry had been established and settled "for the accommodation and conveniency of passengers, the citizens and strangers," the people on the Brooklyn shore maintained their right to carry themselves, and others who might request them, over the river, without regard to the ferry privilege. Among other plausible pleas urged in their own defence, was the one that the ferry granted to the corporation, being the only established one, the whole river, except at that point, was a public highway, perfectly free to all who chose to pass. So universally did they carry their principles into practice that John Airensen, who leased the corporation ferry, 1692, for the term of seven years, failed, owing to the number of independent boats, to realize his expected income, and after stemming the current of competition awhile, was only kept from abandoning his lease by the inducements and encouragements offered him by the authorities.

It would seem, from the following order, that the Court of Sessions of Kings County exercised some authority over the ferry between Brooklyn and New York, October 7, 1690: "Whereas, much inconvenience does arise by several negroes coming on this island from New York and other places, and from this island to New York: It is ordered, that the ferryman shall not bring or set over any negro or slaves upon the

Sabbath day, without a ticket from their masters." (*Ct. of Sess. Rec.*)

On the 6th of May, 1691, an act was passed by the general assembly, confirming to the inhabitants of the colony their several grants and patents. By this act both of the patents of Brooklyn were confirmed.

Meanwhile, the corporation of New York, evidently uncertain about the perfect validity of the Dongan charter, took measures, in 1692, to secure its confirmation from the Crown.

On October 12th, 1694, the New York corporation further strengthened their foothold on the Brooklyn side by purchasing of one William Morris, for no specific consideration, a piece of land in Brooklyn near the ferry.

This deed is the foundation of the corporation claim to their land in Brooklyn.

The ferry was leased, on October 20th, 1695, to John Andreson, at auction, for the term of seven years from 1st of March, 1696, at a rent of £147 per annum, payable annually. In 1699, among other important improvements undertaken by the city, a contract was made for a new brick building, at the ferry on the Long Island side, in size 24 by 40 feet. This edifice, serving the double purpose of a ferry house and tavern, was completed about the year 1700, at a cost of £435. Soon after, the following rates of ferriage were established: single persons, 8 stuivers in wampum, or a silver two-pence; persons in company, half price; after sunset, double ferriage; cattle, single, one shilling; in company, nine-pence; colts or calves, three-pence, etc.

In 1698-9 the ferry was leased to one John Euwatse (Jan Evertse?).

He was succeeded, December 27, 1700, by Dirck Benson, at an annual rent of £130 for seven years from March 25, next ensuing. At the same time, the lessee was required to keep a pen or pound for cattle, etc., and to land his passengers either at the dock of the city, "of some of the slips, or at the Burgher's path," and the conditions of the lease mention "a new brick house barne and pen thereunto belonging."

On the 10th of October, 1707, the ferry, together "with the new ferry house, barn, pen," etc., was leased to James Harding, victualler, of New York, at an annual rent of £180.

The terms of this lease, somewhat altered from those of the previous lease, specified that the ferry was to land "every Monday and Thursday, at Countess' Key, every Tuesday and Friday at Burgher's Path, and every Wednesday and Saturday at the Dock Slip, near Col. Courtlandt's house, and at no other place whatsoever."

Renewed Contests as to Ferry Rights.—In January, 1708-9, one Cornelius Sebring, a wealthy farmer and mill-owner of Brooklyn, petitioned the governor and council for permission to establish a new ferry from some point on the island, between the old

ferry and Red Hook, to the centre of the city of New York. Taking alarm at this, the corporation immediately (Feb. 5, 1709) presented a remonstrance thereto, in which, after reciting the long time which they had held the ferry, and the great expense which they had been at in maintaining and keeping it in proper repair, they state that it "is the *only considerable income* left to support the public buildings, bridges, gaols, landing places, fire and candle for their watches, salaries of their officers, bell men, &c.;" and the other public and necessary charges of the city. Wherefore they pray to be protected in their rights against the "unreasonable and unjust petition of the said Cornelius Sebring." Their petition was granted, and that of Sebring rejected.

Annoyed, however, by the pertinacious opposition of their Brooklyn neighbors, and bent on wresting from that town their water rights, the corporation of New York, on the 19th of April, 1708, obtained from Gov. Cornbury, a man notorious for his vices, and disregard of justice, a *new* city charter, confirming them in their title to the old ferry, and investing them with a grant of all the *vacant and unappropriated land between high and low water mark, all the distance of the Long Island shore, from Red Hook to the Wallabout*, reserving to the inhabitants of Brooklyn dwelling by the river side only, the right of transporting themselves, and their goods over the river, ferriage free, provided they carried no strangers. As the patents of the farms on the Long Island shore extended to the river, there was consequently no vacant and unappropriated land between these farms and low water mark. The grant, therefore, was for jurisdiction only, and not a right of property, as claimed and first established by Philip Livingston, when Mayor of New York, by his taking out the first grant for a pepper-corn consideration, for the land between high and low water in front of his brewery at foot of Joralemon street.

In December, 1712, the ferry was sold at auction to Dirck Adolph, mariner, of New York, for five years, at £211 per annum. In January, 1717, it was again taken by James Harding, for five years, at a rent of £155 per annum for the Nassau side, and £85 per annum for the New York side. Harding's application for this lease was backed up by the proffer of "Capt. Lancaster Lymes, Capt. William Walton, and Mr. Anthony Duane, merchants, three substantial citizens of this corporation, and of undoubted wealth and reputation" as his securities; and by a letter to the corporation, from his excellency Governor Hunter, recommending him as a person "who, while he had the ferry, diligently tended the same and duly and punctually paid his rent," and that he "be preferred before his competitors, none offering more rent for the said ferries than he has done, etc." Harding played his cards well; the corporation of New York could do no less than accommodate their action to the suggestion of

"his Excellency's said letter," "to which" as their minutes say, "this corporation will always pay the greatest regard and deference imaginable, as well as the knowledge they have of the said James Harding, and of his honesty, industry and capacity to undertake the said ferries."

On the 10th of January, 1723, the Long Island portion of the ferry (the ferry privilege had previously been divided into two distinct leases, by resolution of the corporation, Nov. 27, 1722) was leased at auction to John Dean, Mariner, of New York, for five years from the 25th of the ensuing March, at a yearly rent of £135; and the New York part of the same ferry (established between the slip at Burgher's path and the Great Dock) to James Harding, the former incumbent, for the same period, at £70 per annum. But Harding desiring to reside on Nassau Island, probably on his wife's account, she being "lame and sickly," was obliged (inasmuch as the corporation insisted that the lessee of the said ferry should reside on the New York side) to seek a release from his contract, and the lease of the ferry between Burgher's slip and the Great Dock, to Brooklyn, was again put up at auction January 29, 1723, and was bid off by William Webbing, butcher, for five years, from the 25th of March, ensuing, at the rent of £71 per annum. The latter, however, in 1725 complains, as a butcher, against James Harding, as being then in charge of the ferry, for carelessness, etc., in the transportation of cattle. Probably, then, Harding had bought out Webbing's ferry lease.

In 1727, the ferry was sold at auction to Theophilus Ellsworth, victualler, of New York, for five years, at an annual rent of £258, and was renewed to him in 1732, for five years longer, at £245 per annum.

The Montgomery Charter.—Meanwhile the Brooklyn people, who treated the pretensions of the Cornbury charter with very little respect, and who had not ceased to injure the corporation ferry by every means in their power, procured from the colonial legislature of 1721 an act confirming their patent rights. To obviate the effects of this law, and in the hopes of strengthening the charter of Cornbury, which, from the circumstances under which it was obtained, the corporation had reason to fear was invalid, the latter procured in 1730, from Governor Montgomery, a new charter confirming their pretended rights to the land, *to high water mark on the Brooklyn shore*.

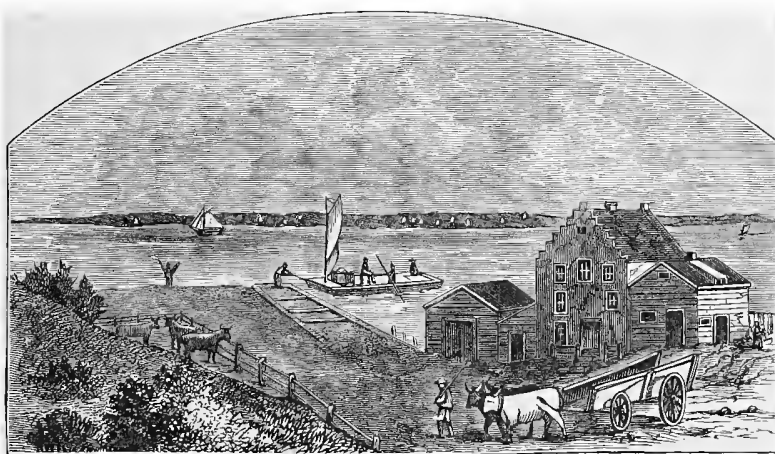
This, known as the "Montgomery Charter," after reciting the Dongan and Cornbury charters, and the causes of the various disputes, etc., concerning their validity, makes the following remarkable confession: "that the said city, or inhabitants or citizens thereof, never were well, regularly or legally incorporated, and for want thereof, none of all the said grants, confirmations, instruments or letters patent, hereinbefore mentioned, could take effect or operate, and for divers other defects in all, some, or one, of the aforesaid

grants, confirmations or writings," etc. This charter, which, according to the rather tardy confession of the worthy corporation of New York, may be considered the first charter on which they can justly found their claims, confirmed all that was previously intended to be granted in the charters of Dongan and Cornbury, in reference to Brooklyn. The corporation paid the governor the sum of £1,400 for it, but it was refused confirmation by George II, and so remained until Oct. 14th, 1732, when an act passed the colonial assembly, "confirming unto the city of New York its rights and privileges." Nothing, however, could quiet the Brooklyn people who, in addition to constant infractions of the law, appealed to the assembly in January, 1735-'6, for a repeal of the obnoxious confirmatory act of 1732. Their application succeeded in the House, in the face of strenuous opposition from the corporation of New York, but by some means was stifled in the Council.

In December, 1737, the ferry was leased to William Cornell, Jr., "of Hempstead, Queens County on Nassau Island, yeoman," for five years at £310 per annum, and at the expiration of his lease, it was taken by Richard Baker.

In 1737, another petition from Brooklyn people for release from former law was presented; and, in fact, from 1730 to 1745, the corporation of New York lived

New York market in his market boat. This suit (*Hendrik Remsen vs. Corporation*) was first tried before a jury in Westchester County, and after being kept before the Supreme Court of the colony for thirty years, was decided in October, 1775, in favor of Remsen, who was awarded damages in the sum of one hundred and eighteen pounds, fourteen shillings and tenpence half-penny for his costs and charges. An appeal from this decision, to the king and council, was brought by the corporation, but was not determined in consequence of the Revolutionary war. "There is a tradition in this town that the corporation of New York were so apprehensive of this claim on the part of the town of Brooklyn, that in order to disengage Hendrik Remsen from the interest of the town, they gave him a house and lot of land near Coenties Slip, in the city of New York. How far this tradition is correct, we are unable to say. It appears, however, that he about that time became in possession of such property, and the same remained in his family within the memory of some of our inhabitants." During the litigation of this suit, in 1748, the ferry-house belonging to the corporation, on the Long Island side, was set on fire and consumed with all its contents. A view of the old ferry-house, copied from an ancient engraving, is herewith presented.



OLD FERRY-HOUSE, 1746.

in a perpetual state of warfare with the inhabitants of Brooklyn. They constructed a large stone house which infringed upon a part of the highway of the village; and by charging extortionate rates of wharfage on those who were privileged to pass in their own boats, as well as by every other means in their power, endeavored to compel them to pass the river in the public ferry boats. At length, exasperated by the continued injustice and petty annoyances to which they were subjected, the citizens of Brooklyn, in July, 1745, compelled the corporation of New York to defend a suit for five shillings, to test their right to prevent one citizen of Brooklyn from conveying the goods of another to the

September 26th, 1750, Andrew Ramsey, "innholder" of New York, received a lease of the ferry, including "the dwelling-house, stables, erectments, buildings, pens, land and well" in Brooklyn, "at the place commonly called the ferry, and now in the tenure and occupation of Daniel Bloom," for the term of two years and six months ensuing, at the yearly rent of £455, to be paid in quarterly installments. He was bound to keep one or more scows, and one or more boats for transportation of cattle, one of which was always to be in readiness upon the New York side.

In May, 1753, Jacob Brewerton became the lessee of the ferry for five years, at a rent of £650, which lease

was renewed, on the 1st of May, 1758, for another five years, at a rent of £570 per annum.

November 14th, 1753, the freeholders and inhabitants of Brooklyn appointed Jacobus Lefferts, Peter Vandervoort, Jacob Remsen, Rem Remsen, and Nicholas Vechte, as trustees "to defend our patent, when in any manner our liberties, privileges and rights in our patent specified is encroached, lessened or taken away by the commonalty of the city of New York."

In 1763, the ferry was managed somewhat differently, being divided between *Francis Kohler* and *William Pontine*, the former leasing the east side for three years from May 1st, at a yearly rent of £600 and the latter the west side, for the same term, at £200 per annum.

In May, 1766, it passed into the hands of *Samuel Waldron* for five years at a yearly rent of £660; and in May, 1771, was renewed to him for another three years at £550 per annum. At the expiration of his lease in 1774, it was determined by the corporation that three ferries, viz., one from Coenties Slip to the landing place of Messrs. Livingston & Remsen (foot of present Joralemon street) on Nassau island; the second, from Peck Slip to land at Jacob Brewerton's wharf, or landing place, at Brooklyn ferry, and the third from the Fly market or Countess's Slip to the landing place at the same Brooklyn ferry. Accordingly, on the 12th of April, 1774, three several leases were duly executed, for the term of two years, from the 1st of May ensuing, to the following persons, viz.: to *Elisha DeGrushe*, for the first named ferry; and to *Samuel Balding*, for the second named ferry, at an annual rent of £120, and to *Adolph Waldron* for the third, at an annual rent of £430. The lessees of these ferries were obliged to provide boats as follows: "The one that purchases the middle ferry to provide six boats, four large ones and two small ones; and the two others that purchase the upper and lower ferries to provide two large and one small boat."

In May, 1776, the whole ferry came under the control of *Adolph Waldron* for two years, at £450 per annum. A clause in this and the previous lease provided that the lessee should furnish "at his own expense a sufficient house or room on the city side of the said ferry, as near Countess's slip, or the usual and common landing place as can be had, for the reception of all such persons as may have occasion to cross said ferry." *Waldron*, being a whig, left New York with the American army in 1776, and did not return till the close of the war. During the British occupation of New York and Long Island (1776 to 1783) the ferry was let by *Mayor Matthews* and *Gov. Tryon*, to some of their tory friends, *Van Winkle* and *Buckett*, probably for their joint benefit. *Van Winkle* is described "as a very important feeling man, who was accustomed in warm weather, to walk about in a silk morning gown." They raised the fare to sixpence, not so high a charge per-

haps, when we consider that wheat was then selling in New York at the extraordinary rate of *one guinea* per bushel. After the evacuation of Brooklyn by the British, November 25, 1783, *Captain Adolph Waldron*, by a lease executed June 23, 1784, resumed the ferry for five years from the ensuing first of May, at the yearly rent of £500. During the severe winter of 1783-'4, it is said that he and his sons made considerable money by purchasing wood in Brooklyn and selling it in New York, where it was quite scarce.

In 1788, previous to the expiration of his lease, *Waldron* offered proposals to the corporation of New York for the renewal of his lease. But they had resolved on a different plan of leasing and managing the ferries; and at their session of March 11, 1789, they adopted a report, recommending the letting of the ferry-house and other corporation buildings, at Brooklyn, independent of the ferry, and licensing a certain number of boats to individuals, for the conveyance of passengers and freight across the ferry, the rent to be paid quarterly, and the tenants to defray all expenses of repairs and pay all public taxes, etc.

At a subsequent session, March 18, 1789, it was agreed that six persons be licensed by this board to exercise, during its pleasure, the privilege of keeping, each, one large and one small boat; the former to carry horses, cattle, carriages and heavy freight and passengers, and the latter, light freight and passengers from this city to Nassau Island, and from Nassau Island to the city.

"That four of the said large boats and four of the said small boats ply to and from the Fly Market slip in this city, and the corporation ferry stairs at Brooklyn, on Nassau Island aforesaid; and that two of the said large boats and two of the said small boats ply to and from the stairs at Peck slip, and the corporation ferry stairs at Brooklyn aforesaid. That the boats, together with their masts and sails, be of such form and dimensions as the wardens of the port of New York shall approve. That each boat be constantly worked and managed by two sober and discreet able bodied and experienced water-men. That each boat be always furnished with four good oars, and two boat hooks. That the said boats be all numbered, and that the name of the owner, and the number of each boat be painted on the inside of the stern of the boat, easily to be seen. That no greater rates of ferriage be demanded than those by law established. That no horned cattle be taken off or landed by any of the said boats at any place in this city to the westward of Catharine slip in the Out ward. That the persons licensed as aforesaid shall pay, into the treasury of this city, the following sums monthly: that is to say, each of the persons licensed to exercise the privilege of keeping two boats to ply to and from Fly Market slip, as aforesaid, the sum of £3 10s. per month." In default of payment within ten days after date the license was to be forfeited.

At a corporation meeting, April 1, 1789, it was agreed to license *Henry Dawson*, *Gilbert Van Mater*, *John Hicks* and *Jacob Wilkins, Jr.*, to keep two boats each, to ply between Fly Market and Brooklyn on the same terms.

In May, 1805, Dirck Amerman became the lessee of the ferry from New Market or Catharine slip, to Main street, Brooklyn, for the term of three years, at an annual rental of \$1,275; and Josiah Brown took the Fly Market ferry for the same time at \$3,050. His lease, however, was cancelled in June, 1808, and he was succeeded by Burdett Stryker, for three years from May 1, 1808, at the same rent. Then followed Theodosius Hunt and Lossee Van Nostrand, for three years from May 1, 1811, at a rent of \$3,450 per annum.

During the prevalence of the yellow fever in Brooklyn, in the month of August, 1809, the old ferry was removed to the foot of Joralemon street, from whence the boats plied to Whitehall, New York.

Dangers and Difficulties of Ferry Travel in the Olden Time.—Those who in these later days pass quickly and comfortably over the East river in the capacious and swift ferry boats, or by the majestic Bridge with its cable-cars, can scarcely imagine the discomforts, hindrances and even dangers, which accompanied the ferry travel during the last century. Previous to the year 1814, the only boats used on the East river were row boats, flat scows with sprit sails; or at best, periaguas or two-masted sail-boats. Ferry business was, therefore, very much at the mercy of the wind and tide. At slack water or with a moderate current, the oarsmen had an easy time, and the passengers a comfortable and quick trip. But, against an angry flood or rapid ebb the boatmen could make little or no headway, and the work of ferrying was slow and toilsome. Sometimes, a favorable breeze enabled the sail-boats to cross without difficulty; and again, baffled by wind and tide, they brought up near Governor's Island, or as far out of their way in the opposite direction. It may be expected under the circumstances that navigation was often stopped temporarily, that delays were common and accidents frequent.

A nuisance incident to the ferries, and one much complained of, was the manner of carrying cattle. A large portion of their stock, it will be remembered, was obtained by New York butchers from Long Island. Boats loaded with cattle, if caught by a stiff breeze, while crossing, were very liable to be upset. Indeed, so unsafe were they considered, especially when the day was windy, or the river obstructed by floating ice, that few persons would venture to trust their horses, carriages, cattle or other property upon them, and it was no uncommon circumstance for such persons to wait a day or two for calm weather, in preference to running the risks of the passage. The oar barges, for foot passengers, though more regular in crossing, were by no means comfortable, or always safe. That the dangers of the passage were not altogether imaginary, is quite evident from such newspaper items as the following:

"On the afternoon of January 15, 1784, there was an exciting scene in the East river. A Jersey ferry boat had got in the ice and was so damaged that it sank almost immediate-

ly, throwing the passengers (eight in number) into the water. They were enabled to get on a cake of ice, which was carried by the North river eddy around into the East river. 'All the slips being full of ice,' says a newspaper, 'it was with difficulty that two or three small boats were got out to attempt their relief; but the large fields of ice at that moment in motion rendered every effort of the boatmen fruitless, and cut off every prospect of deliverance.' A hoat, however, with a crew of soldiers, was enabled to follow them and rescue all but one, a negro man, who was frozen to death."

In 1784, the *Independent Journal* states that:

"On Saturday last, when a ferry-boat passing over from Brooklyn to this city was suddenly overset. This accident is said to have been occasioned by the shifting of one of the horses, of which there were five on board, which so startled the rest, that they all removed to one side, when the boat immediately filled. The passengers, viz.: Mr. Thorne, Mr. Stackhouse, and a servant man, together with two ferrymen, saved themselves by swimming till they were picked up, when about exhausted, by several boats from the shore, and the different vessels in the harbor."

N. Y. Journal and Post Rider, December 22, 1795, says:

"On Tuesday last, 17th Dec., 1795, one of the Brooklyn ferry-boats was overset in passing the East river; one man and seven fat oxen were drowned."

N. Y. Journal, April 3, 1798:

"Yesterday, about twelve o'clock, one of the large ferry-boats which plies between [the old ferry stairs at Fly Market] this city and Brooklyn, across the East river, was unhappily sunk in a gust of wind. There were eight men in the boat; five of them were boatmen, and three passengers, all of whom were drowned, except one of the boatmen."

And again, in the *American Citizen*, May 27, 1801, is the following statement:

"Having seen several erroneous accounts in the papers, respecting the upsetting of the ferry-boat at Fly Market, and being myself on board at the time, will thank you to publish the following: We started from Fulton Market ferry stairs, with little wind, but there was a prospect that the wind would blow very fresh, so that the passengers desired the boatmen to brail up the sails, which they would not comply with. Some of the passengers wished and talked of taking charge of the boat themselves. We considered the boatmen incapable of conducting the boat, owing to intoxication; however, we concluded that no men would be employed in that business unless they were capable of the task; but unfortunately we allowed them to proceed. The first gust that came upset us, and several of the passengers were immediately lost. As near as I can recollect, there were in the boat about twelve persons; one woman and five men were immediately drowned; six of us were saved after having been upset, nearly one hour and one-half in the water. One, after the storm was over, being spent, could not lay hold fast, but let go, and was drowned. There were three horses and a chair* on board."

These incidents are of value as showing the contrast between the barge, or scow, that carried the passenger, at the risk of his life and to his great personal discomfort, between New York and Brooklyn, in those days,

*A two-wheeled carriage on leather springs.

and the elegant, rapid, comfortable, and absolutely safe, ferry-boats that now form the unbroken connections of the two cities.

In addition to the unseaworthiness of these sail-vessels, and the frequent intoxication of the boatmen, the public too often found just cause of complaint in the dilatoriness of the boats in starting upon their trips, the delay and inconvenience occasioned by cattle-loading, etc. Many undoubtedly were the wrangles betwixt ferrymen and passengers; fierce the objurgations occasionally bandied from mouth to mouth; not infrequent, perhaps, the actual personal rencontres which arose between the overworked and independent boatmen, and their annoyed, impatient and captious passengers.

Steam introduced on the Ferry-Lines.—The success of Fulton's first steamboat, the *Clermont*, in the years 1807-8, inaugurated a new era in the history and science of navigation, and aroused the attention of some of the leading capitalists of that day, to the peculiar applicability of the new motive power to the improvement of ferries. The first opportunity for a practical test of this matter was afforded by the expiration of the Paulus hook (Jersey city) ferry lease, in 1811. In view of the termination of said lease, various competitors had, as early as 1809, urged the merits of their respective methods or improvements in the working of vessels by machinery; but, after a careful examination of their claims, leases were executed, in March 1811, to the Jersey Association (with which Mr. Fulton was connected), for the Paulus Hook ferry; and, with John Stevens, for the Hoboken ferry. The competition which ensued between these rival lessees as to who should have the honor of first bringing a steam ferry into actual operation, terminated in favor of Mr. Stevens, in October, 1811. The Jersey Association having been delayed by certain improvements of Mr. Fulton's, did not get their boat on the route until August, 1812.

Flattered and encouraged by the success which attended these ferries on the North river, Fulton (who, with his patron, Robert R. Livingston, held the monopoly of steam navigation in the State of New York), on the 5th of October, 1812, offered to the corporation of New York a proposition for the establishment of a similar ferry to Brooklyn. This was accepted, and, on the 24th of January, 1814, a lease was executed from the corporation to Robert Fulton and William Cutting, for the ferry between Beekman's slip, in New York, and the old ferry slip at Brooklyn, for the term of twenty-five years from the first of May ensuing, upon the following conditions:

1st. That for the first eighteen years they should pay to the corporation the annual rent of \$4,000, and for the last seven years, \$4,500.

2d. That on or before the 2d of May, 1814, they should provide and navigate a steamboat similar to the

Paulus hook ferry-boat, to run daily, once an hour from each side of the ferry, from half an hour before sunrise to half an hour after sunset. In addition to this they were to furnish such barges, etc., as were provided for, by previous acts of the State.

3d. On or before the 1st of May, 1819, they were to place on the ferry a second steamboat, in all respects similar and equal to the first.

The corporation, on their part, covenanted to build and keep in repair all the necessary wharves or piers at both termini of the route; and that, as a compensation to the lessees for the large increase of expense which would be incurred in conducting the ferry upon such an enlarged plan, they would apply to the legislature for a modification and increase in the rates of ferriage. In case of the passage of this bill before May 1, 1819, Messrs. Fulton and Cutting were to put on their second boat at the earliest possible date thereafter. In case of its failure, the lessees were to be permitted to receive four cents from each and every passenger who might choose to pass over in the steamboat, but the fare on the horse-boats and barges was to remain as it had been, viz., two cents.

Having thus satisfactorily arranged with Messrs. Fulton & Cutting, the corporation informed the lessees of the ferry that they could no longer have the ferry, and also notified the citizens of Brooklyn that the rates of ferriage were to be increased. Thereupon, the Brooklyn people called a town-meeting, at which, after due discussion of the subject, a committee of six was appointed with full power to use all proper means to oppose any increase of the ferry rates. The committee entered upon their work in the most energetic manner; they procured a correct account of the receipts and expenditures of the ferry for the three preceding years, and ascertained that the expenses had been about \$14,000, and the receipts about \$22,000 per year, and that \$14,000 were paid by foot-passengers at the rate of two cents each. Upon this data, the committee calculated that the income of the ferry for the first year, at the proposed increase of rates, would not be less than \$38,000; and that, in less than fifteen years, the income would be doubled. Disbelieving the current New York statements concerning the cost of a steamboat and appurtenances, the committee, also, ascertained from competent workmen in Philadelphia what a steamboat constructed in the best manner would cost, and from the estimates thus obtained became well convinced that the rates of ferriage ought not to be increased. They therefore sent a strong remonstrance to the corporation of New York against such increase; and further than this, in order to leave the corporation without excuse, the committee offered to take a lease of the ferry upon the same terms and conditions whereon it was subsequently granted to Fulton and his partners. This proposition was *rejected* by the New York corporation, although the ability of the gentle-

men who made it, to meet their obligation, was undoubted. Failing in this, the committee addressed a memorial on the subject to the legislature, and also forwarded to Albany one hundred and fifty copies of a Brooklyn paper containing the remonstrance, and estimates of the committee, etc., and which were addressed to each several member of the legislature. The papers, however, were *purloined* on the road, the corporation and the lessees of the proposed steam monopoly united their efforts to defeat the wishes of the Brooklyn people, and were successful.

Team (or Horse) Boats on the Brooklyn Ferry.—Meanwhile a new motive power had been introduced upon the other (the New, or present Catharine) ferry, viz.: a team-boat, or “horse-boat,” as it was called.

The *Long Island Star* of April 6, 1814, says:

“On Sunday last, April 3d, (by the way, the Sabbath seems to have been a favorite day with old Brooklynites for testing their experiments in navigation—Ed.) the public were gratified by the performance of a new invented ferry-boat on the new (Catharine street) ferry, between this village and New York. This boat was invented by Moses Rogers, Esq., of New York. It is, in some respects, similar to the Paulus Hook ferry-boats, and calculated to receive wagons in the same commodious way; but the water-wheel in the centre is moved by eight horses. It crossed the river twelve times during the day, in from eight to eighteen minutes each, and averaging two hundred passengers each time. It makes good way against wind and tide, and promises to be an important acquisition. Another boat, to go by horses, is now building for that ferry; and a steam-boat, belonging to William Cutting and others, is nearly ready for the ferry between Brooklyn and Beekman slip. These improvements on the ferries cannot fail to benefit this village and the adjacent country.”

Two days after, it was announced, “the horse-boat will continue to run from the new ferry to Brooklyn until the first of May, as a temporary arrangement. Passengers will be charged four cents, two of which are for the owner of the ferry, and two cents for the owner of the boat. All other articles at the rates heretofore charged in the *row-boats*.”

The fact mentioned above, that the horse boat was able to make “good way against wind and tide,” was an important one, inasmuch as a head wind interfered sadly with the trips of the sail boats, while an adverse current severely tried the muscles of the oarsmen and the patience of passengers in row boats. These horse boats had covered cabins, and were, in all respects, superior to the scows and periaguas which they had replaced. Those at first introduced on the ferry were “single enders”—that is, they had but one bow, and were compelled to turn around in crossing the river. Subsequently, double enders, or boats capable of running bow on, without turning round, were used. This improvement was due to the inventive genius of Mr. John Murphy, the father of Hon. Henry C. Murphy, and who was at that time connected with Mr. Rodman

Bowne in the construction of these horse or team boats used on the new ferry. These boats were each made with two hulls, about twenty feet apart, and covered over by one deck. The paddle-wheels turned on a shaft between these two hulls; and this shaft was made to revolve by means of cranks on a small wheel on either end of the shaft, fitting into a large wheel, which with corresponding cranks, was moved around a circle of eighteen or twenty feet diameter by horses, as in a cider mill. By Mr. Murphy's invention the direction of the boat was reversed, without changing the horses, simply by lowering the end of the shaft, on which the paddles were fastened, from its lock with the cranks of the large wheel, and raising the other end of the shaft, and locking it with the cranks of the large wheel, an operation which was performed by means of a lever in less than half a minute.

From a New York paper of that day, we learn that “the boat impelled by horses from the new slip to the upper Brooklyn ferry, carried, at one time, 543 passengers, besides some carriages and horses. And a horse boat is to run soon from Grand street dock to Williamsburgh.”

The number of passengers on this occasion could not be regarded, of course, as an indication of the average travel on the ferries, but rather of the very general curiosity excited by the new style of navigation, which prompted many to make the trip, simply as a matter of pleasure. On the 4th of June, 1814, the other boat referred to above, was launched.

The introduction of horse boats effected a revolution in ferry navigation, and those who had before hesitated to trust themselves to the old boats regarded the new ones as wholly safe, and found great pleasure in the easy passage afforded by them. Yet, the old arrangements were not wholly dispensed with. The horse boats made regular trips at stated intervals, but there were kept constantly ready for use a number of the ordinary row boats, which, at an extra charge, would carry over those who did not care to wait until the larger boats started.

Steamboats on the Brooklyn Ferry.—But, shortly after the introduction of team boats into ferry navigation, at first, on the New Ferry, *steam* entered the lists as a competitor against human muscle and horse-flesh.

The desired law, allowing an increase in the rates of ferriage, was passed on the 4th of March, 1814, and included a reduction of fare on all vehicles loaded and unloaded (articles not carried in such vehicles being charged according to the act of April 9, 1813); a provision for commutation for \$10 per annum, and a clause prohibiting the anchorage of vessels in such a position in the stream as to interfere with the running of the ferry.

These preliminaries being thus satisfactorily arranged, the original lessees, Messrs. Fulton & Cutting, formed a stock company, entitled

The New York and Brooklyn Steamboat Ferry Associates, to whom they made over about one-half of the capital, valued at \$68,000, divided into sixty shares, and the new enterprise commenced its career in the full tide of public favor, consequent upon its novelty and the prospect of its future importance and usefulness.

The first *steamboat* put upon the ferry was the *Nassau*, whose advent is thus noticed in the *Long Island Star* of May 11, 1814:

"*New Steamboat Nassau*.—On Sunday last (the 10th) commenced running the new and beautiful steamboat *Nassau*, as a ferry boat between New York and Brooklyn. This noble boat surpassed the expectations of the public in the rapidity of her movements. Her trips varied from five to twelve minutes, according to tide and weather. The inhabitants of Long Island, particularly, will find this a most interesting improvement, as the ferries heretofore, however well conducted, have been inconvenient, and to many a subject of dread. Carriages and wagons, however crowded, pass on and off the boat with the same facility as in passing a bridge. There is a spacious room below the deck, where passengers may be secure from the weather. This splendid evidence of the progress of science and the arts, while it affords to all a safe and agreeable communication with the city, is a sure harbinger of the future weal and prosperity of Long Island."

And again, May 18th:

"The steamboat *Nassau* crossed the ferry forty times on Sunday last. She is generally from four to eight minutes in crossing. On the day of her commencement she carried at one time 549 passengers, one wagon and two chairs with their horses, and one saddle horse."

The boat received abundant patronage, and was kept actively employed, even after the business hours of the day. The *Star* of July 6, 1814, thus glowingly describes a pleasure trip:

"*Rational and Refined Pleasure*.—On Thursday evening last (June 29) the beautiful steamboat *Nassau*, having been fitted up for an excursion of pleasure, received on board about two hundred and fifty persons, principally inhabitants of Brooklyn, and also an excellent band of music from New York, and left the slip amid the huzzas of an admiring multitude. She was beautifully illuminated, and moved majestically on the water, streaming the white waves in the rear by the force of her excellent machinery. The moon shone with a kindly radiance, and the air was just sufficiently cool. As she passed up the East River near the city, multitudes assembled on the docks, and cheered responsive to the enlivening music of the band. On the water were a multitude of small row-boats, with people of all colors and both sexes, vainly striving to keep up with the steamboat, and catch the droppings of the music and merriment which prevailed on board. On her return, when near the flag-staff on the battery, her way was stopped awhile—when

'The brisk, the bold, the young and gay'

mingled in the sprightly dance. The boat proceeded some distance up the North River, and on her return again stopped at the battery, to serenade the crowds there assembled. She next passed around that grand military establishment, Governor's Island. The silence of the night, the majestic castle, the measured step of the sentinel, his arms occasionally shining in the moonbeam, the dark forest of Red Hook on

the one hand, and the neat white dwellings of our brave defenders on the other, all, all conspired to give to 'the soul of sentiment' the most enrapturing emotions.

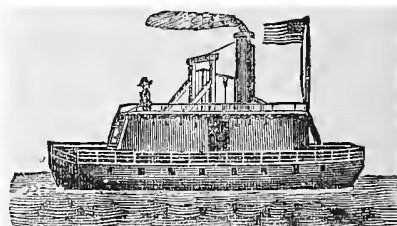
"This is a refinement, a *luxury* of pleasure unknown to the old world. Europe, with her boasted excellence in the arts and sciences, in vain may look at home for any parallel. The captain, lordly as old Neptune, drives his splendid car regardless of wind or tide, and is able to tell with certainty the hour of his return. Honored age and sprightly youth, the beauteous fair and their manly admirers, all who have partaken, will dwell with delight on the innocent and varied charms of the *Nassau's* evening excursion."

The following advertisement, published soon afterwards, shows that these excursions became quite popular:

"The Steamboat *Nassau* will start *this evening* (July 27), at 8 o'clock, on a tour of pleasure. An excellent band of music is provided. Tickets may be had of Mr. GEORGE HICKS, ferry-master, Brooklyn.

Those who are curious, can acquaint themselves fully with the appearance and mechanism of this boat by consulting Fulton's own description and plans of the Paulus Hook ferry boat, after which the *Nassau* was modeled, published in *Valentine's Corporation Manual* of New York for 1859, pages 605, 610.

The commutation system was early established, as appears by the following advertisement in the *Long Island Star* of May 4, 1814:



New-York and Brooklyn Ferry.

SUCH persons as are inclined to compound, agreeable to law, in the Steam Ferry-Boat, Barges, or common Horse Boats, will be pleased to apply to the subscribers, who are authorized to settle the same.

GEORGE HICKS, Brooklyn,
JOHN PINTARD, 52 Wall-st

Commutation for a single person not			
transferable, for 12 months,			\$10 00
Do. do. 8 months,			6 67
May 3, 1814.			6m.

For several years after its establishment, the new *steam ferry* won golden opinions from the public, and so great were the benefits experienced by the inhabitants of Brooklyn, and of Long Island generally, that a very general wish was expressed for the addition of the second boat, which, by their contract, the ferry company were to place on the route prior to May 1, 1819. This, however, the company seemed disinclined to do, and, under the plea that their present receipts would not justify the increased expense of building a new steamboat, and alleging (with more speciousness

than truth, perhaps) that team boats were not only more easily navigated, but much *safer* in winter than steamboats, they offered, in 1817, that, if the Brooklyn people would petition the corporation for permission to substitute a horse boat for the steamboat, they would provide the said horse boat one year earlier than stipulated, and run the same during evening ferry hours. This was agreed to by the inhabitants of Brooklyn, and application made to the Legislature for a law fixing the same rates of ferriage by law on team boats as on steamboats. Opposition ensued from New York, but, on a renewal of the application to the legislature, in 1818, the corporation of New York, jealous of legislative interference (and assuming that they had the right), granted the substitution of the team boat, and raised the ferriage to *four* cents on team and steamboats alike; granting, also, to the lessees the privilege of replacing the team boat with a steamboat whenever they should see fit.

Renewed Agitation of the Ferry Question.—In Brooklyn, however, the spirit of opposition, still unconciliated by the measures adopted by the New York Corporation, gained new force from the unusual severity of the following winter (1821-'22). The detentions and irregularities which naturally occurred in the ferry travel, during that season, occasioned great dissatisfaction, and, together with the inadequacy of the ferry accommodations, to the wants of the rapidly growing village, gave rise to an animated struggle for relief, which was carried on in the newspapers, in pamphlets, by means of public meetings and before the corporation of New York. The ferry, at this time, (both of its lessees having died, Mr. Fulton in 1815, and Mr. Cutting in 1821), was owned by certain New York stockholders, representing sixty shares of stock, and by the widow of Mr. Cutting, who had a separate interest. The few concessions extorted from these stockholders by the agitation of the subject, being entirely insufficient to meet the public necessities, Messrs. David Leavitt and Silas Butler, in 1833, interested themselves in obtaining from the scattered stockholders, forty-four out of the sixty shares, and the controlling influence thus secured in the ferry, was energetically exerted for the benefit of their fellow citizens. Yet, although a new boat was added, and other measures of improvement adopted, these all failed to satisfy the demands of the public, whose discontent became still more violent. Meanwhile, the extension of Brooklyn (in 1826), beyond the southernmost limits of the village (at District, now Atlantic street) had necessitated the establishment of a south ferry, which was effected in 1836, between New York and Patchen's dock, at foot of the present Atlantic street. (See History of South, or Atlantic street ferry, in a subsequent portion of this chapter). This additional ferry, however, afforded but little relief to Fulton Ferry, where scanty accommodations, poor boats, etc., gave rise to many inconveniences,

frequent delays and even to serious apprehensions of danger. So great, indeed, was the excitement which prevailed in Brooklyn upon the subject, that some of the most peaceable and estimable citizens went so far as to indulge in threats of sinking the boats.

In 1836, Messrs. Leavitt and Butler, together with Mrs. Cutting and the other stockholders, were induced to dispose of the unexpired lease for the sum of \$100,000; and a subscription to a seven per cent. stock was made among a number of citizens, who desired, both for their own use, and for the benefit of the city wherein they dwelt, a good ferry, free from a speculative interest. Although the investment was considered a safe one for the return of the capital, the amount was not fully made up, and the committee who negotiated the purchase of the lease, were obliged to assume more of the stock than they desired. This committee consisted of Messrs. John D. Wright, Jonathan Trotter, James S. Clarke, Seth Low, W. J. Cornell, H. B. Pierrepont, Henry Young, Chas. Hoyt, Edgar Hicks, John Van Antwerp, George Hall, Charles Hallock, Joseph W. Allen, William Hull, S. H. Moser, John S. Doughty, John Frost, Ed. G. Miller, E. D. Hulburt, John N. Smith, S. B. Whitlock, Austin Melvin, Losee Van Nostrand, D. Anderson and L. Green. The new lessees, through their executive committee, Messrs. Wright Trotter and Frost, conducted the ferry with an assiduity which fully proved their intention to fulfill the expectations of the public. They did not escape, however, the usual imputations of interested motives, or the annoyances of misrepresentations and attacks, both in the newspapers and public meetings; and, notwithstanding their prudent management, the assets of the association, at the expiration of their lease in 1839, proved the value of the stock to be only sixty-eight per cent.

At the same time the lease of the South Ferry expired, with very unsatisfactory results to its stockholders, its receipts having been greatly exceeded by its expenses, and a large proportion of the capital used up. In order to prevent its complete abandonment, they applied to New York, for the union of their ferry with the Fulton Ferry, under a new lease. As might have been expected, the application met with violent opposition from those interested in the Fulton Ferry, and very generally from the property owners in the older part of Brooklyn; and at a public meeting held in May, 1839, expression was given to the opinion that the proposed union of the ferries "would be detrimental to the interests of Brooklyn at large." And, against this unsound policy, the absurdity of which has been abundantly proved by subsequent experience, scarce half a dozen persons present had either the foresight or the courage to battle for the more liberal principle of a union of the ferries, for *the benefit of the city at large*. Among these, although his property and interests were nearer to the Fulton Ferry, was a lessee of the Union

Ferry Company. Both parties appeared, by counsel, before the corporation of New York, by which body it was finally determined that the ferries should be united, and a lease was accordingly granted, May 3, 1839, for a term of five years, at an annual rental of \$12,000, to thirty-two individuals, acting with reference to the interests of the city of Brooklyn. These incorporators of

The New York and Brooklyn Ferry Company were George Wood, Losee Van Nostrand, James E. Underhill, John Dimon, Chas. J. Taylor, R. M. White, John Dikeman, Cyrus P. Smith, Henry E. Pierrepont, Eli Merrill, F. Marquand, J. A. Perry, J. H. Moser, N. B. Morse, E. Lewis, John B. Lasala, C. Kiersted, Jos. Ketchum, John A. King, David Johnson, Chas. Kelsey, Parmenus Johnson, Chas. Hoyt, Lemuel Green, Geo. B. Fisk, W. N. Degrauw, R. D. Covert, A. G. Benson, John Benson, Jacob Bergen, Joseph W. Allen, David Anderson. Mr. N. B. Morse was appointed *president*, and Mr. Henry E. Pierrepont, in compliment to the disinterested public spirit shown by him in the previous controversy, was made an associate in the lease, and the vice-president of the company. By the terms of this lease, only seven per cent. dividend was allowed to the stockholders; the net profits on the capital, at the end of the lease, were to be paid to the treasury of New York; the lessees being bound to purchase all the old boats of both ferries from the previous lessees, and to provide, at their own expense, all piers, floats, ferry houses, equipments and improvements, etc., as might be necessary, for all of which the corporation of New York declined to offer any compensation upon the expiration of the lease. Messrs. Leroy and Perry generously advanced about \$50,000 to relieve the embarrassment caused by paying off the old Fulton Ferry stockholders who preferred to withdraw. The United Fulton and South Ferries were managed, however, by the New York and Brooklyn Ferry Company, with faithfulness and a due regard to the wants and interests of Brooklyn and its citizens, and were improved as rapidly as a prudent expenditure of their income would permit. Upon the settlement of the company's affairs, after the termination of their lease, May 1, 1844, the stock was found to be worth only seventy-five cents on the dollar. It was now hoped that more liberal counsels would prevail in regard to the new lease of the ferries, which would allow of a reduction in the rates of ferriage, as well as of an increase of facilities and accommodations of travel. The application of the lessees for a renewal of their lease was favorably reported upon by the ferry committee of the corporation of New York, who recommended the granting of a seven years' lease of the united "ferries, to such thirty of the stockholders of the present ferry, as shall be selected by the ferry committee and the street commissioner, at an annual rent of \$20,000." Notwithstanding this report in favor of a renewal of the lease, the corporation found itself so harassed by bids and

importunities from rival applicants, that it was finally decided to receive sealed proposals. This created much excitement in Brooklyn. Its citizens suddenly awoke to the danger which threatened their most important interests, should they fall into the hands of speculators, who, without any real interest in Brooklyn, would have regard only to their own private gain. Pending the receiving the bids for the ferries, a large public meeting was held (8th of May, 1844), at which the mayor presided, and it was unanimously resolved "that the power of establishing ferries should be lodged in some independent and impartial tribunal," and that measures should be taken to ascertain whether the assumed right of the city of New York to lease these ferries was a franchise, or simply a jurisdiction subject to recall by the State. Messrs. John Greenwood, Geo. Wood, William M. Harris, George Hall, Eben Merriam, Jonathan Trotter, Alden Spooner, Henry E. Pierrepont, Cyrus P. Smith, George S. Howland and Gabriel Furman were appointed a committee to carry these resolutions into effect.

The ferry lease was at last granted to Messrs. Jacob R. Leroy and Henry E. Pierrepont, for the term of seven years, in consideration of a bid of \$30,000, without restrictions as to the rates of ferriage, or dividends, and with the power to retain as much stock as they pleased, and to select their associates. Having chiefly in view the promotion of the interests of Brooklyn, and the repayment of the par value of the capital invested by the stockholders, with seven per cent. interest thereon, the lessees selected seventeen out of the former thirty-two managers, and four others to form a board, which might represent fairly the important sectional interests of Brooklyn, and to whom they intrusted the organization of the company.

The Brooklyn Union Ferry Company, as thus constituted, July 1st, 1844, was composed of the following gentlemen: Jacob R. Leroy and Henry E. Pierrepont, lessees and trustees; George Wood, Joseph A. Perry, John Dikeman, Joseph Ketchum, John B. Lasala, Seth Low, C. J. Taylor, L. Van Nostrand, Walter N. Degrauw, H. R. Worthington, C. N. Kiersted, N. B. Morse, C. P. Smith, John Dimon, A. G. Benson, Chas. Kelsey, Jas. E. Underhill, Ezra Lewis, Sam E. Johnson, E. J. Bartow, Geo. Hulburt, board of managers; N. B. Morse was elected *president*, and H. E. Pierrepont, *vice-president*.

When the articles of association were drawn, it was not anticipated that the stock at the end of this lease would be worth more than par, for these articles specified that "the net profits should be applied to dividends upon the stock, but no more or greater amount than 7 per cent. per annum shall be declared;" that "the surplus profits, *if any*, shall be applied to improvement of the ferries and extinguishment of the stocks. The *net capital*, at the end of the lease, shall be applied to the payment of the capital stock then outstanding."

Agreeably, therefore, to the trusts which the new company had assumed, the four ferry landings were largely improved, at an expenditure of nearly \$50,000; superior boats were built in place of the old boats; the rates of the ferriage were, from time to time, reduced, as income warranted, until the fare for foot passengers was fixed at *one cent*. Yet, the increase of the business, and the income of the ferries, outstripped the managers' anticipations, so that, at the termination of the lease, the assets were found to make the stock worth more than par.

Meanwhile, under the direction of the committee, appointed at the public meeting of May 8th, 1844, the act of May 14th, 1845, had been drafted, and its passage by the legislature *secured*, after a strenuous contest with the interest of New York, mainly by the efforts of John Greenwood, Alden J. Spooner and William Burbank, Esquires.

This act provided for the appointment of three commissioners, non-residents of New York, Kings, Queens, Suffolk or Richmond counties, empowered to grant licenses for as many ferries between New York and Long Island as, in their judgment, public convenience demanded. The commissioners under this act were Judge Samuel Cheever of Saratoga Co., Chairman; Judge John McLean of Washington Co., and Hon. Mr. Barker, Attorney General, whose place was subsequently filled by Ebenezer Blakely, Esq., of Otsego Co. Having thus secured the impartial commission which they desired, Alfred G. Benson, Edward J. Bartow, Charles Kelsey, William S. Packer and Elihu Townsend, applied to the commission for a license to establish and keep four ferries between New York and Brooklyn, viz., the Fulton, the South and the Hamilton Avenue ferries for the term of ten years from the expiration of their respective leases, and a new ferry from the foot of Wall street, New York, to the foot of Montague street, Brooklyn, for ten years from date. The required lease was granted to the applicants on the 17th of October, 1848; the whole transaction being intended as a test of the validity of the act of 1845, and the rights of the city of New York. An amicable suit was commenced, May, 1849, for the purpose of testing the question (entitled "*The Mayor, &c., of New York vs. Alfred G. Benson, et alios*"), and was brought to trial before Judge Roosevelt of the Supreme Court, in the year 1852, the City making an appropriation for defraying the costs of said suit. The case was argued on behalf of Brooklyn by the Hon. William Kent and Charles O'Connor, Esq.; and on behalf of New York city by Hon. Henry E. Davies and John Van Buren, Esq. Judge Roosevelt decided that the city of New York had a vested interest in the ferries that were established—which opinion, however, was a verbal one—and was never committed to paper by him. The late Judge Barkelo, also, delivered a similar decision on the subject, in another case, but these opinions were not appealed from.

In 1850, a renewal of the lease of the Fulton and South ferries was obtained by Messrs. Leroy and Pierpont, for the term of ten years from May 1st, 1851, at a rent of \$35,000 per annum—and the Hamilton Avenue Ferry was included in the same lease. These three ferries, at this time, were running successfully at *one cent* fare; while the independent ferries (viz., the Gouverneur, Catharine, Roosevelt and Wall streets), were running at two cents, but were unable to sustain competition with the Fulton ferry, which was paying, not only its own, but a large portion of the expenses of the South and Hamilton ferries.

At the same time, also, the business of the Fulton ferry was already as great as could well be accommodated, and ought not in justice, to the safety of its passengers, be increased by the abandonment of the other ferries, and the consequent deflection of their business to it.

These independent companies, therefore, asked the Union Ferry Company to increase its ferriage, which, of course, was not granted; whereupon they offered to sell out to the Union Ferry Company, at a great reduction on their cost, and take pay in the ferry stock. This was agreed to by the lessees, Messrs. Leroy and Pierpont, on condition that the consent of the stockholders should be obtained, and that the acceding company should become incorporated under the general law.

This desired consolidation was effected by the creation, on the 10th of November, 1854, of a corporation, organized under a statute of the state (passed April 9, 1853), entitled "*An Act to authorize the formation of ferry companies*," under the corporate name of the

Union Ferry Company of Brooklyn, and included the Fulton, South, Catharine, Hamilton Avenue, Wall street, Roosevelt Street and Gouverneur Street Ferries.

The nominal capital stock of this company was \$800,000 (with a right to increase the same to \$1,000,000), divided into 8,000 shares of \$100 each. The directors were H. E. Pierpont, N. B. Morse, Cyrus P. Smith, J. A. Perry, A. A. Low, W. N. Degraw, Joseph Ketchum, Charles J. Taylor, Henry K. Worthington, John Blunt, Chas. J. Bill, G. G. Van Wagonen, J. S. T. Stranahan, Abraham B. Baylis and Ezra Lewis.

The result, however, as far as concerned the *cheapness of fare*, disappointed the company's expectations. Their loss during the first year, had the *one cent* fare been continued, would have been nearly \$120,000; the rate was therefore raised to one and a half cents, and subsequently, from the necessity of the case, to *two cents*.

The lease of 1851 was to expire in May, 1861. In anticipation, application was made in 1859 for a renewal for ten years. The lease was sold at auction, and by the competition of speculators, the rent was bid up to \$103,000, at which price it was obtained by the Union Ferry Company.

In the year 1859, the new lease of the ferries being advertised for the 17th of December, an offer was made on the 26th of November by the city of Brooklyn and its authority, to the corporate authority of the city of New York, to take the said lease upon the same terms as those by which they were held by the Union Ferry Company. This, however, was refused, and an application was made to Judge Hogeboom, of the Supreme Court, for an injunction against the sale, under the terms advertised. It was promptly issued, and served on the comptroller of the city, but was, however, finally dissolved; and, on the 29th of May, 1860, the ferries were again bid off by the Union Ferry Company of Brooklyn, for the term of ten years, at an annual rent of \$103,000. The company also had to pay \$20,000

pany's motives or management, it was generally regarded, by the community at large, as a fortunate circumstance that they retained the possession of these ferries against the speculators who competed at the sale. They were Brooklyn citizens of honorable repute, and amenable, to some extent at least, to local opinion; while the apparent desire, which they had recently exhibited, to lower the rates of ferriage, although not meeting, perhaps, the full measure of the public demand, was yet regarded as an earnest of a new and more liberal spirit. It would, indeed, have been a step "from the frying pan into the fire," if the ferries, so vitally connected with Brooklyn's interests, had then fallen, or should, at any time, fall into the hands of grasping New York politicians and speculators, who would be more likely to disregard public remonstrance than the present management.

After the fall of the Tweed ring, the authorities of New York claimed that the terms of the lease at the nominal rent were illegal, and a New York judge so decided, and a claim for ten years back rent at \$1,500,000 was made on the Ferry Company.

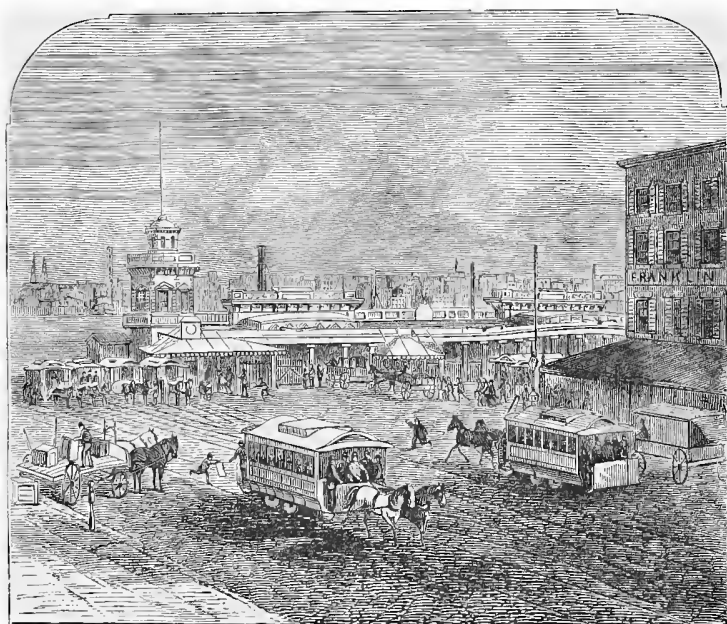
This suit and claim was compromised by the payment of \$300,000 to New York; and a renewal of the lease for five years was obtained at the auction sale for a percentage annually of $12\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. of the gross income of the ferries.

The authorities of New York have heretofore represented, that they desired to require for the rent of ferries, only the commercial value of the slips. But by the present rental demanded, of $12\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. of the ferriage, they impose a tax on every passenger crossing the river to enter or depart from the city, and acknowledge no

limit to the demand they may make in future. This is a misuser of their franchise, and if adjudicated, may be so decided, and New York be restrained or deprived of the exercise of it.

The *principle of union* of the ferries, established by those who organized the Union Ferry Company (by which plan the non-profitable are supported by the profitable ferries, for the public benefit and at uniform rates of ferriage), must ever continue to prevail, if the public interests are duly regarded by the Legislature.

The New Ferry, now Catharine Street Ferry. This route from the foot of Main street, Brooklyn, to the foot of Catharine street, New York, formerly called the New Ferry, in contradistinction to the Old or Fulton Ferry, was established August 1st, 1795, by William Furman and Theodosius Hunt, lessees from the corporation of New York. They were succeeded by Messrs. Noah Waterbury and Henry Stanton, who ran



FULTON FERRY, 1865.

annual rent on the Brooklyn side, besides purchasing land for repair shops, coal depots, &c.

At the expiration of this lease, in 1871, Tweed was in power, and, it is supposed, for popularity, obliged the Union Ferry Company to take a renewal of their lease for ten years at the nominal rent of one dollar, but restricting the ferriage, morning and evening, during the five crowded business hours to one cent.

As eighty per cent. of the ferry income is derived from foot passengers, the company fearing a loss to the stockholders, proposed to take a new lease on the same terms as that expiring. Being informed that a party, supposed to be Mr. Tweed, was ready to take the lease on the terms proposed, the company accepted rather than have the ferries in the hands of speculators, who had no interest in Brooklyn.

Whatever diversity of public opinion may have existed in Brooklyn, in regard to the Union Ferry Com-



Benjamin Brown

it for a short time ; and it subsequently passed into the hands of Rodman Bowne, who, in 1811, asked an extension of his contract for two years from May, 1812, which was granted. It was again renewed to him in 1814, for five years longer, at \$1,275 per annum, on condition of his making, within a specified time, certain needed improvements, etc. The chief of these improvements was the introduction, in April of that year, of the horse or teamboat, previously described in connection with the Fulton ferry.

In March, 1816, before the expiration of his lease, he took a new one for eight years from May 1st, 1819, at the same rent. This, however, was cancelled in June, 1820, and another lease executed to Rodman and Samuel Bowne, of the same ferry, for nineteen years from May, 1820, at a yearly rent for the first seven years, of \$1,275, and for the next five years, of \$1,800, and for the last seven years of \$2,000.

In 1846, Samuel Bowne leased the ferry for 7 years from date, at the yearly rent of \$3,500, and it remained in his hands until March 24th, 1852, when it was purchased by Messrs. Smith & Bulkley, who subsequently united it with Union Ferry Company of Brooklyn.

SAMUEL BOWNE was born at Pelham Point, Westchester County, New York, in 1790. He was descended from the Bowne family of Flushing, Long Island, and the Pell and Rodman families of Westchester County.

After the death of his father, his mother removed with her family to the City of New York, and Samuel and Rodman Bowne at an early age acquired a knowledge of commercial and shipping interests, and commenced business together at Catharine Slip.

In 1809, Rodman and Samuel Bowne purchased the New or Catharine Ferry, with all the boats, and appurtenances. At that time, passengers and freight were transported across the river to the foot of Main street, Brooklyn, by sail and row boats.

As the traffic of the ferry increased in importance, the two brothers devoted their time, energy and means to this enterprise, making Brooklyn their home, and displaying an unusual unanimity of purpose, which brought with it a marked degree of success.

In the year 1814 they had horse-boats built by Buckmaster, of New York.

On page 433 we have quoted a notice of these boats, which appeared in the *Long Island Star* of Wednesday, April 6th, 1814:

This was the first horse-boat used on the river, and Catharine Ferry took the lead in the transportation of passengers and freight, and effected a revolution in ferry navigation.

The Paulus Hook boats were propelled by steam power; and, after the introduction of the horse-boat referred to, the Fulton Ferry, as required by their lease, used a steamboat which cost over \$30,000. Steamboats

were expensive and troublesome, frequently getting out of order.

The *Evening Post*, of August, 1814, said in relation to the horse-boat :

"It is calculated to supersede the necessity and expense of steam, particularly for those short ferries."

The owners of Fulton Ferry were required, by their lease, to put another steamboat on their ferry, in 1819. They petitioned the Common Council of New York for leave to substitute a horse-boat, which leave was granted; and one after the pattern of those on Catharine Ferry was introduced and used after 1818. At that time, the horse-boat was as good as a steamboat; and in times of ice, better. The second steamboat was not put on the Fulton Ferry until 1827. Steamboats were first introduced on Catharine Ferry in 1822. In the year 1824 the proprietors of Catharine Ferry introduced on the river the first single-hull steamboats. One was named the *George Washington*, the other the *Independence*.

Samuel and Rodman Bowne are referred to in the following quotation from an official document, embodying the report of the Ferry Committee of the Board of Aldermen of New York in regard to renewing their lease, dated March 28th, 1842.

"It is worthy of consideration that the present lessees of the Catharine and Main Street Ferry are not a numerous body of stockholders, upon whom a loss, large or small, might be averaged without serious inconvenience. They are, as appears by their petition, two in number. They have spent their youth and manhood, and have grown grey upon the ferry which they now occupy. They commenced their business with oars and sails, and have passed uninterruptedly as tenants of the Corporation, through all the various improvements in ferry navigation for the period of thirty-three years, and always to the entire satisfaction of the successive Common Councils to which their applications for renewals have been made. While, therefore, these individuals ought not to receive any privileges or indulgences unwarranted by the public interests, the Common Council should not demand, as a condition of renewing their lease, a sum that, while it overrules a fair remunerating rent for this Ferry, may result in loss and detriment to them. The proximity of the Catharine and Main street to the Fulton Ferry, the last conducted by a powerful, numerous and wealthy combination, adds force to the arguments that caution should be used in imposing a rent which may prove exaggerated."

Samuel Bowne was of medium height, strongly and compactly built, and capable of great endurance.

He possessed great energy, was persistent of purpose and devoted to his business, rarely absenting himself. Strict integrity was his marked characteristic; and the esteem and confidence of his numerous employees and of the general community were his in the fullest measure.

Atlantic Street, or South Ferry. In 1825, Charles Hoyt and associates, who were largely interested in property in South Brooklyn, petitioned the

Corporation of New York for a new ferry between Old Slip, in that city, and Joralemon street dock, on Long Island.

The opposition of New York landholders, who feared the competition of cheap Brooklyn lots, with their own property, served to defeat this proposition, in the committee to which it was referred. The *assigned* reason was that their contract with Messrs. Cutting & Fulton, pledged the Corporation not to permit any ferry to be established, south of Catharine Slip, to Brooklyn, during the time of that lease. A legal question was raised as to whether the word Brooklyn in that contract signified the incorporated village, or the town of Brooklyn. Brooklyn people took the former view, which was sustained in written opinions by such authorities as

under pressure of the representatives of the upper wards, the petitions were denied by a vote of 9 to 5. Satisfied, at last, that no arrangement could be effected with the corporation of New York, the citizens of Brooklyn, in 1835, appealed to the Legislature. An act vesting the right of granting ferries in an impartial tribunal, was drawn, and was, after varying fortunes, on the eve of being passed, when the city of New York presented a remonstrance, in which, under mask of a liberal feeling towards Brooklyn, she consented to the establishment of another ferry south of Fulton street.

But when, subsequent to the adjournment of the Legislature, the corporation of New York were desired to fulfill their pledge, that body, instead of locating the New York landing at Old Slip, as had been desired



ATLANTIC STREET, OR SOUTH FERRY.

Chancellor Kent, Samuel Jones and Benjamin F. Butler; and in 1827, the Ferry and Law Committees of the Common Council, reported jointly in favor of the establishment of a new South Ferry, under condition that the lessees should indemnify the corporation against all damages under their covenant with the Fulton Ferry Company.

Finally, in 1833, the Fulton Ferry Company consented to the establishment of a new ferry, on condition of a yearly payment to them of \$4,000, during the continuance of the Fulton Ferry lease.

A new petition was now presented to the Common Council, and their committee reported that an additional ferry, south of Fulton street, was called for by public convenience. When brought up for discussion, however, other arguments and objections, of more or less ingenuity, were brought forward, and finally,

and expressed, placed it at Whitehall, the southernmost part of the city, a place manifestly inconvenient and unsuited to the wants of the public. On September 1st, 1835, therefore a lease for a ferry, from Whitehall Slip, New York, to, or near to, the foot of Atlantic street, Brooklyn, was granted to Lyman Betts, Conklin Brush, Charles Kelsey, Joseph A. Perry, Clarence D. Sackett, and Alpheus Sherman, for a term commencing with the completion of the ferry accommodations at Whitehall, to May 1st, 1839, at a yearly rent of \$1,000, and the city of Brooklyn, which erected piers for the ferry, at the foot of Atlantic street, charged seven per cent. on the disbursements of the corporation.

The ferry was first opened for travel on May 16th, 1836. At the expiration of its first lease in 1839, the South Ferry was united to, and leased, with the Fulton

Ferry to the New York and Brooklyn Ferry Company. The rental of the united ferries was \$12,000.

These leases were again renewed May 1st, 1844, by

from the Pierrepont estate the remaining portion of their property on Montague street, removed the old Pierrepont Mansion, then standing on the line of the street, built a tunnel through the Heights, a stone bridge over Furman street, and graded the street to the river.

In these operations he associated with himself Messrs. William H. Packer, J. H. Prentice and Edgar J. Bartow. In the subsequent struggle to obtain the Ferry franchise, these gentlemen were greatly assisted by Mr. H. E. Pierrepont, who, though in no way interested pecuniarily, with his usual devotion to the best interests of the public, entered, heart and soul, into the project.

The application for a lease failed in the New York Board of Alder-

men, owing to the opposition of property-holders in Wall street, and was then taken before the Commissioners of Ferries, appointed under the act of 1845.

The application to the Commissioners included a lease for the three old ferries, Fulton, South, and Hamilton avenue, and after much opposition on the part of New York, and some litigation, was at length allowed.

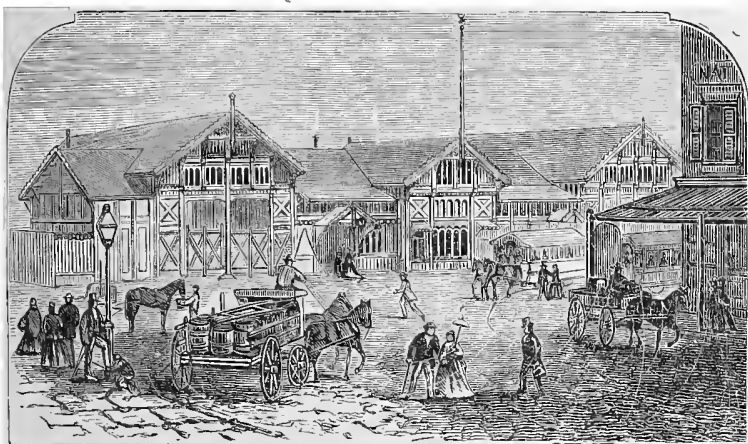
When Howland & Co., finally determined to seek a lease from the city authorities, to avoid further opposition they

Hamilton Avenue Ferry. The ferry from the foot of Hamilton avenue, Brooklyn to the Battery, New York, was granted to the lessees and trustees of the Union Ferries, Henry E. Pierrepont and Jacob A. Leroy, November 6th, 1846, at the nominal rent of \$1,000 per annum ("for the better accommodation of funerals and passengers to Greenwood Cemetery"), at the solicitation, and for the benefit of the Atlantic Dock Company, who guaranteed the Union Ferry Company against any loss, in consequence of the trustees not having a legal right to run other ferries in connection with the Union.

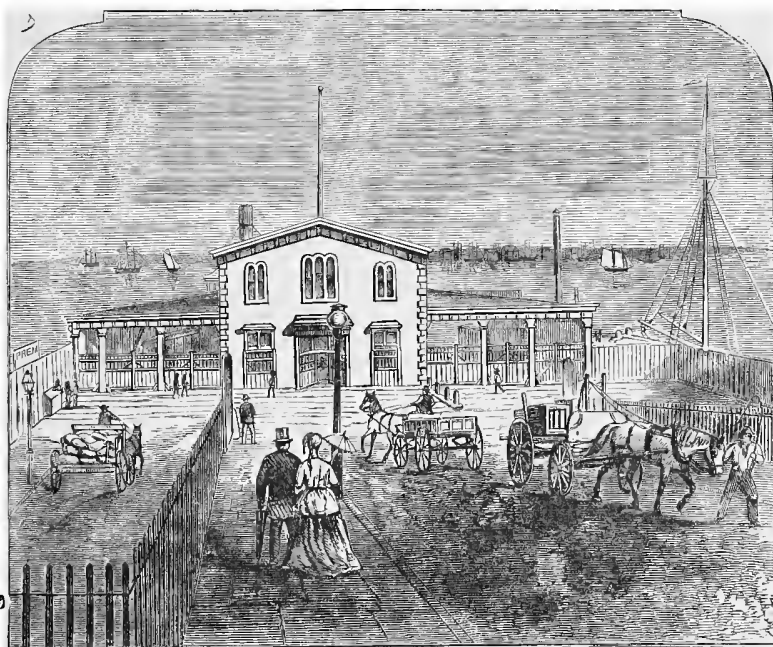
Though run economically, the ferry lost \$25,000, during the five years it was so run, which amount was repaid by the Atlantic Dock Company. The affairs of the Company were at length wound up, and the franchises and property passed into the hands of the Union Ferry Company, by whom it has since been run.

Wall Street Ferry.—Mr. Geo. S. Howland, in 1846 made the first attempt to establish what is now known as Wall Street Ferry. He was a large owner of real estate in East Brooklyn, to which the line of Montague street and Myrtle avenue were a direct approach. In order to open this approach he purchased

sought it under other names, and it was finally granted to J. Sharp & Co., December 1st, 1853. Proving unprofitable, it was united to the Union Ferry Company and continued by them, though at an annual loss.



FERRY HOUSE AT FOOT OF HAMILTON AVENUE.



FERRY HOUSE AT FOOT OF MONTAGUE STREET.

Over the five ferries conducted by the Union Ferry Company (the *Fulton*, *Catharine*, *Wall*, *South* and *Hamilton Avenue*), the passages made by individuals in a year, are estimated (including those who cross in vehicles), at 45,000,000—a number nearly equal to the whole population of the United States. When, to this, is added the number who cross the other ferries, from the eastern district of Brooklyn, the aggregate is indeed formidable, and the proper accommodation and security of so many lives becomes a consideration of the highest importance. The managers of the *Union Ferry Company*, as citizens of Brooklyn, and deeply interested in its welfare, as principal tax payers, with a full sense of the magnitude of the trust committed to their care, have every motive to do their work well. On the five ferries not less than twelve hundred and fifty crossings of the river are made daily. The almost incredible immunity from accidents which these ferries have enjoyed for a period of over thirty years, is largely due to the peculiar skill, care, sobriety and fidelity of the pilots—a class of men carefully trained on the boats for this position, and so rigidly sifted, that not more than one in twenty-five is ultimately accepted by the company.

The boats at present (1883) run by the company are seventeen in number; large, strong and superior vessels in every respect, and regarded as models for other establishments. So strong are they, indeed, that no less than seven of them were required and taken by the government for war vessels during the recent civil war; heavy batteries were mounted upon them, and they performed important and constant service—proving, by their efficiency, the models of the famous “double-enders” built by the government during the war. Two of them, the *Somerset* and *Clinton*, after the close of the war, were repurchased by the company, and are now doing daily duty on the Wallstreet ferry.

Of these 17 boats, 14 are kept constantly running, and 3 are held in reserve, as relief boats, when either of the others needs repairs. The smallest is 500 tons, and the largest 658 tons. The smallest is 148 feet, and the largest 172 feet long. They have all powerful engines; are heated by steam and lit by gas, and protected against any danger of accident by fire, by every appliance that ingenuity or experience could suggest. The cost of these boats is from \$50,000 to \$77,000 each. When we consider that the services of nearly 400 men in all departments of labor and superintendence, are required; that repair-shops, spare boats, coal-depots, etc., must be maintained; that large sums must be annually paid for leases to New York, and for private slips in both cities, besides the great and constant depreciation by wear and tear; we can readily understand, that the five ferries, united, can be conducted at less expense than they could be separately, and that the union of these ferries is indispensable, in order that the five may be sustained by the receipts of all.

The *Union Ferry Company*, as at present managed, is no monopoly, but in fact the converse of a monopoly, inasmuch as under this system the five ferries are run at the lowest fare consistent with efficiency and safety; their revenues form a common fund which is applied to the support of all, so that the people of every section are afforded their ferry accommodation at a uniform price.

The *Fulton ferry*, as we have before shown, is the only one which more than defrays its expenses from its receipts; and the other four ferries are now sustained by the profits derived from that ferry.

In addition to these five ferries, the *Union Ferry Company* are connected with the history of the *Gouverneur* and *Roosevelt street* ferries.

The Gouverneur Street Ferry, from Bridge street, Brooklyn, to Gouverneur street, New York, was established by Messrs. Smith & Bulkly. In December, 1853 (together with the Wall, Catharine and Roosevelt ferries), it was united to the Union Company. Its lease expiring in September, 1856, was not renewed, and the ferry was discontinued January, 1857.

The Roosevelt Street Ferry, from Roosevelt street, New York, to Bridge street, Brooklyn, was commenced with three boats in June, 1853, by Mr. F. C. Havemeyer and others, who ran it, until December, 1853, when united, they sold out to the Union Ferry Company at \$140,000, being a loss of over \$30,000. In 1860, it was sold and run between Roosevelt street, New York, and South Seventh street, Brooklyn, E. D., by the *Brooklyn Ferry Company*, at an annual rental of \$3,000. In 1867, a new ten years' lease was executed to the *New York and Brooklyn Ferry Company*, at \$4,900 per annum.

Brooklyn Ferry Houses.—At eight of their landings the Union Ferry Company have erected commodious and even elegant buildings, the total cost of which has been about \$395,000. Of those which are located in Brooklyn we present views. The present edifice at the foot of Fulton street was built in 1871 from designs by Mr. W. B. Olmsted, and cost, with foundations \$138,000: Besides the waiting rooms, it contains the general offices of the company, store rooms, and a spacious Directors room in the second story. It is appropriately ornamented by a fine bronze statue of Robert Fulton, in a niche in the front of the tower.

The Catharine Ferry building was designed by the same architect and erected in 1874, at a cost of \$45,000.

The ferry house at Hamilton avenue was designed by Eidlitz, cost \$32,000, and was built in 1861.

The Wall Street Ferry building was built by the original lessees of the ferry in 1853, but has been modified and improved by the present company.

The present ferry buildings at the foot of Atlantic street, were designed by Mr. W. B. Olmsted, were erected in 1865, and cost \$42,000.



Henry E. Pierpont

HENRY EVELYN PIERREPONT, Son of Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, Esq. (whose portrait and biography will be found on page 129 of this work), and his wife, Anna Constable, was born August 8th, 1808, on Brooklyn Heights, in the old Pierrepont mansion, memorable as having been Gen. Washington's head-quarters during the battle of Long Island. He has, from his youth, been one of the most active and useful members of the community, and associated in the management and promotion of its interests and institutions. He was at an early age sent to the boarding school of Mrs. Melmoth (see page 131), in what is now known as South Brooklyn, and in 1819 to one of the best schools that has been known in the city of New York, conducted by a French *Emigré*, M. Louis Bancel, where he remained for seven years, and among other acquirements, besides a general education, became thoroughly conversant with the French and Spanish languages.

On leaving this academy, he was, and until 1833 continued to be, constantly engaged in aiding his father and brother in the management of large landed interests in Brooklyn, and in the northern part of the State. In the latter part of that year, he visited Europe, making an extensive tour. This was before railroads had superseded stage coaches, and *diligences*, and he consequently saw the regions he visited more thoroughly and deliberately, than can be done by tourists now-a-days. He was in England during the agitations and riots, caused by the famous Reform bill. The letters which he took made him acquainted with persons very distinguished in rank and office, and gave him unusual facilities for social intercourse of most interesting character.

During his absence in Europe, Brooklyn had been transformed from a village into a city. A detailed plan of streets and squares became at once necessary, and Mr. Pierrepont was one of a committee, appointed by the corporation, to prepare such plan. Having carefully examined those which had been adopted in Edinburgh, Marseilles and Carlsruhe, three of the best arranged cities in Europe, he sought to provide for Brooklyn a similar system, including among others, two diagonal avenues which he recommended, one from the corner of Fulton and Sands street to Bedford, and the other from the City Hall toward New Utrecht and Bath. He proposed also the laying out of 200 acres on Gowanus Hills for a rural cemetery; and also selected a site on Ocean Ridge, as suitable for an Astronomical Observatory, then contemplated in Brooklyn. It was found, however, that the plan for the laying out of the city, by the citizen's committee, could not legally be enforced. Commissioners were then, in 1835, appointed by the Legislature, whose plan, which was mainly that of the citizen's committee, was established by the Legislature as the permanent plan of the City. It omitted, however, the diagonal avenue towards Flatbush, but included the other avenue which Mr. Pierrepont had suggested, from the City Hall to New Utrecht; but it

was afterwards abandoned, as it would have passed through the ground selected for Greenwood Cemetery.

Mr. Pierrepont took much interest in providing a cemetery suitable for the city, and while abroad, in 1833, studied carefully the arrangements of Pere La Chaise in Paris, and the Campos Santos in Italy; both of which he regarded as inferior to Mount Auburn at Boston, which he visited in 1832; and which, especially by the character of its grounds, suggested to him the special fitness of the beautiful hills of Gowanus (with every part of which he was familiar), on which Greenwood Cemetery has since been established. With a few other gentlemen, aided by the accomplished engineer, Major D. B. Douglas, he labored assiduously for five years in effecting that result. The enterprise was much impeded by the financial embarrassments of the country in 1837, but the organization of the company was finally effected, and the cemetery received its charter in 1838. Mr. Pierrepont was its Vice-President; and, on the retirement of its first President, the late Robert Ray, Esq., Mr. Pierrepont was appointed in his place. The late Joseph A. Perry, Esq., after its organization, devoted his whole life to the perfection of this beautiful necropolis, than which it is believed there is none in the world more beautiful. His excellent judgment, skill and admirable taste, ably seconded from the beginning by Mr. Pierrepont, has made it what it is.

Mr. Pierrepont's life has been one of *trusts*, of which few men have carried a larger burden. He was among the early promoters, and has been at all times one of the most active Directors of the *Brooklyn Savings Bank* and the *Brooklyn Hospital*; also of the *Orphan Asylum*, and the other establishments of the *Church Charity Foundation*, and Trustee of its endowment funds. He was the first President of the *Academy of Music* and of the *Brooklyn Club*; director of the *Brooklyn Trust Company*; of the *Home Life Insurance Company*; of the *Long Island Historical Society*, and one of its building committee; a patron of the *Mercantile Library* and of the *Art Association*; Warden of *Grace Church*; Delegate to the *Long Island Episcopal Convention*; and also of the *General Convention of the Episcopal Church*. As manager, during 23 years, of the real estate and the finances of the *General Theological Seminary* of the Episcopal Church, he redeemed the Institution from great embarrassments, and did not resign his laborious post until it was in good condition. He is a Trustee of the *Episcopal Fund*; Trustee of the property belonging to the *Diocese of Long Island*, and President of *Greenwood Cemetery*.

Perhaps none of Mr. Pierrepont's services to the City has been more steady and important than that which he has rendered in connection with the *ferries*, which are so absolutely vital to the welfare of Brooklyn. In connection with the very able gentlemen, who have composed its board of directors, he has labored at all

times for the result which they have so conspicuously achieved, of creating and maintaining the most admirably conducted ferries in the world. On the death of his father he was appointed a Director in his place, and made Vice-President of the company and Chairman of its Executive Committee, and has continued in the active management of the ferries for more than forty years. During seventeen years, he and the late Mr. Jacob R. Le Roy were the lessees of the ferries from the City of New York. He has always given his time and services, as have the other Directors (except the three, who as its officers were occupied exclusively in its business), without fee or reward, or ownership of its valuable stock. As we have stated, on page 425, the first ferry to Long Island was established in 1638, from the present Peck Slip to the present foot of Fulton street, Brooklyn, and *Cornelius Dirckson (Hoaglandt)* was the first ferry-master. He had a farm of sixteen acres on the Brooklyn side, near the ferry, and came at the call of a horn which hung against a tree, and ferried passengers across the river in a skiff, for the moderate charge of three stivers in wampum.

The son of *Cornelius Dirckson Hoaglandt* married *Elizabeth*, daughter of *Joris Janssen de Rapalie*. Their son, *Adrian Hoaglandt*, married *Anna Byvanck*, whose daughter, *Belitie*, married *James Renaudet*, of Philadelphia, Sept. 10, 1714.

Their daughter, *Ann Renaudet*, married *Townsend White*, whose daughter, *Ann White*, married *Wm. Constable*. *Wm. Constable's* daughter, *Anna Maria*, married *Hezekiah B. Pierrepont*.

Thus, their second son, *Henry Evelyn Pierrepont*, who has, for over forty years, been connected with the management of the Brooklyn ferries, has descended on the maternal side, in the seventh generation, from the first ferry-master.

We have named duties and action enough for one man's burden, but have named only the lighter labors of Mr. Pierrepont's life. The very large landed property of his father, in the Counties of Oswego, Lewis, St. Lawrence and Franklin (some 500,000 acres of wild land), and in Brooklyn, required in its superintendence, development, sales and improvements, incessant vigilance, toil and good judgment; and in its partition, unavoidably protracted and complicated legal proceedings. For these services (other than those at law) he was particularly trained, and educated by his father (since whose death, in 1838, the main charge has devolved on him), and made expert in surveying, mapping, and conveying, and in keeping the accounts with settlers, who were very numerous, on the Northern lands. Among the works he executed on the Brooklyn estate, was the excavation of *Furman street*; the building of a retaining wall of 775 feet in length, to sustain the Heights; the placing of a bulkhead on the water front, filled from the earth of the Heights, by which five acres of valuable wharf property was created. This great load of

labor he carried all his life, save as his responsibilities were measurably abated by the partition, which transferred to others their respective shares; and then, he has steadily continued to advise and aid.

On the 1st December, 1841, Mr. Pierrepont was united by marriage with *Anna Maria*, daughter of *Peter Augustus Jay* and granddaughter of *John Jay*, former Chief Justice of the United States. He has a family of three sons and two daughters living. His daughter, *Mrs. Rutherford Stuyvesant*, died in December, 1879. Mr. Pierrepont's residence is on a part of the homestead on which he was born, and his windows overlook the beautiful bay, and the great city on the opposite shore.

Within the limits of Brooklyn proper, that is, the present Western District of the city, there are two other ferries, viz.: the *Bridge Street* and the "Navy Yard," or *Hudson Avenue* ferries.

The *Bridge Street Ferry*, from Bridge street, Brooklyn, to James slip, New York, was held by *A. V. Stout* and others (*New York and Brooklyn Ferry Company*), at an annual rent of \$600, the lease expiring in 1874.

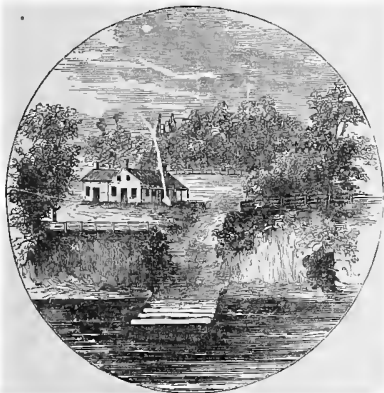
The *Navy Yard Ferry*, from Hudson Avenue, Brooklyn, to Jackson street, New York, was first established between Walnut street, New York, and Little street on Long Island, on the west side and adjacent to the Navy Yard; and was granted, on the 1st of December, 1817, to *Capt. Samuel Evans*, for the term of fifteen years, for the accommodation of mechanics and others in crossing. No rent was charged for the first seven years, but for the last seven \$100 per annum. About the year 1857, *Mr. James Wilson*, leased from New York the Jackson slip, with a ferry franchise to Hudson avenue. The Brooklyn authorities allowed him the use of the foot of Hudson avenue, about seventy feet wide. Owing to interference with the pier of the Gas Company adjoining, in landing the boats, he was stopped by an injunction procured by them. Being unable to litigate the matter with success a corporation, he compromised and paid them \$100 a year rent for the use of the side of their pier. At the end of the Wilson lease, *Mr. John L. Brown* obtained another ten years' lease from New York city, at \$50 a year. Being unwilling, however, to submit to the rent, as well as the claims for damages made by the two companies, he discontinued the ferry, retaining his ferry franchise from New York, and the right of the city slip from the Brooklyn Common Council. In July, 1869, by a *coup de main*, he regained possession of the city slip, which had been occupied by the Gas Company, and commenced running the ferry again.

We next come to

The Ferries of Williamsburgh.—The history of these, ferries, although perhaps not so interesting as that of the Brooklyn ferries, is yet of sufficient conse-

quence to demand a passing notice. The water front of Williamsburgh and Bushwick, being located entirely outside of the limits pretentiously claimed by the city of New York, there has been none of that tedious and expensive litigation, which has so overshadowed the adjacent city of Brooklyn; and the ferry abuses of which Williamsburgh has had to complain have been the results of private cupidity and monopolies, rather than corporate injustice and gigantic legalized frauds. In the total absence of any of those neighborly claims which forbade the citizens of Brooklyn from crossing the river in their own boats, the people of Bushwick freely exercised their own will and convenience in the matter of rowing themselves, their neighbors and their garden-truck over to the city, so that no regular ferry was established until near the close of the last century.

The Grand Street Ferry.—About the year 1797, Mr. James Hazard, who resided at the foot of Grand street, New York, established a regular row boat ferry from that point to what is now the foot of Grand street, Williamsburgh. At this time, the houses on the



OLD GRAND STREET FERRY, WILLIAMSBURGH.

New York side, in the vicinity of the ferry, were very scattering; and, where extensive blocks of buildings and a large population now exists, were then, to a great extent, open fields of unbroken ground. What is now known as Williamsburgh, consisted then of eight or ten farms fronting the river, and extending eastward.

About the year 1804, Mr. John Morrell came here and purchased a farm, and having opened the present Grand street, through its centre, started a ferry from its foot, which place he called Morrell's Point. "In a short time," says the chronicler, "an amicable understanding existed between Mr. Hazard and Mr. Morrell, and both ran their row boats, the one from New York, the other from Morrell's Point, and each sought for all the business he could obtain without infringement on the other's rights. It may be amusing to state that Mr. Morrell kept a *horn* at his ferry, for the convenience of passengers, who, when they wanted to be ferried over the wave, "would give the *ventidal* signal." About this time, also, a gentleman named

Woodhull having purchased land on North Second street, established a ferry from the foot of that street to Rivington street, New York, which he called the "Williamsburgh Ferry."

Mr. Morrell, at the Grand street ferry, determined not to be outdone by the new comer, improved his boats, increased his accommodations, and rendered every facility which the times demanded. The spirited competition which ensued was much more favorable to the growth and general interests of the rising village, than to the pecuniary benefit of the rival owners, and was finally terminated by the absorption of the North Second street ferry by the Grand street ferry, which continued to be the only one for many years. Subsequently, following the course of public improvement, row and sail boats were exchanged for horse boats.

This ferry belonged, at one time, to David Dunham, Esq., of Bushwick, and was sold by his administrators, in September, 1823, to David Ross Dunham, for \$28,000. The horse-boats were used until the incorporation of the village, in 1827, when one was metamorphosed into a steam boat, and very appropriately named the *The Eclipse*, running for some years, in connection with the old horse boats, which were continued in use long after they had become unsafe from age. This (together with the Peck Slip and Division Avenue) ferry was subsequently held by the *Williamsburgh Ferry Company*, (incorporated in 1849, with a capital of \$130,000); and subsequently, by Messrs. J. V. Meserole & Co. (*Brooklyn Ferry Co.*) at an annual rent of \$15,000, the lease expiring in 1869.

The Houston Street Ferry, connecting Grand street (E. D.), with Houston street, New York (distance three-fourths of a mile), was established in 1840; and has proved a great convenience to those employed at the *dry-docks* and other works in that part of Brooklyn. It has been held by the *Houston Street Ferry Associates*, established in 1842, at an annual rent of \$6,500. Its rent since 1863 was \$4,500, and its lease expired in 1874.

The Division Street Ferry, from South Seventh street, Brooklyn, E. D., to Grand street, New York (distance, half a mile), was commenced in 1851, and proved a most convenient route between the southern part of Williamsburgh and the city of New York. With the Grand street and Peck Slip ferries, it belonged, at one time, to the Williamsburgh Ferry Company, then to J. V. Meserole & Co., at a rent of \$15,000, its lease expiring in 1869.

A ferry was also established in , by A. J. Berry and J. J. Hicks, per *Brooklyn Ferry Co.*, from James slip, New York to South Seventh street, Brooklyn, E. D., at annual rent of \$3,000. In 1866, the *East River Ferry Co.* (same parties), leased it at same rent. Its lease expired in 1868, and Oliver Charlick afterward held it, at an annual rent of \$4,600 for ten years.

A ferry between James Slip and South Sixth street, Brooklyn, E. D., also run by A. V. Street and others (*New York and Brooklyn Ferry Co.*), at an annual rent of \$3,450, lease expiring in 1874.

The Peck Slip Ferry—(From foot of South Seventh street (E. D.), to Peck Slip, New York), distance two miles, was established in 1836, and contributed, it is believed, more largely than any other, to the growth of Williamsburgh by introducing the most respectable class of citizens, both mercantile and professional. It was formerly held by the Williamsburgh Ferry Co., and later by J. V. Meserole & Co., at a rent of \$21,000. Its lease expired in 1869.

The Green-Point Ferries, are from the foot of Green-point avenue, Brooklyn, E. D., to the foot of East Tenth and East Twenty-third streets, New York. The first named route was established in 1852 (lease dated 1850), by the efforts of Mr. Nezia Bliss, of Green-Point; and was soon transferred to Mr. Shepard Knapp, and afterward held by G. Lee Knapp. The Twenty-Third street route was established in 1857, and held by St. Patrick's Cathedral, per G. Lee Knapp. Rent of the Tenth street ferry, \$1,300, and of the Twenty-

Third street, \$600 per annum, both expiring in 1874.

The Brooklyn and the Erie Annex Ferries.—In 1877 Gen. Daniel Butterfield, acting for the *Pennsylvania Railroad Company*, leased from the Union Ferry Company, the south side of the Fulton Ferry pier, and the slip adjoining, to run a boat called the "Annex," connecting with the Pennsylvania Road at Jersey City, and with the Albany boats, conveying passengers to and from them, and checking baggage to all parts of the United States. This arrangement was acceded to by the New York and Brooklyn Common Councils, and the latter city leased the bulkhead at the foot of Fulton street at an annual rent of \$1,500, which is in addition to a rent of \$500 paid the Union Ferry Co. More recently the *Erie Railway* has established a similar ferry, landing at the foot of the Brooklyn bridge-tower. By these arrangements the delays incident to the two ferries, and the crowded streets of New York, are avoided by passengers leaving Brooklyn for points reached by these railways.

For the following list of New York Ferries to points in Kings County, we are indebted to the Comptroller of the City of New York:

LESSEE.	LOCATION AND DURATION OF LEASE.	RENTAL.
People's Ferry Co.....	Grand Street, to Grand Street, Brooklyn, E. D. April 18, 1876, to April 18, 1886.....	\$1,100 per year.
New York Ferry Co.....	Grand Street, to Broadway, Brooklyn, E. D. May 1, 1879, to May 1, 1889.....	\$18,862.85 per year.
Union Ferry Co. of Brooklyn.....	Fulton Ferry, South Ferry, Hamilton Avenue Ferry, Catharine Ferry, Wall Street Ferry.....	12½ per cent. of gross receipts (which includes certain dock privileges). \$1,000 per year.
John H. Starin.....	Pier 1, to Bay Ridge. Lease expires May 1, 1884.....	5 per cent. of gross receipts, and \$5,000 for Dock.
Henry F. Stone, Trustee.....	Twenty-third Street, to Quay Street, Brooklyn. May 1, 1882, to May 1, 1887.....	Franchise and dock, \$20,000 per year.
New York Ferry Co.....	Roosevelt Street, to Broadway, Brooklyn, E. D. March 1, 1883, to March 1, 1888.....	Franchise and dock, \$3,000 per year.
Greenpoint Ferry Co.....	Tenth Street, to Greenpoint. February 1, 1883, to February 1, 1888.....	Franchise. 5 per cent. on gross receipts; dock, \$1,000 per year.
Greenpoint Ferry Co.....	Twenty-third Street, to Greenpoint. February 1, 1883, to June 1, 1891.....	\$4,000 per year.
Nassau Ferry Co.....	Houston Street, to Grand Street, Brooklyn, E. D. May 1, 1883, to May 1, 1888.....	

Ten years ago it was conceded, even by the ferry managers, that the limit of ferry accommodations, at the chief centre of travel, had been reached, and addition to the present ferry accommodations involved greatly increased hazard of ferry travel, across an arm of the sea in which the commerce of the world is crowding more and more every day, and this of itself would tend to bring the city's progress to a stand-still.

It was not therefore, simply as a provision for the future, but as an actual and present necessity, that additional means of communication were needed between Brooklyn and New York, and numerous plans were brought before the public; but the favorite one was that of the construction of a bridge across the East river, between the two cities.



THE FIRST BROOKLYN FERRY-MASTER.

THE NEW YORK AND BROOKLYN BRIDGE.

BY GEORGE B. LINCOLN, JR.

Those who have perused the previous pages of this work, will remember that, as early as the year 1800, a suggestion was made (page 103) of the feasibility of a bridge across the East River. And it was furthermore stated that "a plan has already been laid down on paper, and a gentleman of acknowledged abilities, and good sense has observed that he would engage to erect it in two years time." Who this audacious bridge proposer was, we have no means of knowing. It may, however, have been Thomas Pope, "Architect and Landscape Gardener," who, in 1811, again broached the idea of such communication between the village of Brooklyn and the city of New York. His plans, however, though published in an octavo volume on bridge architecture, fell on unheeding ears. Twenty-five years passed, with no doubt many suggestions, which have been lost to the public, when, in 1836, General Joseph G. Swift, an estimable Brooklynite of the olden time, proposed a *dyke* across the river, on which was to be laid out a Boulevard, wedding together the two cities. Thirteen years later, in 1849, the New York *Tribune* again agitated the matter in an article from which we quote.

A BRIDGE TO BROOKLYN.—The great project of municipal improvement now occupying public attention in this city and Brooklyn, is the building of a splendid bridge connecting the two shores of the East River, and thus making New York and Brooklyn emphatically one. . . . It is in the inevitable course of events that the seaward point of New York Island should constantly be over run with the pressure of business and population and should be seeking outlets for the excess in every possible direction. The great natural remedy for this commercial and populatative plethora is Brooklyn. . . . Ferries are rapidly becoming unequal to the immense and swiftly increasing intercourse between counting house and home to so many thousands of our citizens. The only thing to be thought of is a bridge to be built from some high point in New York to another in Brooklyn—thus permitting vessels of every kind to pass freely under at all times, and affording passage to a steady stream of vehicles and pedestrians. Such a bridge would become instantly an immense and important thoroughfare, second scarcely to Broadway itself.

First Active Measures Taken Towards a Bridge.—In February, 1864, a bill was introduced in the Legislature providing for a commission to investigate the feasibility and expediency of a bridge across the East River, and appropriating \$5,000 for the expenses

of such commission. The bill provided that the commission should report the results of their investigations to the Legislature of 1865.

On February 4, 1865, a bill was introduced in the Legislature to incorporate the East River Bridge Company.

Among the intelligent and practical men who had in mind the idea of solving the problem, was Colonel Julius W. Adams, of this city, for many years recognized as one of the most accomplished members of the profession of civil engineering. He had studied the matter ever since 1855, and never lost sight of its importance but, upon his return to Brooklyn, followed it up with characteristic zeal. After the conclusion of the war he renewed his attentions to the subject, and finally, in 1865, he succeeded in maturing a plan, which he believed was practicable. His idea was to build a suspension bridge from Fulton Ferry on the Brooklyn side to a point near Chatham square on the New York side. The intention was to have the main body of the bridge built of two elliptic tubes placed side by side and supported by ribbons of steel. There were to be three platforms for travelers, and, it is claimed by its projector, that the capacity would have been greater than that of the present structure. Colonel Adams communicated his plan to Mr. William C. Kingsley, who was largely engaged in the contracting business in this city. Mr. Kingsley entered heartily into the spirit of the enterprise, and carefully examined the diagrams submitted by the engineer. He spent several months in a thorough and exhaustive examination of the entire question, studied the needs of the two cities, and finally became fully impressed with the practicability and feasibility of the scheme.

Again in the severe winter of 1866-7, the perils and difficulties of ferry navigation, called public attention strongly to the necessity of some more secure, and stable method of transit between the two great cities.

Popular feeling was soon highly gratified by the announcement that leading citizens of Brooklyn were moving in the matter, and that a bill for chartering a Bridge Company had been introduced in the Legislature then in session by the Hon. Henry C. Murphy, by whose unflagging support, as well as the untiring aid of its projectors, it became a law April 16th. This bill was drawn upon the basis of Col. Adams' plans.

The New York Bridge Company thus incorporated, consisted of the following citizens named as incorporators: John T. Hoffman, Simeon B. Chittenden, Edward Ruggles, Smith Ely, Jr., Samuel Booth, Gren-

In the preparation of this sketch we have availed ourselves liberally of the information contained in Mr. WILLIAM C. CONANT'S article, in *Harper's Magazine*, for May, 1883, to which we are also indebted for the accompanying illustrations; the Eagle "Bridge" issue of May 24, 1883, and memoranda kindly furnished us by the Bridge officials. EDITOR.

ville T. Jenks, Alexander McCue, Henry E. Pierrepont, Martin Kalbfleish, John Roach, Charles A. Townsend, Henry G. Stobbins, Charles E. Bill, Chauncey E. Mitchell, T. Bayley Myers, Seymour L. Husted, William A. Fowler, William Wood, Andrew W. Green, Edmund W. Corlis, William C. Rushmore, Ethelbert S. Mills, Albert W. Craven, Arthur W. Benson, T. B. Cornell, John N. Hayward, Isaac Van Anden, Pomeroy P. Dickinson, Alfred M. Wood, J. Carson Brevoort, William Marshall, Samuel McLean, John W. Coombs, William Hunter, Jr., John H. Prentice, Edmund Driggs, John P. Atkinson, John Morton. A vacancy was filled by the selection of Henry C. Murphy, who became President of the Bridge Company. The Act fixed the capital stock at five millions of dollars, with power to increase it, and gave the cities of New York and Brooklyn authority to subscribe to the stock of the company such amount as their Common Councils respectively should determine, wisely judging that neither private capital nor municipal management alone could be relied on to carry such a work successfully to completion.

The cities of New York and Brooklyn were authorized to subscribe for such amounts of the capital stock as two-thirds of their Common Councils should determine, or to guarantee the payment of the principal and interest of the company's bonds, in such amounts as the Common Councils should prescribe. Under this provision the city of Brooklyn was at once asked to subscribe \$3,000,000 to the stock of the company.

In 1868 the Common Council of Brooklyn resolved to subscribe this amount, on condition that two millions should first be subscribed by others, and ten per cent. of this be paid in, and that the city should be represented in the board of directors.

On the 29th of December, in the same year, the New York Board of Councilmen passed an ordinance subscribing \$1,500,000 to the stock of the company, on condition that the Mayor, Comptroller, and President of the Board of Aldermen should be *ex-officio* members of the company. Thus a paid up capital of four and one-half millions was insured.

On the organization of the company in May, 1867, one month after the passage of the incorporating act, John A. Roebling was appointed engineer (May 23, 1867), and he made his report of surveys, plans, and estimates on the 1st of the following September. In the following May a commission of three United States engineers, Maj.-Gen. Horatio G. Wright, Maj.-Gen. John Newton, and Major King, was appointed by the War Department, to report upon the general feasibility of the project, especially as to whether or not the bridge would be an obstruction to navigation. The engineers entered upon their work at once. After a thorough review of the plans, they concluded to examine the principal suspension bridges throughout the United States. Mr. Roebling by this time had substantially completed

his plans. The incorporators, after examining them, though having full confidence in his judgment, experience, and ability to construct the work, believed it advisable, in view of the uncertainty or opposition of the public, to call in a board of consulting engineers. Opinions were accordingly asked from Horatio G. Allen, of New York (who brought from England, and ran in this country, the first locomotive operated on the Western Hemisphere, and who is still living); Alfred W. Craven, the engineer of the Croton Aqueduct; H. B. Latrobe, builder and chief engineer of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad; Chief Engineer Steele, of the Reading Railroad; James P. Kirkwood, W. J. McAlpine, John J. Serrell, and Colonel Julius W. Adams. For four or five months they passed nearly all their time in studying the plans proposed by Colonel Roebling, and at the conclusion of their labors they reported favorably upon them in every respect. When the journey of observation was made by the War Department engineers, in the Spring of 1869, they were accompanied by Messrs. John A. Roebling, Kingsley, McCue, Slocum, Lewis, Kinsella, Carey, and Probasco. They visited Pittsburg, Cincinnati, Niagara, and other places, and made a thorough examination of the bridges at all these important points. A little later the Government Commissioners presented their report. They approved and endorsed all of Mr. Roebling's plans, with the single exception that the height of the central span above the middle of the river be 135 feet, instead of 130 feet, as proposed.

By an Act of Congress the bridge was declared to be a lawful structure when completed, and a post-road for the conveyance of the United States mails.

The original Act provided that the bridge should be completed and opened for use on, or before, the first of June, 1870. In 1869, the time was, by an amendment to the charter, extended to June 1st, 1874, and a railroad franchise was added, the use of which was optional with the company.

The work of preparing the site of the foundation of the Brooklyn tower was commenced January 3, 1870, but Mr. Roebling did not live to see the first stone laid in the magnificent structure that was to have crowned his illustrious career. In the Summer of 1869, while engaged in determining the location of the Brooklyn tower, a ferryboat entering the slip, thrust the timbers on which he stood, in such a manner as to catch and crush his foot. The injury resulted in lockjaw, from which he died sixteen days after.

A fit successor was found in his son, Washington A. Roebling, who had not only been the accomplished associate of his father in some of his principal works, but had aided him most efficiently in the preparation of the designs and plans of the bridge (See Sketch of Colonel Roebling, in a following page).

Before the actual work of construction had commenced, however, considerable modification had to be made in the original design. These changes were in

the direction of not only a larger and more capacious structure, but also of increased solidity and strength throughout, thereby adding largely to the cost.

In 1870 work was commenced on the foundation for the tower at the Brooklyn side of the river. To cross a stream 1,600 feet in width, with a single span, was a thing never before accomplished, but the difficulties were immensely increased by the fact, that the towers to support this immense structure had to be erected under circumstances that rendered the usual methods for sinking piers impracticable. The only element of uncertainty was believed to be in the failure, or success, of the submarine operations. This point settled, the constructors had an open pathway to full fruition of their hopes and plans. Of course, under ordinary circumstances of bridge construction, attention is paid to the obstacles in securing foundations, piers, and approaches; but, in this case, the supporting masonry was placed where the exigencies of the work demanded. Preliminary operations were begun at the site of the Brooklyn foundation as early as 1867. The trial boring at that time showed gneiss rock at a depth of 96 feet below high water mark. It was found necessary to establish a uniform foundation over the entire space. This, it was determined, should be built of solid timber in the form of a caisson—an apparatus aptly described by one of the engineers as “a diving bell on a huge scale.” It was therefore determined to employ the method by compressed air; and caissons were constructed by Messrs. Webb & Bell, of Greenpoint, having the horizontal dimensions of the proposed piers, which were 102 by 172 feet. Each caisson was, in effect, a wooden box, made of Georgia yellow pine, turned bottom upward, the interior space being 9 feet high. The roof of the New York caisson was 22 feet thick, of solid timber, bolted together, and was supported by frames running from side to side, which frames, together with the edges of the box, were to sustain the vast superincumbent weight, aided by the upward pressure of the condensed air within the caisson.

The caissons, having been built on ways, were launched in the same manner as a ship, and were towed to the points where the piers were to be located.

The launch of the Brooklyn caisson, on March 19, 1870, was regarded as the first great step in the actual mechanical progress of the bridge. It was accompanied by appropriate ceremonies, and witnessed by an enormous concourse of people. Meanwhile an army of workmen were busy preparing the site for the foundation. This comprised the establishment of a rectangular basin, open on the side toward the river, and surrounded on three sides by sheet piling, with the bottom leveled to a uniform depth of 18 feet below high water mark. Many difficulties were encountered in the work of dredging. First, the workmen took out something over 10,700 yards of surface mud. Blasting was re-

sorted to, in order to remove the boulders on the bottom. By April, the work had progressed so far that six air compressing machines were placed in position, ready for operations on the caisson. At the beginning of May the caisson was towed into position. The structure was moved by six tugboats, and the trip occupied two days. Ten courses of timber were laid on the top of the caisson, crossing each other at right angles, with spaces of from four to five inches between the sticks. Within the five weeks ending with June 20, 1870 over 100,000 cubic feet of timber was thus put in place. The spaces between the timbers were filled in with concrete, for the purpose of adding the necessary weight as well as hardening and preserving the timber. Air and water shafts were put in and the finishing touches were given to the air locks. These locks were seven feet high, and six feet six inches diameter inside. The interior was lighted by bullseyes. Three derricks were used to lay the masonry. For the lower courses Kingston limestone was the material used, while above the surface of the river all the facing was done with granite, brought from Maine and Pennsylvania. Courses of granite blocks were laid upon the top of the caisson, by which it was sunk until it rested upon the bed of the river. Air was then forced into the chambers beneath, by means of engines upon the shore, until the water was entirely displaced, and the river bed left dry. The pressure was maintained at this point, the engines working day and night. The air chamber was not entered and explored until May 10, 1870. The workmen obtained access to the chamber by means of two shafts which extended above the surface of the water. At the bottom of each shaft were two air locks, which were simply ante chambers, constructed of iron, into which the men entered from the shaft, and closing an air tight door behind them, admitted the compressed air from the caisson, by means of a cock, until the pressure in the lock reached the same degree as that in the caisson; when a communicating door was opened, and the men passed into the chamber below.

By a very ingenious arrangement which it is not necessary to describe here, the earth excavated from beneath the caisson was carried up to the surface, without affording opportunity for the air to escape. In this way the earth was being constantly removed from underneath the caisson, and the vast mass settled, day by day, down through the gravel and quicksand which formed the bed of the river, until, at a depth of 78 feet, on the New York side, and 45 feet on the Brooklyn side, a solid foundation was reached. In proportion as the caisson settled, the masonry upon it was built up; so that the top of the stone work was always above water. When the solid foundation had been reached the interior of the caisson was filled with concrete; and the 400,000 cubic feet of timber was left buried nearly 80 feet below the surface,

where, practicably indestructible, it remains as the foundation of the tower.

This work of lowering the caisson and removing the obstacles at the bottom required all the skill of the engineering corps engaged upon the bridge. The area of the wooden structure was 17,000 square feet. It was soon found that no uniform stratum could be had over the whole of this space, and it was necessary to proceed with great care. The most serious obstacle to the sinking of the caisson was the presence of large boulders under the edge of the iron shoe at the bottom. When they extended more than two or three feet outside the shoe, no attempt was made to haul them in, but they were chipped off until the edges of the caisson could clear them. The deeper the prospectors went, the larger and more numerous became the boulders. When the caisson had reached a depth of twenty-five feet below the water level, it became necessary to resort to blasting. Fears were entertained of the effect of the explosions upon the ear drums of the men, in view of the compressed atmosphere, and it was apprehended that trouble might arise from injury to the air-locks and water-shafts. The experiment was begun by first firing a pistol with successively heavier charges; small blasting charges followed, until the use of powder became an every-day resort. The descending caisson left a perpendicular wall around it, none of the soil showing any sign of caving in. In supplying the compressed air, six double air pumps were used. The air pressure at the outset was governed entirely by the tides, and regulated itself according to their height; but after the caisson had entered into the water-tight and air-tight strata of clay, the tides no longer had any effect upon the air pressure. Regularity of air pumping was maintained until fresh-water springs were encountered, which caused much trouble. At about this time occurred some singular mishaps, which were called "blow-outs."

The overweight of the air pressure would at times disturb the equilibrium of the caisson, the structure would be moved, and the escaping air would carry an enormous stream of water up to a tremendous height. One Sunday morning, during the construction of the Brooklyn foundation, occurred the greatest blow-out in the history of the work. The overweight had increased to such an extent that the south water shaft blew out all of the compressed air. Eye witnesses state that a dense column of water, fog, mud and stones, was thrown up 500 feet into the air, accompanied by a terrific roar and a shower of falling fragments, covering the houses for squares around. This column was seen a mile off. The noise was so frightful that the whole neighborhood was stampeded, and made a rush up Fulton street. Even the toll collectors at the Ferry abandoned their tills. From this blow-out the caisson settled ten feet, its weight at the time being 17,675 tons. The air tightness was not impaired by the blow-out. Despite these mishaps, the wooden structure was steadily lower-

ed. When it had been sunk to within three feet of its bed, and while the air chamber was being filled with concrete, seventy-six brick arches were erected below it. The concrete was laid at the rate of 100 yards per day. Upon this was laid the masonry, the foundations rising as the caisson descended. Several fires occurred during the progress of the work, owing to the carelessness of workmen, and the tendency to combustion in compressed air. The most serious of these, in December, 1870, was not discovered for several hours after its inception, and was only extinguished by admitting air to the caisson, and then flooding the air chamber with water. The damage was confined to the third and fourth courses of timber, and by March 6, of the following year, was fully repaired, and the caisson was as strong as ever.

The following figures show at a glance the general dimensions of the Brooklyn caisson:

Length over all	168 feet.
Breadth.....	102 feet.
Height of air chamber.....	9½ feet.
Total height when launched.....	14½ feet.
Total height when completed.....	21½ feet.
Cubic feet of timber in it.....	111,000 feet.
Weight of iron work.....	250 tons.
Launching weight of caisson.....	3,000 tons.

On the 15th of June, 1870, the first stone of the Brooklyn tower was laid; and from that time the work went on without serious interruption. Circumstances delayed the work on the New York side, and the caisson was not launched till May 8th, 1871. It was towed to its position and the work of sinking it was commenced September 11, 1871. It may here be observed that the work of constructing and sinking these caissons, and building the foundations of the towers, involved some problems in engineering that had never before been practically solved. The foundation of the Brooklyn tower was sunk to a depth of forty-five feet, where a sufficiently firm foundation was found. The caisson on the New York side was sunk to the rock at a depth of seventy-eight feet. Upon the tower foundations, of course, rested the stability of the entire work, and the success of the enterprise depended on them. By the skill of the chief engineer, W. A. Roebling, and his able assistants, Messrs. Collingwood, Paue, Martin, and McNulty, the difficulties, the risks, and uncertainties attending the construction of these foundations were satisfactorily overcome. The subsequent building of the towers, and of the superstructure, was work that had been done before on a smaller scale, and involved but few problems that had not already found a practical solution.

The site selected for the New York tower was at the end of Pier No. 29, East River, 400 feet from what is denominated the shore or bulkhead lines. In its general features the New York caisson was a reproduction of that which had been used so successfully in laying the

Brooklyn foundation. The air chamber, 9 feet 6 inches high, was divided into six compartments, lined with light boiler iron. The air locks were built into the roof of the caisson, and were regarded as an improvement upon those previously in use. There were four supply shafts. The interior was lighted with gas and calcium lights. In this caisson, as well as that of the Brooklyn foundation, measures were taken to protect the woodwork from that most destructive of insects of its kind, the teredo, or sea worm.

The caisson was equipped with a temporary floor extending over the base, and additional courses of timber were laid upon it, so that when finished it contained twenty-two feet of solid timber above the roof of the air chamber. A notable part of the work of excavation below the New York caisson was the process of running the sand up through the pipes by the force of compressed air. An iron pipe was run down into the chamber, within a foot of the ground. This was supplied with a stop-cock beneath the roof. The sand and earth were heaped up around the bottom of this pipe in the shape of a cone, and when the stop-cock was opened it passed out with such great velocity that stones and gravel were often projected to a height of one hundred feet.

No brick piers were used below the caisson as in the Brooklyn air chamber. The concrete filling was put in, and above this rose the solid mass of masonry.

By the first of June, 1872, the Brooklyn tower had reached a height of one hundred feet above high water, and the caisson of the New York tower had reached its position on the rock beneath the river bed. The filling of this caisson with concrete was completed July 12th, 1872, and in December the tower had reached the height of 57 feet. The directors failing to purchase the property for the Brooklyn anchorage, took legal steps to acquire the title to it, which was accomplished January 7th, 1873, and they at once entered on the work of clearing the ground and constructing the anchorage. This work, as well as the work on the towers, was prosecuted till December, 1873.

The erection of the towers proceeded expeditiously, with only such delays as were caused by the non arrival of the stone, owing to the fact that the granite was brought from different quarries, located at a great distance.

By an Act of the Legislature, passed June 5th, 1874, the entire control of the enterprise was given to the cities of New York and Brooklyn, and the private stockholders were to retire, under certain conditions which were afterward accepted.

The shares in the original company, as has been shown, were fixed at \$100 each. The list of the subscribers, as revealed by the minute book still in the possession of the Trustees, is very interesting. It is as follows:

SUBSCRIBERS.	No. of shares.
Mayor, Aldermen and Commonalty of the City of New York.....	15,000
The City of Brooklyn ..	30,000
Henry C. Murphy.....	100
Isaac Van Anden.....	200
William Marshall.....	50
Seymour L. Husted.....	200
Samuel McLean.....	50
Arthur W. Benson....	20
Martin Kalbfleisch ..	200
Alexander McCue.....	100
William M. Tweed.....	560
Peter B. Sweeny	560
Hugh Smith.....	560
Henry W. Slocum.....	500
J. S. T. Stranahan.....	100
Grenville T. Jenks.....	50
Kingsley & Keeney.....	1,600
John H. Prentice.....	50
William Hunter, Jr....	50
John W. Lewis.....	50
Total.....	50,000

After the subscriptions were all made, several of the subscribers withdrew or failed to make good their promises, whereupon Mr. Kingsley took up their stock and advanced the amount necessary to cover their deficiencies. In fact, he, and the firm he represented, took in all over \$300,000 of the entire \$500,000 subscribed by the New York Bridge Company.

An estimate of the chief engineer showed that, by reason of unforeseen difficulties, and some desirable changes in the plan, the cost of the bridge would reach the sum of \$13,000,000. The work, which was temporarily suspended in the spring of 1874, was resumed in the summer.

The Brooklyn tower was completed in the summer of 1875, and the New York anchorage was commenced. It was finished in the summer of 1876, as was also the New York tower.

The original idea of facing the towers with granite, and backing them with limestone, was adhered to throughout. As completed, they form two magnificent specimens of masonry. Better work was done on no part of the structure than upon those twin granite sentinels of the river.

The Anchorages.—The adoption of a suspended span of 1,595½ feet, at a height of 135 feet, also determined (in combination with other mathematical and mechanical considerations) the height of the towers (276¾ feet) from which the span must be suspended, and two other points in the air line of the bridge, at which the ends of the suspension cables are secured—in other words, the anchorages—for the cables are not to pull on the tops of the tall towers, but to rest on them with nearly a simple vertical pressure, being not even fastened; and thus, so far from tending to pull the towers over, the suspended weight tends only to hold them in position. The cables are therefore an-

chored inland, at a distance of 930 feet back from the towers on each side.

These anchorages are solid cubical structures of stone masonry, measuring 119 by 132 feet at the base, and rising some 90 feet above high-water mark. Their weight is about 60,000 tons each, which is utilized to resist the pull of the cables. Thus anchored by their extremities on each side of the river, 930 feet back from the towers, the cables at the water-line on each side are lifted up with a long, lofty, and graceful sweep over the top of a tower 276 feet high, and droop between the two towers in a majestic curve, which one can liken to nothing else for grandeur but the inverted arch of the rainbow.

These enormous cables are similarly supported in each case. At the bottom of the anchorage, and near its rear side from the bridge, are embedded four massive anchor plates of cast iron, one for each of the cables. These plates measure $16\frac{1}{2}$ by $17\frac{1}{2}$ feet on the face, and are $2\frac{1}{2}$ feet thick at the centre. The weight of each plate is over 46,000 pounds. Each plate has many radiating arms, extending to grasp the masonry in a manner suggestive of the octopus. This insures the full resistive power of the great mass of masonry upon the pull of the cables. Extending from the anchor plates are the iron link-bars, which are about 12 feet long, and curve in a sweep forming the arc of a circle through the solid stone work. Within 25 feet of the surface of the anchorage wall, this chain of iron links meets the wires of the cables, to which they are united. As in the towers, the backing of the granite facing of the anchorages is of limestone.

Everything was now in readiness for the engineers to enter upon the throwing of the introductory span across the East River. It was necessary, before the cable making was entered upon, that nineteen galvanized steel iron ropes should be thrown beyond the stream. The first carried over was known as "a traveler." Four of these were necessary at the outset. They were three-quarters of an inch in diameter, and were afterward spliced in two endless ropes around the propelling machinery. Their purpose was to assist in hauling over the other ropes and aiding generally in the construction of the cable strands. On August 14, 1876, one end of a traveler was fastened to a reel placed on a scow moored at the foot of the Brooklyn tower. It was then carried over the top of the tower and drawn up to and fastened on the Brooklyn anchorage. Warning was given to keep the river clear. The scow was towed to the New York tower, the rope paying out as she moved and sinking to the bed of the river. On the New York side it was hauled up to the top of the tower and thence over the anchorage. On the same day the second rope was taken up and hoisted into position, the ends were spliced together round the driving wheels provided, creating thereby an endless rope or pulley. The third and fourth "traveler" ropes

were lashed to the ones already in place and hauled over with the aid of steam power. When the lashings were cut the workmen went out on the wire in suspended plank seats called buggies. Next was taken over the carrier, a $1\frac{1}{4}$ inch rope capable of supporting a greater weight than the travelers. Then came the cradle cables to support the wooden platforms upon which the workmen regulated the spinning of the wires. The first person to cross the river on the bridge cable was Mr. E. F. Farrington, who, as the master mechanic, had charge of the cable making. He made his aerial journey on August 25, 1876.

Before the end of the year temporary cables and the cables for a foot bridge were in their places.

Making the Cables.—The machinery for manufacturing the cables was located on the Brooklyn anchorage. In selecting the wire to be spun in the construction of the cables the utmost care was taken by the engineers. The specifications were prepared with the most careful attention to detail, under the direct supervision of Col. Roebling.

The wire, after it was brought to the yard of the Brooklyn anchorage, was dipped in linseed oil and dried, and afterwards oiled with a coating of boiled oil and rosin. The object of this process was to prevent rusting at any joints where the work of galvanizing the wires was imperfectly done. The wires were carried across the river on what was called a traveling sheave, a light wooden wheel five feet in diameter, with a grooved rim. To this sheave the end of the wire wound on the drum was attached, and as the traveler carried the sheave across the river, the wire slowly unwound and followed it. At first the wire was run out slowly, the trip from anchorage to anchorage occupying thirteen minutes, but as the workmen became more familiar with their task, the time was reduced to nearly ten minutes. For months these sheaves made their rapid trips to and from the anchorages, and day by day the wires became more numerous, and the strands showed their sturdier dimensions over the river. Close upon the spinning of the wire followed the more delicate work of regulating or adjusting it to its exact place in the strand. The wires were regulated on the line of the guide-rope stretched between the towers.

Let us first imagine the cable as constructed—simply a bunch of wires, not twisted, but laid parallel, and bound together by a continuous wrapping of wire. The wires are of size No. 7, or a little over one-eighth inch in thickness; they number over 5,000 in each cable, and make a bundle $15\frac{3}{4}$ inches thick. To lay and bind this prodigious bunch of wires straight and parallel, would be impossible, except by subdividing the mass into skeins or strands, which are first laid and bound separately, and afterwards united. Each cable contains 19 strands of 278 wires each. They are formed precisely like skeins of yarn or thread. Each skein is a continuous wire, almost exactly one million feet, or nearly 200

miles in length, passing from anchorage to anchorage, back and forth, 278 times. The turns of the wire at each extremity of the skein pass around a solid block of iron, shaped externally like a horseshoe, with a groove in its periphery, in which the bend or bight of the skein lies as a skein of yarn is held on one's thumb for winding. Each shoe or eye-piece is fixed (after the strand is finished) between the ends of

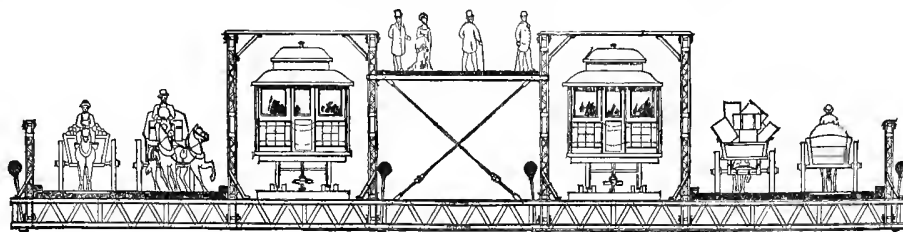
two anchor bars, a seven-inch iron bolt passing through the three, and so connecting the strand with the great anchor chain at either end. After a skein is fully laid in position (passing, of course, over the tops of the towers), it is compressed to a cylindrical form at every point, by large clamp tongs, and tightly bound with wire at intervals of about fifteen inches throughout its length. The men who did this work went out for the purpose on the strand in a "buggy," so called, which is a board seat slung by ropes from the axis of a grooved wheel fitting and traveling on the strand as bound together. When the strands were thus completed and duly regulated, the final work of wrapping the cable was accomplished in a similar manner.

The cables thus completed were now ready for their load, the floor or bridge proper.

The Bridge Floor.—Rising from the towers at an elevation of 118 feet above high-water mark, in gentle but graceful curve to the centre of the river span, where it meets the cables at an elevation of 135 feet above high-water mark, is the bridge floor, an immense steel frame-work, bewildering in its complexity.

Upon these enormous cables were placed the suspender-bands, of wrought iron, 5 inches wide and five-eighths of an inch thick; to these are attached the wire rope suspenders, and these in turn hold the steel floor beams of the roadway. These floor beams are 85 feet in length, 32 inches deep, 9 $\frac{3}{4}$ inches wide, and are suspended at a uniform distance of 7 feet 6 inches from centre to centre. They are unlike any beams ever before used in a suspension bridge. Each beam has two top and two bottom chords, formed of steel channel bases, tied and braced together. Between each pair of the main beams lighter beams are introduced, resting on the truss chords. This enabled the bridge builders to support and fasten the floor planking at regular intervals of three feet nine inches from the centers. There are six longitudinal trusses on the bridge, extending its entire length. In order to give greater strength to the superstructure, smaller longitudinal trusses are placed between the floor beams. The main longitudinal trusses divide the roadway into five sections, forming five avenues fenced with steel. The outside avenues are used for vehicles, that on the North

for those going to, and that on the South for those coming from, New York. These outer sections have a width of nineteen feet. The central promenade, ele-



SECTION OF BRIDGE, SHOWING FOOT, RAIL AND CARRIAGE WAYS.

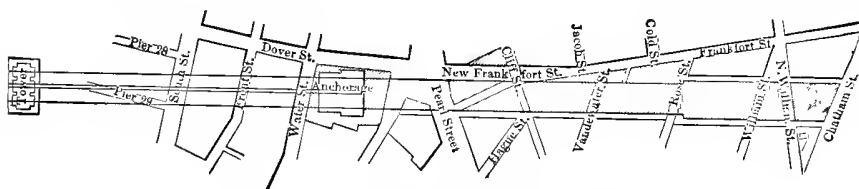
vated twelve feet above the roadway, is fifteen feet six inches wide, and overlooks the truss work and the railway intervening between it and the flanking drives, affording pedestrians a magnificent view of the river, the cities and surrounding country. The avenues between the drives and the space for foot passengers are devoted to the purposes of the bridge railway system.

The weight of the whole suspended structure (central span), cables and all, is 6,740 tons, and the maximum weight with which the bridge can be crowded by freely moving passengers, vehicles, and cars is estimated at 1,380 tons, making a total weight borne by the cables and stays of 8,120 tons, in the proportion of 6,920 tons by the cables and 1,190 tons by the stays. The stress (or lengthwise pull) in the cables due to the load becomes about 11,700 tons, and their ultimate strength is 49,200 tons.

It will be noticed that at the centre two suspenders from each of the four cables hang close together, sometimes but a few inches, sometimes more than a foot apart. This gives the clew to that problem of engineering and puzzle to the public, as to how the expansion and contraction, by heat and cold, of the floor, or bridge proper, are to be provided for. The great span may be said to be in two pieces or half lengths, connected at the centre by an "expansion joint." Each half of a truss is attached to one of the two suspenders mentioned, and the two halves are connected by plates attached to one, and sliding in channels or ways in the other. No weight comes upon these guide-plates, as the two suspenders support the halves of the truss, independently of each other. The planking is so arranged as to be always continuous, and the iron rails for the cars are at this point split in half, lengthwise, so that one half plays upon the other, guide-rails on either side protecting the cars.

At 118 feet above high-water mark, each of the towers of the bridge is divided into three masses by the two broad openings, 31 $\frac{1}{2}$ feet wide, which here commence. The six lines of the great steel trusses or frame-work forming the bridge, pass unbroken in their continuity through these openings of the piers, resting on the masonry underneath, and firmly anchored down to it by huge bolts and ties of wire rope. An idea of the

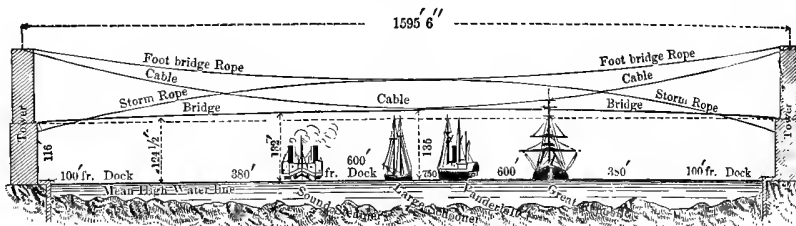
strength of these trusses may be obtained, when it is considered that for over one hundred feet out from each side of the tower they are of themselves, without any support whatever from the cables or stays, sufficiently strong to carry all the load that may ever come upon them. The openings continue to the height of 120½ feet, where they are closed by pointed arches. Above these arches the reunited tower rises thirty feet higher, where it receives a set of iron bed-plates, on which rest the "saddles" in which the great suspension cables ride. These are iron castings in the form of a segment of a circle, with a groove to receive the cable on the upper and convex side. The under and plane side lies on a layer of small iron rollers held in place by flanges on the surface of the bed-plate. The object of these is to give sufficient play to the bearings on which the cables rest to prevent the cables themselves slipping and chafing in the saddles if affected by the force of storms or variations of load, or when lengthening and contracting under changes of temperature. From the saddles each way the cables sweep downward in a graceful curve, the landward ends entering the anchor walls, as already described, and supporting the shore ends of the bridge, while the main bow, or inverted arch, hanging between the towers, holds up the central truss of nearly 1600 feet span.



SITUATION PLAN OF NEW YORK APPROACH.

The Bridge Approaches.—The elder Roebling intended that the approaches to the bridge should consist of iron girders and trusses, supported at short intervals on small piers of masonry or iron columns. With the growing magnitude of the structure, and the prospect of its increasing importance, the management determined to construct the approaches of masonry in a style fully up to the standard of that adopted in the building of the towers and the anchorages. The length of the New York approach is 1,562 feet and that of the Brooklyn approach 971 feet. In the main the approaches consist of a series of longitudinal Florentine arches, admirably proportioned and faced with elaborately cut granite. These arches are supported on brick piers of massive construction. The parapets of those magnificent viaducts are elaborately ornamented with cut granite, fashioned after the

Italian school, and bringing into superb effect the splendid rise of the roadway. Prospect and York streets are crossed by formidable iron girders. The excessive length and height of the New York approach made work upon it much more difficult than on the Brooklyn side. Every effort was made to achieve the full architectural effect, and the result was the completion of a viaduct that for years to come will attract the admiration of mankind. Some of



ELEVATION OF BRIDGE, SHOWING TEMPORARY ROPES USED IN CABLE MAKING.

the spaces spanned on the New York side are so wide that the structural crossings form in themselves good sized buildings. The Franklin square bridge is the longest span over any street in either city. Beneath the approaches the vacant arches are being fitted up for use as warehouses.

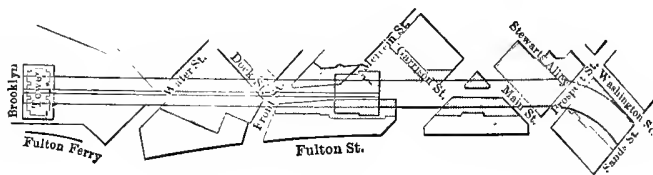
The increased cost over the estimates that had been made of the approaches to the bridge, and some changes in the details of the superstructure, necessitated the expenditure of more than the \$13,000,000 which had been estimated; and \$15,000,000 was in

1882 fixed as the limit beyond which the cost of the bridge would probably not reach.

The first estimated cost of the bridge was \$7,000,000, exclusive of land for the approaches.

It is the fate of all great public enterprises to encounter

violent opposition from a portion of the people. This opposition is usually prompted by a variety of motives, some of which will hardly bear close scrutiny. The East river bridge has not enjoyed immunity from



SITUATION PLAN OF BROOKLYN APPROACH.

this fate. Notwithstanding the high character of those who, from the first, have been prominently identified with the undertaking, they have been fiercely assailed by a portion of the public, and efforts have been made to embarrass them in their work. As time has gone

on, however, and the bridge has approached completion, its prospective utility has become more and more apparent to all, and this opposition has become more impotent.

The completion of this bridge inaugurates a new era in the already rapidly increasing prosperity of Brooklyn, and Western Long Island; but it is quite safe to predict, that, in the not distant future, other avenues of transit across East river will be found necessary, and that the skill and energy for their construction will not be wanting.

The Bridge Railway.—The question of railroad transit over the bridge has from the commencement received the attentive consideration of both the engineers and directors. Numerous plans were suggested, all were carefully examined, and the result was the adoption of a system believed to be the most serviceable that could have been selected. Fully twenty-five years ago, in advancing suggestions for a bridge, Mr. John A. Roebling advised the construction of a double railroad track over the river. His plan contemplated the running of trains by an endless cable, something after the method now in use, but experience in the use of such appliance in San Francisco and Chicago, compelled within the past few years many modifications of the original plan cars. The mode of operating the railroad was for years widely discussed and many differences of opinion arose in regard to it. Early in 1878 Colonel W. A. Roebling, in response to a request from the trustees, submitted at length his views upon the question of transit. There were, he pointed out, two methods of effecting transit, namely, by the inclined plane system, with an endless rope (which was adopted), or the use of locomotives. Objections were made to the introduction of the latter on various grounds. The principal one of these being the grade, which in the winter season amounts to over 200 feet per mile.

The matter was finally referred to Committee on Transit across the Bridge. In May, 1878, on motion of Mr. Thomas Kinsella, a committee was appointed to confer with any other body or corporation, having for its purpose the construction or running of a rapid transit road, or other steam roads to either terminus of the bridge, to the end that the facilities of intercourse between the two cities might be promoted.

This committee in due time submitted their report, and, among other matters, threw out a suggestion as to a possible change in the central trusses, that would admit of the passage of a palace car, and this was eventually accomplished. Resolutions based upon the report of the committee were adopted, fixing the gauge of the railroad at 4 feet 8½ inches, and also that it be held practicable to transfer the design of car, known as the palace or sleeping car, upon the bridge, under the conditions already stated, and so that the stress of the car might be distributed over two or more beams, provided that no train should consist of a greater number of cars than three.

The Board of Trustees decided at the beginning of last year to adopt the circulating system of running the cars by an endless wire rope. This method is in successful operation on street railways in San Francisco and Chicago. Its operation is very simple, and seems to be growing in popular favor. An endless rope is run over the bridge along the middle of one of the railway tracks, and is returned along the other. It is supported throughout its length on (490) pulleys, placed 22½ feet apart, and run continuously in one direction. Motion is communicated to the rope by passing it three times around a pair of grooved rope driving drums, each 12 feet in diameter, placed facing each other. These drums are revolved by means of a friction drum located between and in contact with each. The primary operative power is furnished by two steam engines, located in the large new engine house beside the Brooklyn approach on the Washington street side. They are horizontal, with cylinders twenty-six inches in diameter and forty-eight inch stroke, and are capable of running with one hundred pounds steam pressure. There are to be used upon the line twenty-four large and twenty-four small passenger cars, nearly all of which have been completed. These cars receive their passengers at one end of the bridge and discharge them at the other from the elevated platforms of the iron depot buildings. Each car is mounted on two four-wheeled trucks. They have side seats and double sliding doors at the ends. Each of the larger cars comfortably seats forty-six persons, twenty-three along each side, and are capable of safely carrying all that may crowd into them. In their general style they correspond with the cars in use on the Manhattan Elevated Railway, although they are wider and higher, have wider doorways and platforms and differ in several details. As completed they are furnished with all that is necessary for placing them on the tracks in running order, with the exception of grips for attaching them to the rope. The grips used are supplied under the direction of Colonel W. H. Paine, of the engineering staff.

This method of attaching the cars permits endless ropes to be run continuously at an even speed by means of stationary engines. The cars can be attached while the rope is running at full speed. They can be started slowly, and gradually brought to the speed of the rope, the movements of the car being completely under the control of a brakeman on the platform.

The plans for the rope traction were all prepared by Colonel William H. Paine, who has been indefatigable in his endeavors to improve the methods of transit over the bridge and contribute as much as possible to the comfort and convenience of the public.

The engineers estimate at present that the time ordinarily required to cross the bridge from one extreme to the other will be about six minutes, although it may be reduced to four minutes. The railway depots at either end are highly ornamental structures, made of

ornate iron work and richly painted within and without. The space for the storage of cars will be between Washington, Sands, High and Fulton streets on the Brooklyn side.

The engines at the Brooklyn side switch the cars from one track to the other. When a car is ready to start it is pushed by the engine a few rods, where it connects with the cable. At the New York end the cars are switched by a truck run by cables. The switching arrangements are temporary, and liable to be changed, or further developed in their present form.

The present difficulty in the railway system of the bridge, is a lack of room at the New York terminus, but this will probably be speedily remedied by a removal of the Third Avenue Elevated Railway Station, or a connection of the two systems by the proper switches, &c. At 9 A. M. on September 24, 1883, the railway transit of the bridge was publicly inaugurated, and though some vexatious delays have occurred, which have necessitated slight changes in the details of the system, it may now be considered an accomplished fact.

Accidents and Casualties.—The great work of engineering is a battle with nature, in which, as in other wars, Death must take his toll. There have been employed upon the works at one time as many as six hundred men, a small army in themselves; and in the fourteen years since the master-mind, John A. Roebling himself, became the first sacrifice, more than twenty men have been fatally hurt. Several more have been victims to the "caisson disease,"* resulting from working in compressed air; but, despite the dizzy height, no one has fallen from the main span into the water below. Besides the fire in the Brooklyn caisson, which cost no lives, and the fall of the derricks on the Brooklyn tower, which had more serious results, there has been one great accident only; but the imagination can scarcely picture anything more dreadful. On June 19, 1878, one of the great strands broke loose from the New York anchorage, carrying with it the "shoe" and its ponderous attachments. As the end swept from the anchorage it dashed off several of the men at work, and then, with a frightful leap, grazing the houses and peopled streets below, it landed for the instant in the bridge yard close under the New York tower. The great weight mid-stream whizzed it over the tower with frightful and increasing rapidity, and the whole span plunged madly into the river, narrowly

* The "caisson disease" is the result of living under atmospheric pressure greatly above that to which the human system is normally adapted. The blood is driven in from the interior and soft parts of the body to the central organs, especially the brain and spinal cord. On emerging into the open air, violent neuralgic pains and sometimes paralysis follow. Advanced consumption is, on the other hand, stayed, and sometimes remedied, by compressed air. Dr. Andrew H. Smith, surgeon to the Bridge Company, reported one hundred and ten cases of the "caisson disease," of which three were presently, and probably more finally, fatal.

missing the ferry-boats that ply, crowded with human freight, below the line of the bridge. In these years the enterprise has lost also its president, Henry C. Murphy, and its first treasurer, J. H. Prentice, as well as its first engineer. But, in strange and happy contrast, there has not been a single break in the engineering staff, Engineers Martin, Paine, Collingwood, McNulty, Probasco, and Hildenbrand having served continuously, most of them from the very first.

Bridge Statistics.—The following figures, carefully compiled from the records by the officials, give in concise form the dimensions of the great structure, and a list of the materials used in its erection:

Construction commenced January 3, 1870.

Bridge completed 1883.

Size of New York caisson, 172x102 feet.

Size of Brooklyn caisson, 168x102 feet.

Timber and iron in caisson, 5,253 cubic yards.

Concrete in well holes, chambers, etc., 5,669 cubic feet.

Weight of New York caisson, about 7,000 tons.

Weight of concrete filling, 8,000 tons.

New York tower contains 46,945 cubic yards masonry.

Brooklyn tower contains 38,214 cubic yards masonry.

Length of river span, 1,595 feet six inches.

Length of each land span, 980 feet, 1,860 feet.

Length of Brooklyn approach, 971 feet.

Length of New York approach, 1,562 feet six inches.

Total length of bridge, 5,689 feet.

Width of bridge, 85 feet.

Number of cables, 4.

Diameter of each cable, 15½ inches.

First wire was run out May 29, 1877.

Cable making really commenced, June 11, 1877.

Length of each single wire in cables, 3,579 feet.

Length of wire in four cables, exclusive of wrapping wire, 14,861 miles.

Weight of four cables, inclusive of wrapping wire, 3,588½ tons.

Ultimate strength of each cable, 12,200 tons.

Weight of wire (nearly) 11 feet per lb.

Each cable contains 5,296 parallel (not twisted) galvanized steel, oil coated wires, closely wrapped to a solid cylinder 15½ inches in diameter.

Depth of tower foundations below high water, Brooklyn, 45 feet.

Depth of tower foundation below high water, New York, 78 feet.

Size of towers at high water line, 140x59 feet.

Size of towers at roof course, 136x53 feet.

Total height of towers above high water, 278 feet.

Clear height of bridge in center of river span above high water, at 90 degs. F., 135 feet.

Height of floor at towers above high water, 119 feet 3 inches.

Grade of roadway, 3¼ feet in 100 feet.

Height of towers above roadway, 159 feet.

Size of anchorages at base, 129x119 feet.

Size of anchorages at top, 117x104 feet.

Height of anchorages, 89 feet front, 85 feet rear.

Weight of each anchor plate, 23 tons.

The Formal Opening of the Bridge.—The "Eighth Wonder of the World"—eighth in point of time, but first in point of significance—was dedicated

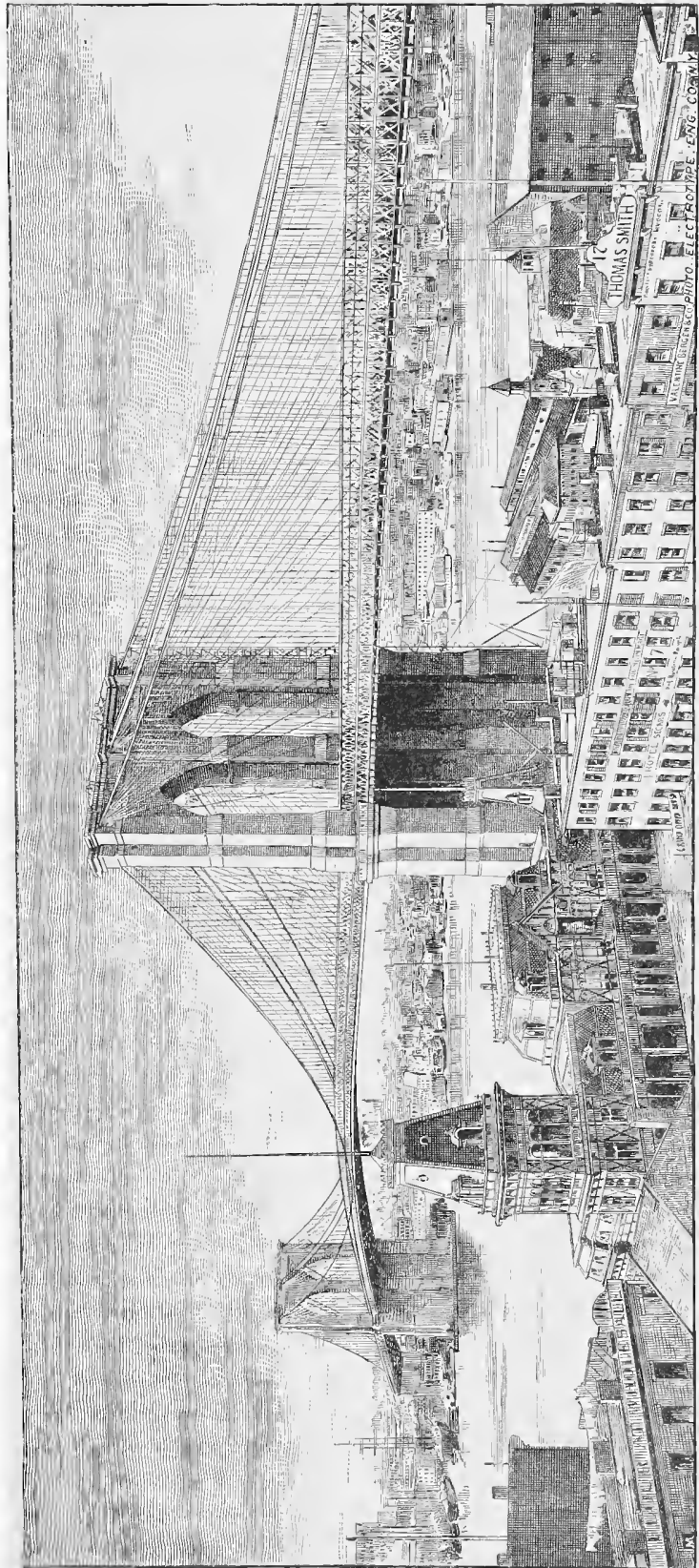
May 24, 1883, to the use of the People. Amid the booming of cannon, the shrill whistling of a thousand steamers and the plaudits of great masses of citizens, the Brooklyn Bridge (for so it will be called despite all formal titles, and so it will be known so long as it shall stand) was formally presented to the Cities of New York and Brooklyn, in the presence of the President of the United States and officers of his Cabinet, the Governor of the State of New York and his Staff, Senators and Representatives from many States and Territories, and the Mayors of both cities.

The weather was clear and bright, and the population of the two cities turned out almost *en masse*, to witness the imposing ceremonies. Both New York and Brooklyn were profusely decorated; but Brooklyn naturally took the lead in celebrating the completion of the Bridge, as she had been the earliest and chief mover in its designs and building.

Flags and bunting, and bright colored lanterns, waved in the breeze as far away as East New York, all over Gowanus, and the Eastern District; and the car horses and every passing vehicle sported the Stars and Stripes and waving plumes of red, white and blue. Although the general decorations were put up hastily, much artistic taste was shown. The flags of all nations, and flags which represented no nation, were made to pay tribute to the occasion, testifying to the cosmopolitan character of the finished enterprise.

The ceremonies commenced with parades in both cities, composed of military and civic bodies, acting as escort to the National and State officials and distinguished citizens who were to honor the occasion with their presence.

The two processions met at the Brooklyn end of the Bridge, amid the booming of cannons and the screaming of thousands of steam-whistles. After prayer by Bishop Littlejohn, the Bridge was formally presented to the two cities by Acting-President Kingsley in behalf of the Board of Trustees, and accepted in appropriate speeches by Mayors Low and Edson. Addresses by Hon. A. S. Hewitt and Rev. Dr. R. S. Storrs were then listened to by the vast assemblage,



THE BRIDGE AS SEEN FROM THE BROOKLYN SIDE, INCLUDING THE FULTON FERRY-HOUSE. (This view used by permission of the "Brooklyn Eagle.")

and at the close of the ceremonies, the Bridge was declared formally opened to the public. In the evening, President Arthur and Governor Cleveland were entertained at a reception at the residence of Mayor Low. A magnificent display of fire-works was given on the bridge at night, during which every roof and window, or other coign of vantage, within miles of the bridge, was crowded with an admiring multitude.

Probably in no more fitting way can we close our account of the great Bridge, than in the eloquent last words of Mr. Hewitt's address at the opening ceremonies:

"At the ocean gateway of such a nation well may stand the stately figure of 'Liberty Enlightening the World,' and in hope and faith, as well as gratitude, we write upon the towers of our beautiful bridge, to be illuminated by her electric ray, the words of exultation: '*Finis coronat opus.*'"

JOHN A. ROEBLING.—The great mind who conceived the wonderful work which we have thus described, deserves a fuller notice than the limits of our pages permit:



JOHN A. ROEBLING.

JOHN A. ROEBLING was born in the City of Muhlhausen, Thuringia, Prussia, June 12, 1806. He received a thorough academical instruction, and subsequently attended the Royal Polytechnic School in Berlin, from which he graduated with the degree of civil engineer. It is a notable fact that as early as these college days he devoted much study to the construction of suspension bridges, and made them the subject of his graduating thesis. Following the stern requirements of the Prussian administrative system, he served for three years after his graduation upon governmental works.

At the age of 25 he emigrated to the United States, and went at once to Pennsylvania and settled near Pittsburg. It was about this time that the energies of the great Middle States were being exerted in the direction of improving transportation by a system of canals and slack-water navigation on the rivers. Mr. Roebling first engaged in this work in his career as an American engineer. His first operations were on the Beaver river, a tributary of the Ohio. Subsequently he was interested in a project for connecting the Ohio River with Lake Erie, but this enterprise, owing to the growth of the railroad system of the country, proved unsuccessful. Mr. Roebling next entered the service of the State of Pennsylvania, located a feeder for the Pennsylvania Canal on

the upper Alleghany, and afterwards was engaged in surveying and locating the route of the Pennsylvania Central Railroad across the Alleghany Mountains from Harrisburg to Pittsburg. At about this time he entered upon the manufacture of iron and steel wire, an occupation in which he gained the wonderful knowledge of the nature, capabilities and requirements of wire, which enabled him to revolutionize the construction of bridges.

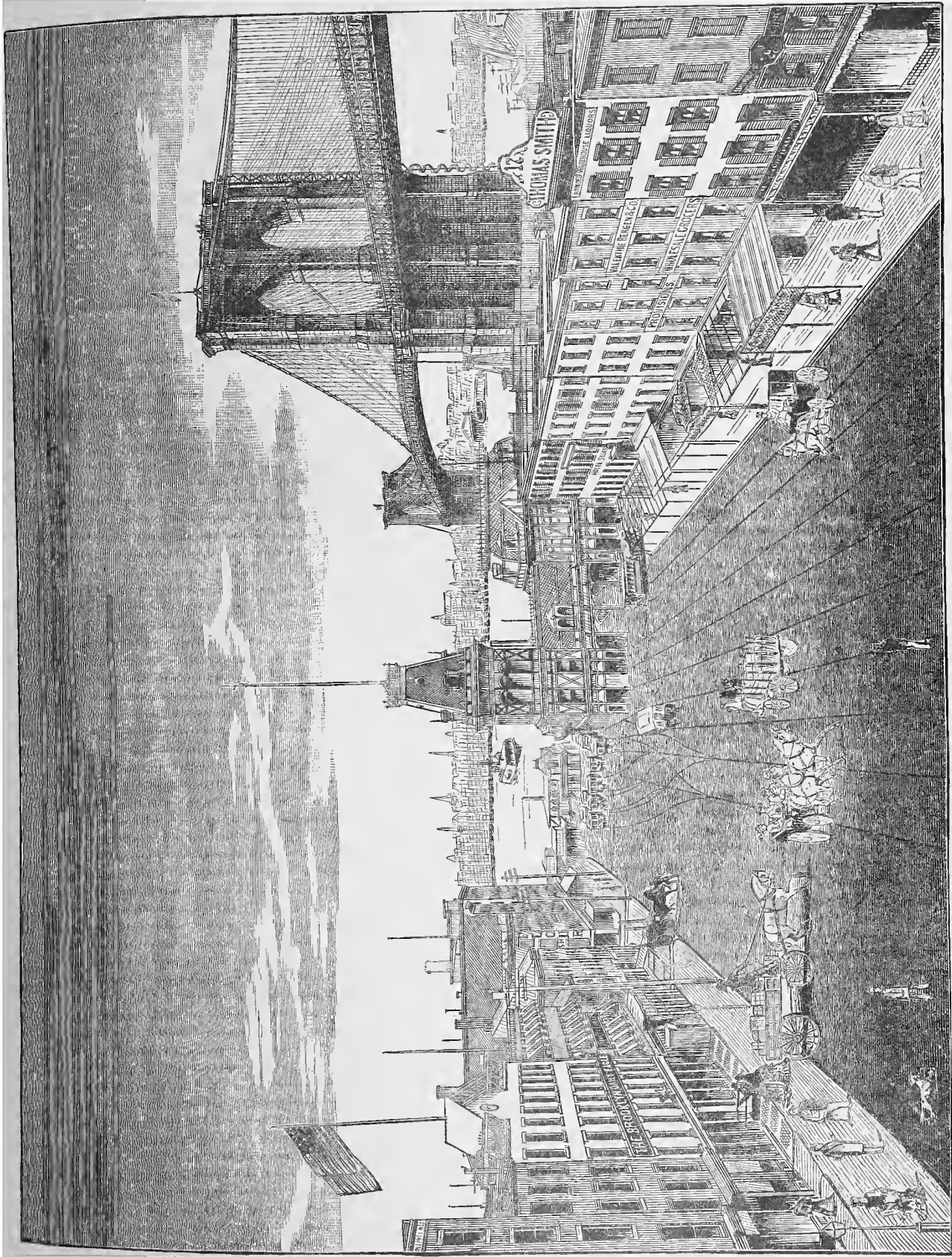
As early as 1844-5 he successfully constructed an aqueduct over the Alleghany River (in the face of the opposition of nearly all of his profession), on the principle of a suspension bridge, the cables of which were of wires. After the completion of this structure Mr. Roebling built the Monongahela River bridge at Pittsburg; four of the suspended Aqueducts for the Delaware Canal; in 1851, the great railroad bridge over the Niagara River (at the time of its completion, the longest suspension bridge in the world); the suspension bridge over the Alleghany River at Pittsburg, and the one over the Ohio at Cincinnati, which, with a span of nearly two hundred feet more than the Niagara Bridge was another great step in advance in the science of wire bridge building. Mr. Roebling had the utmost confidence in the Cincinnati bridge, and its wonderful success impressed upon engineers throughout the country that the problem of the bridge building was solved upon a principle that could not be superseded. The excellence of that structure had much to do with the selection of Mr. Roebling as chief engineer of the Brooklyn Bridge. How he came to Brooklyn, his labors upon the early plans, and his fatal injury at his post, are fully told elsewhere in these pages. Undoubtedly, he intended the East River span to be the achievement of his long, active and useful life. Personally, few men were better liked than Mr. Roebling. He was admirably fitted for the task assigned him, and in his profession, as in the ordinary walks of life, he endeavored to live up to the full measure of his duty. During the War of the Rebellion he was firm in his devotion to the cause of the Union. He was of a kindly and benevolent disposition, although exacting in professional matters, and his domestic relations were of the most agreeable character.

COL. WASHINGTON A. ROEBLING is a native of Pennsylvania, born in 1837, and a graduate of the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute at Troy. He assisted his father in the construction of the Alleghany Suspension Bridge, and soon afterwards enlisted as a private, in the Sixth N. Y. artillery.



COL. WASHINGTON A. ROEBLING.

After a year's service he was called to Staff duty, and remained in the army until 1865, when he resigned, and went to Cincinnati to aid his father in the completion of the great



THE "BROOKLYN EAGLE" OFFICE AND BRIDGE TOWER. (This view used by permission of the "Brooklyn Eagle.")

bridge over the Ohio. He had almost sole charge of the superstructure, and finished the work after his father had left it to begin the plans of the East River Bridge.

Col. Roebling took great interest in the new enterprise, and went to England, France and Germany to collect the latest scientific information upon the subject of pneumatic foundations. He was in Europe for a year, studying all the important engineering works in England and on the Continent, and inspecting the manufacture of steel in the great works of Krupp. He returned to this country in February, 1869. His father's death made him responsible for the future work on the Brooklyn Bridge. His greatest anxiety was as to the sinking of the caissons for the great towers, and, day and night, he was at the work going on under the water.

Constant exposure to the abnormal conditions existing in the caisson, finally broke down Col. Roebling's health; but, even from his sick room, his oversight of the work did not flag, except for six months in 1873, which he spent at Wiesbaden, in Germany, by the advice of his physician.

It has been often said that Col. Roebling simply copied his father's plans. His assistants, better informed, agree that there is scarcely a feature in the whole work that has not presented new and untried problems, which have owed their solution to him. The methods used to get the material out of the caissons; the plan of lighting the caissons and furnishing them with a supply shaft, the machinery for raising the stone on the towers, so that the top course was laid at the same price as the bottom course, were all of his design. He made the anchor plates much larger than his father had intended. Steel cables were never before used, and all previous cables had been made of seven strands. The cables for the East River Bridge were so large that they had to be made in nineteen strands. This involved new problems in regulating—a task most difficult under any circumstances. The unusual number of strands rendered necessary the construction of two tiers of anchor chains, which had never before been attempted. It was only by this device that it became possible to attach the strands in their proper order of sequence. The use of an elevated foot-bridge over the top of the towers was an entirely new feature, as all other suspension bridges had foot-bridges nearly on the same level as the main bridge. The splice which had formerly been used for iron wire was not adapted for steel wire, and a new one had to be devised that would retain as nearly as possible the full strength of the wire.

His return from Wiesbaden was followed by acute prostration, his ailment being an elaboration of the caisson disease, which puzzled the physicians. Despite his physical condition, his mind possesses its pristine vigor, but any protracted exertion either in talking or listening is impossible. He had an easy chair at the window of the top story of the bay-window extension of his house, which commanded a view of nearly the whole structure, and thus was kept familiar with the minutest details of the bridge making.

The Engineering Staff.—Few engineers in charge of an important public work have ever been so fortunate in the personnel of their staff, as has Col. Roebling. Until many years have passed, passengers over the river span will not fail to associate with the name of Roebling, those of Martin, Paine, McNulty, Collingwood and Probasco. It is fitting, therefore, that a short account of their careers should be given herewith.

C. C. MARTIN was, like Col. Roebling, a native of Pennsylvania, was born in 1831, and spent his early life on a frontier

farm, graduated with high honor at the Polytechnic Institute, at Troy; commenced as a rodman on the Brooklyn Water Works, and worked his way up to the position of Assistant Engineer, having charge of the construction of three of the great reservoirs. Afterwards he was employed in locomotive building and in bridge work, and during the war was in charge of Government experiments on tubular boilers, at the Brooklyn Navy Yard. After the war, he laid the 48-inch water main through Atlantic Avenue, and was subsequently appointed as chief engineer on Prospect Park, where the roadways and admirable drainage system attest his great skill as a civil engineer.

COL. W. H. PAINE is another to whom great praise is due, for his part in the construction of the bridge. He is a native of New Hampshire, and after completing his education, spent several years as surveyor and mining engineer in the West. In 1861, he went to the front with a Wisconsin Regiment, but was soon appointed Captain of Engineers, and attached to the staff of the ranking Major-General of the army. After the war, he was employed in preparing maps and drawings for several histories of the War. He has been connected with the bridge since its inception; was engaged in the original surveys, and afterwards in inspecting and testing the wire, in which department he won the highest encomiums from the trustees and from his chief.

GEO. W. McNULTY was born in New York city, and is the youngest of the bridge staff, being but 32 years of age, though a ripe scholar, and an enthusiast in his profession. Previous to his engagement on the bridge, he had done but little except surveying. His career in this enterprise has included some very difficult branches of the work, and his success has gained him the unqualified approbation, not alone of his associates and superiors, but of the trustees and all those who have had opportunity to become familiar with his work.

FRANCIS COLLINGWOOD, of the engineering staff, is also a New Yorker; was for some years a watchmaker's apprentice, but saved money enough to enter, at the age of 19, the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, from which he graduated at the head of his class in 1855. Was engaged for some time in railroad surveys, and then (while conducting a jewelry business), at Elmira, N. Y., was City Surveyor of that city. Invited by Col. Roebling, in 1869, to take part, for a month, in the final surveys of the bridge, his month was lengthened into a term of fourteen years' service. He has taken a prominent and active part in all the work of the bridge, especially of the New York approach, including the Franklin Square bridge.

The Directorate.—No sketch of this, the greatest triumph of engineering science of this or any other age, would be at all complete without special mention of those who have stood behind all others, and, by their patient oversight and careful management, have rendered possible the success which has been achieved, in the face of difficulties and opposition, such as have seldom been met with in such an enterprise. They brought to this, a public work, the personal probity, energy, and experience which has distinguished them in private life and in the walks of business; and the Bridge to-day is no less a monument to their fidelity than to the mechanical skill of its engineers.

As we have heretofore shown (page 451) the bridge

was *originally* a private enterprise; but, under legislation obtained in 1874 and 1875, the New York Bridge Company was dissolved, and the management and supervision of the work devolved upon the Trustees of the New York and Brooklyn Bridge. The Board of Trustees was arranged to consist of twenty members, eight to be appointed by the Mayor and Controller and President of the Board of Aldermen of the City of New York, and eight to be appointed by the Mayor, Controller and Auditor of the City of Brooklyn. The Mayors and Controllers of both cities made *ex-officio* members of the board. The terms of office of the Trustees were fixed at two years, and this arrangement of the power of control has since been maintained. The Trustees chosen (for Brooklyn) were as follows:

In 1875—Mayor John W. Hunter, Controller S. S. Powell, William C. Kingsley, Henry C. Murphy, Thomas Carroll, William Marshall, Henry W. Slocum, Isaac Van Anden, William B. Leonard, James S. T. Stranahan.

In 1877—Mayor Frederick A. Schroeder, Controller Wm. Burrell, Henry C. Murphy, Thomas Kinsella, William C. Kingsley, Henry W. Slocum, James S. T. Stranahan, Thomas Carroll, William B. Leonard, William Marshall.

In 1879—Mayor James Howell, Controller G. Steinmetz, James S. T. Stranahan, William Taylor, William C. Kingsley, A. W. Humphreys, Henry W. Slocum, Alfred C. Barnes, William Marshall, Henry C. Murphy.

In 1881—Mayor James Howell, Controller Ludwig Semler, Henry C. Murphy, William C. Kingsley, Henry W. Slocum, James S. T. Stranahan, Alfred C. Barnes, Alden S. Swan, Otto Witte, William Marshall.

The Board as at present constituted consists of the gentlemen named under the appointments of 1881, with a few exceptions. Mayor Low succeeded Mayor Howell, who in turn returned to the Board to fill the vacancy caused by the decease of the Hon. Henry C. Murphy. Controller Brinkerhoff succeeded Controller Semler. From the formation of the New York Bridge Company, up to the time of his death, Mr. Murphy was president of the Boards of Directors and Trustees, with the exception of two years of which he passed in Europe. During his absence abroad, Mr. Jeremiah P. Robinson was president. In 1879, when Controller Steinmetz and Auditor Ammerman constituted a majority of the appointing board, they were largely influenced by partisan considerations in naming the Trustees. They displaced Mr. Murphy from the directorate. The ex-Senator felt the slight keenly, there was considerable public criticism of the action of the appointing power, and a demand for Mr. Murphy's reappointment. The matter was finally settled when General Benjamin F. Tracy, who had been appointed a Trustee, declined to accept, and Mr. Murphy was returned to the place in the Board left vacant by the General's declination.

While our space will not permit us to give individual mention to all the Brooklyn members of these Boards, (and the New York members would not properly appear in a history of Kings County), sketches of some of

the more prominent ones will be found in other parts of this work.

To no one man was the inception of the Bridge so far due, as to

WM. C. KINGSLEY, a native of New York State, who came to Brooklyn about 25 years ago. His early labors in this vicinity were in connection with the construction of the Ridgewood Water Works; and subsequently, in partnership with A. C. Keeney, he was largely engaged in building sewers (of which 65 miles are credited to this firm in Brooklyn alone) and in the construction of the Wallabout Improvement. It was to Mr. Kingsley that Col. Adams submitted his first plans, and through his far-sightedness and public spirit, and his generous expenditure of a considerable sum of money, that these plans were enabled to be elaborated, and to become not only the basis of the first legislation in favor of the projects, but also the foundation for the plans which the structure was eventually built. He was continually in the Board of Directors and its Vice-President, and by virtue of that office has been acting President since the death of Hon. Henry C. Murphy.

Of the others we cannot give extended mention, but the names of Thomas Carroll, Wm. Marshall, Wm. B. Leonard, and Wm. Taylor, are sufficient guarantee to all Brooklynites that an enterprise confided to their care and direction would surely be managed for the best interests of the city.

The Old and New Penny Bridges, Newtown Creek.—We are indebted to our antiquarian friend, Town Clerk WM. O'GORMAN, of Newtown, Queens County, for the subjoined facts:

Penny Bridge was built in 1836 by the *Newtown and Bushwick Bridge Company*. A turnpike road from Bushwick (commonly called the "Shell road") to Newtown village, was part of it. Thomas H. Betts was the surveyor. It all now belongs to Newtown and Brooklyn. Near the bridge, the road cut through the Alsop farm, *west* of the old Alsop House. This bridge superseded the use of the "Old Penny Bridge," which crossed the creek a few yards *east* of the Alsop House, and portions of whose foundation piles are yet to be seen. That old bridge approach, on Kings County side, ran directly in front of the old Duryea House. It was the *first* bridge built over Newtown Creek, at least over the main creek to Maspeth. It was not built until a quarter of a century, or more, after the Revolutionary war. It also gave name to an old road that ran, and yet runs, from *Newtown village*, winding up and down towards the old Alsop House. "The Penny Bridge Road" is yet known to the (very) old people. It is now the Calamus road. The toll on the old bridge was a penny, and was collected at the side or end next the Duryea House.

The original bridge was built all on piles, whereas the one built in 1836 had *stone* piers, for which reason many old people called it the "*Stun*" bridge. However, both the bridges are now gone, and the present new iron "Penny Bridge" occupies the place of the bridge built by Thomas H. Betts, in 1836-7. This structure is about 150 feet long, and swings on a central pier, leaving a channel on each side of 60 feet in width. No toll is now charged.

The immediate point at the old Alsop House had been, from the most remote times, a crossing point by ferry boat or otherwise. Here Humphrey Clay moored his ferry boat in times long anterior to the Revolution. During that period,

the British man-of-war boats were constantly on duty between that point and New York for despatches between Newtown and the city head-quarters.

Even as late as 1812, it seems that Newtown Creek was free from any bridge between Maspeth Landing and East River. This is stated on the authority of old George J. Rapelye. Mrs. Eliza Leaird, daughter of Thomas Alsop, stated that the American gun boats used to patrol the entire length of the creek during that war. She mentioned the young officers Decatur, Nicholson and Perry, who shortly after became

famous, as being constantly the guests of John Alsop. Mrs. Leaird died two years since, at a very advanced age. She is buried in the old ground inside of Calvary Cemetery. Views of the old and new Penny bridges are preserved in the rooms of the Long Island Historical Society.

Gowanus Creek Bridge.—A bridge across the Gowanus creek, or canal, at, or about, Ninth street, was also known in times past as "Penny Bridge," and for a time gave its name to the district in its neighborhood, extending even to the flats below Hamilton avenue.



VIEW IN REMSEN STREET (LOOKING WESTWARD).



W. C. Kingsley

WILLIAM C. KINGSLEY.

For the past quarter of a century, and more, William C. Kingsley has been not only a resident but an important element in the life of Brooklyn. By nature inclined to large affairs, he found in this city a field admirably fitted in many ways to call his genius for the management of men and the administration of great material undertakings into full activity.

Twenty-five years ago Brooklyn had still many of its village days' characteristics; there was nothing so big in the place as its population. The system of boulevards which now link the city to the sea was then unprojected; Prospect Park was an affair in the future; not a few of our now finest avenues were mere cow paths; the sewer system, which has in so marked a degree contributed to the health of the population, was little more than outlined, and the bridge—which in its giant embrace, makes the two cities one, towers, the noblest object in our landscape, and has increased the honor of the American name throughout the world—then existed not even as a dream.

For the transformation in these and kindred respects effected, William C. Kingsley is in an eminent degree responsible. That they would have been in time accomplished had he never come to Brooklyn is possible; but that without him they would have been delayed, even his most grudging critics will allow; and that the bridge at least would not to-day stand a completed work, had he not been here, no one familiar with the inception and progress of that splendid achievement will deny.

To outline briefly the story of this remarkable man's career is all that shall be attempted in this sketch; but the time must come when it shall be the task of a biographer to lay before an interested public a picture of his mind, and an account of the influences which went to its formation.

Mr. Kingsley was born in 1832, in Franklin county, New York, where his father was a farmer. His tastes, however, did not lie in the furrow or the dairy; although, until his eighteenth year, he remained at the homestead helping his father on the farm during the summer months, and studying with might and main in the winter season. Having in this way equipped himself for life in the outer world, he slipped his cable, as sailors would say, and gave his canvas to the breeze; or, to be more exact, he began his active career by accepting the superintendency of a little school in Westmoreland county, Penn.; a position in which, it is worthy of remark, he had been preceded by a young man subsequently known to fame as Gov. Geary of Pennsylvania, who in his turn had taken up

the ferule laid down by Edgar Cowan, subsequently United States Senator.

But school teaching was as little to young Kingsley's desires as farming. He valued it as a stepping stone and left it behind him when the stream had been crossed. School teaching gave place to book-keeping in the employment of a contractor engaged in building a canal along the banks of the Susquehanna. At this point, his career, as he has come to fill a place in the public mind, may be said to begin. He was now, so to speak, entered as a cadet in the army of constructive industry for which nature had designed him. The construction of the canal was fraught with many difficulties, not the least of which were the frequent and violent outbreaks of insubordination among the workmen. In the prolonged absence of the superintendent, Kingsley assumed command; and, by his indomitable will and courage, combined with a love of strict and impartial justice, soon had the mutinous laborers completely under control.

After the completion of this work, Kingsley was induced to go West, when he constructed fifty miles of railroad in Illinois, after which he returned to Pennsylvania. He had now attained his twenty-fifth year, and had developed a peculiar fitness for the management of men and the administration of great material undertakings, as well as an enviable reputation for integrity and honor. Added to these qualifications an intellect rendered stronger and clearer by experience and observation, a faculty of looking far into the future, and calculating results with almost unerring accuracy, and it was plainly to be seen that fame and fortune awaited the possessor.

In 1857, he became a resident of Brooklyn, which then had no system of water supply; but its introduction into the city had been decided upon, and Mr. Kingsley contracted to build a large part of the water and sewerage works.

Subsequently, he constructed what is known as the Wallabout Improvement, and several other equally important works.

After all these years of experience in engineering, Mr. Kingsley brought his vigorous intellect and practical skill to the problem of bridging the East River, which had previously been a mere plan upon paper, a theory hardly deemed feasible in actual practice. After frequent consultations with eminent engineers, Mr. Kingsley, becoming more and more certain of the success of the enterprise, determined to make an effort to obtain from the Legislature a charter, which he succeeded in doing, in 1867; not, however, without meeting many

obstacles and much opposition, which his untiring energy and perseverance overcame.

Money was necessary to defray the preliminary expenses, but, as yet, not a dollar had been subscribed by either city. Mr. Kingsley, with characteristic liberality, and as a farther guarantee of his faith in the final triumph, advanced large sums from his private fortune; and the first five millions, necessary for the early stages of the work, were raised by Mr. Kingsley's personal efforts.

In 1869, all the plans, &c., being perfected, it was thought prudent, in order to avoid the possibility of future litigation, to obtain further legislation before commencing actual work. Mr. Kingsley, in the face of apathy and opposition, obtained the passage of a bill which empowered the company to commence operations and to make the bridge a post route.

The eminent engineer, John A. Roebling, having been chosen to conduct the work, there was now no barrier, and operations were begun at once, with an earnestness of purpose that could bring nothing but success.

Mr. Kingsley's practical knowledge was invaluable in overcoming the difficulties that constantly arose in an undertaking so vast and before untried. In the fall of 1869, he was appointed general superintendent, and, with the exception of a brief interval, when illness compelled him to seek a change of climate, personally supervised the construction of what he hoped would be the *chef d'œuvre* of his professional career. His close application several times caused him to be seriously ill; and, in April, 1873, it was thought impossible for him to rally from one of these attacks; but a more than ordinarily robust constitution served him well, and passing safely through the ordeal, he applied himself, with renewed zeal, to the accomplishment of his pet enterprise. He watched its progress with the greatest interest and most thorough comprehension; engineering theories found their support and backing in his practical knowledge and large experience; and, for this reason, he was wont to supplement others' calculations with his own methods of execution.

When, at last, the noble structure was finished, Mr. Kingsley, as President of the Trustees, at the formal opening, presented it to the two municipalities which had united to build it, and from his appropriate words we quote the following: "I am not here as the spokes-

man of my associates in the Board of Trustees. They are well content to let this great structure speak for the skillful, faithful and daring men who have given so many years of their lives—and, in several instances, even their lives—to the end that the natural barrier to the union, growth and greatness of this great commercial centre should be removed, and that a very scientific conception should be matched in the skill and courage and endurance upon which it depended for realization. * * * It remains for me to say, in conclusion, that the two cities rose at all times to the level of the spirit of our time and country. Their citizens staked millions on what seemed to many to be an experiment—a structure, it was often said, that, at best, would not be of any practical use. How solid it is; how far removed from all sense of apprehension; how severely practical it is in all its relations; and how great a factor in the corporative lives of these cities it is destined to be, we all now realize. This bridge has cost many millions of dollars, and it has taken many years to build it. May I say on this occasion that the people of these two cities would not part with the bridge to-day, for even twice or thrice its cost. And I may remind those who, not unnaturally, perhaps have been disappointed and irritated by delays in the past, that those who enter a race with time for a competitor, have an antagonist that makes no mistake, subject to no interference, and liable to no accident.

Mr. Kingsley's private life has been uneventful, passed amid family and friends, who prize his worth, his manliness, his integrity and affection. His time, out of business hours, is passed at his home in Washington Park, or at his club, the Brooklyn, of which he has long been an honored member. He is fond of reading, especially in connection with scientific subjects, and has accumulated a library which reveals its owner's taste being useful and practical, without literary rubbish.

In politics, Mr. Kingsley has acted with the Democratic party of late years, although his busy life has prevented his active participation in public life, even had he been inclined thereto. In fine, William C. Kingsley is a typical American, keen, energetic and enterprising. Quiet and unassuming, he allows action to speak for him instead of words. He is one whose innate activity impels him to new labors, and whose success in life is unmistakably due to his own force of character.

HISTORY
OF THE
SUPERINTENDENTS OF THE POOR
FOR THE
COUNTY OF KINGS.

By *M. H. T. S.* Esq.

SUPERINTENDENTS OF THE POOR.—

No county in the State has made more generous provision for its poor, and its indigent lunatics, than the County of Kings. The history of her public charities is one of which she may well be proud. Her various public institutions, unsurpassed by those of any other county in the State, bespeak her beneficence more eloquently than words.

Previous to the year 1824, each town, in all the counties of the State, supported its own poor, under statutes enacted by the Legislature; but which, however humane and liberal, were still, in a measure, imperfect. The county itself contributed to a certain class of paupers; there were no county poor-houses, and the office of County Superintendent of the Poor was unknown. By an Act of the Legislature, passed November 27th, 1824, the Supervisors of the County of Kings, and several other counties in the State, were empowered to purchase one or more tracts of land, not exceeding two hundred acres, upon which to build for the accommodation, employment and use of the said county, one or more suitable buildings, to be denominated the *Poor-House* of the county, at an expense not exceeding \$7,000, which sum was to be assessed and collected in the same manner as other county charges.

It was, also, made the duty of the Supervisors of the county, at their annual meeting, to choose, by plurality of votes, not less than three, or over five persons, to be denominated *Superintendents of the Poorhouse* of the County of Kings. Their duty was the management, direction and superintendence of said poorhouse, and of everything relating to the same; the making of such prudential rules and by-laws for the well ordering of the same, and the employment, relief, management and government of the persons therein placed, and the officers and servants therein employed; and the correction of the refractory and disorderly by solitary confinement therein, and feeding them on bread and water only, as they might deem expedient for the good government of the same. It also empowered the said Superintendents

to contract with a suitable person for the support of those placed in the poorhouse. After the completion of the said house, the overseers of any town or city in the said county might make application to a Justice of the Peace, who might, if circumstances permitted, make an order sending any indigent person needing relief to such poorhouse, and forcibly (if necessary) remove such person to such poorhouse, to be provided for as his or her necessities should require. It also provided that the Overseers of any town might arrest any child over fifteen years of age found begging in the streets and send them to this poorhouse, there to be kept, employed and instructed in some useful employment, as he or she should be able to perform, until able to provide for himself or herself. There are other humane and thoughtful provisions in the said act for the employment of persons able to labor. The expense of maintaining and supporting such poor persons, and of the said poorhouse, was to be provided for in like manner as all the other county expenses were, by a tax on the personal and real estate of the freehold inhabitants of the same county, in proportion to the number and expense of paupers which *the several towns respectively shall have in the Poor-House*.

We have been thus particular to give the substance of the said act, because it is the foundation—the beginning—of the office of Superintendents of the Poor—the most important of county officers, out of which came, nearly fifty years later, the present *Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections*.

County Poorhouse Established.—At a meeting of the Board of Supervisors, held March 14th, 1829, a committee was appointed to inquire into the expediency of establishing a *County Poor-House*, with power to ascertain whether the almshouse of the town of Brooklyn, could be made use of until a county poorhouse could be completed.

At a meeting, held March 28th, 1829, this committee reported favorably, and were given time to make further examinations.

At the annual meeting of said board, held August 4, 1829, the Supervisors passed a resolution favorable to erecting a county Poor-House, under the provisions of the Act of November 27, 1824.

At a subsequent meeting, held January 2, 1830, Hon. Jeremiah Johnson, Supervisor from Brooklyn, Chairman of the committee to which we have referred, submitted a very able and exhaustive report on the subject of pauperism in the County of Kings, and in favor of keeping paupers profitably employed.

His report also strongly favored the abolishment of all distinctions by the Boards of Supervisors in the several counties respectively, of the *County-poor*, and *Town-poor*, under the provisions of an Act of the Legislature, passed April 4th, 1828. Said act provided for making the expenses of maintaining all the poor in the towns a charge upon the county, filing a written certificate of the determination of the said Board to abolish such distinction, &c., duly authenticated by the clerk thereof, in the office of the Clerk of the County.

The first Board of Superintendents of the Poor in the County of Kings, of which there is any record, was created at a meeting of the Board of Supervisors held February 20th, 1830, and consisted of the following persons: Samuel Smith, of Brooklyn, David Johnson of Flatbush, and Michael Schoonmaker of the same place. These gentlemen appeared before the Board of Supervisors, gave their bonds and took the oath required by law.

A resolution was passed by the Board of Supervisors instructing the Superintendents, to purchase a tract of land in the county, not exceeding two hundred acres, and to erect thereon a suitable building or buildings, for the reception of the poor of the County of Kings. The Board, also, recommended that a certain tract of land belonging to the Martense heirs, in the town of Flatbush, containing about sixty-four acres of land, be purchased for the purposes aforesaid, and that the Poor-House or Poor-Houses, be immediately erected thereon; that it be so constructed as to receive, for confinement, vagrants and persons convicted of misdemeanors; and that, if it should be thought practicable, the Penitentiary system should be connected with the Poor-House establishment.

At its meeting of April 7th, 1830, the Board considered the proceedings of a meeting of the citizens of Brooklyn, held on the 2d of same month, authorizing the Overseers of the Poor of that town to let the Alms-House of the town of Brooklyn, with the land surrounding it, to the Superintendents of the Poor of the county, for the term of one year, or until a County Poorhouse could be built, at a sum of \$360 per annum. This offer was, by a resolution of the Board of Supervisors, accepted; the sum of \$700 was placed at the disposal of the Superintendents of the Poor, for the purpose of defraying the expenses to which they would be subjected. The Treasurer of the county was also directed

to pay them the sum of \$3,000 for the land purchase of the Martense heirs.

At the annual meeting of the Board of Supervisors a committee appointed to examine the accounts of Superintendents reported that they found all the correct, and recommended that \$8,000 be raised to meet the Poor-House expenses of the coming year. At a meeting of the Board held January 11, 1831, Superintendents of the Poor were directed to prepare plans and estimates for the erection of a County Poor-House and a Penitentiary; whereupon the Superintendents did submit such plans to the Board. They were considered and adopted on the 22d day of March following, by the Board of Supervisors, who placed at the disposal of the Superintendents \$9,000, to enable them to erect a County Poor-House and Penitentiary on the county farm, purchased as we have stated.

On the 23d of March the Superintendents of the Poor submitted to the Board of Supervisors their annual report, the first annual account ever submitted by Superintendents of the Poor of the County of Kings.

This account of all monies received and expended by the Superintendents, or under their direction, of all their proceedings for the first year of their operations, ending the 7th day of April, 1831, shows, among other things, that on the 7th day of April, 1830, there were 114 persons in the Poor-House—22 men, 44 men, 22 boys, and 26 girls. Of these there were 14 colored men, 9 women, and six children. That, during the said year, there had been 168 persons received into the Poor House; there were 25 persons relieved from the Poor-House. The total number relieved and supported from April 7, 1830, to April 7, 1831, was 310, at an expense of the county of \$5,500. The number of paupers under the charge of the Superintendents on April 7, 1831, was 122, of whom 63 were males, 59 females. During the year, ending April 7th, 1831, there were 31 deaths at the Poor-House; and 156 persons discharged and one absconded. Ninety-seven of the inmates of the Poor-House were foreigners, 6 of whom were Irish. The report also showed that a school had been established in the Poor-House and regularly attended by an average number of children, 14 whites and 8 colored—and that they were making much progress in their studies.

Such paupers, as were able, had been profitably employed. The Superintendents reported very favorably of the Keeper, Mr. Thomas Baisely, and his wife, who discharged the duties of Matron to the Poor-House. The report further shows that Mrs. Baisely, with the assistance of some of the paupers, had cut and made 517 garments, which had been distributed to the paupers by the Superintendents of the Poor.

From the lands attached to the Poor-House, 107 bushels of potatoes, 107 bushels of turnips, 13 bushels of onions, 750 cabbages; four tons of hay, and 13 bushels weighing 2,138 pounds, had been raised during the past

year. Articles, manufactured by the paupers, had been sold, to the amount of \$244.36, and a considerable supply still on hand. This report was received with great satisfaction by the Board of Supervisors and the people of the county, and a resolution adopted highly complimentary to the Superintendents of the Poor, for the very able and successful manner in which they discharged their duties. The Board allowed them the sum of \$600, collectively, for their services the past year, to be apportioned among themselves. Their report was published under the direction of the Board, in all the newspapers of the county.

October 11, 1831, the Board voted that the sum of \$5,000 be placed at the disposal of the Superintendents of the Poor, to meet the contingent expenses of the Alms House for the current year.

February 9th, 1832, the Board of Supervisors, by invitation of the Superintendents of the Poor, inspected the Poor-House and Penitentiary then being erected; and reported that they found everything most satisfactory and promising.

On the 8th day of April, 1832, the Board of Supervisors directed that the inmates of the County Prison, able to perform hard labor, be employed upon the public highways in the county.

The Superintendents of the Poor submitted their second annual report for the year, ending April 7th, 1832, to the Board of Supervisors at a meeting held at the new Alms or Poor-House and Penitentiary on the county farm, on the 28th day of May, 1832. This report stated that they had had charge of the poor for two years, ending on the 7th of April, 1832, and that they had received during the year ending April 7th, 1832, 305 persons; and 10 persons who had boarded out of the house, and 3 who had been inmates of the Lunatic Asylum, connected with the said Poor establishment, making in all 318 persons who had been supported thereat during the then past year, at an expense, including clothes, medicines, doctor, keeper, matron, nurse, etc., of \$4,344.07.

The Superintendents had received for articles manufactured during the year the sum of \$234.67; from the County Treasury, \$16,437.76. That there was on hand \$590; received in a bastardy case, \$150; overdraft on Long Island Bank, \$29.05. Total, \$17,431.40. The number of paupers in Poor-House on the 7th day of April, 1832, was 96. The sum expended over and above the labor and earnings of the paupers divided by 133, being the average number kept during the year, gives 32.66½ cents per year, or 62½ cents per week, as the actual expense of keeping each pauper.

The school in the institution, taught by "a very moral and competent pauper," and attended by an average number of 22 children during the year, was reported to be in a highly prosperous condition.

The report further showed that the new Poor-House, etc., at Flatbush, was, on the 9th of April, 1832, so far completed that the paupers were removed to the same from the Brooklyn Alms-House, on that day; and that the farmers in the neighborhood kindly assisted in their removal. The report further shows that Dr. Zabriskie had been engaged as physician to the establishment at a salary of \$70 per year.

This second annual report of the Superintendents of the Poor, like its predecessor, was received with general satisfaction by the people of the county.

The third annual report, submitted May 22d, 1833, showed that the number of paupers relieved and supported during the year, preceding April 7th, 1833, in the new Poor-House, was 401, supported at an expense of \$3,057.59. The number of persons in the Poor-House, on the 7th of April, 1833, was 136. Of the persons supported or relieved during the past year, there were 150 foreigners, 106 of whom were born in Ireland; 2 lunatics; 1 idiot, and 2 mutes. There were 5 births in the Poor-House, and 34 deaths; bound out 11; discharged 199; and absconded 21.

The report shows an interesting and startling fact, which we give in the language of the Superintendents: "The official situation we have for some time held in relation to the poor, has enabled us to make some practical observations on the principal causes of pauperism; and we do not hesitate to state the appalling fact that three-fourths under our charge, are directly or indirectly caused by *intemperance*. Many might suppose that the farm and house might be conducted without any hired help, but it is a fact that out of the whole number of 401, we could not trust a man of them with a team, to leave the farm; or a woman with the keys of the medicine closet."

To this report was added the Physician's report, the first ever submitted, showing four deaths by cholera, two of the subjects having been brought to the Poor-House in a collapsed state. The whole number of deaths, from various causes, was thirty-four.

On August 6th, 1833, at the annual meeting of the Board of Supervisors, a new board of the Superintendents of the Poor was elected by the Judges of the county. This Board consisted of Elias H. Hubbard, of the town of Flatlands, Coe S. Downing, of the town of Brooklyn, and David Johnson, of the town of Flatbush.

At a meeting held November 14th, 1833, the Board of Supervisors ordered that the sum of \$5,000 be placed at the disposal of the Superintendents of the Poor, to defray the expenses of the Alms-House establishment, for the current year.

In the Board of Supervisors, on the 26th of April, 1834, David Johnson, Coe S. Downing, and Elias H. Hubbard, County Superintendents of the Poor, submitted their annual report, by which it appears that the whole number of paupers supported, or relieved in the Poor-House, preceding April 7, 1834, was 434. The whole expense in the support of said Poor-House was \$4,420.35.

The number of persons in the Poor-House on the 7th day of April, 1834, was 180; of this number there were 85 females and 95 males. During the year there were 5 births and 27 deaths in the Poor-House; 7 bound out; 21 absconded; 199 discharged. The receipts from the productions of the farm during the said year, amounted to \$1,547.23. There were 84 persons in the Penitentiary connected with the Poor establishment.

At the meeting of the Board, on the 26th of April, 1834, David Johnson, one of the Superintendents, tendered his resignation, which was laid upon the table for further consideration. Dr. John B. Zabriskie was re-appointed physician to the Alms-House, and his salary increased from \$70 to \$100.

At the annual meeting of the Board of Supervisors, held August 5th, 1834, Coe S. Downing and Losee Van Nostrand, of the city of Brooklyn, and Elias H. Hubbard, of Flatlands, were appointed Superintendents of the Poor for the then ensuing year. The thanks of the Board were extended to David Johnson, Esq., one of the retiring Superintendents, for his valuable services to the county, in the faithful discharge of his official duties as well as for his exertions and perseverance in maturing and perfecting the Alms-House establishment of the county, and placing it on a successful basis.

The Superintendents of the Poor, having presented a communication, signed by themselves and the physicians of the County Poor-House, relative to the establishment of a *Hospital for Lunatics*, and for *Paupers laboring under infectious diseases*, and also to matters touching the Penitentiary, the Supervisors, November 15th, reported favorably as to carrying the same into effect.

In June, 1835, the Superintendents of the Poor recommended that measures be taken to cultivate, at the Poor-House farm, the best species of fruit trees; and, also, for planting the mulberry tree for feeding silk worms, with a view of testing the feasibility of making an effort towards the cultivation of silk.

On the 4th day of August, 1835, at the annual meeting of the Board of Supervisors, David Johnson, Samuel Smith, and Losee Van Nostrand were appointed Superintendents of the Poor.

On August 8th, 1835, at a meeting of the Board of Supervisors, the Superintendents of the Poor submitted their annual report for the year ending April 7th, 1835. It gave the number of paupers relieved or supported during that year, in the Poor-House, as 625, at an expense of \$5,303.47; from which, deduct the support of 116 persons, sent to the Penitentiary in said Poor-House, an average of 35 days each, equal to 12 persons for one year, at \$23.16, making \$277.92 to be deducted from the sum of \$5,303.47, leaving the whole cost of the paupers at \$5,025.25.

There were 585 persons furnished temporary support, by the Overseers of the Poor, in the different towns, on the order of the Justices of the Peace, at an expense of \$5,246.31.

The school at the Poor-House was reported to be in a flourishing condition. The whole production of the Poor-House farm this year, was \$1,927.69.

On November 7th, 1835, the Supervisors appropriated \$5,000 for the support of the poor for the current year; also took measures to lessen the expense of granting temporary relief to sick, lame and disabled indi-

gent persons outside of the Poor-House, and appointed a committee to take charge of the matter. The Superintendents were also authorized to procure a place, or places, in the City of Brooklyn, or other parts of the county, for keeping paupers infected with pestilential or infectious diseases; and to furnish them with maintenance and medical attendance.

January 20th, 1836. The Supervisors considered the question of having, at the next annual meeting of the Board, *five* Superintendents of the Poor appointed, two of whom should be taken from Brooklyn, one from Bushwick, one from the town of Flatbush, or Flatlands, and one from the town of Gravesend or New Utrecht; whose terms of office should expire simultaneously with those of the then Superintendents; and that all subsequent appointments of Superintendents of the Poor be made in conformity with this regulation. Also, that the Legislature be memorialized as to having the Superintendents of the Poor of the county, or any one, two or more of them, invested with exclusive power to do every act then done by the Justices of the Peace of the town and Overseers of the Poor, in all the towns in the County, in pursuance of the first Title, 20th Chapter, and 1st part of the Revised Statutes; and of the 4th Title of the 8th Chapter of the said Statute. The proposition was adopted.

August 2d, 1836. At the Annual Meeting of the Board of Supervisors, Samuel Smith and Losee Van Nostrand, of Brooklyn, and Michael Schoonmaker, of Flatbush, were appointed Superintendents of the Poor for the coming year.

The Annual Report of the Superintendents of the Poor presented at this meeting, showed that the Superintendents had drawn from the County Treasury, from the 4th day of August, 1835, to the 2d day of August, 1836 (including the sum of \$307.33, a balance on hand from the previous year), the sum of \$7,558.74; and that they had expended during the same period \$7,338.37, leaving a balance on hand of \$220.37. During the same time 581 persons in the Poor-House had been supported, and 593 paupers relieved by the Overseers of the Poor in different towns; making, in all, 1,174 persons, at a total expenditure of \$10,596.35.

Dr. Zabriskie, the Physician of the Poor-House, reported 688 cases treated during the year, of which 48 had died. Eight of the said deaths were caused by delirium tremens.

There were, also, 113 convicts in the Penitentiary connected with the Poor establishment.

December 14th, 1836, the Supervisors appropriated \$5,000 for the support of the poor for the current year.

At an adjourned meeting of the Supervisors, May 24th, 1837, the Superintendents of the Poor were requested to furnish a suitable plan for building a *Work-House*, on the County farm, for the employment of the poor, whose bodily strength would permit them to labor; a suitable plan for building or providing an apartment in said Work-House for *Lunatics*; and an estimate of the probable expense thereof, as soon as possible. In conformity with these instructions, the Superintendents, at their Annual Meeting, Au-

gust 1st, 1837, presented plans and estimates for a *Lunatic Hospital*, which were unanimously adopted.

The Superintendents were invested with power to contract for and supervise the erection of the said buildings, the Supervisors providing the necessary funds for the same. The Board of Supervisors, with the Judges of the County, proceeded to the election of Superintendents of the Poor for the ensuing year, which election resulted in the choice of Michael Schoonmaker, Flatbush; Losee Van Nostrand, of Brooklyn, and Jarvis R. Woolsey, of Flatlands.

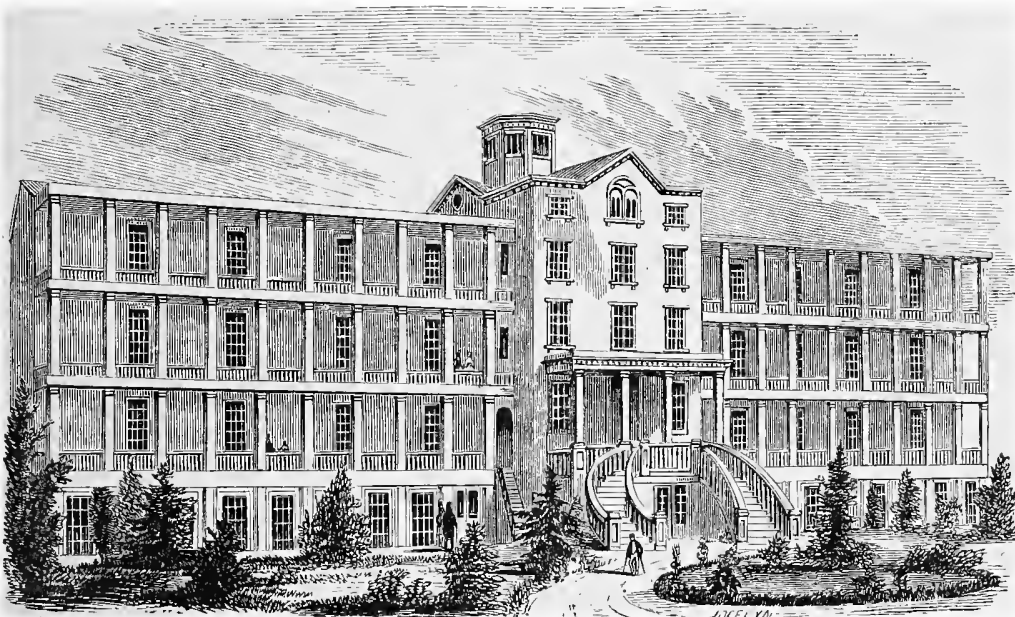
The Annual Report of the Superintendents gave the number of paupers relieved in the Poor-House during the year ending August 7th, 1837, as 677; eight boarded out, and five in Bloomingdale Lunatic Asylum; total number of paupers, 690.

Expenses of paupers in the Poor-House, \$6,394.61, which, together with the other expenses of the Poor establishment, was increased to the sum of \$8,782.02. A balance of cash on hand of \$503.49.

erection on the County Farm, was reported as near completion.

At the annual meeting of the Supervisors, held August 7, 1838, attended by the Judge of the county, the annual election for Superintendent of the Poor took place. This election was contested with singular obstinacy, there being several candidates for the office, each one of whom possessed considerable strength. Thirteen ballots resulted in no election, and the Board adjourned until the next day at 3 o'clock P. M., at which time, there being no quorum of the joint Board of Supervisors present, no choice of a Superintendent was made; and Michael Schoonmaker, Losee Van Nostrand and Jarvis R. Woolsey were continued in office for the ensuing year.

At an adjourned meeting, September 1st, 1838, the annual report of the Superintendents presented the number of pau



HOSPITAL.

In the School, established in the Poor-House at the organization of the establishment, during the year 1836, 62 children were taught. Dr. Zabriskie, the Physician, reported 719 cases treated, during the year previous, 65 of which died; two of these were caused by delirium tremens; and 25 from consumption, characterized as "an unusual number," and many of whom died 24 hours after admission. An epidemic of typhus (brought by emigrants) also had been raging in the house from April 1st to date of Doctor's report.

During the year ending August 15, 1837, there had been received into the Treasury, for Excise money \$3,355.72, which was directed to be paid over to the Superintendents of the Poor for the benefit of the Poor-House establishment; also, from dog tax, the sum of \$28.75.

On the 24th October, 1837, the Supervisors appropriated the sum of \$6,000 for the support of the Poor for the current year.

In November, 1837, the *Hospital*, then in course of

pers supported in the Poor-House during the year preceding the 7th day of August, 1838, as, viz.: In the House, 598; boarded out, 9; in the Bloomingdale Asylum, 6; making, in all, 613. The expenses of the Poor-House establishment, including everything, was \$13,608.89, of which \$3,382.90 had been disbursed in building the new Lunatic Hospital or Asylum. On the 1st of August, 1838, there were in the Poor-House 154 persons, 67 of whom were females, 66 males, and 21 colored paupers. There were lunatic paupers, 20.

Mr. Baiseley continued as keeper, and Mrs. Baiseley as matron of the Poor-House. They were appointed by the first Board of Superintendents of the Poor. Under Mrs. Baiseley's supervision, 50 bed quilts and over 1,500 garments for the use of the paupers, had been made during the year.

By an act of the Legislature, passed April 18, 1838, the powers and duties of Superintendents of the Poor of the County were greatly enlarged, which were to be

reduced to certain Rules and Regulations to be submitted to a subsequent meeting of the Board.

The report of Dr. J. B. Zabriskie showed there had been 879 cases of disease under treatment, and 51 deaths, of which 17 resulted from consumption.

On the 8th December, 1838, the Board of Supervisors appropriated the sum of \$6,000 for the support of the Poor for the current year.

The 20th of March, 1839, the Rules and Regulations of the Board of Superintendents, directed to be made by the act of 1838, were submitted. They were included in eight distinct articles.

The third article provided that the Superintendent shall keep a register of the names of all the applicants for temporary relief, with their place of residence, occupation and employment; the number of persons composing each family, their ages, places of nativity, and amount of relief granted to each applicant.

Article fourth provided that no temporary relief should be granted to any person not known to one or more of the Superintendents.

By article fifth, repositories were to be established for the relief of indigent persons, to be kept open from the 1st day of May, in each year, at such hours and at such places as the Superintendents shall designate.

The following provision of the Superintendents, made under their enlarged powers, is worthy of insertion here: "That the said Board will provide coffins and other facilities for the interment of all such destitute poor of the county whose friends are unable to bear the expense; and also for the interment of all such strangers as Providence may, from time to time, cast upon our hands, and which both Humanity and Christianity dictate should receive the rights of sepulture."

Among other provisions made by the act referred to, the Superintendents of the Poor were given a Clerk, to be appointed by them; and, on the 20th of March, 1839, Michael Schoonmaker was appointed for that position.

We have seen (page 466) that, at a meeting of the Board of Supervisors, held January 20, 1836, measures were taken to procure an act of the Legislature by which two additional Superintendents of the Poor were to be elected.

The Legislature, on the 18th of April, 1838, passed the required act; and, on August 6th, 1839, the Supervisors, in annual meeting, elected *five* Superintendents. This Board, thus elected, consisted of Losee Van Nostrand and John Dimon, of Brooklyn; Chauncey L. Cook, of Bushwick; John Emmens, of New Utrecht; and Michael Schoonmaker, of Flatbush.

At this meeting the Board for the preceding year submitted their Annual Report, with the report of Dr. Zabriskie, Physician for the Poor-House and Lunatic Hospital, by which it appears that the whole number of paupers relieved or supported during the year ending August 7th, 1839, was 1,666. Of the whole number thus relieved or supported, 520

were county paupers in the Poor-House. The number of all such persons as were temporarily relieved, was 1,146. The aggregate expense of relieving and supporting all such persons was \$12,521.09. By an estimate made by the Superintendents, it cost 81½ cents a week for the actual expense of keeping each pauper, crediting the actual value of the labor of each pauper performed on the farm and otherwise during the year.

It will be remembered that the first cost of the land and Poor-House establishment in 1830, was \$3,000; the estimated value of the whole establishment in August, 1839—about ten years later—was \$24,500.

Of the whole number remaining in the Poor-House on the 7th of August, 1839, there were 157 persons, 85 foreigners, 9 lunatics and 2 idiots. The whole number of persons received into the Poor-House during the year was 360. There were 10 births, 48 deaths, 3 foundlings. There were 154 discharged, 106 ran away, 42 bound out, or out on trial.

Dr. J. B. Zabriskie, Physician to the Poor-House and Lunatic Hospital, reported 572 cases of disease, 48 of which proved fatal.

There were received into the Lunatic Hospital during the year ending August 8th, 1849, fourteen lunatics, nine of whom were cured, one died.

On the 4th of August, 1840, Adrien Emmens, Alexander Newman and John Dimon, of the *City of Brooklyn*, and Alfred Hodges, of *Williamsburg*, Rem Hegeman, of *Flatbush*, and Samuel S. Stryker, of *Gravesend*, were elected Superintendents of the Poor, for the ensuing year.

The Annual Report of the Superintendents, submitted to the Board of Supervisors on the 11th of August, 1840, shows the whole number of paupers relieved or supported during the year ending August 1st, 1840, to be 2,726. The whole number thus relieved, who were inmates of the Poor-House, was 737. The aggregate expense of relieving and supporting all such persons was \$10,357.86. The Poor-House expenses in all were \$9,213.28. The average number of persons provided for in the house during the year was 245, and the sum applicable to the support of these was \$3,567.74, which divided by the average number of paupers, gives the sum of \$36.45 a year, or 70 cents a week, as the actual cost of supporting each pauper. The estimated amount earned by the paupers was \$800. The number of persons in the Poor-House on the 1st of August, 1840, was 237.

The Physician of the Poor-House and Lunatic Asylum reported 811 cases of disease in the County Poor-House during the year 1840, of which 49 proved fatal, two fatal cases of delirium tremens, and ten of consumption. Sixteen persons were admitted to the Lunatic Hospital, one of whom died, nine were cured, leaving six still in the Hospital.

The Superintendents having recommended that a new building be erected "for the accommodation of paupers laboring under sickness and disease, or otherwise," the Board of Supervisors, on the 16th day of October, 1840, "*Resolved* to apply to the Legislature at the next session for the passage of an Act to Authorize the Board of Supervisors to raise, by tax, the then next year, a sum not exceeding \$3,000, for the purpose of erecting the buildings heretofore referred to, on the County farm, and also such other and additional build-

ings as might from time to time be required for the accommodation of the poor."

October 24th, 1840, the Superintendents informed the Board that the increase of paupers had become so great that the present buildings in the County were inadequate, particularly those for the sick, the rooms of the Hospital being small, and over-crowded; and that a Hospital having been recently established in the City of Brooklyn with more rooms than the requirements of the city demanded, it being principally for injured persons, arrangements had been made with the managers of the City Hospital to receive from the County Poor-House a portion of the sick paupers during the ensuing fall and winter.

December 5th, 1840, the Board of Supervisors set apart the further sum of \$5,000 for the use of the poor, in the discharge of their duties.

On the 16th of June, 1841, in accordance with an Act of the Legislature of this State, entitled "An Act Authorizing the Supervisors of the County of Kings to make further provision for the County Poor," passed May 26th, 1841 (on the petition of the Superintendents), an order was made directing the erection on the County Farm, during the year, of two buildings for the better accommodation of the poor of the County; the expenses not to exceed \$3,000; one of the said buildings to be for the accommodation of the poor generally. The other for the accommodation of such paupers sent to the Poor-House as were afflicted with contagious diseases.

The Board of Supervisors, August 3d, 1841, appointed a committee of three to occasionally examine the Poor-House establishment of the County, as to its internal and external regulations; and, from time to time, to give such instructions to the officers and agents of the establishment, as to them seemed best calculated to perfect the pauper system, and to report thereon to the Supervisors. David Coope, Andrew Emmens, and Nicholas Wyckoff, were the committee.

At this, it being the Annual Meeting of the Board, Alexander Newman, Jacob Dey, of *Brooklyn*; Alfred Hodges, of *Williamsburg*; Rem Hegeman, *Flatlands*; Samuel S. Stryker, *Gravesend*, were elected Superintendents for the ensuing year.

The Report of the Superintendents, and the Physician, on the 25th of August, 1841, were taken up, examined and favorably reported upon.

The report showed that the whole number of paupers relieved or supported, during the year ending August 1st, 1841, was 3,098. Of the number thus relieved, the number of County paupers was 923. The aggregate expense of relieving them was \$16,359.80. The total expenses of the Poor-House (separate from the foregoing amount), were \$13,050.56. The average number actually provided for in the house during the year was 284; and the sum applicable to their support was \$11,215, giving the sum of \$39.48 per year, or 75 cents per week, as the actual cost of supporting each pauper.

From the report of Dr. F. F. King, who had been appointed in place of Dr. Zabriskie, Physician to the Poor-House and Lunatic Hospital, it appears that, during the year ending August 1st, 1841, 1,430 cases of disease had been under medical treatment; 86 of which proved fatal. There were at that time 46 under treatment. During the year 1,298 had been discharged; there were 31 births in the institution during the year.

There were 17 lunatics received in the Lunatic department, 10 of whom were discharged. The School in the establishment continued to be very prosperous and satisfactory.

Measures were taken to have divine service regularly performed every Sabbath hereafter in the establishment, the pastors of the different denominations in the County having offered to officiate gratuitously.

November 18th, 1841, a report submitted by the committee in charge of the erection of the two buildings on the Poor-House Farm (referred to June 16th, 1841), showed that they had completed the said buildings in accordance with the directions of the Board, at an expense (including a vault for the preservation of meats) of \$2,664.27. The sum of \$6,000 was set apart for the support of the poor for the current year; and the salary of the Superintendents was fixed at the sum of \$125 each.

February 23d, 1842, the Supervisors directed the Superintendents to render to the Board of Supervisors, at their Annual Meeting, in addition to their usual report, an account of the monies paid by them for debts contracted by them prior to the 1st Tuesday in August, 1831, by their predecessors in office; an account of monies paid by them for debts during their own term of office, and for all monies paid out by them. Also, to state what sum in their opinion would be necessary for the support of paupers in the County Poor-House during the ensuing year.

On the 2d day of August, 1842, the Board of Supervisors of the County elected as Superintendents of the Poor of the County for the ensuing year, S. Muel Doxsey, Joshua Rogers, of *Brooklyn*, Chauncey H. Cook, *Williamsburg*; Isaac L. Schenck, *Flatbush*, and John A. Emmens, *New Utrecht*.

The Annual Report of the Superintendents of the Poor and that, also, of the Physician, for the year ending August 7th, 1842, were presented to the Board, by which it appeared that the whole number of paupers relieved or supported, during the year, was 2,964; all such persons temporarily relieved, was 2,305; and an aggregate expense of \$13,786.44; the average number of paupers provided for in the house during the year was 290, and the sum applicable to their support, was \$9,221.24, giving the sum of \$34.21 per year, or 66 cents per week, as the actual cost of supporting each pauper. There were 33 births in the house during the year; 88 deaths, 318 discharged, and 39 absconded.

The Physician reported 896 cases treated during the year, 88 of which were fatal; 16 lunatics in the hospital August 1, 1841, of whom 4 died. Since that date, there had been 43 lunatics, of whom 3 died, 8 were relieved, and 18 cured; 14 now remain.

\$2,000 was set apart for the use of the Superintendents of the Poor for the current year.

April 18, 1839. An act entitled, "An Act to extend the benefit of instruction to the blind," and for other purposes, was passed by the Legislature of the State. At that time, one Margaret Denny, an orphan, was a beneficiary of the Orphan Asylum of Brooklyn. L. Van Nostrand, one of the Superintendents of the Poor of the county, selected the said Margaret Denny as a State pupil in the New York Institution for the Instruction of the Blind, giving his certificate to the Superintendent of Common Schools for that purpose. Under the provisions of said Act, the Superintendents of the Poor, by resolution, directed the sum of \$20, to be paid annually, to suitably clothe the said Margaret, for a period of five years, from the 1st day of October, 1843, the term of her pupilage in the said institution. *This is the first step taken in the County of Kings towards the support and education of the blind.*

In 1840, a Hospital had been established in the city of Brooklyn, and on the 13th of January, 1844, Joseph Sprague, Esq., Mayor of the city, sent a communication to the Board of Supervisors and the Superintendents, in which he stated that the expense of supporting patients therein, amounted to several thousand dollars, which was, in fact, chargeable to the county; and requested that provision be made by the said Boards for the re-imbursement to the City of the monies so paid, and that hereafter the whole expenses of the said Hospital be paid by the county. A committee, appointed from each Board, subsequently reported favorably, in regard to making the Hospital a county charge. The further sum of \$3,000 was set apart for the use of the Superintendents of the Poor in their official capacity.

March 7, 1844. The subject of erecting a new Lunatic Asylum on the County Farm was brought before the Board, and plans submitted, by a committee appointed at a previous meeting. They recommended a building of wood, filled in with brick, and covered with shingles 110 feet in length, 33 feet in width, three stories high, with a basement underneath; calculated to meet, not only the present, but the future wants of the county, and accommodating about 60 patients. The cost was estimated at between \$8,000 and \$9,000. The report, together with a plan of the proposed building, drawn by Asa Stebbins, was placed in the County Clerk's office for public inspection.

The committee to which had been referred the propriety of erecting a *County Work-House*, reported favorably.

On the 20th of March, 1844, the further sum of \$2,000 was set apart for the use of Superintendents.

May 15, 1844, the Board of Supervisors received a communication from Hon. Jacob Rapelje, one of the Members of the Assembly from Kings county, informing them of the passage of an Act, by the Legislature,

providing for the erection of a new Lunatic Asylum; whereupon a resolution was adopted that the said Asylum be commenced with all convenient dispatch; that it be located on the land attached to the County Poor-House, situated on the west side of the highway leading from Brooklyn to said Poor-House, and placed about 75 feet from said highway, fronting said Poor-House. It was further ordered that the building be constructed under the plan of Mr. Stebbins, heretofore described; and that Tunis G. Bergen, Daniel A. Robbins, Wm. M. Udall, and John A. Voorhees, be the building committee to superintend the erection of the Asylum. On the 5th of June, 1844, the Supervisors decided to reduce the length of the building to 86 feet, the width being 36 feet. The building committee, after advertising for sealed proposals, let the building of the Asylum to Stephen Haynes, Esq.

An act of the Legislature, passed April 22d, 1844, provided that the Superintendents of the Poor, in and for the County of Kings, should hold their office for three years, and until others shall be appointed in their place; and that, immediately after their first appointment, under the said act, the Supervisors shall, by lot or otherwise, divide the Superintendents of the Poor, so first appointed, into three classes, numbered one, two and three; those of the first class, holding office for one year; those of the second class, for two years, and those of the third class, for three years, to the end that the third part of the said Superintendents may be, as nearly as possible, annually appointed.

Under the provisions of this act, John B. Hendrickson, of *Flatlands*, was on the 6th of August, 1844, appointed Superintendent of the Poor of the 1st class; Losee Van Nostrand, of *Brooklyn*, and John A. Emmons, of *New Utrecht*, Superintendents of the 2d class, and Samuel Doxsey, of *Brooklyn*, and C. Le Cook, of *Williamsburg*, Superintendents of the 3d class.

At this meeting, under an act to provide for the erection of a new Lunatic Asylum for the County of Kings, on the County Farm, passed April 26th, 1844, the Supervisors directed that the sum of \$6,000 be borrowed on the credit of the county, and be placed in the hands of the Superintendents, to be used for the erection of a new asylum.

On August 13th, 1844, the Superintendents reported rapid progress in the erection of the said building.

The annual report of the Superintendents of the Poor, presented on the same day, gives the disbursements for Poor-House expenses in all, during the year ending August 7th, 1844, as \$13,585.71; debts unpaid, \$1,200.66, making house expenses in all, \$14,786.37. There were credits which reduced this sum to \$12,822.57.

There was received, during the same time, by the Superintendents of the Poor, \$20,062.71, as follows:

County Treasurer, \$17,898.39; board of lunatics, \$651.25; in support of foreign paupers, \$494.21; bastardy cases, \$450.75; produce sold, \$425.84; old iron and bones, \$71.35; from former Superintendents, \$70.92; making, \$20,062.71.

Of this sum, \$5,448.80 was paid for the relief of indigent persons. Addition to old hospital, which with the amount for the support of Poor-House, \$14,114.32, makes the amount \$20,062.71.

The average number of paupers, actually supported in the Alms-House, was 288, at a cost of \$10,624.65, which gives \$36.89 per year, or 10 cents per day, as the cost for the support of each pauper. The amount saved by their labor was \$1,200.

The Physician of the Poor-House reported 484 cases of diseases, of which 45 were fatal; and 19 births during that year; 24 patients being admitted into the Lunatic Asylum, of whom 12 were cured.

The school in the Poor-House was reported to be in a flourishing condition.

November 21st, 1844, \$2,000 more was placed at the disposal of the Superintendents, to be expended on the new Lunatic Asylum, then in process of erection; also a further sum of \$2,000, for the Poor-House establishment.

August 5th, 1845, at the annual meeting of the Supervisors, John B. Hendrickson was appointed a Superintendent of the Poor, for the 1st class, for the term of three years, from the 1st Tuesday of August, 1843, and until another should be appointed in his place; James Fiel, Wm. H. Campbell, and Eusebius Hopkins were appointed a visiting committee of the Poor-House.

This committee subsequently recommended the making of a school-room and chapel in the old Lunatic Asylum; and also the planting of a large number of ornamental shade trees and shrubbery around the Poor-House, Lunatic Asylum, and other buildings on the County Farm. The pay of Superintendents of the Poor was increased to the sum of \$450 each.

The Annual Report of the Superintendents, presented August 5, 1845, shows that the whole number of paupers relieved or supported during the year ending July 31, 1845, was 4,698; the number temporarily relieved, 3,884. The actual expenses of the Poor-House and temporary relief was \$18,139.55. The amount expended on the new Asylum was \$1,888.67. The actual number supported in the Poor-house was 299, the whole cost of which was \$9,547, which gives \$35.27 per year, or 68 cents per week for the support of each pauper. The value of the labor of the paupers was \$1,200; the produce of the farm had gradually increased, so that at this time, almost every kind of produce grown in this climate, was produced thereon, going very far towards the support of the paupers.

The Physician reported 1,189 cases during the said year, 61 of which were fatal; 4 of these were caused from delirium tremens, 25 were consumption.

It is a singular fact that, since the first existence of the Board of Superintendents of the Poor, the average yearly deaths in the Hospital from consumption was, down to this time, 25.

The new Lunatic Asylum, having been completed since the last Annual Report, the physician in charge says of it, in his report:

"The good effects of the facilities afforded by the new buildings, are very manifest in the conduct and in the feelings of the patients. The want of room in the old buildings, and the restraint upon the patients occasioned thereby, led them to suppose they were prisoners instead of patients, especially those who were inclined to be furious and destructive."

He also speaks of the healthful effects of the extensive bathing-rooms, and apparatus for bathing.

The Report of the physician is lengthy and exceedingly instructive.

On November 7, 1845, measures were taken by the Board of Superintendents to purchase a plot of land in Greenwood Cemetery, or elsewhere, for the burial of the poor of the county, and strangers dying therein, at an expense not exceeding \$8,500. A proposition was made to purchase, or lease for a term of years, about 43 acres of land adjoining the County Poor-House farm, on the estate of Isaac Cortelyou, deceased.

November 11, 1845. The Superintendents were authorized to draw from the County Treasury the sum of \$3,000 towards defraying the current expenses of the poor for the ensuing year.

On March 25, 1846, the Supervisors directed that the sum of \$10,500 be set apart for the Poor-House establishment, to be disbursed by the Superintendents in the discharge of their duties.

May 12, 1846. The attention of the Supervisors and the Superintendents of the Poor was called to an Act, which had then recently become a law, providing for the purchase of land and the erection thereon of suitable buildings, for a Work-House and Penitentiary; and it was proposed to inquire whether lands for that purpose could be obtained in the rocky hills in the 9th Ward of Brooklyn. A resolution was adopted to erect such Penitentiary and to purchase land therefor, not to exceed 40 acres. A building committee was appointed and directed to proceed forthwith.

On August 4, 1846, an election of two Superintendents, to fill two vacancies (2d class), occasioned by the expiration of Losee Van Nostrand's and John A. Emmens' terms, took place. John S. Folk, of Brooklyn, and Stephen W. Stilwell were elected for the term of three years, from the 1st Tuesday of 1846.

A committee reported that the following pieces of land could be purchased for the site for a Penitentiary, viz.: 9 acres from Samuel Smith, at \$200 per acre; 9 acres from Cornelius Van Cleaf, at \$200 per acre; 5 acres from Ralph Malbone, at \$180 per acre; and 14 acres from Jonathan Trotter, at \$180 per acre. A resolution was adopted, that the lands be purchased at prices not exceeding those named above, provided the title thereto is perfect.

From the Annual Report of the Superintendents and Physicians to the Poor-House, August 22d, 1846, it appeared that the Superintendents, during the year ending July 31, 1846, from all sources, exclusive of their salaries, received

for the benefit of the Poor-House establishment of the county, the sum of \$23,146.52; and expended, for the support of the inmates of the Alms-House and Lunatic Asylum, the sum of \$16,462.60½. They have expended for temporary relief of indigent persons out of the Poor-House, the sum of \$6,534.55, making their total expenditures, \$22,997.15½.

The sum of \$25,000, for the support of the poor for the coming year, for discharging present indebtedness, and for alterations and improvements necessary on the county premises, was directed to be raised; also, that \$50 be raised for purchasing books for the Alms-House.

The whole number of poor persons relieved or supported preceding July 31, 1846, was 6,556. The estimated amount saved in the expense of the support of paupers by their labor, was \$3,000.

The Physician of the Alms-House reported, during the year aforesaid, 1,302 cases, of which 62 proved fatal. In the Lunatic Asylum there were 39 cases. On the 1st of August, 1846, there had been 82 admitted to the Asylum during the year. The whole number of lunatics admitted into this Asylum from May, 1838, when it was first established, down to August 1, 1846, was 237, of whom there had been discharged 158; died, 28. The greatest deficiency in the Asylum was the want of sufficient sources of amusement, and reading matter for the moderately insane patients.

We have already referred to the action of the Board of Supervisors and Superintendents had at the Annual Meeting in August, 1846, in regard to purchasing certain pieces of land for a new Penitentiary. October 10th, 1846, it having been ascertained that the titles of the said lands were perfect, a contract was made with the owners, duly ratified by the Board, and a survey and map of the same made, by which it appeared that they purchased said lands as follows:

From S. Smith, $8\frac{2}{10}\frac{2}{10}\frac{6}{10}$ acres at \$200 per acre, amounting to \$1,704.92; from C. Van Clef, $8\frac{2}{10}\frac{7}{10}$ acres, at \$200 per acre, amounting to \$1,774; from Ralph Malbone, $4\frac{2}{10}\frac{2}{10}\frac{6}{10}\frac{6}{10}$ acres, at \$180 per acre, amounting to \$881.97; from heirs of Jonathan Trotter, $13\frac{2}{10}\frac{6}{10}$, at \$180 per acre, amounting to \$2,513.88; total, \$6,874.77.

The land in these parcels thereupon became the site of the Penitentiary.

On the 23d of January, 1847, steps were taken by the Board towards procuring the passage of a law making the support of foreign paupers a State (instead of a County) charge. The matter was referred to Seth Low, Tunis G. Bergen and G. Howland.

February 27th, 1847, the Superintendents reporting that they were out of funds, the Supervisors ordered \$3,000 to be placed to their credit.

On March 13th, 1847, the Board of Superintendents, in view of the great increase of pauperism in the County of Kings, presented the matter to the Supervisors, who immediately passed the following unanimous resolution:

"Resolved, That the overwhelming increase of pauperism in the County is an evil of alarming magnitude, and that the laws require additional provisions to secure this and other counties adjacent to New York from an undue burden resulting from such increase.

Resolved, that our representatives in the Legislature are respectfully and earnestly requested to give their immediate attention to this subject as one of paramount importance."

On May 5th, the Superintendents, owing to the high price of provisions, and the great increase of paupers, asked for an appropriation of \$3,000. It was ordered, thereupon, that a loan upon the credit of the County, of \$12,000, be made for the said appropriation, and for other expenses of the Poor-House establishment.

August 3d, 1847. At the Annual Meeting of the Supervisors, an election for two Superintendents of the Poor of the 3d class, occasioned by the expiration of the official term of Samuel Doxsey and Chauncey L. Cook, resulted in the election of Alfred B. Hodges of *Williamsburg*, and William Rushmore of *Brooklyn*.

The Annual Report of the Superintendents of the Poor, and of the Physician of the Poor-House and Lunatic Asylum, were also presented, for the year ending July 31st, 1847, by which it appears that the whole number of persons relieved or supported during the said year was 7,185; of those temporarily relieved, 5,955. The aggregate amount of money expended during the year was \$27,577.14, of which \$3,361.69 was expended for temporary relief. The expense of the general support of the Poor-House was \$19,215.45, which makes the sum of \$27,577.14. The number of paupers in the Poor-House on the 1st day of August, 1846, was 343; admitted during the year 861; born in the Poor-House, 26. The proceeds of this farm for the past year were largely remunerative; much in excess of last year.

The Physician reported 2,183 cases of disease treated, of whom 111 had died; five of them being cases of delirium tremens, and 21 cases of consumption.

In the Lunatic Asylum there were 49 patients on the 1st day of August, 1846; there were 40 more admitted during the year, ten of whom died, 11 discharged as cured, one absconded, and on the 1st day of August, 1847, there were 61 remaining.

The salary of the Superintendents of the Poor for the year 1847, was \$1,800. September 2d, 1847, the sum of \$2,000 was set apart for the Superintendents of the Poor.

The Superintendents reported a plan and specifications for the new *Penitentiary and Work-House*, on Oct. 5th, with an itemized estimate of the expenses thereof, and that they had entered into a contract with responsible persons for the construction of the same. On Dec. 10th, 1847, the Superintendents asked for and received an appropriation of \$3,000, to be expended towards the defraying of the expenses of the county.

On the 22d of December, the Superintendents and Supervisors took into consideration the necessity of erecting a suitable building, on a line with the Asylum, for a *Children's Nursery*, it appearing that the same was essentially necessary for the health of the children; and that the present building used for the purpose

could be advantageously occupied as a hospital for women.

January 7th, 1848, the Board of Supervisors directed the County Treasurer to place \$5,000 to the credit of the Superintendents, to be expended by them in the Poor Establishment of the county. January 29th, 1848, the question of electing Superintendents of the Poor and County Treasurer *by the people* came before the Board, on a proposal to have Kings County excepted from any legislative bill providing for a law for the popular election of the aforesaid officers. A resolution, favoring such exception, was defeated by a very decisive vote.

February 10th, 1848, the death of Dr. J. B. ZABRISKIE, for many years a physician to the County Alms-House, who died February 8th, of malignant fever, taken in the discharge of his official duties, was announced to the Board, which, out of respect to his memory, adjourned.

February 11th, the salary of the Keeper of the Penitentiary was fixed at \$800 per annum.

March 8th, 1848, \$5,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendent of the Poor.

The erection of a building for a *Children's Nursery* was again considered, and the Superintendents were directed to proceed forthwith with its construction, at an expense not to exceed \$2,000.

July 5th, 1848, the Treasurer of the county was authorized to borrow, on the credit of the county, \$5,000 to pay the contractors of the Hospital Buildings recently burned * on the County Farm, at Flatbush, as their bills severally became due.

August 5th, 1848, the Superintendents of the Poor made and submitted their annual report; monies received \$6,956, from the Emigrant Commissioners, for the board of emigrant passengers, under an Act of Congress, and the Legislature of this State, providing for board of emigrants.

The Report further shows the receipt of \$1,319.14 from the board of Lunatics during the year ending July 31st, 1848: from putative fathers of illegitimate children, \$1,341.25; from the County Treasurer, \$31,350; the net profits of the labor of the paupers, \$1,000, the whole estimated value of their labor being \$2,000. The sum actually expended, over and above the labor and earnings of the paupers, \$58.31 per year, or \$1.12½ per week as the actual expense of keeping each pauper.

The whole number of paupers relieved and supported during the year was 1,746; the whole number temporarily relieved, 6,935; aggregate amount of money expended during the year was \$39,788.77. Of the above aggregate, for temporary relief in the *City of Brooklyn* was \$5,838.25; *Williamsburg*, \$4,574.61; *Flatbush*, \$76.62; *Gravesend* and *New Utrecht*, \$140.49. There was paid out for physicians and medicines \$1,127.73; for the support of idiots and foundlings \$228.80; for repairs and improvements, \$5,607.55.

The *Physicians* reported 2,542 cases of diseases treated during the year; 324 of which proved fatal; 42 having died

from consumption; 10 from delirium tremens; suicide 2. In the *Lunatic Asylum*, there were 120 patients during the year, 7 of whom died; 23 were cured and 81 cases in the hospital at date of the Report.

At the meeting of the Board, March 5th, 1848, F. M. Ingraham, M. D., and Philip O. Hyatt, M. D., were appointed Physicians to the County Poor-House and Lunatic Asylum, in place of Dr. J. B. Zabriskie, deceased, it having been decided to have two physicians for the said establishment, owing to the large increase of paupers and of diseases. The County Penitentiary and Work-House was so far completed on March 23d, 1848, that an order was made by the Supervisors to deliver an order to the Sheriff, directing him to deliver to David Afflick, the Keeper of the same, thirteen prisoners confined in the jail, to be employed at hard labor in the said Penitentiary and Work-House, until the expiration of their several terms. The longest term for which any of these prisoners were sentenced, was six months.

Arrangements for further accommodations were made for the reception of more prisoners in the said Penitentiary. An order was also made, directing the County Treasurer to borrow, on the credit of the county, \$5,000 to pay the contractors on the Hospital building as they severally become entitled to payment.

The records of the Superintendents are very imperfect in stating the names of the *Keepers* of the County Penitentiary and Work-House, but we find that David Afflick had for some time been Keeper; and that at the meeting of August 22d, 1848, Richard W. Call and Platt Heart were appointed Assistant Keepers of the Penitentiary and Work-House.

Sept. 19th, 1848, the Superintendents and Board of Supervisors made an order that the prisoners confined in the Penitentiary should be employed in repairing the public highways leading from Brooklyn to the County Poor-House, under the direction of the Overseers of Highways, and in the custody of the Keepers of the Penitentiary. \$3,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents.

January 18th, 1849, the Superintendents exhibited vouchers for expenditures from August 1st, 1848, to January 1st, 1849, amounting to the sum of \$16,705.81; of which \$15,007.66 was for Alms-House expenses, and \$1,352.46 was for the Penitentiary account.

March 30th, 1849, the *Hospital* at the Penitentiary was erected and ready for occupation.

August 7th, 1849, the Superintendents reported that they were in immediate want of funds, to the amount of \$6,000. On August 27th, James C. Rhodes was appointed Chairman of the Board of Superintendents of the Poor. Mr. Rhodes was the *first Chairman* appointed by this Board, of which there is record. On that day, the Sheriff of the County delivered 13 more prisoners, sentenced to hard labor, from the County Jail to David Afflick, Keeper of the Penitentiary.

* It is to be regretted that the records of the Supervisors, and of the Superintendents of the Poor, give no account of the circumstances of the burning of the Hospital buildings.

September 4th, 1849, we find the Record of the *Board of Assistant Keepers* of the County Penitentiary was established.

The question of the salaries of the Board of Superintendents had now become one about which there were many severe contests in the Board of Supervisors. Some of the members favored liberal salaries, while others were in favor of reducing the salaries to the lowest possible amount.

The question of the great disproportion of Poor expenditures of Williamsburg over that of Brooklyn was brought before the Board of Supervisors, and a resolution was adopted stating that the reasons given to justify the great expenditure in Williamsburg (with a population of about one-third of that of Brooklyn), are insufficient, and such excessive expenditure was censured.

It appeared that the expenditure for the persons temporarily relieved in Brooklyn during the year ending July 31st, 1849, was \$3,447; Williamsburg, \$2,480.

On September 24th, 1849, the annual report to the Superintendents of the Poor, of the Physicians to the Poor Establishment, was taken up, by which it appeared that the whole number of persons relieved and supported during the year ending July 31st, 1849, were 8,671; the number of persons who were temporarily relieved was 5,984. The aggregate amount of money expended during this year was \$50,240.01; of this \$3,471.34 was on account of the Penitentiary, and \$6,534.61 on account of Hospital. Since January 1, 1849, for the general support of the Poor-House, \$32,386.13.

The estimated amount saved in consequence of the labor of paupers was \$2,000. The sum actually expended over and above the labor and earnings of the paupers, divided by the average number kept during the year, was \$58.88 per year, or \$1.13 per week for keeping each pauper.

The cost of the new Hospital and the land it stands on, with the brick building, 100 feet by 40, occupied exclusively as an hospital, was \$21,923.

The value of the whole establishment at that time was \$68,925.

The whole number of paupers in the establishment on the 1st of August, 1848, was 500. Admitted during the year, 2,035. There were 49 births. There were remaining in the Poor-House on July 31, 1849, 494. Of this number 269 were foreigners. There were 268 deaths in the establishment during the year.

The Physicians' report to the Poor-House, for the year ending July 31st, 1849, states that 2,712 cases of diseases were treated, 268 of which proved fatal; 9 of these were caused by *delirium tremens*; consumption, 45. The cholera having broken out on the 1st of July, there were 38 deaths caused therefrom.

In the Lunatic Asylum, there were, on the 31st of July, 1849, 81 patients; 53 were admitted after that date, making 134 the whole number admitted, of whom 17 had died, 28 discharged, and at the date of report there were 77 remaining.

Mr. Rhodes presented a communication relative to the amount of room in the Lunatic Asylum. This report did great credit to the Board of Superintendents, which then consisted of William Rushmore and James C. Rhodes, of *Brooklyn*; Henry E. Ripley, *Williams-*

burg; Stephen N. Stillwell, *Gravesend* and *New Utrecht*, and John L. Ryder, *Flatbush* and *Flatlands*.

On October 2d, 1849, the sum of \$2,500 was appropriated by the Supervisors, to be placed to the credit of the Superintendents for the erection of an additional building on the County Poor-House Farm, for the accommodation of children of the Poor-House; and an order was made for the immediate erection of said building.

October 31st, 1849, \$1,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents. A plan was submitted and accepted for the new *Nursery Building*, separate from the Poor-House; and also a place for a new Penitentiary Building.

By an Act of the Legislature, passed April, 1849, the Treasurer of the County was authorized to borrow on the credit of the County the sum of \$10,000 for the erection of nursery buildings on the Alms-House Farm, and for a wing to the County Jail.

On the 20th of November, 1849, the site for the new nursery building was located at the east of new Hospital, and within the same enclosure.

At a meeting of the Board of Supervisors, on the 9th of January, 1850, Samuel E. Van Derveer, who had been elected a Superintendent of the Poor, took the oath of office.

By a resolution of the Superintendents, January 19th, 1850, all the able-bodied male convicts in the Penitentiary were directed to be employed, when the weather permitted, in digging out, breaking and preparing stone on the penitentiary grounds for the foundation of the Nursery building to be erected on the Alms-House ground.

February 13th, a Surveyor was employed to stake out the grounds for a *New Penitentiary*.

On June 7th, 1850, the plans for the enlargement of the *Lunatic Asylum* were presented, in obedience to an order made in March of that year.

On June 18th, 1850, the *Poor-House* on the County Farm was destroyed by fire. This fire was a very serious and alarming one; and, at one time, the loss of many lives seemed inevitable, and the destruction of the other buildings imminent; but, through the bravery and alacrity of the firemen of Flatbush, this great disaster was averted, and was confined to the loss of the Alms-House alone. The gallant conduct of the firemen was duly and publicly acknowledged by the Board of Supervisors and Superintendents of the County.

On June 24, measures were taken to rebuild the Alms-House, and at the next meeting plans were given for the new Alms-House. The Building Committee for the new Alms-House was composed of Messrs. Sloan, Voorhees, Waterman and Berry, who closed a contract for the erection of a new building on July 23, 1850.

On August 16th, 1850, David Affick, keeper of the Penitentiary, having been superseded by James

Edwards, was subsequently found to have been guilty of malfeasance in his official duties, and was prosecuted criminally therefor.

The County Treasurer was directed on the 28th of August to take the sum of \$10,005 and credit the same to the Superintendents of the Poor, towards defraying the expenses of erecting a new Alms-House. Plans were also submitted for the new Penitentiary on this day.

The Annual report of the Superintendents of the Poor show that, after the burning of the principal building of the Alms-House, it became necessary to furnish immediate accommodations for the paupers, and that they caused temporary buildings to be erected for the purpose. As there was a large quantity of bedding, furniture and other property consumed, which they were obliged to immediately replace, they had incurred an expense of \$2,000. The Superintendents also recommended an addition to the Hospital, and that it should be built at once. The report further shows that the number of persons relieved and supported during the year ending July 31st, 1850, was 7,963. The number of persons who were temporarily relieved was 5,140. The aggregate amount of money expended during the year was \$57,687.33. Among the items making up this expense was: for physicians and medicine, \$2,353.43; keeper and nurses, \$3,446.63.

There was received into the Poor Fund \$11,776.68 from the Commissioners of Emigrants; for board of lunatics, 2,150.68; from putative fathers of illegitimate children, \$444; for produce sold, \$545.23; from the County Treasury, \$34,000; from the pockets of deceased paupers, \$13.19. Balance on hand August 1, 1849, \$1,023.24.

The report also shows that a building designed as a nursery for the children is in process of erection. The number of paupers in the Poor-House on the 1st day of August, 1849, was 494; admitted during the year, 2,271; born in the Poor-House, 58; discharged during the year, 1,933; ran away, 21; died, 237. There were in the Poor-House on the 1st of August, 1850, 582. The produce raised on the farm during the year exceeded that of any previous year. The school for the children was reported to be in a most flourishing condition. The estimate of the amount of money necessary for the support of the poor, including every item for the year ending July 31st, 1851, was \$66,658.80. There was due from the Commissioners of Emigration for the months of June and July, \$1,500.

For some cause the report of the Physicians to the Hospital and Lunatic Aylum does not accompany the report of the Superintendents. Such a report is, however, alluded to in these words: "The report of the Resident Physicians of the Hospital and Aylum calls for the most serious consideration."

On October 30, 1850, the Treasurer of the county was directed to place to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor, the sum of \$2,000. On the same day, the *new Nursery* building for children was reported to be so far completed that a portion of it was ready to be occupied.

Nov. 28th, the Treasurer was directed to place \$3,000 to the credit of the Superintendents.

On the 26th of December, the Treasurer of the county was directed to place \$5,000 to the credit of the Superintendents. At this time Dr. T. A. Wade proposed to

treat all the prisoners in the County Penitentiary and furnish the necessary medicine for \$12 per month, which proposition was accepted. Jeremiah E. Lott, who had been elected one of the Superintendents for the ensuing year, took the oath of office.

The selection for a site for the new Lunatic Asylum having caused much discussion, the question was finally settled on the 27th of December, 1850, by locating the asylum on the county farm. Plans for the asylum, made after the Asylum at Trenton, N. J., were favorably received, and contracts made for the erection of the same, to commence early in the spring.

May 2d, 1852, James Edwards was removed from the office of Keeper at the King's County Penitentiary, and Samuel S. Myers appointed in his place.

May 29, the construction of the new Alms-House was reported rapidly progressing.

August 5th, 1851, the annual report of the Superintendents, and also the report of the Physicians of the Poor Establishment, were submitted, and laid over for a future meeting; but it does not appear from the minutes that they were ever taken up again.

On September 3, 1851, \$2,500 was appropriated for the erection of a dwelling-house for the Assistant-Physician, on the lot south of the Asylum; and a petition from many citizens for the erection of a *house of worship* for the Poor, on the Alms-House Farm, was received and favorably considered. A resolution was also passed ordering the building, on the County Farm, of a cottage-house and engine and wash-house, with steam engine and washing apparatus.

The question of the enlargement of the present Lunatic Asylum, or the building of a new one, began to engross the attention of the Boards of Superintendents and Supervisors early in the autumn of 1851, and gradually became an all-absorbing question. About the first of October the project of erecting a Lunatic Asylum upon Long Island was inaugurated, and efforts were made to interest the Supervisors of Queens, Suffolk and Richmond counties. It was also proposed, and steps were taken in the direction of adding 100 feet in length to the Asylum building, and for a time this project promised to be carried forward.

October 1st, 1851, an addition of 100 feet in length was ordered to be made to the Asylum building; but this action of the Board was subsequently rescinded.

November 15th a loan of \$50,000 for erecting a new Penitentiary and new Lunatic Asylum, under an Act of the Legislature passed July 1st, 1851, was made; but the resolution was soon after rescinded, and the plan of enlarging the present Lunatic Asylum was again revived.

February 26th, 1852, Henry E. Ripley became a member of the Board of Superintendents for the ensuing year.

Several efforts were made by the Supervisors to purchase a site for the new Lunatic Asylum. Various

other sites were even selected; plans and specifications presented with directions to proceed with the building; but all proved abortive. The matter continued to occupy the Board for the remainder of the current year; and, to add to the embarrassment, the proposition to build a large addition to the County Hospital was made in May, 1852, and vigorously urged. Early in June, the same year, the salary of T. A. Wade, Physician to the Penitentiary, was fixed at the sum of \$250 per annum.

About the first of July arrangements were made and nearly completed for the purchase of the farm of Mrs. Margaret Crooke, in Flatlands, for the use of the County and for the site of the new Lunatic Asylum. But the citizens of that town remonstrated so strongly against having the Lunatic Asylum in their midst that this project was abandoned.

August 24th, 1852, the annual reports of the Superintendents of the Poor Establishment gave, as expended for the Alms-House, Hospital and other establishments, \$112,208. The number of lunatic (paid) boarders in the Asylum on the first of August, 1852, was 23. The weekly cost of boarding a person at the Lunatic Asylum was \$2.03. The whole amount of Lunatics at the Asylum August 1st, 1852, 158. The actual cost for supporting the poor for the year ending July 31st, 1852, was \$104,525.59. The Superintendents' report for this year is *very* imperfect, and the Physician's report is entirely wanting.

August 31st, 1852, the Treasurer of the County was directed to place the sum of \$30,000 to the credit of the Superintendents, to be disbursed in the Poor Establishment.

On the 26th of September, 1852, the long mooted and troublesome matter of selecting a site for the new Lunatic Asylum was finally settled, by locating it upon the County Farm; and the Asylum Committee was directed to proceed at once with its erection. So great was the joy of the majority of the Supervisors over this settlement of the long-vexed question, that it was ordered *that the resolutions by which the same was settled "be elegantly engraved, placed in gilt frames, and hung up in conspicuous places in the several public poor institutions in the county, for the benefit of posterity."*

December 17, 1852, Joel Skidmore was elected as Superintendent for the ensuing year.

March 1st, 1853, the County Treasurer was directed to place the sum of \$4,000 to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor, to be expended for the maintenance of prisoners in the County Penitentiary.

July 8th, 1853, the County Treasurer was directed, under the provisions of an Act passed April 15th, 1853, to borrow on the credit of the county the sum of \$50,000, payable in three instalments, with interest, the same to be applied to the completion of the Lunatic Asylum; and, also, to borrow on the credit of the county the sum of \$10,000, to be applied in completion of the County Hospital at Flatbush.

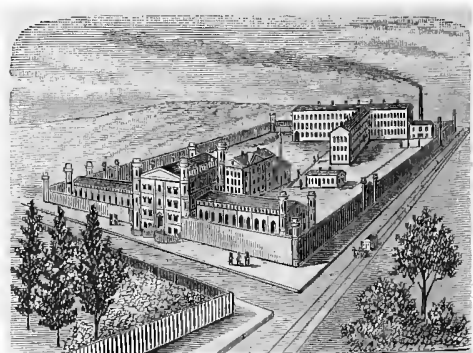
August 1st, 1853, the death of DR. BULLOCK, physician to the Lunatic Asylum, and who had fallen a victim to the typhus fever, taken in the discharge of his duties, was announced, and resolutions passed expressive of the high esteem in which he was held.

The annual reports of the Superintendents and Physicians of the Poor Establishment were presented at this meeting. They are not now extant.

From the accounts, however, which appears in the records of the Supervisors, under date of September 9th, 1853, we find that the sum estimated as necessary for the support of the poor for the year ending July 31st, 1854, was \$162,490.82.

November 14, the Treasurer was directed to borrow, on the credit of the county, the sum of \$10,000, to be expended in the completion of the County Penitentiary.

On the 8th of December, 1853, Samuel Hubbard and H. E. Ripley took the usual oath of office as Superintendents of the Poor. On the same day the Supervisors of the County and the Superintendents of the Poor gave notice and certified that the *penitentiary* in the County of Kings was ready for the confinement of prisoners therein, and that it was the duty of all magistrates and courts therein to sentence all persons who, on conviction, were liable to imprisonment for not less than thirty days, to confinement in said Penitentiary instead of the County Jail.



A BIRD'S-EYE VIEW OF THE KINGS COUNTY PENITENTIARY, 1854.

The sums of \$7,000 was fixed as the penalty of the bonds of the respective Superintendents of the Poor.

The sums of \$2,500, for the erection of a wash-house for the County Poor Establishment; \$3,500 for heating apparatus in the Alms-House and Nursery buildings were appropriated January 19, 1854; the sum of \$20,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents for the support of the poor. On the 26th of January the County Treasurer was directed to place the sum of \$89,590.80 to the credit of the Superintendents of

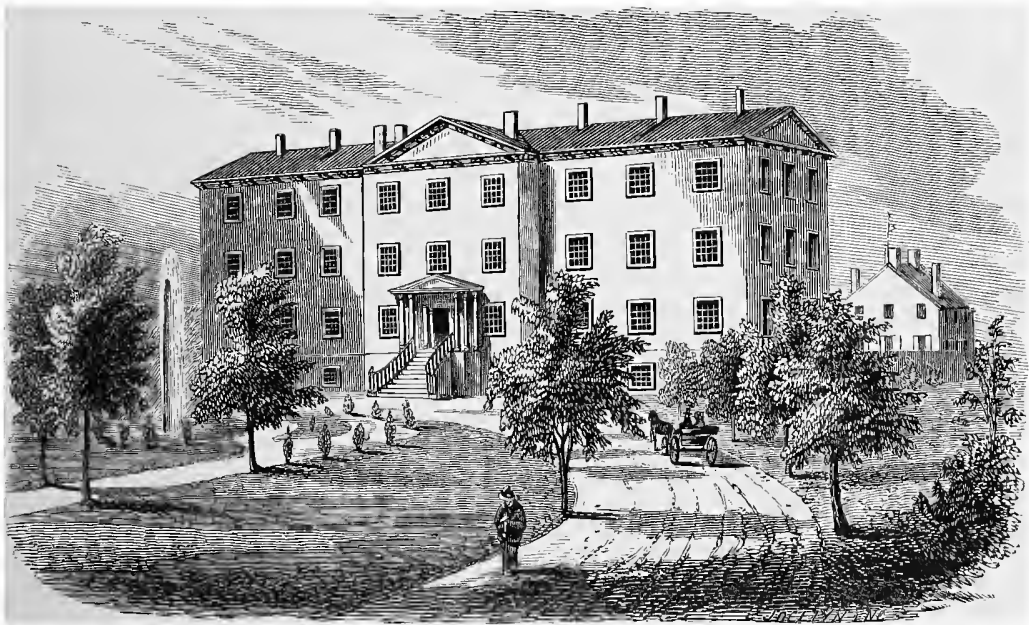
Poor, to be disbursed by them in the discharge of their official duties.

It having been made known to the Board of Superintendents that a bill was pending before the Legislature directing that the bodies of persons who may die in poor-houses and certain other institutions shall be delivered to medical schools for the purpose of dissection, a resolution was offered before the Superintendents, and also before the Board of Supervisors, denouncing the said bill as a monstrous outrage upon the sensibilities and social relations of the poor, the unfortunate and the afflicted; and as morally injurious, destroying all distinction between poverty and crime, and calculated to arouse the indignation of

On the 11th of May an itemized account of the expenses incurred in the construction of the Lunatic Asylum was presented, which aggregated the amount of \$100,000; against which there was, on the 11th of May, a credit of \$100,000.

Great dissatisfaction was felt throughout the county at the unfinished condition in which a costly edifice like the Lunatic Asylum was permitted to remain, subjecting the suffering inmates of the other buildings to the horrors of their situation, and the speedy completion of the building was urgently requested.

Escapes of prisoners from the Penitentiary had become very frequent of late, and on July 13th, in conformity with a resolution of the Board, the Keeper



ALMS-HOUSE.

the friends of the large class subjected to its barbarous provisions.

After much discussion this resolution was adopted by both boards; and the Members of Assembly from Kings county were instructed to use their utmost exertions to defeat both bills.

March 2d, 1854, the Superintendents informed the Supervisors of the want of sufficient accommodations for the greatly increasing number of *small-pox* patients, and recommending the erection of a building for that purpose, calling their immediate attention to it. It was estimated that the heating apparatus and plumbing work on the new Lunatic Asylum cost \$40,000.

March 23, 1854, the Committees on County Penitentiary and on Alms-House were directed to use all possible efforts to bring the same to a speedy completion.

of the Penitentiary and Work-House reported the number of persons who had escaped from the Penitentiary from June 10th, 1853, to July 27th, 1854, as fourteen in all, four only of whom were retaken.

July 27th, 1854, the attention of the Board was again called to the necessity of additional accommodations for small-pox patients on the County Farm; whereupon a plan was presented for the erection of a *small-pox hospital*, 65x36 feet, two stories in height, which would accommodate about thirty patients; the estimated cost of such building to be about \$10,000, and the Alms-House Committee was instructed to proceed immediately with its erection, at the expense of \$10,000.

August 29th the annual report of the Superintendents for the year ending July 31st, 1854, was pre-

sented, and on September 5th was taken up and considered. It was *ordered*, that the report be printed, but, like several of its predecessors, it cannot be found. The Supervisors, however, in passing upon it, pay Mr. Stillwell, the clerk of the Superintendents, a handsome compliment for the manner in which it was gotten up.

The Supervisors, also, in their review of the report, state that the Poor institutions at Flatbush do credit to the Board of Superintendents, and Mr. S. S. Myers, the keeper; Dr. Turner of the Hospital, and Dr. Blanchard of the Lunatic Asylum, are especially commended.

October 3d, 1854, \$20,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents, to meet the current expenses of the Alms-House. The new Penitentiary funds were reported to be exhausted, and the County Treasurer was unable to dispose of the County bonds in sufficient amounts to meet the demands thereon; whereupon it was ordered that all work on the erection of the new Penitentiary be immediately suspended.

Suitable rooms were ordered to be finished in the basement for the resident physician.

November 1st \$20,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor, to meet the Alms-House expenses.

Under an Act passed by the Legislature March 19th, 1852, and another Act passed March 2d, 1854, the Board directed the Treasurer to borrow money on Penitentiary loans to the amount of \$100,000, if required.

As late as November 29th, 1854, the new Lunatic Asylum, although partially occupied, was still unfinished, requiring, at least, the sum of \$30,000 to complete it. Work was still suspended on the Penitentiary—a matter which was greatly deplored—and, at the above date, the County Treasurer was directed to borrow, on the credit of the county, sufficient funds for the estimated expenses of completing the Penitentiary.

December 26th it was ordered that a suitable engineer and a competent architect be employed to superintend the construction of a tower eighty feet high on the Lunatic Asylum, for supporting a reservoir to supply the county buildings with water, thereby saving the expense of putting in and running a new engine, etc. The sum of \$20,000 was also placed to the credit of the Superintendents, to be expended in support of the Alms-House department. On the 30th of December the proposed tower on the Lunatic Asylum was decided to be insufficient for a supply of water, and all operations in regard to water were suspended until a permanent supply of water should be secured for the city of Brooklyn. Such had been the delay and vacillation touching the public buildings on the Poor-House farm, that the Committee on Lunatic Asylum, in their report of December 29th, 1854, said:

"Your committee cannot refrain from remarking upon the inadequacy of the system under which the work is now prosecuted. One Board of Supervisors will adopt plans; another Board, composed of different members, may undo the work of the first. The first may contract to build under their plans; a third Board, composed of yet different members, may see the edifice nearly completed under the contracts and plans of their predecessors; while a fourth and entirely new Board may complete the work and make a final settlement with the contractors, to the great detriment of all interests. Moreover, when a new building is finished, it is turned over to an entirely new Board, to be at once made the subject of alterations and repairs. The result of such a system has been, and is exhibited at the County Farm, in a series of buildings of extravagant cost, but partially supplied with water, and, in some instances, with air; inadequately protected from fire, and in many other respects inconvenient. The Committee, therefore, recommend that the buildings should be subject to less frequent changes in the management and in the plans, specifications and contracts under which they are erected, or are to be erected."

This report serves to explain the somewhat confused history of those public buildings which we have been obliged to give.

January 9th, 1855, the Superintendents and Supervisors each appointed special committees to report some plan for ridding the streets of the great number of vagrant boys which infest them.

January 16th the Board of Supervisors, acting under the report to which we have referred, touching the erection of county buildings, took prompt and business-like action in regard to the matter.

January 30th, \$20,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor, to be disbursed for the benefit of the poor establishment of the county.

On the same day the Supervisors recommended the appointment of a committee to confer with the Superintendents on the subject of teaching the children of the Poor-House on the Sabbath; and recommending that the old nurses be discharged, and that none but native-born Americans be appointed in their place; and that those so appointed have an advance of wages. This occasioned an exciting contest. It was proposed to amend the resolution by striking out the word *Americans* and inserting the words *competent teachers*. An amendment to this amendment was proposed, to add before the word "*Americans*" the word "*Protestant*," which motion was carried by a vote of 11 yeas to 10 nays.

On the 30th of January it was decided to apply to the Legislature for the enactment of a law authorizing the Supervisors to create a loan sufficient in amount to complete the Lunatic Asylum on the County Farm. The further sum of \$20,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents on the 20th of February, 1855, to be used by them for the Poor Establishment of the county.

March 20th, \$11,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents for poor relief and poor account;

and \$5,000 on account of the Penitentiary. William Rushmore and James C. Rhodes took the oath of office as Superintendents of the Poor.

April 2d, a recently passed act of the Legislature, authorizing the Supervisors to create a loan for the completion of the Lunatic Asylum on the County Farm, was presented and action taken under it. A report was presented on the 18th of April, showing that the amount levied by tax and collected was \$187,041.80. Of this amount \$130,000 had been disbursed, leaving \$57,041.80 unappropriated.

There had been levied and collected for the support of the Penitentiary \$17,000. Notwithstanding this, on the same day the sum of \$20,000 was ordered to be placed to the credit of the Superintendents, to be used by them in their official character.

Upon representation of the insufficient accommodations at the Nursery, a sewer, 1,100 feet in length, was proposed to be constructed, leading from the same; and an additional building, 52x36 feet, two stories high, to be erected for a hospital for the Nursery, one of the old Lunatic Asylum buildings to be used as a hospital for the children in the Nursery until the completion of said new wing; all of which was favorably considered by some of the members, while others insisted that no new constructions be commenced or provided for until those in process of erection were completed; but a majority were in favor of erecting a new Nursery Hospital.

Previous to May 3d, 1855, it was the custom at the county Poor-House, on two days, at least of the week, to set what is called a "*public table*," furnished with lunch, liquors and cigars for officials visiting the establishment on those days, all at the expense of the county.

On that day, at a meeting of the Supervisors, Supervisor Caldwell created much excitement by presenting, by permission, a copy of the *Brooklyn Morning Journal*, of that date, containing an article headed, "FASHIONABLE PAUPERS AT THE COUNTY POOR-HOUSE!" which was read by the clerk, and on motion, was referred to the Superintendents of the Poor, recommending to them hereafter to dispense with dinners and other refreshments; except to distinguished strangers and to invited guests. It was suggested that the number of *distinguished strangers* and *invited guests* were rapidly increasing under the generous treatment they received at the Poor-House; which to them was anything but a *Poor-House*. The introduction of this question led to one of the most animated discussions that took place before the board during that year. Motions to lay the whole subject on the table, motions of amendment, and dilatory motions were made.

Supervisor Bergen offered the resolution recommending "the Superintendents hereafter to discontinue the setting out a public table, and furnishing liquors or cigars on any day or days."

Supervisor Fenton moved to amend by striking out all after the words, "*public table*," which was decided in the negative by a vote of 11 to 11. The original resolution was then adopted by a vote of 11 to 10. A motion was then made for a reconsideration of the last vote, which motion was carried in the affirmative by a vote of 12 to 10. A motion was then made that the Board adjourn, which was lost. Mr. Bergen now asked permission to amend his resolution; to add at the close thereof the words, "*to the public*." Mr. Lindsey moved that the whole subject be indefinitely postponed, which motion was lost by a tie vote.

Mr. Caldwell then moved the previous question—the question then being presented in this form: "Shall the main question now be put?" which was decided in the affirmative. And the question being taken on the resolution as amended, it was decided in the affirmative by a vote of 15 to 7. So that, so far as the Supervisors were concerned, the *public table*, with its refreshments, liquors and cigars, at the County Poor-House was discountenanced; and the Board of Superintendents subsequently coincided with the majority of the Supervisors. We give rather a full account of this contest, for reasons which will be very apparent to the reader.

The plan for a hospital to the Nursery continued to increase in popularity until the measure was adopted. The plan for using the old Hospital for the sick children of the Nursery met with decisive opposition from both Boards.

Under an Act of the Legislature passed March 27th, 1855, authorizing the Board to create a loan to complete the Lunatic Asylum on the County Farm, the County Treasurer was directed to borrow on the credit of the County the sum of \$35,000 in installments, payable as follows: \$5,000 in 1857; \$7,000 in 1858; \$8,000 in 1859; \$10,000 in 1860; \$5,000 in 1861—the bond to be signed by the County Treasurer, countersigned by the County Clerk, the seal of the County affixed to the same, numbered and recorded in the Book of County Bonds as required by section 5, chapter 36 of the laws of 1854.

A resolution was passed at this time directing that the erection of the female wing of the new Penitentiary be continued with all possible speed.

June 6th a resolution was adopted that all magistrates throughout the County be requested to commit all adult vagrants to the Penitentiary, that they might be put to hard labor.

On June 12th the salary of the Superintendents of the Poor was fixed at \$1,000 each; with \$200 additional to the Superintendent acting as Treasurer of the Board. On June 27th the annual appropriation for the fiscal year for the support of the poor having been exhausted, and the Superintendents being in debt \$25,000, the necessary measures were taken for their relief until the next fiscal year.

On the 25th of July, 1855, the Lunatic Asylum was reported as completed according to contract; whereupon the following very important resolution was adopted:

Resolved, That the Board of Supervisors do now transfer into the hands of the Superintendents of the Poor the building known as the County *Lunatic Asylum*.

August 7th, 1855, the annual report of the Superintendents of the Poor and that of the Physicians to the Alms-House and Lunatic Asylum were submitted, by which it appears that the *Nursery* building was, at the date of the report, so far completed as to be occupied by 340 children—too large a number to subsist in a healthy state in one edifice. That, though when completed it would afford additional space, it was certain that that would be immediately filled to an extent which would be uncomfortable to its inmates.

Also, that the new Lunatic Asylum would be completed about the first of September; that the school in the Alms-House was admirably managed by Mrs. Saltzman and Miss Brown; and that in religious instruction all the inmates of the poor establishment have had the assiduous attention of the Rev. Mr. Carter, aided by other clergymen. The productions of the farm were very large, and were profitably disposed of.

The whole number of paupers supported and relieved during the year ending July 31st, 1855, was 26,581. The number of such persons temporarily relieved was: In *Brooklyn* (Western District) 10,670; (Eastern District) 7,904; in *Flatbush*, *Flatlands* and *New Lots*, 275; *Gravesend* and *New Utrecht*, 48; total, 18,897; the cost of which was \$225,217.86. Received for the benefit of the Poor establishment, from all sources, during the year, \$227,390.36. The estimated value of the profit on the labor of the paupers was \$1,500. Of the amount expended for the support of the poor, \$67,750.51 was expended for the support of the patients in the hospital and small-pox house, averaging \$143.85 per annum, or \$2.75 per week for the actual cost of each patient.

And the amount applicable to the support of the poor, divided by the average number of paupers kept in the Alms-House, Lunatic Asylum and Nursery buildings, gives \$73.72 per annum, or \$1.40 per week as the actual cost of each pauper.

The estimated value of the whole Poor Establishment on the 31st of July, 1854, was \$408,000; the number of persons in the Alms-House, Hospital, Nursery and Asylum on that day was 1,156; admitted during the year ending July 31, 1855, 6,376; there were born in the Poor-House, 152; discharged during the year, 5,654; absconded, 41; died, 420; bound out, 5; out on trial, 31; leaving in the Poor-House on the 31st of July, 1855, 1,533; 921 of whom were foreigners, and 185 lunatics.

The estimated expenses for the Poor Establishment for the year to end July 31st, 1856, was \$302,196.20. The estimated amount necessary for the support of the Penitentiary for the ensuing year was \$16,000. The number of prisoners in the Penitentiary on July 11, 1855, was 125.

On September 5th, 1855, \$25,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents, to be expended in the support of the Alms-House. On that same day there were in the Penitentiary 155 prisoners.

On the 3d of October, 1855, the Committee of Supervisors made a report which created great sensation in the County, inasmuch as it strongly condemned some of the management of the Superintendents of the Poor, touching the Poor Establishment of the County.

The Superintendents in their reply alleged that, as they derived their office from the Legislature of the State, and their election direct from the people, they did not regard themselves as amenable to the Board of Supervisors; and that the Legislature, in requiring them to submit to that Board their annual reports and accounts, only intended to give the Board of Supervisors an advisory power. But the Supervisors insisted that the following language of the statute: "It shall be the duty of the Supervisors to examine the accounts of the Superintendents of the Poor and audit the same," made it the duty of the Supervisors to exert a supervisory power over the Superintendents. Accordingly the report to which we have alluded, which was very lengthy, was submitted to the Board of Supervisors, and adopted by that body and duly reported. The report charged the Superintendents, among other things, with extravagance in purchasing supplies for the Poor-House. That the purchases included a profusion of articles which properly belonged to the class of luxuries; alleging that the people never intended that the poor supported at their expense should share in luxuries of which they (the tax-payers) were not able to partake.

In evidence of the prodigality of the Superintendents in furnishing supplies, the Committee allege that more was actually paid for supplies purchased at wholesale than the same articles would cost at retail. That 1,600 gallons of wine and brandy were purchased during the year, at a cost of \$5,000, giving about four gallons each to the average yearly inmates of the Poor-House. 18,000 pounds of tea was furnished for the County buildings during that time—about nine tons—at an average cost of from 43 cents to 45 cents per pound, wholesale; 56,083 pounds of butter, or 28 tons, at an average wholesale cost of 24½ cents per pound, consumed in the year; 119,245 pounds, or 60 tons, of sugar, at an average wholesale cost of 7½ cents per pound, etc., etc. The article chiefly furnished was an ordinary brown Havana sugar, for which the New York prices ranged from 5 to 5½ cents per pound.

The committee concluded their report thus:

"This great abuse of office by the Superintendents in their office demands from the Board of Supervisors of Kings County merited censure; and we submit it to the Board to judge whether this great looseness in conducting the County business is not very near the perpetration of fraud upon the county. Your committee do not charge fraud upon any one, but leave the Board and the public to judge of the statement of facts as they appear from our examination."

The report was adopted by the Board of Supervisors, who, in ten separate resolutions, admonished the Super-

intendents of the Poor touching their manner* of purchasing supplies for the poor; recommending, also, "the appointment of a competent person as a store-keeper to receive and distribute supplies" for the county poor. They also invited a public competition in furnishing county supplies; refused to audit all bills for tea which did not furnish the particular cargo and chop; required the Superintendents to explain to the Board the discrepancy in the purchase and actual use at the Hospital of tea, sugar, butter and rice; refused to allow the charge of \$34.45 for daily papers for the use of the officers of the establishment; or to approve the account as rendered by the Superintendents until they satisfactorily settle all errors in tares and weights. They also directed the Superintendents to furnish to the poor under their charge plain, substantial and wholesome food, and no goods of such an average high grade as the expenses for the past year indicated.

They required them to report to this Board *monthly* (under oath) as to their purchases, expenditures and proceedings; and appointed a committee to present to the Board, as early as possible, a plan for an entire and permanent reformation in the expenditures for the poor of Kings county. Supervisors Caldwell, Bergen and Rowe constituted this committee.

One thousand copies of this report were ordered to be published, together with the annual report of the said Superintendents.

This was the result of the action of the Board of Supervisors in regard to the Board of Superintendents of the Poor. No vote of censure was passed by the former Board, nor was there any belief that the Superintendents were guilty of any fraud. It was conceded that they only carried out a practice which had obtained in the County Poor Establishment for many years. The Superintendents afterwards, on October 10th, submitted a very able answer in explanation of their course, which was presented at a joint meeting of the two Boards, at which time all errors were substantially rectified.

On November 21st, 1855, \$25,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor for the benefit of the Poor Establishment of the county.

December 12th, 1855, \$25,000 for the Alms-House account and \$6,000 for the Penitentiary account were placed to the credit of the Superintendents.

The committee heretofore appointed on the subject of reformatory measures in the expenditures of the poor, reported the draft of an act to be submitted to the Legislature for enactment at the coming session, which effected radical changes in the management of the Poor Establishment of the county. We shall refer to this act hereafter.

On the 10th of January, 1856, \$25,000 was appropriated to the Superintendents for Alms-House purposes. This appropriation, however, was not made

without strong opposition, inasmuch as the Superintendents had failed to make the report called for by the resolution of the Supervisors.

By the annual report of the Keeper of the Penitentiary, January 10th, 1856, it appeared that there had been, during the year 1855, 1,054 prisoners committed to the Penitentiary, of which 417 were committed for habitual drunkenness; 101 for being drunk and disorderly.

February 5th, \$15,000 was appropriated to the Superintendents for Alms-House account, and \$7,000 for account of temporary relief. The new Penitentiary was reported to be "in a state of forwardness," indicating completion as early as August next. The money expended on this building down to date amounted to \$24,990, and it was decided to borrow \$50,000 for the purpose of completing the same.

James Voorhees, elected at the general election in November as Superintendent of the Poor, took the oath of office on December 27th, 1855.

By an order of the Superintendents of the Poor, the prisoners in the Penitentiary were directed to be employed, in bad weather, in breaking stones for macadamizing the roads.

On March 14th, 1856, \$20,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor for the benefit of the Alms-House.

On April 9th, 1856, \$20,000 was deposited to the credit of the Superintendents for Alms-House support, and \$5,000 on account of temporary relief.

The 30th of April a report was presented, showing that the amount levied in the taxes for the support of the poor for the fiscal year was \$206,108.10; for deficiency in the previous year, \$25,000; Penitentiary account, \$17,000. Total, \$248,108.10.

On June 11th, \$25,000 was appropriated to the Superintendents of the Poor on Alms-House account, and \$9,113 for Penitentiary account.

At the annual meeting of the Supervisors, August 5th, 1856, the Superintendents of the Poor presented their annual report (by far the ablest, most interesting and satisfactory of any of its predecessors), accompanied by that of Dr. Thomas Turner, Resident Physician of the Alms-House and Lunatic Asylum.

Report: Number of paupers admitted to the Alms-House for year ending July 31st, 1856, was 4,477; discharged, 4,222; died, 342; bound out, 4; put out on trial, 96; the number remaining July 31, 1856, 1,347; of these were males over sixteen years old, 383; under sixteen, 291; females sixteen years old and over, 541; under, 132; 495 were natives, 852 foreigners. The number of persons temporarily relieved, 18,625; of these 10,603 were from the Western District of Brooklyn; 7,599 from the Eastern District; 351 from Flatbush, Flatlands and New Lots; 72 from Gravesend and New Utrecht. *Recapitulation:* Number remaining in the Alms-House July 31, 1855, 1,533; admitted during the year, 4,477; temporarily relieved during the year, 18,625. Whole number relieved and supported during the year ending July 31, 1856, 24,635. Expenditures during the year: Alms-House, \$61,602.75; Nursery for Children, 41,397.67; Lunatic Asylum, \$48,888.-

11; Hospital, \$78,320.02. General common account of the Poor Establishment, \$8,637.43.

Dr. Thomas Turner, Resident Physician of County Hospital, reports total number treated during the year ending July 31st, 1856, to be 3,360, 1,746 males, 1,614 females; 2,207 recoveries; 433 improved; 275 died; 298 discharged; remaining July 31, 1866, 372. The daily average of inmates in Hospital, nearly 453.

Dr. Robert B. Baiseley, Resident Physician of the Lunatic Asylum, reports 330 patients treated during the above year, of whom 93 recovered; 16 improved; 2 escaped, 16 died.

Dr. Baiseley called attention to the crowded state of the Asylum, it having at that date fifty patients more than could be properly accommodated. He strongly recommends the building of another wing for the female patients. He closes his report by regretting that this is the first satisfactory report he has been able to make in two years.

On the 19th of November, \$25,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents on the Alms-House account.

About the 1st of December, 1856, the question of letting out the labor of the convicts in the Penitentiary to contractors began to be a very important one with the Board of Superintendents.

December 3d, 1856, H. E. Ripley and Charles W. Church, recently elected Superintendents, took the oath of office. The bonds of the Superintendents of the Poor were fixed at the sum of \$7,000 each.

December 26th, 1856, \$30,000 was appropriated to the Superintendents for the Alms-House Account. The manner of purchasing supplies for the support of the Poor, and the inmates in the other institutions of the county, had become a matter of great importance to both Supervisors and Superintendents. Both Boards frequently met in conference, and various means were devised to perfect an order of business under this head, but nothing conclusive was effected, as the various statutes regulating the Poor Laws were deemed insufficient. At last, on the 27th of Dec., 1856, the draft of an act regulating the purchase of supplies for the Poor, containing 11 different sections, was reported to the Board, to be reported to the Legislature for enactment; and on April 15, 1857, the said proposed act passed both branches of the Legislature and became a law, see Chapter 511 of laws, 1857. This is a very important enactment, in all its bearings upon the County of Kings.

On Dec. 30, B. N. Booth was elected a Superintendent by the Board of Supervisors (they having power under the statute to fill vacancies by election), in place of Wm. Rushmore, resigned.

On January 6th, 1857, the Keeper of the Penitentiary and Work-House reported that the number of prisoners committed was 1,454, viz.: 990 males, 464 females, an increase of 400 over the number, being committed during the preceding year. 885 of these were committed for drunkenness, 38 being drunk and disorderly.

January 20th, 1857, an interesting report was presented to the Board, showing conclusively that the County of Kings contributed larger amounts yearly for the support of the poor, than any other county in the State, except, perhaps, the County of New York.

Feb. 17th, \$35,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents for the Alms-House Account. On the same day, a committee of conference of the two Boards met, and considered the question of erecting a store house on the county farm, uniting in a report recommending such a building.

March 17th, \$25,000 were appropriated to the Account of the Superintendents for the benefit of the Alms-House.

A draft of a law for contracting the labor of convicts in the penitentiary, was submitted and forwarded to the Legislature for enactment. On the same day, plans and specifications were submitted for a store house on the county farm, at a cost of \$3,000, and the committee ordered to proceed immediately with its erection.

June 2d, 1857, a proposition received from the Aldermen of Brooklyn for leave to use the old Penitentiary, when vacated, for Truant and Vagrant children, was favorably considered, but not definitely acted upon.

Under the Act of the Legislature passed April 15th, 1857, entitled "An act relating to the purchase of supplies for the support of the Poor, and other inmates of the Public institutions of the County of Kings," the Board of Supervisors, on June 16th, 1857, proceeded to establish the "Contract System," for furnishing supplies for the said institutions. These resolutions are in the form of enactments, divided into 19 sections, the 1st section of which provided that, from and after the 1st Tuesday in August, 1857, all supplies for the institutions aforesaid should annually be purchased by contract; that ten days notice at least, shall be given before the 1st Tuesday in August of each and every year by the Superintendents in the daily papers published in the county, specifying the probable amount of each article, which will be required, the place of delivery on the county farm, what articles shall be delivered separately or included together; the probable time at which payments were to be made; the securities to be given, etc.; that sealed proposals were to be received at the county Treasurer's office.

Section 3d provides that no proposal shall be considered valid unless made in such forms, and in accordance with such regulations as the Board of Superintendents may adopt.

Section 6 provides that nothing shall be construed as forbidding the superintendents from purchasing from some one or more of their body, or by an agent to be designated by them, in open market, such articles as may be needed for the support of the poor and the inmates of the other institutions on the County Farm,

whenever necessary, during such period as contractors may neglect to comply with the provisions of their contracts. The enactments then proceed to regulate the prices of articles, and their relations to the markets, and the quality of the articles, designating what shall be regarded as necessary and appropriate.

Sections 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18 and 19 provide for the office of Store Keeper and his assistants, and his and their duties, the manner of their future appointment, and the amount of security each shall give, &c.

August 25, 1857. The annual report of the County Penitentiary shows that there had been expended for that institution during the year, commencing August 1st, 1856, and ending July 31st, 1857, \$40,772.39; that the number of prisoners in the Penitentiary, August 1st, 1856, was 92 males, 72 females; total, 164; the whole number received during the year ending July 31st, 1857, 675 males, 394 females; total, 1,233; number discharged, 770; deaths, 3; on hand at date of report, 191. Average number during the year ending August 1st, 1853, 53½; for the year ending August 1st, 1854, 89; for 1855, 152; for eight months, April 1st, 1856, 166; four months, August 1st, 1856, 159.

The whole cost for food during the year ending August 1st, 1857, was \$6,857.90. Add the estimated number of 8 persons, officers of the institution, permitted to use articles of food furnished for the prisoners free, to the 184½, the average number of prisoners, and it gives 192½ persons provided with food for one year at the cost of \$6,857.90, or of $.09\frac{774}{1000}$ cents per day.

The report further shows there had been expended for land in 1846-1847, \$9,584.76. The cost of the old Penitentiary buildings to January 1st, 1851, was \$3,704.37. For building expenses of new Penitentiary, January 1st, 1857, were \$190,414.55. Deduct cost of land and old buildings, \$13,355.28, leaving disbursed for new buildings \$177,059.27.

October 6, 1857. The annual report of the Superintendents was taken up and considered, which shows that the total receipts for the benefit of the Alms-House, Hospital and Lunatic Asylum, during the year ending July 31st, 1857, was \$243,999.40. The total expense, or total aggregate net costs of supporting the poor, was \$233,212.57. This amount, by certain credits, was reduced to \$201,461.86. The number of persons supported at the public institutions was largely diminished during the said year by the decreased number of foreign immigrants; and by the great vigilance exercised over the applicants for admission. The average number supported or relieved during the year ending July 31st, 1857, was 1,340; the cost of supporting these persons was, as we have seen, \$201,461.86, which, divided by the average number of inmates, gives the cost per person per year, \$150.34½; per week, \$2.89; being an increase over the previous year for each inmate, per year, \$13.04½; per week, 25 cents.

The report also shows a decrease of 402 in the number of persons supported this year.

November 17th, 1857. Proposals for the erection of a *dormitory building* on the Alms-House Farm were favorably received and referred to a committee for action. On the 8th of December plans and specifications, and estimate of expenses, for the erection of a three-story and cellar brick building, 124x34 feet, for a dormitory for the male paupers, was reported favorably; with recommendations to proceed immediately with the work.

December 22d, 1857. A draft of an Act providing for the election of the Superintendents of the Poor *by Districts* was presented and approved, and ordered sent to the coming session of the Legislature for the enactment of a law to that effect. December 29th, the official bonds of B. N. Booth and J. J. White, elected as Superintendents of the Poor, were presented. The penalty in the bonds of the said gentlemen was fixed at \$10,000 each, and they took their oath of office.

On April 1st the salaries of B. N. Booth and J. J. White were fixed at \$1,200 per year.

May 19th the sum of \$85,000 was appropriated to the use of the Superintendents of the Poor. June 2d. A recommendation favorable to the purchase of additional grounds, and the erection of a *Small-Pox Hospital* thereon.

August 3d, 1858, annual report shows the aggregate costs of the poor (including out-door relief) for the year ending August 1st, 1857, was \$233,212.37; for the year ending August 1st, 1858, \$192,079.77—the difference, \$41,132.60. The expense of supporting the poor at the Alms-House for the year ending August 1st, 1857, as per report of that year, was \$201,461.86; ditto for the year ending August 1st, 1858, \$158,604.66—difference, \$42,857.20. The average number of inmates for the year ending August 1st, 1857, was 1,340; August 1st, 1858, 1,495.

The above amount (\$158,604.66) for supporting the poor for the year ending July 31st, 1858, divided by 1,495, the yearly average, shows the yearly cost of each person was \$106.09; the weekly cost of each person was \$2.04—being a decrease from the previous year for each inmate per year of \$44.25; per week, 85 cents.

This report shows that the Poor Establishment was, on the year ending as above, in a most prosperous and satisfactory condition, with a few exceptions, such as the necessity of a Small-Pox Hospital, and a Dormitory for the male paupers; and for these there was a good prospect of an early relief. It states that the gradual increase of patients in the Lunatic Asylum points to an over-crowded state of that department. The report was signed by Superintendents James Voorhees, Henry E. Ripley, B. N. Booth, Charles W. Church, John J. White.

Edwin R. Chapin, M.D., elected Resident Physician to the County Hospital, reports as in that institution on the 1st day of August, 1857, 373 patients—169 males and 204 females. Admitted during the year, 2,299 1,226 males and 1,073 females; recovered, 1,498; improved, 440; unimproved, 149; died, 257; total discharged and died, 2,344; remaining July 31st, 1858, 3271—59 males, 168 females.

The report showed an increase of small-pox in the institution; that from August 1st, 1850, to August 1st, 1857, there had been 265 cases of small-pox, 35 of which were fatal. Of the diseases in the Hospital for the said year, there were 30 cases of delirium tremens, 2 of them fatal. Number of patients in the Hospital July 31st, 1858, 268—108 men, 160 women; 187 foreigners, 81 natives; and 57 employees.

The first annual report of the Matron of the Nursery, Mary Luscomb, was also presented, and is full of interest. It showed that in her department there were on the 1st of August, 1858, 111 boys and 103 girls; that there had been dur-

ing the year ending July 31st, 1858, 575 girls and boys. The condition of this institution was satisfactory beyond the most ardent hope of its friends.

The Keeper of the Penitentiary reported the expenses of the establishment for supplies of all kinds and repairs, exclusive of expenditures for new Penitentiary and salaries, at \$24,896.98. The number of persons in the institution on August 1st, 1857, 791; the number received during the year ending July 31st, 1858, 1,517, of which 1,008 were males, 509 females. There were 1,336 discharged during the year, 1 death and 6 escapes.

October 6th, 1858, the main building and wings of the Penitentiary were reported completed at a total expense of (including lands) \$200,531.53; deducting cost of land and old building, \$13,355.28, absolute cost of new building, \$187,175.25. The indebtedness of the supply account was \$1,275.02; on the building account, \$499.51—total floating debt, August 1st, 1858, \$1,775.53.

In December, John C. Vanderveer was elected one of the Superintendents of the Poor.

January 12th, 1859, Hiram Helmes was elected Keeper of the Penitentiary. On the same day, an act in relation to the commitment of lunatics and vagrants, and to provide for the appointment of a person to take affidavits in certain cases, was presented and ordered sent to the Legislature for enactment. The matter of selecting lands to be purchased for Alms-House purposes, from the Cortelyou estate, was sent to a committee, with directions to proceed with the purchase.

April 12th, a proposition was made and favorably reported upon for erecting a temporary building on the Alms-House Farm, to be used as a *Pest Hospital*, at an expense not to exceed \$2,000.

On the 13th of April, 1859, James C. Rhodes, late a Superintendent of the Poor, was charged with collecting monies in his official capacity, which he had not paid into the county treasury. The report recommended that an action be brought against him to recover the money in his hands, and that he be removed from office, which report was accepted.

August 2d, 1859, Dr. J. L. Zabriskie was appointed Physician to the Penitentiary for the ensuing year.

October 5th, 1859, annual report for the year ending July 31st, 1859, gives the total amount drawn by the Superintendents on the County Treasury for the year ending July 31st, 1858, was \$192,079.77; for the year ending July 31st, 1859, \$113,942.07; showing a decrease of \$78,137.70. The average number of inmates for the year ending July 31st, 1858, was 1,495; for the year ending July 31st, 1859, 1,085. Decrease, 410. The cost of each inmate supported during each year was: for the year 1858, \$106.09 per year, \$2.04 per week; for the year ending July 31st, 1859, \$90.43 per year, or \$1.74 per week, showing a reduction of supporting each inmate of \$15.66 per year, or 30 cents per week.

The amount expended for temporary relief during the year ending July 31st, 1858, was \$33,260.91; for the year ending July 31, 1859, was \$15,821.04. The whole number temporarily relieved during the year ending July 31st, 1858, was 32,940; for the year ending July 31st, 1859, was 19,972.

Dr. Thomas Turner, Physician of the County Hospital, for the year shows a total under treatment during that year, of 1,789; of these 229 died; total discharged and died, 1,552; remaining July 31st, 1859, 237. Of the 229 deaths, 71 (or nearly one-third) were caused by pulmonary consumption, a disease which has always largely prevailed in the hospital with unusually fatal results. There were 22 cases of delirium tremens, 4 of which were fatal.

Edward R. Chapin, M. D., Physician to the Lunatic Asylum, for the year, shows at that date 290 patients and 56 employes. Of the patients, 122 males and 168 females; whole number under treatment during the year, 455; discharged recovered, 86; improved, 49; unimproved, 10; died, 20; 213 of these patients were foreigners. The report shows that although it was found necessary to occupy the old Asylum, not only that, but the new one was already too full for comfort; because of the crowded state of both Asylums, it had been necessary to discharge a large number of the paying patients to make room for the steadily increasing number of beneficiaries. The Doctor therefore earnestly urges a larger extension of the Asylum according to plans which he recommends.

The report of the Matron of the Children's Nursery states that there were in her department on July 31st, 1859, 89 boys and 77 girls—total, 166. There were also 17 employes. This report is one of the most satisfactory of any of the reports presented this year.

December 20th, William Bennet and Henry E. Ripley, who had been elected Superintendents of the Poor, took their seats as such.

February 23d, 1860, plans and specifications for the extension of the Lunatic Asylum were presented.

August 6th, 1861, \$15,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor.*

August 6th, 1861, annual report, for the year ending July 31st, 1861, shows the total number born and admitted in the Alms-House 2,896; in the Hospital, 2,232; in the Asylum, 190; in the Nursery, 538, making a total 5,876. Total number boarded out, 83; the total number temporarily relieved, 21,023; the total number relieved and supported wholly or in part during the year ending July 31st, 1861, 28,082. The amount of temporary relief granted for the support of the poor for the year ending July 31st, 1861, was \$16,051.69.

Edward R. Chapin, Physician to the Lunatic Asylum for the year ending July 31st, 1861, reports the number of persons in the Asylum July 31st, 1860, at 190; under treatment, 498; discharged, 70; improved, 41; unimproved, 12; died, 45; whole number discharged, 168; patients remaining in the Asylum July 31st, 1861, 330; number of employes, 64; total number of foreigners, 237.

During the last year the Asylum was fully completed by the addition of the two wings contemplated. As it is now complete, a brief account of this building seems proper and necessary. "It stands on a richly culti-

*From the time of the organization of the Superintendents of the Poor in 1827, and the organization of the County Poor Establishment, down to August 5th, 1860, the whole department was in a comparatively unsettled condition; the erection of numerous edifices, the changes incident thereto, and to the institution of new departments, improvements on the old, etc., rendered the history of the whole establishment interesting, although voluminous. It shows the gradual growth by which the present admirable Poor Establishment was reached. After the year 1861 the details will be brief, incidents less frequent, and the history will be confined to abstracts from the annual reports of the various departments.

vated plain four miles southeast from the City Hall in Brooklyn, and one mile east of the village of Flatbush. The edifice comprises the center building and four wings, and presents a front of 450 feet. The wings are each composed of an extension and transverse portion and transept. The transept is 86 feet deep, and forms considerable projections in front and rear of the extensions, which are 38 feet wide. The center building and the four transepts are five stories; and the connecting extensions are four stories high, including the basements. The buildings are constructed of brick, with brown stone water-tables, window-caps and sills, and are roofed with tin. A large dome surmounts the center building, and upon each of the four transepts there is a handsome cupola. A heavy cor-

munificent, enlightened and charitable people have added to it since that time will be referred to hereafter.

The report of Rachel A. Newton, the new Matron of the Children's Nursery, for the year ending July 31st, 1861, shows that the total number remaining at date (July, 1860) was 216—115 males, 101 females; received up to date of present report, 558—254 boys, 304 girls. Total remaining at date of last report, and since received, 774—369 boys, 405 girls; left the nursery, 483; died, 65—31 boys, 34 girls; remaining July 31st, 1861, 226.

Annual report of the Superintendents of the Poor, ending July 31st, 1862, shows that the number of persons remaining in the institutions at date of last report (July 31st, 1861) was; in Alms-House, 505; Hospital, 296; Asylum, 336; Nursery, 219—1,356. Total number born and admitted during the year in the same institutions, 429; total number of foundlings, etc.,



LUNATIC ASYLUM.

nice of galvanized iron, ornamented with square dentals of the same material, painted in imitation of brown stone, surmounts the entire structure, contributing much to the architectural effect. The entrance to the center building is protected and ornamented with an iron portico. The chapel is 46x24 feet and 25 feet high, with fixed seats or slips for 140 patients, and also an elevated gallery containing an organ and seats for strangers."

The external appearance of this building is grand and imposing. Space will not permit us to enter into any description of its interior; suffice it to say that in all respects it compares with the exterior, and in its arrangement, regulation and detail, reflects the highest credit upon the County of Kings. We are speaking of it, as it was in 1861. The improvements which a

boarded out, 73; total number temporarily relieved, District No. 1, 10,203; soldiers' families, 3,862; District No. 2, 6,442; soldiers' families, 3,924; District No. 3, 439; District No. 4, 111. Total, 24,981. Whole number relieved or supported wholly or in part during the year ending July 31st, 1862, 30,439. The whole net costs to the Superintendents of the Poor for supporting the poor of the County for the year ending July 31st, 1862, was \$131,078.24.

Dr. Thomas Turner, Physician of the Kings County Hospital, for the year ending July 31st, 1862, reports remaining in the Hospital August 1st, 1861, 341 patients. There had been admitted during the year 1,809—920 males, 881 females. Total number under treatment, 2,150—males, 1,092; females, 1,058; discharged recovered, 1,208; improved, 322; unimproved, 64; died, 251—152 males, 99 females; remaining July 31st, 1862, 305—140 males, 165 females.

Dr. Edward R. Chapin, Physician to the Lunatic Asylum for the same year, reports whole number patients in that institution July 31, 1861, as 330; admitted during the year, 204

—91 males, 113 females; whole number under treatment during the year, 534; 228 males, 306 females; recovered, 87; improved, 42; unimproved, 7; died, 32—14 males, 18 females; whole number discharged, 168; remaining July 31st, 1862, 366—males, 143; females, 223; whole number of employes, 63; of the whole number 265 were foreigners.

The contract system, or plan of letting out the labor of prisoners in the Penitentiary had, at this date, been in successful operation for several years, and was productive of a very remunerative income. For the month of October, the monies received on account of convict labor, was \$1,307.15; the total amount of expenses incurred during the year was \$25,939.74.

The Annual Report of Rachel A. Newton, Matron for the County Nursery, for the year ending July 31, 1862, shows that, on the 1st day of August, 1861, there were remaining 223; and there have been since admitted 489; total remaining and admitted, 712; of whom there have left, 405; of whom there have died, 50; total, 455; remaining July 31, 1862, 257..

On February 5, 1863, the salary of James Fitzgerald, recently elected a Superintendent of the Poor, was fixed by law at \$1,500 per year, and the salaries of the Superintendents of the 3d and 5th Districts were fixed at \$740.

On the 19th of February, leave was granted the Superintendents to remove the building known as the *old* Lunatic Asylum, to the rear of the new Asylum, at an expense not to exceed \$6,500; said amount to include all expenses for repairs.

On August 4, 1863, Dr. John L. Zabriskie was appointed Physician to the Penitentiary.

August 5, 1863. Annual Report of the Superintendents for the year ending July 31, 1863, shows that the whole number of persons remaining in the institutions on the 1st day of August, 1862, was: In Alms-House, 351; in Hospital, 255; in Asylum, 375; in Nursery, 249. Total, 1,230. Total number admitted into these institutions during the year was 3,679; total number of foundlings boarded out, 69; total number temporarily relieved, 16,901; making the whole number wholly, or in part, supported during the year ending July 31, 1863, 22,879. Total amount disbursed during the year ending July 31st, 1863, was \$158,244.01. Signed, Ditmas Jewell, J. C. Day, William E. Muchmore, James Fitzgerald, William Bennet, Superintendents of the Poor.

Dr. Thomas Turner, Physician to the County Hospital for the year, reports that there were in the Hospital, August 1, 1863, 305 patients; admitted during the year, 2,023; 935 males, 1,038 females; recovered, 1,094; improved, 297; unimproved, 87; died 258; 147 males, 101 females; total discharged and died, 1,736; remaining, July 31, 1863, 287.

Edward R. Chapin, M.D., Physician to the Lunatic Asylum, for the year, reports 366 patients in the Asylum on July 31, 1862; males, 144, females, 222; admitted during the year, 206; 79 males, and 127 females; whole number under treatment, 572; recovered, 76; improved, 40; unimproved, 11; died, 49; 23 males, 26 females; whole number discharged, 176; remaining July 31, 1863, 396; 150 males, 246 females; 64 employees.

The Matron to the Kings County Nursery reports for the year: remaining as per last Annual Report, 233 children, 27 adults; admitted during the year, 406 children, 59 adults;

total remaining and admitted, 639 children, 89 adults; of whom there have left, 394 children, 62 adults; of whom there have died, 52 children; total discharges and deaths, 446 children, 62 adults; remaining July 30, 1863, 193 children, 24 adults.

February 8, 1864. The salaries of John Delaney and Morris H. Roberts, recently elected for the 1st and 2d Districts, were fixed at \$1,500.

On June 23, 1864, the salary of James Fitzgerald, Superintendent of the Poor for the 3d District, was fixed at the rate of \$2,000 per annum.

Annual Report of the Superintendents for the year ending July 31, 1864: Remaining in the Alms-House, on July 31, 1863, 404; Hospital, 287; Nursery, 218; Lunatic Asylum, 460; total, 1,369; admitted during the year, including all these institutions, 4,517; discharged and died, 4,290; remaining, July 31, 1864, in Alms-House, 471; Hospital, 325; Nursery, 322; Asylum, 478; total, 1,596. Temporarily relieved, 20,742; foundlings boarded out, 95; institutions, 5,886; relieved, wholly or in part, for the year ending July 31, 1864, 26,724. Total amount of disbursements for the year, \$245,617.54.

Dr. Thomas Turner, resident Physician of County Hospital, for the year ending July 31, 1864, reports as remaining in the Hospital, August 1, 1863, 287 patients; 114 males, 173 females; admitted during the year, 2,314; 1,063 males, 1,246 females; whole number under treatment, 2,601; recovered, 1,542; improved, 380; unimproved, 58; died, 295; 149 males, 146 females; total discharged and died, 2,275; total remaining, July 31, 1864, 326; 135 males, 191 females.

Dr. Edward R. Chapin, Physician of the Lunatic Asylum reports: patients in the Asylum, July 31, 1863, 396; 151 males, 245 females; admitted during the year, 209; 99 males, 110 females; whole number under treatment, 605; 250 males, 350 females; recovered, 106; improved, 35; unimproved, 12; died, 39; whole number discharged, 191; remaining, July 31, 1867, 414; 168 males, 246 females; 66 employees.

Emily Muckridge, newly appointed Matron of the County Nursery for the same year, reports: remaining in the Nursery, July 31, 1863, 217; 196 children, 24 adults; admitted during the year, 587; 576 children, 11 adults; 767 children, 35 adults; total, 804; of whom there were discharged, 408 children, 6 adults; total, 414; died, 63 children; discharged and died, 471 children, 6 adults; total, 477; remaining July 30, 1854, 299 children, 29 adults; total, 327.

February 16, 1865. John E. Cammeyer was elected one of the Superintendents of the Poor, by the Supervisors, to fill the vacancy occasioned by the death of Superintendent Morris H. Roberts.

Early in March, 1868, an effort was made to remove the Rev. Mr. McKillup, who had been for some years Chaplain of the Penitentiary. After a full hearing of the matter, it was decided that "a change is not desirable or necessary."

The Annual Report of the Superintendents for the year ending July 31, 1865, begins with a feeling allusion to the death of Dr. THOMAS TURNER, so long identified with the Poor Establishment of the county, and, to use the language of the Report, "whose faithful devotion to it cost him his life."

He was widely known, greatly beloved, and deeply lamented. Dr. Turner's successor was Dr. R. CRESSON STILES, a gentleman of high character, thorough medical education, highly esteemed by his professional brethren,

and devoted to his profession. The department, says the Report, has been admirably managed by him since the death of Dr. Turner. The Report also speaks in highest terms of Dr. EDWARD R. CHAPIN, "who manifests a rare combination of qualifications in the continued success with which the affairs of the institution have been administered." The Report also announces a change in the government of the Nursery, in the appointment of Mr. John Driscoll, "a gentleman of well-known worth and benevolence," to the control of the institution, under the title of Keeper; "his amiable wife taking the matronly care of the children. A decided improvement in the management of that charity fully justifies the new arrangement."

The report further shows that there were remaining in the institution on the 1st day of August, 1864, 1,586 inmates, viz.: Alms-House, 474; Hospital, 326; Nursery, 304; Asylum, 483; Total, 1,586.

During the year there were admitted and born, Alms-House, 2,054; Hospital, 3,117; Nursery, 687; Asylum, 263; total, 6,121. Discharged and died, Alms-House, 1,930; Hospital, 3,073; Nursery, 654; Asylum, 245. Remaining, July 31, 1865, Alms-House, 598; Hospital, 370; Nursery, 337; Asylum, 500; total, 1,805. Relieved and supported during the year ending July 31, 1865, 30,098; total amount of paid bills, \$396,540.04; total amount of receipts, \$21,565.98.

Balance, being net cost of the department for year ending July 31st, 1865, \$374,974.06.

R. Cresson Stiles, M.D., Physician of the Kings County Hospital, reports as remaining in the institution, July 31, 1864, 326 patients; 3,117 were admitted during the year, making the whole number under treatment, 3,443, which is 842 more than were treated in the year previous. Of these, 2,085 were discharged, recovered; 540 were discharged, improved of chronic disorders; 112 were removed or discharged without improvement; 336 died; there were, at the date of Report, 370. There were 381 cases of small-pox treated at the Hospital; of the whole number, 334 recovered, and 47 died; 100 cases were of infants, or children under twelve years of age; 69 cases of pulmonary consumption, and 1 case of hydrophobia was reported, which proved fatal on the fourth day of the disease.

From Kings County Lunatic Asylum, Edward R. Chapin, M. D., reports: patients in the Asylum, August 1, 1864, 414; admitted during the year, 263; whole number under treatment, 677; discharged, recovered, 56 males, 54 females; total, 110; discharged, improved, 24 males, 22 females; total, 46; discharged, unimproved, 11 males, 3 females; total, 14; died, 32 males, 43 females; total, 75; whole number discharged, 123 males, 122 females; total, 245; remaining July 31, 1865, 186 males, 246 females; total, 432; number of employees, 68; number of foreigners admitted during the year, 161; natives, 102.

The Keeper of the Kings County Nursery reports its condition for the year ending July 31, 1865: There were remaining, July 31, 1864, children, 172 males, 102 females; adults, 4 male, and 26 female; total, 304; admitted during the year, children, 333 males, 289 females; adults, 6 males, 59 females; total, 687; making a total of 991; there were discharged during the year, children, 278 males, 254 females; adults, 6 males, 56 females; total, 594; died, children, 36 males, 23 females; adults, 1 female; total, 60; making a total in all of

654; remaining, July 31, 1865, children, 191 males, 114 females; adults, 4 males, 28 females; total, 337.

The Annual Report of the Keeper of the Kings County Penitentiary* for the year ending July 31, 1865, shows: the number of prisoners confined in the Penitentiary on August 1, 1864, was 179; 73 males, 106 females; number of prisoners committed during the year was 728; 333 males, 395 females; number discharged, 743; 329 males, 414 females; number of deaths, 6; number on hand, July 31, 1865, 203; 100 males, 103 females; the average number during the year, 194½; total cost of food consumed during the year was \$18,460.67; the whole expense of the prison during the year was \$35,937.16; the amount received from the labor of convicts was \$2,420.70; the increase of expenses over the preceding year was \$9,654.88.

On March 9th, 1866, the initiatory steps were taken to purchase for the county the two parcels of land lying, the one on the north and the other on the south side of the county property, in Flatbush.

Proposed law for abolishing the office of Superintendents of the Poor, and the establishment in its place of a commission, to be known as the "Board of Commissioners of Charities."

—For a long time many of the leading citizens of the county of Kings had believed that the abolishment of the office of Superintendents of the Poor, and the establishment of some other mode of conducting the Poor Establishment of the county, would tend largely to the advantage and prosperity of all branches of the establishment; that the Board of Superintendents was not only inefficient, but to a certain degree corrupt in its management; that it had created a system of favoritism, which should not be permitted; that it was more or less governed by rings and cliques. When the Board of Supervisors and Superintendents of the Poor learned of the proceeding of the Legislature touching the abolishment of the office of Superintendents, they drew up a strong remonstrance, in which the proposed legislation was characterized as "improper and uncalled for." This was adopted by over a two-thirds vote of the Board of Supervisors; thus the matter ended for the present.

April 2d, 1866, there was placed to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor the sum of \$250,000; and an order was also made directing that all such monies as had been, or might be, received during the year for violations of the Excise law be also placed to the credit of the Superintendents.

April 12th, the draft of an act to enable the Superintendents of the Poor to borrow money for the use of the poor of the county was forwarded to the Legislature, with a recommendation for its early passage. The County Treasurer was directed to draw from the contingent fund to the credit of the Superintendents the sum of \$25,000.

On August 2d, the Board of Superintendents presented

*We have been unable to make any extracts from this officer's report for several years past, as no such report could be found in the records.

their annual account for the year ending July 31, 1866, by which it appears that, on January 1st, Dr. R. C. Stiles, who had served for one year as resident physician of the Alms-house and its departments with great acceptability, tendered his resignation, in order to enter on the practice of his profession in the city; but he did not fail in constant and regular attendance as one of the staff of consulting physicians. The warmest thanks of the Board were tendered him by the Board for his ability as a physician, and his disinterested attention to the medical services of the Hospital. Dr. TEUNIS SCHENCK was appointed Resident Physician, as the successor of Dr. Stiles. The report further shows that at the date of the last report, August 1st, 1865, there were remaining in the Alms-house, 598; Hospital, 370; Nursery, 337; Asylum, 500; total, 1,805. Admitted and born during the year—Alms-house, 2,617; Hospital, 3,135; Nursery, 699; Asylum, 243. The whole number remaining in the establishment, July 31, 1865, and the whole number admitted into all its departments during the year, was 8,499. The whole number discharged and died during the year, in Alms-house, 2,454; Hospital, 3,161; Nursery, 590; Asylum, 205; total, 6,410. Remaining in all the departments, July, 1866, 2,089. Temporary relief granted during the year to 27,758; Foundlings, etc., boarded out 120; Institutions, 8,499. Total number relieved or supported for the year ending July 31, 1866, 36,777. Total amount of bills paid, \$364,472.62. Total amount of receipts, \$27,645.27. Balance of net costs of the whole department for the year ending July 31, 1866, \$336,287.35.

EDWIN R. CHAPIN, M. D., Resident Physician of the Lunatic Asylum for the year ending July 31, 1866, reports that there were remaining in the Asylum, August 1, 1866, 186 males, 246 females; total, 432. Admitted during the year, 111 males, 132 females; total, 243. Whole number under treatment during the year, 267 males, 378 females; total, 675; recovered, 89; improved, 42; unimproved, 9. Died, 32 males, 33 females; total, 65. Whole number discharged during the year, 205; remaining, July 31, 1866, 198 males, 272 females; total, 470. Whole number of employees, 73. Of the patients admitted during the year, 167 were foreigners. There were married, males, 425; females, 521; total, 946. Single, males, 344; females, 351; total, 795. Unknown males, 23; females, 18; total, 41.

In his report, the Doctor says, "the time for a serious consideration for enlarging the Lunatic Asylum ought not to be any longer delayed; it has again become crowded to about the same degree it was when an extension to the building was proposed seven years ago. Subsequently the Asylum was enlarged by the addition of two wings; it yet lacks a wing at each extremity to reach the dimensions of the State Lunatic Asylum of New Jersey, after which design it was modeled. In the meantime it is absolutely necessary to make some temporary provision for the incoming excess of male patients."

TEUNIS SCHENCK, Resident Physician for the Kings County Hospital, reports as remaining in the Hospital, August 1, 1865, males, 156; females, 114; total, 370. Admitted during the year—Males, 1,651; females, 1,484; total, 3,135. Total number under treatment during the year, 1,807 males, 1,698 females; total, 3,505. Recovered, 2,319; improved, 399; unimproved, 77. Died—Males, 197; females, 169; total, 366. Total discharged and died during the year—1,647 males, 1,514 females; total, 3,161. Remaining July 31, 1866—160 males, 184 females; total, 344.

Dr. Schenck reports that consumption and diseases of the kidneys still claim, as they have in former years, the largest number of victims.

John Driscoll, Esq., Keeper of the Nursery, reports for the year ending July 31, 1866, as remaining on July 31, 1865—Children, 305; adults, 320; total, 337. Admitted during the year—Children, 635; adults, 64; total, 699. Total admissions—Children, 942; adults, 96; total of admitted, 1,036. Discharged during the year—Children, 495; adults, 57; total, 552. Died—Children, 38. Total discharged and died—Children, 533; adults, 57; total, 590. Remaining July 31, 1866—Children, 407; adults, 39; total, 446. The school for the children is reported to be one of the most profitable, pleasing and satisfactory departments of the establishment. Two Sunday schools were conducted in this institution, both of them subjects of congratulation to their conductors, and to all concerned in the Nursery.

Officers of the Alms-House this year: John C. Vanderveer, *Warden*; Sarah A. Vanderveer, *Matron*; Annie L. Hicks, *Cutter*; David W. Hoagland, *Steward*.

February 11th, 1867, the crowded state of the Lunatic Asylum was presented in a report, which attracted general interest. The report concludes by strongly urging the immediate enlargement of the Asylum, and recommends that an act be prepared and forwarded to the Legislature authorizing the county to borrow on its bonds a sum not exceeding \$30,000, payable in 1883, for the purpose of making additions to the Lunatic Asylum. The report shows that "the price of board in the Asylum for patients able to pay was \$5 per week; but \$4 was received from those who were unable to pay more. This entitled the patient to a diet a little superior to the ordinary fare. In no other respect is there any other distinction between the boarders and the county patients." The total receipts for board for the year ending February 18, 1867, was \$10,338.16."

A *Dime Savings Bank* had been established in the Lunatic Asylum about the year 1857, which, together with the Graham legacy, produced quite an income for minor expenses.

A reported, presented to the Board May 7th, 1867 says:

"It is proposed to devote the proceeds of the income for the coming year, from the Graham legacy, to the purchase of reading material for the Asylum and Hospital; but, inasmuch as some of the standard works, especially the *Waverly Novels*, in a lunatic asylum, need renewing, and as they are highly recommended by the officers of that institution, your committee thought it better to devote the next year's income to that purpose, and appropriate the money in the *Dime Savings Bank*, \$40, to the purchase of books for the Hospital; for books are the best companions for a class of insane persons—a class highly intellectual and cultivated—that they can have.

The required act authorizing the County of Kings to borrow money to erect an addition to the Lunatic Asylum of the said county, passed the Legislature April 22d, 1867. It permitted the county to borrow for that

purpose \$35,000, and to issue bonds therefor, with interest payable annually; principal to be paid in 1882. On the 23d of April, an act passed the Legislature authorizing the county to borrow money for the purpose of enlarging, or erecting an additional building for the care and charge of poor children of the county of Kings, the sum to be borrowed not to exceed \$75,000.

July 1st, 1867, the question of the prodigality of the Superintendents in disbursing the funds committed to them for the support of the Poor Establishment, again came before the public. The Superintendents made frequent charges that the Supervisors did not raise sufficient money to support the poor for the year; and, as there was a discrepancy of \$11,979.12 between the accounts of the Superintendents of the Poor and the County Treasurer, and other discrepancies in accounts, the Supervisors appointed a committee on July 7th to ascertain the cause of this alleged failure of funds, and these discrepancies, &c. This committee found, as they claimed, evidences of "chicanery" and "fraud" in the purchase of stores, etc. The report closed with this significant language:

"We have thus endeavored to set forth clearly, and without fear or favor, the cause of the deficiency in the amount raised for the support of the poor. The money has been squandered, and there is no money to support the lunatics, the sick, and the paupers in the Institution; and there is no surplus in any of the accounts that can be transferred over to the Superintendents of the Poor. The only recourse is to authorize the County Treasurer to borrow money, and apply to the next Legislature to authorize us to levy a tax in 1868 to pay it."

The foregoing report was unanimously adopted by the Board of Supervisors on July 7th, 1867.

Thus, rapidly, the way was being opened for the abolition of the office of Superintendents of the Poor in the county of Kings. It is impossible to determine the truth of the allegations brought against the Superintendents; neither is it our province. That their duties were onerous and difficult, in the highest degree, is certain.

The annual report of the Superintendents of the Poor for the year ending July 31st, 1867, shows that there were remaining at date of last report, July 31st, 1866, in almshouse, 745; hospital, 344; nursery, 446; asylum, 542; total, 2,077. Admitted during year—Almshouse, 2,179; hospital, 2,484; nursery, 548; asylum, 231; total, 5,460. Discharged and died—Almshouse, 2,422; hospital, 2,529; nursery, 556; asylum, 185; total, 5,692. Remaining July 31, 1867—Almshouse, 520; hospital, 299; nursery, 438; asylum, 588; total, 1,845. Number temporarily relieved and supported, either wholly or in part, for the year ending July 31, 1867, 32,185. Total amount of paid bills, \$395,659.19; receipts, \$28,286.29. Balance, \$367,372.90.

Tunis Schenck, M. D., physician of the County Hospital, reports that the proceeds of the Graham fund, which, for a number of years back, have been devoted to the use of the Asylum and the Almshouse, were this year expended in the purchase of books for the hospital, and that a very handsome library for the institution was being formed, which

promised to be of great value to the patients. The number of patients remaining in hospital, July 31, 1866—Males, 160; females, 184; total, 344. Admitted during the year—Males, 1,321; females, 1,163; total, 2,484. Total number under treatment—Males, 1,481; females, 1,347; total, 2,828. Discharged recovered—Males, 912; females, 841; total, 1,753. Discharged improved—Males, 236; females, 168; total, 404. Discharged unimproved—Males, 45; females, 29; total, 54. Died—Males, 176; females, 142; total, 318. Total number discharged and died—Males, 1,349; females, 1,180; total, 2,529. Total remaining, July 31, 1867—Males, 132; females, 167; total, 299. Total number under treatment year ending July 31, 1866, 3,505. Total number under treatment year ending July 31, 1857, 2,858. Decrease, 667.

Dr. Edward R. Chapin, Physician of the Lunatic Asylum for the same year (the tenth annual report of that institution), reports: There were patients in the Asylum, August 1, 1866—Males, 197; females, 273; total, 470. Admitted during the year—Males, 115; females, 116; total, 231. Whole number under treatment—Males, 312; females, 389; total, 701. Discharged recovered—Males, 37; females, 47; total, 84. Discharged improved—Males, 26; females, 14; total, 40. Discharged unimproved—Males, 5; females, 4; total, 9. Died—Males, 33; females, 19; total, 52. Whole number discharged—Males, 101; females, 84; total, 185. Remaining July 31, 1867—Males, 211; females, 305; total, 516. Number of employees, 72.

John Driscoll, Keeper of the County Nursery for the same year, reports:

Remaining July 31, 1866—Children, male, 265; female, 142; Adults, male, 6; female, 33; total, 446. Admitted during the year—Children, male, 276; female, 228; Adults, male, 3; females, 41; total, 548. Total remaining and admitted—Children, male, 541; female, 370; Adults, male, 9; female, 74; total, 994. Discharged during the year—Children, male, 254; female, 230; Adults, male, 2; female, 39; total, 525. Died—Children, male, 15; females, 15; Adults, male, 1; female, 0; total, 31. Total discharged and died—Children, male, 269; female, 245; Adults, male, 3; female, 39, total, 556. Remaining July 31, 1867—Children, male, 272; female, 125; Adults, male, 6; female, 35; total, 438. The school, together with the two Sunday schools, continued to be very prosperous.

On January 21st, 1858, a law was drafted by the Supervisors, authorizing the several courts in Kings county to send all prisoners, convicted and sentenced for a term less than five years, to the County Penitentiary. This act was sent to the representative of Kings county, with instructions to secure its legal enactment by the Legislature. At this time, and since the erection of the Penitentiary, the law was such that it could not receive prisoners sentenced for a term longer than six months.

On June 8th, 1868, the following resolution was presented to the Board of Supervisors by Supervisor Stillwell:

Whereas, various charges and insinuations have been made in this Board against the Superintendents of the Poor, therefore,

Resolved, that the special committee of this Board be instructed to inquire as to whether the Superintendents of the Poor, or either of them, have been guilty of any misconduct in office, making them liable to impeachment and removal from office.

Superintendent Howell then offered the following resolution as an amendment to the foregoing :

Resolved, That this Board do hereby impeach the Superintendents of the Poor, each and every of them, and that Frederick Scholes, Supervisor of 19th Ward, is hereby appointed manager of said action, with full power to send for persons and papers."

This amendment was rejected by a vote of 12 to 9; the question recurring on the resolution offered by Supervisor Stillwell was adopted by a vote of 16 to 5.

Thus we see what a bitter and exterminating war was being waged against the Superintendents of the Poor. But the latter sustained the contest with a degree of determination, ability and confidence that, up to this time, rendered them masters of the situation.

June 16th, 1868, a lengthy and very able report regarding the condition of the Almshouse was presented by a committee, who had made a very exhaustive examination of it, and of its inmates, its liabilities and its management. Several alterations were suggested, especially as to the matter of convict labor therein. Finally, the report recommended "that necessary steps should be immediately taken for the erection of *workshops* in sufficient numbers to employ all paupers in the Kings County Almshouse having trades; and, also, for the purchase of a piece of ground in addition to that already owned by the county for the employment of unskilled labor; and for the establishment of a dairy to supply the county buildings with milk—the same to be managed by pauper labor. This report was unanimously adopted by the Board. On August 4th, Dr. John L. Zabriskie, was elected, by acclamation, Physician for the County Penitentiary for the ensuing year. A resolution was also adopted that all medicines used in the Penitentiary ordered by the physician be paid for by the county. The Physician's salary was fixed at \$1,000 a year.

The annual report of the Superintendents of the Poor for the year ending July 31st, 1868, shows that the Lunatic Asylum was being enlarged, to meet the rapidly increasing number of patients demanding admission. The report also contains the following statement:

Remaining at date of last report: Almshouse, 520; Hospital, 299; Nursery, 438; Asylum, 516; total, 1,773. Admitted and born during the year: Almshouse, 2,404; Hospital, 2,314; Nursery, 532; Asylum, 250; total, 5,500. Total: Almshouse, 2,924; Hospital, 2,613; Nursery, 970; Asylum, 766; total, 7,273. Died and discharged during year: Almshouse, 2,253; Hospital, 2,297; Nursery, 494; Asylum, 234; total, 5,278. Remaining July 31st, 1868: Almshouse, 671; Hospital, 316; Nursery, 476; Asylum, 532; total, 1,995.

Total number relieved and supported, either wholly or in part for the year ending July 31, 1868, 44,734; total amount of paid bills, \$488,078.53; total amount of receipts, \$24,277.92.

Dr. Teunis Schenck, Physician to the County Hospital for the year ending July 31st, 1868, reported that the new building erected in the rear of the Hospital building had been completed, and was fully devoted to the purposes for which it was intended. It is a two-story brick building 56 x 24, entirely separated from the main building, and only con-

nected with it by a covered passage. It is supplied with a complete set of culinary apparatus, with a large range of most approved pattern, and finally, it was "a perfect and ample kitchen, with every convenience that could be devised." The report contains the following:

Remaining July 1st, 1867: Males, 132; females, 167; total, 299. Admitted during year: Males, 1,208; females, 1,106; total, 2,314. Total number under treatment: Males, 1,340; females, 1,273; total, 2,613. Discharged recovered: Males, 766; females, 778; total, 1,544. Discharged improved: Males, 275; females, 203; total, 478. Discharged unimproved: Males, 14; females, 23; total, 37. Died: Males, 146; females, 92; total, 238. Total died and discharged: Males, 1,201; females, 1,096; total, 2,297. Remaining July 31, 1868: Males, 139; females, 177; total, 316. Total number under treatment July 31, 1866, 3,505; total number under treatment July 31, 1867, 2,838; total number under treatment July 31, 1868, 2,613.

Dr. Edward R. Chapin, physician of the Lunatic Asylum for the same year, reported the additional wings of the asylum as nearly completed; that they were being constructed, from architectural necessity, much after the general plan of the other wings, though they are more extensive, and are improvements upon the old ones in regard to ventilation, the arrangement of the dormitories and many other minor details. The report also shows that several fine concerts have been given at the asylum with excellent effect; for, says the report, "music has a most happy effect upon the insane. It calms the excited, enlivens the oppressed, and soothes all." Dr. Chapin returns his thanks to the Graham fund for a very elegant set of the Waverly novels, the set obtained from the same source nine years previous having become nearly worn out. The report shows:

Patients in asylum August 1, 1867: Males, 211; females, 305; total, 516. Patients admitted during the year: Males, 113; females, 137; total, 250. Whole number under treatment: Males, 324; females, 442; total, 766. Discharged recovered: Males, 35; females, 56; total, 91. Discharged improved: Males, 28; females, 43; total, 71. Discharged unimproved: Males, 10; females, 6; total, 16. Died: Males, 33; females, 23; total, 56. Whole number discharged: Males, 106; females, 128; total, 234. Remaining July 31, 1868: Males, 218; females, 314; total, 532; employees, 74.

John Driscoll, keeper of the County Nursery, for the same year reports the addition to the building as rapidly progressing; that there has been a large increase in the number of the inmates during the past year. The number of inmates remaining July 31, 1867, were: Children, 272 males and 125 females; adults, 6 males and 35 females; total, 438. Admitted during year: Children, 279 male, 191 female; Adults, 12 male, 50 female; total, 532. Total remaining and admitted: Children, 551 male, 316 female; adults, 18 male, 85 females; total, 970. Discharged during year: Children, 229 male, 155 female; adults, 11 male, 46 female; total, 441. Died: Children, 26 male, 27 female; total, 53. Total during year: Children, 255 male, 182 female; adults, 11 male, 46 female; total, 494. Remaining July 31, 1868: Children, 296 male, 134 female; adults, 7 male, 39 female; total, 476.

By an act of the Legislature, passed February 25th, 1869, the Superintendents of the Poor, with the Almshouse Committee, were directed to classify the paupers of Kings County, putting all who were able to work without injury to themselves in the workhouse, retaining only the aged and infirm, and such persons as are unable to work in the Almshouse of said county; and upon the completion of the workhouse, by contract or

otherwise, provide employment for all paupers able to work.

July 16th, 1869, the Superintendents and Supervisors met at the Lunatic Asylum, to consider its overcrowded state; and, after a careful investigation, unanimously decided that it was absolutely necessary to enlarge the same at once. The following were the number of rooms in the old Asylum:

One reception room, 2 parlors, 2 offices, 6 sleeping rooms, 2 dining rooms, 3 store rooms, 1 kitchen, 1 laundry, 1 chapel. In the wings of the original building there were 192 single dormitories, 20 associated, 16 attendants' rooms, 20 parlors or sitting rooms, 16 dining rooms, 20 bath rooms, 16 clothes rooms; total number of rooms in old building, 300. In new extension, 112 single dormitories, or strong rooms, for violent patients; 80 single dormitories, 16 double dormitories, 16 parlors or sitting rooms, 8 attendants' rooms, 8 bath rooms, 8 clothes rooms, 6 dining rooms, 44 rooms in the basement not quite ready for occupancy. There were in the new wings 292 rooms, within 10 of the whole number in the old building, which old building cost the county about \$250,000, at a time when material and labor cost about one-fourth of the price it cost in 1867 and '68.

The extension of the new *Nursery* at this time was nearly completed; spacious playgrounds were set apart and ornamented for the use of the children, and everything prepared to make them a comfortable home.

On the 8th of May, 1869, an act passed the Legislature of the State authorizing the County Treasurer to borrow, on the credit of the county, the sum of \$75,000, for the purpose of erecting an addition to the Almshouse, and for the erection of a workhouse for the County of Kings.

The annual report of the Superintendents of the Poor for the year ending July 31st, 1869, shows the following: Remaining at date of last report: Almshouse, 671; Hospital, 316; Nursery, 476; Asylum, 532; total, 1,995. Admitted and born during the year: Almshouse, 2,090; Hospital, 2,693; Nursery, 452; total, 5,231. Total admitted to whole Poor-establishment, 7,516. Discharged and died during the year: Almshouse, 2,024; Hospital, 2,674; Nursery, 527; Asylum, 261; total, 5,485. Remaining July 31st, 1869: Almshouse, 737; Hospital, 335; Nursery, 401; Asylum, 557; total, 2,030. Total number relieved or supported, either wholly or in part, for the year ending July 31st, 1869, 40,381. Total amount of paid bills, \$477,542.37; total amount of receipts, \$23,392.95.

Dr. Teunis Schenck, Physician of the County Hospital, reports for the same year: Remaining in the Hospital July 31st, 1868: Males, 139; females, 177; total, 316. Admitted during year: Males, 1,464; females, 1,229; total, 2,693. Total under treatment: Males, 1,603; females, 1,406; total, 3,009. Discharged recovered: Males, 963; females, 835; total, 1,797. Discharged improved: Males, 303; females, 230; total, 533. Discharged unimproved: Males, 26; females, 29; total, 55. Died: Males, 159; females, 130; total, 289. Total discharged and died: Males, 1,450; females, 1,224; total, 2,674. Remaining July 31, 1869: Males, 153; females, 182; total, 335. Total number under treatment end of year 1866, 3,505; total number under treatment year ending July 31st, 1867, 2,828; total number under treatment year ending July 31st, 1868, 2,613; total number under treatment year ending July 31st, 1869,

3,009. The officers of the Hospital this year were: *Resident Physician*, Teunis Schenck, M. D.; *Assistant*, P. L. Schenck, M. D.; *Consulting Physicians*, John L. Zabriskie, M. D., Homer L. Bartlett, M. D., R. Cresson Stiles, M. D.; James Fitzgerald, *Steward*; Mrs. Ellen M. Martin, *Matron*; Mrs. B. Murphy, *Matron*, S. P. H.

Dr. Edward R. Chapin, Physician in Chief of the County Lunatic Asylum for the same year, reported that "additional wings to the Asylum, which were begun on the first day of May, 1868, and completed on the first day of July, 1869, gave the whole Asylum a frontage of 683 feet; lineal measure, 1,005 feet. The centre building and two wings were commenced during the fall of 1853, and finished in October, 1855; two additional wings of the same dimensions were commenced on the 18th of July, 1860, and finished in June, 1861. The new wings just completed are considerably larger than the old, each measuring 442 feet; each of the old 327 feet around the outer walls. The Asylum will now accommodate 700 patients. A tower has been erected adjoining the engine-house for the introduction of pure air into the buildings; it is of brick, and 50 feet above ground surface, 8 feet below and 10 feet square. At the base is placed a fan, 10 feet in diameter and 7 feet in width; from the fan an underground duct, 7 feet high by 7 feet wide, and 20 feet long, extends to the air chamber under the centre building; the main steam and water pipes are laid in this passage. The air chamber is 12 feet wide by 7 feet wide, and extends to each end of the building. To prevent the rise of dust, the bottom of the chamber is covered with concrete, over which is placed a layer of cement."

The Lunatic Asylum of Kings county, at the time of which we are writing, was excelled in point of convenience, capacity, management and regard for the comfort and health of the patients, but by a very few in the State; and we may say, without affectation, by few in the nation. Its imposing architectural appearance has already been described.

Dr. Chapin appends to his report these statistics:

Patients in Asylum August 1st, 1868, 218 males, 314 females; total, 532; admitted during the year, 134 males, 152 females; total, 286; whole number under treatment, 352 males, 466 females; total, 818; discharged — recovered, 51 males, 55 females; total, 106; improved, 44 males, 36 females; total, 80; unimproved, 11 males, 11 females; total, 22; died, 21 males, 32 females; total, 53; whole number discharged, 127 males, 134 females; total, 261; remaining July 31st, 1869, 225 males; 332 females; total, 557; number of employees, 81.

The annual report for the same year gives as remaining July 31st, 1868, 430 children, 46 adults; total, 476; admitted during the year, 406 children, 46 adults; total, 452; total remaining and admitted, 836 children, 92 adults; total, 928; discharged during the year, 452 children, 46 adults; total, 498; died, 29 children; total, 29; total discharged and died, 481 children, 46 adults; total, 527; remaining July 31st, 1869, 355 children, 46 adults; total, 401; decrease during the year, 75. The salary of Francis McNeeley, the Keeper of the Penitentiary, was on August 1st, 1869 increased to the sum of \$4,000 per annum.

We should have added that on September 23d, according to an act of the Legislature of 1857, chap. 511, sec. 3, of the session laws of that year, the County Treasurer was directed to issue certificates of indebtedness not exceeding \$100,000, and to give his official bond for the same, payable nine months from date, the money to be placed to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor.

The history of the transactions of the Superintendents of the Poor, and of the poor establishment of the county, for the year ending July 31st, 1870, and of the year ending July 31st, 1871, are so unimportant and so few that we shall not make mention of many of them, especially as the abstracts from the annual reports of the different departments which we present give a fair history of their condition during that time. It is, however, proper to add that there was a growing determination on the part of a large class of the community to have the office of Superintendents of the Poor abolished, and a Commission of Charities, &c., created in its place. On May 8th, 1870, \$80,000 was placed to the credit of the Superintendents of the Poor, and on the 3d of May \$28,000 was placed to their credit, to be expended in paying off debts and liabilities incurred on account of the new Alms-House, in course of erection.

On October 4th, 1870, it was ascertained that \$148,685 had been expended on the new Alms-House; the same was placed in the sole charge of the Superintendents by the committee.

The annual report of the Superintendents for the year ending July 31st, 1870, shows that there were remaining at date of last report in Alms-House, 737; Hospital, 335; Nursery, 401; total, 2,080. Admitted and born during the year, Alms-House, 2,216; Hospital, 3,394; Nursery, 539; Asylum, 314; total, 6,463. Total Alms-House, 2,953; Hospital, 3,729; Nursery, 940; Asylum, 871; whole total, 8,493. Died and discharged during the year: Alms-House, 2,206; Hospital, 3,354; Nursery, 512; Asylum, 270; total, 6,342. Remaining July 31st, 1870: Alms-House, 747; Hospital, 375; Nursery, 428; Asylum, 601; total, 2,151. Total number relieved, either wholly or in part, during the year ending July 31, 1870, 46,712. Total amount of paid bills, \$559,116.16; receipts, \$22,091.35. Signed, Henry Corr, Thomas Foran, Henry Seiler, John J. Scott, Cornelius Ferguson, Superintendents of Poor of Kings County.

Dr. Teunis Schenck, resident physician to the County Hospital, gives as remaining in Hospital July 31st, 1869, 153 males, 182 females; total, 335; admitted during the year,

1,813 males, 1,581 females; total, 3,394; total number under treatment, 1,966 males, 1,763 females; total, 3,729; discharged—recovered, 1,293 males, 1,232 females; total, 2,525; improved, 307 males, 174 females; total, 481; unimproved, 20 males, 23 females; total, 43; died, 183 males, 122 females; total, 305; total number discharged and died, 1,803 males, 1,551 females; total, 3,354; remaining July 31st, 1870, 163 males, 212 females; total, 375.

Dr. Edward R. Chapin, physician of the Lunatic Asylum, states that there were, on the 1st of August, 1869, in the Asylum, 224 males, 334 females; total, 558; patients admitted during the year, 130 males, 184 females; total, 314; whole number under treatment, 354 males, 518 females; total, 872; discharged—recovered, 57 males, 73 females; total, 130; improved, 20 males, 42 females; total, 62; unimproved, 10 males, 10 females; total, 20; died, 29 males, 29 females; total, 58; whole number discharged, 116 males, 154 females; total, 270; remaining July 31st, 1870, 238 males, 364 females; total, 602; number of employees, 83.

This was the thirteenth annual report of Dr. Chapin.

John Driscoll, Keeper of the County Nursery, shows there were remaining July 31st, 1869, 355 children, 46 adults; total, 401; admitted during year, 466 children, 73 adults; total, 539; total, 821 children, 119 adults; grand total, 940; total discharged during the year, 484; died, 28; discharged and died, 512; remaining July 31st, 1870, 428; showing an increase of 27 inmates during the year.

This year there was an annual report of the expenses of the Penitentiary for the year ending July 31st, 1870, showing that the total expenses that year were \$65,898.99. On November 10th, 1870, John Cunningham, Esq., was appointed Keeper of the Kings County Penitentiary for the term of three years, to date from November 1st, 1870.

We have now given the history of the Board of Superintendents of the Poor, from the creation of that office down to December 31st, 1870, a term of 43 years, and, we may say, down to April, 1871; for, between the rendition of the annual reports of the various departments under their charge, on the 14th of April, 1871, there is nothing recorded of sufficient importance to be inserted in this history.

On the 14th of April, 1871, *the office of Superintendents of the Poor in the County of Kings ceased to exist, by or under that name.*

By an act of the Legislature, passed on the 4th of April, 1871, the Superintendents of the Poor of Kings County were to be known and designated as the "COMMISSIONERS OF CHARITIES OF THE COUNTY OF KINGS."

THE COMMISSIONERS OF CHARITIES

OF THE

COUNTY OF KINGS, 1871.

The prejudice against the Board of Superintendents of the Poor on the one hand, and the efforts of the friends of that body on the other in its favor, was, for several years, the cause of a contest more or less intense. At length the act of April 14th, 1871, to which we have referred, gave a turn to the matter by establishing a Board known as the *Commission of Charities*. At first the advantage gained by the friends of that Commission was little more than nominal, excepting that it rendered that Board a corporation, the powers and immunities of which were very favorable to the friends of the Superintendents. The act creating the Board provides :

That the County Superintendents should hereafter be known by the above title, and all laws relating to the election and qualification for office of Superintendents of the Poor should be applicable to the new Commissioners; that the said Commissioners should each receive an annual salary of \$4,000, which should be a county charge ; that the said Commissioners should be a corporation by the above name, under which they might sue and be sued, and possess the usual powers of a corporation for public purposes; that they together should constitute a Board for the relief and support of the Poor of the County of Kings, and for the government, management, maintenance and direction of the premises commonly known as the County Farm, its several institutions and buildings, property and appurtenances, etc., etc., and for the employment, relief, support and government of the persons placed thereon, etc., in various official capacities, who should hold their positions during the pleasure of said Board, etc.; and that they should, from time to time, make such rules and by-laws as necessary, etc.; and that they should have power to purchase all such articles as shall be necessary to be used in and for the relief and support of the poor of the County of Kings, and should generally possess every power and authority now possessed by the Superintendents of the Poor of the County of Kings, etc. The act further directed the time and manner of advertising for proposals for all such articles as shall be necessary for the support of the poor; gives the Commissioners power to enlarge, add to, alter, or repair the buildings or property belonging to or connected with such institutions, or any of them, etc.; provides that the Commissioners shall present to the Board of Supervisors of Kings County an account of all moneys received and expended by them during the year, and an estimate of the amount which will be necessary for their use under this act for the ensuing year; and further, that no greater amount than \$550,000 should be levied or collected during any one year for the purpose of carrying out the provisions of this act; it also provides that none of the Commissioners or their subordinates should ever be, directly or indirectly, interested in any contract or in any purchase or sale of supplies or articles of any description, nor in any arrangement by which any pecuniary benefit shall result to himself; directs that every pauper inmate in the institution under charge of said Commissioners, whose age and health will permit, shall be employed in getting out and breaking stone, or in cultivating the grounds, or in repairing the property in charge of the

said Commissioners, or in manufacturing, or mechanical or other labor as they can perform ; also, that all buildings, land and property now under the control of the Superintendents of the Poor shall be used by said Commissioners for such purposes connected with their duties as they shall consider necessary or proper. On the 23d day of May, 1871, the sum of \$2,000 was appropriated to the use of the Commissioners for the purpose of fitting up the Gymnasium building in Brooklyn for offices and rooms for their use.

Immediately after its passage the Board began its duties, the Superintendents of the Poor already in office being members of the Board of Charities. At the annual election held November, 1871, Henry Wills and Cornelius Ferguson were elected Commissioners of Charities for the Third and Fifth Districts, being the first Commissioners of Charities elected in the county.

The first annual report of the Commissioners of Charities, together with the reports of the heads of the several departments under their control, was presented to the Supervisors at their annual meeting August 1st, 1871.

The report begins with an interesting table, showing the net expenses for the several classes cared for during the six years preceding the report, together with the average cost and probable per capita tax on the population of the county :

Year.	Estimated Population.	Net Cost for all Purposes.	Total Relieved and Supported.	Average Cost for Each Person.	Per Capita Tax on Population.
1866	312,000	\$336,827.25	36,257	\$92.80	\$1.06
1867	338,000	367,372.90	32,185	114.40	1.08
1868	362,000	463,800.61	44,734	103.40	1.02
1869	381,000	454,149.42	40,381	112.40	1.01
1870	406,000	537,024.81	46,712	114.90	1.03
1871	440,000	490,596.70	44,892	107.57	1.10

So far as the detail of cost is considered, this exhibit does not show an alarming increase for the support of the poor in the county from 1866 to 1871. In a period of six years the county had only advanced on the per capita tax four cents, while in 1867 it nearly reached the figures of 1871, and the cost of temporary relief during the same period was gradually reduced.

The report says: " We propose, this coming winter, to so manage as to bring all applicants for relief personally before us; to this end the city will be divided into eight districts by wards, a proper person will be selected for each, and no relief will be given unless reported worthy by the visitor assigned, who will be compelled every ninety days to re-examine his report."

The report contains the following table:

	Alms-house.	Hospital.	Nursery.	Asylum.	Total.
Remaining at date of last report..	747	375	428	601	2,151
Admitted and born during the year	2,121	3,962	577	355	7,015
Died and discharged during the year.....	2,204	3,991	572	315	7,082
Remaining July 31, 1871	664	346	433	641	2,084

Temporary relief: District No. 1, 14,249; No. 2, 12,133; No. 3, 8,220; No. 4, 580; No. 5, 476; number relieved, 35,658; foundlings, etc., boarded out, 68; institutions, 9,166; total number relieved, either wholly or in part, during the year ending July 31st, 1871, 44,892; average number in the institutions during year, 2,456; the highest number in the institutions during the year was on the 14th of February, 1871, 2,783; the lowest number on the 19th of July, 1871, 2,133; total amount of paid bills, \$512,128.74; total amount of receipts, \$21,532.04.

This report is signed by Henry Corr, Thos Foran, Henry Seiler, John Scott and Cornelius Ferguson, Commissioners.

Dr. Tennis Schenck, physician of the County Hospital, reports the results of treatment, during the year ending July 31st, 1871, as follows: Remaining July 31st, 1870, males, 163; females, 212; total, 375; admitted during the year, males, 2,166; females, 1,893; total, 4,059; total number under treatment, males, 2,329; females, 2,105; total, 4,434; discharged recovered, males, 1,496; females, 1,439; total, 2,935; discharged improved, males, 341; females, 242; total, 583; discharged unimproved, males, 22; females, 19; total, 41; died, males, 305; females, 224; total, 529; total number discharged and died, males, 2,164; females, 1,924; total, 4,088; remaining July 31st, 1871, males, 165; females, 181; total, 346; total number for the year ending July 31st, 1866, 3,505; for the year ending July 31st, 1867, 2,808; for the year ending July 31st, 1868, 2,613; for the year ending July 31st, 1869, 3,009; for the year ending July 31st, 1870, 3,792; for the year ending July 31st, 1871, 4,434, an increase of 642 over the total number of last year.

Dr. Edward R. Chapin, physician of the Lunatic Asylum, acknowledges his indebtedness to Mr. Gilbert Hicks, custodian of the Graham Fund, for valuable reading matter presented to the Asylum during the year, and to the proprietor of the *Brooklyn Eagle* for two copies of that paper furnished daily to the Asylum. He reports, for the year ending July 31st, 1870, patients in Asylum August 1st, 1870, males, 238; females, 364; total, 602; patients admitted during year, males, 152; females, 203; total, 355; total under treatment, males, 390; females, 567; total, 957; discharged recovered, males, 47; females, 56; total, 103; discharged improved, males, 36; females, 49; total, 85; discharged unimproved, males, 24; females, 28; total, 52; died, males, 25; females, 50; total, 75; total discharged, males, 132; females, 183; total, 315; remaining July 31st, 1871, males, 258; females, 384; total, 642; number of employees, males, 32; females, 44; total, 76.

John Driscoll, Keeper of the Nursery Department, reported especially as to the school connected with the Nursery. The whole number of children who attended this school during the year was 463, of whom 322 were boys, 141 girls; the average daily attendance during the year was 275. Of the total number who attended for any length of time, 84 studied geography, history and punctuation; 268 studied tables and arithmetic; 187 learned to write with a pen, and 81 to form figures and letters on slates; 352 studied reading and spelling, and 187

learned the alphabet and how to spell easy words on tablets. The number of children admitted to the Nursery during the year ending July 31, 1871, was:

	CHILDREN.		ADULTS.		TOTAL.
	Male.	Female.	Male.	Female.	
Remaining July 31st, 1870.....	257	121	11	39	428
Admitted during the year.....	308	213	8	48	577
Total remaining and admitted...	565	334	19	87	1,005
Discharged during the year.....	274	186	8	53	521
Died.....	29	22	..	..	51
Total discharged and died.....	303	208	8	53	572
Remaining July 31st, 1871.....	262	126	11	34	433

At this time the officials under the Commissioners of Charities were: Dr. Tennis Schenck, resident physician of the *Kings County Hospital*; Dr. P. L. Schenck, *assistant resident physician*; Dr. J. L. Zabriskie, H. L. Bartlett, M.D., R. C. Stiles, M.D., and John A. Brady, M.D., *consulting physicians*; James Fitzgerald, *steward*; Mrs. Elinor Martin, *matron*. Dr. Edward R. Chapin, resident physician of the *Lunatic Asylum*; Dr. C. F. McDonald, *assistant*; James F. Scott, *steward*, and Mrs. M. E. Scott, *matron*. John Driscoll, keeper of the *Nursery*; Mrs. C. M. Driscoll, *matron*; Charles McLaughlin, *teacher*; C. L. Phelps, *assistant teacher*; Aaron J. Michaels, *store-keeper*; John A. Murtha, *assistant store-keeper*. The clergy of the county, although not officially connected with its poor establishment, so benevolently tendered their services that one might have easily supposed they were conscientiously and devotedly discharging their duties as official chaplains thereof.

Hostility to the new Board of Commissioners of Charities soon began to exhibit itself; the enemies of the old Board of Superintendents insisting that there were too many elements of the old Board existing in the new; and, early in February, 1872, a bill was introduced into the Legislature providing for the formation of a *Board of Charities and Corrections*. It was suggested in the said bill to place the Kings County Penitentiary under the control and management of the proposed Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections, and to make other sweeping changes in the management of the Poor establishment of the county. This measure was violently opposed; and, on April 29, 1872, a remonstrance was adopted by the Supervisors and Superintendents against the intended change. The bill favoring this reform was, however, ultimately defeated in the Legislature for that time.

The annual report of the Commissioners of Charities for the year ending July 31, 1872, presented August 6th, congratulates the public that from an average of the different years from 1865 to 1872, there has been a reduction on the per capita tax of 20½ cents, and an advance in the aggregate total in seven years of only \$8,651.97. Taking into consideration the increase in the population, it was, indeed, a source of gratification that the expenses of the department had been kept within the amount appropriated to the said Commissioners. They represented that the sum of \$400,000 might answer all the requirements for the then ensuing year, and earnestly urged the enlargement of the hospital, by the erection of an additional wing. The following is the annual tabulated report of the persons in the Poor establishment for the year ending July 31, 1872 :

Remaining at date of last report, almshouse, 664; hospital, 346; nursery, 433; asylum, 642; total, 2,085; admitted and born during the year, almshouse, 1,768; hospital, 4,198; nursery, 581; asylum, 367; total, 6,914; died and discharged during year, almshouse, 1,869; hospital, 4,131; nursery, 602; asylum, 3,25 total, 6,927; remaining July 31, 1872, almshouse, 563; hospital, 418; nursery, 412; asylum, 684; total, 2,072; temporary relief, 22,807; foundlings, etc., boarded out, 56; institutions, 8,999; total number relieved, wholly or in part, during the year ending July 31, 1872, 31,862; average number in the institutions during the year, 2,413; highest number during year was on April 3d, 2,821; lowest number during year was on July 3d, 2,026; total amount of paid bills, \$400,951.22; total amount of receipts, \$17,325.19.

The Board of Commissioners of Charities this year consisted of Henry Corr, Thos. Foran, Henry Wills, John J. Scott, Cornelius Ferguson.

Dr. P. L. Schenck, physician to the County Hospital for the fiscal year ending July 31, 1872, reports :

Remaining July 31, 1871, males, 165; females, 181; total, 3,346; admitted during the year, males, 2,357; females, 1,841; total, 4,198; total under treatment, males, 2,522; females, 2,022; total, 4,544; discharged recovered, males, 1,620; females, 1,270; total, 2,890; discharged improved, males, 280; females, 180; total, 460; discharged unimproved, males, 54, females, 64; total, 118; died, males, 384; females, 279; total, 663; total discharged and died, males, 2,338; females, 1,793; total, 4,131; remaining July 31, 1872, males, 184; females, 229; total, 413; total under treatment for the year ending July 31, 1872, 4,544; total under treatment for the year ending July 31, 1871, 4,434.

It will be seen by the above that there was an increase of 110 over the number treated last year. Of those discharged, 2,890, or 64 per cent. recovered; that 460, or 10 per cent., improved; that 118, or 3 per cent., did not improve; 663, or 14 per cent., died. The Doctor's report states that the small-pox prevailed to a fatal extent in the hospital during most of the year; that the total number admitted to the Small-pox Hospital during the year was 1,691, of whom 110 were mothers, acting as nurses for their children sick with the disease; 292 died of the disease; that of the 4,544 admitted to the hospital during the year, 3,535 were foreigners. The number of births in the hospital during the year was 142. The number of births in the hospital since August 1, 1852, is 2,499, 39 cases of twin births. Of these 1,533 of the mothers were from Ireland, 201 from Germany, 26 from Scotland, 553 from United States, 86 from England, etc. Of these mothers, 1,227 were married; 1,003 unmarried; 13 were widows. The total number of patients admitted to the hospital since August 1st, 1851, to July 31st, 1872, was 58,958.

Dr. Edward R. Chapin, physician of the Lunatic Asylum for the year ending July 31st, 1872, reported :

Patients in Asylum August 1, 1871, males, 258; females, 384; total, 642; patients admitted during the year, males, 168; females, 199; total, 367; whole number under treatment, males, 426, females, 583; total, 1,009; discharged recovered, males, 61; females, 64; total, 125; discharged improved, males, 33; females, 37; total, 70; discharged unimproved, males, 25; females, 31; total, 56; died, males, 40; females, 34; total, 74; whole number discharged, males, 159; females, 166; total, 325; remaining July 31st, 1872, males, 267; females, 417; total, 684; number of employees, males, 33; females, 46; total, 79.

The Doctor strongly recommended that the basement under the new wing, occupied by females, which was left unfinished when the building was enlarged three years before, should be immediately finished, as the room was very much needed.

The report of Mr. John Driscoll, keeper of the Nursery, for the year ending July 31, 1872, reported :

	CHILDREN.		ADULTS.		TOTAL.
	M.	F.	M.	F.	
Remaining July 31, 1871.....	262	126	11	34	433
Admitted during year.....	318	196	15	52	581
Total remaining and admitted.....	580	322	26	86	1,014
Discharged during year.....	304	174	17	53	548
Died during the year.....	23	31	....	....	54
Total discharged and died.....	327	205	17	53	602
Remaining on July 31, 1872.....	253	117	9	33	412

Of this total number in the Nursery during the year, 323 boys and 116 girls were attending the school in the institution; 79 studied reading, writing and spelling, punctuation, history, geography and arithmetic; 164 studied reading, writing, spelling and tables; 196 learned the alphabet and how to spell easy words. During the year there were 185 promotions. The ladies of the "Helping Hand Society," of Brooklyn, viz., Mrs. Wilder, Mrs. Pierce, Mrs. Pitts, Mrs. Brown, Mrs. Rand, and the Misses Decker, Wilder, Barbor and Chadwick, were warmly commended in the report for their kind and generous attention to the pupils; as were also Mrs. Johnson and her nieces, the Misses Johnson, for pleasing, tasteful and appropriate Christmas gifts, story books, confectionery and other articles highly gratifying to the little ones.

At the annual election held in November, 1872, John Cunningham and Stephen H. Powell were elected Commissioners of Charities for the County of Kings, and on December 23 their bonds were duly approved.

The history of the transactions of the Board of Commissioners of Charities for the year ending July 31,

1873, outside of the annual report of the Board and of the resident physicians of the hospitals, and the keeper of the Nursery, is not sufficiently important to be given here.

The report speaks in the highest terms of the convenience and advantage derived from the completion of the new Almshouse; proposes other changes for the benefit of that institution; and complains of the want of power to detain a person in the Almshouse if he refuses to work.

They also animadvert strongly against the neglect of the authorities of Queens and Suffolk Counties to provide for the claims of their lunatics. "We have," says the report, "admitted a number of pay patients from these counties, not as a matter of right, but to meet, as far as possible, the claims of common humanity, but we shall soon be compelled to refuse admission to all persons not residents of our county under the full meaning of the law."

The following table shows the number of persons in the Poor establishment, the number relieved, &c., &c., during the last fiscal year:

Remaining at date of last report: Almshouse, 565, Hospital, 413; Nursey, 412; Asylum, 684; total, 2,074. Admitted and born during year: Almshouse, 1,463; Hospital, 3,108; Nursery, 520; Asylum, 322; total, 5,413. Died and discharged: Almshouse, 1,589; Hospital, 3,148; Nursery, 588; Asylum, 288, total, 5,613. Remaining July 31, 1873: Almshouse, 439; Hospital, 373, Nursery, 344; Asylum, 718; total, 1,874; Temporary relief, 25,033. Foundlings, etc., boarded out 64. Institutions, 7,487. Whole number relieved either wholly or in part during the year ending July 31, 1873, 32,584. Average number in Institutions during the year, 2,226.

The highest number in the institutions during the year was on February 11, 2,593; the lowest, June 1st 1,892; total amount of paid bills, \$405,143.70; total amount of receipts, \$19,850.31. This report was signed by Cornelius Ferguson, John Cunningham, Henry Wills, G. H. Powell, and John J. Scott, as Commissioners of Charities.

Dr. P. L. Schenck physician of the County Hospital for the year ending July 31st, 1873, congratulates the Commissioners and the public upon the improved condition of the hospital. He says a very large number of the patients in the hospital during the year were persons who had worked in the white-lead manufactories of Brooklyn. The great increase in the number of these patients ought to be a proper subject of the health authorities. He also speaks of the great number of surgical operations in the hospital, and announces in touching language the death of Dr. R. CRESSON STILES, a member of the hospital staff, who died of pneumonia, after an illness of ten days, at the residence of his mother, at West Chester, Pa., April 17, 1873, in his 43d year. He held successively the position of assistant physician in 1854-5, resident physician in 1864-5, and upon his resignation as resident physician, received the appointment of consulting physician. As a scientific physician and microscopist, few equaled him; as a scholar and polished gentleman he was not excelled.

He reports as remaining July 31, 1872, males, 184; females, 229; total, 413; admitted during the year, males, 1,660; females, 1,448; total, 3,108; total number under treatment, males, 1,844; females, 1,677; total, 3,521; discharged recovered, males, 1,160; females, 1,091; total, 2,251; discharged improved, males, 208; females, 171; total, 379; discharged unimproved, males, 68; females, 81; total, 149; died, males, 220; females, 149; total, 369;

total discharged and died, males, 1,656; females, 1,492; total, 3,148; remaining July 31st, 1873, males, 188; females, 185; total, 373; total number under treatment for the year ending July 31st, 1872, 4,544; total number for year ending July 31st, 1873, 3,521; decrease, 1,023.

Dr. Edward B. Chapin, physician of the Lunatic Asylum for the year ending July 31st, 1873, gives a very brief but very interesting and instructive showing a very prosperous and successful state of things in that institution.

Patients in Asylum August 1st, 1872, males, 267; females, 417; total, 684; patients admitted during the year, males, 157; females, 165; total, 322; whole number under treatment, males, 424; females, 582; total, 1,006; discharged recovered, males, 56; females, 56; total, 112; discharged improved, males, 25; females, 46; total, 71; discharged unimproved, males, 23; females, 16; total, 39; died, males, 33; females, 33; total, 66; whole number discharged, males, 137; females, 151; total, 288; remaining July 31, 1873, males, 287; females, 431; total, 718; number of employees, males, 32; females, 49; total, 81.

The annual report of the County Nursery by Mr. Driscoll, the manager, gives a very encouraging account of that institution. Among other things it gives an account of the condition of the large garden attached to the Nursery, the cultivation of which, for the past year, was committed entirely to the care of the boys in the Nursery, with the exception of one man to superintend.

The report also shows the following:

	CHILDREN.		ADULTS.		TOTAL.
	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	
Remaining July 31, 1872.....	253	117	9	33	412
Admitted during year.....	286	175	10	49	520
Total.....	539	292	19	82	932
Discharged during year.....	320	163	10	52	545
Died during year.....	21	21	1	..	43
Total.....	341	184	11	52	588
Remaining July 31, 1873.....	198	128	8	8	344
Decrease during year.....	..	..	..	..	68

By the Act of April 27, 1871, creating the office of Auditor in the County of Kings, it was made the duty of said Auditor to examine all bills presented against the County of Kings for payment, including all bills incurred by the Commissioners of Charities, and to certify to the Board of Supervisors the result of his examination, stating whether there was sufficient money in the treasury of said county placed to the credit of the account to which such bills were chargeable. Also, whether such bills had been incurred under due authority of law, &c. MAURICE FITZGERALD was, on May 1st, 1871, duly appointed Auditor of Kings County: thenceforth the accounts of the Commissioners of Charities were no longer examined and audited by the Supervisors, but by the Auditor of the County. The Supervisors, however, had the right of proving or disproving the acts of the Auditor. There had existed in the Board of Supervisors, until the passage of this act,

a committee termed a *Committee on Accounts of Commissioners of Charities*, to which the latter reported their accounts. Under an amendment of the act, creating the office of County Auditor, the Commissioners of Charities were required to make and present to him a monthly pay-roll for each and every month in the year. We have already referred to the feeling of hostility to the old Board of Superintendents of the Poor, which increased until that Board was abolished; but, as the functions of the Commissioners of Charities were in many respects similar to those of the old Board, the prejudice against that continued to exist against the new, until, June 22, 1874, it culminated in the presentation to the Governor and the Board of Supervisors of written charges of serious irregularities in the transaction of official business by the Commissioners of Charities, and the offering of a resolution to the Board of Supervisors directing the Committee on Accounts of Commissioners of Charities to closely investigate the management of said Commissioners, covering such period of time as the committee might deem proper, with power to send for persons and papers, and to report results to the Board as soon as possible.

Previously to this a resolution had been offered to the Board of Supervisors directing the Treasurer of the County to decline payment of all drafts upon him from the Commissioners of Charities for the present. Another resolution was adopted by the Board about this time, quite annoying to the Commissioners of Charities, pointing to a collision between the two Boards. The resolution was as follows:

"Resolved, That the Commissioners of Charities be and they are hereby instructed to purchase no intoxicating liquors, ale or wines, hereafter, for any of the public institutions, or at the public expense, without an order of this Board therefor being first had and obtained."

By an Act of the Legislature, passed April 2d, 1874, the act creating the Board of Commissioners of Charities of Kings County was largely amended, increasing the powers of the Supervisors over them, and restricting their own powers. One of these amendments, particularly obnoxious to the Commissioners, found in section 3d of the Act of 1874, is as follows:

"All articles found necessary to be used in and for the relief and support of the poor in the County of Kings, shall be purchased, contracted for or supplied by the Board of Supervisors of Kings County.

"The section there proceeds to limit the powers of the Commissioners, compelling them to make frequent reports to the Supervisors."

In April, 1874, bills for water furnished the County Buildings by the Department of Brooklyn City Water Works amounted to the sum of \$11,375.80, which the Commissioners of Charities had neglected to pay.

This led to an unpleasant discussion, the Commissioners alleging that it was the action of the Board of Supervisors that caused the delay in the payment of the said bill.

The difficulties connected with the Commissioners of Charities continued until Stephen H. Powell, Henry H. Wills and Cornelius Ferguson, Commissioners of Charities in the 2nd, 3rd and 5th Districts, were, on the 1st of June, 1874, tried, convicted and sentenced for malfeasance in office.

On July 1st, 1874, John A. Dix, then Governor of the State of New York, in pursuance of a statute in such case made and provided, gave the Board of Supervisors of Kings County official notice of the vacancies in the Board of Commissioners of Charities, created by the conviction, and sentence, of the said Powell, Ferguson and Wills of the crime of malfeasance in office and conspiracy. The trial of these men created great excitement in the County; it took place before the extraordinary Court of Oyer and Terminer, held in the City of Brooklyn, on the 9th day of June, 1874; Hon. Charles Daniels, one of the Justices of the Supreme Court, presiding; Hon. Barnett Johnson and Hon. Stephen J. Voorhees, associates. After a somewhat exciting trial, the jury found the said persons guilty of the crime charged in the indictment. A motion was made for a rest of judgment by the defendants' counsel, and a stay of sentence granted until June 12th, 1874, and the defendants were admitted to bail in the sum of five thousand dollars each, to appear in court on the 12th day of June, 1874. On that day the motion for a rest of judgment was argued and denied, and the court passed sentence that the defendants Ferguson, Powell and Wills each pay a fine of \$200, and that they stand committed until such fine be paid.

By a recent enactment of the Legislature, the Board of Supervisors were empowered to elect Commissioners of Charities in the place of the said Powell, Ferguson and Wills. The election was held July 5th, 1874, and after a long and sharp contest, resulted in the election of Hassan H. Wheeler, Commissioner of Charities of Kings County from the 2nd District; John Raber, as such Commissioner from the 3rd District, and of Wincent E. Bennett from the 5th District.

August 18th, further complaint was made as to the manner in which the Commissioners of Charities discharged the duties of their office in relation to the County Lunatic Asylum, Almshouse and other institutions under their charge, and the Board of Supervisors appointed a committee of six to investigate the truth of these charges.

November 12th, on the coming in of the report of said committee, a resolution was adopted by the Board of Supervisors authorizing the employment of counsel, with instructions to commence suit promptly against the Commissioners of Charities, and their sureties for the recovery to the county treasury of certain deficiencies in their accounts.

At the annual election held in November, 1874, Dr. Thomas P. Norris was elected Commissioner of Charities for the 2d District. The annual report of the

Commissioners for the year ending July 31, 1874, gives the following table:

	Alms-house	Hospital.	Nursery.	Asylum.	Total.
Remaining at date of last report	439	373	344	718	1,874
Admitted during the year.....	1,704	2,853	574	338	5,469
Total	2,143	3,226	918	1,056	7,343
Died and discharged.....	1,522	2,906	545	305	5,278
Remaining July 31, 1874..	621	320	373	751	2,065

Temporary relief.....	36,411
Foundlings, &c., boarded out	37
Institutions.....	7,343

Total for year ending July 31, 1874

Average number in the institutions during the year was 2,175; total amount of bills paid, \$445,463.56; total amount of receipts, \$19,577.61.

The Commissioners at the date of said report were John Cunningham, John J. Scott Hassen, H. Wheeler, John Ruber, Winant E. Bennett. The three latter were appointed in place of Cornelius Ferguson, Henry Wills and S. H. Powell, removed.

Dr. P. L. Schenck, physician of the County Hospital, for the year ending July 31, 1874, reports: Among other things, that alcoholism (which includes delirium tremens) numbered during the year ending July 31, 1874, 172 cases, showing an increase over the number of the previous year of 36. Lead poisoning, which was spoken of in the last report, shows a still greater increase, the number of cases being 64.

The Doctor's report contains the following: Remaining July 31, 1873, males, 188; females, 185; total, 373; admitted during the year, males, 1,579; females, 1,274; total, 2,853; discharged recovered, males, 1,210; females, 1,008; total, 2,218; discharged improved, males, 184; females, 144; total, 328; discharged unimproved, males, 54; females, 33; total, 87; died, males, 157; females, 116; total, 273; remaining July 31, 1874, males, 162; females, 158; total, 320; decrease, 296.

In November, 1873, Dr. Edward R. Chapin, Medical Superintendent of the Lunatic Asylum, resigned his office, after a long and faithful service of more than sixteen years, during which he had won for himself the esteem of his officers and subordinates, the respect and love of his patients; and for the Asylum a character, a name and fame of which the County of Kings may justly feel proud. Dr. C. F. MACDONALD was appointed Medical Superintendent in place of Dr. Chapin, and Dr. Archibald Campbell was promoted to the position of first assistant physician; these gentlemen stood high in their profession, and the subsequent condition of the Asylum under their care bears in dubitable testimony to their skill and efficiency.

The Doctor complains of the overcrowded state of the Asylum, and suggests improvements for its relief. His annual report contains the following: Patients in Asylum August 1, 1873, males, 287; females, 431; total, 718; patients admitted during year, males, 177; females, 161; total, 338; discharged recovered,

males, 62; females, 52; total, 114; discharged improved, males, 37; females, 41; total, 78; discharged unimproved, males, 23; females, 16; total, 39; died, males, 40; females, 34; total, 74; whole number discharged, males, 162; females, 143; total, 305; remaining July 31, 1874, males, 302; females, 409; total, 751; number of employees, males, 37; females, 51; total, 88.

The report of Mr. John Driscoll, Superintendent of the Kings County Nursery, for the year 1874, shows the continued prosperity of this interesting department of the poor establishment, in all its branches. The report recommends the erection of a *Gymnasium* for the boys, the enlargement of the garden for the occupation of the boys able to work therein.

It shows that calisthenics was introduced during the year with marked success. It speaks in high terms of the two Sunday schools in the Nursery, the Catholic and the Protestant. The report of the Commissioners concludes with the following resume:

	CHILDREN.		ADULTS.		TOTAL.
	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	
Remaining July 31, 1873.....	198	108	8	30	344
Admitted during year.....	320	184	6	64	574
Total	518	292	14	94	918
Discharged during year.....	267	170	5	59	501
Died during year.....	21	23	.....	.....	44
Total	288	193	5	59	545
Remaining July 31, 1874.....	230	99	9	35	373

Increase of 29 during the year.

At the annual election, November, 1875, Bernard Bogan was elected a Commissioner of Charities for the 1st District of Kings County.

From the annual report of the Commissioners of Charities for the year ending July 31, 1875, we take the following:

	Alms-house.	Hospital.	Nursery.	Asylum.	Total.
Remaining at date of last report.....	603	320	373	751	2,047
Admitted and born during the year	1,820	3,010	728	318	5,876
Total.....	2,423	3,330	1,101	1,069	7,923
Died and discharged during the year.....	1,796	2,961	640	303	5,700
Whole number relieved .....	.....	.....	.....	.....	35,850
Foundlings boarded out .....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Institutions .....	.....	.....	.....	.....	7,923

Total number relieved, either wholly or in part, during the year ending July 31, 1875, 43,773; average number in the institutions during the year, 2,182; the highest number in the institutions during the year was on the 2d February, 1875, 2,305; the lowest number was on the 22d September, 1874, 2,062; total amount of paid bills, \$523,588.68; total amount of receipts, \$20,700.61.

The Commissioners of Charities for the year ending July 31, 1875, were John Cunningham, John Raber, Thos. P. Norris, Bernard Midas, Harmon V. Storms.

The annual report of Dr. P. L. Schenck, Medical Superintendent of the Kings County Hospital, shows the statistics of that institution for the year ending July 31, 1875, as follows :

Remaining July 31st, 1874, males, 162; females, 158; total, 320; admitted during year, males, 1,608; females, 1,402; total, 3,010; total, males, 1,770; females, 1,560; total, 3,330; discharged recovered, males, 1,206; females, 1,054; total, 2,260; discharged improved, males, 140; females, 149; total, 289; discharged unimproved, males, 53; females, 41; total, 94; died, males, 198; females, 120; total, 318; total, males, 1,597; females, 1,364; total, 2,961; remaining July, 1875, males, 173; females, 196; total, 369; total number under treatment for the year ending July 31st, 1873, 3,521; total number under treatment for the year ending July 31st, 1874, 3,225; total number under treatment for the year ending July 31st, 1875, 3,338.

The total number of patients admitted shows an increase of 157 over the number of last year. Two thousand three hundred and thirty-five of the said patients were foreigners, 1,319 of whom were from Ireland, 901 from Germany, 201 from Sweden, 53 from England, 41 from Scotland, &c. During the year referred to there was held, in the Hospital, on Friday afternoon of each week, a *surgical clinic*, attended by many members of the outside profession, not only of great advantage to the patients, but a source of instruction to the Hospital staff. During the year an investigating Board of the Supervisors visited the Hospital several times, unanimously expressing themselves more than satisfied with the manner in which this institution was conducted in all its parts.

Dr. James H. Blanchard, Medical Superintendent of the County Lunatic Asylum during the last year, reports as follows :

Patients in Asylum August 1st, 1874, males, 302; females, 449; total, 751; patients admitted during the year, males, 149; females, 169; total, 318; whole number under treatment, males, 451; females, 618; total, 1,069; discharged recovered, males, 49; females, 60; total, 109; discharged improved, males, 36; females, 43; total 79; discharged unimproved, males, 16; females, 18; total, 34; died, males, 45; females, 36; total, 81; whole number discharged, males, 146; females, 157; total, 303; remaining July 31, 1875, males, 305; females, 461; total, 766; number of employees, males, 33, females, 48; total, 81.

During the year one homicide occurred, but no suicides. The asylum was at the time very much overcrowded.

The annual report of the Superintendent of the Nursery, Mr. Bernard Bogan, for the fiscal year ending July 31, 1875, presents a most encouraging condition of that interesting department of the poor establishment of the county.

An industrial school was organized during the year, in which tailoring, shoemaking and printing were taught, with manifest success. The garden continues not only to be a source of pleasure to the boys who conduct it, but a source of profit to the institution. The school of the establishment has come to be of very great importance, an institution of learning for children, of which the county may well be proud. The school-room is cheerful and comfortable; the children are divided into eight classes, and many of them in the higher classes show a proficiency in their studies creditable to their teachers and any institution of learning. Besides the usual branches taught in schools, singing by note has been successfully introduced. Calisthenics and spelling matches formed useful and entertaining exercises. A Roll of Honor was instituted, which greatly stimulated the children in their studies. During the year there were 503 admitted to the school, 253 promoted during the same time, the average attendance being 267.

The following shows the number admitted during the year :

	CHILDREN.		ADULTS.		TOTAL.
	Males.	Females.	Males.	Females.	
Remaining July 31, 1874.....	230	99	9	35	373
Admitted during year.....	364	265	24	75	728
Total.....	594	364	33	110	1,101
Discharged.....	297	215	19	64	595
Died.....	32	13	..	..	45
Total.....	329	228	19	64	640
Remaining July 31, 1875.....	265	136	14	46	461

By an act of Legislature, May 15th, 1876, the Board of Supervisors were permitted to raise a sum, not exceeding \$16,000, to meet the deficiency in the salary account of the Commissioners of Charities. Previous to the passage of this act, and on April 19th, 1876, the following preamble and resolution was introduced and adopted by the Board of Supervisors:

"Whereas, The appropriation for supplies for this year was \$160,000, and the amount expended for only eight months was \$133,000; and unless a reduction of expenses be made immediately, the whole appropriation will be exhausted long before the expiration of the fiscal year; therefore be it

Resolved, That it is the duty of the Commissioners of Charities to discontinue all supplies of dry-goods, milk, eggs, butter, sugar and any other articles not of absolute necessity, except in the cases of infants and invalids; and that in all such cases the supplies of such articles be furnished only on requisition of the physician-in-chief, naming the persons for whom the same are required, and the quality of the article mentioned, and that all such requisitions be numbered in regular order, dated, and entered in a book to be provided for that purpose."

It having come to the knowledge of the Board of Supervisors that there was a deficiency of \$18,577.15 in the accounts of the Commissioners of Charities, making their pay-roll for the year ending July 31st, 1876, \$103,577.15, and there being raised and appropriated for that purpose by the Supervisors only \$85,000, on June 7th, 1876, a committee, appointed by the Supervisors to examine into this matter, made a report, which was duly accepted:

"That there is no authority in the law for the Commissioners exceeding the amount of said appropriation, and that an examination of their pay-rolls shows that, had they desired to, they could easily have kept within that amount; that it is impossible to quietly permit such action on the part of the Commissioners of Charities; that it would be no more than just retribution to hold the said Commissioners responsible personally for this deficiency."

The practice of receiving pauper lunatics indiscriminately into the County Asylum had overcrowded that institution to such an extent that Section 6, Article 1st, Chapter 446 of the Laws of 1874, which provided

"that no persons should be admitted to the Asylum unless committed thereto by the County Judge or Surrogate," was now rigidly enforced; therefore the Commissioners of Charities took immediate steps to discharge from the County Asylum, as fast as due regard for humanity and the proprieties of the case would admit, all persons, not paupers, not lawfully entitled to remain in said Asylum; and that after the 2d day of August, 1876, no person, not a pauper, could be received into said Asylum unless by competent judicial authority. This, of course, excluded all non-resident lunatics from the Asylum.

In their annual report for the year ending July 31, 1876, the Commissioners say that the new Hospital for Incurables is now nearly completed, and will accommodate a large number of that class of patients. That there were remaining in the poor establishment at the date of their last report: Almshouse, 640; hospital, 369; asylum, 766; total, 1,775; admitted and born during year, almshouse, 2,165; hospital, 3,901; asylum, 314; total, 6,380; died and discharged, almshouse, 2,044; hospital, 3,959; asylum, 270; total, 6,273; remaining July 31, 1876, almshouse, 761; hospital, 311; asylum, 810; total, 1,882; number relieved, 44,208; foundlings, etc., boarded out, 50; cared for in the institutions, 8,155; total number relieved wholly or in part, 52,413; average number in the institutions, 2,135; the highest number in during year was on August 3, 1875, 2,317; the lowest number was July 11, 1876, 1,944.

Total amount of department bills, \$388,692.90; total amount of receipts, \$21,221.98.

The Commissioners of Charities for this year were Thomas P. Norris, Bernard Bogan, John Raber, Bernhart Midas, Harmon V. Strong. At the annual election in November, 1876, Bernhart Midas was elected Commissioner of Charities for the 1st District for the ensuing year.

Dr. James A. Blanchard, Medical Superintendent of the Lunatic Asylum for the year ending July 31, 1876, reports that such was the increase of patients in the Asylum (there being at one time 816) it seemed almost impossible to find accommodations for them; that frequently newly arrived patients were obliged to wait two or three days, or until a vacancy occurred, before they could be admitted. That in a population of 500,000 people, there is an average number of 800 persons classed as insane. In other words, 16 in every 10,000 of the population of the county were under treatment for lunacy; that there was no doubt that within the next decade not less than 1,200 of these unfortunates would be consigned to the care of the county authorities. The necessity of constructing another asylum was earnestly set forth. The report further shows that a very large increase of the general library has been made, for which the Asylum was largely under obligations to Gilbert Hicks, Esq., of Flatbush, the custodian of the "Graham Fund." The report also pleasantly refers to the visit of a committee from the State Board of Public Charities and to their donations. It also speaks highly of the weekly surgical clinic in the Asylum for the past year. The Doctor recommended that action be taken to restrict, in a measure, and regulate the visiting of the Asylum, which had become a positive detriment to the patients. "Large numbers of people," he says, "come here out of morbid curiosity, as to a menagerie, and the result cannot but be, and is, injurious to the inmates. The day after visiting day the excited condition of the patients is apparent to the most casual observer." This report gives the following statistical account of the Asylum for the year ending July 31, 1876:

Patients in Asylum August 1, 1875, males, 305; females, 461; total, 766; patients admitted during the year, males, 154; females, 160; total, 314; whole number under treatment, males, 459; females, 621; total, 1,080; discharged recovered, males, 66;

females, 49; total, 115; discharged improved, males, 28; females, 34; total, 62; discharged unimproved, males, 15; females, 16; total, 31; died, males, 27; females, 35; total, 62; whole number discharged, males, 136; females, 134; total, 270; remaining July 31, 1876, males, 323; females, 487; total, 810; whole number of employees, male, 32; female, 48; total, 80.

Dr. P. L. Schenck, Medical Superintendent of the Kings County Hospital, for the year ending July 31, 1876, gives the following as to the number of persons, etc., in the Hospital during the year:

Remaining July 31, 1875, males, 173; females, 196; total, 369; admitted during the year, males, 2,203; females, 1,698; total, 3,901; total number under treatment, males, 2,376; females, 1,894; total, 4,270; discharged recovered, males, 1,667; females, 1,331; total, 2,998; discharged improved, males, 204; females, 194; total, 400; discharged unimproved, males, 26; females, 21; total, 47; died, males, 320; females, 194; total, 514; total discharged, males, 2,218; females, 1,741; total, 3,959; remaining July 31, 1876, males, 158; females, 153; total, 311; total number under treatment for the year ending July 31, 1874, 3,225; total number under treatment for the year ending July 31, 1875, 3,338; total number under treatment for the year ending July 31, 1876, 4,270.

This report shows an increase of 2.6 per cent. in the death rate of the institution. There were 92 deaths from small-pox; 76 patients were removed to the Lunatic Asylum. The total number of patients admitted during the year shows an increase of 891 over the last year. That of the 4,270 patients treated, all were foreigners excepting 909. There were 141 children born; of the mothers, 71 were married and 67 single; of the 71 married mothers all were Americans.

There is no report this year of the Nursery, changes having taken place which virtually abolished that institution. One of the principal causes for these results was the completion of the *Brooklyn Industrial School Association and Home for Destitute Children*, in Butler Street, near Flatbush Avenue. On September 2, 1875, Dr. Norris, President of the Commission of Charities, received notice from Mrs. Jessie C. Smith, first Directress of the above association, that this Home was ready to receive as many children from the Kings County Nursery as the Commissioners of Charities might think proper to send them at \$4 each per month, subject to the rules for the government of the Home. In accordance with this, most of the children were removed; and, under the importunate demands of the medical superintendent of the Lunatic Asylum for increased accommodation for that institution, the Nursery building was altered into a *Hospital for Incurables*, as well as for defective children, &c., who could not be cured.

Notwithstanding the rules adopted against the admission of non-residents of Kings County into the Poor establishment, the practice existed to a large extent; whereupon, in November, 1876, the following resolution was adopted by the Supervisors:

"Resolved, That the Commissioners of Charities be and they are hereby directed to furnish promptly to this Board the number and names of inmates of the Almshouse, Lunatic Asylum, Hospital and Nursery, at Flatbush, who have no legal residence in Kings County, and the date of their admission into the several institutions."

This very important resolution was unanimously

adopted. The reader will soon learn to what extent it was obeyed.

We have already referred to the regulation requiring the physicians in charge of the Lunatic Asylum to discharge therefrom all non-residents, which was one of the results of this resolution.

Early in January, 1877, the following resolution was adopted :

"Resolved, That the Commissioner of Charities for the 1st district be, and he hereby is, respectfully requested to commence the distribution of coal to the poor of said district at the earliest possible moment."

This resolution, authorized by law, was passed at a time which will be remembered by many as a period of great suffering among the poor of that district. The resolution was some days afterwards so amended as to embrace the other districts.

April 4th, 1877, a very important matter was brought before the Supervisors and the Commissioners of Charities, the result of the action of certain shrewd politicians—employees of the Board of Charities—in bringing inmates of the almshouse to take part in certain political meetings in Gravesend, with a view to influence and control their action, showing how difficult it is to divorce politics from such institutions. The prompt action of the Supervisors touching the matter, denouncing the practice "as entirely unwarranted by law, or by a proper regard for decency," was warmly commended by the citizens of the county.

June 28th, 1877. The Commissioners of Charities having failed to send in, according to law, any estimate of the amount required for salaries, or for improvements, or for alterations to the buildings and grounds of the Poor establishments, though it was well known such improvements were contemplated, the Supervisors passed a resolution reprimanding the neglect of the Commissioners in the discharge of their duties. The frequent collision between the Supervisors and the Board of Charities was fast leading to that radical change in the Poor establishment of the county which led to the present system, under which it is conducted at this writing.

The annual report of the Commissioners for the year ending July 31st, 1877, is a paper of considerable length and ability: "It behooves," says this report, "those in authority, as well as all other citizens, to assist in solving the question: 'How shall this department of public charities be managed so as to do the greatest good to the unfortunate and indigent among us, and at the same time avoid imposing onerous burdens on the taxpayers?'" We cannot refrain from inserting here the ingenious, apparently mild, but palpable hit which the Commissioners give the Board of Supervisors and others in interfering with their management of the poor establishment of the county. After pleasantly stating that those who were charged with the management of charity affairs are better able

to judge of the manner in which they should discharge their duties than any other persons, and that they should, therefore, be invested with full power to deal with the matter, and all questions which arise in doing so, they say: "Public officials who have charge of charity affairs always find it difficult to do justice to themselves or their public trusts while acting with shackled hands." This is the only allusion in the report to some unpleasant matters which had occurred thus far during the year. The report continues as follows :

Remaining at the date of last report, Alms-house, 811; Hospital, 271; Asylum, 810; total, 1,892; admitted and born during the year, Alms-house, 2,301; Hospital, 3,244; Asylum, 318; Home for Incurables, 313; total, 6,176; died and discharged during the year, Alms-house, 2,294; Hospital, 3,184; Asylum, 496; Home for Incurables, 24; total, 5,998; remaining July 31, 1877, Alms-house, 818; Hospital, 331; Asylum, 632; Home for Incurables, 289; total, 2,070; employees, Alms-house, 8; Hospital, 46; Asylum, 85; Home for Incurables, 21; total, 160; number temporarily relieved, 46,330; cared for in the institutions, 8,068; total number relieved wholly or in part during year ending July 31, 1877, 54,398; average number in institutions, 2,226; highest number during year was on January 16, 1877, 2,406; lowest number August 15, 1876, 1,988; total amount of bills paid and due, \$440,025.52; receipts, \$17,679.97.

The Commissioners of Charities this year were Thomas P. Norris, Bernard Bogan, John Raber, Bernard Midas, H. V. Storm.

The annual report of Dr. P. L. Schenck, Medical Superintendent of Kings County Hospital, is, as usual, able and succinct. There were :

Remaining in Hospital, July 31, 1876, males, 158; females, 153; total, 311; admitted during the year, males, 1,855; females, 1,389; total, 3,244; total number under treatment, males, 2,013; females, 1,542; total, 3,555; discharged recovered, males, 1,419; females, 1,065; total, 2,484; discharged improved, males, 180; females, 166; total, 346; discharged unimproved, males, 23; females, 20; total, 43; died, males, 190; females, 121; total, 311; total discharged and died, males, 1,812; females, 1,372; total, 3,184.

It will be seen from the above report that there was a decrease of 603 in the total number of patients admitted during the year. There were 145 children born in the institutions during the year. Of all the number of patients, 3,555, admitted into the Hospital during the year, all excepting 810 were foreigners; of these 1,392 were from Ireland, 722 from Germany, 240 from Sweden, 66 from France, 62 from England, 59 from Switzerland, 47 from Scotland, 50 from Norway, 39 from Denmark, 25 from Italy, 18 from Poland, 2 from Russia, 8 from Belgium, 1 from Portugal, 1 from Cuba, 1 from China, and 2 from Spain.

Dr. James Blanchard, Medical Superintendent of the Lunatic Asylum, reports, among other things, that in the preceding January the *Hospital for Incurables* was completed, officered and furnished, and in the February following some of the patients—260 in all—were transferred to that institution. These consisted of epileptics, idiots, imbeciles, and demented patients, all quiet and orderly. At one period there were 827 patients under treatment in the Asylum, which had a capacity for containing only 600, leading to a very unsatisfactory condition of things. Notwithstanding this, Dr. Blanchard alleges that during the past year the management of this institution was the subject of much unfair and unjust criticism, when whatever fault there was in the conduct of the establishment could not be justly charged against the managing officers of the Institution. The report concludes with the following table :

Patients in Asylum, August 1, 1876, males, 323; females, 487; total, 810; admitted during year, males, 150; females, 168; total, 318;

recovered, males, 48; females, 58; total, 106; improved, males, 20; females, 22; total, 42; unimproved, males, 11; females, 9; total, 20; removed to Hospital for Incurables, males, 128; females, 139; total, 267; died, males, 27; females, 34; total, 61; whole number discharged, males, 334; females, 262; total, 496; remaining July 31, 1877, males, 239; females, 393; total, 632; employees, males, 34; females, 51; total, 85.

Since the change in the Nursery department, and other changes in the Poor establishment, a brief allusion to the report of the Superintendent of the Almshouse is necessary and instructive. From the report it is seen among other things that during the year the capacity of this department was tested to its utmost. During the entire winter season it became necessary to place beds upon the floors of all the different dormitories in the department; that even the reading-room was converted into a dormitory.

The report recommends the erection of a "workhouse," so that the inmates of the Almshouse be classified, making a discrimination between unfortunate persons driven to seek shelter there for a time, and the degraded "rounder" and "revolver," who looks forward with pleasure to a life at the public expense.

The small department assigned under the new regulation to the children, for a nursery, is reported to be in an overcrowded condition. These reports were given at the close of the fiscal year, the 31st of July, 1877.

We now come to the brief consideration of a subject which created intense feeling throughout the county; this is the report of the Investigating Committee appointed to examine the whole condition of the Poor establishment under the official management of the Board of Commissioners of Charities. This report was submitted to the Board of Supervisors at the close of the year 1877, and was most searching, exhibiting a condition of things somewhat startling in their nature. We have already referred to a resolution requiring the Commissioners to report, etc. How well they reported will be seen in the report of the Investigating Committee, of which we can only give a brief history. The report alleges that the Charity Department of the county had been for years in bad repute with the people; its management had given rise to great complaint; some of its members had been found guilty of corrupt practices, punished and removed from office; that the aid of legislative enactment had been invoked, but in vain, and the cure did not come; the evil was political, and it was politics that attempted the cure; instead of improvement, matters grew and are still growing worse; extravagance and waste prevailed; the employees were inefficient; duties were neglected; lunatics were robbed and beaten; that even death had been hastened by cruelty and abuse; the poor were ill-treated, and contractors favored; large sums of money were appropriated every year, and yet heavy deficiencies continued to be the rule; that the Commissioners wrongfully increased their pay-rolls; men were receiving wages who did little or no work, while everything about the establishment was neglected.

To such an alarming extent had these things come that a public meeting, irrespective of party, was held at the Academy of Music in Brooklyn, composed of the best citizens of the city and county. At this meeting

a resolution was unanimously adopted condemning the management of the Commissioners, and measures proposed for relieving the Poor establishment of these great evils. The measure of relief proposed was the abolishment of the present Board of Charities and the establishment of a new Board, to be called a "*Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections.*"

"But," says the report, "the will of the people was thwarted at Albany, and the cure came not. Politics again showed its venomous fangs, and the mongrel bill denominated a cure was justly throttled by the Governor, and thus the old system was continued in all its evils. It was then thought best that a full and fair investigation of the whole matter should be made. We supposed that the Commissioners would second our efforts, but after making some progress we were met with open hostility to our labors by the Commissioners." Notwithstanding this, the committee searchingly continued their investigations, and the result revealed a most terrible and revolting state of affairs.

Among other things, the buildings were infested by rats, the wood-work gnawed in almost every room, creating great destruction. In one instance an old closet was opened, and was found to contain the bodies of nearly two barrels of dead rats in a state of decomposition. In one of the upper stories a dining-room used for women was in part used for water-closets, being partitioned off by low board partitions, from which there came most offensive odors. The place where the provisions were kept and served was dark, dirty, filled with fleas and other filth. The grounds were out of order; holes had been cut in the board fences, through which intoxicating liquors had been passed in to the inmates.

Even clothing, shoes and other articles had been given by the inmates in exchange for liquor. Some of the employees had kept, and still kept, a place near by for the sale of liquor. The inmates of the establishment often got drunk and fight. There was due and owing the county for board of patients \$15,000 or \$20,000. People from other counties, and even from other States, were boarders at the expense of this county. Notwithstanding this large arrearages for their board, they had every delicacy, all indulgencies equally, if not better, than patients more worthy. This condition of affairs had existed for years. Finally, after enumerating many other gross evils, the report concludes as follows: "Enough has already been shown to justify the preparation of charges against the Commissioners for neglect of duty, for malfeasance in office, and to demand their removal."

This report, with several resolutions as to the mode of procedure against the Commissioners, was unanimously adopted by the Board of Supervisors December 26, 1877.

We have given large quotations from this report, because it was strongly influential in revolutionizing the administration of the whole Poor establishment of the county. The action of the Supervisors was very prompt and decisive; but, instead of resulting in a prosecution of the Commissioners for gross violation of duty and malfeasance in office, it took, as we shall see a little further on, another turn, quite unsatisfactory to the Board of Supervisors.

The pay-roll of the Commissioners of Charities for the month ending March 7, 1878, is very important, in that it shows what salaries the employees were receiving at that time. We give only a few of its items:

The Medical Superintendent of the Hospital received \$2,000 per annum; clerk, \$1,500; steward, \$1,000; Superintendent of Almshouse, \$1,500; steward, \$1,200; matron, \$400; cutter of clothing, \$500; baker, \$660; Medical Attendant of the Asylum, \$3,500; assistant physician, \$1,200; do. do., \$600; steward, \$1,000; matron, \$500; clerk and bookkeeper of the board, \$2,500; secretary to the board, \$1,500; treasurer, clerk and collector, \$1,500; general inspector, \$2,000; counsel, \$1,500; Medical Superintendent of Hospital for Incurables, \$2,000; steward, \$1,000; matron, \$400. The salaries of the other employees of the Poor establishment ranged from \$12 to \$20 per month.

The report to which we have alluded, made in December, 1877, was not acted upon officially in the direction of the impeachment or removal of the Commissioners; but was continually used in an effort to abolish the office of Commissioners of Charities—with what effect we shall see hereafter. But, on May 23d, 1878, a long preamble setting forth the general bad management of the charitable department, which had called forth the condemnation of the entire press of the county, was followed by the following resolution:

“Resolved, That the Board of Supervisors most respectfully request his Excellency the Governor to remove from office the Commissioners of Charities, and appoint, to serve out the time between their removal and the next general election, four disinterested citizens of this county.”

As this resolution was not accompanied with charges and specifications, the chair ruled the resolution to be “not in order,” which ruling was, on appeal, sustained.

At the annual election in November, 1878, Andrew Zizer, Charles J. Henry, and Wm. M. Shipman were elected Commissioners of Charities. Mr. Shipman in the place of Dr. Norris, and Mr. Zizer in place of Mr. Bogan. The annual report of the Commissioners of Charities for the year ending July 31, 1878, was much briefer than usual.

“We have,” said the Commissioners, “endeavored to the best of our ability to discharge the duties imposed upon us, with an honest desire so to conduct the affairs of the department that no injuries may be done to the public bounty, and at the same time no encouragement given to those committed to our care to remain a charge upon the county longer than was really necessary.”

It is proper to add that a very respectable portion of the community believed that the charges made against the Commissioners of Charities, and the public clamor raised against them, was the result of political warfare, kept alive and intensified by swarms of hungry applicants for the very remunerative places which the Commissioners had to bestow. In other words, it was the common growl of the “outs” against the “ins”—the usual contest of politicians.

This report shows that the average cost for each person supported for the year 1878 was \$106.09, or \$2.04 per week; the average cost for each person supported for the year 1877 was \$121.83, or \$2.34 per week; the average difference in cost in favor of the year 1878, for each person, was \$15.74, or 30 cents per week for each person. The net expenses for the department for 1877 were \$422,345.55; for the year 1878, \$312,524.93; difference in favor of 1878, with an increased averaged number of inmates of 157 persons, was \$110,280.62. This large decrease, with other reductions in regard to the poor departments, were regarded as indubitable evidence of the wisdom and success of the Board of Charities, and a triumphant vindication against the aspersions made against them. The report continues as follows: There were remaining in the institutions at the date of last report: Almshouse, 826; Hospital, 377; Asylum, 717; Hospital for Incurables, 310; total, 2,230; admitted into all these departments during the year, 5,976; the whole total was 8,206; died and discharged during the year, 5,722; remaining July 31, 1878, 2,448. The number temporarily relieved was 46,093; cared for in the institutions, 8,206; total number relieved, either wholly or in part, during the year, 54,299.

The annual report of the Superintendent of the Almshouse for the year 1878 shows the unusually crowded condition of that department, but a very satisfactory state of things in regard to the general management.

The report of Dr. P. L. Schenck, Medical Superintendent of the County Hospital, shows that there were remaining in that department July 31, 1879: Males, 201; females, 170; total, 371; admitted during year, males, 1,661; females, 1,196; total, 2,857; total number under treatment, males, 1,862; females, 1,366; total, 3,328; recovered, males, 1,250; females, 926; total, 2,176; improved, males, 188; females, 100; total, 288; unimproved, males, 42; females, 46; total, 88; died, males, 166; females, 90; total, 256; of these 3,328 patients, 1,259 were Irish, 750 were Germans, 710 native, 190 Swedes, 60 French, 52 Swiss, 59 Scotch, 32 Norway, 43 English, 30 Danes, 20 Italians, 12 Poles, 2 Russians, 6 Belgians, 2 Cubans, 1 Chinese. There were during the year 166 children born in the Hospital; the nativity of the mothers was as follows: United States, 83; Ireland, 53; Germany, 14; England, 8; Sweden, 2; Scotland, 1; Switzerland, 1; Nova Scotia, 1; 95 were married and 68 unmarried.

In the Hospital for Incurables there were on August 1, 1877, 288 patients; there were admitted during the year 89; the whole number treated was 377; the number discharged during the year ending July 31, 1878, was 29; number of deaths, 34; remaining in the institution July 31, 1878, 307.

The report of the Medical Superintendent of the Lunatic Asylum, Dr. R. L. Parsons, for the year ending July 31, 1878, shows that a large room, 60x90 feet in area, was much needed for the general assemblage of the patients for lectures, readings, concerts, dramatic entertainments, dancing, etc.; the room would also be adapted to the use of the female patients as a gymnasium or exercise room. The report also strongly advocates the erection of a new cookhouse, and that an omnibus and team of stout draft horses should be at the service of the patients for driving about the country, in conformity to a similar luxury at the New York City Asylum, where, it was alleged, the most excitable and violent patients were, with good effect, taken out on excursions.

The report also shows that there were remaining in the Hospital, August 1, 1877, males, 239; females, 393; total, 632; admitted during the year 1877, males, 173; females, 187; total, 360; recovered, males, 47; females, 61; total, 108; improved, males, 19; females, 24; total, 43; unimproved, males, 43; females, 26; total, 69; died, males, 25; females, 33; total, 58; total died and discharged, males, 134; females, 144; total, 278; on pass, males, 12; females, 10; total, 22; total number of patients remaining, August 1, 1878, males, 266; females, 426; total, 692. The Doctor gives a table stating the habits of the patients

during the year, as follows: temperate, males, 54; females, 128; intemperate, males, 68; females, 36; unknown, males, 51; females, 23; total, males, 173; females, 187.

The opposition to the Commissioners of Charities continued until, on October 30, 1879, a resolution was introduced to the Board of Supervisors directing the president *pro tem.* to appoint a special committee of five to consult with the Commissioners of Charities in regard to drafting an act whereby further and larger powers of correction and control, in regard to the Department of Charities, should be conferred upon the Commissioners, and whereby the dual government then existing might, with proper restrictions reserved to the Supervisors, be done away with.

There appears to have been no further action taken during the year under this resolution. The records of the Commissioners of Charities for the year 1879 exhibit little else than their annual report, and the annual reports of the Lunatic Asylum and the Hospital, and a brief report from the Keeper of the Almshouse.

The Commissioners of Charities for this year were Charles J. Henry, William M. Shipman, Andrew Zeiser, Bernhard Midas, and Harmon V. Storm. Their annual report for the year ending July 31, 1879, differed largely in form from those given heretofore, excepting the following table: The number of patients remaining at date of last report—Almshouse, 887; Hospital, 363; Asylum, 790; Hospital for Incurables, 329; admitted during year, Almshouse, 2,090; Hospital, 2,069; Asylum, 340; Hospital for Incurables, 42; discharged and died, Almshouse, 3,106; Hospital, 2,747; Asylum, 333; Hospital for Incurables, 51; total, 6,237; remaining July 31, 1879, Almshouse, 771; Hospital, 306; Asylum, 797; Hospital for Incurables, 320; total, 2,194; cared for in the institutions, 8,431; average number in institutions during year, 2,398; highest number in institutions, February 18, 1879, 2,611; lowest number in institutions, June 24, 1879, 2,181; average cost for each person supported for the year, \$104.88; average cost for each person per week, \$2.01; total amount of bills paid and due, \$266,935.78; total amount cash receipts, \$15,420.28; balance, \$251,515.50.

The Superintendent of the Almshouse, in his report, states that during the winter months every foot of space in that large building, with the exception of two sitting-rooms—even the halls and landings of the stairs—were turned into dormitories. The report also shows that the "rounders" or "repeaters," who formerly made this place their temporary home, no longer appear there. That under the new law touching what was called "State paupers," the Kings County Almshouse was the only one this side of Albany where a large increase of such paupers could be expected during the coming year; that under this act hundreds of people are forwarded to their homes and friends, and to the States where they belong, who would otherwise settle down a permanent burden upon this and other counties within the State of New York. The report strongly commends this act, as likely to relieve the crowded state of the Almshouse. It further shows that the number of inmates remaining July 31, 1878, was 887. There were received during the year, 1,714; there were 8 vagrant commitments; 387 State pauper commitments, and 881 from other institutions, making 2,990; total, 3,877; discharged, 2,423; transferred to other institutions, 547; absconded, 7; died, 129; number remaining July 31, 1879, 771.

Dr. P. H. Schenck, Medical Superintendent of the County Hospital, reports patients in that department for the year ending July 31, 1879, to be as follows:

Remaining July 31, 1878, males, 218; females, 145; total, 363; admitted during the year, males, 1,588; females, 1,102;

total, 2,690; discharged recovered, males, 1,170; females, 799; total, 1,969; discharged improved, males, 247; females, 170; total, 417; discharged unimproved, males, 22; females, 14; total, 36; died, males, 204; females, 121; total, 325; total discharged and died, males, 1,643; females, 1,104; total, 2,747; remaining July 31, 1879, males, 163; females, 143; total, 306.

The total number of patients admitted shows a decrease of 167. There were 167 children born during the year in the Hospital, 89 of the mothers were married, 75 single.

The nativity of those treated in the Hospital was as follows: Ireland, 1,411; United States, 1,013; Germany, 367; England, 138; Sweden, 29; France, 19; Scotland, 18; Canada, 13; Denmark, 9; Italy, 7; Norway, 6; Wales, 5; W. Indies, 3; Poland, 3; Austria, 2; Switzerland, 2; Russia, 1; Portugal, 1; China, 1; Australia, 1; Hungary, 1; Chili, 1; Nova Scotia, 1.

The report of the Superintendent of the Hospital for Incurables, for the year ending July 31, 1879, shows there were remaining August 1, 1878, males, 144; females, 162; total, 306; number admitted, males, 25; females, 17; total, 42; whole number treated, males, 169; females, 179; total, 348; number discharged, males, 20; females, 7; total, 27; died, males, 13; females, 11; total, 24; whole total, males, 33; females, 18; total, 51; remaining July 31, 1879, males, 136; females, 161; total, 297.

The annual report of Dr. John C. Shaw, Medical Superintendent of the County Lunatic Asylum, for the year ending July 31, 1879:

In Asylum, August 1, 1878, males, 266; females, 426; total, 692; out on pass on August 1, 17; admissions during year, males, 180; females, 160; total, 340; recovered, males, 73; females, 47; total, 120; improved, males, 58; females, 48; total, 106; unimproved, males, 27; females, 11; total, 38; not insane, males, 1; females, 1, total, 2; died, males, 26; females, 41; total, 67; remaining in Asylum, August 1, 1879, males, 270; females, 446; total, 716.

The insanity of 50 of these patients was caused by the use of intoxicating liquors; 20 from religious excitement; 163 were married, 150 single; 12 widows 9 widowers.

So successful was the movement for abolishing the Board of Commissioners of Charities in the county, and for the establishment of a new Board, to be called the "*Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections*," that early in March, 1880, a bill was introduced into the Legislature of the State providing for the organization of the last-named Board. This bill created much excitement in the county, and the opposition to it took a form that is still fresh in the memory of many citizens. The Board of Supervisors were singularly hostile to the new act, notwithstanding the long-continued difficulties of their predecessors with the Commissioners of Charities, which was often demonstrated by acts of positive hostility, as we have seen.

Notwithstanding the resolutions of remonstrance and the efforts of committees appointed by the Supervisors, fierce opposition to the proposed measure, and the use of every conceivable means for its defeat, it was successful, and on the 13th day of May, 1880, the act to provide for the creation of "A Board of Charities and Corrections in the County of Kings," and for the appointment of the Commissioners thereof, and their subordinates, passed both branches of the Legislature of the State and became a law.

The importance of this act, and the sweeping changes

which it produced in the management of the Poor establishment of the county, may be seen from the following synopsis of its several sections :

This act (sec. 1) designates the new Commissioners as "The Commissioners of Charities and Corrections of the County of Kings," provides that they be appointed by the Supervisor-at-Large, or by the President *pro tem.* of the county; also (sec. 2) provides that no successors shall either be elected or appointed for the two Commissioners whose term of office shall expire first after the passage of this act; but that as the terms of the said Commissioners shall respectively expire, the number composing the Board constituted by this act shall be correspondingly reduced, so that the Board shall ultimately be composed of three Commissioners; the successors of the two Commissioners elected in 1878 to be appointed by the President *pro tempore* on or before October 1, 1881; the successor of the Commissioner elected in 1879 to be appointed during the month of September, 1882, by the Supervisor-at-Large, and these three Commissioners and their three successors to hold office for four years, and until their successors shall have been appointed; vacancies in the office during the years 1880 or 1881 shall be filled by the President *pro tempore* of the Supervisors, and after that vacancies shall be filled by the Supervisor-at-Large; and the successors of the Commissioners appointed under secs. 2 and 3 of this act shall be appointed on or before the 15th day of October preceding the expiration of the term of the respective Commissioners; the salary of those hereafter appointed shall be \$3,000 per annum. The act (sec. 4) establishes the name, nature, power and functions, both of supply, purchase and government, of the new Board; including, also, under their powers of appointment, the storekeepers; and, after the expiration of the term of the present Keeper of the Penitentiary and of the Morgue of the county, giving to the Board the appointment and control of their successors, and of the persons confined in said institutions; provides (sec. 5) that the new Board shall have exclusive power to fix the salaries of all its officers and subordinates; and that (sec. 6) it shall have power to indenture and bind out within the State, as apprentices, during their minority, any minor children over fourteen years of age who may be under their care and control, &c., &c.

The Board of Superintendents of the Poor and that of the Commissioners of Charities of the county were now things of the past, and a new body, possessing far greater powers than either of their predecessors (and, so far as the Poor establishment of the county is concerned, equal to that once possessed by the Board of Supervisors), was thus created in their place.

This new Board entered at once on the duties of their office, and, July 31, 1880, their first annual report for the preceding year was published.

This report shows the number of persons supported

during the year ending July 31, 1880, to have been 1,595. It was signed by Moses Kessel, James Ryan, H. V. Storm, who (elected in the order of their terms), being in office when the new Board was constituted, became Commissioners of Charities and Corrections until the expiration of their office.

Remaining in the Almshouse, at date of the last report, 755; Hospital, 275; Asylum, 721; Hospital for Incurables, 324; total, 2,075; admitted during the year, Almshouse, 1,863; Hospital, 2,396; Asylum, 437; Hospital for Incurables, 65; total, 4,761; whole total in Almshouse, 2,618; Hospital, 2,671; Asylum, 1,158; Hospital for Incurables, 389; total, 6,836. Died and discharged during year, Almshouse, 1,931; Hospital, 2,386; Asylum, 354; Hospital for Incurables, 88; total, 4,759; remaining July 31, 1880, Almshouse, 687; Hospital, 285; Asylum, 804; Hospital for Incurables, 301; total, 2,077; cared for by the institutions, 6,836; average number in the institutions during the year, 1,873; average cost of each person during the year 1880, \$118.76; average cost of each person per week, 1880, \$2.28; total amount of bills paid and due, \$239,316.53; total cash receipts, \$17,464.30.

The Superintendent of the Almshouse, Martin V. Burroughs, reported no further improvements needed to the buildings; the renewal of an old rule (now several years in abeyance), that all men applicants for lodgings should break two bushels of stone before receiving their supper, or a place to sleep, had greatly lessened the number of tramps applying for lodging; an effectual separation of the sexes had been effected except in the chapel; that the female department was in urgent need of a change of management, and especially in improving its means of heating; that the farm had been enlarged by the addition of sixteen acres of leased ground. The officers under Mr. Burroughs were William Carrigan, clerk and steward; Miss Maria J. Trumble, matron; Mrs. B. L. Bowen, matron of Nursery.

Dr. P. L. Schenck, of the County Hospital, reported as remaining in the Hospital July 31, 1879, 163 males, 143 females; total, 306; admitted during the year, 1,544 males, 995 females; total, 2,539; total in Hospital, 1,707 males, 1,138 females; total, 2,845; discharged recovered, 1,097 males, 630 females, total, 1,727; improved, 246 males, 181 females; total, 427; unimproved, 39 males, 32 females; total, 71; died, 158 males, 142 females; total, 300; total number discharged and died, 1,540, males, 985 females; total, 2,525; remaining July 31, 1880, 167 males, 153 females; total, 320; total, 1,707 males, 1,138 females; total, 2,845; admitted during the year ending July 31, 1879, 2,690; during the year ending July 31, 1880, 2,539, showing a decrease of 151. The results of treatment were as follows: 1,727, or 68.40 per cent., recovered; 427, or 16.91 per cent., improved; 71, or 2.81 per cent., unimproved; 300, or 11.88 per cent., died. The number of births in this institution during the year was 130. The Doctor acknowledges his obligations to the ladies of the Flower and Fruit Charity for their supply of the Hospital patients with fruits and flowers, and to the clergy of Brooklyn for their devotion to the spiritual wants of the patients.

Dr. Guy Daly, of the Hospital for Incurables, reports as remaining in that institution July 31, 1879, 136 males, 161 females; admitted during the year, 42 males, 21 females; whole number treated, 178 males, 182 females; discharged during the year, 14 males, 10 females; died, 20 males, 12 females; remaining July 31, 1880, 144 males, 160 females.

The report of John C. Shaw, M.D., Medical Superintendent of Lunatic Asylum, for the year ending July 31, 1880, shows that the number of patients in the asylum July 31, 1879, was 270 males, 447 females; total, 717; admitted during year, 205 males, 213 females; total, 418; discharged or removed, 141 males, 134 females; total, 275; recovered, 47 males, 41 females; total, 88;

improved, 49 males, 57 females, total, 106; unimproved, 44 males, 34 females; total, 78; not insane, 1 male, 2 females; total, 3; died, 33 males, 31 females; total, 64; remaining in Asylum August 1, 1880, 301 males, 495 females; total, 796. Of 418 admitted into the Asylum, all but 154 were foreigners.

The medical staff of the County Institutions, when the Board of Commissioners and Corrections went into operation, consisted of: P. L. Schenck, M.D., Superintendent of the *County Hospital*, with R. P. Collins, M.D., H. D. Nevin, M.D., H. L. Cochran, M.D., G. M. Ferris, M.D., as assistant physicians; J. L. Zabriskie, M.D., Tennis Schenck, M.D., consulting physicians; Homer L. Bartlett, M.D., Joseph C. Hutchinson, M.D., consulting surgeons. The *County Lunatic Asylum*, John C. Shaw, medical superintendent; John A. Arnold, M.D., John S. Woodside, M.D., John Frank, M.D., assistant physicians; George H. Coddington, clinical assistant. The County Morgue and County Penitentiary had also been placed under the control and management of the new Board.

The first difficulty which the new Board encountered was, whether they were required by law to submit the bills for supplies purchased by them for the Poor establishment of the county to the Board of Supervisors for their approval, in order to enable the County Treasurer to pay the same. While some took the view that the act constituting the new Board vested in them all the powers of purchase and supply, and authority, &c., &c., previously possessed by the Commissioners of Charities and the Board of Supervisors of the County, others contended that the power to *purchase* supplies only was conferred on the new Board by the act; that the power of approval possessed by the Supervisors over the purchases and bills of the Commissioners of Charities had never been taken from them and still existed; that though the absolute power conferred upon the new Board to purchase, includes the power to agree upon the price, and any price agreed upon by the Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections was binding upon the Board of Supervisors, yet there were other matters, or might be, touching the said bill to be determined by the Supervisors, which would serve as salutary checks for the public interest. In January, 1881, this question was fully submitted to Mr. Winchester Britton, one of the oldest members of the Kings County Bar, for his opinion and decision, which was rendered February 19, 1881, and which coincided substantially with the latter view of the question.

February 24, 1881, Mr. W. M. Shipman, President of the Board of Charities and Corrections, presented a petition to the Supervisors, representing that the Lunatic Asylum and Hospital for Incurables were entirely inadequate for the rapidly increasing need of the inmates and the community; that that portion of the Lunatic Asylum called the "Lodge" was actually unsafe; the Asylum building was so overcrowded that, in a measure, the efforts and skill of the physicians were baffled; that the Hospital for Incurables was over-

crowded to a large extent; the female ward of the Almshouse was also in great need of alterations and enlargement; that these alterations would demand the erection of a dwelling and office for the warden, and also a store-room; that a comfortable brick structure should take the place of the old frame building occupied as a ward for the colored patients. To meet these requirements an appropriation of \$90,000 would be required. The alterations and improvements on the Hospital for Incurables would require \$60,000, and those on the Almshouse \$30,000.

At the annual meeting of the Supervisors in August, 1881, the Commissioners of Charities and Corrections called the attention of the former Board to the stern necessity of erecting a hospital at Flatbush for a Small-pox Hospital, denouncing a resolution of a former Board adverse to building such a building.

On October 1st, 1881, Brewster Kissam and A. H. W. Van Sicklen were, by the Act of May 13, 1880, appointed Commissioners of Charities and Corrections in place of Charles J. Henry and Wm. Shipman, whose term of office had expired. By the expiration of official terms only one member of the old Board, James Ryan, continued in office on January 1, 1882.

The annual report of the Board for the year ending July 31st, 1881, shows as remaining in the Poor establishment of the county, July 31, 1880, 68 in the almshouse, 320 in the hospital, 304 in Hospital for Incurables, 796 in asylum, 600 in the Penitentiary, total, 2,708; admitted during the year, 2,567 to the almshouse, 3,300 to the hospital, 44 to the Hospital for Incurables, 428 in the Lunatic Asylum, 753 to the penitentiary; total, 7,092; totals, in almshouse, 3,255; hospital, 3,620; Hospital for Incurables, 340; asylum, 1,224; Penitentiary, 1,353; total, 9,800; died and discharged during the year, almshouse, 2,582; hospital, 3,230; Hospital for Incurables, 40; asylum, 356; Penitentiary, 700; total, 6,897; remaining July 31, 1881, almshouse, 673; hospital, 381; Hospital for Incurables, 308; asylum, 368; Penitentiary, 653; total, 2,883; cared for in the institutions, 800; average number in institutions during the year, 2,939; average cost of each inmate per year, \$97.77; average cost of each inmate per week, \$1.88; total amount of bills paid and due, \$294,470.23; total amount of cash receipts, \$67,545.02.

The report of Mr. Wm. Murray shows the increased necessity for the enlargement of that department, although the building occupied by the male inmates is in a good sanitary condition, with some few exceptions. It also shows that a baby ward was nearly completed, and well adapted for the purpose for which it was constructed; that 1,442 persons received into the almshouse during the year ending July 31, 1880, were committed by order of the Commissioners, 495 were committed as State paupers, 630 were from other institutions. This added to 688—the whole number of inmates July 31, 1880—presents the total of 3,255 received into the institution during the year, and from whence they came. Of these there were discharged during the year 1,957; transferred to other institutions, 460; absconded, 26; died, 139; number remaining July 31, 1881, 673; males, 247; females, 426; natives, 270; foreigners, 403; children, 53; adults, 620.

Dr. P. L. Schenck, Medical Superintendent of the Kings County Hospital, for the year ending July 31, 1881, reports as in the Hospital July 31, 1880, 320—167 males, 153 females; admitted during the year, 3,300—2,005 males, 1,295 females; total in Hospital, 3,620—2,172 males, 1,448 females. There were discharged recovered, 2,293—1,413 males, 880 females; improved, 400—254 males, 146 females; unimproved, 97—58 males, 39 fe-

males; died, 449—250 males, 199 females; total number died and discharged, 3,239—1,975 males, 1,264 females; remaining July 31, 1881, 381—197 males, 184 females; increase of patients over last year, 775. Of the 3,300 inmates, 2,117 were foreigners.

Dr. Schenck's resignation was tendered on the 11th of July, and accepted by the Board with many regrets.

Dr. John Shaw, Medical Superintendent of the Kings County Insane Asylum, speaks in high terms of the measures taken for the erection of two wooden cottages, near the Asylum, to hold from 80 to 100 patients. The erection of six more had been strongly recommended, but the Doctor insisted, to use his own language, "that it will not do to put up six wooden cottages now, and think that all is done which is required. Temporising is foolish; arrangements should be made for obtaining a large tract of land to have room for the great increase of patients, for this large number will have to be cared for, and we should be preparing for it."

There were remaining in the Asylum August 1, 1880, 790 patients—301 males, 495 females; admitted during the year, 420—218 males, 210 females; total during year, 1,224—519 males, 705 females; discharged, 269—148 males, 121 females; died, 87—42 males, 45 females; whole total, 356—190 males, 166 females; remaining in Asylum August 1, 1881, 868—329 males, 539 females; recovered, 72—34 males, 38 females; improved, 121—62 males, 59 females; unimproved, 75—52 males, 23 females; not insane, 1 female; total, 269—148 males, 121 females.

John Arnold, M.D., Superintendent of the Hospital for Incurables, for the year, reports the number of patients remaining August 1, 1880, 143 males, 161 females; admitted during the year, 29 males, 15 females; whole number treated, 172 males, 176 females; discharged during the year, 13 males, 6 females; died during the year, 15 males, 6 females; remaining July 31, 1881, 144 males, 164 females.

The first annual report of the Kings County Penitentiary, by Mr. John Green, Warden for the fiscal year of 1881, shows that his appointment dated from the 1st of January, 1881, and the report of the condition of the institution can be given only from the accounts kept by his predecessor. The state of affairs which existed at the time Mr. Green took charge of the Penitentiary was, to say the least, discreditable. There were no records of the reception or discharge of prisoners; no regular books to be found that would indicate the manner of conducting, or the amount of business yearly transacted. One thing was plainly manifested, however: the expenses for the five months preceding the 1st of January exceeded the receipts by \$5,736.93, when with proper management the balance would have been the other way, because the receipts for seven months since the 1st of January, 1881, have exceeded the expenditures by \$7,677.20, which is sufficient to pay the said deficiency, and leave \$1,940.27 to the credit of the institution for the fiscal year, the first since its completion that it has been either self-sustaining or yielding a revenue to the county; notwithstanding the receipts for the years 1875-6-7-8-9, from convict labor, board of United States prisoners, appropriations and other sources, amounted to \$92,521 annually, while less than \$70,000 per year would easily have paid the running expenses of the Penitentiary. The actual number of convicts on hand was fraudulently increased, with a view to reducing the high rate per capita resulting from charging the county for enormous quantities of supplies that were never received at the Penitentiary. Prisoners were often discharged several days in advance of the expiration of their term of sentence; the discipline, such as existed, was maintained by a frequent and merciless use of the lash, and prisoners were worked in the shoe-shops on Sunday, while there were numbers of favored prisoners in the institution who were mildly dealt with under all circumstances.

The average number of prisoners in the Penitentiary for the seven months preceding July 31, 1881, was 618; their earnings

were \$42,369.27; their expenses were \$34,692.07; the profit was \$7,677.20. Male prisoners sentenced for one year or more, 312; females, 30; total, 342; male prisoners less than one year, 232; females, 26; total, 258; grand total, 600.

Of the prisoners in the Penitentiary on the 1st of January, 1881, 8 were sentenced for life; the whole number of "long term" prisoners was 342; of those sentenced from 6 to 10 months, 98; for less than 6 months, 160.

The average earnings *per capita* of the convicts *per diem* for the seven months preceding the 1st of January, 1881, was $32\frac{3}{10}$ cents; the expenses *per capita per diem* was $26\frac{4}{10}$ cents. Salaries of the principal officers of the Penitentiary were: Warden, \$2,700; engineer, \$1,200; roundsman, \$1,000; hall-keeper, \$1,000; assistant hall-keeper, \$1,000; clerk, \$900; door-keeper, \$900; shop-keeper, \$900, and thirteen other shop-keepers receiving each \$900 per year; two matrons received each \$480 per annum; two assistant matrons, \$360 each per annum.

The County Morgue.—By the act creating the Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections, the control, management and custody of the County Morgue was given to that Board. Previous to July 16th, 1869, there existed for a time a place for the reception of those found dead, called the "County Dead House," a cheap, inconvenient affair, more of a nuisance than anything else. On July 2, 1869, a written complaint against this building from Drs. Jones and Whitehill, Coronors of the county, was presented to the Board of Supervisors, earnestly asking that some action might be taken in regard to the matter. On the 16th of the same month, plans were presented to the Board for the erection of a morgue for the county, which were favorably received, and soon thereafter the same was in process of erection near the County Jail in Brooklyn, and in due time was completed. It contained office, post-mortem room, exhibition room, retiring room, inquisition room, jury room, each of which were appropriately and handsomely furnished. On January 11th, 1870, Mr. John Leary was appointed Keeper of the Morgue, and March 14th, 1870, rules and regulations for the government of the Morgue were adopted, providing, among other things, that it should be open at all hours of the day and night for the reception of dead bodies; that the exhibition room should be kept open daily to the public from sunrise to sunset. Bodies were to remain in the exhibition hall if not recognized, at the discretion of the coronor. When identified, bodies were to be immediately withdrawn to a private room. A book was to be kept in which citizens could record the names of missing friends, describing their persons, clothing and address of relatives. There should be an alphabetical list of all identified persons; the clothes of unrecognized bodies should be washed and preserved for six months. The attendants at the Morgue shall under no circumstances ask from relatives or friends of deceased persons, under any pretext, fees for services rendered.

On July 15th, 1880, the Supervisors decided to remove the Morgue to the northeast corner of the jail yard. December 24th, 1880, contract for the removal and repairs was duly entered into, and the new Morgue was again ready for occupancy about the middle of May, 1881.

On the 6th of October, 1881, the Morgue was, by a resolution of the Board of Supervisors, duly transferred to the charge of the Commissioners of Charities and Corrections, and Mr. Patrick Maguire was appointed keeper. His first annual report for the seven months preceding July 31st, 1881, is meagre, but shows that during that time twenty-three bodies had been brought to the Morgue; all of them except two were recognized.

Present Officers of the Charities Department.—As we have now presented the history of the creation and organization of the Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections, and a history of their first seven months of their administration, it is proper to give the names of the officers at the head of the departments under the Commissioners: D. C. Toal, *chief clerk*; T. H. Glass, *assistant clerk*; Wm. Sullivan, *counsel*; Joseph Short, jr., *district office clerk*; T. J. Donovan and Francis Doyle, *district office assistant clerks*; J. S. Young, M.D., Joseph Cramer, M.D., C. E. Demund, M.D., Matthew Smith, M.D., *district office physicians*.

Hospital: P. L. Schenck, medical superintendent; H. Plymton, M.D., J. L. Roseboom, M.D., C. F. Newman, M.D., F. Little, M.D., G. H. Coddington, M.D., assistant physicians; John L. Zabriskie, M.D., and Tennis Schenck, M.D., consulting physicians; Homer L. Bartlett, M.D., and Joseph Hutchinson, M.D., consulting surgeons.

Hospital for Incurables: John A. Arnold, M.D., medical superintendent.

Insane Asylum: John C. Shaw, M.D., medical superintendent; John L. Woodside, M.D., George Convery, M.D., assistant physicians.

The officers in the department of the *Penitentiary* have been previously given.

About the 15th of January, 1882, the two cottages to be erected on the Poor House (Incurable Hospital) grounds at Flatbush were completed, and on the 18th of that month the Board of Supervisors were formally notified that the same had been accepted by the Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections.

On the morning of the 21st of February, 1882, a disastrous fire occurred at the Lunatic Asylum, partially destroying one wing of the building, and suddenly depriving one hundred and seventy-five patients of their accommodations at a time when the weather was intensely cold.* On February 23, 1882, Hon. A. H. W.

* The fire occurred on the male side, at six o'clock A. M., destroying two wards, with other serious damages to the building, and was the immediate cause of the death of three patients, two of whom were burned to death and one died of cardiac syncope, caused by fright. The fire was caused by one

Van Sicten, President of the Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections, in a very able and succinct communication addressed to the Board of Supervisors, set forth the situation of the Asylum after the fire and called their attention to the general condition of that institution. "The Lunatic Asylum," he said, "was entirely inadequate to accommodate, with any degree of comfort, the large number of inmates confined in it—a number which was being added to, almost daily. Such accommodations have been furnished for relieving this great overcrowding by the erection of two cottages on the ground of the Asylum for Incurables; but this is mere temporary relief. Even now the pressure for more room is nearly as great as it was before they were erected. The same state of affairs exists at the Hospital for Incurables. It is impossible to care for the number of inmates which a population of over half a million makes necessary in buildings constructed to meet the wants of ten, fifteen and twenty-five years ago. It is evident that our county has not kept pace in its public institutions with the rapidly increasing yearly demand made upon them."

President Van Sicten continues: "The female department of the Almshouse is in a worse condition than any other institution under this Board. At the present writing there are over 400 inmates in the building, many of them old and feeble women, some of them so advanced in years that they are unable to leave the room in which they sleep, and were they able to do so, there would be no place for them to go, all available space being occupied for sleeping accommodations. In a sanitary point of view, this is certainly reprehensible, as during cold and stormy weather it is impossible to ventilate their apartments."

He then calls attention to the old, damaged, steep and narrow stairways connecting the different floors of the building, and points out the frightful consequences that would follow the breaking out of a fire in the building, and recommends some appliances for aiding the escape of the inmates from the institutions on the County Farm in case of fire. He concludes by asking the Supervisors for an appropriation of \$30,000 for improvements and repairs on the Asylum, exclusive of the amount necessary to repair the Asylum in its damage by fire. The Board of Supervisors responded promptly and favorably to all of this communication.

September 14, 1882, A. H. W. Van Sicten, President of the Board of Charities and Corrections, presented to the Board of Supervisors a very exhaustive report on the subject of an adequate provision against fire at the Poor Establishment of the County at Flatbush, which was very favorably received by the Board. In

of the patients, with some soiled clothing on his back, which took fire without his knowledge from a gas jet under which he passed. The clothing with the fire smouldering in it was thrown into a closet where there was a straw bed: five minutes afterwards smoke was seen issuing from the closet. Upon opening the doors flames burst out in such volumes as to baffle all attempts at suppression. It was to the gallant efforts of the Fire Department that the county is indebted for the safety of the remainder of the building.

September Joseph Reeve was appointed Commissioner of Charities and Corrections, in place of James Ryan, whose official term was to expire December 31, 1882.

The annual report of the Commissioners of Charities and Corrections for the year ending July 31, 1882, with the reports of the heads of the different departments of the Poor Establishment, shows that there were remaining in all the departments on July 31, 1881, 673 in Almshouse; 381 in Hospital; 308 in Hospital for Incurables; 868 in Asylum; 653 in Penitentiary; total, 2,883; admitted and born during the year, 2,558 in Almshouse; 3,970 in Hospital; 110 in Hospital for Incurables; 353 in Asylum; 1,000 in Penitentiary; 7,991 total; totals, in Almshouse, 3,231; Hospital, 4,551; Hospital for Incurables, 418; Asylum, 1,221; Penitentiary, 1,653; total, 10,874; died and discharged during the year, Almshouse, 2,442; Hospital, 4,013; Hospital for Incurables, 42; Asylum, 438; Penitentiary, 1,077; total, 8,012; remaining July 31, 1882, Almshouse, 789; Hospital, 338; Hospital for Incurables, 376; Asylum, 783; Penitentiary, 576; total, 2,862; cared for in the institutions, 10,874; average number in institutions during the year, 2,979; average cost of each person supported during the year, \$89.95; per week, \$1.73; total amount of bills paid and due, \$366,612.63; total amount of cash receipts, \$98,645.33. This report was signed by A. H. W. Van Sieten, President; Brewster Kissam and James Ryan, Commissioners.

The Superintendent of the Almshouse reports 673 inmates remaining in it on July 31, 1881; received during the year upon Commissioners' orders, 1,798; received on vagrant commitments, 20; from other institutions, 740; total, 2,558; which, with the 673 in the institution July 31, 1881, makes 3,231; discharged during the year, 1,750; transferred to other institutions, 610; absconded, 7; died, 75; number remaining July 31, 1882, 789; County paupers, 76; males, 306; females, 483; children, 73; adults, 716; natives, 285; foreigners, 501.

The report of Dr. John A. Arnold, Medical Superintendent of the Kings County Hospital, for the year, shows that there were remaining there on July 31, 1881, 197 males, 184 females; total, 381; admitted during the year, 2,372 males, 1,979 females; total, 4,351; recovered, males, 1,448; females, 1,228; total, 2,676; improved, males, 409; females, 272; total, 681; unimproved, males, 62; females, 53; total, 115; died, males, 304; females, 237; total, 541; total number discharged and died, males, 2,223; females, 1,790; total, 4,013; remaining July 31, 1882, males, 149; females, 189; total, 338; totals, males, 2,372; females, 1,979; total, 4,351.

The total number of patients shows an increase of 670, and an increase of 1,431 over the year ending July 31, 1880. The total number of patients treated, known as "out-door patients," for the year ending July 31, 1882, was 1,521; these are not included in the foregoing. There were 124 children born in the Hospital during the year; of the mothers 58 were married, and 63 single.

During the year Dr. H. Plimpton resigned the position of Acting Medical Superintendent, to accept a position on the Asylum staff. Drs. Talmage, Brewster, Little and Newman also resigned, and the consulting staff was increased to its original number, by the appointment of Dr. P. L. Schenck as surgeon, and Dr. J. S. Prout as physician. The ladies of the "*Fruit and Flower Mission*," Madame Rosalie, Commissioner Ropes, of the State Board of Charities, and the ladies of the Local Visiting Committee, continued their visits and errands of mercy to the inmates.

Dr. John C. Shaw, Medical Superintendent of the Insane Asylum, for the year ending July 31, 1882, recommended venti-

lating turrets to back of the wings, for the purpose of keeping the wards free from disagreeable odor; also changes in the heating apparatus, so the sleeping rooms in certain wards could be warmed. At that time, there was not a sleeping room in the Asylum that could be warmed, which was a source of great anxiety to the medical staff and danger to the patients. He also recommended an addition of lands to the Asylum grounds, providing more accommodation, and a better diet, namely: milk, eggs, fruit, vegetables, &c., for the patients, and the erection of a special building, for the proper accommodation of the 100 patients paying board in the institution, as advantageous both to these boarders and to the county, and as increasing the income of the county; the erection of a (frame) amusement hall, at a cost of not more than from \$1,500 to \$3,000.

A strong effort was made during the year to find occupation for as many of the patients as was possible, and in this way a large quantity of valuable and much needed articles of apparel, underwear, bedding, towels, table spreads, embroidery, knitting and other fancy work was made by them.

The report shows that there were remaining in the Asylum on the 31st of July, 1881, males, 329; females, 539; total, 868; admitted during the year, males, 180; females, 173; total, 353; total treated during the year, males, 509; females, 712; total, 1,221; total number discharged, males, 153; females, 194; total, 347; died, males, 52; females, 39; total 91; total died and discharged, males, 205; females, 233; total, 438; remaining August 1, 1882, males, 304; females, 479; total, 783; on probation, males, 6; females, 8; total, 14; recovered, males, 30; females, 34; total, 64; improved, males, 37; females, 48; total, 85; unimproved, males, 84; females, 108; total, 192; improper subjects, males, 2; females, 4; total, 6; totals, males, 153; females, 194; whole total, 347. There were 44 State paupers admitted into the Asylum and discharged therefrom during the year.

The report of the Warden of the Penitentiary for the same year shows that while it was more than self-sustaining during the year, the earnings for convicts' labor were not as large as those of the previous year, notwithstanding the system of furnishing runners or shop waiters, that had been adopted by the Commissioners, added at least \$2,000 per annum to the receipts of the institution, from the fact that the daily average number of convicts on the shoe contract was considerably less than the last year. This was due to the practice of sentencing prisoners to the Jail instead of to the Penitentiary, where they would have to work, thereby relieving the county from their support.

The bill that passed the Legislature the previous winter, mainly through the efforts of the Commissioners of Charities, &c., exempting the Kings County Penitentiary from the operation of the Penal Code, which the Governor failed to sign, was a serious injury to that institution, as it causes the withdrawal of long term prisoners from the Penitentiary, that will have the effect of again making that institution a burden upon the taxpayers of the county.

The daily average number of convicts during the year was 563, a decrease of 55, as compared with the seven months comprising the last year's report. The whole number received was 1,000; the whole number discharged was 1,073. The prisoners were kept constantly employed, unless in the judgment of the physicians they were mentally or physically incapacitated for work. The increase in per capita cost over the previous year was owing to the lesser number of prisoners and a higher cost of provisions.

Dr. Homer L. Bartlett, physician in charge of the Penitentiary Hospital, reports briefly, but ably, the sanitary condition of the Penitentiary, and calls attention to the law regulating punishment of prisoners to confinement in dark cells, as the only punishment inflicted in the Kings County Penitentiary. He had visited all prisoners in such confinement three times in each week, ordering their release when he deemed it necessary.

The highest number of prisoners in the institution was on the

12th day of August, 1881, when there were 658. The lowest number during the same period was on the 3d day of May, 1882, when there were 506. The amount of stock on hand Aug. 1, 1881, was valued at \$1,362.98; there were expended for supplies during the year \$38,134.65; stock on hand July 31, 1882, was valued at \$1,601.92; supplies consumed during the year amounted to \$37,895.91.

John S. Woodside, M.D., Medical Superintendent of the Hospital for Incurables, reports the main building of that institution as much overcrowded; that the cubic space per patient in the sleeping rooms being but 350 cubic feet, when it should be in the neighborhood of 1,000 cubic feet; another defect was a want of proper accommodations for sick, violent or filthy patients; there were no single rooms; the smallest number sleeping together in one room was ten or twelve; the health of the patients during the year had been unusually good, though several cases of small-pox had occurred during the winter; that the patients, both men and women, had been generally employed. The hospital had received close attention from the Ladies of the State Charities Aid Association, with very favorable results. The "Fruit and Flower Mission," of Brooklyn, had exhibited their usual beneficence in bestowing fruits, flowers and other delicacies upon the patients. The death rate had been very low—about $4\frac{1}{2}$ per cent., not a single death having occurred during the last four months of the fiscal year. The number of patients remaining in the Hospital July 31, 1881, was 144 males, 164 females; total 308; admitted during the year, 36 males, 74 females; total, 110; totals, 180 males, 238 females; total, 418; discharged during the year, 18 males, 7 females; total, 25; died during the year, 12 males, 5 females; total, 17; total number remaining July 31, 1882, was 150 males, 226 females; total, 376.

The report of the Keeper of the Morgue, from the 15th of October, 1881, ending on the 31st July, 1882, shows that during the months of August and September, 1881, the building was undergoing repairs, and that no bodies were received. The total number of bodies for the ten months was 114, of which 66 were identified, and 48 not identified. Of the 66 identified, 21 were interred by the county, making the total number interred by the county 69, 45 being interred by their friends; 25 of these were drowned, 13 were foundlings. Of the whole number brought to the Morgue, 23 were women, 24 still-born infants, and 6 unknown children.

Thus closes the history of the *Superintendent of the Poor*, the subsequent *Commissioners of Charities*, and the later *Commissioners of Charities and Corrections* for the County of Kings.

It is to be regretted that the records and reports of the Commissioners for the year 1883 are not so far completed, at this writing, as to permit of our availing ourselves of them for the conclusion of this chapter.

It is proper, also, to say, in taking leave of the history of the Poor Establishment of Kings County, that the present Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections, although less than three years in office, has already inspired the public with confidence in its ability and in the humane manner in which it wields the important administrative duties committed to it.

ALBERT AMMERMAN.

THE subject of this sketch was born in Monmouth County, New Jersey, in the year 1838, and received a common school education in that vicinity. Very early in life he entered actively into business in Squan village, but soon found his way to the nearest commercial centre, the city of New Brunswick, where he remained until the outbreak of the Civil War. While a resident of New Brunswick he took an active part in the politics of that most exciting period, and was a leading spirit among the "Wide-Awakes" and the "Minute Men" of the city in the memorable Presidential campaign that preceded the secession of the Southern States. He cast his first ballot for the local Republican candidates in 1859, and in 1860 his first Presidential vote was polled for Abraham Lincoln. From that day forward Mr. Ammerman has been a staunch and devoted adherent of the Republican party. When the call to arms was sounded in the North the young and enthusiastic Republican went to the front with the Seventh Regiment of New York Volunteers, which afterwards furnished so many efficient officers to the Union arms.

On his return from the war Mr. Ammerman settled in Brooklyn, where he embarked extensively in the lumber and timber business, on Gowanus Canal. In 1865, in the City of Churches, he married Miss Louise B. Day, of Westfield, Mass., a lady who had recently graduated from Brooklyn Heights Seminary, under Professor West, and who was rich in every endowment that makes a refined and happy home. In a few years he became the head of a model household; indeed, his home on South Elliot place was as well ordered and as happy as any in the city, whose peculiar boast is the domestic refinement of her people. While

yet a young man Mr. Ammerman was selected by the chief magistrate of Brooklyn to serve on the Board of Education, and he held a seat in that body for nine years. In that time he left the impress of an active mind and of keen practical judgment on the public schools of the city of his adoption; but particularly on those which came under his immediate supervision as a member of Local School Committees. In this sphere he was known as the ardent advocate of broad, liberal education, not only in the elementary branches and commercial studies, but in the gentler arts, like music and drawing, which give the humblest life an unspeakable charm, and whose refining influence is afterwards felt in the home. One of the results of Mr. Ammerman's course in the Board of Education was that he achieved a large personal popularity through the city, which stood him in good stead when his party named him for the discharge of still more important official functions in the civic government.

In the fall of the year 1878, many of the leading Republicans of Brooklyn urged Mr. Ammerman to allow his name to be used in the City Convention of the party, in connection with the nomination to the City Auditorship. Yielding to their solicitations and to the argument that his candidature would help the whole ticket, he consented, and became the unanimous nominee of his party for this important office. It was one of the most stirring campaigns in the history of Brooklyn. To the great delight of his friends, and the profound satisfaction of leading Republicans of the city, he was elected by a handsome majority. His elevation to the City Auditorship necessitated, under the terms of an unwritten law, his resignation from the Board of



A. Ammerman

Education, and he reluctantly severed his connection with a department to which he had become endeared by long and pleasant associations, and in which he had found a most congenial sphere for his activities. After the election of 1878, and while Mr. Ammerman was still City Auditor of Brooklyn, the Legislature of the State passed a measure remodeling the entire civic government, and throwing on his shoulders, in conjunction with the Mayor and Comptroller, enormous responsibility in the selection of heads of municipal departments. In the discharge of the new and difficult duties which fell upon him through the action of the State Legislature, he displayed sagacity, ripe judgment and keen knowledge of men, which won him the golden opinions of friends and challenged the admiration of political opponents. During his term of office a persistent and powerfully organized attempt was made to change the management of the great bridge over the East River, including the chief engineer, Colonel Washington A. Roebling, and his corps of able assistants. As an official, in whose hands the power of appointing trustees of the bridge was vested, Mr. Ammerman set his face against this attempt to turn out men who had been connected with the prodigious enterprise from its inception, and just as they were about to reap the well-merited rewards of their long waiting and their unswerving fidelity to

the work, through fair weather and foul. Through the City Auditor's vote, the bridge management remained practically unchanged to the end; and the result amply vindicated his judgment. At the close of his term as City Auditor, Mr. Ammerman abandoned the turmoil of politics, and became a member of the great furniture house of Cowperthwait Company. His official career covered one of the most critical epochs in the history of the municipal government of Brooklyn. He was a leading actor in the stormiest episodes of a changeful period. He came out of the ordeal triumphantly, and with the plaudits of friends and opponents.

As we have stated, he was married in 1865; there were four interesting children born of this marriage, one son and three daughters, all of whom are living. In March, 1878, his devoted and accomplished wife, to whom he was most tenderly attached, was taken from him by death. Though the blow was at first almost insupportable, the consciousness of the duty he owed to his children, and his strong native character, enabled him to endure it, and to discharge his domestic and business duties in a successful manner; his children are being educated and reared under those fortunate circumstances that give undoubted assurance of their future welfare and happiness.

EDMUND DRIGGS.

THE biography of the venerable President of the Williamsburg City Fire Insurance Company is replete with valuable instruction. Young men, particularly, will find in it incentives to persevering industry, integrity, and the cultivation of that benevolence, manifested in all the relations of life, which is at once the strength and crowning grace of character. In a ripe and vigorous old age, with competence and honor, the head of a family circle in which love reigns, Mr. Driggs is an example to all disposed to follow the same simple rules of life, by persistency in which he has achieved his position among the most respected and beloved of American citizens.

Edmund Driggs was born in Columbia County, New York State, on the twenty-fifth of February, 1809. His parents were Connecticut people, his father being a native of Middletown, and his mother, whose maiden name was Eva Smith, a native of the same State. They removed into New York State at an early period in their married life, and cultivated a farm, in the homestead of which Edmund first saw the light. He attended the district school and acquired a good elementary education. At the age of fifteen he left home to learn the freighting business from a half brother, the only son by his father's first marriage. This half brother was the master of a vessel belonging to a line of thirty sloops running between New York City and Troy. At that time the whole of the freighting business on the Hudson River was done by sloops. Mr. Driggs remembers the first tow-boat which carried freight on the river. She was towed by the steamer *New London*, commanded by Captain Fitch, and her first trip was made in 1825. The increasing use of steam drove sailing vessels out of the freighting business. When Mr. Driggs found his occupation gone, in the year 1826, he went to New York City, and appropriated a part of his savings in attendance at a public school for about a year. When eighteen years old he opened a store for the sale of groceries on West street, and realized good profits, supplying stores to the boats on the Hudson River. He continued in this business a few years, and then engaged himself with Henry H. Pantton, a wholesale grocer well known in those days, whose place of business was at No. 57 Front street. Having spent two years there, Mr. Driggs became a general outside shipping and receiving clerk for Messrs. Brigham & Fay, two young merchants from Boston, who had established themselves in trade a few doors distant from Mr. Pantton's. The great fire of December, 1835, swept away the whole of the stores owned by Mr. Driggs's employers, and of course threw him out of employment.

Shortly after the historic calamity to which reference is made, the Legislature passed a law authorizing the Governor to appoint weighing masters, whose duties should be to weigh merchandise in the City of New York. Mr. Driggs applied for and received an appointment under this law, and found profitable work weighing the wire, steel and other metal collected from the ruins left by the fire. He pursued this occupation until appointed by Jesse Hoyt, Collector of the Port of New York, to the position of inspector of the customs, in which he remained until 1840. By that year he had built up a good business as a family grocer at the corner of Broadway and Twelfth street, a very eligible place; and upon the appointment of Collector Curtis to succeed Jesse Hoyt, resigned his position as inspector, with the intention of giving an undivided attention to his store. In 1843 the Governor of the State appointed a friend of Mr. Driggs, one Mr. Stevens, inspector of potash and pearlash for the Empire City, and this gentleman engaged Mr. Driggs to act as deputy inspector. He thereupon disposed of his grocery business, and began the performance of new duties, in which he continued until the expiration of Mr. Stevens' term of office.

He was then appointed by Governor Silas Wright to the general inspectorship. This appointment he held until the law had been passed which abolished the compulsory inspection of merchandise of all kinds throughout the State. He was thus the last inspector of potash and pearlash appointed by the Governor of New York. Mr. Driggs now converted a part of the premises he had used for the purpose of inspection into a storage warehouse, in which he stored largely for the Government of the United States. When, in 1846, Congress passed the General Warehousing Law, his store was bonded under its provisions, the first bond filed in Washington under the new law.

He continued in the bonded warehouse business until 1849, one year after his removal to Williamsburg, now Brooklyn, E.D., which then contained about sixty thousand inhabitants. In 1850 he was elected the first president of that village by the vote of its inhabitants. Previously to this date its head official had been appointed by the Williamsburg Board of Trustees. About two years afterwards Williamsburg was incorporated as a city. On its being consolidated with Brooklyn, Mr. Driggs was elected an alderman of the First Ward. At an election held in 1859, he was made collector of taxes for the city of Brooklyn, re-elected to the same office in 1862, and served to the end of his second term.

The year 1853 was one of the most active in Mr. Driggs's career. He was at that time conspicuously identified with the origination of three successful institutions, virtually the work of the same men. The Williamsburg City Bank, now the First National, was one of these, active connection with which Mr. Driggs had subsequently to abandon on account of imperative and heavy demands upon his time and energy in other directions. Another was that useful institution, the Williamsburg Savings Bank, the fourth or fifth institution of its kind in magnitude in the State of New York, and in which the sum of about twenty-two million dollars is now on deposit. Mr. Driggs is a trustee of this bank and a member of its funding committee. The Williamsburg City Fire Insurance Company, the third of the institutions to which reference is made, was organized in March, 1853. Mr. Driggs was its first president, and so continued for several years, when he resigned in order to give greater attention to his other business; but he still continued a member of its board of directors. When his last term of office as collector of taxes had ended, in July, 1865, he was re-elected president, and has continued ever since and is now at the head of that distinguished corporation. His eminent qualifications for the office appear in the remarkable success of the company, which has survived the two great fires of Chicago and Boston. In consequence of the last-named calamity, the company paid in claims more than its entire capital. To-day, there is but one other fire insurance company than the Williamsburg City, having an office in the City of New York, and doing business under the laws of the State, the stock of which is quoted higher in the market. At the last sale the stock of the Williamsburg City was quoted at 250.

In politics Mr. Driggs has been always an earnest Democrat. He was a member of the conventions which nominated to the Governorship of New York, William L. Marcy (his last term), William C. Bouck, Horatio Seymour and Silas Wright; of the national convention at Baltimore which nominated Lewis Cass to the Presidency, and of the memorable Charleston Convention of 1860.

Mr. Driggs was married in his nineteenth year to Miss Delia Ann Marshall, of Stamford, Connecticut, sister of the Rev. Joseph D. Marshall, a Methodist Episcopal minister and member of the New York East Conference until his death. Ten children have been born to the couple, an equal number of sons and daughters,



Samuel Briggs



John Lowe

of whom three sons survive. These are engaged in the bonded warehouse business, and two of them are at the head of prosperous firms of New York City. Mr. Driggs has been a member of the Methodist Episcopal body since the year 1826, when he joined the Duane Street Church, New York, worshiping in an edifice long since taken down, and which was situated between Hudson and Greenwich streets. He was made a class-leader when about twenty-one years of age, and has held office as a trustee, president of the board of trustees, steward, superintendent of the Sunday school, president of the Juvenile Missionary Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church, member of the Foreign Mission Board, and, in short, almost, if not quite, as many offices as a layman can hold. He is known throughout the United States as an earnest Methodist, and receives innumerable calls from struggling churches. Mr. Driggs, whose most active years of church

work were during his membership in the South Second Street Church, Brooklyn, E. D., attends now the Summerfield Church, Brooklyn, as a private member, leaving to younger men the discharge of official duty.

Of Mr. Driggs's quiet and graceful acts of charity, many have had occasion to speak with gratitude, and his liberality enlarges with his years. The large-heartedness of the man appears not less in his business than in his gifts to philanthropic organizations, and to such objects of his bounty as he encounters by personal observation. He is emphatically a good man, and "that which should accompany old age, as honor, love, obedience, troops of friends," are his in abundance. In his seventy-fourth year, he is still active in business, giving regular attention to the diversified interests which claim his attention six days in every week.

SETH LOW.

AMONG the useful and honored citizens of Brooklyn, none have left a better record than he whose name stands at the head of this sketch. He was born at Gloucester, Cape Ann, in the county of Essex, Mass., on the 29th of March, 1782. He was fitted for college by the late Rev. Dr. Abiel Abbott, of Beverly, in the same county and State. This begat a warm friendship between the teacher and pupil, which continued through Dr. Abbott's life, and led to the baptismal name given to the eldest son of Mr. Low, the present A. A. Low, of Brooklyn.

Mr. Low entered Harvard University at the commencement of the college term of the year 1800, and under the pleasantest auspices. He found himself associated, in his class, with young men of congenial spirit, several of whom subsequently became famous in their professions, and all of whom held pleasant places in his memory. Merchants like the late Benjamin Welles, Samuel Swett and William R. Gray, of Boston, were among the former; while the Bar welcomed to its rolls the late able and learned Chief Justice Shaw, and Leonard Jarvis, a distinguished member of Congress from Massachusetts; the Pulpit, the eloquent Joseph Stevens Buckminster, Dr. Charles Lowell, father of our present Minister at the Court of St. James, both of Boston, and President Bates, of Middleborough College, Vt.; Art gave one of her highest seats to Washington Allston, and Engineering Science to Loammi Baldwin. It was a great disappointment to Mr. Low to part company with young men of such promise, but after faithfully prosecuting his studies through the freshman and sophomore years, he was compelled in the junior, or third year, by a severe attack of ophthalmia, to sacrifice the advantages of a complete university course and leave college. It was to him a great sacrifice. He was ambitious to excel. He had hoped, indeed longed, to make the Christian Ministry, toward which his devout temper, his desire for usefulness, and his high estimate of the profession, as a means for that, naturally led

him; but the same cause forbade him to cherish the hope and longing, and he yielded. A business life offered itself. He entered the store of a prominent druggist in Salem, Mass., as a clerk. After coming of age, he followed the business for some twenty years, when misfortune overtook him, and he failed. This drew forth the universal sympathy, nevertheless, of the community, in which, by his whole deportment and true nobility of character, he had won, and still held, undiminished confidence and respect. In 1807 he had married Miss Mary Porter, daughter of Thomas Porter, of the neighboring town of Topsfield. She was a woman of marked and superior qualities of mind and heart, who in no change of fortune could fail to show how admirable they were; in prosperity or adversity alike sharing, with her whole warm and strong, yet well-disciplined nature, her husband's lot. She was the true, helpful and devoted wife, the loving, wise and faithful mother. The heart of her husband safely trusted in her; and to this hour her surviving children "rise up and call her blessed."

Such was the partner of his life whom Mr. Low brought with him on his removal from Salem to Brooklyn, in the year 1828. With the experience he had gained in the former place, he at once began in New York at wholesale, the same business in which at retail he had been unfortunate. For a time he was again to encounter reverse and disappointment, but was never daunted or discouraged. He met difficulty with a high-souled courage, which never flinched—a brave, yet serene temper—an integrity above stain or even suspicion—a calm, resolute, unflinching faith in a kind and overruling Providence. And when the change came, and the light grew brighter, and happier days broke upon his path, he was the same man in all essential respects as before—honest, upright, high-principled, generous, honorable, and devout. He had become a prosperous and honored merchant in the great mercantile metropolis of the nation; and a citizen of

Brooklyn, than whom none was more beloved and respected; in every private, domestic, social relation—husband, father, friend, neighbor, member of society, citizen—most faithful; and highly esteemed and trusted by men of every sect and party he died, universally lamented, in June, 1853, in the seventy-first year of his age.

Mr. Low had lived in Brooklyn, and in the public eye, long enough to enable his fellow citizens to understand and rightly estimate his character. At the time of his removal to that city, and, indeed, for years after, so sharply drawn were the lines of the different orthodox sects, and so bitter their common animosity towards those of a more liberal faith, that one of the prominent Presbyterian churches refused him participation in the Lord's Supper because of his Unitarianism. That day has passed, we trust, forever. A better and more Christ-like spirit pervades the churches. The Christian walk of such a man would in our day ensure him fellowship, except among the most narrow-minded and bigoted. If ever there was a man in whom, in the words of his Pastor in a sermon preached the Sunday following his burial, "the largest and noblest traits of human nature were developed and moulded by the benign and potent influences of a Christianity enthroned in the heart, as the fountain whence all that was good flowed, as the grand central principle which guided, inspired, and controlled the entire character, and were everywhere conspicuous in the life"—that man was Seth Low.

Mr. Low was one of the leading spirits in originating, in 1843, the Brooklyn Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor—its first president, and for several successive years holding the same office—an institution which has from year to year illustrated the wisdom and benevolence of its founders, and steadily gained on the affections and patronage of the community. How would his heart have rejoiced to see the handsome and commodious building designed for its permanent home, just erected and opened for a charity in which he was so deeply interested, and which his children and grand-children have joined their fellow citizens to secure! He was not only a sincere and earnest Christian, of the largest and most catholic spirit, wisely and generously benevolent and beneficent toward the poor, but deeply engaged in promoting popular education in every form. He was a member of the Board of Education, and prominent in sustaining and improving the public schools. Public-spirited, and ever ready to serve the public welfare, he was elected for successive terms alderman of the Fourth Ward in Brooklyn, and one of the supervisors of Kings County; into both of which offices he carried the same high and pure principles which characterized his private life, and from which he brought the reputation of having had a single eye to the conscientious performance of duty, and the just demands and expectations of his constituency.

HENRY SHELDON.

THIS gentleman is one of the best known of Brooklyn's resident New York business men, and a leading importer and jobber of tea and coffee, his office being located at 109 Front street.

It is now (1883) forty-five years since Mr. Sheldon established himself in New York, and he is one of the oldest merchants in his section of the city.

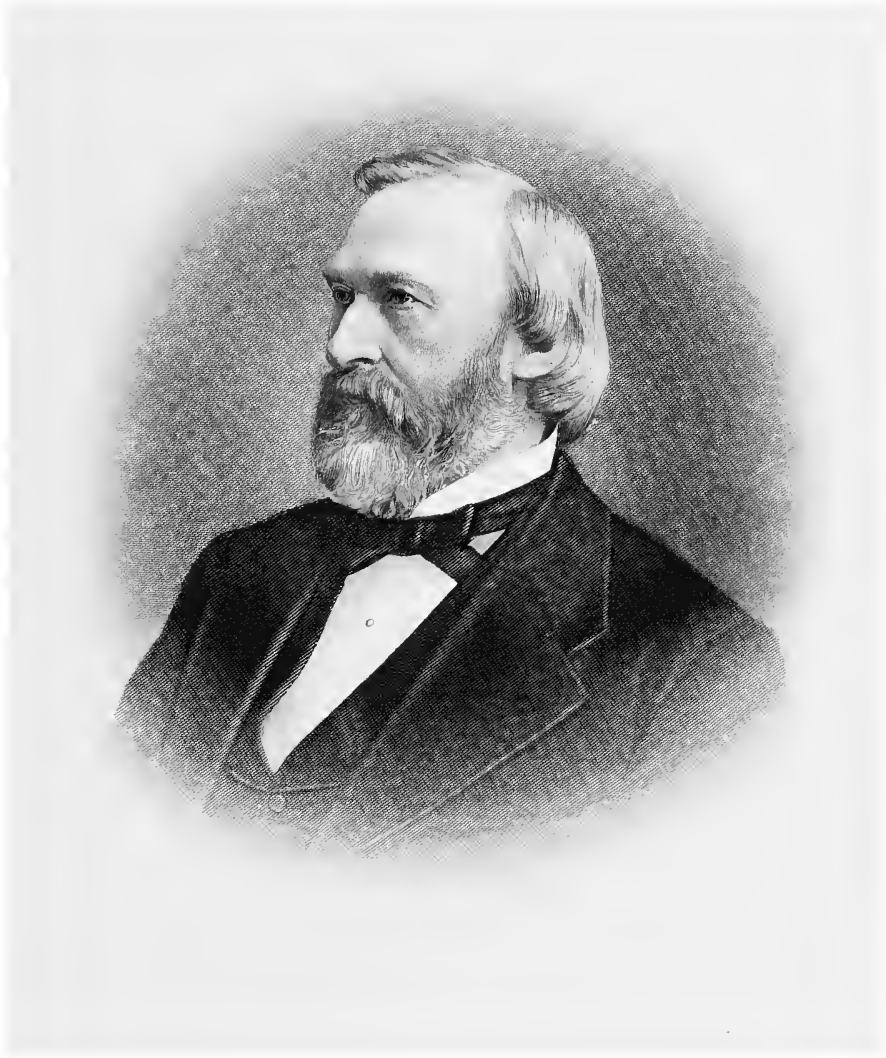
He was born in Charleston, Montgomery County, New York, in 1821. His father, Judge Alexander Sheldon, was a well-known physician who had come into that section of New York State from Connecticut, as early as 1790. He was a graduate of Yale College, a man of much force of character, was first judge; in association with De Witt Clinton, he was appointed one of the Regents of the University of the State; was a member of the Convention which formed the State Constitution of 1821, and chairman of the committee with respect to the executive department. He took an active part in politics, being a member of the Legislature for about eight years. Upon taking his seat the first time, in 1804, he was chosen Speaker of the House, a position he occupied with but a brief intermission

during the succeeding eight years; and it is worthy of note that he was the last of the speakers who, when presiding, wore the chapeau or cocked hat which, with the accompanying coat, was the insignia of the office. His term of service as a legislator was during the exciting political contests in which Burr, Hamilton, Clinton, Livingston, Lewis and Tompkins bore a conspicuous part.

Mr. HENRY SHELDON has been a resident of Brooklyn since 1849, and has been long and prominently identified with many of its important interests in the departments of Christianity, Literature and Art. He was an early friend of the Brooklyn Library and the Long Island Historical Society, and one of the first directors in each of those institutions, as also a trustee in the Brooklyn Art Association.

To the financial success of these institutions and to the benevolent objects of the City of Brooklyn, he has been a friend and a liberal contributor.

Mr. Sheldon's standing in mercantile and commercial circles is high; and, besides attending to the duties devolving upon him from day to day in the manage-



Henry Sheldon



A. W. Humphreys

ment of his extensive business interests, he finds time to devote to the affairs of such well-known institutions as the Merchants' National Bank of New York, and the Standard Fire Insurance Company of New York, in both of which he is a Director, and from time to

time he has been more or less prominently identified with other well-known institutions of a similar character. Mr. Sheldon married Miss Celia E. Farrington, daughter of Dr. S. H. Farrington, of Ashtabula, Ohio, by whom he has had five sons and two daughters.

ASAHEL WILLARD HUMPHREYS.

ASAHEL WILLARD HUMPHREYS was born in Winchester, New Hampshire, October 30th, 1838, a son of Asahel Jewell and Mary Hinds Humphreys. His grandfather was one of the early settlers of that town, to which he came from Dorchester, Mass., and of which the family were prominent and honored citizens from its formation.

Mr. Humphreys was educated primarily at the public schools of Winchester, New Hampshire, and subsequently at Lawrence Academy, Groton, Mass., and at Kimball Union, Meriden, New Hampshire. After leaving school, he entered the counting room of Little, Brown & Co., the well-known publishers of Boston, where he remained until 1861, when he was made assistant cashier of the Ocean Bank of New York. The latter position he resigned to connect himself with the iron interests, entering the service of the Sterling Iron and Railway Company, of which he soon became the treasurer and subsequently the president. In 1864 this company acquired the ownership of the twenty-five thousand acres of land, with all the mines and furnaces upon it, which constituted the Sterling estate in Orange and Rockland Counties, New York, and on which were erected almost the earliest iron works in this State; where Peter Townsend made the first cast steel in this country, the great chain put across the Hudson river to prevent the ascent of the British during the Revolution, all of the anchors for the first navy of the New American Government, and for a long term of years the charcoal iron which was required in the construction of the steam engines of the United States Government. The Sterling Iron and Railway Company, with Mr. Humphreys as its principal business official, largely extended the operations carried on at Sterling, by developing new mines, building railways, and making other important improvements; and so

well known did Mr. Humphreys become in connection with the iron interests, that he was urgently requested by the late Hon. Horace Greeley, then an active member of the American Institute, to prepare an address on iron and its manufacture, which he delivered at the American Institute, in October, 1870, and which was published in full in the *Daily Tribune*, covering a page of that paper, and reprinted in all the journals and periodicals devoted to metallurgy and engineering in this country and Europe.

Mr. Humphreys was for several years one of the Board of Managers of the American Iron and Steel Association, and was the third member in the United States of the Iron and Steel Institute of Great Britain. The degree of Master of Arts was conferred upon him by the faculty of Williams College, in 1872, and he is a director of several corporations and railways. He came to Brooklyn to live in 1867, and later, became interested in its social and benevolent institutions and enterprises. He was chosen chairman of the member's committee of the Long Island Historical Society, and subsequently became the treasurer and a director of that institution. He was also chosen a member of the Board of Managers of the Brooklyn Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor, and a director of the Union for Christian Work. In 1879, he was appointed one of the trustees of the New York and Brooklyn Bridge.

Always a thorough-going Republican, Mr. Humphreys has never had any liking for politics, and consequently has not been active as a politician. He is a member of the Union League Club of New York, and of the American Association for the Advancement of Science. In 1863 he married Miss Mary L. Cunningham, of Boston, and has one son, named Willard Cunningham Humphreys.

ANNALS
OF THE
CONSOLIDATED CITY OF BROOKLYN,
1855—1883.

BY *Henry R. Stiles. A.M. M.D.*

UNDER THE CHARTER granted by the Legislature, on the 17th of April, 1854, providing for the consolidation of the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh and the township of Bushwick, Brooklyn (1855, January 1st) entered upon a new phase of its civic existence. By a singular coincidence, GEORGE HALL, who had been the first Mayor of the original city of Brooklyn, was the first Mayor of the consolidated city. From his inaugural address to the common council of the new municipality, we extract the following succinct comparison between its *past* and *present*:

"It is now twenty-one years," says Mr. HALL, "since I was called by the common council to preside over the affairs of the late city of Brooklyn, then first ushered into existence. The population of the city, at that time, consisted of about 20,000 persons, residing for the most part within the distance of about three-quarters of a mile from Fulton Ferry. Beyond this limit, no streets of any consequence were laid out, and the ground was chiefly occupied for agricultural purposes. The shores, throughout nearly their whole extent, were in their natural condition, washed by the East River and the bay. There were two ferries, by which communication was had with the city of New York, ceasing at twelve o'clock at night. There were, within the city, two banks, two insurance companies, one savings bank, fifteen churches, three public schools and two weekly newspapers. Of commerce and manufactures it can scarcely be said to have had any, its business consisting chiefly of that which was requisite for supplying the wants of its inhabitants. Sixteen of its streets were lighted with public lamps, of which number thirteen had been supplied within the then previous year. The assessed value of the taxable property was \$7,829,684, of which \$6,457,084 consisted of real estate and \$1,372,600 of personal property.

"Williamsburgh was incorporated as a village in 1827. Its growth was comparatively slow until after the year 1840. At the taking of the census in that year, it was found to contain 5,094 inhabitants, and since that time it has advanced with almost unparalleled rapidity, having attained a population of 30,780 in 1850. It was chartered as a city in 1851.

"Within the comparatively short period of twenty-one years, what vast changes have taken place. *Bushwick*, from

a thinly-settled township, has advanced with rapid strides, and yesterday contained within its limits two large villages, together numbering a population of about 7,000 persons. *WILLIAMSBURGH*, from a hamlet, became a city, with about 50,000 inhabitants. Brooklyn, judging from its past increase, yesterday contained a population of about 145,000 persons, and on this day the three places consolidated into one municipal corporation, takes its stand as the *third* city in the Empire State, with an aggregate population of about 200,000 inhabitants.

"The superficial extent of area included within the city limits is about 16,000 acres (or 25 square miles). The extent in length of the city along the water front is $8\frac{1}{2}$ miles, along the inland bounds, $13\frac{1}{2}$ miles, and between the two most distant points in a straight line, $7\frac{1}{2}$ miles, and its greatest width 5 miles. Within these limits 516 streets have been opened for public use. * * * Thirty miles of railroad tracks, exclusive of those of the Long Island railroad companies, have been laid, and are in use upon the streets of the city; besides twelve lines of stages or omnibuses. The city, to a great extent, is lighted by gas, supplied by the Brooklyn and Williamsburgh Gas-Light Company, using 95 miles of pipes along the streets. The streets are lighted with public lamps, numbering in the aggregate 3,766, of which 2,609 are gas lamps. Thirteen sewers have been constructed, extending in length five miles. There are 157 public cisterns and 547 wells and pumps. There are two public parks, one of which will rival in magnificence, as respects its natural position and commanding prospect, that of any other city in the Union." Reference was also made to Greenwood and Evergreen cemeteries; to 113 churches within the city; to 27 public schools, containing 317 teachers and about 30,500 scholars; to the Packer Collegiate Institute, the numerous private schools, the Brooklyn City Hospital, the Orphan Asylums, the Old Ladies' Home, Industrial schools, dispensaries, etc.; also, to nine banks, four savings institutions, eight insurance companies, five daily and two weekly papers, etc. The assessed value of taxable property during the previous year was estimated: In *Brooklyn*—of real estate, \$64,665,117; of personal property, \$8,184,881; *Williamsburgh*—of real estate, \$11,242,664; of personal property, \$11,614,559; *Bushwick*—of real estate, \$3,106,864; of personal property, \$109,000; making the aggregate in the whole city, \$88,923,085.

Thirteen ferries, keeping up a constant communication with the city of New York, and the almost continuous line

of wharves between Greenpoint and Red-Hook, as well as the commercial facilities furnished by the Atlantic docks, and the expensive ship-building at Greenpoint, were also alluded to. The police of the new city, under Chief JOHN S. FOLK, comprised seven districts, with an aggregate of 274 men; the 8th, 9th and 18th Wards not being included, they having a special police at their own expense. The fire department was also on a good footing, the western district having 20 engines, 7 hose-carts and 4 hook and ladder companies; the eastern having 10 engines, 4 hose-carts, 3 hook and ladder, and 1 bucket companies.

The new city was divided into eighteen wards, to which a nineteenth was soon after added.

Yet, although Brooklyn had thus, at a single bound, jumped from the seventh to the *third* position among the cities of the American Union, it could by no means claim the same relative position in point of wealth, business or commercial importance; being outranked, in these respects, by several cities of less population. Nor had it risen to its eminence by virtue of its own inherent vigor and enterprise. Candor certainly compels the acknowledgment that it was chiefly attributable to the overflowing prosperity and greatness of its giant neighbor, New York. Many thousands of its counted population were scarcely more than semi-denizens. They were the merchant princes, and master artisans doing business in the metropolis, employing other thousands as clerks, accountants, journeymen and apprentices, in numerous and varied capacities, and who resided here. Thus, Brooklyn held the anomalous position of out-numbering, at night, its day population by tens of thousands. Brooklyn's position, however, as regards business, commerce and influence, has so rapidly increased since then, and is developing with such wonderful promise, that the burden of reproach that she is *only* a sleeping apartment for New York, is undeniably passing away.

Mayor Hall had been elected mainly on a temperance and sabbath observance platform, and, on the 14th, his proclamation in regard to the closing of stores, etc., on the sabbath, went into effect, and was very generally observed. On the 31st, the new building of the *Brooklyn City Hospital* was first opened to the inspection of the public.

Feb. 21st. The first meeting of the new *Board of Education* of the consolidated city was held, and officers elected.

March 28th. *The Fire Department of the City of Brooklyn* was incorporated by act of legislature.

April 12th. *The Nassau Water Company* was incorporated by legislative enactment; was at once organized, and promptly petitioned the Common Council to authorize a subscription to its capital stock, to the amount allowed by its act of incorporation.

On the same date an act was passed defining the limits of the fire district of the Western District.

July. *The Brooklyn Central Dispensary* was instituted; the *Hunt Horticultural and Botanical Garden*

incorporated, and the *Brooklyn Sunday School Union* reorganized.

Nov. 15th. The Common Council passed a resolution, by 27 to 7 votes, authorizing a subscription of \$1,000,000 to the stock of the Nassau Water Company, on condition of the two million capital stock being paid up. In June, they voted to increase the amount to \$1,300,000.

1856. Mayor Hall's address to the common council, in January, stated that during the year 1855 there had been 1,034 new buildings erected, and 518 then in course of erection; about fourteen miles of new streets opened, and nine miles graded and paved; 426 new gas lamps and posts set, 16 public cisterns, etc., etc.

July 31st. Operations upon the Nassau Water Works were formally commenced by the breaking of the ground for a reservoir on what is now known as Reservoir Hill, on Flatbush Avenue, and within the present Prospect Park. On a commanding point of this eminence, and around a platform covered with an awning of American flags, assembled the Common Council of the city, the Water Company, and a number of prominent citizens, in all some 1,000 persons, who had been brought to the spot, from the City Hall, in a long procession of omnibuses and carriages. The exercises were opened with prayer by the Rev. Dr. Kennedy, after which Mr. John H. Prentice, President of the Board of Directors, gave a brief history of the inception and progress of the Nassau Water Company's operations in securing a supply of water for Brooklyn; and concluded by introducing the Hon. George Hall, Mayor of the city, who, after a few pertinent remarks, proceeded to break ground by digging a spadeful of earth, amid the cheers of the multitude. The Rev. Dr. Kennedy, the Hon. N. B. Morse and the Rev. Dr. Bethune, then delivered speeches replete with eloquence, cordiality and humor.

This year was signalized by the appearance of *yellow fever*, on Long Island. (*See chapter on Medical Profession of Kings County*).

1857. With this year commenced the mayoralty of Mr. *Samuel S. Powell*.

SAMUEL S. POWELL, a descendant from some of the earliest settlers of Long Island, was born in the city of New York, on the 16th day of February, 1815. He enjoyed the usual advantages of school education until the age of thirteen, when family reverses rendered it necessary for him to seek his own livelihood. After serving in a store in New York for some time, he came to Brooklyn in 1838, and engaged with S. B. Stilwell, at that time the leading tailor and clothier of the then village, and, after four years, commenced a business on his own account. Having always taken a lively interest in politics, he was elected in 1845, by the Democracy of the Second ward, as their representative in the Common Council, where he served one term, declining a renomination. Tradition says that he first made himself known by a clever speech at a Sunday-school celebration, and was suggested as a good man for Alderman. He held no other office until 1857, when he was chosen Mayor; and at the expiration of his

first term was re-elected. It is said that he was the first Democratic Mayor who was not under obligations to the political firm of Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt; in fact, succeeded through a revolt against it.

After Mayor Kalbfleisch's three terms of office, the political managers resolved to displace him. Ex-Mayor Powell was remembered as a "candidate who had never been defeated," and they elected him. He never resorted to "working" for his election. He was a strong party man; well-read and cultured, full of anecdote and information; regular in habits, hours for sleep, exercise and reading.

Mr. Powell was a man who never accumulated much money; nor did he ever make a dollar in any public office which he held, beyond the salary attached to it. He was unswerving in fidelity to his party, and hence was popular. He was charitable, dignified though easily accessible, and gentlemanly in his manners.

He was a favorite with the Methodist church, though not a member, as his wife was. "I guess," he said, "it is because I look like a Methodist." He received the richest and poorest alike, courteously. He was a helpful neighbor, a tried and upright official. It is doubtful if he ever made an enemy, uttered a sentence, or did an act that would justify personal resentment.

During his administration, the much debated question as to the advisability of running the street railroad cars on the sabbath, was settled affirmatively, after a fierce contest. The measure was recommended in an official message from Mr. Powell to the Common Council. When the war of secession commenced, Mayor Powell actively sustained the government in all measures for the suppression of the rebellion; and, although a Democrat, and in no way identified with the dominant party, he aided to the full extent of his powers, the enlistment of men, and by open speech justified all measures necessary to destroy the power of rebellion and to restore the Union.

In 1871, he was again elected (his third term) to the mayoralty. In 1874, he was nominated for Comptroller, against F. A. Schroeder, and was elected. His administration of finances was intelligent and successful. The credit of the city was improved, and its bonds sold at a premium, which had not before occurred. In 1877, he was appointed a Park Commissioner, which office he held up to the time of his death, devoting to it the same care and attention which always characterized him. He was next elected County Treasurer, his term beginning August, 1878, but the disease of which he ultimately died (cancer in the face), had then made such progress that he could not often attend at the office, although he kept himself well posted as to what took place there. He died February 6, 1879.

Quiet and unobtrusive in his manner and habits, there was no citizen of Brooklyn who possessed a more intelligent knowledge of the city's history, growth, and people. He was a director in the Central Bank, the Brooklyn Life Insurance Company, the Citizens' Gas Light Company, and an original director of the Nassau and Lafayette Insurance Companies.

February 11th. A *Board of Water Commissioners* was appointed; and on April 15, the Board was also constituted, by legislative enactment, a *Board of Sewer Commissioners*.

February 17th. By the legislative "act for the better regulation of the firemen of the city of Brooklyn," passed on this date, was created the *Board of Commissioners of the Fire Department of the Western District of the city of Brooklyn*; and April 7th, by a

similar act, the legally organized firemen of the Eastern District were constituted a body corporate, to be known as *The Brooklyn Eastern District Fire Department*; and on the 17th, by act of legislature, the fire limits of the Eastern District were established.

April 23d. The *Metropolitan Police law* went into operation, by which the counties of New York, Kings, Westchester and Richmond, and the towns of Newtown, Flushing and Jamaica, in the county of Queens, were constituted and territorially united for the purposes of police government and police discipline, to be governed by a board of commissioners, of which the Mayors of the cities of New York and Brooklyn were members *ex officio*. The original commissioners were James W. Nye, James Bowen, J. S. T. Stranahan (of Brooklyn), Simeon Draper and Jacob Cholwell, together with Fernando Wood, Mayor of New York, and S. S. Powell, Mayor of Brooklyn.

December. The *Mercantile Library Association of Brooklyn* was organized.

1858. The two marked events of the year were the *introduction of the Ridgewood water* into the city (it being first let into the mains, on December 4th, and first used in extinguishing a fire on the 17th of the same month); and the inception of measures which resulted in the establishment of the *Academy of Music*, both of which events reached their culmination of success during the next year.

1859. March 19th. The *Brooklyn Academy of Music* was incorporated, with a capital of \$150,000, with power to increase it to \$200,000. Land in Montague street was purchased for \$41,000, plans agreed upon and work commenced.

April 5th. *Samuel S. Powell* was re-elected to the mayoralty, by a majority of 3,265 (out of a poll of 21,203) votes over John A. Cross.

April 18th. By enactment of the legislature, Messrs. John Greenwood, J. Carson Brevoort, William Wall, James Humphry, John A. Cross, Nathaniel Briggs, Abraham J. Berry, Samuel S. Powell, Thomas H. Rodman, Nathan B. Morse, Thomas G. Talmadge, Jesse C. Smith, Daniel Maujer, Wm. H. Peck and Luther B. Wyman, were appointed commissioners to select and locate grounds in the city of Brooklyn, and adjacent thereto, for parks and public parade ground.

During the month of November, 1858, the first water had been introduced in the city through the pipes, and so highly gratified were the people, especially after its efficient aid in extinguishing one or two fires, that a general demand arose for a grand public demonstration. The Common Council arranged for such a celebration on the 27th of April, 1859, and on that day, and the next, it came off. Such a demonstration had never before been witnessed in the city of Brooklyn; and as a pageant it has rarely been equalled even in the Metropolis. Its main features were a grand civic and military procession, with some 15,000 persons and 3,000

horses in line; speeches in the Common Council chamber by Governor Morgan and Peter Cooper and others; also, a chaste and elegant oration by Richard C. Underhill, Esq. The city was profusely and beautifully decorated; and a splendid illumination of public and private buildings in the evening, with a grand display of fireworks, closed this most eventful day.

During this winter (1859-60) the collegiate department of the *Long Island College Hospital* was organized, and the announcement of its first course of lectures made.

1860. This summer, forty-six cases of yellow fever were reported to the health department. (*See chapter on Medical Profession in Kings County.*) Thirty-four cases occurred in the block commencing at the corner of Columbia Street, running thence westerly to the water along Congress street, on both sides of the street. It was supposed to have originated from some lightermen who resided in this neighborhood and were engaged on lighters at quarantine.

1861.—April 5th. The charter election resulted in the choice of *Martin Kalbfleisch* (democrat), as mayor, by a majority of 5,136 (in a poll of 28,280) votes, over his republican competitor, Frederick Scholes.

April 15th.* The dispatch from the Secretary of War, announcing the surrender of Fort Sumter, and the President's proclamation, calling for 75,000 volunteers, electrified the citizens of Brooklyn, as well as those of every portion of the northern states. The excitement was intense, business was virtually suspended, men could hardly realize that war was begun; but the momentary paralysis of surprise was quickly followed by a rebound of loyalty, as universal as it was magnificent. The Stars and Stripes were flung to the breeze upon all public places, from almost every store and from hundreds of private dwellings; so intense, indeed, was the public feeling that the absence of the national flag in certain quarters invited a suspicion of disloyalty. On the 17th, a mob visited the *Eagle*, *News*, *Standard* and *Star* newspaper offices, compelling their proprietors to show their colors; and on the street and all public places, incautious sympathizers with the South were admonished by arguments more striking than pleasant, of the propriety of keeping their thoughts and words to themselves. The young men of the Seventh, Ninth and Nineteenth wards, commenced to form a volunteer company. By the 19th the news of the dastardly attack on the Massachusetts Sixth, aroused the excitement to white heat, and the excess of loyalty seemed to threaten an outbreak of mob violence. An amusing instance of this occurred at the Packer Collegiate Institute, where the exhibition of a palmetto badge by some of the south-

ern young lady pupils, provoked a sudden outburst of red, white and blue badges among the northern girls; and finally the principal, Prof. Chittenden, deemed it best to order the total suppression of *all* badges. This sensible proceeding called forth the ire of several hundred young men around town, who proceeded to the Institute and called for the exhibition of the Stars and Stripes, which were, of course, forthcoming; and the police dispersed the over-zealous crowd, in view of which Mayor Powell issued a proclamation counseling moderation and peace. The four militia regiments, comprising the Fifth Brigade, viz., 13th, 14th, 70th and 28th (previous to this the ranks of these regiments had been poorly filled, viz., the 13th having about 250; the 14th, about 150; the 70th, about 350; and the 28th, about 400 men), began to make ready for the fray, recruiting offices were opened, and their ranks were largely swelled by accessions of patriotic young men. Capt. Wm. H. Hogan, the former gallant commandant of the Napper Tandy Light Artillery, commenced among his countrymen the organization of an artillery company, which eventually did good service in the Irish Brigade. The Common Council appropriated (19th) \$75,000 for the relief of families of those who should volunteer. On the 20th, Gen Duryea received orders to send forward two of the Brooklyn regiments, and selected the 13th (Col. Abel Smith), and 28th (Col. Mich. Bennett). Major Anderson, the hero of Fort Sumter, also this day quietly visited the city, and was warmly greeted by the comparatively few citizens who knew of his coming.

April 21st. (Sabbath). The recruiting offices were kept open, and the work of enrollment went bravely on. In Plymouth Church the sum of \$1,000, and in the Pierrepont Street Baptist Church, \$1,077 was contributed towards the equipment of the 13th and 14th, and this without previous notice being given. A. A. Low contributed \$300 for the 13th.

April 22d. Messrs. Whitehouse and Pierce, 188 Fulton street, furnished equipments for those of their employes who volunteered, and guaranteed their situations to them upon their return, as well as the payment of their salaries to their families during their absence. The city was alive; companies parading the streets, preparatory to being formed into regiments; everything betokened preparation; the Zouaves were actively drilling; nothing but the war was thought of or talked about; business was at a stand-still. In the evening, an enthusiastic meeting was held at Music Hall to organize a home-guard, and 200 signed the roll of members. The Common Council this evening also authorized the effecting of a loan of \$100,000 for the equipment of Brooklyn volunteers, and the support of their families. Father Rafina, priest of the Montrose Avenue Catholic Church, with his own hands, raised an American flag upon the top of his church, in the presence of over 2,000 people, whom he addressed with a

*Brooklyn's share, in the war for the suppression of the civil rebellion—the narration of which comprises the greater portion of Brooklyn history for the four years succeeding this date—can only be given in outline. Under the head of *Military*, in our concluding chapter, the reader will find brief notices of the various regiments from this city, engaged in the war.

few appropriate remarks, and whose plaudits were enthusiastic. The captain (a southerner) of the United States Survey vessel, the *Varina*, very quietly attempted to move his craft out of the Brooklyn Navy Yard, and down the river in the night, with a view, it is supposed, of taking her to Dixie. The crew, however, suspecting his design, managed to communicate with the commandant of the receiving-ship, North Carolina; a line was thrown across the stream, the *Varina* was stopped, and her crew removed to the guard, and she left empty in the stream; much to the joy of the loyal tars, who cheered for the Union and hooted at treason, while they were leaving the vessel.

About this time, also, occurred what was, at the time, characterized by some of the daily papers, "the Navy Yard scare;" but which, in fact, possessed a far greater importance than many supposed. One day, about 2 P.M., Mayor Powell was waited upon by Capt. (afterward Commodore) Foote (then in command of the United States Navy Yard here, in the absence of Commodore Bell), who stated to him that he had reason to believe that an attempt would be made that night to burn the Navy Yard, and that he had but eighty men (all told) capable of bearing arms in the defense of the government property. He requested aid from the city authorities; and in response to his demand, active measures were at once put forth by Mayor Powell to meet the difficulty before sun-down. It was understood that the proposed attack upon the yard was to be made by a force of rebel sympathizers, crossing from New York in small numbers at the different ferries, and rendezvousing in or near the City Park, under the Navy Yard walls, from which point, after dark, they could easily have possessed themselves of the place; and, after a liberal use of fire-balls and other combustibles among the inflammable contents of the yard, could have escaped before a general alarm had been communicated to the city. Placing himself in communication with the headquarters of the Metropolitan Police, a heavy force (some 1,000 in all) of police were distributed near the yard, the ferries, etc., while the river in its front was patrolled by the police-boat and numerous well-manned row-boats. Col. Graham's artillery regiment, the Seventieth, took possession of the Arsenal, on Portland avenue, and the Thirtieth (Col. Smith) were under arms at the Armory on Cranberry street; and the militia generally, under direction of General Duryea, were in readiness for instant service. So promptly was all this effected, that no attempt was made, and hence the cry of *scare*; but facts which subsequently came to light, prove that the attempt would certainly have been made, but for the activity and vigilance of the city authorities.

The Union Ferry Company guaranteed to those of their employes who should volunteer, a continuance of salary to their families, and their places again upon their return. Forty Brooklyn ladies volunteered as

nurses; and quantities of lint, etc., were offered. The Washington Division, No. 4, of the Sons of Temperance, voted the appropriation of \$3 per week to the family of any member who should volunteer; and, in case of his death, \$20 in addition to the \$30 given as a funeral benefit, and also pledged themselves to provide for the widow and orphans. This day was held an immense war meeting on Fort Greene, at which it was estimated that 50,000 people were present. There were three stands for speakers, music, etc. Mayor Powell presided, and a salute of 34 guns was fired. At 3 P.M. of the same day the 13th Regiment left for the seat of war, 450 strong; 200 being left behind owing to a lack of equipments. The National Home Guard was also organized; and the citizens of the 9th Ward organized a Home Relief Association, of which Mr. J. Carson Brevoort was chosen president, and \$1,950 was subscribed on the spot for the purposes of the society and for aiding the families of volunteers from that ward.

April 24th. The members of the *Kings County Medical Society* resolved to render gratuitous professional services to the families of volunteers, during their absence.

April 25th. The *Mechanics' Bank* took \$25,000 of the city loan of \$100,000.

April 26th. A *Ladies' Lint Society* was in operation in Monroe Place and vicinity, and another among the young ladies of Brooklyn Heights Seminary. The mayor sent a communication to the Common Council proposing the organization of a force of 2,000 men, in companies of 100 each, properly officered, for the protection of the city and its surroundings. The *Brooklyn Yacht Club* tendered to the United States Government the use of their vessels, for any service for which they might be required in the shallow water along our coast, including the maintenance of a small armed screw-propeller, as a coast-guard from Barnegat to Fire Island.

April 28th. (Sabbath.) Impressive religious services were held at the arsenal, where the 28th Regiment was quartered, preparing to leave. During the preceding week this regiment had received 1,590 yards of bandaging prepared by the ladies of Clinton Avenue Congregational Church. On this day, also, Major Oatman raised the American flag on the old "1699," or Vechte Cortelyou house.

April 29th. At a meeting of the Association for the Relief of Volunteers' Families, between two and three thousand dollars were raised.

April 30th. The 28th Regiment left for the front, and were escorted to the dock by the Lancer Troop and howitzer battery of the 70th Regiment. The Common Council appointed committees for relief to volunteers' families, each committee consisting of three from each ward.

April. During this and the succeeding month, Col.

Pratt and others, mostly of Brooklyn, organized in New York city, the *Thirty-first Regiment* of New York Volunteers.

May 2d. The *Home Trust of Volunteers of Brooklyn* organized, with A. A. Low as President; Messrs. Geo. Hall, Luther B. Wyman and Hosea Webster as Vice-Presidents, J. H. Frothingham, Treasurer; W. S. Griffith, Secretary; and R. R. Raymond, Corresponding Secretary. The Board of County Supervisors appropriated \$50,000 for the relief of families of volunteers, and pledged themselves to continue the salaries of employes who might volunteer. The ladies of the 8th Ward organized a Patriotic-Relief Association for provision of hospital stores, etc., for sick and wounded soldiers.

May 6th. The new mayor, *Martin Kalbfleisch*, entered upon his official duties.

May 9th. The reserves of the 13th Regiment (425), left for the seat of war to join that regiment. The Hunter's Point route of the Long Island Railroad was opened.

May 20th. The 14th, under Col. Alfred M. Wood, left for the seat of war. Their departure was a scene of enthusiasm which evinced how firm a hold this regiment had upon the affections of Brooklyn citizens.

June. Early in this month \$50,000 was appropriated by the Board of Supervisors, exclusively for the relief of volunteers' families.

June 26th. The corner-stone of a *Home for Destitute Children* was laid, under the auspices of the Brooklyn Industrial Association.

July 1st. The Common Council appropriated \$2,500 towards the equipment of the 14th Regiment, on the application of Lieut.-Col. Fowler.

During this and succeeding months, the "Continental Guard," afterwards the *Forty-eighth* New York Volunteers, was recruited under the command of Col. Perry, formerly pastor of the M. E. church.

August. During this and the following month, the *New York Fifth Independent Battery* was organized at Brooklyn; and the *Ninetieth* New York Volunteer Regiment, at East New York.

August 6th. The Board of Supervisors appropriated \$10,000 to the relief of volunteers' families.

August 22d. The *First Long Island* (Brooklyn Phalanx) Regiment, recruited in Brooklyn, by Col. Nelson A. Cross, departed for the seat of war.

Dec. 5th. The Supervisors appropriated \$35,000 to the support of volunteers' families.

1862. January. On the 30th of this month, the iron *Monitor* was launched at Greenpoint; was placed in commission on the 25th of February; and eleven days after (March 8th) had her celebrated encounter with the rebel ram *Merrimac*, in Hampton Roads.

February 4th. The *Capitoline Club* was organized. The small-pox was very prevalent in the city.

March 3d. A grand public reception was given to

Col. A. M. Wood, of the 14th Regiment, on his return from captivity in Richmond, by the authorities, military, fire department, and citizens generally.

March 27th. Brooklyn received a *new charter*, by an act of the Legislature, *amendatory of the consolidation act of 1854*.

May. A new regiment (the 56th) of State Militia was organized at Brooklyn.

May 17th. A large and enthusiastic public meeting of the citizens of the 17th Ward (Greenpoint), held early in this year, organized an association for the relief of the families of soldiers enlisted in the army and navy. Messrs. Jabez Williams, A. K. Meserole, Wm. M. Meserole, James Ross, Jonathan Moore, James Valentine, Th. Hutchinson, T. F. Rowland, Wm. Foulks, J. N. Stearns, Geo. W. Bell, John McDiarmid, C. V. Rivenburg, John B. Downing, Geo. W. Kelsey, Ab'm Meserole and Rev. Peter Boyce, were appointed an executive committee, of which Mr. Boyce was President; A. J. Provost, Timothy Perry, Adrian Meserole, Vice-Presidents; Ab'm Meserole, and afterwards J. N. Stearns, Secretary, and Mr. E. F. Williams, Treasurer. A subscription was started, and the large sum subscribed on the spot was subsequently increased to over \$10,000. The executive committee met every week-day night, for months; visited soldiers' families, and furnished regular relief to over 100 families, containing about 140 children, besides occasional relief to other families. Nearly 500 men enlisted from this ward.*

May 20th. The corner-stone of the new County Court-house, at junction of Fulton and Joralemon streets, was laid on this day, by the Grand Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons, of New York.

June. The *Coney Island Railroad*, from Fulton Ferry to Coney Island, was completed. It was eleven miles in length, being the longest road in the city.

August 15th. A great Union meeting was held on Fort Greene, in view of the draft ordered (Aug. 4th) by the Government, for 300,000 men for nine months' service; the proportion of Kings County being placed at 4,294. On the 16th, the Board of Supervisors appropriated the sum of \$240,000, to be borrowed on the credit of the county, for (\$50) bounties, for volunteers before the first of September following.

Brooklyn had, as we have seen, responded nobly to the first call of the government upon the loyal population of the north. Some 10,000 of her bravest citizens had testified their devotion to the old flag, upon every battle-field from Bull Run to Malvern Hill. To the second appeal she sent forth her 13th and 14th Militia Regiments; but the third call for men, seemed, from some unaccountable reason, to be coldly received; and,

* Report of 17th Ward Soldiers' Aid Association, March 17, 1863, states that during the winter of 1862-'3, relief was extended to 86 families containing 125 children (\$2 to adult, 50 cents to child, per week). Whole amount received by treasurer, up to March 10, \$7,510.00, of which \$2,840 was paid out for bounties, and \$3,939.20 for relief.

while all other communities bestirred themselves holding meetings, arousing popular enthusiasm, and raising money to pay bounties to volunteers, she remained inactive. But, with the impulse given by this great popular demonstration, Brooklyn quickly placed herself right before the world, promptly resolving to do her own duty, and to furnish her quota of volunteers without recourse to the draft.

The city was all alive. Recruiting officers were seen everywhere. The recruiting tents in the City Hall Park increased in number, and the drums, in front of each, kept up their music from morning to night. Tents were also pitched in Washington Park, the City Park, at the Navy Yard, and other eligible points. The whole city, in fact, wore a military aspect. The wealthy men came forward with their contributions, and as a consequence, men of the right stamp were enlisted in squads. Mayor Kalbfleisch, on his own responsibility, ordered 168 A tents and fourteen wall tents for the officers and men of the 1st Regiment of the Empire Brigade. Recruits came flocking in so fast that they could not be all attended to. The Mechanics' Bank in one day, cashed 175 checks for bounties to recruits; and the day previous, 93, amounting to a total of \$7,600. Mr. Charles Christmas contributed \$200 to aid in recruiting and rendering a draft in Brooklyn unnecessary, to be paid as special bounties to the first forty volunteers, who signed the rolls between nine and ten, on Wednesday morning. Capt. J. Davenport was at this time raising in Brooklyn a company of "Monitors." The smith's department in the Navy Yard, formed a Relief Association. The Hon. William Wall, representative in Congress, from the Fifth District, contributed \$1,000 to aid in recruiting (\$10 each), the first 100 volunteers in the 1st Long Island, and the 14th Regiments.

The Eastern District was also aroused—meetings were held nightly in almost every election district, and liberal contributions were received.

September. At Greenpoint, Capt. Albert Stearns recruited a company (C) for the 31st New York Volunteer Regiment, then forming in New York city. The quota of Kings County at this time, was 8,632, of which 4,000 had been raised, leaving 4,632 still due.

November 24th. *The Woman's Relief Society* was formed.

December 2d. The 42d Massachusetts Volunteers left camp at Union Course, L. I., this day, and being delayed by not finding the transport vessel ready for their reception, spent the night in Brooklyn, at the armory, where they were provided with a good hot supper by the 13th New York State National Guard. A member of the 42d writing to the *Barre* (Mass.) *Gazette*, thus describes the hospitalities received by himself and comrades from the Brooklynites. "Mr. Geo. B. Lincoln, city postmaster, gave supper to ten of our company; gave them a good bed, set a table in the

morning for sixty, but breakfasted about forty, that being all that he could find. Wm. Gilmore, 277 Hicks Street, gave about 250 meals; a staunch old Democrat, said he could not go to the war, but *wanted to feed the boys*. One other man, on Atlantic Street, dealt out coffee for two hours, while we were waiting for the boat; and distributed cigars. One widow lady, name unknown, invited to supper about fifteen, gave them lodging, and gave breakfast to about twenty. There were other hospitalities, but I am unable to state them. The 42d say, with a will, 'Bully for Brooklyn!'"

During this year the Eleventh Brigade, New York State National Guard, was formed.

1863. January 16th. The 176th New York Volunteer Regiment left New York city for the front. Three companies (B, I. and K,) had been recruited in Brooklyn during the previous fall.

February. *The Long Island Historical Society* was organized.

June. For the third time since the commencement of the war, the Brooklyn militia was called into active service, and over 2,000 men fully armed and equipped, were ready for departure within twenty-four hours after the call of the governor was received, viz.: the 13th, Col. Woodward; 28th, Col. Bennett; 23d, Col. Everdell; 47th, Col. Meserole; 52d, Col. Cole; 56th, Col. J. Q. Adams. Col. Michael Murphy, under authorization of the State government, commenced the raising of a new regiment, called the *Kings County Volunteers*.

June 17th. The Brooklyn *Twenty-third* left en route for Harrisburg, Pa., to meet, with other New York regiments, the rebel invasion of Pennsylvania. Its campaign was fortunately a bloodless one.

July 13th. The great "draft riots" broke out in New York city, where, for three days, an infuriated mob literally held the city at its mercy, defying the constituted authorities, reckless of life and property, raging like a conflagration, unchecked and irresponsible, striking terror to the souls of peaceable citizens, suspending all business and travel, burning and plundering as they went. All this was incited by the enforcement of the draft by the United States authorities. The Navy Yard, Arsenal, Armory, etc., were all placed in readiness for any attack; a large meeting of the reserves of all the regiments then at the seat of war was held at the armory, and another of the 70th Regiment, at the arsenal, at both of which gatherings, arrangements were made to furnish volunteers for the emergency, whenever required. A regiment of exempts organized under Col. A. M. Wood; and (14th), Capt. Geo. Chappel's company (Co. C), 1st Battalion of New York Artillery, went over to New York, by order, to do duty at the Thirty-fifth street arsenal. A large body of police was kept in reserve at the City Hall, the mayor and other officials remained on duty during the night, and

every precaution taken to guard against any outbreak of mob violence, and to keep the people from undue excitement. Considerable apprehension was felt less the numerous artisans and workmen employed at Greenpoint, and in the manufactories along the East river shore, should become uneasy, and participate in the riotous demonstrations which were being made by many of the laboring classes in New York; but the law-abiding disposition of the citizens of Brooklyn was shown in the universal observance of the peace throughout the city. A few trifling manifestations of ill-will to the negro were exhibited, but the ordinary police force was sufficient to overawe what malcontents there were. On Wednesday night (15th), an alarming act of incendiarism showed that a danger really did exist, and that there were some reckless and desperate characters in the city ripe for mischief. Two grain elevators in the Atlantic Basin were fired by a mob numbering about 200 persons; both elevators were destroyed, one a costly structure, worth about \$80,000, and the other (floating) about \$25,000. The firemen did their duty nobly, although attacked and obstructed by the mob, who were finally dispersed by the police after a short but fierce encounter.

Sheriff A. F. Campbell, on the 15th, issued a proclamation to the citizens, recommending them to organize as a *posse comitatus*, for the securing of the peace of the city; and the mayor, after the fire at the Atlantic Basin, issued an address congratulating his fellow citizens on the exemption which Brooklyn had enjoyed from disturbance, etc., and offering a suggestion similar to that of the sheriff's, relative to volunteer police service.

During the night of the excitement in New York a party of volunteers from Brooklyn reported individually at the State Arsenal in New York, where they did efficient service in guarding the building against the rioters. We regret that we have not the names of these Brooklyn volunteers. By the 18th, however, the riot was suppressed, and the community once more breathed free; although during the month of August, the entire Eleventh Brigade and the two remaining regiments (13th and 28th) of the Fifth Brigade did guard duty in Brooklyn at an expense of three to four thousand dollars per day.

September. The draft was enforced in this county, comprising the Second and Third Districts. The Second District (the 6th, 8th, 9th, 10th, 12th, 14th, 16th, 17th, and 18th Wards, together with New Lots, Flatlands, Flatbush, New Utrecht and Gravesend), was called on for a quota of 3,075, including the fifty per cent. in addition required by law to supply the place of exempts from physical disability. The grand total of persons of the first class, liable to conscription, in the district, was 21,553, the draft requiring one in every seven of those enrolled. The quota of the Third District (1st, 2d, 3d, 4th, 5th, 7th, 11th, 13th, 15th, 19th

and 20th Wards), was 4,054, including the fifty per cent. additional, as above stated.

The Common Council voted to raise \$500,000, to apply to the exemption of exempt and active firemen (including the members of the department prior to July 1st); all members of State militia belonging to the Second Division, N. G. S. N. Y., enrolled prior to July 1st; \$300 to the family, as a commutation fee, or for substitute for any drafted man dependent on his daily labor for support; and if he went himself to service, four dollars per week would be given to the wife, and one dollar to every child under fourteen years of age. Afterwards, however, in consequence of the difficulty experienced in raising the money, the authorities were obliged to omit firemen and militiamen from the benefits of their substitute fund.

October. A new call for 300,000 men. Mr. S. B. Chittenden offered the sum of \$10,000 for 200 volunteers, under this call, for the 14th Regiment. The Second District quota was 3,034 and that of the Third District, 2,343.

November 2d. The charter election resulted in the choice of *Alfred M. Wood*, by 13,123 votes, out of a poll of 28,797; his competitors being Messrs. Prince and Kalbfleisch.

November 11th. At a special meeting of the Board of Supervisors of Kings County, in consequence of a new call for troops, it was resolved to borrow the sum of \$250,000, for the purpose of paying a \$300 bounty to each substitute enlisting in the county, before the 5th of January, 1864, or before another draft should be ordered. This county bounty was paid *directly* to the recruit himself, a measure for which the committee, as a matter of course, was severely denounced by bounty brokers and others interested; but in which they were upheld by many prominent citizens and by general public sentiment.

December 23d and 24th. The *Ladies Loyal League of South Brooklyn* held a fair at the Athenæum, for the benefit of sick and wounded soldiers, through the United States Sanitary Commission.

1864. January 1st. The new mayor, Col. A. M. Wood, assumed the duties of his office.

COLONEL ALFRED M. WOOD was a native of Hempstead, L. I., where he was born on the 19th of April, 1828; removed to Brooklyn at an early age; and was for some time a clerk in the store of the late Elijah Lewis, with whom he afterward formed a partnership. Afterwards he engaged in business on his own account, but commercial reverses compelled him to resume the position of clerk.

Colonel Wood entered political life in 1853, as the democratic candidate for collector of taxes. Although his party was defeated, such was Colonel Wood's position in the good opinion of his fellow citizens, that he was elected by six hundred majority. He served the public faithfully during a term of three years, at the end of which he was re-elected by an increased majority. In 1861 he was selected as the representative of the First Ward in the Board of Aldermen, of which he was chosen the presiding officer.

When the Southern Rebellion culminated in armed resistance to the authority of the government, and the war began, among the military organizations that hastened to offer their services for the defense of the country, and for maintaining the honor of the flag, was the 14th Regiment, New York State Militia. Of this regiment, organized in 1848, Col. Wood was at this time the commandant.

He resigned his position as President of the Board of Aldermen, and was indefatigable in his efforts to prepare the regiment for service, and to obtain from the government its immediate acceptance. Although other local regiments were accepted for the term of three months, the war department declined to receive the Fourteenth, except for three years, or the war. This condition was acceded to, and on the 19th of May, 1861, the regiment marched through the streets, lined with thousands, who cheered it God speed on its errand of honor, and went to the front.

In the memorable first battle of Bull Run, the 21st of July, the regiment, with the brigade to which it was attached in the division of General Hunter, reached the field about eleven o'clock, and going at once into action, remained under fire six hours. The men behaved with great coolness and gallantry, and the Colonel was conspicuous for bravery. Four times did they charge the enemy up a hill, in the face of a terrific fire of artillery and musketry, Colonel Wood leading them. The loss of the regiment at this point was very severe, 143 being killed, wounded or reported missing. The Colonel was severely wounded just at the time that the fearful panic began, which ended in a disastrous route.

He was carried some distance on a litter and afterwards placed in an ambulance, the driver of which, as the retreating flood swept onward, cut the traces and fled for his life. With the assistance of some members of his regiment, the colonel succeeded in reaching the woods, where they remained four days, living on blackberries, when they fell into the hands of the Eighteenth Virginia Regiment. The colonel was removed to Charlottesville, where he remained some months, and partially recovered. He was taken to Richmond, and shared the imprisonment of Gen. Corcoran and other brave Union soldiers.

Great anxiety was felt in Brooklyn as to his fate. It was reported at one time that he was killed at Bull Run; again, that he had been taken prisoner, and suffered amputation of the leg. When it was ascertained that neither of these reports was true, the public was startled by another, to the effect that he and others were held as hostages, to be executed in retaliation for the execution of the Rebel pirates. This last report was well founded. How determined Col. Wood was to meet boldly any fate in store for him, and to give his life cheerfully to his country, if it was demanded, is shown by his speech to his regiment on rejoining them at Upton hill, after his release from captivity. He then said:

"This, soldiers of the old Fourteenth, is one of two eventful moments of my life, which I shall ever look back upon with the happiest reflections. The first was that upon the occasion when I was taken from Henrico County jail, at Richmond, and in company with Col. Corcoran, was taken before the military authorities, to meet the issue presented in the question of retaliation, which at that time was under consideration with the rebel authorities, and which involved the execution of myself and others. The honor I considered as having fallen to my lot was one which every true American should be proud of—the chosen sacrifice of a country and a cause like our own."

At length a change was effected, and Colonel Wood was released from rebel imprisonment in the latter part of February, 1862.

The citizens of Brooklyn were of course anxious to give public expression to their appreciation of the gallantry with

which Colonel Wood had represented them on the field of battle and the manner in which he had sustained the patriotic character of the city, during his long captivity. Appropriate resolutions were passed by the Board of Aldermen, and it was determined that a committee of the board should proceed to Philadelphia to meet their absent president, whose place had been so long and honorably vacant. A meeting of citizens was also held, and a committee appointed to co-operate with the city authorities. This reception, which occurred March 3, 1862, was one of the most impressive and memorable demonstrations ever made in this city. All classes of people united to do honor to a distinguished citizen whose name was inseparably connected with some of the most important and stirring events in the history of the country. Nor were the demonstrations confined to Brooklyn. The people of Brushville, where the colonel joined his estimable lady, were alive with enthusiasm, and a reception was given him such as the quiet towns of Long Island rarely witness.

It was his intention to rejoin his regiment at the earliest possible moment, but impaired health and consequent physical disability compelled him to abandon his purpose. Some time afterwards he was appointed by the President, Collector of Internal Revenue for the Second District. On the 20th of October, 1863, he was nominated for the mayoralty by the Union city convention; and, at the polls, the people elected him to that position. In a poll of 28,312 he received 12,672, being 1,728 over Benjamin Prince, and 7,976 over Martin Kalbfleisch, an honor the more marked and gratifying to the recipient of it because it was unsought. Opposed to him in the canvass was a gentleman who had the support of a powerful party, having a majority in the city; but the contest was a fair one, and Colonel Wood owed his success to the use of no means on his part except those entirely consistent with the rules of honorable political warfare.

1864. January. Mr. S. B. Chittenden placed in the hands of the special committee of the Board of Supervisors on substitute bounty fund, the sum of ten thousand dollars, to be disbursed in sums of \$50, to recruits who should enlist in the *Brooklyn Fourteenth*, all of which was so disbursed, to the entire satisfaction of the generous donor.

January 2d. The special committee on substitute bounty fund were authorized to pay \$15 premium for each recruit enlisted, and credited to the quota of Kings County; said sum being paid to the party presenting the recruit. This premium, however, was not paid to recruits for veteran regiments.

January 6th. *The First Long Island Regiment* (Brooklyn Phalanx), Col. Nelson Cross, returned on a short furlough, after an absence of nearly two years and a half, during which they had participated in fourteen battles; 234 men alone returned, out of the 1,000 who went forth to the war, and they had all re-enlisted for the war. They met with a cordial welcome home, were escorted by the 28th New York State National Guard to the City Hall, where they were addressed by the Mayor and Common Council, and partook of a collation prepared for them.

February 2d and 4th. Two amateur dramatic entertainments at the Athenæum, in aid of the United States Sanitary Commission, produced the sum of \$1,000.

February 22d. A national and state flag, both of silk, with rosewood staffs and silver mountings, with the inscriptions, were this day presented to the 23d Regiment, New York State National Guard, by the ladies of Brooklyn. The presentation took place in front of Mr. S. B. Chittenden's residence, in Pierrepont Street, addresses being made by that gentleman, the Rev. Francis Vinton, D.D., and Brig. Gen. Pratt, the colonel commanding the regiment. This day, also, was signalized by the opening of the great

Brooklyn and Long Island Fair—an event which is not only memorable in the civic annals as a magnificent exhibition of patriotism, but as being, in fact, the initial point of a new civic life and progress—previously undreamed of. This Fair resulted from the joint efforts of the *War Fund Committee of Brooklyn and County of Kings* (acting through its sanitary committee) and of the *Woman's Relief Association of the City of Brooklyn*, recognized as the Brooklyn Auxiliary of the United States Sanitary Commission, and to which the sanitary committee of the War Fund was advisory. An appeal made, in May, 1863, by the War Fund Sanitary Committee to the churches of Brooklyn, asking cash contributions for the purchase of materials for hospital clothing, to be made up by the families of our soldiers in the field, through the agency of the *Female Employment Society* (created long before the war, for the object which its name indicates), placed about \$6,000 in the hands of the committee, which proved an ample provision for the summer. In the following autumn it was found that the Woman's Relief Association, during its first year, had turned into the depot of the Sanitary Commission, hospital clothing, etc., to the value of nearly \$50,000. It became a serious question with the committee whether fresh appeals should be made to the churches, or whether some new plans could be devised by which the citizens of Brooklyn could be brought into active and efficient sympathy with the work of the Woman's Relief Association for the winter of 1863-4. Early in October, the plan of a great fair for the city was suggested by Mr. James H. Frothingham, one of the War Fund committee. After conference with Dr. Bellows, president of the United States Sanitary Commission, and others, the Sanitary Committee broached the subject (November 6th) to the Woman's Relief Association, in the form of a general plan for a great city fair, which it was thought might realize the sum of \$75,000 to \$80,000 for the United States Sanitary Commission. But it was feared that the local charities, whose annual fairs were already being prepared for, might suffer too seriously by such an undertaking, and the matter, for the present, was laid over. Meanwhile, on the 14th of the same month, the ladies of New York, under the auspices of the United States Sanitary Commission, announced by a circular the project of a great Metropolitan Fair, to begin in that city on the 22d of

February, 1864; and the cooperation of the Brooklyn ladies was invited, a department of the fair being assigned to this city. On the 20th of November, the Woman's Relief Association decided to unite in the work, as the Brooklyn Division of the Metropolitan Fair; leaving open, however, the question as to which city the said Brooklyn Division would carry on their work in. At a special meeting of the Woman's Relief Association on the 24th, it was determined, in anticipation of the great fair, to increase the representation from the respective churches; and, on the 4th of December, a large meeting of the association was held at the chapel of the Packer Institute, Mrs. J. S. T. Stranahan presiding, and the project of an *independent fair* was developed by the secretary of the sanitary committee of the War Fund, who said that Brooklyn, as a city of three hundred thousand inhabitants, should make itself felt and appreciated, and accomplish as much relatively as the city of New York. Measures for the enlargement of membership of the executive board of the Woman's Relief Association and for the cooperation of the War Fund committee were adopted, and enthusiastic speeches were delivered by Rev. Drs. Buddington, Farley and Spear, the latter of whom ventured a prediction (which many then deemed a little "wild") that the fair would realize as high as \$150,000. On the evening of the 5th, a meeting of the War Fund committee was held at their rooms, which was attended by about a hundred persons of recognized influence in the community; and it was resolved that a committee of sixty gentlemen be appointed as a general committee, with power to add to their number, for the purpose of cooperating with the Woman's Relief Association in arranging for and conducting the Brooklyn Division of the Great Metropolitan Fair. This committee organized the same evening, with Mr. A. A. Low as president, and went vigorously to work. At a meeting of the Woman's Relief Association on December 18th, the spirit was found to be rising, and under the inspiration of the glowing remarks of Henry Ward Beecher and others, it soon ran up to fever heat. Notices were sent to the sewing societies of the various churches and to the towns and villages of Long Island, asking their cooperation in the Brooklyn Division of the great fair, and the response, from every quarter, was prompt and cordial.

On the evening of December 19th, a meeting of the War Fund Committee was held at the Chapel of the Polytechnic Institute, Mr. A. A. Low presiding, and Ex-Mayor Lambert acting as secretary. An advisory board of twenty-nine gentlemen was appointed, of which Dwight Johnson was chairman, who were empowered to cooperate with the Woman's Relief Association in the conduct of the Brooklyn Division of the Metropolitan Fair; Rev. Dr. Farley made a report of his recent visit to the Boston Fair, then in progress, and earnest speeches were made by Dwight Johnson,

Esq., Rev. T. L. Cuyler, A. A. Low and Walter S. Griffith, Esqrs. Mr. John D. McKenzie then made an effective speech, and the enthusiasm which he elicited was brought to a climax when he subscribed \$1,000 to the objects of the fair. Amid the tumultuous applause which ensued, Mr. A. A. Low followed with his subscription of \$2,500; and then, in rapid succession, the \$1,000 and \$500 subscriptions flowed in until \$25,500 had been pledged, and Mr. S. B. Chittenden, in addition to his \$1,000 contribution, offered a pair of Devon steers from his farm in Connecticut, which he promised to "make as fat as possible on Yankee corn," before the fair opened. This great meeting "drove the nail and clinched it." On the following day, the list of contributions was swelled to \$29,750, and before the end of December the subscription had reached a point of over \$50,000 through the activity of the chairmen of the several special committees. By this time, the managers of the New York side of the Metropolitan Fair had felt obliged to postpone its opening from February 22d to the 28th of March; but the Brooklynites felt that it would be bad policy for them to accede to any postponement. The enthusiasm was at its height; the 22d of February was hallowed and heart-stirring in its associations, and these could not be ignored or lost; accordingly, at the regular weekly meeting of the Woman's Relief Association, December 30th, it was resolved that Brooklyn should proceed without regard to the arrangements of New York, and that the Fair should open on February 22d. Brooklyn, having thus fearlessly *cut loose from leading strings*, found that a new impulse was given to the work. The Academy of Music was engaged; arrangements rapidly matured for other buildings, as the case might require, and the city became, throughout all classes of the people, intent, energetic and enthusiastic to the highest degree, in preparation for the noble undertaking which they had assumed. A public meeting at the Academy of Music on the 2d of January, 1864, was held; the managers of the Fair received from the municipal authorities permission to erect the necessary temporary buildings, and on the 19th the committee on internal arrangements and reception of goods announced that they were ready to receive donations of goods, produce, etc., etc. On the same evening, Greenpoint was stirred to its core by a rousing public meeting on behalf of the Fair; on the 21st the town of Flatbush had an earnest public meeting, and the good people of the Island were not behind hand in their preparation for the coming event; public meetings being held in most of the towns, efficient committees appointed, and every energy used to bring out a handsome representation for the Island on the occasion.

In addition to the Academy of Music, two temporary structures were erected for the fair, one on a lot (the use of which was loaned by Mr. A. A. Low), adjoining the Academy on the west, to be 68 by 100 feet

and two stories high; the other on a lot opposite the Academy (loaned for the purpose by Mrs. Packer), to be 100 feet square and one story high. The first of these buildings was to be occupied by the restaurant, and was called *Knickerbocker Hall*, and the latter (which communicated with the Academy by a covered bridge thrown across Montague street, at a sufficient height not to interfere with public travel), was called the *Hall of Manufactures* and the *New England Kitchen*. The large building on the north-east corner of Montague and Clinton streets, known as the Taylor mansion, was also engaged for the Fair; and in it was located the *Museum of Arts, Relics and Curiosities*, and the editorial rooms of the *Drum-Beat*, the newspaper issued during the Fair. The Academy was opened for the reception of goods from February 15th to 18th inclusive, and the vast influx of donations astonished even those who were best informed of the progress of the work.

At three p. m. of Feb. 22d (Washington's birthday), the Fair was inaugurated by a grand parade of the entire military force of the city, including veterans and soldiers of volunteer regiments at home on furlough, together with the United States marines from the Navy Yard. At seven o'clock p. m., the Fair was first opened to the public. The *Great Central Bazaar*, for the sale of articles for the Fair, was held in the Academy building, the grand floor of which was boarded over, level with the stage, making a magnificent hall, with an area of 10,570 square feet, and with the second floor and lobbies, a total area of 20,300 square feet. The decorations of the Academy were very beautiful, and their patriotic nature was in fine keeping with the character of the great enterprise. From the centre of the auditorium ceiling was suspended, by invisible wires, an American eagle, which seemed to hover in mid-air over the majestic scene below. From the apex of the column of drapery sprang radiating bands of red, white and blue bunting, which, stretching in graceful curves until they touched the pillars of the amphitheatre, were thence twined, and drooped, and festooned around the whole circle of the building. Above the arch of the stage, in letters formed of tiny jets of gas, blazed the inscription "IN UNION IS STRENGTH." The back wall of the stage was completely screened by a mammoth painting of a field hospital tent of the United States Sanitary Commission, with nurses, wounded soldiers, etc. The rough wood work above the side scenes was skillfully concealed by draperies of white and colored muslin, and flags were everywhere displayed in profusion. The huge crimson drop-curtain was caught up and stretched along the ceiling of the stage, thus hiding its rude surface, and giving at the same time a brilliant effect. Many elegant paintings were also displayed in the auditorium, while the superb afghans, and many colored quilts, with which the vast building was fairly tapestried, added their vivid splendor

to the effect of the *tout ensemble*. When the magnificent building was flooded at night with the splendor of a thousand gas jets, it presented a spectacle which was nothing less than enchanting. The stalls of the ground floor were arranged in concentric arcs of circles, leaving a large space in the centre of the building for the accommodation of the crowd. The goods, as far as practicable, were admirably separated into classes, and an effective system of ushers was adopted, which prevented confusion at the entrances. In the family circle, Dodworth's band or the Navy yard band furnished exquisite music every night, so long as the Fair lasted.

In the Assembly room of the Academy was located the art gallery, where were contained, in the opinion of connoisseurs, more works of *real* merit than any which had been offered to the public for many years. One hundred and seventy-four paintings and sketches and several statues were exhibited under the management of the artists of Brooklyn and Long Island.

In Knickerbocker hall, one of the temporary structures before mentioned, was a huge *salle a manger*, a triumph of decorative art, supplied with all the appliances of a first class restaurant, where the thousands of visitors were constantly fed, by a systematic arrangement of donations of eatables, etc., from the churches of Brooklyn, and from the towns of Long Island, which provided *seven-eighths* of the daily demands of the establishment. Five hundred persons could be comfortably accommodated at one time in this great restaurant, which netted the Fair the splendid sum of nearly \$24,000.

In the other temporary structure, before mentioned, as on the opposite side of Montague street (present site of the Mercantile Library) was the *funny* feature of the Fair, *The New England Kitchen*—reproducing, in all its detail, the Yankee farm-house life of the last century. In this large room (40x75) all the furniture and appointments were, as nearly as it was possible to have them, veritable antiques. In one corner were several ancient spinning wheels, kept constantly in vigorous motion by venerable matrons, with their starched caps and snowy kerchiefs crossed over the bosoms of their stuff gowns; then there was the dresser with its rows of shining pewter; the ever ready churn; the tall clock sedately ticking in the corner; the ridge poles strung with dried apples; pumpkins, glittering red peppers, seed bags, and *yarbs* of healing virtues—and, above all, the huge open fire-place with its mighty logs, and the traditional trammel, from which swung a gigantic pot, in which, from time to time, were cooked great messes of unctuous chowder, or mush; while, from the ovens at the side, emerged spicy Indian puddings, smoking loaves of Boston brown bread, and huge delicious dishes of pork and beans. On the long tables were bountiful supplies of old fashioned victuals, with cider, pumpkin, mince and apple pies, doughnuts, etc.; while the guests were waited upon by pretty damsels with curious names

and quaint attire. During the continuance of the Fair, the New England Kitchen was the scene of a series of novel entertainments, reproducing some of the peculiar social customs of our ancestors, such as the old folks' concert, the donation visit, the quilting party, the apple bee, and the wedding, all of which were admirably planned and carried out. The kitchen was constantly filled by an amused and delighted crowd.

Under the same roof with the kitchen was the *Hall of Manufactures*, in the centre of which hung a mammoth broom, forwarded from Cincinnati to the Fair, with the following challenge to Brooklyn: "Sent by the managers of the Cincinnati Fair, Greeting: We have swept up \$240,000; Brooklyn, beat this if you can." To this, as soon as the magnificent result of our Fair began to loom up so that an approximate estimate could be made, some sporting member of the committee on manufactures appended the following addenda: "Brooklyn sees the \$240,000, and goes \$150,000 better."

In the *Taylor Mansion* was improvised a collection of relics, curiosities, etc., such as would have delighted the heart of Scott's Antiquary, or excited the envy of a Barnum. In the same building was a *gallery of engravings*, the largest and finest collection ever brought together in this country; a splendid collection of *Japanese, Chinese and Eastern curiosities*; a room devoted to the sale of *photographs*, and another to that of *autographs*. In the upper story of the building was the editorial room of the *Drum-Beat*, issued daily (commencing Feb. 22d), under the editorship of Rev. Dr. Storrs, and his associate, Mr. Francis Williams, of the *New York Evening Post*. Each number contained twenty-four wide columns, of elegant typographical appearance, and the first page bore an appropriate title-vignette. The last regular number appeared March 5th, and a supplementary number was issued on the 11th. A small but choice *Cattle Show* completed the department of the Fair, at which the Chittenden steers were sold at auction for \$295; and a splendid Durham bull, presented by Elias Howe, Jr., was sold by shares for \$500.

The Fair was closed by a grand *Calico Ball*, the 11th of March, the proceeds of which (\$2,000), were appropriated to the Brooklyn Female Employment Society.

It was justly said that "there probably never was an enterprise of the vast proportions of this Fair, which was so admirably systematized, considering the brief time that was permitted to perfect and carry the system of organization into execution. From the opening of the Fair to its close, not the slightest indication of confusion in the working of the machinery was visible to the observer, although no one but those who had the complicated arrangements in charge can estimate or appreciate the amount of thought, energy and labor which were required to keep everything moving on with such delightful harmony and precision. But this

was all below the surface. To the public, everything proceeded from day to-day, with as much order and regularity as if the Fair had been a vast business establishment wherein years of experience had been devoted to systematizing its operations."

Very much of this remarkable freedom from all friction and distracting influences, and of that earnestness of patriotic feeling, was undoubtedly due to the extraordinary tact and executive ability of Mrs. Marianne Fitch Stranahan, the head of the Woman's Relief Association. As the wife of Hon. J. S. T. Stranahan, she occupied a high social position; and, ever active in every good work in the city of her adoption, she was admirably fitted by her natural abilities, as well as by the experience gained in eight years' service as first directress of the Graham Institute for the Relief of Aged and Indigent Females, for the duties devolved upon her in connection with the Sanitary Fair. "She was the right woman in the right place. She gave her time to the work with a zeal and perseverance that never faltered, and with a hopefulness for her country, which yielded to no discouragement or despondency. As a presiding officer, she discharged her duties with a self-possession, courtesy, skill and method, that commanded universal admiration. No woman ever labored in a sphere more honorable, and but few women could have filled her place." She died on the 30th of August, 1866, her health having, no doubt, been seriously impaired by the severe physical and mental strain placed upon her, by her duties in that connection with the Woman's Relief Association, and the Sanitary Fair, which originated therefrom.

The fair closed on the 8th of March; its actual net result being \$402,943.74; of which the sum of \$300,000 was paid directly into the treasury of the United States Sanitary Commission; and the balance, at the suggestion of the Rev. Dr. Bellows, President of that Commission, was expended in the shape of supplies, to be furnished according to the exigencies of the service, through the agency of the *Woman's Relief Association* of Brooklyn. This magnificent gift also called forth the following encomium from Dr. Bellows, who wrote to the president of the Brooklyn and Long Island fair: "As this is by far *the largest amount ever put into our treasury at one time by any community*, I feel that it deserves the most marked expression of our gratitude and wonder * * * Brooklyn, by the only thoroughly approvable kind of secession, has henceforth declared her independence of New York. She has indicated her right and power to lead, and we shall no longer hear her spoken of as an appendix to the metropolis. She is, at least, entitled to be the second volume of that great work, the Commercial Capital, of which New York is the first."

It was, indeed, true that the Brooklyn and Long Island Fair, was "*the first great act of self-assertion*

ever made by the City of Brooklyn." Previous to that we had contented ourselves as a community with believing, that for beauty of local position, Brooklyn was unsurpassed; a claim generally admitted. She had, also, with remarkable unanimity, been allowed the sobriquet of the "city of churches," although never exceeding the proportion of one church to two thousand persons. The census was an indisputable witness to the fact of the wondrous ratio in which her population had increased, till she was equally, beyond denial, the *third* city in that respect, in the Union. Among the merchants in New York, most prominent for intelligence, wealth, and consequent influence, were found many who resided within the walls of Brooklyn; while the crowds crossing her ferries to and from the great metropolis, at morning and evening, showed how largely the entire business and labor of the latter were performed by our citizens.

"Nevertheless, Brooklyn was but a suburb, overshadowed by her mighty neighbor. Travelers, foreign and native, in vast numbers, visited the chief commercial city of our country, on errands of business or pleasure; but, if not called to Brooklyn through personal claims of kindred or friendship, rarely sought it except to visit the great Navy Yard of the nation, or the most beautiful cemetery in the world; severally so placed on what was once her northern, and what is still her southern boundary, that either could be reached while the city itself was practically ignored. The visitor came and went, having seen little or nothing of it, except its unattractive outskirts, and with no longing awakened to see more. Meanwhile, she had gathered to herself public schools, which had grown to rank among the best of the kind in the land; private or corporate institutions of education for either sex, which in their entire equipment, management and efficiency, would do honor to any community; a body of clergy, as a whole, and for their numbers not surpassed in character and gifts by those of any of our citizens; great institutions of charity, too largely dependent, however, on annual contributions rather than permanent endowments; courses of lectures delivered by the ablest men of the country, or by savants from abroad, traveling or resident in America; a well appointed Philharmonic Society, amply patronized and appreciated; an Academy of Music, the beauty and value of which the Fair served to make more widely and palpably known; a Mercantile Library, which, for many years, has met an inevitable want of every progressive community; and a Historical Society, recently formed from the city and island, which had started in its course with remarkable vigor. And yet, withal, Brooklyn, till the Fair, had no status before the country beyond that of a remarkably quiet suburban town, where, after a hard day's labor, weary men found lodging places till the next day's work began."

But, in and by the Fair, Brooklyn "stood forth for

once, apart from New York;" and, summoning Long Island to her side, put forth her powers to help, to the utmost of her means, the noblest charity of the world, and proved herself alive to her proud position, her abundant wealth, her great privileges and opportunities. And, since that time, whatever Brooklyn has wanted, she has sought for with her own powers, and has obtained it; *for liberality and self-power increase by the using.*

1864. February. For the purpose of stimulating enlistments to the credit of Kings county, members of the Substitute Bounty Fund committee of the Board of Supervisors, visited the Army of the Potomac, as well as Port Royal, where Kings county regiments were stationed, for the purpose of inducing them to reenlist to the credit of Kings county, which efforts were eminently successful.

March 6th. Two hundred and fifty reenlisted men of the 48th New York Volunteers left Brooklyn to rejoin their regiment, then in Florida.

March 11th. The great *Calico Ball* was held at the Academy of Music, in aid of the Sanitary Commission.

March 14th. Appeared the President's call for 200,000 men, additional to the 500,000 already called for.

March 10th and 15th. Meetings were held at the Reformed Dutch Church, on the Heights, for the purpose of organizing in Brooklyn, a branch of the

United States Christian Commission. A committee of prominent citizens of all denominations, previously appointed, reported an informal plan of organization, and the following gentlemen, with such others connected with the churches of Long Island, as they should hereafter associate with them, were constituted a *Christian Commission for Brooklyn and Long Island*, to act in concert with the United States Christian Commission, in supplying Christian teachers and religious and moral literature to the army and navy, etc., etc: Revs. James Eells, D.D.; R. S. Storrs, Jr., D.D.; John H. Raymond, D.D.; W. I. Budington, D.D.; J. B. Waterbury, D.D.; J. E. Rockwell, D.D.; Elbert S. Porter, D.D.; E. H. Canfield, D.D.; Samuel T. Spear, D.D.; Chas. S. Robertson; L. H. Mills; C. D. Foss; R. M. Hatfield; Theodore L. Cuyler; Wilbur F. Watkins; Wm. S. Karr; E. Mills; Robert Lowery; Samuel B. Caldwell; Thos. H. Messenger; Livingston K. Miller; S. B. Chittenden; Reuben W. Rogers; Henry Sheldon; Edward Cary; Wm. J. Coffin; Edward A. Lambert; Wm. W. Armfield; James C. Southworth; John D. McKenzie; David Wesson; Lewis Morris; A. D. Matthews; R. L. Wyckoff; John G. Fay; Richard H. Cornwell; Benson Van Vleet; Dwight Johnson; Walter S. Griffith.

The above named committee organized March 23d, under the title of the *Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission*, and elected the following officers: *President*, Walter S. Griffith; *Vice-President*, Rev. James Eells, D.D.; *Corresponding Secretary*, Rev.

J. B. Waterbury, D.D.; *Recording Secretary*, Wm. J. Coffin; *Treasurer*, Samuel B. Caldwell. Previously, the patriotic and Christian people of Brooklyn and Long Island had given their donations through the New York branch of the United States Christian Commission, which had a special portion of the field assigned to it. Great interest was manifested by the public; office rooms were secured in the Hamilton building, corner of Court and Joralemon streets; and funds were liberally, and almost spontaneously, provided by the churches and by individual contributions. The public meetings held for the purpose of interesting the community and obtaining funds were most enthusiastic in character and fruitful in results, abounding in scenes of the intensest interest and the most touching incidents. The funds placed by this Brooklyn and Long Island Commission, at the disposal of the central commission of Philadelphia, at different times, amounted in the aggregate to nearly \$9,000.

The number of books, periodicals, newspapers, etc., distributed by this commission to the army and navy cannot be accurately stated; yet we learn from their report, that from March, 1864, to April, 1865, they sent out bibles and portions of the scriptures, 1,210; psalm and hymn books, 4,033; small books for knapsack, 52,079; books for libraries, 5,641; magazines and pamphlets, 50,544; newspapers, religious and others, 177,520; pages of tracts, 787,226, being a total of 1,078,304. These were all carefully selected from our best families, or from the lists of the best publishing houses, and were of the highest character as to interest and morality. With these were sent also in the course of a single year, between three and four thousand comfort-bags and housewives, the productions of sewing circles, young ladies' schools, Sunday schools, etc., etc., and which were comforts indeed to the brave soldiers and seamen, not less from their intrinsic adaptability to camp needs, than from the evidence they bore with them of the thoughtful remembrance of the patriotic women and girls who made them. Out of two hundred chapel tents furnished by the Central United States Christian Commission to the soldiers of the army of the Potomac, for their accommodation in the matter of religious meetings in camp, ten were furnished by the Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission, at an expense of \$5,000. Each of these large tents bore, on its canvass roof, the name of the Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission, and to each was furnished a library, comprising in all about 1,350 volumes. One thousand and thirty volumes were contributed by James H. Prentice, of Brooklyn, and several other excellent libraries were also sent from here to the hospitals at Hampton, Va., Fredericksburg, Md., and others. Five hundred dollars was also contributed by the Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission to the permanent chapel erected at the Hampton Hospital. In addition to this, and in prompt response to an appeal to the churches of Brook-

lyn, one hundred and sixty-seven delegates, representing nearly all the evangelical denominations, were sent to the front for humane and religious labor in the field, camp and hospital, and on board vessels of the navy. They were sent in companies of from two to ten or twelve, and usually spent six weeks in the work.

March 17th. The *Union* of this date says :

"Though Brooklyn has had to bear its full share of the responsibilities and burdens of the war, its natural advantages, and the enterprise of its people, have proved equal to any exigency ; and the course of our city has been as prosperous and as progressive as in more auspicious times. A satisfactory attestation of this fact may be had by a walk through the outskirts of the city, where costly structures rear their lofty heads, and the busy hum of industry may constantly be heard. The large manufacturing interests of our city—which exist to an extent that but few of our citizens have any conception of—are all highly prosperous, and are employed to their fullest capacity.

"But, it is in that portion of our city known as Greenpoint, where the greatest evidences of progress and prosperity are to be seen. Within the past year, a dozen or more streets in the Seventeenth ward, which promise to become the most frequented and important thoroughfares, have been opened, graded and paved, thus enormously enhancing the value of the property in that district. In the same ward there has been erected within the past eight months, not less than one hundred first class dwelling houses and stores, and yet the demand is greatly in advance of the supply. Besides these buildings, there have been erected in the same locality, docks, ferry houses, and factories, which have largely increased the traffic and importance of the neighborhood.

"But, perhaps, the most encouraging feature of Brooklyn enterprise is to be found in the unabated prosperity of the ship building interest. The estimated value of the vessels now building at Greenpoint, including those for the government, is upwards of ten millions of dollars, and the number of persons employed thereon, is between two and three thousand.

The first iron vessel built on the plan of Capt. Ericsson, was constructed at the works of A. J. Rowland, Greenpoint, which establishment must ever be famous, while we continue to remember the battle of the *Monitor* and the *Merri-mac*. Since that memorable event, Mr. Rowland has constructed seven vessels of a similar character, and of the average value of \$500,000 each.

"The same firm have two iron monitors under way. One, the *Puritan*, a sea-going vessel (length, 340 feet ; breadth of beam, 50 feet ; depth, 23 feet), is the largest of the monitors yet built, and is justly regarded as a perfect marvel of naval architecture and strength. She is so nearly finished that she will be ready for launching early in May. The other iron vessel under way at this yard, is the *Cohoes*, a light draft monitor for coast service. She is 300 feet long, 42 feet wide, 28 feet depth of hold, and 2,800 tons burden. The number of hands employed at this yard, will average about five hundred.

"The Dry Dock Iron Works is a young rival of Mr. Rowland's establishment, and was opened last fall by Mr. J. S. Underhill. At this establishment is being constructed a light draft monitor, to be called the *Modoc*, and in all respects similar to the *Cohoes*, building in Mr. Rowland's yard.

"Mr. Henry Steers, at his yard, is building for the government, the sloop *Idaho*, a vessel of 3,000 tons, 300 feet long, 44 feet wide, and 27 feet depth of hold. The *Idaho* will be

launched within a month from this time. She is built with an express view to speed, will be furnished with two propellers, and contain engines of 3,000 horse power, and will prove a splendid addition to the United States navy."

A large number of ocean and sound steamers (both side wheel and propellers), ferry boats, and wooden vessels, were also being constructed in the various yards.

March 23. The board of supervisors resolved "to pay such sums not exceeding the amount heretofore paid to volunteers for the army, if they find it will be advantageous to the county, to recruits in the *naval* service, provided that this county be credited on the quota therefor." Finding, on inquiry, that credit would be given Kings county for sailors enlisting to her credit (three years' service being required to obtain credit for one man), naval recruits were paid the following bounties : for one year, \$100 ; for two and three years, \$200 ; for Marine corps (term of service being four years), \$300.

March 25th. A grand entertainment was given at the Academy, by the *Musæola Association*, for the benefit of the families of the members of the 14th, 48th, and 67th Regiments.

May 15th. A call from the Brooklyn and Long Island Christian Commission, for one hundred minute men, to go to the battlefield and hospital, at the front, for the succor and spiritual comfort of the wounded soldiers, was this day promulgated from all the pulpits of Brooklyn.

May 18th. Appeared the *bogus* proclamation of the President, calling for an additional draft of 400,000 men, and appointing a day of national humiliation and prayer. This document emanated from two Brooklyn newspaper men.

There being a slight deficiency in the full quota of the county, a draft was ordered to fill the same ; and, on the 17th, the board of supervisors directed their bounty committee to pay out of the funds remaining in the county treasurer's hands, \$300 to each and every man held, or that may be held, to service, under this or any subsequent draft made, in the second and third Congressional districts of the State, etc., who may procure an acceptable substitute.

The bounty fund committee of the board of supervisors, were empowered and directed to pay the bounty to all men drafted, and who should enter the army. But few cases, however, occurred under this resolution.

July 9th. At a meeting of the field and staff officers of the 1st Long Island Regiment, held at Delmonico's Hotel, in the city of New York, *The Association of Officers of the First Long Island Volunteer Regiment of 1861*, was formed, "to keep perpetually green the valor, merits and virtues of our brothers in arms, who have fallen by our side, fighting for God and country," and "to preserve as a living coal, the goodly fellowship and brotherly regard felt each for the other, by

those who survive." Officers: Col. Nelson Cross, *President*; Lieut. Col. Henry L. Van Ness, *Vice-President*; Adj't Geo. B. Lincoln, Jr., *Secretary*.

July 13th. The board of supervisors directed its bounty committee "to pay to any person furnishing an accepted volunteer, or recruit for three years' United States service, the sum not exceeding \$300, the same as paid to any drafted man furnishing a substitute, and to be paid upon the like certificate of the United States officer, and without regard to the person furnishing such recruit, being liable to be drafted into the United States service, etc." It having become necessary to keep pace with New York city, in the payment of hand money, as well as bounty, the committee determined to pay a premium of \$20 for one year men, and \$35 for two and three years' men.

July 14th. The corner stone of the new Armory in the Eastern District, was laid.

July 18th. A further call for 500,000 one year men was made by the general government; and, under resolution of the board of supervisors, passed August 16th, the committee commenced to pay one year recruits and volunteers the sum of \$175, and \$100 hand money to any person bringing a recruit. In case the recruit presented himself at the office, he received both bounty and hand money. This hand money was made to apply, however, only to one year recruits.

July 31st. The 151st New York Volunteers (or First Metropolitan Regiment), was, together with the 46th and 51st, newly arrived from the front, honored with a magnificent reception by the authorities of the city of New York. The 151st was one of the four Metropolitan Regiments, raised under the auspices of the Metropolitan Police, and to its ranks the 45th precinct, of Brooklyn, contributed one entire company, of which Sergt. Daniel Jacobs was appointed captain. The 46th precinct, also of Brooklyn, furnished a company to the regiment, under the captaincy of Mr. George Rudyard, and the organization was largely indebted to the labors of Police Captains Woglom and Mullen. The 51st Regiment was, also, to a still greater extent, a Brooklyn organization, full one-half of its members having been recruited in this city. Of the 46th Regiment, two entire companies were raised in Brooklyn.

Among those who took part in the reception was a portion of the 13th Regiment, New York State National Guard, of this city, and the police to the number of about one thousand, which included the off platoons of the Brooklyn force.

August 5th. Companies B and C (90 men), 28th New York State National Guards, left for Elmira, on one hundred days' tour of service.

August 7th. The 90th New York Volunteers came home on veteran furlough, and returned to the field on September 2d.

September 10th. "Next to the news of the fall of Atlanta," says a Brooklyn paper, "the most cheering

announcement of the week, is that Kings County is out of the draft. The mass of the people rejoice greatly that the city has, for the present, at least, avoided the hardships of conscription. The navy has taken us out of the draft. The efforts of the committee of Aldermen and Supervisors to have previous naval enlistments credited were successful; General Hays has issued a certificate, by which it appears that on the 1st August, the deficiency under all calls was, in the 2d District, 3,494, and in the 3d District, 2,481, making a total of 5,975. The two districts are credited, on account of naval enlistments prior to February 24, 1864, with 6,046, leaving as working capital for any future call, a surplus of 71."

September 12th. The draft found the Seventeenth ward (Greenpoint) with its quota (one hundred and seventy-one men) unfilled. Meetings were at once called, money raised, a committee appointed, and in about two weeks' time, the ward was out of the draft, and with quite a surplus to its credit. Over \$20,000 was raised for this purpose in a short time.

September 19th and 23d. Meetings of a number of our best citizens, at No. 9 Court street, resulted on the 30th, in the formation of a *Soldiers' Home Association*, having for its object the provision of relief for sick, or disabled, soldiers and sailors, and their families. The trustees named in its incorporation were George Hall, John Greenwood, Moses F. Odell, Jonathan S. Burr, Seymour L. Husted, Geo. B. Lincoln, James M. Seabury, L. S. Burnham, Wm. H. Jenkins, James Murphy, Luther B. Wyman, Wm. H. Johnson and Charles J. Lowrey.

September 21. The 48th New York Volunteers returned home to Brooklyn.

December 13th. The *Female Employment Society* acknowledged the receipt of one hundred dollars for the widows and orphans of deceased soldiers, being the proceeds of a fair held by the "little girls of South Brooklyn."

December 17th. Mrs. Stranahan, president of the Woman's Relief Association, acknowledged the receipt from six little girls, of one hundred and fifty dollars, being a portion of a sum of two hundred and seventy-five dollars, realized from a children's fair, held at No. 84 Joralemon street, on the 2d of the same month, for the benefit of the soldiers. The balance was reserved for the purchase of materials for the making up, by the juvenile donors, of such garments as the society should indicate as most requisite for soldiers' use.

December 17th. A patriotic subscription ball, for the benefit of the destitute families of the soldiers of Brooklyn, held this evening at the Academy of Music, netted the sum of \$6,036.26, which was handed over to the Female Employment Society of Brooklyn for disbursement.

December 22d. A meeting of the people of Brooklyn was held at the Academy, for the purpose of listen-

ing to an address on the history, patriotism, and sufferings of East Tennessee, and to express the sympathy felt with the heroic and unfortunate people of that loyal stronghold. Owing to the inclemency of the weather, the audience was not as large as the object deserved. Mr. A. A. Low presided, and over two thousand dollars was raised for the aid of the suffering Tennessean patriots.

December 28th. The treasurer of the *Liberty Soldiers' Aid Society*, acknowledges the receipt of \$26.57, being the proceeds of a fair held by five little girls.

1865. January 5th. The 173d New York Volunteers (Fourth Metropolitan) from Brooklyn, in camp at Winchester, Va., received a splendid State flag, with two guidons, donated by citizens of Brooklyn, the War Fund Committee, etc.

March 24th. *The Brooklyn Club* was organized, and, on the 24th of April following, filed its certificate of incorporation.

April 10th. The steamer *Oceanus*, with one hundred and eighty passengers, of both sexes, set sail, under a general permit from the War Department, for a trip to Charleston Harbor, Hilton Head, Fort Fisher, Fortress Monroe, Norfolk, City Point and Richmond. It was a very select and *recherche* affair, originally conceived by Messrs. Stephen M. Griswold and Edwin A. Studwell, of Brooklyn. At Charleston, the party first heard of Lee's surrender; and, on the 14th of April, they were present at the impressive scene of restoring to its place on Fort Sumter, the stars and stripes. On this occasion the Rev. Dr. R. S. Storrs and the Rev. Henry Ward Beecher assisted, the latter delivering one of his impassioned and thrilling addresses. On the return, near Fortress Monroe, the party first heard of the assassination of President Lincoln. Before leaving the steamer, the members of this pleasant party formed themselves into a permanent organization, known as the *Sumter Club*.

News of Gen. Lee's surrender was received, and the city, as indeed the whole country, was overflowed with joy.

April 15th. The announcement of the assassination and death of President Lincoln, plunged the whole community in mourning. All party rancor, all political bitterness was forgotten in sorrow. The thousands of flags which the day before floated joyfully upon the breeze, were silently taken down, or put at half-mast, or draped in funeral serge. Alderman D. D. Whitney, as acting mayor, issued a proclamation directing the public offices to be closed, the flags to be displayed at half-mast, and the bells to be tolled from twelve to one o'clock P. M., etc., etc. Courts, theatres and places of public amusements were closed; and everywhere a deep pall of sorrow seemed to have fallen upon the whole community. On the evening of the 17th, an immense gathering of citizens took place at the Academy of Music, under the auspices of the War Fund committee;

and was one of the most solemn and impressive demonstrations that had ever taken place in Brooklyn. The interior of the beautiful edifice was draped in mourning, while the vast audience, filling every available spot, exhibited feelings in perfect consonance with the mournful occasion which had brought them together. Speeches were delivered by Hon. James Humphrey, Judge Birdseye, Rev. Dr. Thomas Vinton, S. B. Chittenden, and Rev. Dr. Willits. Numerous other meetings also held in other parts of the city testified to the general sorrow.

The municipal and county authorities, public bodies, military, loyal leagues and citizens generally of Brooklyn, joined in the great procession by which the city of New York, on the 26th, celebrated the obsequies of the martyred president.

September 6th. The ladies of the Seventeenth ward gave a splendid entertainment and supper to the returned Greenpoint soldiers at the M. E. Tabernacle, on Union, near Noble street. Greenpoint contributed largely to the make up of the 131st, 158th, 170th, 127th, 159th, 132d, 62d, 51st and other regiments, besides many men contributed to the navy.

1866. With the 1st of January, *Samuel Booth* entered upon the duties of the mayoralty.

SAMUEL BOOTH, elected in the fall of 1865, as the sixteenth mayor of the city of Brooklyn, was born in England upon the 4th day of July, 1818; and, with his parents, Thomas Booth and Rebecca, came to this country while yet an infant of only three weeks of age. He spent the first ten years of his childhood in the city of New York, since which time he has been a constant resident of Brooklyn. His first residence in this city was in Tillary street, where his father erected a small house upon land which at that time formed a part of a large and almost unbroken farm, called the Johnson farm.

Mr. Booth's early training was such only as could be acquired at the best of the common and select schools of that day. Up to the time of his leaving New York city, he was under the able instruction of Professor Griscom, then in charge of the high school in that city. After leaving there he pursued his studies, until fourteen years of age, in Brooklyn, at the school of the late Adrian Hegeman, afterward the clerk of Kings county. Immediately after leaving this school he became a clerk in the wholesale grocery business, in the establishment of the late Thomas M. McLean, in Maiden lane, New York. Here Mr. Booth acquired the basis of sound business habits, which has only become strengthened since, throughout his exceedingly busy and not altogether uneventful life.

At the age of sixteen he concluded, however, to abandon the chances of success in that direction, and apprenticed himself to Elias Combs, to learn the trade of carpenter and builder, which he accomplished, and in the pursuit of which, he has been successfully engaged in Brooklyn up to the present time. As an index to the character of his mind, it is stated that while most of his associates were engaged during their otherwise unoccupied evenings in the pursuit of such unprofitable recreation and amusement as offered themselves, Mr. Booth applied himself constantly to his books, and sought to make amends in this way for his early lack of more complete educational advantages. At the age of twenty-five Mr.

Booth started business for himself; and, since that time, his history has been, to a great extent, identified with the prosperity and advancement of the city of Brooklyn.

In the year 1851, the various wards of the city were represented by two aldermen instead of one, as at present, one of which, designated by lot, officiated also in the capacity of supervisor in the county board. Mr. Booth having been in that year elected alderman of the Fourth ward, it fell to him to occupy both positions; and, from that time to the present, he has been almost constantly engaged, in one way or another, in the public service. His first election was characterized by his receiving, with one exception, a larger majority of the suffrages of his fellow-citizens than any other candidate for official honors has received in that ward, either before or since that time. He served as alderman for four years, during which time the fine building known as the Kings County Penitentiary was built, the entire charge of which, for the most part, was placed under the control of Mr. Booth. After four years, declining a re-election as alderman, he received an unsolicited appointment as a member of the Board of Education. He filled this position two years.

In the year 1857, the office of alderman and supervisor having been separated by an act of the legislature, Mr. Booth again consented to become a candidate for office, and was elected supervisor of the Fourth ward, which position he occupied with the almost unanimous approbation of his constituency, up to the time of his election to the chief executive office of the city, in the fall of 1865.

During his last term as supervisor the splendid building known as the New County Court House was erected. His fellow members lost no opportunity in taking advantage of his practical knowledge in such matters, and he was made chairman of the committee upon its erection. As a proof of his fidelity to the interests of the county, it remains only to be said that this fine building, with all its appurtenances, the finest of its kind in the country, cost the sum of only \$550,000.

But perhaps the most important of the duties which devolved upon Mr. Booth during his term as supervisor, were those which arose from his connection with the Bounty Committee, during the progress of the late war. For the most part, with the exception of one year, the chairman of this committee, its most arduous duties devolved upon him; and in this, as in all other positions in which it has been his fortune to be placed, he was always found at his post and never failed to meet its most urgent responsibilities. In looking after the raising of troops to meet the various calls for them by the government during the war, his watchfulness never ceased regarding the heavy burden which of necessity fell upon Brooklyn, and he never deemed his work accomplished so long as any opportunity remained whereby that burden might be lightened. Nearly all of the money expended by the county in the payment of bounties to volunteers, amounting to the large sum of \$3,800,000, passed through his hands; and none of the Boys in Blue who represented Brooklyn in the war, or of the widows and orphans left by its casualties to seek themselves for justice at the hands of the Bounty Committee, has ever questioned the honesty of purpose which actuated it under the chairmanship of Mr. Booth.

As mayor of Brooklyn, Mr. Booth, at the commencement of his term, found that the political party, to the suffrages of which he was indebted for his election, was in a minority in the board of aldermen. He felt, therefore, that he must depend, to a great extent, upon political opponents for the carrying out of any policy which might occur to him as being for the best interests of the city. His honesty of purpose, however, and his direct and unequivocal bearing to-

ward all questions relating to city affairs, soon won for him the confidence of all parties, and during his administration almost all recommendations made by him were favorably considered, and acted upon by the common council. He brought with him to the position the experience of a lifetime, almost, in city and county matters, and dishonesty and corruption met in him a formidable antagonist at the outset. His judgment upon all questions was unaffected by political or personal friendship or dislike; and at the close of his administration all parties joined in the almost universal expression of the able and impartial manner in which he had fulfilled its duties. To his credit, and that of the board of aldermen, it is said that no veto which he ever sent to that body was overruled.

No one, unless intimately acquainted with the every day surroundings of the office of mayor, can appreciate the demands for assistance and pecuniary aid, in all manner of distress, which are constantly made upon it. To all of these appeals Mr. Booth lent an attentive ear, and he was ever ready, with his purse and by his own personal efforts, in some way to aid every unfortunate, who came to the office with any just claim for relief.

In April, 1869, Mr. Booth received the appointment of Post master of the city of Brooklyn.

February 14th. A splendid reception was given to the 90th New York Volunteers.

February 26th. The legislature passed an act, creating a *Metropolitan Sanitary District and Board of Health* therein, for the preservation of life and health, and to prevent the spread of disease. The Sanitary District thus created was the same as that already known as the Metropolitan Police District; and the Board of Health was composed of the commissioners of said Metropolitan police, and of four Sanitary commissioners (appointed by the governor) and the Health Officer of the port of New York. This board (wherein Brooklyn was represented by James Crane, M. D., as sanitary commissioner, and Thos. G. Bergen, police commissioner) organized on the 5th of March; and, on the 10th, Dr. John T. Conkling was elected Assistant Sanitary Superintendent, and Dr. R. Cresson Stiles as Deputy Registrar of vital statistics, and detailed for duty to the city of *Brooklyn*; and to the same city, also, were assigned six sanitary inspectors.

The prevalence of cholera in various parts of Europe, and the almost absolute certainty of its appearance in this country during the year, stimulated the new Board of Health, immediately upon its organization, to prepare the metropolitan district for the arrival of the epidemic. On the 18th of April, the steamer *Virginia*, from Liverpool, arrived at quarantine, with the cholera on board, it having appeared among the steerage passengers on the 12th of that month. On the 1st of May, the first case occurred in New York city, and the epidemic continued to prevail to a very moderate extent during the month of June, increasing during July; and, from the 15th of August, decreasing until October 15th.

In Brooklyn the first case occurred on the 8th of July, and its increase then was not rapid, and was

mostly confined to localities in different sections of the city where there was the greatest amount of filth; especially in the Twelfth ward, in which occurred 288 of the total 816 cases in Brooklyn. A hospital was opened at the corner of Hamilton avenue and Van Brunt street, on the 22d of July, in charge of Dr. Wm. H. Thayer, and was closed on the 6th of September. A new hospital was built in the City Park, opened on the 15th of August, under Dr. W. F. Swalm, and closed October 1st, at which time the cholera had disappeared from the city. The entire mortality from cholera, in Brooklyn, was 573; to which might undoubtedly be added, if all the facts were known, many of the 142 cases of cholera morbus which proved fatal. The full details and statistics of this epidemic may be found, at length, in the report of the Metropolitan Board of Health for 1866.

June 13. Hon. MOSES F. ODELL, naval officer of the port of New York, four years a member of Congress, and twenty-one years superintendent of the Sabbath-school of the Sands street Methodist church, died, aged 48 years.

October 13th. Celebration of the completion of the *Erie Basin Dry Dock*.

October 25th. Was rendered memorable by the presentation of medals, prepared by order of the Common Council, to every Brooklyn soldier who had returned alive, and with an honorable record, from the many battle-fields of the South. The event was made the occasion of a fine military display, and was graced by the presence of the Governor of the State, Reuben E. Fenton, Admiral Farragut and other eminent citizens. The procession moved to Fort Greene, where the medals were presented by Mayor Booth, with an appropriate speech.

The organizations of veterans that appeared in column, were the following:

"Col. E. Schnapf, of the 20th New York, commanding, assisted by Capt. F. W. Obermeyer, 46th New York, and Capt. Henry Wills, 133d New York, and comprising 700 men



SOLDIER'S MEDAL.

and 50 officers of the following named organizations: United States Navy; the 1st, 2d, 3d, 5th, 7th, 20th, 46th, 52d, 54th, 58th, 99th, 103d, 133d, and 173d regiments of New York Volunteer Infantry.

"The 158th New York Volunteer Infantry, 170 men, 10 officers, Major Wm. M. Bennett, commanding; the 5th New York Artillery, 115 men, 13 officers, Col. Samuel Graham commanding; Taft's 5th New York Independent Battery, 32 men, 3 officers, Capt. E. D. Taft, commanding; 1st Long Island, 145 men, 3 officers,

Brevet Col. G. W. Stillwell, commanding; Company F, 10th Regiment National Zouaves, 40 men; 48th New York Volunteer Infantry, 209 men; Col. W. B. Barton, commanding; 87th Regiment, Brooklyn Rifles,



REVERSE OF SOLDIER'S MEDAL.



REVERSE OF SAILOR'S MEDAL.

51 men, 6 officers, Col. R. A. Bachia, commanding; 159th New York, 68 men, 7 officers; 174th New York, 60 men, 7 officers; 98th New York Infantry, 70 men, 15 officers, 51st New York, 40 men; the 14th of Brooklyn also paraded with this regiment, 100 uniformed men.

"There were, also, about 300 men and 20 officers, not represented by any organization, but sons of Brooklyn, who had belonged to other organizations throughout the state and the union. These were organized by Brevet Lieut. Col. William Hemstreet, 18th Missouri Infantry, and placed under command of Col. Olmstead, 139th New York. All of the above, exclusive of the 14th Brooklyn, consisted of uniformed veterans and numbered in the aggregate, 2,049 men, and 148 officers. In addition to these, were probably as large, or a larger number, within the uniformed militia organizations.

"The disabled heroes, who were seated in carriages, were the objects of much care and attention from officers, soldiery, and citizens. On arriving at the staging, they were seized by brigadier generals, civic officials, citizens, and militia, and lifted over the heads of the crowd, and seated on the platform; and at the termination of the ceremonies were driven to their homes, in, to them, unprecedented style."

THE WAR FUND COMMITTEE grew, in part, out of the appointment, in the summer of 1862, by the State Executive of New York, of two committees in the Second and Third Senatorial Districts, for the purpose of raising each a regiment of volunteers, to serve for three years, or during the war. The Board of Supervisors of this county appointed, almost simultaneously, a large committee to aid in all measures for the increase of the Army and the Navy. These several committees appear to have united in the conviction that a large Central Committee was indispensable to the work devolved on them; and, at their suggestion and request, the "War Fund Committee" was organized September 11, 1862, to take such measures as they should deem expedient for developing and concentrating the means and energies of the people in behalf of the national cause. A meeting was held at the office of Hon. Henry C. Murphy, at 13 Court street, and the following-named gentlemen appointed to serve as said War Fund Committee, viz.: J. S. T. Stranahan, A. A. Low, Hon. John A. Lott, H. E. Pierpont, I. H. Frothingham, Cyrus P. Smith, William Marshall, J. D. Sparkman, Nathaniel Briggs, Martin Kalbfleisch, John A. Cross, Walter S. Griffith, Conklin Brush, Seymour L. Husted, Abram B. Baylis, S. B. Chittenden, John H. Prentice and Alexander McCue. These gentlemen were afterwards confirmed in office at an immense public meeting of the citizens. The following extracts from the Committee's resolutions define the "conditions and principles on which they consent to act, and by which they pledge themselves to the public to be governed, in the discharge of the highly responsible duties thus devolved upon them":

"Whereas, it seems requisite that a responsible central organization shall exist, through which the patriotism and resources of the citizens shall be called out systematically and applied wisely to the great object to be accomplished; therefore,

"Resolved, That we hereby consent to act for the purpose specified, under the name of the *War Fund Committee of Brooklyn and Kings County*; that we will receive all such funds as may be contributed to our treasury by citizens, institutions or public authorities, and hold ourselves responsible to disburse the same, for all purposes connected with the creation and support of a sufficient force to put down the rebellion, and restore peace to our bleeding country.

"Resolved, That all appropriations of money shall be made by vote of the Committee at regular meetings; and that this Committee will gladly co-operate with all county, Senatorial or ward committees, and all public bodies, military or naval officers or private persons, in promoting enlistments or imparting efficiency to any properly authorized efforts to strengthen the military or naval power of our nation."

The plan was approved by the committees of the Second and Third Senatorial Districts. J. S. T. Stranahan was chosen *President* of the War Fund Committee, Walter S. Griffith *Secretary*, and Isaac H. Frothingham *Treasurer*. This committee rendered most efficient service through the war. It assisted in raising

several regiments, in paying bounties and furnishing supplies, in sending forward nurses and comforts for the wounded, in providing for the families of soldiers, establishing postal communication between the troops at the front and their friends at home, in helping widows and orphans to obtain pensions and back pay, and in whatever way patriotic hearts could devise to help in their country's need.

For some three years after the close of the war, the War Fund Committee continued to assist soldiers to obtain their pensions, &c., keeping open an office for that purpose at the Home Insurance Company's place, in Brooklyn.

The *Great Sanitary Fair*, in 1864, was originated and carried through, in great measure, by the War Fund Committee; and its work was fitly closed by donating to the city the bronze statue of Abraham Lincoln, which adorns the plaza before Prospect Park. The committee deserves the everlasting gratitude of our people for its arduous labors, performed entirely without pay, and oftentimes at a serious sacrifice of time and private interests. Where all were so earnest, it is difficult to divide the honors; but, besides the officers, Messrs. Walter S. Griffith, S. B. Chittenden, A. A. Low and James P. Wallace were especially active. It was at the meeting of this committee that the project of starting the *Brooklyn Union* was mooted and perfected. At the close of the war, many of the gentlemen who had been so long and pleasantly associated desired to continue their social relations, by instituting an association similar to the Union League Club, of New York (which sprang from a similar committee organization); but the matter finally took shape as the *Brooklyn Club*.

1867. January 23d. The East river between Brooklyn and New York was bridged over by ice so firmly that people crossed it, to the number, as was estimated, of five thousand.

This was the third time within fifteen years that the East river had been similarly bridged. The previous occasions were January 19th, 1852, and February 9th, 1856. It is said never to happen except when a thaw occurring causes the North river to send down fields of heavy ice; followed by a south-west wind, which blows these heavy cakes into the East river, where they oscillate from Governor's to Blackwell's island and block up navigation. A cold spell succeeding this makes the ice sufficiently firm to bear up the weight of those who choose to cross.

April 8th. By the efforts, mainly, of A. E. Mudie, a *Brooklyn Branch* of the *American Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals* was organized.

May 9th. By act of the legislature, the *Inebriates Home for Kings County* was duly incorporated.

May 10th. The legislature passed an act, providing for the improvement, by dredging and docking, of the *Gowanus Canal*, and placing the control of said work in

the hands of a commission; and May 11th, another commission was appointed for the so-called *Wallabout Improvement*, at the foot of Washington avenue.

August. A few cases of yellow fever occurred in Brooklyn, further mention of which will be found in the *Chapter on the Medical Profession of Kings County* in another portion of this work.

1868. January 1st. The duties of the mayoralty were this day assumed, for the second time, by *Martin Kalbfleisch*, who had been elected in the fall of the preceding year.

MARTIN KALBFLEISCH, born in Flushing, Netherlands, on the 8th of February, 1804, received a thorough education at the excellent schools of his native town. That place, however, offering but little opportunity for advancement or success in commercial or other pursuits, he determined to seek his fortunes elsewhere; and, with that view, took passage, in 1822, for Padang, on the coast of Sumatra, in an American vessel, the *Ellen Douglass*, of Salem, Mass. On arriving at Padang, he found the Asiatic cholera raging fearfully, and therefore re-embarked for Antwerp, where the vessel was sold; and, at the request of the Captain, an American, accompanied him to France, where they were engaged in commercial operations together, for four years. During this period, his inclinations led him to look upon the United States as his future home; and, accordingly, in 1826, he carried that project into execution. With few acquaintances or friends, and but little means, upon his arrival, he found himself obliged to accept of any employment that offered; until, in 1835, when he had accumulated sufficient means, he was enabled to establish a color manufactory at Harlem, on New York Island, where he then resided. The high prices at that time paid for property, induced him to sell his place and locate in Connecticut. This move, however, proving unsuccessful, he was induced to return to the environs of New York, and finally determined to locate at Greenpoint, as offering the best facilities for the prosecution of his business, and there he settled, in 1842. His family being somewhat numerous, he found the want of a school-house to be a serious drawback, and immediately applied himself to remedying the want. He organized the district (comprising all of Greenpoint up to line of Remsen street); got the use of the dilapidated old school-house near the Bushwick church, repaired it, and obtained the services of a teacher, Mr. Norman Andrews, still living. By perseverance he soon had the satisfaction of seeing a new school-house erected at Greenpoint; and this has been followed up until that section of our city, at this day, has no less than four large and admirably equipped edifices devoted to the instruction of its youth. As Mr. Kalbfleisch's business expanded, the want of room compelled him, about twenty years since, to remove his factory to its present location, between Metropolitan and Grand avenues. For many years he made the manufacture of acids a specialty, and continually increased the extent of his works until they now embrace several acres, and are the most extensive in the country. The business (conducted for some years under the firm style of M. Kalbfleisch & Sons), afterward passed into the hands of the latter (under the firm style of M. Kalbfleisch's Sons), M. Kalbfleisch having amassed sufficient means to enable him to retire.

Mr. Kalbfleisch always took a lively interest in politics; and, although for many years a hard worker in the democratic ranks, did not aspire to office. Circumstances, however, made him, in 1851, a candidate for supervisorship of

the old town of Bushwick, to which office he was elected, and which he held until the town was consolidated with the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh. In 1853, he was appointed one of the commissioners to draw up a charter, for the proposed consolidation of the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburgh, and acted as president of the board.



HON. MARTIN KALBFLEISCH.

In 1854 he became the democratic candidate for mayor of the consolidated city, but was defeated by George Hall. In 1855, he was elected Alderman of the 18th Ward, and served in that capacity until May, 1861, when he became mayor of the city. He served three years as President of the Board of Aldermen, and, the last time he was elected Alderman, received all the votes but one cast in his ward for that office. In 1862, he was elected a representative to Congress from his district, and, in 1867, re-elected mayor of the city.

Mayor Kalbfleisch was a director in two banks, insurance companies, the Trust company, etc., and president of the Prospect Park Fair Ground Association. He was an excellent linguist, speaking four languages fluently; had a ripe experience in public matters; managed his official trusts with prudence, energy and business tact; thought for himself; had clear ideas upon all matters submitted to his judgment or approval; and was never afraid to use his veto prerogative.

April 16th. A *Board of Estimate and Disbursements* of the fire department was appointed by legislative enactment.

May 6th. A *Department for the Survey and Inspection of Buildings*, in the Western District of the city, was appointed by act of legislature.

May 31st. Sabbath. The graves of soldiers, at Cypress hills, were this day strewn with wreaths and flowers by the ladies, citizens, and their surviving comrades in arms. Addresses were delivered by several of the clergy, and appropriate music was performed. The whole affair was under the auspices of the veterans; and "*Decoration Day*" has since become one of the recognized National holidays.

June 21st. The corner-stone of the great *Roman Catholic Cathedral* was laid, with much ceremony. This edifice, however, is still unfinished.

July 8th. The old Howard estate, at East New York, was this day sold at auction. The historic tavern known as Howard's, or the Half-way House, on the East New York and Jamaica road, the Broadway plank road and Howard Place, together with about four acres of land, was sold for \$21,000 to Mr. Henry R. Pierson, president of the Brooklyn City Railroad Company.

November 12th. *The Brooklyn Academy of Design* had its first opening on the evening of this day.

November 14th. A terrible collision occurred on the New York side of the Fulton ferry, between two of the Union Ferry Company's boats, in which twenty persons were injured, one of whom, a boy named George Brower, was instantly killed; while others received serious fractures, contusions, etc. The accident had no inconsiderable effect in forming the public mind towards the building of a bridge across the East river.

December 1st. Fort Lafayette, opposite Fort Hamilton, destroyed by fire.

December 21st. The Common Council, by a vote of 15 to 4, authorized a loan of \$3,000,000 to the New York Bridge Company's proposed East River Bridge, on condition that the sum of \$2,000,000 be first subscribed to the capital stock by other parties; and that the company's charter be so amended, that the city's interests be represented in the board of directors by three city officers comprising the commissioners of the Sinking Fund of the city of Brooklyn for the time being.

Some idea of the wonderful growth of Brooklyn during this year (1868), may be gained from the following abstract of an article in the *Brooklyn Eagle* of February 16, 1869:

"Later residents can hardly conceive the rapid growth of Brooklyn during the past quarter of a century. Twenty-five years ago corn grew on Montague street—Court street had no existence, and the fashionable locality of South Brooklyn was but a dreary sand-hill. Twenty-five years ago the aristocracy gathered in the neighborhood of the Navy Yard, for the gold lace and gilt buttons had much the same attraction then as now. Later, the principal business portion of the city was in the neighborhood of Fulton ferry. All the banks, insurance companies, and newspaper offices were gathered in the immediate neighborhood, the lawyers congregated about the corner of Front and Fulton streets; and, in fact, the first block of Fulton street was the exchange of Brooklyn, where the prominent men of the city were most apt to be found during business hours. The building of the City Hall altered this, for all the lawyers and most of the incorporated institutions moved to that place, and it became the business centre. However, there is another change, and the lower part of Fulton street is resuming its former bustle and activity, and, as a business centre, is rivaling the Hall. The business is hardly the same, for there is an infusion of the wholesale trade, and many large manufactories are within easy distance of the street, so that the moneyed institutions have found that they did wisely in remaining in their old spots.

Brooklyn is no longer a village, but supports several

business centres; and, as it spreads farther towards what is now its outskirts, other centres will spring up without interfering with the old ones. During the past twenty-five years, the increase of population and of buildings has been enormous. Forty thousand was about the population twenty-five years ago, and to-day it is nearly three hundred thousand. Buildings and dwellings have sprung up as if by magic. Long rows of brown stone and brick buildings have risen, seemingly, in the space of a single night. The past year has seen no diminution, and, in fact, *the new buildings of 1868 exceed in value those of any previous year.* More elegant and costly public buildings have been erected since the 1st of January, 1868, than in any one previous year, and, although the number of buildings is not as large as in 1867, yet, as was stated above, the value far exceeds it. In 1867, 3,539 buildings were erected, and, in 1868, but 3,307 were put up. Of these, 375 were brown-stone fronts; 775, brick; and 1,915, frame dwellings; 3 stone, 7 brick, and 9 frame church edifices; 1 brick school-house; 41 brick and 24 frame buildings for manufacturing purposes; 7 brick, 10 frame stores, and 140 buildings of a miscellaneous character. The greatest number of these buildings were erected in the 7th, 9th, 10th, 17th, 18th, 21st and 22d Wards, the 21st taking the lead, principally, however, in the frame structures.

This only includes those buildings which were completed within the year, and not those which were commenced. The increase in value, however, is not as great in the dwellings as in the public buildings, which are to become an ornament to the city. Notwithstanding the great number of dwelling houses that have been erected, the demand has been greater than the supply. Even at this time of the year vacant houses upon the Heights, that portion of the city called the Hill, and that portion of South Brooklyn lying in the neighborhood of Carroll Park, are eagerly snapped up, and it is very rarely the case that a house in any of these neighborhoods lies vacant or unengaged for the space of a week. It is a singular fact that almost, without exception, the great number of dwelling-houses have been erected by builders who have amassed a sufficient sum and embarked it all in this enterprise; in short, the vast improvement in the real estate of Brooklyn has been due more to the enterprise of the builders and speculators than to the capitalists and large landholders.

Among the public buildings completed and commenced during the year 1868, may be especially mentioned the iron structure of the *Long Island Safe Deposit Company*, on the corner of Front and Fulton streets, costing \$150,000; the large building of the *Union Association*, on the opposite corner, costing \$33,000; *Burnham's Gymnasia*, corner of Smith and Schermerhorn streets, costing \$90,000; the elegant *Mercantile Library* building, in Montague street, costing, with the two adjoining buildings, \$181,000; the new *St. Ann's* Protestant Episcopal church, on corner of Clinton and Livingston, costing about \$200,000; Rev. Dr. Duryea's new church in Classon avenue, costing about \$100,000; the *Skating Rink*, costing \$30,000; a riding school in Pacific street, between Nevins and Powers, cost \$12,000; two large buildings on corner of Court and Livingston streets, in the French style of architecture, costing \$60,000; Messrs. Horton, Son & Co.'s splendid store on Fulton avenue, above Gallatin place, costing \$45,000; Armstrong & Blacklin's, 213 Fulton; the *Adelphi Academy*, on Lafayette avenue, \$18,800; the church of the *North Reformed* congregation in Twelfth street, costing nearly \$60,000; that of the *Carlton avenue Methodist Episcopal* church, corner of Clermont and Willoughby avenues, \$75,000; the Roman Catholic Church of our *Lady of Mercy*, in Debevoise street, \$70,000; the new church edifice of

St. Charles Borromeo (Roman Catholic), costing, with land, \$75,000; frame churches for St. James' and for St. Stephen's congregations; several large warehouses: and the superb building of the *Kings County Savings Bank*, corner of Fourth street and Broadway, E. D., costing \$195,000.

In State, Pacific and Dean streets, and in Fourth avenue, a large number of houses of brown-stone, brick and mastic fronts are going up. In fact, this is heard from all parts of the city. In the 20th and 7th Wards, many are going up in long rows, and the same may be said of the 6th, 8th, 9th, 10th, 21st and 22d Wards. In the 9th and 21st Wards, outside of the fire limits, it is estimated in round numbers, that there are over two hundred frame buildings, in course of erection, which will be held at \$8,500. A greater number of better stores have been erected during the past year, to be rented, than in any previous year, a hopeful sign for the business interests of Brooklyn. Upon Fulton, Myrtle and Atlantic avenues, a number of fine stores have been, and now are, in course of erection.

From the foregoing, it may be seen that the increase in the value of real estate to the city must be very considerable. In the year 1864, the value of new buildings added to the city was \$1,631,250; in 1865, \$1,838,500; in 1866, \$2,531,000; and in 1867, \$3,562,600. It has been impossible for us at this time of the year to get at the exact number of buildings that have been erected in 1868, or their exact value. In fact, we have but a very small portion, yet we are enabled to figure a value nearly as much as in any previous year—\$3,315,200.

In Williamsburgh, the value of property has increased at an astonishing rate, owing no doubt to the widening of South Sixth and South Seventh streets. Many of the property holders along the line of the streets named were against the improvement. Since then these very men have been made rich by the movement. It appeared that the widening of the streets cost \$400,000, while real estate has increased in value over \$500,000. The Williamsburgh Savings Bank has just purchased a piece of property on the corner of Broadway and Fifth street, 112 feet front on Broadway by 100 feet on Fifth street, for \$110,000, on which to erect a banking-house. This is said to be the largest sum ever paid for building-lots in the Eastern District. The property could have been bought prior to the widening of the street for \$20,000, and the houses gave the value to the estate. Now the property is sold for \$110,000, and the houses are torn down as worthless.

The number of houses built during the year 1868, is, however, only one of the evidences that may be adduced of the rapid growth of Brooklyn. During the year an enormous and unprecedented amount of street improvement was effected, in the matter of grading, paving, and laying down water and sewer pipes. Twenty-three miles of improved streets were added to the city, rendering about seven or eight thousand city lots available for building purposes, which previously were not so available. It will be seen, therefore, that, great as the increase of buildings, the Street Department doubly kept pace with the progress of house-building, and furnished twice as much new street frontage as the 3,200 newly erected buildings occupied. After all the thousands of new houses Brooklyn built in 1863, she offered, to the builder, at the close of the year, street approaches to three or four thousand more lots than were approachable for building at the beginning.

While the Street Department thus furnished means of getting access to unoccupied lots, the Water and Sewerage Department was not idle in rendering house property more valuable, by adding to the first necessity of streets, the scarcely less necessary elements of a water supply and

drainage. In the year 1867, sixteen miles of water pipes were laid, and fourteen miles of sewers. At the commencement of 1868, therefore, there existed in the city 210 miles of water-pipe, and 184 miles of sewers. The total street length of Brooklyn is about 500 miles. Of this only about one-half is at all occupied as yet by houses and population. Much of it exists in the form of water and swamp lots, which will probably for many years yet remain unbuilt upon. In 1868, there were fourteen miles of water-pipe laid and sixteen of sewers—a reversal of the figures of the former year. On the 1st of January, 1869, there were 150 miles of sewer and 224 of water-pipes lying beneath the street surface of Brooklyn. Especially in the 16th Ward has the sewerage been largely and efficiently prosecuted."

1869—January 4. Mayor Kalbfleisch's message reports a total of 3,307 buildings erected in 1868; the amount of city bonds outstanding, \$18,559,250. The Street Commissioner's report shows that, in 1868, fourteen miles of water pipe were laid, and sixteen of sewers; twenty-three miles of streets were added to previous improvements. The police records show that 21,272 arrests were made during the year.

January 18. New building of the *Mercantile Library*, on Montague street, opened.

May 22. Final meeting of the Board of Estimate of the *Volunteer Fire Department*, and organization of the new Board of the Paid Fire Department.

July 9. Superintendent Bulkley reports the value of the school-house sites in the city at \$276,386; of the buildings, \$709,727. The whole number of pupils attending public day schools, 70,000; night schools, 10,000; number in private schools, 22,142.

July 22. Death of JOHN AUGUSTUS ROEBLING, the eminent engineer, aged 63 years, resulting from an injury received June 28, at Fulton Ferry. See page 448.

August 7. Assessed valuation of real and personal property in Kings county, \$199,840,551.

August 26. Bridge surveys finished and approaches located.

September 21. The *Wallabout Improvement* completed and opened for public use.

October 21. The War Fund Committee's statue of ABRAHAM LINCOLN was unveiled on the plaza of Prospect Park. (See *Biography of James P. Wallace*, following).

JAMES P. WALLACE is the eldest son of the late Isaac and Fanny Phillips Wallace, of Lansingburgh, N. Y. He was born April 3d, 1816, and reared on a farm fronting the east shore of the Hudson River, eleven miles north of Albany. While the Wallace family owned that place, they called it "Grove Hill."

His mother died when he was a child, but he remembers her love for him, and her prayers, and excellent advice, which he has always cherished. His father did not marry again, and father and son were constant companions during all the years of boyhood. The cardinal doctrines of the Christian religion, the value of a virtuous, useful life, the road to honorable success, and kindred themes, were often subjects of conversation as they worked together in the fields, or sat in the shade of the great trees which surrounded the homestead, or during the long winter evenings by the cheerful fireside.



James P. Wallace

His father was well educated for his day, and a Christian, and was an inspiration to his son in all his studies, and in the formation of his character.

He was educated, in part, at the Lansinburg Academy, which was two and a half miles from his home. He often carried one arm full of books, and with the other, rolled a hoop all the way. By this means, and by plenty of work on the farm when not in school, he grew up strong and healthy, which had a powerful influence for good in the success of his after life.

Subsequently, he entered the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute at Troy, N. Y., where he graduated as Civil Engineer in 1837.

In 1841, which was as soon as he considered himself established in business, he married Juliet, only daughter of Uriah and Julia Wright Wallace, of Troy. He has always given credit to his wife for a large share of whatever success and usefulness he has been able to attain, because of her economy when that was most needed, her faithful and loving devotion to him, and her good management, and sound practical advice in all things.

They had but two children—one died in infancy—the other, Emma Francis, died, unmarried, in 1882, leaving them childless. Verily, the souls of those parents were "knit with the soul" of that daughter, and their constant thought is, that they shall soon meet her in heaven. She was a life-long Christian worker in the church, in the cause of missions, and in the Sunday-School. Rev. DR. STORRS, her pastor, in his funeral address, said of her: "There is every thing for her now to look back upon with joy and delight, with gratitude to God for the privilege of such a life as she has had. It has been full of the best enjoyments; of pleasure at home, in the love which was its atmosphere; of pleasure in friendship, and in society, in books and arts, and in the enjoyment of foreign lands; and yet fuller—far fuller than these—of her enjoyment of the love of Christ; of the serene and steadfast hope, which now has been transfigured and crowned in her beatific and immortal vision."

In 1867, Mr. Wallace's maternal uncle, Gilbert D. Phillips, and wife, celebrated their golden wedding. Mr. Wallace was requested to respond to the toast of "Nephews and Nieces." He commenced as follows:

"My dear uncle and aunt—In speaking for the descendants of your brothers and sisters, I represent, living and departed, about one hundred and fifty souls. It is cause for devout gratitude to God, and for which I congratulate you, that I have not been able to discover one black sheep in the flock. In our country's late struggle, we were all found on the side of our flag and the Union. Your nephews were represented on the bloody field, and your nieces, God bless them, did good service in aid of the Sanitary and Christian Commissions, and as daughters, wives and mothers, have ever been most exemplary. Not one of our number ever favored the rebellion, not one was ever charged with crime, none have disgraced themselves or their friends by drunkenness, or by a low or vicious life, but every one is worthy the respect, and countenance of all the others."

Mr. Wallace has often said that a similar statement, in respect to his father's family, and the family of his wife, would be true, except that he could not count them in so large numbers.

Mr. Wallace fully intended to follow the profession of civil engineer, for which he had been educated; but, not finding ready employment in that line, he accepted, as he supposed temporarily, a clerkship in the wholesale grocery and produce store of Hiram Slocum, in Troy. He remained in that position one year, and then, for one year, he kept a country store in St. Lawrence county, N. Y., on his own ac-

count. In 1839, he removed to New York and formed the firm of Tallmadge & Wallace, with Mr. Slocum as special partner, for the transaction of the Produce Commission business. Neither member of the firm had served a clerkship in New York. They had but a very small capital, and scarcely any city acquaintance.

They relied for success on the confidence of friends in the country, who had promised to consign to them produce, to be sold on commission; and on their determination to deserve that confidence. They paid what seemed to them, at the time, a large price for experience on the first sale they made, by receiving a counterfeit twenty-dollar bill in payment; but it was a cheap purchase after all, for they were never again victimized by a confidence man, nor by another counterfeit.

In 1842, the firm was changed to Wallace & Wickes, which continued twenty-five years, and both partners acquired a handsome competence. During part of that time, they had James McNaughton for a partner, who died suddenly in 1856. They have had the satisfaction to see several of their former clerks become successful and honorable merchants, two of whom are their successors in business.

Mr. Wallace was President of a convention of merchants, held in Albany, in 1867, to secure the repeal of the much abused contract system for repairing the canals of the State, and to obtain a more efficient service of the canals. He was also chairman of a standing committee for that object. Much hard work was done, and though the Legislature did not grant all that was asked, great improvement was accomplished.

He was of the original *New York Produce Exchange*, and has been its president. He was chairman of its committee on Charter, and By-Laws. On occasion of laying the corner stone of the new Produce Exchange, June 6th, 1882, the president, Mr. Forrest H. Parker, delivered an address, in course of which he said:

"In 1862, the Legislature was asked for, and a charter granted, so comprehensive and far-seeing in its character that, although twenty years have elapsed, no material amendment to it has been found necessary. * * * And now, while we refer with much satisfaction to our material importance, and lay a corner stone of granite, let us not overlook the nobler corner stone of our Institution, namely, our charter, which reads thus: 'The purposes of said corporation shall be to inculcate just and equitable principles in trade * * * and to adjust controversies and misunderstandings between persons engaged in business.' These are the words that should be engraven in letters of gold upon the walls of our Exchange—who can estimate the influence that these two main principles of our charter have exercised. Many Exchanges, organized since it was granted, have adopted them; and from foreign countries, we have received requests for a copy of our Charter, By-Laws and Trade Rules, for their guidance. As the advantages of arbitration are realized, we find them permeating the whole business community. The committee, who had charge of formulating and procuring, in 1862, of our most admirable charter, consisted of Messrs. James P. Wallace, Isaac H. Reed, and George B. Powell. The original draft was made by Mr. Wallace."

He is President of the *New York Guaranty and Indemnity Company*, which was organized in 1865, by forty prominent and wealthy men, with a paid-up capital of two million dollars, as a Banking and Commission house, and did a large and profitable business for ten years. In 1875, the Court of Appeals rendered a decision, adverse to a feature of the charter, which was deemed important; and the Board of Directors decided to retire from business, and, within thirty days, all deposits and indebtedness were paid.

A circular to stockholders of February 20th, 1883, says of its President: "It was his lot to receive the capital of this company, at the commencement of business in 1865, and it

has been his privilege to pay it back to stockholders with large interest. His relations to the Board of Directors and stockholders have ever been harmonious and pleasant, and during the past eight years, he has given his best attention to the interests of the company without compensation." A small capital has been retained out of surplus earnings, and the organization of the company has been preserved, but not for active business.

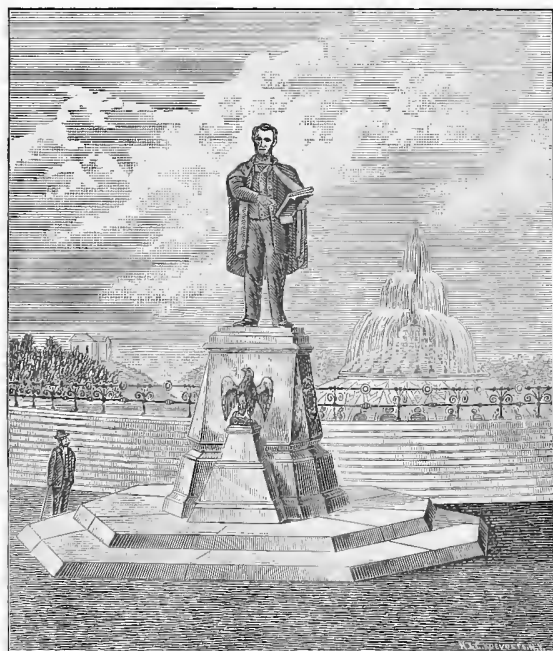
He is President of the *New York Warehousing Company*, which owns stores and docks in South Brooklyn, and transacts a large business in the storage of cotton.

He was one of the original subscribers for the organization of the *New York Life Insurance Company*, in 1845. His policy in that company is No. 15, and the lowest number but one still in force.

He is a member of the *Chamber of Commerce of New York*; Trustee of the *Central Trust Company of New York*; of the *South Brooklyn Savings Institution*; of the *Brooklyn Children's Aid Society*; and of the *Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute*, where he was educated; Director of the *Hanover Fire Insurance Company*; and connected with a number of other institutions.

He was for many years a director of the *Hanover National Bank* in New York, and President of the *Georgia Southern Railroad Company*. He has been executor and trustee of several estates, and occupied other positions of trust, which have been faithfully administered.

He came to Brooklyn to live in 1843, and has been a resident of the First Ward for forty years. He has done considerable building, has been connected with many of Brooklyn's institutions, and always a liberal, public-spirited citizen. He has been identified with the Republican party, but never held office, except that he served two terms as Alderman during the war for the Union.



LINCOLN MONUMENT—PROSPECT PARK.

On the assassination of President Lincoln, the War Fund Committee, of which Mr. Wallace was a member, appointed him Chairman of a sub-committee, under a resolution that reads: " * * * to open a subscription for the erection of some suitable and permanent memorial in the city, of him for whom the nation is in mourning; no contribution of

more than one dollar to be received from any one person, that all may have equal opportunity to take part in this work of public gratitude." The success of that effort is shown by the beautiful statue of Lincoln, by the distinguished sculptor, Henry K. Brown, which stands in the plaza of Prospect Park.

Many similar subscriptions were commenced about the same time in other cities, but this monument was the first that was completed. The amount collected was \$13,000, which was invested in United States bonds until needed. The interest and profit on the bonds increased the sum to \$15,000, which was the cost of the statue. The Park Commissioners provided the pedestal.

On the occasion of the unveiling and presentation of this monument to the city, October 21st, 1869, Mr. A. Abbott Low presided, Mr. James P. Wallace delivered the presentation address, Hon. J. S. T. Stranahan accepted the monument on behalf of the Park Commissioners for the city, and Rev. R. S. Storrs, D. D., delivered the oration. There were present many invited guests, the Twenty-third Regiment of the New York State National Guard, the Navy Yard Band, and an immense multitude of interested spectators. The band played national airs, and a salvo of one hundred guns was fired from a hill in the park.

Mr. WALLACE, in commencing his address, said:

"I have the honor, on this occasion, to represent about thirteen thousand citizens of Brooklyn, without distinction of creed or political faith—men, women and children—who, for the love they bore to a great and good man, made up a contribution to honor his memory. From the laborer on the highway, from the workshop, from the counting-room, and store, from the stately mansion of the wealthy, and from the scanty apartments of the industrious poor, wherever love and reverence for ABRAHAM LINCOLN thrilled the heart, or wherever was detestation and horror at the dreadful deed which so suddenly terminated his useful life, thence came the little drops into the treasury—a name with every dollar, and a dollar for every name. Noble men! Noble women! Names fragrant to the memory, worthy to be preserved, as they have been preserved, in the archives of the Historical Society, that all who come after may know to whom belongs the honor of building up this monument to Abraham Lincoln."

Mr. Wallace was one of the originators of the *Brooklyn Library*, and is a member of its Board of Trustees. In 1857, the Athenæum, corner of Atlantic and Clinton streets, contained the principal library of Brooklyn, about five thousand volumes. Mr. Wallace conceived the idea that, if the library could be turned over to the management of young men, they would increase its growth and make it more useful. After many interviews with stockholders and trustees of the Athenæum, he succeeded in securing their approval, provided an organization of young men could be formed strong enough to give assurance of success.

He then began to labor with the young men. Many private conversations and a few small meetings were held. Interest in the project rapidly increased among the young men, until a meeting was held, at which about six hundred were present. Mr. Wallace presided. A resolution was adopted to organize after the model of the Mercantile Library Association of New York; a subscription was commenced, amounting that evening to about fifteen hundred dollars; a committee was appointed to prepare a constitution; and, before adjournment, the Chairman pronounced the new library association to be an assured fact. In recognition of the value of Mr. Wallace's services in this matter, the Board of Managers, by a special subscription for that purpose, placed his portrait on its walls. The Brooklyn Library, in all its goodly proportions, is the outgrowth of those efforts.

He became a member of the Presbyterian Church in Lanningburgh, at the age of twenty. On coming to Brooklyn, he united with the Second Presbyterian Church, and assisted to build its present edifice, on the corner of Remsen and Clinton streets. Subsequently, he became a member of the Church of the Pilgrims, Rev. R. S. Storrs, D. D., pastor, where he continues. In both those churches he has been a Trustee and an officer, and interested in all the work and charities of the church. He has been a Sunday-school worker from his youth.

Mr. Wallace has traveled much, both in this country and in Europe, when he could spare time from his active life, and has written many descriptive letters for the newspapers at home, which have always been gladly welcomed by the press, and by his friends.

November 2. Hon. MARTIN KALBFLEISCH re-elected Mayor over Wm. Mayo Little by a vote of 27,993 to 18,160.

1870.—Jan. 1. Mayor Kalbfleisch's message reports new buildings erected during the past year, as follows: 2,749 dwellings, with accommodations for 20,000 people; 30 churches, 25 schoolhouses, over 100 storehouses and manufactories; also 11 miles of new streets graded and paved, *Washington avenue* extended, 22 miles of sewers and 22 miles of water-pipes laid; also, that the improvements of *Wallabout Canal*, *Kent avenue* and *Gowanus Canal* added largely to the water-front; \$6,500,000 were borrowed by the city, making the aggregate of the city debt over \$23,000,000, of which \$8,000,000 is for Prospect Park and \$8,000,000 for the water-works. The Board of Health reports the deaths for 1869 at 8,759, as against 8,750 for 1868. The number of patrolmen in the city was 466, who made 18,730 arrests.

The *Union Ferry Company* carried 42,720,000 passengers; the *Roosevelt*, *Grand* and *James Slip*, 7,028,000; the *Greenpoint*, 1,622,250; the *Thirty-fourth Street*, 2,250,550.

Jan. 3. Work on the *Brooklyn Bridge* was commenced by clearing ground for the reception of the caisson, which was then building in Williamsburg.

Jan. 7. A public meeting was held and a bill drafted providing for the re-organization of the *City Court*.

Jan. 11. *Brooklyn Dental Infirmary* inaugurated at 260 Washington street.

Feb. 4. The *Paid Fire Department* makes its first annual report, showing 13 engines and 6 trucks in condition for use, and asking \$290,000 for its maintenance during the coming year. Prince Arthur, of England, entertained by the *Brooklyn Club*.

Feb. 7. Hon. Samuel E. Johnson buried. He had been Master in Chancery, County Judge, Corporation Counselor, and member of the Legislature. He planned the first City Hall building.

Feb. 25. Improved code of fire signals introduced.

Feb. 26. General McClellan presided at a meeting of consulting engineers to consider the best means of

traveling through, under, or over Brooklyn streets by steam power.

March 28. The *Twenty-eighth Regiment Armory* inaugurated.

March 30. The Legislature passed the bill giving the control of the Brooklyn police force to the Mayor and two Commissioners.

May 4. The caisson for the Brooklyn Bridge tower was placed in position.

May 25. Governor Hoffman appoints J. F. Barnard to be Presiding Judge, and J. W. Gilbert and A. B. Tappan, Associate Justices, of the Supreme Court for the Second District.

May 28. The terms of the new lease to the *Union Ferry Company* include one cent ferriage between five and half-past seven, night and morning.

June 26. *Hamilton Market* fell, crushing two children in the ruins.

Aug. 3. The *Central Bank* suspended payment.

Aug. 14. Hon. GRENVILLE T. JENKS died.

Sept. 30. The *Brooklyn City Railroad Company* reduced its fares to five cents.

Oct. 1. Funeral of Admiral Farragut.

Nov. 1. Stoves introduced into street cars.

1871.—Jan. 3. Mayor Kalbfleisch's message gives the population of Brooklyn in 1870 at 400,000; the taxes levied in the year \$8,000,000; city debt, \$36,000,000.

Jan. 16. The demolition of St. John's P. E. Church, corner of Johnson and Washington streets, was commenced, to make way for the new *Brooklyn Theatre*.

Jan. 28. The *Brooklyn City Gas Works'* reservoir collapsed, and killed the engineer.

Feb. 13. An *ice-bridge* formed in the East River, over which thousands of people passed. This occurrence was repeated on the 14th.

March 30. The new wing of the *Long Island College Hospital* completed.

May 2. The Park and Vanderbilt line of street-cars opened for travel.

May 3. Bedford avenue opened south from Fulton street.

May 9. The New York caisson of the bridge successfully sunk.

June 3. The *Board of Charities and Corrections* took the place of the Superintendents of the Poor.

June 12. The Brooklyn Steam Transit Company projects an elevated railroad from the bridge to Flatbush.

Streets were renumbered this year.

June 21. Laying of the corner-stone of the *Church Charity Foundation* edifice at Albany and Herkimer avenues.

July 1. A Bust of *Washington Irving* was unveiled at Prospect Park.

July 12. Several Brooklynites killed in the Orange riot in New York.

July 30. The Staten Island ferry boat *Westfield* exploded, killing and wounding a number of Brooklyn people.

Aug. 15. The Board of City Assessors reports the number of new buildings erected, during the year ending June 30, at 2,214, at an assessed value of \$4,930,900, affording accommodations for 18,000 people.

Oct. 2. The new *Brooklyn Theatre* was opened with the play of "Money."

Oct. 10. Brooklyn's gift to burned Chicago, \$100,000, the first sent from the East.

Nov. 28. The Grand Duke Alexis given a reception at the Navy Yard.

Dec. 15. Small-pox declared epidemic.

1872.—Jan. 8. Mayor Powell's message gives the number of men on the police force as 450, supported at an annual expense of \$500,000; the total liabilities of the city at \$30,669,768.50; the total county debt \$3,733,712; twenty-one miles of streets were graded and paved in 1871, 1,944 gas lamps set, and 2,596 buildings of all kinds erected.

April 5. The American District Telegraph Company in Montague street commenced operations.

June 1. The *Mechanics' Savings Bank* opened at Fulton and Main streets.

July 6. Piers and warehouses for first line of European steamers from Brooklyn, to Havre and Baltic Sea, building at Martin's stores.

July 16. *East New York* voted, by 3 to 1, for annexation with Brooklyn.

July 31. The burning of the *Standard Oil Works* at Hunter's Point, destroyed 25,000 bbls. of oil, and some shipping at the wharves. Estimated Loss, \$300,000 to \$500,000.

August 12. The Commissioner of Police authorized to add 50 men to the force of patrolmen.

September 3. Justice Barnard grants an injunction against laying car-tracks on Lee avenue.

1873.—January 7. Mayor Powell's message reports the Water Department as more than self sustaining; the total length of streets, 546 miles, of which 283 are paved, 20 during 1872; the county debt, \$3,654,712; the city's obligations, \$32,012,884.

January 18. The Committee of One Hundred report a new charter for Brooklyn.

January 23. Work commenced on the Brooklyn Anchorage of the Bridge.

Feb. 13. Death of Ex-Mayor MARTIN KALBFLEISCH.

March 6. The building corner of Montague and Clinton streets, fitted for the use of United States authorities.

April 18. Mass meeting to favor the establishment of High Schools.

April 27. A Board of United States engineers recommended extending the pier line from Fulton Ferry to Atlantic Docks.

May 8. New State Line of steamers inaugurated between Brooklyn, Belfast and Glasgow.

May 12. Postal cards introduced into general use.

May 16. Brooklyn's new city charter passed by the Assembly, by which the Mayor, Auditor and Controller are elective, the mayor and Aldermen appoint the heads of departments, the Excise and Police are consolidated, and the departments stands as follows: Finance, Audit, Treasury, Collection, Arrears, Law, Assessment, Police and Excise, Health, Fire and Buildings, City Works, Parks, Public Instruction.

May 21. Bill passed to issue bonds of \$150,000 for building *Thirteenth Regiment Armory*.

June 2. *East River Bridge Company* reorganized under a modified charter.

June 18. Telegraphic communication established with Flatbush.

June 19. The remains of the Revolutionary martyrs in the British Prison Ships were removed to the Mausoleum on Fort Greene.

July 20. *Brooklyn Trust Company* suspended payment; resumed operations Aug. 11th.

July 26. The *Mercantile Library's* new building was opened to the public.

August 9. The Police force was reorganized.

September 17. The taxable property of Brooklyn, as given by the Board of Assessors, is \$216,073,170; of the entire county, \$227,699,043.

September 27. A Bust of *John Howard Payne* was unveiled in Prospect Park.

October 1. Charles C. Talbot becomes Postmaster; the offices are consolidated; the main office being in Washington street, with branches in Williamsburg, Greenpoint, and on Marcy avenue, near Fulton street.

November 4. *John W. Hunter* (Dem.), elected Mayor by a vote of 32,115 over Dwight Johnson (Rep.), whose vote was 24,311.

JOHN W. HUNTER, Mayor of the city of Brooklyn, was born 1807, in the then village of Bedford, a locality now covered by the streets of the city. His father, an industrious farmer, had removed hither from Monmouth county, New Jersey, a few years prior to the birth of the subject of our sketch. On his mother's side Mr. Hunter claims descent from some of the earliest Holland families of Long Island. His early education was obtained at the neighboring schools, and as soon as his age permitted, he entered the employ of a wholesale grocery house of New York city, where, with several promotions, he remained many years, laying the foundation of that character and integrity, which so highly distinguishes him. Meanwhile his home was in Brooklyn; and, as early as 1835, he began to interest himself in improving the school system of his native city. In 1838 he was associated with Mr. Seth Low (the grandfather of our present mayor) as trustee of the public school now known as No. 1, and he was largely instrumental in securing the erection of the present edifice on the corner of Adams and Concord streets, having to overcome the very strenuous opposition to educational progress, which existed in that early time, as well as at present. He has been an active member of the Board of Education for many years, during which time he has largely contributed to the excellent system of education which Brooklyn now possesses. Mr. Hunter filled the im-

portant office of Auditor in the New York Custom-House for many years. In 1864, and during the administration of this office, the curious charge was brought against him by John J. Cisco (the Sub-Treasurer of New York), of forging his own signature. Mr. Cisco, having paid certain drafts upon him, bearing Mr. Hunter's forged signature, which he was responsible for, took this course of saving himself. The case was at once prosecuted before Hon. Kenneth G. White, the United States Commissioner, the record of which fills a pamphlet of 264 pages. Hon. Edwards Pierrepont was one of Mr. Hunter's counsel. The result was a unanimous acquittal of Mr. Hunter, which distinctly asserted his unimpeachable integrity. Mr. Cisco was compelled to add his own conviction of Mr. Hunter's innocence, as well as to pay the cost of the defence.



HON. JOHN W. HUNTER.

Immediately following this vindication came the nomination of Mr. Hunter by his fellow-citizens of the Third Congressional District, to fill the vacancy occasioned by the death of Hon. James Humphrey. This nomination was entirely unsought for; but, under the circumstances, was very gratifying, as showing that the charges which had been brought against him, had in no way affected his standing with his friends and neighbors in Brooklyn. The Third District was Republican, though Mr. Hunter, a Democrat, was elected by a handsome majority over his popular opponent, Hon. S. B. Chittenden. Upon the expiration of his Congressional term, in 1867, he was nominated to represent the Fifth Assembly District in the State Legislature; but was defeated, by only ninety votes. Subsequently, he declined the office of Collector of Internal Revenue, tendered him by President Johnson, and which was personally urged upon him by the Secretary of the Treasury, Mr. McCulloch, who believed his selection would best serve the needs of the department. The record of his administration as Mayor (1874, 1875) was marked by a strenuous opposition on his part to the system of State commissions for the government of the city, to the further increase of public debt, and to "Ring" power in municipal affairs. His voice was ever for retrenchment, and for rigid economy, and a responsible local government. The amended charter of 1873, which provided for the abolition of all commissions, and for the restoration of home rule, largely owed its existence to Mayor Hunter's ardent personal influence.

In 1876 he was again tendered the nomination for Congress from the Third District; and, with his splendid previous record, both as legislator and as Mayor, would undoubtedly have carried an election. Owing, however, to the recent

strain upon him, as well as to the business engagements then devolving upon him, he felt constrained to decline the proffered honor.

Mayor Hunter is a director in the *Nassau Fire Insurance Co.*; the *Manhattan Life Insurance Co.*; and the *Mercantile Trust Co.*, of New York city.

Since 1860, Mr. Hunter has been identified, as Trustee, Secretary and Treasurer, with the *Dime Savings Bank*, and to his financial skill, and his reputation for unswerving integrity, much of the success of the bank as a Brooklyn institution is due.

Mr. Hunter resides in the same house, on Clinton avenue, in which he has lived since 1840. His third son, Lieut. Henry C. Hunter, of the United States ship *Alert*, died at sea in June, 1881. His career had already been full of brilliant promise for the future. An elegant stained-glass window in the chapel of the Brooklyn Homeopathic Hospital, also commemorates the memory of Mr. Hunter's daughter, Emily, a lady whose name is associated with many deeds of mercy and charity in this city.

1874.—January 5. Mayor Hunter's message states the total city debt to be \$37,431,944.

February 20. Large meeting of the Municipal Union Society to favor the union of Brooklyn and New York under one government.

March 11. *Brooklyn Guaranty and Trust Company* incorporated.

May 22. *Ladies' Fruit and Flower Mission* incorporated.

May 26. Incorporation of the *Brooklyn Elevated Railroad Company*, to connect Brooklyn and Woodhaven.

July 23. Corner Stone of *Thirteenth Regiment Armory* laid, at Hanson Place and Flatbush avenue.

July 25. The number of houses erected in Brooklyn from June 1, 1873, to June 1, 1874, given by the Board of Assessors as 1786; their assessed value, without site, \$4,251,700. The number of buildings from 1864 to 1874, inclusive, is 19,660; their assessed value, \$44,027,800.

August 6. It was voted by the Common Councils of New York and Brooklyn to complete the Bridge as a Municipal undertaking.

Aug. 22. Theodore Tilton commences an action against Rev. Henry Ward Beecher for *crim. con.*

Aug. 25. Grand Street Ferry closed.

Sept. 9. New Ferry-House at Catherine Ferry opened.

Sept. 28. International Rifle Contest at Creedmoor. Public Reception at the Academy of Music to Rt. Hon. Maurice Brooks, Lord Mayor of Dublin.

Oct. 8. The private stockholders of the *East River Bridge Company* assent to the terms of the Act of April 16th, by which the cities of Brooklyn and New York assume the completion of the structure.

Dec. 15. Douglass and Mosher, the (supposed) abductors of Charlie Ross, killed while committing a burglary at Bay Ridge.

Dec. 29. Collision between two ferry boats causing a loss of several lives.

1875.—Jan. 5. Mayor Hunter's message gives the total indebtedness of Brooklyn as \$35,048,621; number of children attending the public schools over 80,000; taught by 995 teachers; value of school property \$3,810,000. Beginning of the *Tilton-Beecher* trial in the City Court before Judge Neilson.

Jan. 23. Ice jam in the East River, stopping ferry-boats.

Feb. 13. East and North Rivers covered with ice; travel suspended.

Mar. 15. Total number of deaths in 1874 was 11,011.

June 22. Dedication of the *Baptist Home*.

July 2. The jury in the *Tilton-Beecher* case discharged, being unable to agree.

July 14. The census gives the population of Brooklyn at 483,252; of Kings County 494,570.

Aug. 4. Death of Isaac Van Anden, founder of the *Brooklyn Eagle*.

Aug. 9. The number of buildings erected in Brooklyn from May 31, 1874, to May 31, 1875, is 1,470; of an assessed value of \$3,617,800.

Aug. 20. Part of Atlantic Avenue fenced in by the heirs of Cowenhoven estate.

Nov. 2. *Frederick A. Schroeder* elected Mayor of Brooklyn by a vote of 35,026, over Edward Rowe, whose vote was 33,375.

FREDERICK A. SCHROEDER was born in the city of Trier, Prussia, March 10th, 1833. His father was a Surveyor of



HON. FREDERICK A. SCHROEDER.

Taxes in the service of the Prussian Government when the Revolution of 1848 occurred, and for political reasons, determined to emigrate to the United States. His son had received the thorough education which the schools of that country afford; and, on his arrival here, with characteristic German independence, determined to earn his own living. He commenced the business of cigar-making, at the age of sixteen, starting without a dollar of his own. Before attaining his majority he had accumulated a comparative independence, and owned a manufactory, in which he employed a dozen men. In the course of time his industry and integrity brought their reward, and he was enabled to enjoy an

ample fortune, while he continued in business as the head of the firm of Schroeder & Bon, dealers in leaf tobacco. In 1867, he founded the Germania Savings Bank, in order to afford his countrymen in Brooklyn the advantages which native-born citizens derived from similar institutions. Mr. Schroeder has been its President from the first, and the success of the corporation has vindicated his judgment in establishing it. In 1871, the Republican party sought him as a candidate for the office of City Comptroller, to which he was elected by a flattering majority. Brooklyn is indebted to him for an improved method of book-keeping in the Comptroller's Department, and for an honest, vigilant administration, as even his political opponents were constrained to admit.

During his term as Mayor, and with his active co-operation, important strides were taken towards reform in municipal government. After retiring from office, he continued to labor as a private citizen for the overthrow of the various rings which infested the city government. His record as a thorough-going reformer secured his election to the State Senate, in 1879, from the Third Senatorial District. His course in the Legislature was entirely satisfactory to his constituents, as he was the active champion of the Reform Charter for Brooklyn, by which the many-headed commissions of the old system are replaced by those who are directly responsible for the proper discharge of their duties. So earnest was he in urging the passage of the various reform bills and the new charter, that he has been called the father of Brooklyn's present excellent charter. Since the expiration of his term in the Senate he has spent much time in European travel.

Dec. 31. In 1875 there were 383 fires in the city, with an aggregate loss of \$799,398.

1876.—Jan. 3. Mayor Schroeder's message states the total liabilities of the city to be \$38,770,463.

Jan. 7. Rear Admiral SILAS H. STRINGHAM died, aged 78 years.

Feb. 3. Patrick Campbell, Superintendent of Police, reports the total number of arrests in 1875 at 24,700.

Mar. 7. Burning of the *Brooklyn Home for the Aged*, with the loss of 18 lives.

Mar. 16. Ordinance passed to permit the use of steam cars on Atlantic avenue, from East New York to Flatbush avenue.

Mar. 25. Robbery of \$25,000 from the Fulton Bank.

Apr. 19. Formal transfer of the *Thirteenth Regiment Armory*, by the Board of Supervisors, to the Regiment.

May 24. Work commenced on the East New York end of the Brooklyn Elevated Railway.

June 21. Ground broken for the new *Municipal Building*.

July 18. The *Broadway, Tompkins Avenue and Harrison Avenue Railway* line completed.

Aug. 10. The Registrar of the Board of Health reports the number of deaths in the city for the first six months of 1876 at 5,843.

Aug. 14. First wire stretched from the Brooklyn tower to the New York tower of the Bridge.

Aug. 19. Opening of the Coney Island branch of the *New York, Bay Ridge and Jamaica Railroad*.

Sept. 24. Blowing up of Hallett's Point at Hell



James Russell

gate, East River, after six years' spent in submarine tunneling.

Oct. 6. Death of NEZIAH BLISS, the "Patriarch of Greenpoint."

Oct. 16. First "cradle" cable of the bridge stretched from shore to shore.

Nov. 18. Ocean Park Roadway opened for travel.

Dec. 4. Unveiling of *Horace Greeley's* monument in Greenwood.

Dec. 5. Burning of the *Brooklyn Theater*; 295 lives lost. (See chapter on *Music, Drama and Art*.)

Dec. 9. Public funeral at Greenwood of one hundred unclaimed bodies of victims of the theater fire.

1877.—Jan. 8. The City's total obligations as given by Mayor Schroeder's message are \$39,578,100. President F. S. Massey of the Fire Department reports the number of men employed as 264; the number of steam fire engines 22, and 5 hook and ladder companies. The losses by fire in 1876 aggregated \$525,860.

Feb. 13. Death of Hon. CYRUS P. SMITH, aged 77 years, the fourth Mayor of Brooklyn, appointed in 1839 and elected again.

Feb. 17. The Brooklyn *Argus* consolidated with the *Union*.

March 23. The Brooklyn Bank plundered of \$160,000 by the head book-keeper; his arrest and the recovery of most of the money.

April 15. The steam railroad track between Flatbush and Classon avenues laid at night, to avoid an injunction.

April 25. The Cowenhoven heirs awarded \$60,000 for their strip of land in the center of Atlantic avenue.

May 12. The contest between Abraham H. Daily and Walter H. Livingston for the office of Surrogate decided in favor of the former.

May 31. During the past twelve months 1,270 new buildings erected in this city, assessed at \$3,349,200.

June 1. Beginning of the work of running the wires for the great bridge cables across the river.

June 16. Gov. Robinson signs the bill for the reduction of salaries of the Brooklyn officials, by which the highest salaries are reduced from \$10,000 to \$6,000.

June 23. Laying of corner-stone of *St. John's Hospital*.

June 26. Passenger travel by steam, on Atlantic avenue, began.

July 18. The *Manhattan Beach Railroad* and hotel opened to the public; also opening of the *New York and Sea Beach Road*.

July 23. The Twenty-third Regiment ordered to Hornellsville to quell the railroad riot.

July 30. *Mozart Garden* opened at the corner of Fulton and Smith streets.

Aug. 13. *Rapid Transit* trains run to East New York, at frequent intervals, at five cents fare.

Aug. 23. The line of "Annex" ferry-boats established from Jewell's Wharf to Jersey City.

Sept. 14. The *Long Island Savings Bank* closed.

Sept. 15. The American team victorious in the International Rifle Match at Creedmoor. Sir Henry Halford entertained in Brooklyn.

Nov. 6. *James Howell, Jr.*, elected mayor over John F. Henry, by a vote of 36,343 to 33,538;

JAMES HOWELL.—Nineteenth on the roll of distinguished citizens whom Brooklyn has honored with the mayoralty, stands the name of JAMES HOWELL. He comes of excellent ancestry; his parents, though not wealthy, were highly respected. They were residents of Bradford, Wiltshire, in England, at the time of his birth, October 16, 1829, but removed to America, with their children, when James was but six years old; therefore, he may be claimed as a thorough American, and a good example of the product of American institutions. His father, James Howell, made a home for himself and family on a farm near New Lisbon, Ohio. Here the young James grew up, assisting in the farm-work, when necessary, and attending the common schools until 1845, when he removed with his parents to Brooklyn. Here he served a clerkship of a year in a grocery-store, but the work was uncongenial. Naturally endowed with a talent for construction, he had a taste for mechanism, which bent he finally determined to gratify. Accordingly, he served a thorough apprenticeship of four years in iron-working, and was then promoted to be foreman in charge of a foundry. He showed such energy, aptness, good sense and power to command men, as to win the perfect trust and confidence of his employers. His success in managing for others excited his ambition to do for himself. Conscious of his powers, he felt that he could conduct his own business as well as another's; that he could direct as well as execute. Accordingly, in 1855, he opened a small establishment on a capital of \$235, saved from his earnings. His venture was crowned with success. He was able to extend his business gradually, until his works covered a large area, and gave employment to some three hundred men, with an annual production valued at many thousand dollars.

His reputation and his fortune kept pace with the growth of his business; and, at the present time, the house of Howell & Saxtan is among the heaviest in the iron trade.

Mr. Howell's practical abilities, his knowledge of men, his faculty for leadership, and his personal popularity and probity early commended him to his fellow citizens for political honors. He was elected Supervisor of the Eleventh Ward in 1864, on the Democratic ticket. His course gave such satisfaction that he was elected for three consecutive terms; also for one term as Supervisor and Alderman, and afterwards for one term as Supervisor-at-Large. In these various offices he showed positive ability, fondness for public business, and the faculty of accomplishing results in a marked degree; while his name was synonymous with economy and reform. His personal popularity invariably carried the Eleventh Ward, though it was otherwise strongly Republican. These years of political service had brought Mr. Howell additional capacity and experience, and made him favorably known to the citizens of Brooklyn. Accordingly, in 1876, he was selected by the Democracy as their strongest candidate for the Mayoralty, and was elected by a flattering majority.

On his accession to the office, he found a deficit in the city's finances, and a constantly increasing debt; he therefore immediately set about retrenching. He was instrumental in securing the passage of the two-third act; also in other legislation inuring to the city's benefit. At the close

of his first term, he was triumphantly re-elected by over ten thousand majority.

In a communication to the Common Council, near the close of his term, he was able to say:

"It appears that the reduction in expenditures, under the estimates of the Board of Estimates, from 1878 to 1881, inclusive, have averaged nearly twenty-five per cent. on the annual expenditures for the three years immediately preceding my administration; while in the matter of local taxation, the burdens have been materially lessened, notwithstanding an increase in population, in the past four years, of over seventy thousand."

This excellent showing, coupled with his honest and fearless vetoes of "jobs," and his administration, excellent in other respects, were so satisfactory to the people, that he received the unanimous nomination for the third time, in 1880.

Could his name have been presented to the voters without side issues of party management and the popular cry, "no third term," he would have been sustained by an overwhelming majority; but no man could carry the party load, for which he was in no way responsible.

It is the verdict of history that he made an excellent Mayor, enforcing economy and reform in Brooklyn's government, opposing dishonesty, enhancing the city's prosperity, and winning public respect and confidence.

During his term of office as Mayor, he took an important part in the affairs of the Brooklyn Bridge, watched its progress with interest, and made his influence felt beneficially in many practical ways. After the death of Senator Murphy, Mr. Howell was appointed in February, 1883, to be Bridge Trustee, in his place.

In private life Mayor Howell is much liked, because of his kind and genial manners, social qualities and strong friendships; while he is universally esteemed for his sterling worth, integrity and manhood.

His wife was Miss Anna Tunstall, whom he married in 1851; their family consists of a son and two daughters. Their church connections are with the Methodist Episcopal denomination. Mr. Howell is a member of the Masonic order, having taken some of the higher degrees, and held important offices in the fraternity.

Mr. Howell's success is attributable to his doing with his might what his hand found to do. His entire energies have ever been devoted to his business, to his official duties, and the occupations of a public spirited citizen.

Dec. 14. Col. James McLeer appointed Postmaster of Brooklyn.

Dec. 31. 29,500 arrests made in 1877, as against 26,669 in 1876.

1878.—Jan 7. Mayor Howell's message gives the city's permanent debt at \$27,283,932, the temporary debt, \$10,293,900, tax certificates.

March 15. The annual report of the Police Department gives the number of men on duty at 623, being one to 816 of the population; 26,857 arrests were made; property reported stolen, was \$230,475, of which \$191,803 was recovered.

April 9. *Manhattan Beach Railroad Company* ran their first train over the route from Bay Ridge to Coney Island, thence to Greenpoint.

May 12. Sudden death of Major General THOMAS S. DAKIN.

June 1. Ground broken for the *Brooklyn Steam Transit Road*.

June 14. A strand of the Brooklyn bridge cable broke loose from the New York anchorage; several workmen killed.

Opening of the *Old Men's Home* at 84 State street.

June 24. Explosion of gas in the basement of the Municipal Building, with the loss of one life and serious injury of others.

July 1. The *Brooklyn, Flatbush and Coney Island Railroad* finished from the Park to Coney Island. The Brighton Beach Hotel completed.

July 17. Yellow fever breaks out at the Navy Yard.

July 20. Death of Hon. JOHN A. LOTT, aged 74.

Aug. 6. Union of the Long Island Railroad with the Brooklyn, Flatbush and Coney Island road.

Oct. 5. The great cables of the bridge completed.

Oct. 24. Ground broken for the *Long Island Historical Society's* new building, on Pierrepont street, corner of Clinton.

Nov. 25. Thomas M. Riley declared to be elected Sheriff, by 71 majority, by the Board of Canvassers.

Nov. 27. *Brooklyn Board of Charities* organized.

Dec. 4. Pacific Mills in South Brooklyn burned; loss \$200,000.

Dec. 14. *The Electric Light* introduced into Brooklyn, by F. Loeser, at his store on Fulton street.

1879.—Jan. 6. Mayor Howell's annual message states the net obligations of the city to be \$37,475,318.

Feb. 5. Death of Dr. GEORGE GILFILLAN, the oldest physician in Brooklyn.

Feb. 6. Death of ex-mayor SAMUEL S. POWELL.



HON. SAMUEL S. POWELL.

March 1. Fire Marshall A. B. Thorn reports 449 fires in the city during 1878, causing a loss of \$391,917, on which the insurance was \$1,654,900.

March 10. The Police Department reports 25,373 arrests in 1878.

April 3. Work commenced on a new theatre on the site of the Brooklyn Theatre, burned in 1877.

May 10. The *Atlantic Insurance Company* winds up its affairs.

May 23. Semi-Centennial celebration of the *Brooklyn Sunday-School Union*.

May 24. Burning of the Nassau Mills on Furman street, with a loss of \$275,000, and a part of Watson's stores; loss half a million.

May 28. A bust of *Thomas Moore* was unveiled at Prospect Park.

June 30. The resolution passed by the Board of Aldermen to allow the *Kings County Elevated Railway Company* to build tracks through certain streets, including Fulton, having been vetoed by Mayor Howell, was passed over the veto by 17 Aldermen.

July 7. According to the decision to make the bridge superstructure of steel, the contract was awarded to the Edgemoor Iron Company.

August 15. The Registrar of the Board of Health reports the deaths for 1878 to number 11,075, being at the rate of 2.04 in the hundred.

August 24. Death of Hon. JOHN DIKEMAN, ex-Judge of the County Court, aged 84 years.

Sept. 11. General Jourdan re-appointed President of the Board of Police and Excise.

Oct. 12. The corner-stone of *St. Mary's Hospital* laid.

Nov. 29. Death of Rev. Dr. W. I. BUDDINGTON, aged 64 years.

1880.—Jan. 5. Mayor Howell's annual message states that the assessed valuation of the taxable property of the city in 1879 was \$232,925,699, an increase of nearly \$3,000,000 over the previous year, which represents the value of the 1,125 new buildings erected during the year. The total debt of the city is \$37,565,370.

Jan. 26. The shoe shop in the County Penitentiary fired by a convict and totally consumed.

Feb. 6. Sudden death of ex-Sheriff A. G. WILLIAMS.

April 15. Farewell services in old *St. Ann's Church*, at Washington and Prospect streets, preparatory to its demolition for the bridge approach.

April 21. The annual report for 1879 of the Police Department states that the force comprises 635 men; that 25,706 arrests were made, being in the proportion of one to every twenty of the population; that 448 fires occurred, in which the loss was \$698,909.

April 29. Three-score of gentlemen, who have been residents of Brooklyn for fifty years, met to organize the "*Society of Old Brooklynites*."

May 1. The new wing of the Raymond street jail completed.

May 15. Governor Cornell signed the bill which re-organizes the *Charities Department* of the city, giving its control to a commission of three, who are also to have supervision over the penitentiary.

May 26. The "One Head" bill passed by the Legislature, by the terms of which the triple heads of de-

partments are abolished, and the control given to a single official, with power to appoint his subordinates; a long step in the direction of good municipal government.

May 29. Passage of the bill to reorganize the *Board of Elections* and make it non-partisan, by securing members from all political parties.

June 2. Mayor Howell appointed Messrs. J. C. Perry, H. W. Hunt, W. J. Osborne, D. T. Walden and A. Treadwell to be *Rapid Transit Commissioners*, to investigate the various schemes proposed for rapid transit.

June 11. Corner-stone of the new *E. D. Hospital and Dispensary* laid.

June 20. Census returns give the population of the city's twenty-five wards as 554,465.

June 29. The steamer *Seawanhaka* burned in the East River, with the loss of a number of lives, among them Rev. Dr. DILLER, one of the oldest and most beloved of the Episcopal clergymen in this city. He was in his seventieth year; noted for his loving spirit and his work among the poor. His daughter, who was with him, was so badly burned that she died a few days after.

July 2. Opening of the *Oxford Club*, at 109 Lafayette avenue; A. C. Barnes, President.

August 6. Veto by Mayor Howell of the Elevated Railroad project from South Ferry to the southern part of the city.

August 8. Destructive fire on Bushwick Creek, at Pratt's Oil Works, which spread to lumber yards on Newtown Creek; loss about \$300,000.

August 26. Railroad opened between Brooklyn and Rockaway Beach.

September 21. A decision of the Court of Appeals ends the "Bond" or *Kings County Elevated Road*; given on the ground that the requisite consent of property holders was not obtained.

October 4. The assessed valuation of the property in the city is given as \$234,836,491; of the city and county, \$247,021,166.

October 8. Arrangements made to organize a chorus for the Philharmonic Society.

October 27. Total destruction by fire of the *Ansonia Clock Factory*; loss \$1,000,000.

November 2. The new building of the *Long Island Historical Society* opened for inspection.

November 29. A controlling interest of the Long Island Railroad sold to Austin Corbin and a syndicate of Boston capitalists.

December 10. *Surf Avenue*, at Coney Island, opened through from Brighton Beach to West Brighton.

December 14. Organization of the *Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children*.

December 21. First annual dinner of the *New England Society* of Brooklyn, at the Assembly Rooms of the Academy of Music.

December 26. Great storm, obstructing travel; the surf doing great damage at Coney Island.

1881—January 1. The new *Charities' Commission* of three members entered upon its office; the three being Messrs. Shipman, Henry and Ryan.

Mayor Howell's annual message reports the total city debt to be \$37,602,111; 1,650 new buildings were erected in 1880.

January 12. Formal presentation, to the trustees, of the *Long Island Historical Society's* new building on Pierrepont and Clinton streets.

February 4. The Police Department reports 26,785 arrests during 1880.

February 18. Work commenced on the superstructure of the Brooklyn Bridge.

February 23. Mr. George I. Seney donates \$200,000, and sixteen lots of land on Seventh avenue, for a Brooklyn Hospital.

March 28. The four rapid transit projects on foot are: 1st, the "Bruff" elevated road, partially constructed, but in the hands of a receiver; 2d, that devised by the second commission, with a route through Adams, Fulton and Myrtle avenues; 3d, the elevated road from South Ferry, through Atlantic and Fourth avenues; 4th, an underground railway parallel to Fulton street.

April 16. Organization of the *East River Bridge and Coney Island Steam Transit Company*, to build an elevated road from the Bridge, through Washington, Pearl, Willoughby and DeKalb, to Flatbush avenue and the Long Island Railroad depot, thence to Twentieth street and Culver's depot, with a branch from Willoughby street to the Bruff road on Park ave.

April 21. The Union Ferry Company secured from New York city a new lease, paying twelve and a half per cent. of the gross receipts.

April 24. Death of Hon. TUNIS G. BERGEN.

May 4. Cofferdam sunk as a beginning of work on the projected chain suspension bridge from Seventy-first street, New York, to Ravenswood.

June 9. The records of the Board of Education stolen from a safe.

June 12. Destructive fire at the Atlantic Dock Basin, followed three days later by a disastrous fire at Pierrepont stores, with loss of life.

June 21. Twenty-third annual convention of the New York Sportsmen's Association, held at Coney Island for a week, beginning at this date.

June 30. Death of E. J. WHITLOCK, President of the Board of Education.

July 5. The Common Council met and passed resolutions of sympathy with President Garfield in his struggle to recover from the assassin's bullet.

Aug. 3. Death of ALDEN J. SPOONER, at Hempstead, L. I.

Aug. 6. George A. Stuart, Secretary of the Board of Education, arrested, charged with taking \$10,000 of

the funds of the Board of Education. Examined and discharged Aug. 24. Re-arrested Aug. 31 on new charge of greater embezzlement.

Sept. 3. New steam road opened from city line to Middle Village, connecting lines of cars on Bushwick, Myrtle, Greene and Gates avenues, and Halsey street.

Sept. 8. Set apart by Mayor Howell as a day of special fasting and prayer for the President's recovery.

Sept 12. The flight of ex-Secretary Stuart, of the Board of Education, reported to the police; and arrest of his brother-in-law, Alderman Harry O. Jones, on complaint of having aided and abetted Stuart in embezzling \$15,000.

Sept 20. Entire city in mourning over the death of President Garfield. No public business transacted. Many buildings draped in mourning.

Oct. 31. *German Lutheran Hospital* opened on New York avenue.

Nov. 8. SETH Low elected Mayor of Brooklyn by a vote of 45,434, over James Howell, who received 40,937 ballots.

HON. SETH LOW.

Mayor Low bears the name of his paternal grandfather, in his day one of the most honored, public-spirited and useful citizens of Brooklyn and the County of Kings, in both of which he held office most acceptably. He was universally respected in his public and private life by men of all parties, and of every phase of opinion, as a man of sterling Christian principle, and of the purest and noblest character. The father of the Mayor is widely and honorably known, as one of the prominent merchants of New York, the founder and head of the house of A. A. Low & Brothers, the leading American house in the China trade, and himself justly esteemed as a man of large and generous liberality. Of him, the late Moses Grinnell—another of the merchant princes of our great metropolis—said to the writer of this article, more than thirty years ago, that he was even then regarded by his elders in the same trade as taking the foremost position among them, through his remarkable foresight, excellent judgment, great executive ability and spotless integrity—a reputation which, unchallenged, he has maintained to this hour.

"Our young Mayor"—as it has been the fashion to call him, from the fact that he was only in his thirty-second year when first elected to the office in November, 1881—comes, then, of honorable and honored descent. He was born at 165 (now 189) Washington street, in this city, on the 18th of January, 1850. His mother, one of the loveliest of her sex in person and life, a woman of sweetest disposition, winning manners, large benevolence and Christian faith, survived his birth but a few days. With her hands devoutly laid upon his head, she, in almost her last breath, commended him to the blessing of God, and died serenely on the 25th of the same month.



W. H. W.

Peter Low.

Mr. Low had all the advantages of a good education, beginning in the Juvenile High School, then in Washington street in charge of Misses Dobbin and Rogers; thence, in his twelfth year, at the Brooklyn Collegiate and Polytechnic Institute; entering Columbia College in the autumn of 1866, and graduating at its commencement in 1870. In every stage of his educational course he was signally faithful and industrious. Ambitious to excel, he gained and held the confidence, esteem and love of his instructors and fellow scholars, and secured the highest honors of the several institutions in which he was successively a student, graduating at the head of his college class.

After graduating, Mr. Low went abroad for a short trip, and, on his return, entered the mercantile house of his father as clerk, and, in 1875, became a partner. Just as faithful, observant and intelligently devoted to business—his training school for active life—as to his previous studies, he, nevertheless, was early and greatly interested in whatever bore upon and could promote the good repute and the truest prosperity of his native city. The mal-administration and abuse of the city and county charities attracted his attention; and he resolutely set himself against that whole system of out-door relief, which, in the hands of the then Commissioners of Charities, had become a sink of corruption. He was specially active in the inception and establishment of the Association—now, and more and more favorably known, as its efficient and beneficent action is better understood—the Bureau of Charities. In its plan and organization Mr. Low, and his friend, Mr. Alfred T. White, took the leading part. The former was chosen its first president, and the latter its first secretary and its second president, when Mr. Low was elected to the mayoralty. This bureau, it will be remembered, has for its object the co-operation of the various church and private charities in the city; sustaining a central office, with a salaried superintendent, to whom reports from all such benevolent bodies are intended to be made, and a registry kept of all persons or families relieved, at what time, by agents of which society, in what manner, and to what extent. All this with the view of confronting and breaking up that habit of *repeating*, by which whole families among the pauper classes live in idleness and ease, and consequent vice, on the bounty thus obtained. In the very midst of his energetic efforts in this behalf, and encouraged by the interest which the churches and the charitably disposed of all parties and denominations were beginning to show in the purpose and work of the bureau; actively engaged, at the same time, in the business of his firm; a member of the New York Chamber of Commerce, serving the Chamber on important committees, as well as other associations to which he belonged, Mr. Low was nominated for the mayoralty. He then avowed, distinctly and unequivocally, that, if elected, he should carry into the office the determination to administer it

on those “business principles” with which he and his constituents must be supposed alike familiar, and, as a non-partisan work. Keeping in view the real needs of the municipality alone, apart from all State and National issues; aiming at civic economy and retrenchment; the lessening of taxation; the prompt collection of the annual levy, in order to prevent, as far as possible, the accumulation of arrears; and the support and advance of popular education; he should take to himself in good faith the new and greater authority with which the recent amendments of the City Charter clothed the office, and hold the single and respective heads of the several departments of the work of the city individually responsible—not only for the general administration of their department affairs, but for the character, fitness, good conduct and efficiency of the subordinates whom they should appoint. How wisely, judiciously, faithfully and successfully Mr. Low met and fulfilled the requirements of his high office, its new and weighty responsibilities, and the pledges he had given, the record of his first term abundantly shows.

The approval, also, of his administration by a decisive majority of his fellow-citizens and his consequent re-election in November, 1883, shows conspicuously the same thing. And this, when no string possible for his defeat was left unpulled by the party and friends of the opposing candidate. Doubtless, Mr. Low had found on first entering on the Mayoralty, in the amendments of the City Charter already referred to, his great opportunity; but, as surely, the fresh, untried, greater responsibilities of the office. For the discharge of these, he was now to be called publicly to account before a popular tribunal—the court of his constituency. He did not for a moment shrink. With prompt response to the summons, with striking manliness and honesty of bearing—a marked and evident characteristic—with force and directness of speech, obvious to all, he presented himself at its bar. The trial became, in its progress, unwontedly heated and exciting. In it, largely as his own counsel, he took an active, personal, persistent part and in every section of the city, at constantly-recurring public meetings, two or three or more on the same evening, he showed remarkable tact and ever-increasing ability for popular address. Not, however, by any lowering of his personal and becoming dignity, or sacrifice of self-respect; not by catering to the tastes of the vulgar; not by playing the role of the demagogue or the partisan; not by allowing himself for a moment to turn from the main issue of Municipal reform, which, throughout his first term of office he had kept steadily in view, to any outside issues of State or National policy. But by plain, cogent, logical, earnest, yet unimpassioned argument, on the basis of clearly marshalled and unquestionable facts; by appeals, not to the fancies or prejudices or weaknesses of the masses; but to the sober common sense of the people at large, and their obvious capacity to comprehend the

direction in which lay their true and common interests as fellow-citizens—members of one great community—and the consequent welfare, prosperity and honor of that community itself; by no assumed, but only natural courtesy and dignity of manner and speech; holding fast, and determined, as he declared, still to act upon the same principles which had governed his administration in the past as his only promise and pledge for the future. Thus it was that his various campaign addresses compelled the close attention and enthusiastic applause of the crowded audiences he everywhere drew. The decision was made and the verdict given at the polls; and Mr. Low has entered on his second term of office, with the happiest auguries for the great city which he so honestly and ably serves.

Nov. 18. Sale of East Side Park lands, 294 lots, at an average of \$2,000.

Dec. 6. The Board of Aldermen granted the Bruff Elevated Railway Company the right to build a road on Fulton street and Myrtle avenue, which received the Mayor's veto Dec. 17.

Dec. 16. 14,527 deaths reported during the year to Nov. 1.

1882.—Jan. 2. Mayor Low's message gives the net city debt at \$38,174,421; the number of new buildings erected in 1881 to Dec. 1st is 1,887, of the value of \$9,185,000.

Jan. 9. Havemeyer & Elder's sugar refinery in First street, E. D., totally destroyed by fire; loss, \$1,500,000; 1,000 men thrown out of employment.

Jan. 10. The report of the Brooklyn Post Office for 1881 shows that the number of pieces handled was as follows: 9,755,305 letters, 4,610,316 cards and 4,587,950 newspapers; the cash receipts of the office were \$751,879.

Jan. 12. Fire Commissioner Worth reports 531 fires and alarms in 1881, with a loss of \$859,284.

Jan. 14. The fifteen Aldermen who voted to override the Mayor's veto, notwithstanding the injunction, were fined \$250 each, and from ten to thirty days in jail.

Jan. 23. Death of Major General SILAS CASEY, U. S. A., aged 75 years.

Feb. 6. Great fall of snow, impeding all travel; 600 people snowbound and forced to remain all night in the street cars. Special contract made to clear Fulton street and Myrtle avenue for \$2,050.

Feb. 16. Boiler explosion at Brooklyn Flour Mills, near Fulton Ferry, with loss of life and severe injuries to persons and property.

Feb. 21. Fire in the Insane Asylum at Flatbush; several inmates burned.

March 20. Trial of Alderman Harry O. Jones commenced on indictment of fraudulent use of money belonging to the Board of Education. His acquittal followed May 1.

May 16. The *Garfield Home* for Consumptives opened at 219 Raymond street.

May 18. Death of John Zundel (for many years organist in Plymouth Church) in Germany.

May 26. Death of JOHN D. COCKS, the founder of several charitable institutions in the city. Rails laid on the Seventh Avenue line of railroad.

June 23. The *Hamilton Club*, an outgrowth of the "Hamilton Literary Society," has taken the house, No. 97 Joralemon street.

July 3. The total number of deaths since July 1, 1881, is 14,538; of births, 10,893; the annual death rate was 24.83 per thousand.

July 12. Death of DANIEL MAUJER, aged 75 years.

Aug. 1. Death of Dr. ALBERT E. SUMNER, of 130 Clinton street, a prominent homœopathic physician.

Sept. 19. Death of CHARLES G. BETTS, ex-President of the Brooklyn City Railroad Co., at the age of 74.

Sept. 21. Corner-stone of the new *Seney Hospital* laid at Sixth street and Seventh avenue.

Oct. 5. Total valuation of real and personal property in Kings county, estimated by clerk of the Board of Supervisors at \$296,312,573, of which \$283,738,317 is in Brooklyn, and \$12,674,256 in the country towns.

Oct. 11. The number of scholars reported in the public schools is 64,633.

Oct. 16. The German Evangelical Aid Society laid the corner-stone of a *Home for the Aged* on Bushwick avenue and Fairfax street.

Oct. 23. *Home for the Aged* dedicated, at Sixteenth street and Fourth avenue, in charge of the Little Sisters of the Poor.

Nov. 14. The new building of the *Industrial School for Destitute Children*, on Sterling Place, opened for public inspection.

Nov. 26. The Brooklyn Oil Refinery, at the head of Manhattan avenue, Greenpoint, burned, with the explosion of two tanks, the destruction of the wharf and a ship, and the loss of life.

Dec. 1. Death of Hon. HENRY C. MURPHY, President of the Board of Bridge Trustees, and connected with many public institutions. (See page 360.)

Dec. 9. Ex-Mayor James Howell appointed Bridge Trustee in place of the late Henry C. Murphy.

Dec. 11. 76,064,152 passengers carried by the two street railroad companies during the last year.

Dec. 12. The Supreme Court, General Term, decides adversely to the application of the *East River Bridge and Coney Island Steam Transit Company*, which is a serious blow to rapid transit in the city.

Dec. 13. Police Commissioner Jourdan recommends an increase in the force, now comprising 650 men, and reports 27,858 arrests made during the year to November 30.

Dec. 14. Destructive fire at Bay Ridge, burning rolling stock and depot of the Manhattan Beach Railroad.



FRANCIS B. FISHER.

Dec. 18. New *E. D. Dispensary* on South Third street opened.

Dec. 27. The number of buildings erected to Dec. 1st was 1,841, valued at over \$8,000,000. The *Tree Planting and Fountain Society* organized.

Dec. 28. 15,092 deaths reported for the year, to Nov. 4, being at the rate of 24.97 in a thousand.

Dec. 29. The Board of Education has expended \$1,184,172, and the cost of educating each pupil is \$20.

1883.—Jan. 8. Mayor Low's annual message reports the net debt of the city, Dec. 31, 1882, to be \$37,493,723; 2,376 new buildings were erected in the city in 1882; twelve million gallons of water were added to the daily water supply.

Jan. 16. The fourteen street-car lines of Brooklyn carried 87,714,834 passengers in 1882, an increase of 7,000,000 over 1881.

Jan. 23. Death of ALONZO CRITTENDEN, LL.D., President of the Faculty of Packer Collegiate Institute.

The letter carriers delivered 32,670,001 pieces of mail matter last year, against 28,551,438 in the year preceding.

Jan. 29. The Fire Commissioner's report shows that 531 fires occurred in the city during 1882, involving a loss of \$1,300,000. The Police Commissioner's report shows a total of 646 officers, or 1 to every 930 of the population. Death of DANIEL CHAUNCEY, President of the Mechanics' Bank; also of Police Justice FRANCIS B. FISHER.

FRANCIS BARTON FISHER, late Justice of the Second District Court, Brooklyn.—Mr. Fisher was born in Bolton, Mass., August 7, 1832. When he was about two years of age, his parents removed to Norwich, Chenango county, New York. There he received a good academical education, and later, being apprenticed to the printers' trade, he improved his leisure hours by diligent study. At the age of twenty he formed a partnership with Col. Thomas L. James (since Postmaster of New York and Postmaster-General) in the publication of the *Madison County Journal*, at Hamilton, N. Y. Two years later, he was editing the *Chenango Telegraph*, then the leading paper in the county. A year or two after, he removed to Greene, in the same county, and established the *Chenango American*, which he edited for some years. In 1861 and 1862, he represented the Second Chenango District in the Assembly, and won a high reputation there, as a ready debater, a skillful manager, and an able, upright legislator. He returned, at the end of the session of 1862, to his paper; but his Albany experience had made him desirous of a wider field of action; and, after a brief residence at Albany, he came to New York city, in 1865, and established a printing office there. In 1866, he removed, with his family, to Brooklyn, and speedily identified himself with its interests, political, financial, and social. In every great measure for the benefit and improvement of the city, he was actively, and generally successfully, engaged; but amid all these struggles, partisan, political, or municipal, he always kept his hands pure. Yet he possessed extraordinary influence, both in his party and out of it, in the city and in the Legislature. There was something so magnetic and winning in his address and manner, that men yielded to him who had

stoutly resisted all the arguments and persuasions of others. But this power he would only use in a cause which he believed to be right. He kept himself free from all the conflicts of warring factions, and sought only to elevate his party (the Republican) to a position of high moral principle. In 1870, he was nominated for the Assembly, but was defeated, though leading his ticket, the district being, at that time, very strongly Democratic.

He was elected Alderman of his Ward (the Twenty-third) in 1872, and re-elected in 1874 and 1876. During his last term, he was President of the Board of Aldermen, and for several months was Acting Mayor. He was an excellent presiding officer, his rulings being so impartial and clear as to win the approval of all parties. He was very popular in his Ward, and accomplished more for the benefit of its inhabitants than any other Alderman had ever done. The poor knew him as their fast friend; and, in time of need, were sure, not only of his influence and sympathy, but of his material aid; and every citizen of the Ward was certain that Alderman Fisher would obtain for them any favor which it was right for them to receive. During these six years he was carrying on his own private business, and was constantly overwhelmed with official labors. Yet he found time to organize a grand system of relief for the families of the victims of the Brooklyn Theatre fire; to plan and aid efficiently several beneficent institutions for the sick and suffering poor; to plan and superintend the erection of the Municipal Building, and to write its history.

But, though possessing a powerful influence in his party and in the city, political life had lost its charm for him, and at the close of his third term as Alderman, he declined a reelection, and withdrew from active politics.

His health, at this time, was not sound, but with his abstemious habits and his systematic employment of his time, he managed to accomplish a large amount of hard work. Though well informed on legal matters generally, he had never pursued a regular course of legal study with a view of admission to the bar; but, at this time, he entered zealously upon the study of law, which he did not abandon, when he was appointed a Justice of the Police Court, to fill the unexpired term of Justice Riley, who had been elected Sheriff. He held the office for one year, and was nominated by the Republicans for the next term in that Court, but was defeated by Justice Courtney. He had, for years, opposed the elective system, as applied to the lower courts, on the ground of its tendency to judicial corruption; the Judges being, in many cases, elected by the votes of the very men who would afterwards come before them for trial.

He now drafted a bill for the Legislature of 1880, abolishing an elective city judiciary, and dividing the city into six districts for judicial purposes, enlarging the jurisdiction of these district courts somewhat, and providing that the new justices should be appointed by the Mayor, Comptroller, and Auditor, when the terms of the sitting justices should expire. The bill was passed, and one of the justiceships, that of the Second District Court, was awarded to him. He entered upon his office in May, 1881. His duties were admirably performed, and, while he was firm in punishing crime, his heart went out to those, who, from youth or ignorance, had been led into evil deeds, and he zealously advocated and aided the efforts for the establishment of a reformatory for these classes. That he might promote these objects more effectually, and be better qualified for the exercise of his judicial functions, he continued his legal studies, even with failing health, and was finally admitted to the bar in December, 1882.

Soon after his appointment as Justice, he became con-

scious of waning physical powers; but it was not until the summer of 1882, that he was convinced that *albuminuria*—that formidable and fatal disease of our time—had made such inroads upon his constitution as to preclude all hope of recovery. He struggled on bravely, however, taking his place regularly, at Court, till December, although under the pressure of severe pain, and with fast failing vision.

His death occurred January 28, 1883, after weeks of great suffering, borne with Christian fortitude and resignation.

In all the relations of life, whether political, social, or domestic, Judge Fisher was eminently a man of strict integrity, of great purity of character, and genial, tender and loving in his nature. A born leader, he wielded a wider influence than most men in much higher positions, and it was, in all cases, a beneficent influence. His hands were unstained by bribes, and his life unmarred by treachery or devices of low cunning. He was a manly man, and, though decided in his party views and action, he won the hearty esteem and respect of those who were politically opposed to him.

Feb. 9. Frederick S. Massey appointed Police Justice in place of Judge Fisher, deceased.

Feb. 15. The total number of steamers and other vessels at Brooklyn wharves during the year 1882, estimated at 7,379, showing a considerable falling off from previous years.

March 21. The annual report of the *Greenwood Cemetery Association*, shows the total number of lots sold to be 24,114; of interments to date, 216,799; the general fund for improvement is \$841,704.

March 28. The *Brooklyn City Railroad Company* bought, for \$90,000, the plot of ground, covered by four stores, on the northeast corner of Sands and Fulton streets, for the purpose of a stand for their cars at the bridge terminus.

April 4. The *New York and Sea Beach Railroad* sold for \$275,000 to J. J. Carrolan and Frederiek N. Witt. The Board of Elections provides for 203 election districts, being 1 to each 500 voters. A proposition made to extend Flatbush avenue in a straight line to the Bridge, which was approved by Mayor Low, on condition that security should be given to reimburse property owners for damages, and that a yearly rental of at least \$120,000 should be paid to the city.

April 9. Death of Rev. A. H. PARTRIDGE, aged 75, for over 30 years rector of Christ's Church. 27,610 arrests made last year.

April 17. Schedule of tolls on the *Brooklyn Bridge* fixed at the following rates: One horse and man, 5 cents; horse and vehicle, 10 cents; two horses and vehicle, except trucks, 20 cents; trucks and horses, 30 cents; neat cattle, 5 cents; sheep and hogs, 2 cents; foot passengers, free; passengers in cars, 5 cents.

May 15. Total cost of the East River Bridge reported to the Board of Trustees to be \$14,627,379.69. The trustees decide to change the schedule of fares over the Bridge, by charging 1 cent each for foot passengers and 20 cents for two horses, and vehicles of all kinds.

May 21. The *Sprague National Bank* organized.

May 24. Opening of the East River Bridge. Public exercises in the building at the Brooklyn terminus. Presentation by Hon. William C. Kingsley of the Board of Trustees. Acceptance by Mayor Edson for New York, and by Mayor Low for Brooklyn. Orations by Abram S. Hewitt and Rev. Dr. Storrs.

May 28. Amendment of the city charter, by which Aldermen serve without pay.

May 30. Memorial Day observed. Panic on the Brooklyn Bridge, by which twelve lives were lost and thirty persons injured.

June 11. Sudden death of Lieut.-Colonel CHARLES SCHURIG, Deputy Collector of Internal Revenues. Austin Corbin asked permission of the Board of Aldermen for leave to construct an elevated railroad, from Flatbush avenue to the Bridge.

June 15. *Lain's Brooklyn Directory* for 1883-'4 contains 152,280 names, an increase of 9,959.

June 25. Public meeting in the Academy of Music in honor of the seventieth birthday of Henry Ward Beecher.

July 19. Destructive fire at Harbeck's stores; loss, \$300,000; two workmen drowned and a number of firemen injured.

July 26. The Internal Revenue receipts from the Brooklyn district amounted to \$2,802,941.

August 28. The *South Brooklyn Oil Company's* works burned; loss \$100,000; four men injured.

Sept. 5. First experimental journey with the Bridge cars; time, 13 minutes for the round trip.

Sept. 12. The Grocers' Retail Protective Association confer with the city authorities concerning a *Public Market* at the Wallabout.

Sept. 24. Death of C. C. MUDGE, aged 77 years, well known for his long and arduous labors in the Bible and Tract cause in Brooklyn. The Bridge cars first run for the use of the public.

Oct. 11. The corner stone of the *47th Regiment Armory* laid, in Marcy avenue, between Lynch and Hayward Streets.

Nov. 6. Mayor SETH Low re-elected by a vote of 49,554, over Joseph C. Hendrix, 48,006.

Dec. 25. Snow fell to a depth of 18 inches.

A special meeting of the Common Council was held to-day, for the purpose of taking action on the report of the Railroad Committee in regard to the granting of a franchise to the Kings County Elevated Railroad Company. By the resolutions adopted, Washington street, between Fulton and Sands streets, were excluded. The work must be begun by September 1, 1884, and be in operation two years thereafter. The company is to pay 2 per cent. of its gross receipts to the city after the road has been in operation five years; and, to protect the city from any damage that may arise, it is to deposit \$1,000,000 worth of its first mortgage bonds in some Brooklyn or New York trust company.



As Turner

MR. JAMES TANNER, widely known as "Corporal" Tanner, was born at Richmondville, Schoharie county, N. Y., April 4th, 1844. His early life was spent on a farm, and his educational privileges were those of the district school. While a mere boy he taught in an adjoining district, manifesting the thoroughness and force of will that have since characterized him, and proving to anxious friends that he was fully competent for the work. After a few months' experience as teacher, at the outbreak of the war, although not yet eighteen, he enlisted as private in Company C, 87th New York Volunteers. He was soon made corporal, with assurance of further promotion, had not a terrible disaster befallen him. His regiment was hurried to the front, and, with Kearney's Division, participated in the Peninsular campaign, and the battles of Williamsburg, Fair Oaks, the siege of Yorktown, the seven days' fight before Richmond, and at Malvern Hill.

After leaving the Peninsula, the 87th fought at Warren-town, Bristow Station, and Manassas Junction.

Corporal Tanner served with his regiment through all the engagements, until wounded at the second battle of Bull Run. There the 87th held the extreme right of our line, with Stonewall Jackson's corps in front. During a terrific shelling from the enemy, the men were lying down, when a fragment from a bursting shell completely severed the corporal's right leg at the ankle, and shattered the left so badly as to make amputation necessary.

Carried from the field, he lost consciousness, and on recovering, found that the surgeons had amputated both legs, four inches below the knee. Meanwhile the Union lines had been broken and the army was in full retreat. The corporal's comrades were forced to leave him at a farm house, where the rebel army, in close pursuit, soon made him prisoner with the other wounded. Paroled after ten days, he was taken to Fairfax Seminary Hospital; then commenced his long struggle for life, with all the odds against him—but a good constitution and a determination to live, brought him through the doubtful days. Through all his suffering his courage never left him, and when he began to improve, his first thought was, "what can I do, thus crippled, to hold my place among men?" His manhood and ambition could not brook the thought that he must take an inferior place because of his misfortune. After treatment in the hospital, and recuperation at his old home in Schoharie county, he was able to walk about on artificial limbs. He was appointed deputy-doorkeeper in the Assembly, and subsequently held various positions under the Legislature, which he filled with great credit. He then accepted a clerkship in the War Department, under Secretary Stanton. On the night of President Lincoln's assassination he was employed to take notes of the first official evidence, and then stood by the dying bed of the President. In 1866 he returned to Schoharie county, and studied law with Judge William C. Lamont. The same year he married a daughter of Alfred C. White, of Jefferson, N. Y., and they now have four beautiful children, two daughters and two sons. He was admitted to the bar in 1869. Soon after, he was appointed to a place in the New York Custom House, and removed to Brooklyn. On competitive examination he rose to the position of Deputy Collector, and served four years under Gen. Chester A. Arthur. He was the Republican nominee for Assembly in 1871, in the Fourth Kings county district, but was counted out in the election frauds of that year. Nominated for Register by the Republicans in 1876, when the Democratic county majority was nineteen thousand, he was defeated by less than two thousand.

Connected with the Grand Army of the Republic since its

early days, no man is better known to enjoy the esteem and confidence of his comrades in greater degree than Corporal Tanner. They know him to be a trustworthy leader, a man of sound judgment, ripe experience and true heart. It was but natural, therefore, that in 1876 they elected him Commander of the Grand Army in the Department of New York. He assumed command at a time when discouragement and disappointment pervaded the organization, growing out of the neglect of the State of New York to provide for her helpless and homeless disabled veterans. Public sentiment was not yet aroused. Appeals had been made to private charity and to the Legislature, but in vain. Repeated failures had engendered prejudice and opposition to the project. The outlook was discouraging, the task herculean, to combat apathy, and rouse dormant public opinion. The veterans themselves, stung by the ingratitude of those for whom they had suffered, began to despair. At this juncture, Commander Tanner threw himself heart and soul into the work, a born leader, thoroughly qualified. Having been a sufferer, he felt the sufferings of others; intellectually a giant, he set forth in glowing words the veterans' needs, the debt of gratitude due from the State to her maimed defenders, and the shame of disgracing them to the condition of alms-house paupers. Calling to his assistance that true patriot, Rev. Henry Ward Beecher, the good work was inaugurated by a mass meeting in Brooklyn, when \$13,000 were subscribed. Mr. Tanner traversed the State from end to end, making appeals, public and private, to the people. Undaunted by obstacles, he fired the hearts of patriotic and benevolent men, so that at last a flood of petitions poured in upon the Legislature and tardy justice was meted out. The magnificent "Soldiers' Home" was erected near Bath, Steuben county, where six hundred disabled, homeless veterans can find the repose and comforts of a home, truly a "monument, more durable than bronze," to Commander Tanner for his zealous efforts and self-sacrificing labors in behalf of justice and charity. His good works for the old soldiers did not end here. When the bill for the increase of pensions was pending in Congress, Mr. Tanner appeared before the Senate Committee several times, appealing powerfully and with success to the justice and honor of the nation for the better support of those men whose very disabilities came from their loyalty and patriotism.

In November, 1877, Mr. Tanner was appointed Collector of Taxes for the city of Brooklyn, which office he has since held, through Democratic and Republican administration alike, with universal acceptance. He instituted many reforms in the office, reducing expenses one-half, and extending greater facilities to the tax-payers. The most perfect system prevails, and a saving to the city of a large amount has been effected.

He possesses the confidence of the Republican voters of all classes, and his election to the chair of the Republican General Committee of Brooklyn resulted in harmony and good feeling. As a public speaker he has few superiors, being eloquent, logical and witty. In debate he is always self-possessed and meets opponents boldly, having the "courage of his convictions." Genial, social manners make him a favorite among a large circle of acquaintances, while his talents and sterling manhood are esteemed universally.

By nature he is a positive, outspoken man, obedient to his convictions of right without regard to expediency or popularity; such a man is sure in the end to have the confidence, respect and support of his fellows. With an abiding faith in the final triumph of the right in all questions, he has learned to labor and to wait. Being yet a young man, there is doubtless a brilliant future before him, if his life and health are spared.

THE BROOKLYN OF TO-DAY, 1883.

BY *L. P. Brackett M.D.*

THE BROOKLYN of 1833—just fifty years ago—stands before us, in picture and description, in modest village attire, not yet having donned the holiday robes which became hers when she entered, a year later, into the sisterhood of cities of our Atlantic coast. It is easy to describe the fair, but not in any sense magnificent, town of that day, for there are ample materials at hand for such a piece of word-painting, and only a position from which a bird's-eye view could be obtained is necessary. We believe the United States Hotel, at Fulton, Pearl and Water streets, New York, was erected just before that time, and its observatory, with a good glass, on a fine day, would have afforded the necessary "coign of vantage."

The village, so soon to become a city, would have presented itself to our eyes, could we have looked at it from this elevation, in 1833, as a thriving town situated mostly on the western slope of the hill rising from the East River; and, below Fulton Ferry, having a shore line much like those of the bluffs along the Mississippi and Missouri Rivers, with a narrow sandy beach at the foot of the bluffs. The buildings, on Fulton and Main streets, and the other streets ascending the hill, were moderately dense till the summit of the hill was reached; from this a plain extended eastward about a mile, but the buildings on it were scattered, and though there were some good residences, and one or two churches, the eastern portion was yet farming land. Northward and southward, a few short wharves, for the convenience of sailing vessels of small size, existed; but no great warehouses lifted their heads along or below the bluffs. The buildings of the town seemed generally unpretentious. There were visible ten or twelve towers or steeples, mostly crowning wooden edifices, which indicated houses of worship; but no "spire pointing Heavenward" gave token of the presence of a church which could compete in architectural beauty with many of those which so adorned the great city across the water.

Near the crest of the hill, there were a few dwellings isolated from each other, of greater size and finer architecture than the average houses of the town. These were the country seats of New York merchants or ship-masters, and served to give dignity to Brooklyn as a suburb of New York. The town was mainly made up of dwellings; there were many of these occupied by people of moderate means, whose daily business was in New York. There were a considerable number of grocery stores, bakeries, butcher's shops and the like, and a few stores for the sale of dry goods and "yankee notions," one or two carpet and hardware stores; but the shopping was mostly done in New York. There were, even at this early time, a few manufactories. The production of ropes and cordage seems to have been rather a favorite pursuit, for there were at least five rope-walks in existence between York street and Gold street. There were two, and possibly three, hat factories; cabinet shops, which actually made the wares they sold, were considerably numerous; and some of the blacksmith's shops had extended their business to the minor products of the machine shops. The production of the coarser wares of the potter, and the making of green or smoky glass for bottles, etc., had been carried on for some years. The grist-mills, though not large, did a considerable business. There were also distilleries and ale breweries here, and one or two printing offices. There may have been a few other manufactories, but, if so, they were on a small scale.

The traffic on the river bank was mostly with fishing smacks and boats, which brought their catches for sale to the inhabitants; with coasters and trading brigs, schooners and sloops, which carried away the ropes, liquors, glass, etc., made here, and brought melons, apples and other fruits, hemp, grain, salt, household goods and stores, pork and beef, etc., etc.

Our observer, from the hotel observatory, would have been able to descry, by the aid of a good glass, a considerable settlement at the north-east, along the shores of Wallabout Bay, the nucleus of the later City of Wil-

liamsburgh. There he would have seen some tall chimneys, the forerunners of the thousand manufactories of that busy hive at the present time. Turning his glass eastward, a hamlet of some size, but surrounded by fertile farms, would next attract his attention. This was Bedford, a village through which ran two or three farm roads, and which is now the centre of the populous Ninth and Twenty-third Wards, and is traversed by Bedford Avenue, one of the finest drives in the city.

The observer of to-day would require a higher position than the observatory of the United States Hotel, to obtain a view of the entire city. A balloon, elevated about two hundred and fifty feet above the Bridge tower, or at the same elevation above the Prospect Park Observatory, with a powerful field-glass, on a clear, bright day, might enable him to take a bird's-eye view of the greater part of the city; but, for the entire water front, his best point of observation would be the top of the New York tower of the Brooklyn Bridge.

Let us begin our description with this immense water front. From the boundary line of Bay Ridge on the south, to Hunter's Point on the north, a distance in a line along the course of the river of thirteen miles (and taking the bays, basins, and sinuosities of the shore line, of at least twice that distance), the piers, docks, wharves and ships, and the street fronting the East River, are a continuous line of warehouses and manufactories; many of them from six to ten stories in height. Below the Bridge, for a distance of about six miles, the storage warehouses predominate, with, at rare intervals, great foundries and mechanic works; and, on Gowanus Bay, Creek, and Canal, extensive lumber and coal yards. These storage warehouses number hundreds of buildings, some two-story sheds of iron, brick, or frame, but the greater part, large and massive warehouses, five or six stories in height. Twelve of the largest are for the storage of grain, and one of these, said to be the largest single store-house in the world,—Davis' Stores,—attracts the attention of our observer on the New York tower—all around it are vessels, loading or unloading. Its giant elevators can suck up and deposit in bins the cargoes of grain of a half dozen vessels in an hour, and on the other side European vessels can be loaded as quickly. From this immense store-house, fifteen million bushels of grain were shipped last year, and yet scarcely one-half of its ultimate capacity was reached. The grain receipts and shipments from the Brooklyn grain warehouses and elevators constitute seventy-five per cent. of all the grain handled in the port of New York. But the value of the grain is but a trifle compared to that of the miscellaneous merchandise received in, and shipped from, these hundreds of warehouses. New York city lacks store-room along her wharves and piers, for all the goods she receives from abroad, or all the products of her agricultural and manufacturing industry which she

wishes to distribute to other lands; while Brooklyn can receive and ship them all. It follows, therefore, that all the more bulky goods, and many of those of less compass, but higher value, come directly to the Brooklyn warehouses. It is estimated that over sixty per cent. in value, and more than seventy-five per cent. of the bulk, of these imports and exports, are handled in Brooklyn. Of these, one house, with its fifty or sixty warehouses, handles in a single year \$105,000,000, and another about \$53,000,000. Above the Bridge, there are a very few of the warehouses, like the Tobacco Inspection, Flour Inspection, etc., etc., but along a coast line of more than ten miles almost the whole extent is occupied with manufactories, except the space devoted to the United States Navy Yard. Time would fail us to enumerate a tithe of all these varied manufactures. Here are works of enormous extent for the production of presses, dies, and other machines for drawing and stamping metals cold; spice and coffee works of great size; white lead, colors, and mixed paints and varnishes; each establishment employing many hundreds of men; locomotive and stationary engine works, extensive ship yards, etc., etc.; but the two greatest industries of the river fronts are sugar refining, and the refining of petroleum products. The former occupy immense manufactories, eight and ten stories in height, and covering many acres of ground. Their products exceed a hundred millions of dollars annually; the latter, petroleum refining, occupy tracts which look like whole villages, and notwithstanding occasional fires, manage to keep possession of much water front. Their products do not vary greatly from twenty million dollars. While these are legitimately manufactures, they yet contribute also largely to our commerce, since their products are sent to every part of the globe. A careful estimate of the Foreign and Internal commerce of our water front places its entire annual amount at a little more than five hundred million dollars.

But it is high time for our observer to transfer himself to the balloon rising from the Prospect Park Observatory; for, he has not yet begun to see the extent or industries of Brooklyn. Let him then extend his glass to its farthest scope of vision, and directing it northward, he will see, about eight miles distant, a water line looking like a thread of silver flowing from East to West, and finally discharging into our great estuary, the East River. This is Newtown Creek, our northern boundary. From this point southward, for more than three miles, and for at least a mile and a half back from the river front, lies the populous district known as Greenpoint, the smoke of hundreds of whose tall chimnies vex and befog the clear air. This is the largest of several manufacturing quarters in Brooklyn, and the magnitude and variety of its products is almost beyond conception. Eighteen of the twenty glass works of the city are in this section. All the porcelain and pottery works, most of the brass

foundries, more than half of the iron foundries, the greater part of the breweries, the book, and drug manufactures, the wholesale furniture trade, saw and files, ropes and cordage, glue, and a thousand other things, are sent out from this busy hive, to supply the world. There are a considerable number of church spires scattered over this large district, but the Greenpoint people, as a rule, are not greatly given to attendance on religious exercises. Farther south, and occupying a belt of perhaps a half mile in width from Flushing to De Kalb avenues, and west to the river, is another manufacturing district, not as extensive as the preceding but containing many factories. As the river is approached, the number of factories greatly increases, and in Plymouth, Water, and Front streets, they occupy nearly the whole of every block. The hat, leather, rope and twine, paint, iron and furniture manufactures, as also many others, occupy this region. Next south of this is the best portion of Brooklyn, extending from DeKalb to Bergen or Butler streets, and from Columbia Heights to Lewis or Reid avenues. This is the region of homes, of fine residences, elegant churches, and fine public buildings. The stately mansions of the Heights, and the Hill, and the comfortable and often delightful residences of the middle class, predominate, while there are few tenement houses; and, except one or two tracts, now of small extent, no hovels or squatters. Most of the many elegant church edifices of the city are within these limits, the grand and stately church of the Holy Trinity, the Catholic Cathedral, not yet finished, St. Ann's, the Tabernacle, the Church of the Pilgrims, the Lafayette Avenue and the Classon Avenue Presbyterian Churches, the Pierpont Street and Washington Avenue Baptist, the Simpson, Seventh Avenue and Nostrand Avenue Methodist, the Central and Tompkins Avenue Congregational Churches, the Clermont Avenue and East Reformed Churches, and the Church on the Heights; the Church of Our Saviour, and Unity Church, and two or three Catholic churches of fine architectural appearance.

This region, too, includes all of the best public buildings and institutions. Here are the City Hall, not yet dreamed of fifty years ago; the County Court-House, the Municipal Building,—not yet, we are sorry to say—the Federal Building so long promised—the Academy of Music, Music Hall, and four or five theatres, the Academy of Design, the Brooklyn Library, and the Historical Society's building, five large Hospitals, three Homes or Asylums for the aged, two or three Orphan Asylums and many other benevolent institutions; the Packer Collegiate Institute, the Polytechnic Institute, The Adelphi Academy and St. John's College, as well as many other schools of a high order. Within these limits are also our finest business houses, such as the Continental, Atlantic and Phoenix Insurance buildings, the Garfield, the Dime Savings Bank building, the St. Ann's Building, Hamilton Buildings, Atheneum, etc.,

etc. South of this region is what is generally known as South Brooklyn, with Prospect Park and its two fine Boulevards, the Eastern and the Ocean Parkway, Greenwood Cemetery, that beautiful city of the dead; and on its south-western and western portions, another manufacturing district, only less in extent than that of Greenpoint, and furnishing employment to many thousands of men. Here are the great Steam Pumping Engine works, whose fame is in all the world; the largest wall paper factory in the United States; foundries whose products find a market in all climes, and Brass and Copper-smiths, whose work has a national reputation. Here too, are those great Basins, the Erie and Atlantic, where so large an amount of shipping finds shelter in winter. The piers of six Ocean steamship lines, and those vast warehouses of which we have already spoken, filled to repletion with the products of all climes, brought by thousands of ships, whose lading and unloading, furnishes employment to other thousands of sturdy laborers. In the eastern part of this district as well as of those farther north, where the numerous railways do not obstruct the growth of the city, building goes on unceasingly. Block after block of fine residences of brick, of brownstone, and of the paler sandstones, is reared with a rapidity which renews the dream of Alladin's lamp. "From whence will come the people to inhabit these dwellings?" inquires our observer in dismay. But lo! the words are hardly uttered, before he sees in long procession, the heavily laden vans which bring the furniture for the new comers who are to dwell there.

But it is time for the observer to descend from his lofty eyrie; he has viewed the topography of the great city, has been an eye witness of its marvellous growth, and has heard the whisper of its guardian genii, that this is the home of seven hundred thousand souls. It now remains for him to gather other facts in regard to the great city, which are not patent to his unassisted vision.

The increase in *population* from about 30,000 to 700,000 in these fifty years that have passed since 1833, has demanded great expenditures in all directions, both private and public, and the greater part of these expenditures have been thrown into the last twenty-five years. There was no City Hall fifty years ago, and only the foundation for one forty-seven years ago. The County buildings have been erected within twenty-five years; the Municipal building, and the enlarged Jail, within ten. The inhabitants were supplied with water, by numerous pumps and wells, and to a limited extent by the Nassau Water Works, which brought the water in wooden pipes from the higher lands, on Ocean and Clover Hills. The *Ridgewood Water Works* were begun in 1856, but were not operated till 1858. It now has three large reservoirs, and about 353 miles of water mains laid, and has connections with about 80,000 buildings. The debt for the water-works, originally

\$11,664,507, has been reduced to \$9,830,500 by payments from the sinking fund, and will eventually be extinguished by the surplus from the water revenues. There was no *sewerage* system fifty years ago; the houses were all drained into cesspools. Now, the sewerage system extends over the whole city, and effects a complete drainage. This expenditure, amounting to many millions of dollars, has been paid by assessments.

Fifty years ago, the *streets* were generally ungraded and unpaved; now there are 546.29 miles of streets, of which 331.17 miles are graded and paved, and 177.50 graded, but not paved. There has been a great variety in the kinds of pavement, as cobble-stone, of which there are 288.42 miles, granite, the Belgian block pavement, the Scrimshaw, asphalt, Tilford and wood-block pavements. All matters relating to water, sewerage, and paving the streets, are now under the control of the Commissioners of City Works.

The *Prospect Park* was commenced in 1862, and its completion has cost \$9,236,000. It contains 562 acres, and its lakes, drives and rambles, and its fine groves and varied surface are full of beauty, surpassing many parks of greater extent. Other and smaller parks have been put in order, and add greatly to the healthfulness and attractiveness of the city.

The *Green-Wood Cemetery*, though not a city enterprise, is so far identified with the Brooklyn of to-day that it cannot be omitted from our record. It was founded in 1838—forty-five years ago—and now contains about 600 acres; to January, 1883, there had been 216,799 interments; its receipts are about \$260,000 a year, and while large expenditures have been made to beautify its entrances, and to make its whole area attractive and worthy of the fine monuments which adorn it, a fund of nearly a million dollars has accumulated for its permanent maintenance. There are six other cemeteries adjacent to the city.

The East River, or as it is now generally called, "the *Brooklyn Bridge*," is another of the great undertakings of the city. Of this colossal enterprise, Brooklyn has borne two-thirds of the cost, her share amounting to \$11,523,333, and she will, we believe, reap an equal share of the benefit.

The *Union Ferry Company*, the other principal means of communicating with New York, dates only from 1844, less than forty years ago, though there had been steam ferriage after a fashion since 1819, and a tolerably efficient line since 1833. The Union Ferry Company runs five ferry lines. Other ferries have been established since 1860. The Union Ferry Company carry on all their lines 100,000,000 passengers annually.

The paid *Fire Department*, with its steam fire-engines, its finely-trained corps of firemen, its complete telegraph and telephone arrangement, has been another of the city's large investments, necessitated by its

growth, and one which does it high honor. The annual expense of this department is about \$363,500, aside from the original investment.

The *Police and Excise Department* is another of the additions to the safeguards thrown around the city for its protection, and another item—a very large one—of its annual expenditure. The necessity of a large police force in a city of such extensive area as Brooklyn, is self-evident, and so rapid is the city's growth, that it is difficult to keep pace with it, in the multiplication of the city's guardians. The force, which is excellently managed by its efficient commissioner, now consists of about 700 men in all, including the officers, roundsmen, patrolmen, and men detailed to special duty. The expense of the force somewhat exceeds \$800,000. There is a police pension fund from which payments are annually made to disabled policemen, and the families of policemen deceased in the service, averaging about \$29,000.

The *Excise Department* superintends the granting, renewing and revoking licenses for the sale of spirituous liquors in the city. Its receipts are not far from \$210,000, and this sum, after deducting the necessary expenses of the office, etc., is distributed among the public charities of the city.

The thorough organization of the *public schools* is another item of Brooklyn's growth and advancement. The present number of children of school-age in Brooklyn now exceeds 200,000. Of these, about 112,000 attend the schools some part of the year. There are between 60 and 70 public schools, and the number of teachers is between 1,300 and 1,400. The annual expenditure for the support of schools exceed one million dollars. The schools are generally of a high character.

The *private and endowed schools* of the city are numerous and of great merit. We can only specify the Packer Collegiate Institute, the Brooklyn Female Seminary, the Athenæum Female Seminary, the Nassau Institute, the Clinton Avenue Institute, the Christiansen Institute, the Misses Brackett's, Madame Stamm's and Madame Giraud's schools for girls, the Polytechnic, the Adelphi Academy, Lockwood's, the Juvenile High School, the Adelphi Institute, Wells', Hart's, Greene's, Chadwick & Pye's, and the St. Francis and St. John's Colleges for boys (some of these admit both sexes); and the commercial colleges, of which three, Bryant & Stratton's, Browne's and Kissick's, are best known. There is also a medical college of high order.

Intimately connected with the cause of education are the great *libraries* of the city, of which only one, the Brooklyn Institute Library for youths, has existed more than twenty-five years. The Brooklyn Library, now numbering over 70,000 volumes, and a large and valuable suite of reading-rooms, is destined to a very much more rapid growth in the future. It has, at the present time, the best selected collection of books, and

the most admirable catalogue, to be found in any library in the United States. It was founded in 1858.

The Long Island Historical Society, founded in 1863, has a very large collection of historical and professional works, and a fine museum of natural history. It is not a lending library.

The Young Men's Christian Association, a most vigorous and useful organization, is just entering upon a new era in its history. Its new and commodious building, and its ample endowment, its courses of secular instruction, and its library, to be rapidly increased, make it one of our institutions of which every citizen of Brooklyn has a right to be proud. The Union for Christian Work is another admirable organization which has accomplished a great amount of charitable work, besides its promotion of intelligent culture. It has a small but excellent library. The Law Library and the Medical Library are also collections of great value.

Of our *benevolent and charitable organizations*, we have hardly room to speak as they deserve, but elsewhere in this volume we shall try to do them justice. There are thirteen hospitals, twenty dispensaries, twenty-five homes for the aged, indigent, children, the feeble and incurables, besides those for inebriates, for the opium habit, for nervous and mental diseases, and for deaf mutes; four nurseries, six orphan asylums, three convents, and houses for the care and reformation of the morally endangered, one truants' home, and sixteen relief and benefit associations, aside from those connected with the secret orders.

Brooklyn has been called the *City of Churches*. With its rapidly growing population, it perhaps does not so fully deserve that title now as it did in former years, but it has two hundred and eighty churches and missions, and each year adds to the number. The average number of sittings in these would not probably exceed five hundred, but in some of them, especially the Roman Catholic churches, the congregations are not identical at the different services. The number of churches is not sufficient for so great a population, and it is to be feared that the number who do not, at any time, attend public worship, is increasing with considerable rapidity.

Our *city government* is now well administered, and there is less fraud, corruption and self-seeking among those who hold office, than in any other city within our knowledge.

We close this rapid view of the "Brooklyn of To-Day," with the acknowledgment that our city is very far from being perfect, but with the belief, that, under the disabilities of the past, always overshadowed by the greater city across the river, it has, in all respects, acquitted itself as well as any city in the land; and with the hope, that with its present or on-coming facilities for furnishing food, clothing and shelter to the hundreds of thousands, perhaps millions, who are

soon to make their homes among us, it may speedily grow up to a far greater industry, a wider commerce, a vaster wealth, a higher culture, a purer public policy, and a more exalted moral status than any American city now occupies.

We cannot better close this bird's eye view of Brooklyn's growth and prosperity than by quoting the ringing and prophetic words of a speech delivered at the Annual Banquet, May, 1883, of the New York Chamber of Commerce by the Hon. J. S. T. STRANAHAN, of Brooklyn:

"I do not know, Mr. Chairman, whether you have heard of it or not; yet I may as well say that the people of Brooklyn have an idea in regard to this bridge which is quite sure to reveal itself at no distant period. Brooklyn, as you are aware, is by the East River isolated from the main land. The people of that city hope that the bridge will remove this isolation, and put them in direct railway communication, not only with New York city, but with all parts of the country. This will greatly serve their convenience and promote their prosperity. New York certainly will not object, and will not be the loser. If a bridge over the Harlem River connects New York with the main land, why should not a bridge over the East River perform a similar service in behalf of Brooklyn and Long Island? Brooklyn believes in utilizing the bridge to this end; and, fortunately, the end can be gained without any serious disturbance of existing conditions in the city of New York.

"The Second Avenue Elevated Railway has, between the Harlem River and Twenty-third street, sufficient width for four tracks; and, between this street and the New York terminus of the bridge, for three tracks; and it is, withal, so strongly built as to make it entirely possible to utilize it to the full extent of giving to Brooklyn, and the system of railroads on Long Island an outlet through the Hudson River and New Haven roads to all parts of the country. This view contemplates no public or private concessions on the part of the city of New York. It rests simply upon that business theory which so strongly marks the great trunk lines of the country, and to which the Hudson River and New Haven roads are no strangers. Though Brooklyn does not expect to rival the commercial grandeur of the greater city, she does expect in this way to be put in rapid and easy connection with the outside world, and, by her extended water-front, by her capability of indefinite territorial expansion, and by her numerous attractions as a place of residence, to maintain, at the least, her past record in the growth of population and wealth.

"Mr. Chairman, Brooklyn has *another* idea, and has long had it, the accomplishment of which she hopes will be facilitated by this bridge. The Thames flows through the heart of London, and the Seine through the heart of Paris; but in neither case have you two cities. It is London on both sides of the Thames, and Paris on both sides of the Seine. The corporate unity is not dissevered by either river. Numerous bridges make the connection between the two sides in both cities; and it is best for both that it should be so. The population on neither side would be advantaged by being split up into two municipalities.

"Here, however, we have our New York city and our Brooklyn, with the East River rolling between them. They are distinct cities, in immediate contiguity with each other, and separated by a water highway. Is this distinctness of municipality any advantage to either? I think not. Would the consolidation of these two cities into one municipal cor-

poration be any harm to either? I think not. The people are the same people, have the same manners and customs, and have common commercial and social interests; and one municipal government would serve them quite as well as two, and at far less cost. I know of no reason why this distinctness should be continued other than the fact that it exists; and I confess I see no good reason why it should exist at all. I may be mistaken, but I think that the public sentiment of Brooklyn would cordially welcome a consolidation of the two cities under the title of New York. The East River Bridge, now superadded to the ferry system, will, as Brooklyn hopes, so affiliate the two in heart and sympathy, and so facilitate their mutual intercourse that both, without any special courtship on either side, will alike ask the Legislature of the State to enact the ceremony of a municipal marriage; and if this shall be done, then I venture to predict that each will be so happy and so well content with the other that neither will ever seek a divorce.

GEO. J. COLLINS, Alderman of the Second District (comprising the 3d, 4th, 7th, 11th, 13th, 19th, 20th, 21st and 23d Wards), was born in the city of New York in 1839, but has resided in the present 21st Ward since boyhood. He served creditably during the war of the rebellion; being promoted from the ranks for good conduct, and retiring at the close of the war as commanding officer of his company in the 127th Regiment N. Y. Volunteers. Has, since 1865, been a successful business man and member of the firm of Collins & Sesnon, blank-book manufacturers, New York city. Sixteen years ago he married Susan E., only daughter of the late Jeremiah Johnson Rappelyea, whose steel portrait and biography are found in this work. He, with his family, now occupy the Rappelyea house on Throop avenue. He is a trustee and treasurer

of the Throop avenue Presbyterian Church, trustee of the East Brooklyn Savings Bank and actively engaged in various local institutions.

JACOB DURYEE and his twin brother Isaac were born in the city of New York, October 5, 1818. He was engaged in the mahogany business many years. He joined the second company, 27th Regiment, National Guard, now the 7th, commanded by Captain Abram Duryee, now General. His father and two uncles were veterans in the war of 1812, and his grandfather was one of the victims of the Jersey prison ship and was buried at Vinegar Hill, near the Navy Yard, Brooklyn, L. I.

Young Duryee served with distinguished credit in the 27th and 7th Regiments. He was promoted Sergt.-Major for soldierly qualities and efficiency at camp Trumbull, New Haven, Conn. Having served his full term of service with fidelity and zeal, he was honorably discharged. He then joined the veteran corps of the 7th Regiment, of which he is now a uniformed and active member. When the rebellion broke out, he at once recruited and organized a company (H), Anderson Zouaves, 62d Regiment N. Y. Volunteers, which he commanded, and immediately proceeded to the front, under General McClellan.

Mr. Duryee married, at an early age, Miss Sarah Mills, of Brushville, whose mother was a Bergen, an honored and historic name in the annals of Long Island. He has been a resident of Brooklyn for forty years, and has one son, Luke Bergen, who possesses the military enthusiasm so characteristic of the family.

THE MUNICIPAL HISTORY

OF THE

CITY OF BROOKLYN,

1834-1884.

BY *M. S. S. S.* Esq.

WITH the close of the war of 1812, the little village of Brooklyn, then numbering about 4,500 inhabitants, manifested evident signs of growth and enterprise, which indicated that it was soon to spread beyond its original limits to the beautiful "Heights," above and around it; and that these would, in the process of time, become the site of a large commercial town. It required no particular prescience to foretell that this then unoccupied territory, with its great natural facilities for a harbor, wharves and warehouses, stretching along the eastern shore of the river, would be made available sources of vast wealth and prosperity to the town.

At about the time of which we are writing, the more enterprising part of its citizens began to agitate the question of incorporating the village; but as, in the estimation of many of its citizens, the little town had done well enough for over a century and a half under the rule of the Town of Brooklyn, there was so much opposition to the proposed plan, that it was not until 1816 that the village of Brooklyn became a chartered municipality; therefore, the civic history of Brooklyn commenced sixty-eight years ago.

"At that time the village comprised the area embraced by the East river, District street, (nearly the same as the present Atlantic street), up to Red Hook Lane, and a line drawn from Red Hook Lane to the City Park, and thence along the west side of the navy yard to the river." For eighteen years the village and town of Brooklyn were distinct organizations; the one a chartered village, the other an original town of Kings county, governed like its sister towns in the county. But, in 1834 the town and village of Brooklyn were united under one government, and Brooklyn became a city with a population of 23,310.

The Municipal History of the City of Brooklyn begins properly with the year 1834. For several years previous to that time the village had contained the requisite number of inhabitants to entitle it to be chartered as a city. Efforts to secure its charter were

repeatedly made, but owing to violent opposition they were frustrated. This opposition was from influential persons in the city of New York, whose influence with the legislature was sufficient to thwart all efforts to secure a city charter. Among the most prominent of these were Gideon Lee, Mayor of New York from 1833-34, Myndert Van Schaick and Alpheus Sherman, state senators. In those days a large number of wealthy citizens of New York were owners of tracts of land in the upper part of the city, which had been divided into lots and thrown upon the market for sale; thus creating a combination of vast wealth and influence, headed by Messrs. Lee, Van Schaick and Sherman. The two latter gentlemen, from their position in the senate, were enabled, as we have said, for a long time to defeat any bill brought before the legislature chartering Brooklyn as a city. They were instigated by a desire to make and continue Brooklyn as a mere suburb of New York, fearing that its growth and the development of its landed resources would put them in competition with their landed interests in New York. They knew that the incorporation of Brooklyn would largely promote its growth. Meantime, Brooklyn as a village was singularly hampered in its growth and development; for an instance: it could not open a street—no matter how necessary it might be for the convenience of the public—without the consent of the owners of the land through which it was to pass. There were also other equally embarrassing regulations which retarded its growth.

At length its citizens, wearied and exasperated by this factious opposition to their interests, united in a great meeting or convention, for the purpose of adopting some measure to overcome it, and to agree upon the form of a proper charter.

Hon. John Greenwood was secretary of the convention, and one of a committee to whom the whole matter was referred. To him was committed the duty of drawing a charter, which duty he discharged with singular ability. He attended the session of the next

legislature in the interests of the charter, and notwithstanding the opposition of Senators Van Schaick and Sherman, backed by a strong lobby force, he succeeded in securing the enactment of some portion of the charter; that portion of it enabling Brooklyn to lay out streets where they were necessary, the power to do so being similar to the present authority in such cases. The act incorporating the City of Brooklyn passed both branches of the legislature, and became a law April 8th, 1834. By this act the corporation became known by the name of "The Mayor and Common Council of the City of Brooklyn."

The city was divided into nine wards. What was known as the five districts of the village of Brooklyn, as then laid out, were retained according to their boundaries, but were respectively numbered and designated as wards.

The Legislative Power of the city was vested in a Mayor and a Board of Aldermen, who together formed the Common Council; a majority of the whole number constituting a quorum for the transaction of business. Two aldermen were to be annually elected in each ward. No person but freeholders were eligible to the office of alderman, and no person who had been elected an alderman while acting as such, could be mayor.

The Administrative Power under the First City Charter.—A Common Council met annually after the year 1834, on the first Monday of May of each year and elected a mayor by ballot. Previous to January 1st, 1851, the term of the mayor began May 1st. Since 1851, it has begun with the civil year.

From the organization of the government down to 1822, mayors of cities were appointed by the Governor and the Council of Appointment; from that time to 1840 they were appointed by ballot by the common councils of their respective cities.

An act passed April 13th, 1840, provided for their election by the people in a manner, and at the time, which will hereafter be described.

GEORGE HALL, the first Mayor of Brooklyn, was appointed by the Common Council on the first Monday of May, 1834. The Board of Aldermen who made this appointment,—a board famous as being the first legislative board of the city of Brooklyn—are named in another part of this work. It is proper, however, to say that it consisted of eighteen of the staunch, reliable and prominent citizens of Brooklyn, whose names have passed into the history of the city.

Under the act of incorporation, the Common Council appointed a clerk, attorney, treasurer, street commissioner, a clerk for each market, a city collector, and a number of marshals.

There was authority given the Common Council, which gave a quick impetus to the growth of the city, and tended largely to embellish and beautify it. This was the power to cause all streets, parts of streets,

avenues and squares, within the first seven wards, to be leveled, paved or macadamized, and to cause crosswalks to be made, sewers constructed, and provision made for lighting the streets. The act of incorporation also gave the Common Council power to modify the old fire department of the village, and to procure necessary fire engines.

The Municipal Court of the Village of Brooklyn retained its powers and jurisdiction, enlarged by subsequent acts of the legislature, and the number of judges increased to three.

We have thus given a brief description of the establishment of the municipality of Brooklyn. No event in its history created such demonstrations of almost unbounded joy, as did the receipt of the intelligence of the passage of the act of the legislature under which it was established.

The charter of the city has been subjected to many amendments under the direction of the enlightened, far-seeing and enterprising citizens who have been, from time to time, intrusted with its fiscal and executive affairs, until, it is not too much to say, that the corporation of Brooklyn is one of the most perfect municipalities in the state, if not in the nation.

One of the first and most important changes was made in the city charter by the legislature, March 28th, 1836, by which the rights and privileges of the *firemen* of the city of Albany, and the city of New York, were extended to the city of Brooklyn. The amendment also provided for the appointment, by the Common Council, on the first Monday of May in each year, of a comptroller, to perform such duties and receive such compensation as the Common Council should prescribe. It also authorized the Mayor and Common Council to contract with the stockholders of the New York and Brooklyn Steam Ferry Company, for putting on to said ferry two new and commodious boats, upon such terms as the Common Council could agree with said association.

On April 2d, 1836, the charter was again amended, giving the Common Council control of the common school-houses, school-house sites, and power to raise money for the support of the common schools of the city.

Down to April 27th, 1837, the Common Council was embarrassed by a law limiting their power to raise money for public purposes to \$30,000 yearly, which was quite insufficient to defray the expenses which the public improvements of the city demanded. This difficulty, however, was obviated by a law passed April 27th, 1837, authorizing the sum to be raised for various public purposes to be increased from \$30,000 to \$50,000 annually; also authorizing the Common Council to effect a loan of \$300,000 on the credit of the city.

The city, under its charter, had existed but one year when that instrument was amended in many things, among which was the giving to the Common Council power to prohibit the making of stoops, platforms, bay-

windows, sign-posts or other projections, so as not to intrude upon the public walks, and to regulate the manner of building houses and stores; defining the depth of cellars, so they should not exceed eight feet. The Common Council were also given power to appoint three school trustees in the districts to be laid out, and to define their duties. These changes were made by an act of the legislature, passed April 23d, 1835.

On the 13th of February, 1840, an act passed both branches of the legislature, and became a law, providing for the election, by the people, by ballot, annually, of mayors in all the cities in the state; of course this applied to the city of Brooklyn, depriving the common council of their right to appoint the mayor, and giving that power to the people.

When this law went into operation, Hon. Cyrus P. Smith was Mayor, having been appointed by the Common Council in April, 1839.

On April 14th, 1840, Mr. Smith was elected Mayor by the people, in conformity to the act of the legislature to which we have alluded. He was, therefore, the first mayor elected by the people. At this time Brooklyn contained a population of over 30,000, and was rapidly advancing to that splendid position which at this writing it occupies among the cities of the nation, with a population of 566,689.

On May 26th, 1841, an act passed the legislature largely extending the powers of the Mayor; authorizing him, among other things, to appoint police marshals. This act also gave the Common Council power to divide the city into election districts, and to determine the time of the services of the firemen.

The Municipal Court under the First Charter.—The courts of justice of the city of Brooklyn, from its humblest tribunal to the highest, have always been conducted with that degree of intelligence, that due regard of the rights and privileges of all citizens, and their protection in the proper restriction and punishment of crime, which has elicited just commendation.

These courts will claim our attention as we proceed with the municipal history of Brooklyn. As we have already said, the Municipal Court of the Village of Brooklyn was retained in the city organization by an act of April 3d, 1827, which was in substance as follows:

"The organization of the municipal courts, the proceedings therein, their jurisdiction, and powers of the justices thereof, and all subsequent acts relating to the said court, or the justices thereof, shall be deemed to apply and are made applicable to the city of Brooklyn; and the said court, as organized in and for said village, shall continue as such in and for the city of Brooklyn."

The justice of that court had the power in criminal proceedings, of justices of the peace, elected in the several towns of the State. It was the duty of the said justices, or one of them, to attend, at such time

in the morning, or during such hours in the day, and at such place as the common council should fix, for the purpose of holding their courts. These judicial officers discharged their duties in a manner which reflects credit upon the legal history of the city, subject to some of the laws under which they acted, until the adoption of the present city charter, which, as we shall hereafter see, made many changes in the legal department of the city.

The corporation of the city of Brooklyn continued under these laws and their modifications, with slight changes, until 1850. Then another and nearly a radical change took place in the charter by revision and amendment. This was done under and by virtue of an act passed April 4, 1850.

Among the amendments was one defining the boundaries and civil divisions of the city. Its boundaries were established as follows:

All that part of the county of Kings at present known as the city of Brooklyn, and which is bounded easterly by the townships of Williamsburgh and Bushwick, south by Flatbush and New Utrecht, west by the bay of New York, and north by the East river, shall continue to be a city by the name of Brooklyn, except so much of the present territory of the said city as lies east of the centre line of what is called Division avenue, between the intersection of South street, in the village of Williamsburgh and Flushing avenue, in said city, which territory shall hereafter, upon the passage of this act, belong to and be a part of the village of Williamsburgh, and subject to all laws appertaining to said village.

It was also enacted that "the citizens of this state, from time to time inhabitants within the limits of said city, and the corporation now existing and known by the name of "the Mayor and Common Council of the city of Brooklyn," should be, and continue to be, a corporation by the name of "THE CITY OF BROOKLYN," and should have and employ all the rights, privileges, immunities and franchises heretofore conferred upon it by law.

There existed—recognized by this act—*eleven wards*, into which the city was divided, which several wards, except as otherwise provided, were considered and declared to be towns of the county of Kings, so that the county then really contained eighteen *towns*.

The legislative power of the corporation was vested in a Mayor and Board of Aldermen, who, together, formed the Common Council.

The Board of Aldermen first elected under this act were divided into two classes, one of which was to go out every year. One alderman in each ward formed one class, and the other alderman formed the other class. The Mayor determined, in open board, the aldermen to compose the different classes, and the respective terms of office of each of said classes. The first class to hold one year; and, after the expiration of said year, the term of office of the aldermen elected or said class to be two years; and the said first

class were to act as members of the city court in the trial and disposal of criminal cases and proceedings.

The said aldermen were to receive for their services, when sitting as members of said court, \$3 per day. The second class were to hold office for two years, and were to be supervisors of the county of Kings. The term of office of such aldermen, as supervisors, commenced on the first Tuesday of April succeeding their election, and to continue two years thereafter. The common council were authorized to appoint a clerk, who was to be City Clerk. The act also provided for the election of city officers, and defined their duties. The administrative powers of the corporation were vested in Mayor, Chief of Police, Comptroller, Street Commissioner, Collector of Taxes, and to such other officers as were to be, from time, created by or appointed by virtue of this act.

It was further provided that the Mayor should be elected every two years, and that no person should be eligible to that office unless he had resided in the city five years; that his salary should not be less than \$2,000 per annum, but the Common Council had power to change such salary, provided the change did not take effect during the term of office of the then present incumbent. The Mayor was supervisor *ex-officio* of the city of Brooklyn, possessing all the jurisdiction, and exercising all the powers and authority, in criminal cases, of a justice of the peace of said city. These powers were in addition to any powers which had hitherto been given him. He could receive no fees for services as such justice of the peace, or for his service as supervisor. The act defined the duties of the Mayor, among which was to communicate to the Common Council, at their first meeting in January in each year, and oftener if he should deem it expedient, a general statement of the situation and condition of the city, in relation to its government, finances and improvements, with such recommendations as he might deem proper.

He was required to be vigilant and active in causing the laws to be duly enforced; to exercise a constant supervision over the conduct and acts of all subordinate officers, and to examine into all complaints preferred against them for a violation or neglect of duty. He was given the same authority and power in criminal cases to arrest and commit for examination all offenders, for offences committed within said city against the laws of this state, as a police magistrate or justice of the peace of any of the towns of this state, for the preservation of the peace. He had also power to issue warrants, the same as any of the said justices of the peace. If a vacancy occurred in the office of Mayor, or if he was prevented, by absence from the city, by sickness or any other cause, from attending the duties of his office, the president of the Common Council, or if the said president should be absent or disabled, the president, to be elected *pro tempore*, should act as

Mayor, having all the rights and powers of the mayor during his absence or inability to act.

Comptroller.—The act provided for the election, by the city at large, for a Comptroller, every two years.

Among his duties, he was to render to the Common Council, as often as required, a full and detailed statement of all the receipts and disbursements of the city government from time to time, specifying the amount expended and unexpended on each appropriation made by the Common Council, with the state of each account; together with a general statement of the liabilities and resources of the city, and such other information as was necessary to a full understanding of the financial affairs of the city. He was to receive such salary as the Common Council should determine, and, by consent of the Common Council, he could appoint a deputy comptroller, for whose acts he was responsible.

Street Commissioner under the First Charter.

—The act further provided for the election of a Street Commissioner, to be elected by the city at large every three years, who should perform all such services as the Common Council should direct, in relation to the opening, widening or regulating, grading or paving streets and avenues. He was to be the custodian of all books, papers and maps appertaining to his department. His salary to be fixed by the Common Council.

He could appoint a deputy street commissioner by the consent of the Common Council; he was responsible for all acts of his deputy.

Treasurer.—There was to be a Treasurer, who was to safely keep and disburse, under the direction of the common council, all monies belonging to the city; he was to keep an accurate account of all receipts and payments, and make weekly returns thereof, in such manner as the Common Council should direct. The Common Council made orders for the payment of all monies to be drawn out of the treasury, and no monies could be drawn out of the treasury except in pursuance of such orders appropriating the same, and by warrants signed by the Mayor and Comptroller, and countersigned by the City Clerk or his assistant. Such warrant specified for what purpose the amount therein mentioned was to be paid, the appropriation against which it was drawn, and the date of the ordinance making the same, &c., &c.

Commissioner of Repairs.—There was also a Commissioner of Repairs and Supplies elected by the city at large every three years. He acted under the direction of the Common Council; he had charge of all repairs and supplies of and for the public buildings, wharves and piers belonging to the city; of the pavements, side and cross walks, fire department, lamps, oils and gas, fuel and stationery for the public offices of the city. These were among his important duties, and his salary was fixed by the Common Council.

Corporation Attorney and Counsel.—Before the consolidation with Williamsburgh and Bushwick, the

Common Council appointed a suitable and proper person to be Attorney and Counsel of the Corporation, having the management and control of all the law business of the corporation and the departments thereof, and all the law business in which the city was interested. He drew all leases, deeds and other papers for the city, and was the legal advisor of the Mayor and Common Council, and the several departments of the corporation; he had the management, charge and control of, and conducted all the proceedings necessary in opening, widening, altering or closing streets, avenues, roads, parks or lanes, and all other local improvements of the same kind.

He had power to authorize an attorney or other person to appear for him in his name, for and in behalf of the said corporation, and conduct or defend suits or proceedings; his salary was fixed at \$3,000 per year, to be paid quarterly, exclusive of all disbursements. He was provided apartments in the City Hall, with the necessary furniture, stationery, etc., etc. He could, as has been said, employ an attorney and clerk, for which the common council was to pay a salary not to exceed \$1,500 per annum. The said clerk or attorney held his office for the term of three years.

The official term of the several persons elected in pursuance of this act commenced on the first Monday of January next after their election, and the official term of all persons who should be appointed to any office or place under this act to commence as follows :

1. Such as were required to give security for the performance of their duties, from the time of giving such security and their approval.

2. Such as were not required to give security, from the time of taking and filing their oath of office.

The Treasurer of the city, Comptroller, Street Commissioner, City Surveyor, City Clerk and such other officers, except the Attorney and Counsellor, as the Common Council shall direct, were required, severally, to execute a bond to the corporation, in such penalty as the said Common Council should require, with such sureties as the Common Council should approve, conditioned for the faithful performance of their respective duties, and for accounting and paying over all monies by them respectively received in their official capacities.

Courts of Civil and Criminal Jurisdiction in the City of Brooklyn.—An act of the legislature, passed March 24, 1849, provided for the establishment, in the city of Brooklyn, of courts of civil and criminal jurisdiction, as follows : At the next charter election, to be held in the said city on the first day of May after the passage of said act, and every six years thereafter, a city judge was to be elected, subject to the same responsibilities and removal from office as the county judge. The following were among his duties : The said judge alone, or in case of his absence, inability to attend, or vacancy in said office, the mayor and two aldermen of the said city were empowered to hold a court of civil jurisdiction, to be called "The City Court

of Brooklyn"—a court of record, with jurisdiction extending to the following actions :

Jurisdiction.—Sec. 1. To the actions enumerated in section 103 of the code of procedure, when the cause of action shall have arisen, or the subject of the action shall be situated, within the city.

Sec. 2. To all other actions where all the defendants shall reside, or be personally served with the summons within the said city.

Sec. 3. To actions against corporations created under the laws of this state, and transacting their business within the said city, or established by law therein.

Sec. 3. The said court shall be held once in each month, and shall begin on the first Monday thereof, and may be continued for four weeks.

Sec. 4. The city courts possess the power and authority in relation to actions in said court, and the process and proceedings therein, as are possessed by the supreme court in relation to actions pending in the supreme court; and all laws regulating the practice of the supreme court, and the course of procedure therein, shall, as far as practicable, apply to, and be binding upon the said city court; and the said city court shall have power to review all its decisions, and to grant new trials.

Sec. 5. Every judgment of the said City Court docketed, and a lien in the like manner, and to the same extent as judgments recovered in the supreme court; and the said City Court has the same power over the docket of its judgments in the office of any county clerk, and over such county clerk in respect to the same, as for the time being may be possessed by the Supreme Court in respect to the dockets of judgments in the Supreme Courts.

Sec. 6. An appeal may be taken from any judgment or final determination of said City Court, and from any intermediate order, involving the merits and necessarily affecting the judgment, to the Supreme Court at a general term thereof; and all provisions of law relative to appeals from the Supreme Court to the Court of Appeals, shall apply to appeals from said City Court.

By an act passed March 25th, 1850, the foregoing Sec. 6 was amended so as to read after the words "to the Supreme Court at a general term thereof; and all provisions of law relative to appeals from the Supreme Court to the Court of Appeals, shall apply to appeals from said City Court," as follows :

All provisions of law relative to appeals from courts of inferior jurisdiction shall apply to appeals from the said City Court.

Sec. 7. There shall be a clerk of said court, to be appointed by said court, who shall be *ex officio* a commissioner of deeds for said city, with power to take the satisfaction of judgments in said court, to be recorded in any county in which such judgment may be docketed.

By an amendment of the act establishing this court, passed March 28th, 1850, the clerk of said court was

given power to appoint a deputy, who possesses, in the absence of the clerk from his office, all his powers and performs all his duties. Among the other powers of the said court, it was to devise its own seal at the expense of the city, and a description thereof, attested by the clerk, was to be deposited with the secretary of state.

By an act of the legislature, passed March 28th, 1850, the expense of providing said seal was made a charge against the county of Kings. There were several other legislative enactments of more or less importance touching the charter of the city, down to the year 1853, when another great event in the municipal history of the city took place. This was the

Consolidation of the City of Brooklyn with Williamsburg and Bushwick, into one municipal government, by an act of the legislature passed July 18, 1853. The act provided for the appointment of fifteen commissioners, seven of whom were citizens of Brooklyn, appointed by its Common Council; five citizens of Williamsburg appointed by the Common Council of that city; three from the town of Bushwick, appointed by the supervisors and justices of that town. These commissioners were to be appointed on or before the first Monday of August, 1853.

Having been duly appointed they met at the Supervisor's room in Brooklyn on the 2d Monday of August, 1853. With power to send for persons and papers, they proceeded to devise a plan for a new municipal corporation, to include the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburg and the town of Bushwick, which in due time was completed, and according to law was published for twenty days previous to the general election in November, 1853, in all the dailies in the county of Kings. At that election the plan was submitted to the people and duly ratified by them: Whereupon the commissioners proceeded to incorporate the said plan into an act for consolidation to be submitted to the next legislature. This was done, and the act passed that legislature and became a law. The act was amended March 28, 1855, in regard to fire-wardens, and in empowering the aldermen, by and with the consent of the Mayor, to appoint policemen and lamp-lighters.

We should have said that by an act of the legislature passed June 3, 1853, provisions were made for supplying the city with water. The act provided for leaving the matter for the decision of the people; if a vote in favor of the measure was passed, the Common Council were to appoint five commissioners who should have power to supply contracts, etc., etc., for completing the work. The people having voted favorably to the measure, the commissioners were appointed, contracts let, the work begun and, as will be seen in another part of this history (page 584), was completed.

By an act of April 15, 1853, provisions were made for the laying out of *Montague Park*. By an act passed April 5, 1856, a law was enacted by the legislature for

laying out "Mount Prospect Park Square." The courts of civil and criminal jurisdiction in the city of Brooklyn, were established by an act of the legislature, passed March 24th, 1849, and amended by an act passed March 28, 1850, which was subsequently amended by other acts, to which we shall briefly refer from time to time in the progress of this history.

On July 18, 1853, an act to incorporate *Lefferts' Park Association* passed the legislature of the state. Its incorporators were Nathaniel P. Hossack, John C. Riker, Roswell Graves, Samuel D. Willmot, and E. J. Danforth. The said park was bounded by Tompkins avenue on the west, Throop avenue on the east, Gates on the south, and Quincy street on the north. The incorporators of the *Montague Park*, to which we have already referred, were J. H. Prentice, E. J. Barlow, S. B. Chittenden and James Humphry. This park includes all that tract of land of Brooklyn, "beginning at a point where the westerly line of Columbia street, if continued, would strike the northerly line of Remsen street; running thence easterly on the northerly line of Remsen street continued, to the easterly line of Furman street; thence northerly, along the easterly line of Furman street, to a point distant 160 feet north of the northerly line of Pierrepont street, continued to Furman street; thence easterly at right angles to Furman street to the westerly line of Columbia street, and on a continuation of said line, to the place of beginning. Capital stock, \$125,000, with privilege to increase the same to a sum not exceeding \$200,000."*

We have now briefly traced the growth of the city of Brooklyn from a village, to the proportions of a rapidly increasing city, from its first charter through all the various acts and their amendments, down to June 28, 1873, when its charter was amended so as to form, with the exception of a few amendments, the present municipality of the City of Brooklyn; which is divided into twenty-five wards, the present bounds of which will be found delineated on the map of the city, which accompanies this volume.

Having given the municipal history of Brooklyn down to the period of its consolidation with Williamsburg and Bushwick, we propose to give some attention to the early *municipal buildings* of the village and city, with their history to the present time; and a brief description of the present municipal government of the city, its various departments, its legislative, ministerial, and judicial organization.

Early Municipal Buildings.—In the year 1878, a committee, consisting of five aldermen, viz.: John French, *chairman*; F. B. Fisher, Geo. W. Williams, John Dreyer, and Daniel O'Reilly, were appointed to take charge of the construction of municipal department buildings. In June, 1878, this committee sub-

* This was one of the abortive attempts to secure a portion of the Heights for public use and recreation—See chapter on *Parks*, page 596.—EDITOR.

mitted a very able, useful and interesting report upon the earlier and late public buildings of the city of Brooklyn, from which we shall make some extracts.

Touching the public buildings erected in former years in Brooklyn, "it was found," said the report, "that the official records contain but little information concerning the construction of the City Hall and other public structures; and many of the proceedings of the Common Council, at the period when the city hall was erected, were never recorded. The press, in those days, in marked contrast to the present, scarcely mentioned the fact of the erection of the building, or chronicled the incidents connected therewith, though they were of a stirring and exciting character. It was, therefore, deemed advisable to rescue from oblivion, while some of the participants were yet living, as many facts concerning the city hall as were to be secured at so remote a period from its construction. The valuable information we have obtained has only been accumulated after much research among musty books and documents, and many interviews with some of the men who were actively connected with public affairs fifty or more years ago. Among these may be mentioned Hon. Henry C. Murphy; Hon. Samuel S. Powell; Hon. Stephen Haynes; Alden J. Spooner, Esq.; D. Lawrence, Esq.; Hon. Francis B. Stryker, and Silas Ludlam, Esq.

"Much credit is due John Yates, Esq., for valuable aid in compiling and arranging facts and figures; and, also, to J. M. Masterton, Esq., of Mount Vernon, N.Y., a son of one of the contractors for the marble work of the City Hall, and himself the contractor for the marble work for the Municipal Building."

Until its incorporation as a city, the municipal government of Brooklyn consisted of a president and a board of five trustees. At first, and for several years, its capitol building was a general retail store of not very large dimensions, owned by Mr. Evert Barkaloo, not far from the present ferry house, opposite the *Brooklyn Eagle* building. In 1825-6, the Apprentices' Library building was erected, in which the meetings of the board of trustees were held, and where all business pertaining to the affairs of the village was transacted.

After the incorporation of the city, the Common Council held its sessions there until the completion of the City Hall; but the Mayor, Clerk of the Common Council and Street Commissioner, had their offices in what was known as Hall's Exchange Buildings, a brick building, three stories high, on the south-west corner of Cranberry and Fulton streets. In the great fire of 1848 it was destroyed. In these buildings the city government offices were held until 1836, when the city had increased to such proportions that these buildings were totally insufficient. During that year the city corporation purchased the Apprentices' Library Building, paying therefor the sum of \$11,000. It was an attractive brick structure, of two stories and a basement, on the south-

west corner of Henry and Cranberry streets. Its corner-stone was laid on July 4, 1825, by the illustrious Lafayette, then the nation's guest. The imposing ceremonies which attended the placing this corner-stone in its appropriate place, with the other proceedings of that day, formed an historic epoch in the annals of Brooklyn.

The city having thus become the owner of the Apprentices' Library building (that organization having been merged in the Brooklyn Institute, on Washington street), erected an additional building in the rear of the library, and gave the whole the name of the City Buildings, to which the offices of the Mayor, Clerk of the Common Council and Street Commissioner were removed in 1836-37.

Besides the sessions of the village trustees, those of the Circuit Court, Court of Common Pleas and the Municipal Court of Brooklyn were held in the Apprentices' Library. In the basement, at the same time, were the offices of the County Clerk and the Brooklyn Savings Bank.

It was in one of the rooms in this building that HON. HENRY C. MURPHY, in the year 1834, began the practice of his profession.

Between the years 1835-6, the population of Brooklyn had increased from 8,800 to 25,000.

The removal into the city buildings was only temporary. Two years previous—in July, 1834—a meeting of the citizens, at which Mayor Hall presided, took place, at which a resolution was adopted to purchase the triangular piece of land on which the City Hall now stands. It contained one and one-half acres, and cost the city \$52,909.*

The City Hall.—The land having thus been secured, the corner-stone of a City Hall was laid, with appropriate ceremonies, April 28, 1836, by the Mayor, JONATHAN TROTTER. Constructed of marble, and planned on a magnificent scale, from the designs of Calvin Pollard, of the city of New York, it was intended to cover nearly the whole of the land of which the city had become the purchaser.

Its dimensions were 269 feet on Fulton street, 250 feet on Court street, and 222 feet on Joralemon street; of a triangular form, it was to have had porticos on the three fronts, with columns each 36 feet, 6 inches high,

*As an important item in the municipal history of the city, we give transcripts of the deeds and releases of dower, by which the city became the lawful grantees of the said piece of land.

Edward Remsen and wife to the mayor, etc., of the city of Brooklyn. Deed dated May 1st, 1835; recorded in liber 49, page 490, May 16, 1835; acknowledged May 16, 1835; consideration, \$20,965.

Sarah Remsen, guardian of Matilda F. Remsen, to the mayor, etc., of the city of Brooklyn. Deed dated May 1, 1835; recorded in liber 49, page 496; acknowledged May 16, 1835; consideration, \$20,302.50.

Hezekiah B. Pierrepont and wife to the mayor, etc., of the city of Brooklyn. Deed dated May 19, 1835; recorded liber 50, page 23, May 20, 1835; acknowledged May 19, 1835; consideration, \$11,590.20.

Sarah Remsen to the mayor, etc., of the city of Brooklyn. Release of dower dated May 1, 1835; recorded liber 49, page 495, May 16, 1835; acknowledged May 9, 1835; consideration, \$1.

ornamented with a capital of the Grecian order, and resting on a pedestal base 17 feet in height. Surmounting the angles, it was designed to have domes, and rising from the center of the building a tower 120 feet high. In its spacious rooms all of the public offices and courts would have been accommodated. Its cost was estimated at from \$750,000 to \$1,000,000.

The corner-stone was laid, as we have seen, April 28, 1836, and the walls to the first story were erected; but, in 1837, the memorable panic occurred, and caused the work to be suspended, and the walls were covered.

The total expenses down to that time, including cost of site, was \$184,494. Before another attempt to continue the work was made, a meeting of the Common Council took place in April, 1838, at which Alderman Thorn introduced a resolution to the effect that, "as upwards of \$150,000 had already been spent on the building scarcely raised above the ground, it was therefore inexpedient to build a City Hall upon such an expensive plan; and, that all further work on said building be discontinued; and, that it be referred to the committee on public lands and buildings to ascertain what price could be obtained for the materials on the ground, and upon what terms the contracts for the then present city hall could be annulled." This resolution was laid on the table; but there is no record showing the subsequent action of the board in regard to it.

In the meantime, the population of the city continued to increase to a most surprising degree; so that in 1840 it was 36,233, and in 1845 it was 59,573, and the municipal offices were still in the city buildings. In 1844, the Common Council, incited by the insecurity of the city buildings, directed the committee on lands and buildings to procure suitable plans and estimates for the erection of a City Hall, to be located on the public property at the intersection of Court and Fulton streets, at a cost not exceeding \$75,000. The committee procured these plans, but at a subsequent meeting this resolution was rescinded. The matter of the erection of a City Hall continued to engross the attention of the common council and the public mind. Litigations followed for breach of contract etc., etc.

On the 24th of November, 1845, however, the Common Council resolved to apply to the legislature for authority to raise \$100,000 to meet the payments on account of contracts for the new building; and at a meeting held on October 2, 1848, the board made a similar application for authority to raise \$50,000 additional; both of these, we believe, were successful. In 1845, the walls of the building which we described were demolished, and the erection of the present City Hall was begun. It is a three-story and basement building, 175 feet long, the rear running parallel with Joralemon street, and the sides on Fulton and Court streets having a width of 100 feet. At the close of 1848, the building was so far completed that the municipal offices began to be transferred to it. At that time, the

population of the city had increased to upwards of 90,000, and the business of the city government departments was very largely augmented. The City Hall was finally finished in the autumn of 1849, during the administration of Mayor FRANCIS B. STRYKER. At that time, the population of the city was 100,000, divided into nine wards, comprising the whole of what is now known as the western district. The total expense of the edifice was \$715,000. (A view of the City Hall will be found on the illustrated title-page of this history.)

The Court-House.—We have seen in another part of this work the history of the various court-houses in the county of Kings, from the first court-house at Gravesend to those erected at Flatbush; and have described the various places in which the supreme and county courts were held after the removal of the county seat to Brooklyn.

Upon the completion of the City Hall in 1849, rooms for holding the various courts of record in the county were prepared in the City Hall, to which they had been removed from the Apprentices' Library building early in the autumn of that year, and where they were held until 1865.

In 1855, when the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburg and the town of Bushwick were united under one municipal government, the population of the city, thus enlarged, exceeded 200,000. With this large and increasing population there was a heavy increase of legal business, which seemed to enlarge beyond the rapid increase of population, so that the court-rooms in the City Hall were quite inadequate; and, for several years, it was apparent that the erection of a court-house with sufficient dimensions for the public business was absolutely demanded. Accordingly, as far back as June 1853, an act was passed by the legislature giving authority to borrow \$100,000 for the erection of a court-house. But the usual delays, embarrassments and contentions incident to the erection of a great public building prevented its erection, and it was not till May 20, 1862, that its corner-stone was laid. Three years elapsed after this before the edifice was completed; and in March, 1865, the Supreme Court, the County Court, City Court, Court of Sessions, the Supervisors and other county officers were located therein. The cost of the site and the building was \$549,636.43.

Although nearly twenty years have elapsed since the Court-house building was thus occupied, and the population of the city has grown to over 600,000, with a proportionate increase in the other towns in the county it is still the seat of justice for this great population and the county of Kings, with ample room and accommodations. Here the general term of the Supreme Court, the Circuit Court, the Court of Oyer and Terminer, the Surrogate's Court, the general and trial terms of the City Court, the County Court and the Court of Sessions have ample and convenient rooms. Here too are the Register's office, the County Clerk's office, the Super-

visor's room, the Grand Jury room, Petit Juror's room, the Law Library, District Attorney's office, the Sheriff's office, office of the Clerk of the Board of Supervisors, the office of the Commissioners of Jurors, the office of the County Auditor, County Treasurer's office, and other rooms for the accommodation of the public.

Although the Court-house may not impress one with any grandness of its architecture, it has an imposing appearance. Solidity and durability are marked features in its construction; it seems to have taken possession of the ground on which it stands for many generations to come. Passing through its high-arched, solid stone halls, or entering its spacious, well-lighted, well-ventilated rooms, one feels that the mutations of time will fail to dislodge justice and her adjuncts from possession of this building, which is indeed a credit to the city of Brooklyn and the county of Kings. (A view of the County Court-house will be found on the illustrated title-page of this history.)

The Municipal Departments.—"For a long time previous to the year 1875," says the report to which we have alluded, "the several municipal departments were flitting from place to place in search of more room in which to transact their part of the public business. Prior to 1866 the headquarters of the *Police Department* were confined to rooms afterwards occupied by the first district court, at the south-west corner of the city hall basement. In 1866, they were removed to the building at the north-west corner of Washington and Johnson streets, where they remained till 1871, when they were removed to a larger building at the south-west corner of Court and Livingston streets, where they remained till 1878, when the central office of the department was located in the Municipal Building.

The Bureau of Excise.—This was an independent department in 1872-3, with offices on the south corner of Myrtle avenue and Fulton street. By the amended charter of 1873, the department was made a *bureau*, subordinate to the Police Commissioners. The bureau removed with them from the corner of Livingston and Court streets to the municipal buildings.

The Health Offices of the city. These, soon after the erection of the Court-house, occupied, for a brief period, the first floor, east side of the Court-house building. They were removed to a large frame house on Washington street, just north of the old police headquarters. Subsequently, in May, 1873, when the Health Department was organized, it was removed to more suitable premises at the north-west corner of Court and Livingston streets, where it remained till about the first of March, 1878, when it was removed to the Municipal Building.

The City Treasury.—Until 1873, the city had no accommodation for its Treasurer. In that year, on the re-organization of the Brooklyn Trust Company, rooms were provided for the City Treasurer on the north-west corner of Court and Joralemon streets. In 1878, rooms

were prepared for the City Treasurer in the City Hall, to which he removed that year.

Department of Audit.—The Auditor's office was removed in 1874, from the City Hall to a room adjoining the City Treasury Department on Court street, but it was again located in the City Hall.

Department of Parks.—The Park Commission as at present constituted, or nearly so, was appointed in 1860. Its first offices were in the Court-house; they were removed to the old police head-quarters, the building on the corner of Court and Livingston streets. In 1871, the commission removed to the 3-story brick building on the south-west corner of Schermerhorn and Court streets, where it remained till June, 1878, when it was removed to the City Hall.

Department of Arrears.—The amended charter of 1873 created a Department of Arrears from a bureau of the Department of Collections. From 1873 to 1878, the department occupied offices on Court street, adjoining the Treasurer's and Auditor's department. In 1878 it was removed to the Municipal Building.

Board of Elections.—By a special act of the legislature passed in April, 1873, the appointment of a Board of Elections for the city was directed to be made. The offices of the board since that year were in Montague street, between Court and Clinton. About June 1, 1878, they were removed to the City Hall.

From the foregoing description of the places assigned for the various offices of the municipal government, it will be seen that the whole of this department must have been greatly embarrassed by the system of occupying separate buildings for the transaction of the public business of the city. Even before 1875 the city paid annually \$17,600 rentals for the municipal department. So greatly did this embarrassment increase that some remedy became imperative. Early in 1873, a plan was prepared, under the direction of the Board of City Works, for the enlargement of the City Hall, for the convenience of the municipal department. This plan provided for the adding of wings on each of the east and west faces, to the depth of the building, covering the space from street to street, giving a front of 232 feet, with pavilions over each wing front and rear, and a mansard roof over the entire building, including the wings — making the building four stories in height, arranged to utilize the roof story. The plans, prepared by J. W. Adams, as chief engineer, although admirable, in all their detail, were considered to involve too much expense to be feasible for the present time. It is not improbable, however, that the great growth of the city, will, in time, cause this plan to be in some sense adopted.

The Municipal Building.—During the year 1876, preliminary steps were taken by the Common Council for the erection of a separate Municipal Building. The location of such a building became a question of paramount importance, leading to much public

discussion in the city papers, and by the city generally. The location first suggested was on Adams street, between Myrtle avenue and Johnson street. The project was officially acted upon in the Common Council, on the 28th of February, 1876, when Alderman Francis B. Fisher introduced a resolution, for the appointment of a special committee of three, to negotiate with the Supervisors (the County having an interest in the title of the said plot), for the purchase of the same.

This committee, after a conference with a committee of the Supervisors, made a report adverse to the plot of land we have described. But the public mind had decided upon the erection of a municipal building, and prompt measures were adopted to subserve that purpose. The city charter did not provide any means for such an expenditure, except by placing the amount necessary in the tax-levy, which was restricted to annual amounts inadequate for the yearly outlay of the building. Recourse was therefore had to legislative enactment to the city to raise the necessary funds. The location selected was that piece of land belonging to the County of Kings, bounded on the east by the court-house and the brick wall fencing in the grounds where the Court-house now stands; on the south by Livingston street and the Polytechnic Institute; on the west by the lands of the Polytechnic Institute and the Dutch Reformed church, and on the north by Joralemon street.

The deeds, by which the Supervisors transferred the interest of the county of Kings, were filed in the Register's office on the 31st of May, 1876. This transfer was not effected without considerable difficulty, which rendered special acts of the legislature necessary; especially as there were some members of the Board of Supervisors who were reluctant to advise the county to part with so valuable a piece of property.

The city properly expressed its obligation to the committee of the Board of Supervisors and the then Supervisor-at-Large, James Howell, and other gentlemen of the board, for their zealous efforts in behalf of securing these lands. This location being in close proximity to the City Hall, and easy of access, was peculiarly eligible. The next step was to procure proper legislative enactment, authorizing the city of Brooklyn to erect a public building to be used for municipal purposes, and to acquire land therefor for the uses of the city. At that time William C. DeWitt was Corporation Counsel; to him fell the duty of drafting an act, which would empower the city to erect such building and to acquire and hold such lands, "in such manner and under such supervision as the Common Council may determine, at an expense not exceeding \$200,000, exclusive of the cost of said land; and for such purposes the financial officers of said city were authorized to pay out of any monies in the city treasury the cost and expenses of said building and of the said land, for the purpose of reimbursing the treasury

of the city;" the proper authorities were directed to insert said amount in the tax levy to be laid on the property in the said city during the years 1876, 1877 and 1878, in three equal annual installments. The said bill was admirably drawn, meeting the approbation of the citizens of Brooklyn. The committee having the matter in charge acted with much discretion and ability. Immediately after the passage of the act, three architects of the city, of high standing, Messrs. John Mumford, W. B. Ditmars, and Arthur Crooks, were consulted, and, upon their report and advice, the special committee, under the power vested in them, invited six architects to compete with plans for the buildings. These were Messrs. Mundell, Crooks, Ditmars, Morse, Mumford, and Morrel, residents of Brooklyn. Subsequently the committee invited Messrs. Eisenach, Cornwall, and Schultz & Steinmetz, also Brooklyn architects, to become competitors.

On the 12th of June, 1876, the committee made a full report of their proceedings, with recommendations concerning the proportions of the building, the material, the interior arrangement, and the disposition of the departments. They recommended that the new building be 100 feet front; 150 feet in depth; of three stories and mansard roof; of brick, with marble or iron front; nearly fire-proof, with fire-proof vaults for the keeping of records, maps and other valuable property of the city. There were other recommendations as to the manner of occupying the different floors.

After considerable discussion, and after G. W. Williams, of the 18th ward, and George Jennison, of the 24th ward, were added to the committee, the contract for the excavation for the cellar on the land for the new building was awarded to Thomas Glevey, the lowest bidder, at thirty-five cents a cubic yard; the work to be commenced on the 21st of June, 1876, and completed in twenty working days. This work was done according to contract. All other contracts entered into by the special committee were required to be executed under the seal of the city, by his honor, the mayor.

On June 21st, 1876, by formal invitation of the Committee on Ceremonies, the Mayor, Board of Aldermen, heads of municipal departments, and the officers thereof; the members of the Board of Supervisors, the county officers, and the public generally, were present at the ceremonies accompanying the breaking of ground for the new municipal building.

After the customary turning over of some sods of earth by the mayor and by Hon. John French, the president of the Board of Aldermen and Chairman of the Building Committee, addresses were made by the Mayor, President French, Corporation Counsel Wm. C. De Witt, Supervisor Clarke and other officials.

Next in order was the selection of architects' plans for the building; eight of the architects presented their plans, which, on the 28th of June, 1876, were reported to the Board of Aldermen. Those of John Mumford

Wm. B. Ditmars and Arthur Crooks were selected as being equally desirable. The matter laid over until a special meeting of the Board of Aldermen, held August 14, 1876, when John Mumford and Wm. B. Ditmars were appointed as *joint*-architects for the new municipal building, at a total salary of \$5,000 for the entire work.

This combination of architects proved very successful. Two entirely new plans were prepared; complete harmony prevailed, proving the selection to have been a peculiarly fortunate one. The skill and taste displayed; the economy shown in every branch of the work, and the fidelity with which they have secured a proper performance of labor, earned for them the gratitude of the public. The architectural beauty and finish of the exterior of the building, and its adaptation of the interior to the purposes of its erection, are highly creditable.

On the 13th of the November following, Michael Dady was appointed, by the Common Council, inspector of the building during its construction, at a salary of \$120 per month, from January 1, 1877; and his ample fitness for the position proved a source of reliance and satisfaction to the committee. After fourteen months' service he resigned to accept another trust; and thereafter, until the completion of the building, Alderman French gave his entire time to the general supervision of the work.

On the 2d of October, 1876, bids were invited for the several branches of the work; and the committee found it necessary to modify the plans so as to bring the cost of the building below the cost of \$200,000. On the 23d of October, 1876, contracts were awarded for the construction of the building, as follows: mason work, W. & T. Lamb, Brooklyn, \$60,729; iron work, D. Y. Saxtan, Brooklyn, \$35,034; nine thousand iron anchors, D. D. Boyce, Brooklyn, \$540; marble work, John W. Masterton, New York, \$28,200; plumbing and gas-fitting, James Harley, Brooklyn, \$4,943; carpenter work, John Fallon, Brooklyn, \$37,692.

Each of these parties gave satisfactory sureties in the penal sum of 50 per cent. of the amount of their respective bids, for the faithful performance of their contracts. They were drawn by corporation counsel De Witt, and executed by his honor the Mayor, on behalf of the common council. The time fixed in these contracts for the completion of the building, ready for occupancy, was February 1, 1878. On December 26, 1876, the contract for heating and ventilating the building was awarded to Messrs. Jamer, Jacobs & Co., of New York, for the sum of \$11,330.

In his annual message for 1877, his honor, Mayor Frederick A. Schroeder, said: "The new Municipal Building is under contract and will be ready for occupation about the 1st of January, 1878. It will be an ornament to the city, and is admirably arranged to meet a want which has long been felt. It will be

entirely fire-proof, and the appropriation of \$200,000 heretofore made is ample for its completion." As soon as the weather permitted in the spring of 1877, the contractors began forwarding the work. Steady and faithful progress was made by each contractor until the completion, which was practically effected on April 15, 1878, though the building was not formally accepted until a few weeks later.

There was in the process of erecting this building the usual strife, the usual mixture of political prejudice and desire of political preferment and aggrandizement, that always find their way in the history of the erection of most public buildings. Still, the work proceeded with little interruption; perhaps never was the details of the erection of a public building of this magnitude more carefully scrutinized than were these.

On the 6th of September, 1877, Alderman Murtha offered a resolution, which was unanimously adopted, by which a special committee of five members of the Board of Aldermen was appointed to investigate the manner of the execution of the contracts of the new Municipal Building, with power to send for persons and papers. This committee consisted of C. L. Burnett, James T. Easton, David Acker and F. W. Phillips. After many meetings and the most searching investigations, and the intervention of other examiners, the committee, on December 24th, 1877, reported favorably upon the general work; stating that it compared favorably with the work on any other building of a like character in this country, both in manner of construction and the economy with which it was done.

"We believe," says the report, "that the city's interests have been well considered by the committee of this Common Council in charge of the construction, and that they have performed their part of the work honestly, faithfully and intelligently, and that they are entitled to the thanks of this Common Council, and of the city."

On the 4th of February, 1878, the building was so nearly completed that the landlords, or the agents of buildings occupied by the various municipal departments, were notified that they would not be required by the city after April 30, 1878, provisions having been made for the said departments in the new municipal department building, and in the city hall. The entire cost of construction of the building was \$199,979.48. (A view of the Municipal Building will be found on the illustrated title-page of this history.) We have already given the dimensions of the plot upon which the building stands.

The dimensions of the building are as follows: One hundred and one feet and one and one-half inches on Joralemon street; 148 feet on westerly line; 163 feet, 6 inches on the easterly line; 100 feet across the rear, with four stories and a cellar; the fourth story, mansard roof. Height of stories: First story, 18 feet in the clear; second story, 16 feet, 6 inches; third story, 15 feet, 6 inches; fourth story, 18 feet, to deck of roof.

It is in the Renaissance style of the French and Italian schools, with towers at each angle, and a center pavilion, the towers projecting 1 foot, 6 inches, and having a width of 14 feet, returning on east and west sides; the pavilion center projecting 4 feet, 6 inches, being 30 feet, 8 inches in width, with the center of the same broken with an 8-inch projection, 12 feet, 6 inches wide. The small towers are surmounted by broken segment cornices, ornamental dormers with pediments and hood with crestings, and mansard roof with ornamental crestings and flagstaffs sixty feet high. The decks of the towers are 84 feet above curb. The center pavilion is surmounted by a broken Mansard roof, main cornices as above. Ornamental deck cornices and a dome roof with finial, the highest point being 135 feet above curb. The entrances, three in number, are through the center or pavilion, with granite steps and platforms, the central entrance being 7 feet and those each side 5 feet wide; over the central entrance is a portico projecting 6 feet, with carved and moulded columns and pilasters, with raised bands, volutes and moulded bases, and granite pedestal bases. The columns are surmounted with moulded architrave, panelled ceiling, modillion cornice and Corinthian balustrade, panelled and moulded pedestals with ornamental urns, and stone roof with windows of center pavilion extending to said roof. The granite steps to entrance extend into an inner vestibule, the run being broken by two platforms of 4 and 6 feet each.

The outer entrances are secured by fancy wrought iron gates opening inward into the main vestibule through inner vestibule doors, which swing both ways with a Buckman patent spring hinge, and plate glass in upper panels. When in principal vestibule, which is 15x24, the passage is through under the arcade of same. This is supported by two 14-inch ornamental columns and two pilasters, from which arches are sprung, handsomely moulded and finished with architraves and key-stones. The passage is from thence to lobby under dome, 24x24 feet, which is lighted from roof with well openings in each floor above, around which are placed ornamental iron rails with fancy newel posts and a double-hipped galvanized iron dome for skylight and ventilation. Passing on through the center arch, which is 10 feet wide (elliptic), the principal stairs are located, occupying a space, with corridors between, of 28x39 feet, on each side of which is a flight of iron stairs 5 feet, 6 inches wide, with two platforms to each leading to each story; each lighted overhead in the roof by a skylight, 4x10 feet, to each well or cylinder, which is 3 feet wide. At foot of stairs on main corridor are placed ornamental iron newels, 1 foot, 6 inches square and 6 feet high, upon which are placed bronze standard newel lights. Under these stairs are entrances by stairways to the basement, from corridors and tax collector's office to searchers' room in basement. The balance of the corridors which extend through the rear of the building, are 12 feet wide, from which large double doors open to the various departments. At the head of the principal stairs, and passing right or left of the division walls, towards the front, are private corridors leading to the private stairways for the use of the departments and divisions of same, which occupy portions of the several floors: the walls on each floor under dome have circular corners. The first story corridor extends through, with an entrance on rear, with vestibule doors. At the center, on the west side of the building, is a tower 22 feet wide, 8 feet projection, surmounted with mansard roof, the deck of which is 88 feet above the sidewalk. The foundation walls of this building are started 10 feet below the curb."

In the first story, on each side of the center arch, are placed the following tablets, which are of black marble, with gilt lettering:

COMMENCED—1876.

Mayor,
FREDERICK A. SCHROEDER.

Erected by the Common Council under the direction of

Aldermen
JOHN FRENCH,
FRANCIS B. FISHER,
GEORGE W. WILLIAMS,
GEORGE JENNISON,
JAMES DONOVAN.

Architects,
JOHN MUMFORD,
WILLIAM B. DITMARS.

Inspector,
MICHAEL J. DADY.

Completed—1878.

CONTRACTORS:

Mason,
WM. & T. LAMB, JR.

Marble,
JOHN M. MASTERTON.

Iron,
D. Y. SEXTON.

Carpenter,
JOHN FALLON.

Heating and Ventilation,
JAMER, JACOBS & CO.

Plumbing and Gasfitting,
JAMES HARLEY.

1876.

1878.

Over these tablets, in panels immediately under each, and to the line of the abacus of the pilasters are placed white marble tablets, with gilt letters, as follows:

Tablet in Main Corridor.

MUNICIPAL DEPARTMENT
BUILDING.

May 1, 1878.

Special Legislative Act.

Tablet in Main Corridor.

COST OF CONSTRUCTION,
\$197,979.48.

May 1, 1878.

Appropriation, \$200,000.

How the Building is Occupied.—*Cellar.*—Contains boilers and engine room, store-rooms for Board of Health, Bureau of Streets and Board of City Water Works; Police drill-room, searcher's room; Tax department, etc.

First Story.—Occupied by Tax Collector (including the assessment room, bill room, cashier's department, the collector's and deputies' private offices, the Registrar of Arrears (public and private offices), the map room (fire-proof), the Registrar of Water Rates, cashier's department (fire and burglar proof vault), etc.

Second Story.—Occupied by City Works, secretaries, two commissioners, chief clerk's room, waiting room, board room, president's room, store-room and accountant's room. Board of Health as follows: registrar's public and private offices, secretary's room, fire and burglar proof vault, vaccinating room, board room, waiting room, president's room, office of permits and complaints, inspector's room, Sanitary Superintendent's room and Counsel to the Board; Superintendent of Police detectives' private and public room, inspector's room, waiting room, superintendent's room, telegraph room, battery room and work room, sergeants' and muster rooms. Board of Assessors—General office, president's room and board room, etc.

Third Floor.—Board of City Works, chief engineer's department, bureau of repairs and construction, purveyor's department, etc.; bureau of streets and supplies, department of police and excise, etc.

Fourth Floor.—West sidewholly occupied by Police Department as follows: drill captain's room, two sleeping rooms for detectives, fire marshall and boiler inspector, surgeon's room off corridor in front, reporters' room on east side.

The first *telephone* used for journalistic purposes was placed in the telegraph room of the board of police, in the new building, by the private enterprise of the *Brooklyn Daily Eagle* and *Union-Argus*, on April 20, 1878. On the 20th of June, 1878, the department being in full occupation, the building was thrown open to public inspection. Four days later, on June 24th, occurred the first disaster to the building, from the breaking of ground down to that time. A tremendous explosion shook the building, the city hall, court-house and other buildings in the neighborhood, reverberating through the city like an awful clap of thunder. This accident was caused by the carelessness of a gas-fitter employed in making some alterations in a vault on the third floor, by which the gas had been allowed to escape into the vault from 5 p.m. of the previous day until 9.30 a.m. of the 24th, when a clerk entering the vault to procure a book which had been called for, struck a match—and a fearful explosion followed, killing Mr. Oliver S. Vincent, a searcher of real estate titles; seriously injuring Wm. F. Code, a stamp clerk in the Tax Office, and inflicting damage on several other persons; as well as doing immense damage to the vault and adjoining rooms. This explosion, however, fully tested the strength and perfection of the building.

Having briefly described the public buildings of the municipality of Brooklyn, we shall give, in a condensed form, a history of

The Legislative and Administrative Powers of the Corporation of the City, under its charter, passed June 28, 1873, and the various amendments thereto, with amendments down to and including 1877.

The legislative power of said corporation is vested in a board of aldermen, called the Common Council.

The Common Council.—The said charter and said amendments declares that, on and after the first Monday in January, 1876, the Common Council shall consist of one alderman, to be elected from each ward of the city; that there shall be elected at the general election to be held in the year 1875, and again in 1876, and at each election every two years after the election of 1876, by the electors respectively of the 1st, 3d, 5th, 7th, 9th, 11th, 13th, 15th, 17th, 19th, 21st, 23d, and 25th wards of said city, one alderman for each of the said wards; and there shall be elected at the said general election in the year 1875, and at such election every two years thereafter, by the electors respectively of the 2nd, 4th 6th, 8th, 10th, 12th, 14th, 16th, 18th, 20th, 22nd, and 24th wards of the city, one alderman for each of the last mentioned wards. The said charter also declares that the said wards are towns of the county of Kings.

The terms of the Aldermen commence on the first day of January next succeeding their election; the compensation of each shall be one thousand dollars per year, except the president of the board, who receives \$2,500 per year.

Qualifications.—Every alderman shall, at the time of his election, be an elector of the ward for which he is chosen, and shall have been a citizen of the United States, and a resident of the city for at least three years previous thereto; he can hold no other public office, except that of notary public or commissioner of deeds.

Clerk of the Board.—The Board shall appoint a clerk, who shall also be the *City Clerk*, and hold his office for two years; he shall have charge of all the papers and documents of the city; countersign all licences granted by the Mayor, and keep the record of the proceedings of the Common Council. He performs such duties as are required of the clerks of the several towns of this state not consistent with the provisions of the charter. He engrosses all the ordinances of the Common Council in a book provided for that purpose, which shall be deemed a public record of such ordinances, each of which shall be signed by the mayor. He receives and pays over to the treasurer all monies, which by law or usage are paid to the Clerk of the City, and make return thereof, under oath, to the Comptroller. These are the principal duties of the clerk.

A majority of aldermen elected constitute a *quorum*, but a smaller number may adjourn from time to time, and compel the attendance of absent members.

The Board shall annually elect a president from its own body. Every ordinance or resolution of the Board must, before it takes effect, be presented, duly certified, to the mayor; and the approval of the minutes by the said board shall be conclusive evidence that the said ordinance, or resolution, has been so presented to the Mayor, who exercises the veto power, similar to that of the governor of the state; and the matter so vetoed may be passed by a two-thirds of the members, notwithstanding his veto.

But such ordinance or resolution cannot take effect in any sense, until the day following the next regular meeting of the board, in which case, it shall take effect upon being approved by the mayor. The board shall hold stated weekly meetings, commencing on the first Monday of January of each year, unless the first Monday happen on the first day of the year, when it shall commence on the second Monday of January, but special meetings may be called.

The Common Council shall have power to make, establish, publish and modify, amend or repeal ordinances, rules, regulations and by-laws, not consistent with this act; to levy and collect assessments, and to manage its property and finances; to supervise the affairs of all the departments and officers appointed or elected under this charter; to fix the salaries of such officers; to regulate all matters connected with the public wharves; all business conducted thereon; and with all parks, places and streets of the city; to regulate or prohibit bathing or swimming in the waters of, or abounding the city; and to establish and maintain within the city, one or more public baths. To prohibit and abate nuisances, and assess the expenses of such abatements upon the city, or upon the property affected thereby; to regulate the burial of the dead; to enlarge the fire district, and to prohibit and regulate the storage or sale of materials, which, in their judgment, are dangerous; to regulate and license all places of public amusement; to regulate weights and measures, and appoint city surveyors; to regulate and license common carriers of passengers, criers, hawkers, peddlers, pawn-brokers, junk dealers, public cartmen, truckmen, hackmen, cabmen, expressmen and dealers in firewood, coal, hay and straw; to establish, license, and regulate public and private markets, and to license, regulate or prohibit slaughter houses and noxious traffic or business; to prohibit disorderly conduct, and the keeping of disorderly houses; to restrain and punish vagrants, mendicants, street-beggars, and common prostitutes, and to prescribe penalties for the disobedience of this act. The Common Council have power to alter and change the names of all the avenues, streets, places, alleys, lanes, and public places in the city; it shall also have power to establish markets, make parks,

build bridges, and to make other improvements, for the use of the city, and to create loans, and to issue bonds therefor, payable at such times, and in such manner, and at such rate of interest as they may direct, not, however, without being passed upon by the electors of the city at a charter election, of which three months' notice must be published in the corporation newspapers. To direct the digging down, draining, or filling up lots or parcels of ground, in all cases in which a vote of two-thirds; they shall decide upon such digging down, draining or filling up to be necessary, for preventing any damage or injury to the streets, sidewalks, crosswalks, or to the adjoining property; to direct the fencing in of vacant lots adjoining any street, and the building, or maintaining of brick or stone walls between any lot or piece of land, and any street or lot adjoining the land, or between any lots where the same may be required by the said common council, by reason of either of said lots not being on the grade with the street upon which either of the same may front; to protect the lot or lots upon the grade of such street, or to protect said street, and to require such wall to be built upon any lot or piece of land which shall not so conform to the grade, at the expense of the owner or owners thereof, and to assess and collect the expense thereof, in the same manner as for regulating, grading and paving streets; but before any ordinance shall be passed for any of these purposes, ten days' notice of the application for the intention to pass such ordinance, shall be given to every person to be affected thereby, either personally or by publication in the corporation newspapers. Finally to do all other acts necessary to carry into effect the provisions of this act, or such other acts as relate to the city.

The Common Council shall have power to make, alter, modify, amend and repeal all such other ordinances, rules, police, health, excise, fire and building regulations and by-laws as they may deem necessary and proper for the good government, order and protection of persons and property, and for the preservation of the public health, peace and prosperity of the said city and its inhabitants.

In every by-law, ordinance or regulation which the said Common Council may pass, it shall impose a penalty for the violation or non-performance thereof. Suits may be prosecuted, in the name of the city, against any person or persons who shall violate any provision of any law, ordinance or regulation of the Common Council, or who shall refuse or neglect to do any duty or act required of him or them; and in every such action it shall be sufficient to state in the complaint the by-laws, ordinances or regulation, and the section thereof, upon which such action is brought; and the proceedings for the violations of any of the said ordinances imposing a penalty may be commenced by a warrant for the arrest of the offender, as well as by summons, to be issued by any justice having jurisdiction in the case, before whom complaint shall be made under oath; and every police justice and justice of the peace in the city shall have jurisdiction in all such cases.

Every general ordinance, by-law and regulation which may be passed by the Common Council, imposing a penalty, shall, after the passage thereof, and before the same shall take effect, be published for ten days successively in the corporation newspapers.

The Common Council shall designate four daily newspapers (one of which shall be published in the Eastern District of said city, and one in the German language, having the largest daily circulation therein), in which shall be published all the ordinances, resolutions, notices, tax and assessment sales, and all other proceedings by which this or any other acts are, or may be, required to be published affecting said

city, provided that the aggregate expenditure shall not exceed \$60,000 per annum, exclusive of tax and assessment sales, which shall be published by said papers, at rates to be fixed by the common council. After the 1st day of January, 1874, the aldermen of the city were, by the act of 1873, made supervisors and fence-viewers in their respective wards; and the term of office of the then present supervisors, elected from the several wards of the city, ceased on the 1st day of January, 1874; and laws for the election of supervisors in the city were repealed. But this law was in existence only a brief period, when, by an act of the legislature, it was repealed, and the office of supervisor for each ward was restored, nearly in manner and form as it formerly existed.

Having thus given the legislative power of the said corporation, we proceed to give a synopsis of the

Administrative Power, Under the Last Charter, vested in the Mayor, the heads of the departments, and such other officers as shall, from time to time, be created by law or appointed.

The following are the present departments: *Finance, Audit, Treasury, Collection, Arrears, Law, Assessment, Police and Excise, Health, Fire and Buildings, City Works, Parks, Public Instruction, Superintendent of Truant Home, Superintendent of Inebriates' Home.*

The offices of *Mayor, Comptroller* and *Auditor* are elective; all other offices are made by appointment. The term of office of the Mayor, Auditor and Comptroller is two years. A corporation officer, whether elected or appointed, must be at the time of election or appointment a citizen of the United States, a resident and elector of the city for at least three years immediately prior to such appointment, and if elected to any ward office, must be a natural resident in such ward; removal therefrom vacates such office, and no person so elected or appointed, shall, during his term of office, hold any other public office whatever (except commissioner of deeds and notary public), or who shall be directly or indirectly interested in any contract to which the city or any department thereto is a party; and no person so elected or appointed shall receive any compensation whatever, except his salary fixed by law or ordinance, for any services performed or work done under any public authority. Such officers are to give ample security to the city for the faithful performance of their duties, and to make and file their oath of office. Elections for Mayor and such other officers as are to be elected shall be held by the electors of the said city on the day of the general election, and under the regulations and law prescribed in regard to State elections. The judges of the City Court of Brooklyn, police justices and justices of the peace, or such of them as are required to be chosen at any election, shall be voted for on a separate ballot, to be endorsed "judiciary;" the Mayor, Comptroller and Auditor shall be voted for on a separate ballot, to be endorsed "city officers;" the aldermen and constable shall be voted for on a separate ballot, endorsed "ward officers." Such ballots shall be deposited by the inspector of the different election districts in separate boxes, to be provided by the city.

No person shall be eligible to the office of Mayor, unless he has resided in the city at least five years, and has attained the age of twenty-five years. His salary was fixed at \$10,000 per annum, but by the laws of 1877, chap. 459, the Common Council is authorized to fix the salary of the Mayor. He shall, by virtue of his office, be a Supervisor of the county, and shall possess the jurisdiction and exercise all the power and authority, in criminal cases, of the justice of the peace of said city, in addition to the powers heretofore given him by

this, or any other act, but shall receive no fees for his services as such justice of the peace, or for his services as supervisor. It is the duty of the Mayor, among other things, to submit to the Board of Aldermen at their first meeting in the month of January, each year, and oftener if he thinks proper, a message or statement of the condition of the city in relation to its government, finances and improvement; to see that the laws and ordinances are duly executed; to exercise constant supervision over all officers; to examine into all complaints against them. Among the powers and authority conferred upon him, he can arrest and commit offenders for examination, for offences committed within the city against the laws of the state, the same as a police magistrate or justice of the peace, in any of the towns of the state. He can issue warrants against any and all persons violating any of the ordinances or by-laws of the Common Council, and direct the proper officers to arrest such persons, and summarily to hear, try and determine, and dispose of the same, where the penalty imposed by the said ordinance or regulation shall not exceed ten dollars; if such penalty be not paid forthwith, the mayor shall commit the said offender to the county jail of the county for a term not exceeding thirty days, or until the fine is paid; and in case the penalty exceeds ten dollars the Mayor may, after examination, hold the parties to bail.

The Mayor shall accept, as is otherwise provided, nominate, and with the consent of the Board of Aldermen, appoint the heads of several departments and the assessors; he shall have power to suspend any officer appointed by him, and after such suspension report the fact to the Board of Aldermen, who may, for cause, remove such suspended officer by a vote of two-thirds of all the aldermen elected; but no such removal shall take place until the party sought to be removed has had an opportunity to be heard in his own defense. When there is a vacancy in the office of Mayor, or when absent from the city or too ill to officiate, the President of the Board of Aldermen, or if he be unable to officiate the president *pro tempore* shall act as Mayor. These are among the most important duties required of the Mayor of Brooklyn.

Department of Finance.—The charter of the city provided for the election of a Comptroller, to be elected at the general election to be held in the year 1874, and every two years thereafter, with a salary of \$10,000 per annum. Subsequently the Common Council was authorized to fix his salary. He is at the head of the Finance Department, having the direction and management of the accounts and finances of the city, subject to the ordinances of the common council; and he shall render to the common council as often as required a full detailed statement of all receipts and disbursements of the city government, specifying the amount expended and unexpended on each appropriation made by the Common Council, with the state of each account, together with a general statement of liabilities and resources of the city, and such other information as may be necessary to a full understanding of the financial affairs of the city; he shall prescribe the method and forms of keeping and rendering all city accounts, the forms of accounts and pay-rolls to be used in the several departments and offices, the manner in which all salaries shall be drawn, the modes by which all creditors, officers and employees of the city shall be paid. All salaries shall be payable monthly.

Department of Audit.—Of the Auditor: The city charter provides for the election of an Auditor every two years at the general election. He is at the head of the Auditing Department, with a salary to be fixed by the Common Council; it is his duty to examine all bills presented against the city for payment; no claim against the city shall be paid unless he

certifies that the services have been rendered or the materials furnished for which such bills may be presented, and that the charges are just and reasonable.

All money drawn from the treasury must be upon vouchers for the expenditure thereof, examined and allowed by the auditor, approved by the comptroller. All bills must be made out in items certified by the head of the department or officer having cognizance of the subject for such claim. He may inspect any book, contract or resolution or other paper document in the respective departments or offices; he may examine all persons under oath presenting claims for settlement. He shall make a weekly report to the Common Council of the name of every person in whose name an account has been presented during the preceding week, with his decision upon the same.

Treasury Department.—The Mayor shall nominate, and, with the consent of the Board of Aldermen, appoint a Treasurer, whose term of office is two years, his salary fixed by the Common Council. He is at the head of the Treasury Department of the city; he receives and deposits daily all moneys belonging to the city in such banks and trust companies, to the credit of city, upon such terms and in such amounts as the commissioners of the sinking fund may direct. It is the duty of the heads of all departments, all justices of the peace, police justices and all other officers of the city, to pay him all monies by them received belonging to the city, at the times directed by the Common Council, or in default thereof by the comptroller, and to account therefor under oath, with items, to the comptroller. No money can be drawn from the treasury except by an appropriation by the Common Council upon a warrant signed by the Mayor, or acting Mayor, and by the Comptroller or his deputy, and countersigned by the City Clerk, or, in his absence, by his assistant. Such warrant shall specify for what purpose the amount therein mentioned is to be paid. These are the most important duties of the Treasurer.

Department of Collection.—Once in every two years the Mayor shall nominate and, with the consent of the Board of Aldermen, shall appoint a person to be Collector of taxes and assessments, who shall hold his office for two years, and whose salary is fixed by the Common Council. He is at the head of the Department of Collection, and collects and receives all money due, or that may become due, under any warrant delivered to him for taxes and assessments, which he shall pay to the treasurer of the city on the same day on which he receives them. He renders an account thereof to the Comptroller in detail; he has the same powers as the collectors in the towns of this state. He is not required to call personally or by deputy upon persons taxed in the annual tax rolls for their taxes, where such taxes are for real estate; but he shall, upon receiving such tax rolls, cause a notice to be published for thirty days in the city newspapers that the said tax rolls have been completed, and a warrant for the collection of the taxes delivered to him, and that all persons are required to pay their taxes at his office without delay, under penalties of the law. He must annex to such notice, and publish therewith, a copy of the tenth section, of title seventh, of the law forming the city charter; he must, after such assessment list and warrant is delivered to him, cause bills of the several amounts therein assessed to be served personally or left at the places of residence of the persons charged with, or liable to pay, such assessments, if residents of the city; if not, he must cause the bills to be sent to such persons by mail, addressed to their reputed places of residence. These are some of the most important duties of the Collector.

Department of Arrears.—The chief officer of this department is called the "Registrar of Arrears." His salary is fixed

by the Common Council. All the duties heretofore required by law to be performed by any city officer or department in relation to advertising, selling and leasing property for unpaid assessments, taxes and water rates, and the redemption of property sold therefor, is performed by said department of arrears. The Registrar is nominated by the Mayor, and, with the consent of the Board of Aldermen, appointed every two years, and holds his office two years.

Department of Law.—This department is committed to a Corporation Counsel, nominated by the Mayor, and, by the consent of the Board of Aldermen, appointed to be the Attorney and Counsel for the corporation. He has the management and control of all its law business, and of all its departments, and all the law business in which the city shall be interested. He draws all leases, deeds or other legal papers for the city; he is the legal adviser of the Mayor and the Common Council, and the several departments of the corporation. He has charge of, and conducts all proceedings necessary in opening, widening or closing streets, avenues, parks, roads or lanes, and all other local improvements of the same kind; he makes all searches and abstracts of title required in opening, widening or extending any street, avenue or square; he can, with the consent of the Common Council, authorize an attorney or other person to appear for him in his name, for and on behalf of the said corporation, and conduct and defend suits and proceedings in all courts and places. His salary is fixed by the Common Council. He is appointed every two years.

Department of Assessment.—This department consists of a President and nine Assessors. The act constituting the city charter made it the duty of the Comptroller and Auditor of the city to appoint a proper person to be president of the Board of Assessors, and the proper persons to constitute that board. The term of office of the president and all the assessors is three years from the time of their appointment. The president is the head of the said department. His salary and that of the assessors is fixed by the Common Council. The assessors make out the assessment list and rolls for local taxes and improvements, and perform such other duties as may be required of them, under the direction of the president. The Board of Assessors have power, and it is their duty to make all assessments for taxes and local improvements, except for sewers, in the city of Brooklyn, by law provided. They shall include, in every assessment for local improvements, such amount as may be necessary to reimburse to the city the interest upon all advances made in executing such improvements. In determining the value of personal property to be assessed for taxes, the assessors may examine, upon oath, every person whom they shall believe ought to be assessed for such property, and may examine, under oath, such other persons as witnesses in relation thereto as they may deem proper; and, for that purpose, may administer oaths and issue process to compel the attendance of witnesses before them. The assessors possess the power to punish any person who shall refuse to make oath concerning his or her property, by a forfeiture for one year of all the rights and privileges given by law, to persons aggrieved by excessive assessments; and the assessors shall, in case of such refusal, use their own judgment in regard to the value of the property of such persons refusing to make oath, and assess it according to their judgment, leaving the parties thus assessed without any redress, in case of excessive assessment.

Department of Police and Excise.—The department of Police and Excise in Brooklyn consists of a President and two Commissioners; the president of the Board of Police, together with the police commissioners, constitute the Board of Police in the city of Brooklyn. The said president and commis-

sioners are appointed by the Mayor, with the consent of the Board of Aldermen, every two years. The salaries of the president and commissioners are fixed by the Common Council. The said department has the management and control of all the matters belonging to the police and excise, subject to the ordinances of the common council and the laws of the state.

The city is divided into precincts, not exceeding one precinct to each 36 of the patrolmen authorized to be appointed. The said board may establish sub-precincts, and assign, not to exceed three sergeants, two doormen, two roundsmen, and as many patrolmen as may be deemed sufficient to each sub-precinct, and appoint a telegraph superintendent, three telegraph operators and one assistant telegraph operator. It appoints as many captains of police as there may be precincts, and assigns one captain, and as many sergeants, roundsmen, patrolmen and doormen as it shall deem sufficient to each precinct. It also appoints a counsel and fixes his compensation, which shall not exceed \$2,500; it appoints (not to exceed five) surgeons, and as many mounted sergeants, roundsmen and patrolmen as the Common Council shall authorize.

The whole police force of the city consists of a Superintendent, whose salary is \$4,000 a year; one Inspector, salary, \$3,000; captains, whose salaries are \$2,000 per year each; sergeants, salary, \$1,500 each; roundsmen, salaries, \$1,100 each; patrolmen, salaries, \$1,100 each; doormen, salaries, \$800 each; drill captain, \$1,800; police surgeons, \$1,500 each. The number of sergeants shall not exceed four for each precinct, three for each sub-precinct, and one for each special squad; the number of roundsmen shall not exceed two for each precinct or sub-precinct; the number of doormen shall not exceed two for each precinct or sub-precinct, two for head-quarters, and one for each special squad; the number of patrolmen shall not exceed the number authorized by law, unless the Common Council, under certain proceedings, authorize a greater number. Special patrolmen may be appointed in case of riot; criminal process, issued out of any court having criminal jurisdiction in the city, must be served by a member of the police force, and not otherwise. The members of said force possess the powers of constables, except for the serving of civil process.

The duties and powers of the police force are very great. They are especially empowered to preserve the public peace; prevent crime; detect and arrest offenders; suppress riots, mobs and insurrection; disperse unlawful and dangerous assemblages, and assemblages which obstruct passage in public streets, sidewalks, parks and places; protect the rights of persons and property; guard the public health; preserve order at election, and all public meetings and assemblages; prevent and regulate the movement of teams and vehicles in streets; remove all nuisance from the streets, parks and highways; arrest all street mendicants and beggars; advise and protect emigrants, strangers and travelers in public streets, at steam-boat and ship landings, at railroad stations; carefully observe and inspect all places of public amusement, all places of business having excise or other license to carry on business, all houses of ill-fame and prostitution, and all houses where common prostitutes resort or reside, all gambling houses, cock-pits, rat pits, and public common dance houses, and to repress and restrain all disorderly or unlawful conduct or practices therein; enforce and prevent the violation of all laws and ordinances in force in said city; and for these purposes, with or without warrant, to arrest all persons guilty of violating any law or ordinance for the suppression of crime and offences. The board appoints an officer known as *Police Fire Marshal* of the city of Brooklyn; he must take

the constitutional oath of office, and hold such office during the pleasure of the board. His salary is \$3,000 per year. Among his duties is an examination into the causes, circumstances and origin of fires occurring in the city, by which any building, vessel, vehicle, or any valuable personal property shall be accidentally or unlawfully burned, destroyed, lost or damaged, wholly or partially, and to especially inquire and examine whether the fire was the result of carelessness, or the act of an incendiary. He may examine, under oath, all persons supposed to be cognizant of any facts, or to have means of knowledge in relation to the matters herein required to be examined and inquired into. He may, at all times of the day or night, in the performance of the duties imposed upon him, enter upon or examine any building or premises where any fire shall have occurred, and the building adjoining the premises, and near to that in which the fire occurred. The said board has the power and performs the duties which are now conferred upon Boards of Excise in this state, under the provisions of an act entitled, "an act regulating the sale of intoxicating liquors," passed April 11th, 1870, subject to directions in granting licenses of the Common Council. The Department of Police and Excise, in the city of Brooklyn, is one of the best constituted, most practical, safe and efficacious of any department of the kind in any of the municipalities in this republic. The person, the property, and the rights, not only of the citizens of Brooklyn, but of the strangers in their midst, are most securely protected by a vigilant, able and experienced police, who fully understand their duty, thoroughly perform it, never transcending their powers.

A detailed and valuable history of the origin, growth and development of these several departments, written by the Editor of this work, will be found in another part thereof; for this reason we shall omit any further description, except in some statistics connected therewith.

Department of Health.—This department is known as the *Board of Health of the city of Brooklyn*, which has jurisdiction over the city. Its management and control is vested in a Board of Health composed of the president of the Board of Aldermen, the president of the Board of Police and one physician, who shall have been ten years in active practice, and for five years a resident of the city of Brooklyn, immediately prior to his appointment. The Mayor nominates, and with the consent of the Board of Aldermen, appoints a physician, eligible to the office, as a member of the said Board of Health, and who is the president thereof. The board, thus constituted, has power to act as a *legislative board* in regard to all matters pertaining to public health and of the registration of vital statistics in the city, and to make such rules and regulations, and such appointments of officers and employees, as it may deem necessary for the proper carrying out and enforcement of all laws, ordinances and codes that may be prescribed for its government, for the protection of the public health, and for the care and registration of such statistics. The said board has power to prepare such ordinances as it shall deem to be required for the protection of the public health, and for securing the proper registration of births, marriages, deaths, and such other statistical information as may be necessary for the efficient working of the department, with penalties for the punishment of any disobedience to its ordinances or orders. Finally the power of the said board is plenary, extending to every person, animal, matter, thing, building, out-house, sewer, shop or manufactory, by which, or through which, the health of the city is, or can be in any way affected. (For a history of this department, see pages 563 to 568.)

The Department of Fire and Buildings.—It is thorough and exhaustive in its action, tending to the protection of the city from the ravages of fire in a manner that gives the citizens of Brooklyn a feeling of security and protection, realized by but few cities in the nation. This department consists of a president and two commissioners; they are appointed every two years by the Mayor, with the consent of the Board of Aldermen. The salary of the president is \$5,000 per year, and of each commissioner \$4,000, subject to be changed or fixed by the Common Council. Among the duties of the said commissioners are the following: they possess fully and exclusively all the powers and perform all the duties for the government, management, maintenance and direction of the fire department of the city, and the premises and property thereof, subject to the direction of the Common Council, except such power and authority as is now vested by law in the trustees of the Fire Department of the Eastern and Western districts of the city, which said divisions shall remain distinct from each other so far as relates to the Widows' and Orphans' Fund of each district, but for no other purpose. The Common Council provides supplies, horses, tools, implements and apparatus of all kinds (necessary to be used in the extinguishing of fires,) and fire telegraphs, and provides suitable locations for the same; they have power to buy, sell, contract for and have the care of the same, and take any and all such action in the premises as may be necessary and proper. This department possesses and exercises full and exclusive power for the government, management and maintenance of the several buildings, premises, property and appurtenances thereto, and all apparatus, hose, implements and tools of all kinds connected or belonging to the fire department of the city; the commissioners have power to select a secretary, chief and assistant engineers, and as many clerks, foremen, engineers, drivers, inspectors and bell-ringers as may be necessary, provided that the salaries of such employees, in the aggregate, shall not exceed the amount annually raised by the proper officers for such purpose; the said employees are under the control of the commissioners, and the chief clerk in the building bureau of the Department of Fire and Buildings shall be known and designated as the *Superintendent of Buildings*, having charge under the direction of the commissioners of said building bureau, and such matters connected therewith as is provided by law.

The salary of the firemen appointed by said commissioners shall be \$800 per annum, subject to the will of the common council to fix or change. No person holding office in or under this department shall be hable to military or jury duty, while performing his duty as a fireman. The powers and duties of this department are very numerous and extensive. From it has originated one of the most completely equipped, gallant and effective fire departments now in existence. (For a history of this department, see pages 568 to 578.)

Department of City Works.—This is one of the most important departments in the municipality of Brooklyn; it has, perhaps, a wider range of duties, intimately touching the public interests, than any other.

At the expiration of every two years, the Mayor, with the consent of the board of aldermen shall appoint a Board of City Works, consisting of a president and two commissioners, who shall have, subject to the direction of the common council, charge of all structures and property connected with the public water works; the supply and distribution of water, and the collection of the water revenue; the construction and maintenance of public sewers and drainage; opening, altering, regulating, grading, re-grading, curbing, guttering and lighting streets, avenues, places and roads; flagging sidewalks, and

laying crosswalks; constructing and repairing public roads, extending beyond the limits of paved streets; the care of public buildings and offices; filling sunken lots, and fencing vacant lots; digging down lots; licensing street vaults, cisterns and cesspools; paving and re-paving, repairing and cleaning streets, avenues and places, and keeping the same clear of encroachments and obstructions; digging, constructing and repairing wells and pumps; making and preserving all surveys, maps, plans, estimates and drawings, relating to the laying out and improvement of streets, avenues, roads and sewers; the construction, altering and repairing of public structures, buildings and offices, and all other buildings under the said department.

The president receives an annual salary of \$7,000, and each of the commissioners receive an annual salary of \$6,000. This board appoints a secretary, and fixes his compensation.

Bureaus.—The department is divided into *six bureaus*, the chief officers, subordinates and employees of which are appointed and removed at pleasure.

1st. A bureau having charge of *water works, sewers, streets, avenues and places, roads and sidewalks and crosswalks, sunken lots, lots to be dug down, vacant lots, wells, pumps, lamp-posts, docks, bulk-heads and bridges*; making and preserving all maps and surveys relating to the laying out, regulating, grading and paving all streets and avenues, and all public improvement under the charge of this department; and the supervision of altering and repairing of all public buildings and structures. The chief officer of this department is called the *Chief Engineer*. 2nd. A bureau having the care of the *extension and distribution of the water*; laying water pipes; setting all water meters; taking their record; the sale of water to shipping; the setting of fire and drinking hydrants. The chief officer of this department is called the *Water Purveyor*. 3d. A bureau arising from the *sale and use of water*. The chief officer of this department is called the *Water Registrar*. 4th. A bureau for the *inspection, cleaning, granting permits for sewer connections and their inspection, and the general care of all sewers*. The chief officer is called the *Superintendent of Sewers*. 5th. A bureau having the care and charge of *street cleaning*; removing ashes and garbage; keeping the streets clear of all obstructions; regulating the occupancy of streets by licensed hacks, carts and trucks; granting builders' permits; numbering streets; putting up street signs; cleaning and repairing public lamps; inspection of gas and lamps; the erection of awnings. The chief of this bureau is called the *Superintendent of Streets*. 6th. A bureau having charge of *furnishing fuel, furniture and utensils, books, stationery and all articles for public offices (including the city courts)*; excepting as may be otherwise provided for, and all supplies shall only be furnished upon a requisition signed by the heads of this department. The chief of this bureau is called *Superintendent of Supplies*.

For many years there existed in the city an officer known as "Street Commissioner, and Commissioner of Repairs and Supplies." By an act of the legislature, passed April, 1872, these offices were abolished. The powers and duties of street Commissioner devolved upon the Commissioner of City Works. This office of Street Commissioner was one of the best paying offices in the city, the salary being no less than \$5,000 per annum.

The Board of City Works in a recent and highly interesting report,* shows that there were in the city in 1882, 192 churches, all of which were of brick or stone, except 83, which were of wood. That there were 117 private and public

school-houses, all of which were brick, except 34; that there were 52 public halls, 542 brick stables, and 770 frame stables; and that there were 1,312 warehouses and sheds; there were 75,679 dwelling houses, 34,078 of which were brick or stone, and 41,601 were frame; that the 7th ward had the greatest number of dwellings—5,295; the 22d ward, 4,395. The total square miles in the city is $20\frac{4}{10}$. (For a history of the Water Works, see pages 585 to 594.)

Department of Parks.—Under a former charter of the city there existed a department known as the Brooklyn Park Commissioners. When the present charter was formed in 1877, the old Park Commission and commissioners were retained and were continued in office till the first day of January, 1880, serving without compensation.

At the first meeting of the Common Council in 1880, the Mayor, under the powers of the new charter, nominated, and with the consent of the Common Council appointed, a successor to each of the said commissioners. The powers exercised by the old Park Commissioners were transferred and vested in the present Department of Parks, and these powers extend to everything necessary, to the management, control, arrangements and by-laws of the city parks, their avenues, lanes, paths, grounds, and the exercise of government necessary for the protection of their property, and the safety of the persons and the property of all who frequent them. (For a history of the parks, see pages 595 to 601.)

Department of Public Instruction.—The history of this department having been elsewhere presented by the president of the Board of Education, TUNIS G. BERGEN, Esq. (see pages 609 to 618), we shall simply confine ourselves to the law creating the said department, and the time and manner of appointing its members.

This law declares that there "shall be a Department of Public Instruction in the city, which shall be under the control of a *Board of Education*." A Board of Education, similar to the present one, existed under the previous charter, and the present charter provides that "all the provisions of law relating to that Board of Education shall apply to the present board, except to that which relates to the appointment of members thereof, which is made in the following manner: On June 1, 1874, the Mayor nominated, and the board of aldermen, under the provisions of the new charter, appointed, "competent and suitable persons, and residents of the city," in place of the members of the old board whose term of office had expired. The terms of such appointees was fixed at three years. The law directs that in "making such appointment care must be taken to preserve, as near as may be, the representation in said board of at least one member from each district. The persons so appointed, held office until their successors were appointed. The law also provides that if the Common Council does not approve of the nominations made by the Mayor, or any of them, within ten days after the making of such nominations, the Mayor shall nominate other persons for said offices, and shall continue to nominate until all of the said offices shall have been filled as heretofore provided. The law provides that all vacancies in the said board, occasioned otherwise than by the expiration of the term of office, shall be filled on the nomination of the mayor, with the approval of the board of aldermen; that appointments are made once in two years.

Salaries of Officials.—Chapter 1, article 1, and section 1, of the ordinance, in relation to city officers, adopted by the Common Council, orders that the penalties of the official bonds required of the city officers before entering upon their

* Brooklyn Advance, July, 1883, page 225.

duties shall be as follows: That of the City Treasurer, \$150,000; that of Comptroller, \$45,000; that of Collector of Taxes and Assessments, \$250,000; of the Registrar of Arrears, \$50,000; of the City Attorney and Counsellor, \$10,000; of the City Clerk, \$10,000; of the President of the Board of Police and Excise, \$20,000; that of each Police and Excise Commissioner, \$20,000; that of the President of Fire and Building Department, \$10,000; that of each Commissioner of Fire and Buildings, \$10,000; that of the President of the Board of Assessors, \$5,000; that of the President of the Board of City Works, \$10,000; of each Commissioner of City Works, \$10,000; that of the Water Registrar, \$50,000. Such officers, except the Collector and Treasurer, shall execute such bonds respectively within ten days after the notice of their election or appointment, or their office shall be declared vacant. The bonds of all officers must be executed with two or more sureties conditioned, as we have seen provided in the city charter. Such sureties must justify separately, on the back of the bond, that they are respectively worth the sums stated in their respective justifications, over and above all debts and liabilities by them owing or incurred, or for which their property is liable or encumbered, at the time of justification, and over and above all exemptions by law of their property from executions.

It will thus be seen how carefully the interests of the city, its money and other property is protected, and how sedulously it protects itself against the speculation, frauds, incapability and misconduct of its officers.

We have thus given a brief summary of the legislative and administrative departments of the municipality of Brooklyn, and a digest of the laws under which they derive their powers, duties and tenure of office. As the Common Council has power to make such ordinances or by-laws as they may deem proper in relation to city officers, limiting and defining the duties of some of them under the present charter of the city, and to prescribe other and further duties to be performed by them, the Common Council have exercised that power in making ordinances, which, in some instances, change or limit, to some extent, the powers and duties of the heads of the departments and their subordinates; but the ordinances of the city are mostly recapitulations of the charter of the city, and too numerous to be here mentioned.

We shall, in the course of this history, in its appropriate place, give some statistics connected with the departments we have described; and, as far as possible, a list containing the names, &c., of the officers of these departments.

Departments of Law.—We have given, in other parts of this work, the history of the municipal and other courts of Brooklyn, during the existence of the village charter and its various amendments, and during the existence of the first city charter, with its several amendments. We shall devote some time to the history of the municipal courts as they now exist under the present charter, with a summary review of their procedure, and a description of the judicial officers who have conducted, and are conducting, these courts.

City Court of Brooklyn.—In the year 1849 an act passed the legislature of the state establishing the City Court of Brooklyn, and providing for the election, in the city, at its then next charter election, and every six years thereafter, a City Judge, to hold his office from the 1st day of May next, after the passage of the said act, subject to removal in the same manner as the county judges. A City Judge was elected, according to the provisions of the said act, every six years, who presided over the City Court of Brooklyn. Such a judge was in office in 1870, when a law was enacted for the election of two additional judges of the city courts by the electors of the city, at the time provided by law for the first election of judges of the Court of Appeals, under the sixth article of the Constitution of the State. The official term of these two judges commenced, according to law, on the first Monday of July, 1870. The law further provided that the two judges thus elected with the said City Judge, or any of them, should hold a court of civil jurisdiction, to be called the City Court of Brooklyn. Thus, it will be seen that the City Court established under the previous charter was continued under the new or present charter. The rapid growth of the city, and the large increase of the legal business, had rendered the City Court, with its single judge, unable to dispose of the great accumulation of business, although the court was a highly respectable tribunal. Hence the act of the legislature appointing two additional judges. This act extended the jurisdiction of the City Court to several actions and proceedings where the cause of action arose, or where the subject thereof was situated in the City of Brooklyn.

These causes of action are as follows: For the recovery of real property, or any interest therein, or for the determination of any such right or interest; for the partition of real property; for the foreclosure or satisfaction of a mortgage of real or personal property; for the recovery of personal property distrained for any cause. By the laws of 1871, chap. 282, and of 1872, chap. 688, the jurisdiction of the said court was extended to all other actions where the cause of action arises in the city, or where one of the defendants shall reside or be personally served with a summons within the said city; to and against corporations created under the laws of this state, transacting their business within the said city, or established by law therein; to actions for the partition of real estate of infants, in which actions the said court shall have the same jurisdiction as is given the supreme court by section 1 of chap. 277 of the laws of 1852; actions for the admeasurement of dowers; for the sale, mortgage or other disposition of real property of infants, habitual drunkards, lunatics, idiots or persons of unsound mind; to compel the specific performance, by infant heirs or other persons, of contracts respecting real property and chattels real; for the mortgage or sale by religious corporations of their property, and the application of the proceeds

thereof; actions against corporations created by or under the laws of another state, government or county, having property in the city or an agency established therein.

The act of 1871 gives the said City Court and the several judges thereof the powers and authority in relation to actions in said court, the process and proceedings therein, as are possessed by the Supreme Court, in regard to actions pending in said Supreme Court. It also gives the said City Court, within the county of Kings, concurrent general jurisdiction with the Supreme Court in law and equity; and all laws regulating the practice of the Supreme Court and the procedure therein shall, as far as practicable, apply to and be binding upon the said City Court and the judges thereof.

The act provides for removing into the Supreme Court any action pending in the City Court, which could originally have been brought in the Supreme Court, whenever, on motion, it may appear to the latter court that the convenience of witnesses or the ends of justice require it.

The judgments of the City Court are docketed and made liens the same as judgments recovered in the Supreme Court, and the City Court shall have the same power over the dockets of its judgments in the office of any county clerk, and over such county clerk in respect to the same, as for the time being may be possessed by the Supreme Court in respect to the dockets of judgments in that court. The whole expense of the City Court is a *county* charge, paid by the Supervisors in the same manner as other charges are now allowed.

Provisions are made for an appeal from the law, from the trial or special term of the said City Court to a general term thereof, and for an appeal from said general term to the Court of Appeals of the state.

The law also provides for the appointment of a clerk of the said City Court, whose fees for services in civil cases are the same as for similar services rendered by the county clerk, and all fees which he shall receive shall be paid by him to the county treasurer.

The annual salary of the clerk is fixed at \$2,000. He must appoint a deputy with like powers as those of the deputy county clerk; his salary is fixed at \$1,000 per annum. The said City Court must always be open for the transaction of any business for which no notice is required to be given to an opposing party. There are ten terms for the trial of issues of law or fact, in every year, and as many special and general terms as the judges shall appoint. The judges of the said court each receive an annual salary of \$10,000, to be paid quarterly by the county treasurer.

It is thus seen that the City Court of Brooklyn is a tribunal whose importance in the territory over which it has jurisdiction is equal to that of any other court in the State.

Thus far we have confined ourselves to the *civil jurisdiction* of the City Court. The law provides that

any of the judges of the said court may and shall hold a *court of criminal jurisdiction* to the same extent and in the same manner, and with the same powers as courts of Oyer and Terminer, in any county in this State, in the indictment and trial of all offences committed in the said city whenever any bill of indictment for an offence shall have been transmitted to the City Court pursuant to law. The proceedings therein shall be, in all respects, the same as indictments in a court of Oyer and Terminer.

The District Attorney of the county prosecutes all indictments found by the Grand Jury empaneled by said City Court, and all indictments transmitted by law to the said court in the same manner as if such indictments had been tried in a Court of Sessions of the county, and shall have the same powers in all respects. The fees to be allowed and paid to attorneys and counselors conducting suits or proceedings in the City Court, and the costs to be recovered for similar services in the county court.

Police Courts, Police and Other Justices.—

The law of 1869, Chapter 125, provided for the election in the city of Brooklyn, at the next charter election to be held in the said city after the passage of the said law, and every four years thereafter, a Justice of the Peace, to be denominated a *Police Justice*, to hold his office for four years from the first day of May next after his election, from May, 1869. The said justice was given no civil jurisdiction, except in suits, actions or proceedings brought on any of the ordinances, by-laws or regulations of the city, or the Board of Health of the city, where the penalty does not exceed the sum of \$250, in all of which cases, the said police justice, and each of the justices made by the Act of 1850, possessed jurisdiction. The Justices of the Peace or Police Justices have jurisdiction in criminal cases over all persons arrested or charged with any offence in the county of Kings; and in such cases each possess all the jurisdiction, powers and authority of a justice of the peace in said county, and have power to hear all complaints and conduct all examinations in criminal cases. Said justices shall not receive any fee or reward for their own use. The Justice of the Peace of the City of Brooklyn, elected under and by virtue of an act to establish courts of civil and criminal jurisdiction in the city, passed March 24, 1849, and the Police Justice in said city, shall receive, by the laws of 1869, an annual salary of \$3,500. And the clerks of each of the said justices shall receive an annual salary of \$1,800 each. These salaries are in lieu of all fees or emoluments whatsoever.

Courts of Special Sessions.—Either of the said Justices or Police Justices has power, under the laws of 1871, to hold a court of special sessions alone, and shall have jurisdiction other than that heretofore given them to try any person arrested in said county who may be brought before them, or either of them, charged with an affray, riot, malicious mischief, or cruelty to

any animal, committed within said county; and in all cases which are triable in such courts of special sessions, the party accused shall not be required to give bail to appear in any other court of criminal jurisdiction, unless the City Judges, the County Judge or a Justice of the Supreme Court shall certify that the charge is one that ought to be tried in some other criminal court.

Civil Jurisdiction of Justices of the Peace.—

The civil jurisdiction of Justices of the Peace in the city of Brooklyn in actions as provided for in section 53 of the code of procedure, and in actions for the recovery of personal property, was extended by the laws of 1871, chapter 492, to \$250. This section of the code thus referred to has been subjected to some modifications by the recent amended code, but we believe the jurisdiction of the said justices of the peace remains unchanged.

The Common Council of the city may, if they deem proper, appoint—and they have appointed—a *clerk* for the Police Justice, and also a clerk for each of the other Justices, and they fix and regulate the duties of such clerk or clerks. They each receive by said act an annual salary not to exceed the sum of \$500. The Common Council may designate policemen to attend upon the police court and other courts of the city.

By an act of the legislature of 1869, the Common Council of the city of Brooklyn were authorized to divide the city into two or more districts; in each of such districts a Justice of the Peace was to be elected at the then next charter election in said city, and every four years thereafter; said justice to hold the office for five years, with the same jurisdiction in the city that justices of towns have, and deemed to be Justices of the Peace of the County of Kings, with jurisdiction in all cases arising within said city, under article 2, title 10, chapter 8, of part 3d of the revised statutes, to the same extent as the assistant justices in the city of New York then had. The said justices exercising civil jurisdiction are entitled to receive the same fees, for the use of the city, as were allowed for similar services in the late Municipal Court of Brooklyn. By the said act, all acts and parts of acts which related to the organization of the municipal court of Brooklyn, the proceedings therein, and the jurisdiction and powers of the justices thereof, were repealed.

By an act of the legislature, passed April, 1871, provisions were made for electing in the city of Brooklyn, at the then succeeding charter election, and every four years thereafter, a Justice of the Peace in the Sixth District in the said city, said justice to have the same jurisdiction in civil and criminal proceedings as were possessed by the justices of the peace in said city.

We take the following from an interesting and instructive article by S. M. OSTRANDER, Esq., published in the *Brooklyn Advance*, for July, 1833, descriptive of the criminal business of the *police* and *city courts* of Brooklyn: "Of the large number of offences that

engage the attention of our police magistrates, many of them are petty, and are at once dismissed. A large number of the criminals convicted in our courts are New York professionals. * * * The police force to-day is not much larger than it was ten years ago. In 1878, the force arrested 23,334 persons; in 1880, 26,558; in 1881, 28,889. During the year 1882 the arrests numbered 27,610. The percentage of arrests to population was, in 1878, $4\frac{1}{100}$ per cent.; in 1880, $4\frac{7}{100}$ per cent.; in 1881, it was $4\frac{2}{100}$ per cent.; in 1882, $4\frac{6}{100}$ per cent. The arrests in 1882 exhibits a decrease of 719 males and 560 females—one arrest for every 22 inhabitants. The total number of officers and men (of the police force) was 646, or one to every 950 inhabitants. Of those arrested, 22,216 were males; 5,394 were females. The report of the commissioners of police for the year ending December 31, 1882, shows a marked decrease of arrests among workingmen and laborers. Among the occupations of those arrested, seven were clergymen, twelve actors, nine artists, one author, twenty-two bill-posters, twenty-seven brokers, thirty-eight conductors, thirty-one lawyers, thirty-two musicians, twenty-three physicians, two hundred and ninety printers, three deputy-sheriffs, and one railroad president. The number arrested for drunkenness was 9,500 males, 2,893 females. The arrests for this cause was two per cent. of the whole population. * * * The rogues gallery contains 3,082 pictures. During the year ending November 30, 1882, the police recovered and restored \$91,520.63 of stolen property.

"The following statement, furnished me by Hon. ISAAC S. CATLIN, District Attorney of Kings County, shows the number of convictions in the city court and oyer and terminer at different periods:

"*City Court*.—In 1849, 14; in 1850, 31; in 1851, 110; in 1852, 19; in 1853, 13; in 1854, 31; in 1855, 19; in 1863, 1; in 1866, 17; in 1867, 36; in 1868, 2; in 1870, 4; in 1871, 45; in 1872, 2; in 1875, 2; in 1879, 2; in 1882, 2.

"*Oyer and Terminer*.—In the year 1846, there were 25 convictions in this court; in 1849, there were 90; in 1850, 262; in 1851, there were 19; in 1852, 30; in 1853, there were 11; in 1854, 3; in 1855, 2; in 1861, 3; in 1862, 4; in 1863, 2; in 1864, 2; in 1865, 1; in 1866, 4; in 1868, 3; in 1869, 5; in 1870, 4; in 1871, 7; in 1872, 3; in 1873, 1; in 1874, 3; in 1875, 5; in 1876, 1; in 1877, 2; in 1880, 8; in 1881, 3; in 1882, 2.

"*In the Court of Sessions*.—The convictions in this court for felony and misdemeanor were: in 1829, 12; in 1839, 13; in 1849, 31; in 1859, 107; in 1860, 180; in 1881, 252; in 1882, 260.

"Total convictions in all the courts: In 1829, Court of Sessions, 12, being one conviction to 1,900 inhabitants; in 1839, Court of Sessions, 13, one to 3,400 inhabitants; 1849, same Court, 31; Oyer and Terminer, 90; City Court, 14; total, 135. The population of the county was then about 126,000; this would be one conviction

to every 930 inhabitants; 1869, Court of Sessions, 180; Oyer and Terminer, 5; total 185; the population of the county at this time was about 400,000, being one conviction to every 2,160 inhabitants; 1881, Court of Sessions, 252; Oyer and Terminer, 3; total, 255; the population was 620,000, indicating one conviction to every 2,430 inhabitants."

By the report of the Hon. WILLIAM C. DeWITT, corporation Counsel, dated January 2d, 1879, showing the results of the litigations of the city for the ten years then last past, it will be seen that upon all the judgments finally recovered against, and in behalf of, the city over this extended period, there was a balance of \$68,161.53 in favor of the city, and upon the cash paid out and received according to the books of the comptroller, upon all judgments which have been had within the time we have referred to, there is a like favorable balance of \$28,319.70. It is an obvious truth that no other city has enjoyed in its litigation a good fortune at all comparable to that of Brooklyn. On the contrary, every city, entitled by its wealth or population to be put in contrast with Brooklyn, has upon its litigation, during the period mentioned, probably fallen debtor to the extent of several million dollars. One reason for this is, our charter contains a clause exempting the corporation from liability for misfeasance or non-feasance of its officers in the administration of chartered powers. Such an immunity has not only not been conferred upon any other municipality, but it is elsewhere totally unknown to the laws of the world. Its constitutionality has been severely attacked, but in 1869 it was sustained in the Court of Appeals.

To the statute creating this immunity, and the decisions of the courts which have upheld it, we are mainly indebted for our singularly good fortune.

In the same manner, our assessments have been protected by provisions of law. The total amount vacated or reduced by the courts, since the consolidation of the city in 1854, is \$456,000. During a large portion of this time we have floated a debt of \$10,000,000 for local improvements. This debt has been reduced by collections of assessments, and replenished by fresh issues of bonds as the progress of the city permitted or required.

Among the important cases, the decisions of which have largely benefited the city, is that of *Leonard v. The City of Brooklyn*, which decides that mechanics' liens cannot be placed on any of the buildings belonging to the city. In the case of the *Brooklyn Saw Mill and Lumber Company v. Brooklyn*, the great common law rule distinguishing corporate acts and liability from state acts and liability, received its clearest and most consummate interpretation, and the city was freed from a claim of \$50,000.

In the railroad litigations, all the old charters which threatened the streets of the city with invasions by railroads, regardless of the will of the Common Coun-

cil, were destroyed; and the new amendments of the constitution, making the consent of the Common Council indispensable to the construction of such railway, and hence affording the city an opportunity to acquire compensation for these valuable franchises, were enforced and expounded. The verdict of the City Court, in the case of *Jackson vs. The City*, the corporation escaped a fraudulent claim of \$12,000 for spurious disinfectants, during the prevalence of small pox in 1869. In the judgment of the same court against the city the corporation was relieved from a multitude of claims for damages for emptying the Third avenue sewer in the bay at Twenty-eighth street.

The decision of the Circuit Court of the United States, declaring the patent which Charles Guidet held over the kind of pavements laid on Fulton street to be void, the city of Brooklyn not only accomplished inestimable good for itself, but it conferred a lasting benefit upon a majority of the cities in our country, which were most severely taxed and oppressed by it. Under the Guidet patent, pavements cost nearly six dollars a square yard. Since it was declared void, under a free competition it can be laid for half that price, at a cost nearly as cheap as the common water or cobble stones and is the best pavement for a populous city that has ever been devised.

The report of Hon. John A. Taylor, present Corporation Counsel for the year 1882, refers to the decision of Guidet against the city as a wide-spreading benefit, not only to Brooklyn, but to all other cities using the same kind of granite pavement. His report shows equally favorable results in litigations for and against the city during the year 1883.

"The enforcement of the city ordinances," says the report, "imposes upon the law department much labor. It would be greatly facilitated, and the administration of these laws would be more efficient, if the various ordinances were brought together in a municipal code, which should be consistent with itself and acceptable of ready interpretation by the courts."

There were, on the register of the City Attorney, for the year 1879, 134 causes for and against the city. A large portion of them were in the City Court.

In 1881, there were one hundred and eight causes on the City Attorney's register, for and against the city. In the year 1882, there were on that officer's register one hundred and fifty-eight causes, for and against the city.

The history of the Law Department would be decidedly imperfect, in point of interest and profit, without a brief reference to the great case entitled the "*People of the State of New York, on the relation of John D. Negus, against Patrick J. Kelley, et al.*," inasmuch as its decision settled not only the rights of the Law Department, but that of the legislative, the common council and private citizens. The case is better known as "*Negus vs. the Brooklyn Elevated R. R. Company.*"

The facts in the case are briefly these: The plaintiff, Mr. Negus, on and before the 20th day of December, 1881, was a resident of the city of Brooklyn, and was owner of considerable real estate in that city, much of it being on the east side of Grand avenue. The value of this latter property was, at the time of which we are writing, valued at \$15,000, of which Mr. Negus had annually paid taxes and assessments to an amount exceeding \$200, levied towards defraying the public expenses of governing the city. He alleged that the taxes levied and assessed by the city upon the real and personal property of its citizens, for several years, previous to December 20, 1881, amounted annually to more than \$6,000,000, and that the amount levied for the year 1882, amounted to the enormous sum of \$6,105,450.74, and that this excessive taxation was so burdensome upon the property holders that many had left, and were leaving the city.

That the Brooklyn Elevated Railroad Company was, by an act of the legislature of the state, passed May 21, 1874, and by an act of the legislature amendatory thereof, passed May 22, 1875, created a body corporate and politic by the name of "The Brooklyn Elevated Railway Company;" that the said company was by the 3d section of the said charter empowered to construct and operate on the elevated railway, between the proposed terminus on the east side of the suspension bridge and Woodhaven, in the town of Jamaica, N. Y.; that the said railway was to be erected on certain streets and avenues, or portions thereof, named and defined by law and by its charter, which route the company accepted and adopted as the one designated by its charter, and elected to construct said road through the streets and avenues named in its charter, for which reason, among others, Mr. Negus insisted that the said railway could not legally change its route.

Notwithstanding this, and the other facts we have mentioned, the said company applied to the Mayor and Common Council of the city in November, 1881, for leave to change a portion of its route, by straightening the road along Broadway, between Lexington avenue and Marion street, without making the detour to the corner of Ralph avenue and Macon street, as then existing. This application was referred to the railway committee of the Common Council, on the 14th of November, 1881, in a secret manner, as Mr. Negus alleged, so as to preclude the owners of the land along the new route from being heard in opposition to the change. By some means, the railway company had a report which purported to have been drawn by the said committee favorable to the said change; but it was alleged that it was drawn by some one in the interests of the said railway company. Without any notice whatever to the public, this report was, on the 6th day of December, 1881, presented to the Common Council for adoption, and, on the same day, the Common Council did adopt a resolution, carefully drawn, which entirely changed the route along and through which the law directed the said railroad to be built, making an entirely new route for a part of the same.

An effort was made at the time to have the Common Council adopt, as an amendment to said resolution, that before any work upon the said road should be begun by said company, it should give security, in an amount and manner approved by the Mayor and Comptroller, that at least two miles of said road should be complete and in running order within two years from the day the said resolution was to take effect, and the whole road in running order within three years from said date; and that the fare should not exceed the sum of five cents for any distance travelled on the road; and that 10 per cent. of the gross receipts of the company from fares of passengers should be annually paid to the treasurer for the

benefit of the city. But the Common Council refused to adopt this amendment.

On the 7th day of December, 1881, the resolution changing the route of said road was presented to the Mayor of the city, who, on December 17, vetoed the same. It was averred by Mr. Negus, who acted for himself and a large number of other citizens, that the new route was through streets devoted to trading and commercial purposes, on which a greater amount of business was transacted than in any other part of the city, being about two miles of the most populous part of Fulton street, and thus it largely encroached upon other streets. That the construction of an elevated railroad through the route thus described would destroy the use of the streets and avenues through which it passed; hinder and impede travel thereon, and wholly destroy the said streets for the purposes of residences. That the consent of a majority in the value of the property owners' in the streets and avenues on said new route had never been obtained. It has been seen that as two-thirds of the members of the Common Council had voted for the resolution changing the said route, which the Mayor had vetoed, the resolution could be adopted, notwithstanding the veto, by a two-thirds vote. This the said company insisted would be done. To prevent a passage of the resolution over the veto of the Mayor, Mr. Negus, on the 26th day of December, 1881, procured an injunction order, restraining the Common Council from passing the said resolution, notwithstanding the veto.

All the facts and circumstances upon which the plaintiff relied for the injunction were contained in a complaint duly verified, which was presented, with the injunction order, to the Hon. Henry A. Moore for his allowance on the day we have mentioned, and the injunction was thereupon duly granted.

The injunction was in the usual form, restraining the defendants, the city of Brooklyn, the Brooklyn Elevated Railway Company, John R. Lydecker and Samuel M. Shaffer, receivers of the said company, and also the Common Council of the city of Brooklyn, from voting or taking any action in respect to the changing the route of the said railway company, and from taking any action upon the recent veto of the Mayor of the city in that regard. The plaintiff also demanded a judgment perpetually restraining the railway company from erecting an elevated railroad in those streets and avenues known as the new route. It was also ordered by his honor, Judge Moore, that the said railway company show cause, at a special term of the Supreme Court, to be held in Brooklyn on the 28th of December, 1881, why an injunction should not issue as prayed for in the said complaint, and why said injunction should not be made perpetual. This order was duly served on all the defendants.

It does not appear that any cause was given why the said injunction should not be made perpetual; and now comes the most interesting part of this case.

On Saturday, December 31, 1881, an adjourned session of the Common Council was held. The president, Hon. Robert Black, occupied the chair. Twenty-one members of the common council were present. After the transaction of some preliminary business, a motion was made and carried to suspend the regular order of business, for the purpose of taking from the table the communication from the Mayor to the Common Council vetoing the resolutions of that body, adopted December 6th, 1881, changing the route of the railway; and, on motion of Alderman Duer, the said resolutions were adopted by a two-thirds vote, notwithstanding the objections of his honor the Mayor, in defiance of the injunction of Judge Moore restraining them from any such action. It is to be presumed that the seventeen aldermen who thus defied the in-

junction, and who rank among the most respectable citizens of Brooklyn, honestly believed they had just grounds for the action they took. But it was a bold and hazardous step, for which there are few, if any, precedents in legal history. It was a legislative body deliberately defying the judicial branch of the government, bringing those concurrent powers in collision; and, if successfully done, the judicial power would be prostrated. Prompt measures were, however, at once taken to punish those seventeen aldermen for contempt, in disobeying the injunction; and, after propounding and answering the usual interrogatories according to the rules and practice of the court and the statute in such cases, and after other proceedings having been had in the special term of the Supreme Court, an attachment was issued against each of the seventeen aldermen, charged with contempt of court in wilfully violating an order of injunction issued by Hon. Henry A. Moore, County Judge of Kings county, on the 26th day of December, 1881, in a certain action then pending in the Supreme Court, wherein John D. Negus was plaintiff, and the city of Brooklyn, the Brooklyn Elevated Railroad Company and others were defendants. Said attachments were directed to the sheriff of the county of Kings, and returnable the 11th day of January, 1882, on which day the said sheriff made return that he had attached the above-mentioned seventeen aldermen, and that each of them had given bonds for their due appearance according to the exigencies of said attachment. They were thus virtually before the court. Whereupon each of them, severally, denied, through Mr. Winchester Britton, their counsel, that he was guilty of the misconduct alleged against him. In an ingenious and learned argument, Mr. Britton contended against the continuation of the injunction; that it ought to be vacated because it restrained the defendants (the Board of Aldermen) in the exercise of the legislative powers vested in them by the city charter; that the injunction was void, and not binding upon the parties; that it was a mandate, not of the court, but of the County Judge, and, therefore, void.

The matter was adjourned to be heard at a special term of the Supreme Court to be held at Brooklyn on the 14th day of January, 1882. At this term, Hon. Jasper W. Gilbert, one of the justices of the Supreme Court, presided. Patrick J. Kelly, one of the defendants, having appeared personally before the said court, and having answered the proper interrogatories with a denial of his guilt, and after other proceedings were had, it was adjudged that he was guilty of the misconduct and contempt alleged against him, and was guilty of a willful disobedience of the injunction order granted by the County Judge of Kings county on the 26th of December, 1881; and he was thereupon sentenced to imprisonment for the period of thirty days, and to pay a fine of \$250 for his misconduct, and stand committed to jail until the said fine should be fully paid, not exceeding thirty days. Judge Gilbert, in directing this judgment, pronounced an exhaustive and learned opinion, in which he said: "I think the simple reading of sections 606, 607, 609 and 610, in connection with subdivision 3 of section 3,343 of the code of civil procedure, will show very clearly that the order made by Judge Moore was a mandate of the court, and not an act merely of the County Judge, done independently of the court, as counsel for the defendants claim. In no view of the case was the injunction void, nor can it be reviewed in a proceeding for disobedience of it. (*People ex rel. Day v. Bergen*, 53 N. Y., 410; *People v. Sturtevant*, 5 Seld., 270-273.) The adoption of the resolution was a plain and palpable violation of the injunction. I have considered the merits of the injunction in fixing the punishment for the violation of it, which was done in flagrant defiance of the authority of the court. To allow

such offenders impunity for their misconduct would be a practical surrender of a sacred trust, which has been committed to the judiciary by the people for their own protection and benefit. The power which the court possesses of punishing disobedience of its mandates is one of the safeguards for the due administration of justice. It is a necessary attribute of the court. The statute declares it, and in doing so gives no new power, but merely defines and limits an ancient rule of the common law."

The order granting the attachments against the said aldermen was, therefore, duly entered.

Mr. Kelly, by Mr. Britton, his attorney, duly appealed to the general term of the Supreme Court, from the order from the judgment of the special term directing his imprisonment, and fixing the fine of \$250, which stayed the execution of the sentence until the final adjudication of the case in the appellate court, where the appeal is still pending. The proceedings against the other aldermen have, by common consent, been suspended to await the decision in the case of Mr. Kelly.

Mr. Negus, the plaintiff in the case, and the relator in the proceedings for an attachment, appeared by David Barnett, Eraustus Cook, and Hubert J. Hull, Esqrs.; the defendants, by Winchester Britton, Esq., and Ward & Jencks. It is proper to add that the proposed change in the route of the railway has never been made.

Among the important cases in which the city of Brooklyn was concerned, is that of "*John J. Hardy, against the city of Brooklyn.*" The action was brought in the city court to recover \$50,000 damages for alleged nuisance, caused by a sewer outlet at the foot of Twenty-eighth street; the case was tried before Chief Justice Neilson and a jury, and the plaintiff's case was dismissed. The plaintiff appealed to the general term, and a new trial was ordered. The new trial took place before Judge Raynolds and a jury, early in 1882. This trial resulted in a verdict for the plaintiff for \$4,122.85. An appeal to the general term was taken on the judgment entered on the verdict, and the judgment affirmed. The city again appealed to the court of appeals, where the judgment was again affirmed.

"*Henry W. Sage, et al, against the city of Brooklyn.*" This case was tried in the City Court, before Judge McCue, and judgment ordered for the plaintiff for \$12,659.61. The case was appealed by the city to the general term of the City Court, and judgment affirmed. The city then appealed to the Court of Appeals, and the judgment again affirmed.

"*George C. Genet, against the city of Brooklyn.*" This action was brought to set aside assessments for widening Sackett street Boulevard; or, to recover \$9,572 against the city, the amount of award for land taken. The case was tried before Judge Gilbert, who dismissed the plaintiff's complaint. Whereupon the plaintiff appealed to the general term of the Supreme Court, and the judgment was again affirmed.

"The gutta-percha and rubber manufacturing company, against James Tanner, Collector of Taxes, &c." This action was begun in the Supreme Court, January 19, 1881, to cause the interpleader of the tax collectors of Brooklyn and New York to determine which city is entitled to tax levied upon plaintiff's business, it having been taxed in both cities. The case was tried before Judge Donohue, and decided in favor of the city of New York.

In the matter of the application to the Supreme Court of Andrew Wessel, and others, for a mandamus against the Board of Health, in the city of Brooklyn, and James Crane, Commissioner of said Board of Health. Proceedings commenced in March, 1881. Motion for a writ of mandamus to

compel the defendants to grant permits to plaintiffs for the removal of night-soil; they refusing to deliver it to the contractor for taking the same from the city. Motion for the mandamus denied, and Wessel and the other plaintiffs took an appeal to the general term, where the order denying the motion was sustained.

These cases will give the reader a knowledge of the legal business in which the city of Brooklyn has been a party.

Police Justices.—We should have stated, in commenting upon the Police Department, that in 1873, and for some time thereafter, there were six civil justices and one police justice in the corporation, the civil justices having police powers. By subsequent acts of the legislature the number of police magistrates have been increased to four, and the number of civil justices reduced to three.

Statistical History of the Municipal Department, for the years 1877, 1879, 1882, 1883.

Department of Finance, 1878.—The total amount of the bonded debt of the city existing on December 2nd, 1878, including city bonds of every description, together with tax certificates, outstanding January 1st, 1878, was \$40,906,500; less sinking fund, \$4,660,747.45; total, \$36,245,752.55.

There were issued during the year 1878, under the several acts of the legislature, bonds and certificates as follows, viz.:

Brooklyn city bonds, for the completion of the New York and Brooklyn bridge, for balance due on requisitions for the years 1876 and 1877.....	\$250,000
On account of requisitions of 1878..	1,400,000

Six per cents.....	\$1,650,000
Tax certificates, six per cent.....	1,250,000
Assessment fund bonds (renewed), five per cent....	1,050,000
Assessment fund bonds, W. & S. (renewed), five per cent.....	100,000
Sewerage fund bonds (renewed), five per cent....	350,000
Total.....	\$4,400,000

During the same period matured bonds and certificates were paid as follows, viz.:

Wallabout Bay Loan 7 per cent.....	\$45,000
Deficiencies prior to 1872, 7 per cent.....	319,000
Fourth avenue improvement loan, 6 per cent.....	\$15,000
Fourth avenue improvement loan, 7 per cent.....	10,000
	\$25,000
Gowanus canal improvement loan, 7 per cent....	24,000
Bushwick avenue improvement loan, 7 per cent...	16,000
South Brooklyn loan, 7 per cent.....	100,000
Tax certificates, 7 per cent.....	\$200,000
Tax certificates, 6 per cent.....	450,000
	\$650,000
Assessment fund bond, 7 per cent.....	1,132,000
Assessment fund bond, W. & S., 7 per cent.....	150,000
Sewerage fund bonds, 7 per cent.....	570,000
Total.....	\$3,051,000

In 1878, the city was startled by the discovery that Kessler, a bond clerk, had stolen a number of the Prospect Park

bonds, one of which was found this year to be in the hands of an innocent holder. The theft of these bonds considerably affected the finances of the city. It is a gratifying fact that the sale of the city bonds are very easily and readily negotiated; there is always a lively competition for them. This is evidenced by the fact that the premiums received on securities sold during the years 1878 and 1879, amounted to \$85,197.13.

Permanent Loans ,—Payable chiefly from taxation.....	\$29,401,500.00
Temporary loans, payable chiefly from assessments on property benefited.....	9,756,000.00
Tax certificates issued in anticipation of the payment of taxes in course of collection....	3,100,000.00
Total.....	\$42,257,500.00
Less sinking fund.....	4,781,978.72

Net city debt.....	\$37,475,521.28
The amount of uncollected taxes for the ten years ending December 31, 1877 on personal property amounted to.....	449,156.92
On real estate.....	4,675,715.97
Grand total.....	\$5,124,372.89

"Of this enormous sum of uncollected taxes," says Hon. William Burrill, comptroller at the time of which we are writing, "a very large amount was levied as personal, and will never be collected. In addition to which there are many lots and parcels of land within the city limits whereon assessments and taxes have been allowed to accumulate far in excess of their market value. To meet, in part, this large amount of uncollected taxes there was placed in the tax budget and raised in the taxes of 1877, the sum of \$150,000, which should be deducted from the sum above stated. On the whole, it is gratifying to be able to say that the city, with her parks, water-works, public buildings, etc., etc., is in possession of property more than sufficient to meet all her obligations."

The comptroller, in his report for the year 1878, deprecates the "disastrous legislation of the year 1877, in reference to the Prospect park assessment, for benefit, without the knowledge of the city authorities, until it was too late to present it, and which involved a loss to the city estimated at over \$1,000,000.

1881.—The bonded indebtedness of the city, on December 31, 1881, was as follows, viz.:

Total amount of city bonds of every description, including tax certificates, outstanding Jan. 1, 1881.....	\$43,135,500.00
Less sinking fund.....	5,481,894.98
Net city debt.....	\$37,653,605.02

There were issued during that year, under several acts of the legislature, bonds and certificates as follows, viz.:

Four per cent. Brooklyn city bonds for the completion of the New York and Brooklyn bridge, being the remainder of \$1,500,000, authorized by act of April 7, 1880.....	\$371,000.00
Four per cent. Brooklyn city bonds, for the completion of the New York and Brooklyn bridge, to pay interest on bridge bonds under same act.....	600,000.00
Six per cent. permanent water loan bonds (to commissioners of the sinking fund).....	151,000.00

Carried forward.....	\$1,122,000.00
----------------------	----------------

Brought forward.....	1,122,000.00
Five per cent. certificates of indebtedness (to commissioners of sinking fund), for Prospect avenue improvement under act of March 14, 1881.....	37,551.19
Four per cent. tax certificates.....	2,000,000.00
Four per cent. assessment fund bonds.....	800,000.00
Four per cent. sewerage fund bonds.....	200,000.00
Four per cent. assessment fund, W. & S. bonds.....	800,000.00
Total.....	<u>\$4,959,551.19</u>

There was paid during the same period bonds and certificates, including National Guard and Volunteer Firemen's loan, \$25,000; and the Williamsburg Local Improvement loan of \$38,000; and Permanent Water loan of \$1,700,000; the whole total of \$5,598,000. The total city debt was, on December 31, 1891, \$30,725,051.19. This included Prospect Park loan of \$9,236,000; bridge bonds, \$10,433,000; Soldiers' Aid fund, \$552,000.

Temporary loans, payable chiefly from assessments on property benefited, amounted, December 31, 1881, to the total of \$7,202,000.

A recapitulation of the foregoing exhibits permanent loans to the amount of \$30,725,051.19; temporary loans, \$7,202,000; tax certificates, \$4,270,000; making the total city debt at that time \$42,197,051.19; less sinking fund, \$4,022,629.72; leaving the net city debt, December 31, 1881, \$38,174,421.47. This exhibits a net increase of the city debt for the year 1880, of \$520,916.45.

The sales of tax certificates, assessments and sewerage fund bonds were made at an average premium of $1\frac{4}{100}$ per cent., while four per cent. bridge bonds brought an average of $5\frac{2}{100}$ per cent. The percentage of premium received from these bonds was much greater than ever obtained before, amounting to \$103,528.46.

During the year 1881 the first important instalment of \$1,700,000 of the permanent water debt, which fell due July 1st of that year, was extinguished by cash, and a portion of thesecurities held by the sinking fund. This was done without disturbing in the least the finances of the city.

The act of May 23, 1878, prohibits the issuing of bonds for local improvement until two-thirds of the amount of their cost is actually in the treasury. Very many of the leading and wealthy citizens of the city firmly believe that it would be wise if the city would adhere to the provisions of that act.

1882.—The bonded indebtedness of the city existing on December 31st, 1882, was as follows:

<i>Permanent debt payable from taxation:</i>	
Prospect park.....	\$9,236,000
New York and Brooklyn bridge.....	11,090,000
Mount Prospect square.....	90,000
Wallabout bay improvement.....	268,000
Soldiers' Aid fund.....	552,000
Total.....	<u>\$21,236,000</u>

Water debt.—Permanent water loan.....\$9,859,500

Temporary debt (payable from assessments):

Total, December 31st, 1882.....\$6,919,551.19

Tax certificates:

Issued in anticipation of the payment of taxes in arrears.....\$4,150,000

A recapitulation of the foregoing exhibits permanent debt on December 31st, 1882, to the amount of.....\$21,236,000.00

Water loan.....9,859,500.00

Carried forward.....\$31,095,500.00

Brought forward.....	\$31,095,500.00
Temporary debt.....	6,919,551.19
Tax certificates.....	4,150,000.00
Gross debt ..	<u>\$42,165,051.19</u>
Less sinking fund.....	4,671,327.79
Net debt.....	<u>\$37,493,723.40</u>
Net city debt December 31st, 1881....	\$38,174,421.47
Net city debt December 31st, 1882.....	37,493,723.40
Net decrease.....	<u>\$680,698.07</u>

The sales of assessment and sewerage fund bonds and tax certificates, bearing 4 per cent. interest, were made at an average premium of $2\frac{1}{100}$ per cent.; while 4 per cent. bridge bonds brought 4 per cent.

Treasury Department, 1878.—The receipts and disbursements of this department from December 1st, 1877, to December 1st, 1878, were as follows:

Balance in the various banks to the credit of the city, December, 1878.....	\$109,187.10
Total receipts from all the departments.....	14,259,290.75
Interest on bank balances.....	22,396.28
Total receipts.....	14,390,874.13
Disbursements by 10,945 warrants.....	13,825,963.65

Balance in banks December 3d, 1878..... \$564,910.48

The City Treasurer, being treasurer of the *Board of Education*, presented the following statement, showing the receipts and disbursements from January 1, 1878, to December 1, 1878:

Balance January 1, 1878.....	\$26,793.86
Receipts (including \$6,527.18 int. on balance)...	1,195,578.47

Total receipts.....\$1,222,372.33

Disbursements by 1,907 warrants..... 1,153,440.57

Balance December 1, 1878..... \$68,931.76.

The employees of this department consist of the treasurer, deputy treasurer and book-keeper, whose salaries are as follows:

Treasurer.....	\$4,000
Deputy treasurer.....	3,000
Book-keeper.....	2,000

Total salaries for 1878..... \$9,000

The salaries of the treasury department for the year 1877 amounted to \$12,000. Those for 1878 show a reduction, as compared with 1877, of \$3,000. The salaries of the department for 1879, it was predicted, would be further reduced to \$8,500.

1881.—The receipts and disbursements of the Treasury Department from Nov 30, 1880, to Nov 30, 1881, were as follows, viz.:

Balance November 30, 1880.....	\$464,872.75
Receipts to November 30, 1881	14,697,230.90

Total.....\$15,162,103.65

Paid out by 9,793 warrants..... 13,399,539.22

Balance in bank November 30, 1881..... \$1,762,564.43

This balance was deposited in the following banks: Brooklyn Bank, \$84,207.08; City Bank, \$158,104.47; Long Island Bank, \$115,413; First National Bank, \$95,021.24; Mechanics' Bank, \$342,604.74; Nassau National Bank, \$384,838.29; Brooklyn Trust Company, \$229,133.32; Fulton Bank, \$126,054.57; Mechanics' and Traders' Bank, \$41,541.99; Manufacturers' Bank, \$68,932.42; Commercial Bank, \$64,656.71; Atlantic State Bank, \$52,056.48; total, \$1,762,564.43.

The receipts to the treasury during the time referred to, amounts, as we have seen, to \$14,697,230.90, of which \$206,800 were received from excise license fees; \$10,518.77 from court fees and fines; \$7,311.69 from Department of Parks; \$8,350 from kerosene licenses; \$20,718.37 from dock and wharf rent; foreign fire insurance companies paying 2 per cent. on premiums issued in the city, \$6,393.90, etc., etc.

1882.—The accounts of the Treasury Department for the year ending November 30, 1882, shows the following:

General Fund.—Money derived chiefly from tax levy and balance of revenue fund August 31, 1881, was, in total.....		\$6,444,268.31
Money derived from water revenue.....	1,137,755.68	
Money derived from bonds and certificates.....	1,270,377.81	
Money derived from collection of assessments..	299,974.32	
Money derived from excise license fees, Orphan Asylums and Inebriates' Home	124,489.40	
To this include tax certificates, Fireman's Insurance Fund from kerosene license, advance on meter account refunded, and cruelty to animals, making in all.....	1,145,253.00	
General Fund from various sources, including Dog Fund of \$1,743.76, making in all.....		33,935.76
Revenue Fund.....		\$10,655,834.78
Redemption Fund. On redemption of property sold for unpaid taxes.....	38,323.33	
Special Fund.....	3,294,508.70	
Total from all sources		\$14,203,806.49

The annual report of the Auditor's department for the year ending December 15, 1878, shows that the number of claims audited during that year amounted to 5,447. The amount of claims audited was \$3,315,754.52; the distribution of accounts were as follows:

General Fund.....	\$3,166,768.85
Special Fund.....	100,393.35
Revenue Fund.....	48,592.32

The annual report of the Auditor for the year ending December 12, 1881, shows the number of claims against the city, audited during that year, to have been 4,984. The amount of claims audited was \$3,002,058.53.

The Distribution of Accounts is as follows:

General Fund.....	\$2,909,022.24
Special Fund.....	75,888.85
Revenue Fund	17,147.44
Making.....	\$3,002,058.53

The annual report of the Auditor for the year ending December 6, 1882, shows that the total number of claims audited against the city during that year was 6,439; the total amount audited against the city was \$3,488,134.75. The distribution of the accounts was as follows:

General Fund.....	\$2,918,004.00
Special Fund	534,751.47
Revenue Fund.....	35,379.28
Total.....	\$3,448,134.75

The highest sum of money paid in any given month during the year was in the month ending December 2d, 1882, which was \$193,607.77; the lowest sum audited was in the month ending October 28, which was \$5,415.54.

Department of Law is next in order in the arrangement of Departments, but its history will be found in some of the preceding pages.

Department of City Works, 1878.—The money received from all sources, and paid to the City Treasurer, and also the amount expended under appropriations during the year ending December 1, 1878, was as follows: Cash balance in hand in money January 1, 1878, and deposited by contractors on proposals, under an ordinance of the Common Council, was \$17,878.50; receipts from January 1 to November 30, 1878 (inclusive), was \$1,057,418.34. There was paid to the city treasurer during that time \$1,056,908.34. Among the items which make up this account, \$928,110.64 was on account of water revenue, \$19,288.97 for sewer repairs, \$12,572.94 was for street repairs, \$78,840.50 for contractors, deposit fund, etc.; balance on hand December 1, 1878, was \$510. Requisitions on the Comptroller by the President of the Water Commission for expenditures approved, for payment for money derived from specific sources, viz.: From appropriations from water revenue and from tax levy and other matters, \$1,363,595.47. A statement of the Chief Engineer of the city, touching his particular department during the year ending December 31, 1882, in referring to storage reservoir, shows that the slope to the dam of this reservoir had been completed, and that the greatest depth of water reached was seventeen feet, one and a half inches; the average depth is 12 feet and 9½ inches, except in rainy seasons. During the month of July a maximum consumption of water was reached of about 36,000,000 gallons. This was regarded at that time as an immense consumption; but the use of water has increased until, on February 29th, 1884, there was used 43,890,268 gallons, an increase of about 9,000,000 gallons over the corresponding day of the previous year. On Saturday, March 1st, 1884, it reached 43,455,637 gallons, about 9,450,000 gallons more than the corresponding day of the preceding year. The next day the consumption was 40,339,091 gallons, 7,500,000 more than on the corresponding day in 1883. This was startling, showing that the city is approaching a time when great economy must be exercised in the use of water, restricting the supply, by means of meters, so repugnant to the people. The daily supply during each of the first three days of March 1884, was at the rate of 57 gallons per capita, in a population of about 500,000.

About 170 regular repairs were made, ranging from one to five blocks, and 12,376 square yards of granite pavement was laid in replacing wooden pavements. There was expended for grading and paving during the year, \$22,656.68; for flagging sidewalks, \$797.10; for gas lamp-posts, \$2,205.03.

Public Baths at North 6th Street, Conover and Bridge Streets.—Towage, repairs and running expenses, except salaries, \$1,127.19. The Bridge street bath was finished that year at a cost of \$13,720. The following interesting table gives the number of bathers at these baths during the season of 1878:

	ADULT MALES	ADULT FEMALES	BOYS	GIRLS	TOTAL
North 6th St. Bath..	34,254	14,903	71,511	23,548	144,216
Conover St. Bath....	32,880	13,728	53,598	19,627	119,833
Bridge St. Bath.....	24,476	5,079	71,679	9,950	111,184
Totals.....	91,610	33,710	196,788	53,125	375,233

There was used at the City Hall Police Department, during the year ending December 31, 1878, in the City Hall, Police

Department, Police Station, City Treasurer's office, Public Baths, and the Municipal Buildings, 2,373,875 cubic feet of gas, at a cost of \$2.25 per thousand, amounting in all to \$4,661.61.

There was paid for street cleaning, removing ashes, etc., during this year, \$53,245.23; for removing offal and dead animals, \$5,407.40; removing garbage, \$8,678.89.

1881.—For the year ending Dec. 29. The receipts from this department, from all sources, for the time mentioned, aggregated \$1,004,973.74, of which amount \$940,537.34 was paid into the City Treasury, to the credit of the proper accounts; \$63,686.40 was refunded to contractors for deposits on proposals, leaving a balance in hand of \$750, subject to call, under provisions of an ordinance of the Common Council.

The revenue from *water rates*, including the defaults therein, amounted to \$886,757.11, from which was transferred to a distinct account for advances on meter rates the sum of \$102,788.90, which had always before been considered a part of the revenue derived from water.

Compared with the revenue of 1880, for the same length of time, this shows a decrease to the amount of \$29,117.07; this small decrease shows the rapid strides of the revenue from this source.

The condition of the water revenue account, at that time (including amounts received by the Registrar of Arrears, from returns made to the Comptroller up to, and including the 23d day of November, 1881, of which this department has no control) was:

Balance in Treasury, Jan. 1, 1881.....	\$155,957.69
Receipts of Department to Nov. 30, 1881.....	886,757.11
Receipts of Registrar of Arrears, Nov. 25, 1881..	161,362.87
Total.....	\$1,204,077.67

Disbursed during the time, \$737,714.66; leaving a balance of \$466,363.01.

After providing for the interest (\$299,155.17), on the bonded debt, for the six months ending December 31, 1881, and with an estimated revenue for December, of \$80,000, left a surplus to the credit of the water revenue account at the close of that year of about \$240,000. That year the first instalment of the water debt was paid off, which amounted to \$1,700,000.

The expenditure for maintaining the works for the eleven months ending November 30, 1881, was \$283,899.77, of which the sum of \$97,000.76, was under the previous year's appropriation, ending April 30, 1881. The balance of \$186,899.01, was under the appropriation for the year that closed April 30, 1882.

The following pay-rolls of the Department shows how prompt a paymaster the city was for its employees, estimating the payment of salaries as follows, for five years:

For the eleven months ending :	
Nov. 30, 1881, there was paid.....	\$292,408.52
" 30, 1880, " " "	305,879.23
" 30, 1879, " " "	315,176.06
" 30, 1878, " " "	394,929.62
" 30, 1877, " " "	456,697.83

Showing a decrease in 1881, from that of 1880, of \$13,470.71; 1879, of \$22,767.54; 1878, of \$102,521.10; 1877, of \$164,289.31.

This decrease exhibits the careful and economical manner in which this department was conducted during that time. The total expenditures in the Department under the various heads, for all accounts, for salaries and labor, and material supplied, during that year, was \$1,166,266.24; an increase

over the corresponding months of 1880, of \$95,398.10, and an increase over that of 1879, of \$150,581.05. But this was occasioned by the increase in work done by the Department in 1881, over that of 1879, which was about 14 per cent., and over that of 1880, of about 9 per cent. The amount paid for salaries and labor shows a decrease in 1881, from that of 1879, of about 7 per cent., and from that of 1880, of about 4 per cent.

1882.—For the year ending December 6. The receipts from this department for the time mentioned, from general revenue, aggregated \$991,815.10; also the sum of \$14,555 from contractors, as deposits on proposals, etc.*

This sum, together with the balance, \$4,350, on hand January 1, 1882, aggregated \$1,010,720.10, of which the sum of \$991,815.10 was paid the City Treasurer to the credit of the proper accounts; the sum of \$17,365 was refunded to contractors and others, leaving a cash balance of \$1,540. This sum compared with the aggregate amount received during the corresponding months of the previous year shows a net increase of \$5,747.36, being an increase in the amount received from sources of general revenue of \$51,277.76, and a decrease of \$45,531.40 on contractors' deposits, etc. The increase on amounts received and paid to the City Treasury during this year, over the corresponding months of the preceding year, is an increase of \$38,058.33, and the revenue from water, and from the advances on other accounts, water meters, sewer permits, etc., etc., an increase of \$17,946.80, with a decrease of \$4,727.36 from miscellaneous items.

The amounts received from water rates, including the defaults thereon, was \$924,815.44; \$6,678 of that amount was received from the public baths. The total revenue from water was \$1,114,592.77. During this year the Common Council, under the authority of law, and by the adoption of a resolution, made a requisition for the issue of additional water bonds, amounting to \$421,500. The payments on account of maintaining the city works under the different heads of expenditures, for the year ending December 6, 1882, were \$301,622.22, of which \$90,507.46 was from the appropriation of the previous fiscal year. This shows an increase over the corresponding months of the previous year of \$17,732.45, which is due chiefly to the rebuilding of work to increase the supply of water.

The pay roll of the department for salaries and labor on all accounts for the eleven months ending

November 30, 1881, were.....	\$292,408.52
November 30, 1882, were.....	311,220.17
Increase in 1882.....	\$18,811.65

The payment on street repairs, including cobble, granite and concrete, and other material furnished for such repairs was, in all, \$223,386.10. The payment made for the construction of sewers during the year we are considering was \$13,121.01.

Water Supply.—The minimum water supply was 35,000,000 of gallons; the per capita daily consumption was 58 gallons. There were at that time 280 miles of cobble-stone paved streets in the city.

The annulment in October, 1881, of the contract for the removal of *night-soil* has relieved the city of a large expense. The Department of Health now grants permits to scavengers to remove night-soil through the city to farmers in the adjoining towns, who pay liberally for it.

* By an ordinance of the City of Brooklyn, contractors on public works are required to make a deposit on their proposals, as a guarantee for fulfilling their contracts.

Dead animals were removed from the city, under a contract existing at the time of which we are writing, at a cost of \$5,500.

Department of Assessment.—In the year 1706 there were only 64 freeholders liable to assessment and taxation in the town of Brooklyn. In the next 96 years, down to 1802, this number had increased only 22, making the whole number 86. In 1814, the whole number was 3,805, this being a period of twelve years, and showing the rapid increase during that time of 3,719. In 1820, there were 7,475 freeholders; in 1830, there were 15,295; in 1840, there were 36,233; in 1850, 96,835; in 1855, 205,250, including Wilhamsburg and Bushwick. In 1706, the assessed value of all the real and personal estate in the town of Brooklyn was £3,122 12s. In 1824, the real estate in said town was assessed at \$2,111,390, and the personal estate at \$488,690. In 1834, when Brooklyn was incorporated as a city, the aggregate assessment of its real property was \$13,391,734, and of its personal property, \$2,250,556; the whole aggregate of its real and personal property was \$15,642,290.

The valuation of the real and personal property in the city, for the year ending November 30, 1878, was: Real property, \$218,373,093; personal property, \$14,968,911; total, \$233,342,004. In 1877, the assessed value of the real estate was \$216,481,801; personal property, \$13,111,215; showing an increase in 1878 in real property of \$1,891,292; in personal property, \$1,857,696; making a total increase of \$3,748,988.

It will be seen that there was a large increase on the assessment of *personal property* as follows: Upon individuals, \$504,000; upon corporations, £1,353,696; total, \$1,857,696. One of the great difficulties which assessors have to encounter is the concealment or removal of personal property by those who ought, in justice, to pay tax upon it. This difficulty is fast being obviated by the scrutiny of assessors and the facilities for discovering personal property secreted from taxation. Thus the number of persons in the city assessed on personal property in 1877 was 1,684; in 1878 it was 1,913, an increase of 229, with an increase of amount assessed of \$504,000 in 1878 over that of 1877. As to corporations, the gain is largely through the discovery of reserved or concealed funds liable to taxation. There was a striking instance of this kind developed in one of the gas companies of the city, which issued a quantity of scrip equal in amount to the capital stock of the company. By conveniently calling the scrip "certificates of indebtedness," the companies of New York and Brooklyn for a long time succeeded in evading taxation on the amount of property on which such scrip was based. The department of the Board of Assessments, during the year we are considering, by a most ingenious and effectual investigation ascertained the character of the scrip, and at once decided to assess and tax it. The companies, however, did not surrender the large advantages and profits they had gained from their shrewd device, and sought to retain it by a recourse to the courts. The assessment thus made was subjected to adjudication in the Supreme Court, and sustained at the General Term. This was a triumph for the department, for which they received general thanks and commendation.

The number of *new buildings* erected in the city of Brooklyn for the five years past, ending with June 1st, 1878, and their assessed value, were as follows: In 1874, there were 1,780 buildings; assessed value was \$4,251,700; in 1875, 1,470; assessed value, \$3,617,300; in 1876, 1,506; assessed value, \$3,742,100; in 1877, 1,270; assessed value, \$3,349,300; in 1878, 1,076; assessed value, \$3,067,307.

The valuation of the real and personal property in Brooklyn for the year 1881, and for 1880, aggregated as follows:

	1881.	1880.	Inc. in 1881.
Real estate.....	\$240,128,905	\$223,620,277	\$16,508,628
Personal property....	15,137,040	11,215,704	3,921,246
Total.....	\$255,265,945	\$234,836,071	\$20,429,874

This increase in the value of real estate was owing, in part, to the erection of new buildings. The amount thus gained in the years about which we are writing was \$4,861,600, the greatest gain from this cause in any year since 1873, when the amount assessed was \$5,087,200; the average annual amount for the years 1874–1880 was \$3,487,100. The further increase on real estate is from the assessment of two classes of property, before that time permitted to be exempt, but which the Board of Assessors for this year decided were not, by any law, entitled to exemption; and they, therefore, assessed the same. One of these belongs to the lessees of the lands of the *Brooklyn Benevolent Society* (otherwise known as the Heaney estate). This Society was incorporated in the year 1845; the next year the Legislature declared by an Act, that its real and personal estate "shall remain free from taxation so long as the revenues therefor shall be disposed of according to the directions of the acts of incorporation." This property passed into the hands of lessees, and it was generally believed that the exemption we have referred to extended to the interests of these lessees,—interests which are large, consisting of numerous valuable buildings. But the assessors, for the years about which we are writing, took another view of the matter, insisting that the exemption did not extend to these lessees; and, as we have said, they were assessed and taxed, adding thereby considerable to the treasury of the city—about \$11,090. Some of the lessees, however, resisted, and commenced suits to test the legality of these assessments. These suits were tried in the Circuit of the Supreme Court, and decided in favor of the assessors. An appeal was taken to the General Term, and again decided in their favor, and the case again appealed to the Court of Appeals. The assessment of the other class of property to which we have referred, brought up an exceedingly interesting question, for it consisted of parsonages—the residences of pastors of churches. It was long claimed, and the claim was acquiesced in, that the parsonage was included with church buildings and lands, and the whole exempt from taxation; but a critical examination of the statute which declared the exemption, showed that it extends to "every building for public worship," * * * "and the several lots whereon such building is situated;" but not upon lots upon which such buildings for public worship do not stand. Therefore, the Board of Assessors decided that this language was not applicable to the residences of ministers, and assessed all such in the city. The amount of property thus added was \$426,770, and the tax thereon about \$10,000.

The doubts arising as to the assessment of scrip called "certificates of indebtedness," issued by corporations and the gas companies, were removed for the future by an amended act of the charter passed April, 1881.

Local Assessments.—There was another kind of taxation which, in past years, pressed ruinously upon property owners in Brooklyn, which, however, had almost ceased at the time of which we are writing. This was the imposition of assessments, on the property of citizens, for local improvements, such as parks and other improvements. This class of taxation amounted, in 1874, to \$1,703,614, besides the tax levy of \$7,821,509 of that year, which did not include assessments for sewers, which are laid in the Department of City Works.

Prospect Park Assessment.—The Board of Assessors, on the 30th of November, 1881, levied the fourth annual equal installment, amounting to \$33,556.79, of the "unpaid

amounts of the assessment heretofore laid upon a district of assessment for benefits of lands taken for Prospect Park." This levy is pursuant to the provisions of the law of 1878. This amount is to be levied annually for thirty-four years, from January 1, 1878.

Equalization of State Taxes.—By the rules of law it is made the duty of the State Board of Equalization of Taxes to examine, once a year, the assessments of real estate in each county, and so adjust, by adding to or deducting from, the valuation fixed by the local assessors, so that all shall bear the same relation to the true value, and thereby secure a just distribution of the State tax. For many years it was claimed for the counties of New York and Kings that injustice had been done them by imposing upon those cities an undue share of the State tax, and efforts were made to have the same corrected. This matter was ably taken up by Mr. John Truslow, in 1881-2, while President of the Department of Assessments. At the request of a committee of the Board of Supervisors, he appeared before the Board of Equalization, at Albany, this year, and urged the removal of the evil. He had often been before the Board for the same purpose, without success, and the result was the same this year. The injustice continues, due to a determination that the rural districts shall have the advantage of the cities. This they easily secure; for the cities rarely, in any year, have more than one or two representatives in the Board, the membership of which is ten. At this time—in 1881-2—there were no representatives of the two great cities in the misnamed Board of Equalization; and therefore these two cities, containing only about one-third of the population of the State, are compelled to pay about 56 per cent. of the whole State tax.

1882.—For the year ending November 30, 1882, the valuation of the taxable real and personal property was, in the aggregate, as follows:—

	1882.	1881.	Inc. of '81.
Real estate.....	\$264,404,017	\$240,130,905	\$24,273,112
Personal property....	19,334,300	15,137,040	4,197,260
Real and Personal....	\$283,738,317	\$255,267,945	\$28,470,372

Of this personal property—\$4,950,760 in 1882, and \$4,357,320 in 1881—the capital of certain corporations, was decided to be exempt from State taxes in the city of Brooklyn, because especially taxed at Albany for State purposes.

Real Estate.—The increase of assessments of real estate from those of 1881 is unusually large, amounting to \$24,273,112. This is attributable to several causes; one of these causes is the number and value of the new buildings, which will be shown hereafter. Another cause—and one that is very interesting to property owners—the actual enhancement of values in many parts of Brooklyn. Still another cause is a correction of the valuation of previous years, so as to have all assessments bear a just relation to each other.

The following is the number of new buildings erected in Brooklyn during the ten years ending June 1, 1882, and their assessed value:

Buildings erected in 1873, 1,920, assessed value of the same, \$5,073,200; 1874, 1,786, assessed value, \$4,251,700; 1875, 1,469, assessed value, \$3,617,300; 1876, 1,506, assessed value, \$3,745,100; 1877, 1,270, assessed value, \$3,349,300; 1878, 1,076, assessed value, \$3,067,300; 1879, 1,125, assessed value, \$2,958,100; 1880, 1,106, assessed value, \$3,420,800; 1881, 1,207, assessed value, \$4,861,600; 1882, 1,693, assessed value, \$6,390,690.

Department of Arrears, 1878.—A statement of the affairs of this Department for the year ending Nov. 30, 1878, shows that "under the present law relating to sales for taxes and

assessments, the expense is enormous, in comparison with what it should properly be, compared with the benefits derived therefrom. This is, in a large degree, due to the fact that no sale for taxes has been made in this department since the sale for taxes and water rates for 1872. There are now (November 30, 1878), subject to sale, taxes and water rates for the years 1873-4-5-6, together with numerous assessments.

It is estimated that the expense involved in making such sales would not be less than \$175,000. For the sale of tax and water rates for one year alone it would amount to \$30,000, or \$5,000 more than the whole salary expense of this department for the year 1879, when, says Rufus L. Scott, Esq., Registrar of Arrears for 1878, "one year's sales should not involve an expense of over \$2,000. As illustrative of the workings of the present law," continues Mr. Scott, "I will briefly refer to a few facts attending the sale for taxes and water rates of 1872. There were 7,115 parcels advertised; the expense of advertising alone was \$28,460. Only 35 parcels were purchased, realizing the sum of \$3,758.62; all the rest was purchased by the city; and the whole expense for the time being borne by the city, except for the 35 parcels, involving an expense of \$140; and excepting a small amount paid by owners of property between the time of first advertising and the sale. Another question of importance to the city is, what shall be done with the taxes and assessments on a vast amount of unimproved property, whereon the same exceeds both the assessed and real value of the property, and which property has been practically abandoned by the owners? Of the \$10,018,625.64, principal of taxes, water rates and assessments in arrears, several millions are so situated that they must prove a total loss to the city, unless some compromise can be made with the owners of the property."

The unpaid taxes, assessments and water rates, on December 1, 1878, received for collection by the Department of Arrears, were as follows:

Taxes of 1876 and previous years.....	\$4,440,676.08
Taxes of 1877.....	1,984,077.28
	\$6,424,753.36
Water rates.....	384,630.67
Assessments for street improvements, including sewerage, opening and widening streets, &c.	3,209,241.61
Total amount of principal unpaid Dec 1, 1878.	\$10,018,625.64
Unpaid principal as above.....	\$10,018,625.64
Ten per cent. default and interest.....	1,001,862.56
Estimated aggregate of collection unpaid.....	\$11,020,488.20

1881.—The total amount of collections during the year ending November 30, 1880, was \$2,121,416.70; total amount of collections during the year ending November 30, 1881, was \$2,975,961.93; difference in the amount of 1881 over that of 1880, \$854,545.23.

Amount of taxes, water rates and assessments cancelled during the year ending November 30, 1881, by acts of the Legislature, orders of Supreme and City Courts, Common Council, Board of Assessors and Board of City Works: taxes, \$929.08; water rates, \$929.86; assessments, \$60,604.94; total, \$62,463.88.

The amount of arrears transferred by the Collector of Taxes and Assessments and the Registrar of Water Rates, for the year ending November 30, 1881, was \$1,690,086.74; amount received as payment upon all arrears in this department during the year, \$2,975,961.93. There was a decrease in the amount of arrears in this department since the last statement of November 30, 1880, of \$1,285,875.19.

Redemption Fund Account.—November 30, 1880, balance to credit, \$19,604.78; amount of collections to November 30, 1881 (inclusive), \$42,936.50; total, \$62,541.28.

Warrants drawn on City Treasurer, \$38,794.48; November 30, 1881, balance to credit, \$23,746.80.

1882.—Total amounts of collections during the year ending Nov. 29, 1881, \$2,976,622.78; total amount of collections during the year ending Nov. 29, 1882, \$2,615,188.57; difference of 1881 over 1882, \$361,434.21.

Amount of taxes, water rates and assessments cancelled during the year ending November 29, 1882, by acts of the Legislature, orders of Supreme and City Courts, Common Council, Board of Assessors and Board of City Works, not including cancellations made under section 1, chapter 348, laws of 1882: Taxes, \$49,168.44; water rates, \$1,907.25; assessments, \$112,908.26; total, \$163,983.95. Amount of arrears transferred by the collector of taxes and assessments, and the Registrar of Water Rates, during the year ending Nov. 29, 1882, was \$1,435,893.92.

Redemption Fund Account.—Nov. 30, 1881, balance to credit, \$24,058.63; amount of collections to Nov. 29, 1882 (inclusive), \$41,544.12, making \$65,603.05.

Warrants drawn on the Treasury, \$38,118.62; Nov. 29, 1882, balance to credit, \$27,484.43.

Department of Police and Excise.—As we have already referred to the ordinance affecting this department, and its official organization, and as a general history appears in another part of this work (pages 557-562), we shall only give a brief statistical history of it, which cannot fail to interest all classes of people.

We shall first give the number of day and night posts in the thirteen precincts, and the eighth and ninth sub-precincts, into which the city was divided, on and before Nov. 30, 1878, with area patrol, estimated population of the same, and number of officers to population, during the year ending Nov. 30, 1878.

PRECINCT.	Day Post.	Night Post.	No. of Registered Voters.	Population of Precincts.	Officers to Population.
First.....	9	18	9,732	49,633	1 to 1,012
Second.....	8	15	5,629	28,707	1 to 755
Third.....	10	19	11,376	58,017	1 to 1,017
Fourth.....	8	17	10,482	53,458	1 to 1,137
Fifth.....	11	22	12,467	63,581	1 to 993
Sixth.....	7	13	11,040	56,304	1 to 1,373
Seventh.....	6	11	4,979	25,392	1 to 875
Eighth.....	5	10	5,738	29,263	1 to 1,009
Ninth.....	8	15	4,244	21,644	1 to 491
Tenth.....	7	14	7,713	39,336	1 to 959
Eleventh.....	5	10	3,915	20,166	1 to 695
Twelfth.....	6	12	3,250	16,575	1 to 534
Thirteenth.....	4	8	4,421	22,547	1 to 939
Eighth Sub.....	2	4	745	3,799	1 to 252
Ninth Sub.....	5	8	1,993	10,164	1 to 406
Totals.....	101	196	97,724	498,586	1 to 802

It will be seen from this table that the night posts are, in most instances, double those of the day posts.

The area of square miles in the city, is 20 9-10; miles of street in the city, 546 19-100; average length of each day post, 5 2-5 miles; average length of each night post, 2 4-5 miles.

1878.—From the report of GEN. J. JOURDAN, President of the Department of Police, we take the number of arrests made during the year ending November 30, 1878, January, 1,779; February, 1,585; March, 2,148; April, 2,105; May, 2,167; June, 2,120; July, 2,477; August, 2,539; September, 2,374; October, 2,245; November, 1,887, a number much larger than

that of the corresponding months of previous year. The amount of fines imposed upon policemen for violation of rules during the year ending November 30, 1878, in the aggregate amounted to 2,741. The number of licenses granted, and the amount received for the same and paid into the city treasury from December 1, 1877, to November 27, 1878, were as follows: First class—hotel, inn or tavern, 1,644; amount of license, at \$50 each, amounting to \$82,200. Second class—ale and beer, 837, at \$30 each, amounting to \$25,110. Third class—Storekeepers and druggists, 355, at \$30 each, amounting to \$10,650. Total number of licenses, 2,836; total amount received for licenses, \$117,960. The report to which we have alluded speaks in the highest terms of the mounted squad of the Police Department, consisting of ten officers.

"The *Telegraph Bureau* is one of very great importance to the department, all its appointments being as perfect as it is possible to make them. (See note, page 558.)

More recently the *telephone* has largely taken the place of the telegraph, by which verbal communications are made throughout the whole city, and to New York.

For the year ending November 30, 1881, the total number of the police force during the year was 642, viz., 477 patrolmen, 45 on duty at the Justices' Courts, the ferries and other public places. This reduced the patrol force to 432, and, with other reductions, giving one patrolman to every 1,568 of the inhabitants. At the time of which we are writing, the regular police force had existed 31 years, having been established in 1850. Seven years later the Metropolitan Police Department was established. (See pages 486 and 557.) General Jourdan, in his annual report for 1881, says: "The population of Brooklyn in 1875 was 484,616; in 1880, 566,689, showing an increase of 16 per cent. The number of buildings in 1875 was 53,234; in 1880, 76,865; increase of 44 per cent. Police force in 1875 was 589; in 1880, 633—an increase of 7 per cent. During the present year, 1,730 permits for the erection of new buildings have been granted by the Department of Buildings. * * * The establishment of straight posts was effected in February, 1881, and has given the business people of the principal streets of the city additional protection.

Arrests.—From December 1, 1880, to December 1, 1881, 28,838 arrests were made by the police. In addition to these, 228 arrests were made upon warrants issued by the Commissioner of the Health Department, and 153 notices of complaints were served by those officers. During the same time, 727 violations of the corporation ordinances were reported to the corporation counsel for prosecution; and 773 reports of dirty streets, and the failure of the contractor to remove ashes, garbage, etc., were made to the Department of City Works.*

"During the year 1881, 14,522 males and 4,757 females were provided with lodgings at the station houses; 1,719 lost children (of which 692 were girls) were restored to their parents or guardians, or delivered to the care of institutions established for their protection."

* The word "*street*," as construed in the city ordinances, includes "avenues, sidewalks, gutters and public alleys;" and the words "*public places*," include "parks, piers, docks and wharves, water and open spaces adjacent thereto; also, public yards, grounds and areas, and all open spaces between buildings and streets, and in view of such streets; the word "*ashes*" includes cinders, coal and everything that usually remains after fires; the word "*rubbish*" includes all the loose and decayed material and dirt-like substance that attends use or decay, or which accumulates from building, storing or cleaning; the word "*garbage*" includes every accumulation of both animal or vegetable matter, liquid or otherwise, that attends the preparation, decay and dealing in or storage of meats, fish, fowl or vegetables; and "*dirt*" means natural soil, earth and stone.

Perhaps no city in the nation has more benevolent, practical and effectual facilities for protecting lost children than Brooklyn, and no city is more watchful over the members of its police force, or more rigidly enforces all rules of discipline. As an evidence of this, during the year of which we are writing, 887 complaints for violations of rules, neglect of duty or misconduct, were filed against members of the police force, most of these complaints being made by the commanding officers; a few, however were made by the citizens. In 490 of these cases the complaint was sustained and penalty imposed; in 27 of them the penalty imposed was dismissal from the force; of the whole number of complaints made, 322 were dismissed for want of sufficient evidence.

An interesting matter connected with the police force, is the immense amount of property received by its members from persons who have gained possession of it either fraudulently or feloniously, or which had been lost by the owners; thus, there was delivered to the Property Clerk of this department during the year ending November 29, 1881, property, the estimated value of which was \$118,047.65, of which \$117,272.36 was returned to the proper owners. The estimated value of property remaining in the hands of the Property Clerk, on December 1, 1880, was \$11,598.99. On December 1, 1881, there was in his hands property valued at \$12,374.28.

Steam Boiler Inspectors.—Among the most important officers attached to this department are the steam boiler inspectors. It is the duty of these officers to thoroughly inspect all steam boilers in the city, to test them hydrostatically and otherwise, to condemn and cause to be removed all defective boilers, steam gauges, safety-valves, stop-valves, gauge cocks, and leaky joints. How well the officers discharged their duty, is evidenced by the fact that they examined during this year 1,327 steam boilers; tested hydrostatically 1,153, of which 24 were condemned and removed, and new ones ordered in their places; 159 steam boilers were found defective: 231 steam gauges; 119 defective safety-valves; 43 stop valves; 154 gauge cocks, and 300 leaky joints. As a result, no accident of any kind whatever occurred from the use of steam during the years 1880 and 81.

The Police Pension Fund. on December 1, 1881, amounted to \$35,570.68. The Police Department deposited with the City Treasurer, from December 1, 1880, to December 1, 1881, the following amounts: For excise licenses, \$206,800; for salary account, \$2,116.58, for general account (horses sold), \$280.10; total, \$209,196.68.

Board of Excise.—During the twelve months ending December 1, 1881, the Excise Commissioners granted licenses as follows: First-class licenses, 1,453, at \$100, amounting to \$145,300; first-class licenses, 8, at \$250 each, amounting to \$2,000; second-class licenses, 172, at \$50 each, amounting to \$8,600; third-class licenses, 1,019, at \$50 each, amounting to \$50,900, making a total of 2,651 licenses, for which the amount of \$256,800 was received and deposited with the City Treasurer.

There were 138 complaints for the violation of the excise law, made by the police, 45 of which were dismissed. There were 11 licenses revoked, and 61 places where spirituous liquors were supposed to be sold, placed under surveillance. There was at the end of the year about \$23,000, less the sum of \$4,283.23, at the credit of this department.

1882.—“The necessity for increasing the number of policemen in the city,” says the President’s annual report, “and for establishing a river and harbor police service, for the protection of the property along our water fronts, becomes more and more urgent as our population increases.

There were 2,013 vacant houses in various parts of the city reported to the police by residents taking their summer vacation. To these the police were instructed to give their special attention. The wisdom of this course is demonstrated by the fact that not one of the said houses were entered, or a dollar stolen from them. The number of persons arrested during this year was \$27,758; a report made to the Mayor showed there were 4,987 different trades in the city; 10,229 dogs, and 331 places where fireworks were sold. The number of lodgers at the various station-houses during the year was 20,140, of whom 15,281 were males, and 4,859 were females. This was due, in a large degree, to the cheap lodging-houses which had been established throughout the city, and the discontinuance of lodging-rooms at the First precinct station-house. The influx of professional tramps from the rural districts on the first appearance of winter, furnishes a large proportion of the station-house lodgers during the cold months of the year.”

The number of *lost children* taken charge of by the police in the various precincts of the city during the year, was 1,915, of which 1,104 were boys, and 811 girls. The Department uses every means at its command to discover the parents or guardians of such children; failing in this, it transfers them to the care of institutions established for that purpose.

Referring to the alarming increase in crime among the juvenile classes, Gen. Jourdan makes the excellent suggestion that efforts on the part of public-spirited men to establish an institution in Brooklyn for the especial care of children, should receive the hearty co-operation of the city government.

The estimated value of purloined or lost property in the custody of this department, December 1, 1881, was \$11,455.42; the estimated value of property received from officers connected with the various precincts of the city was \$95,884.82; making a total of \$107,340.24. The value of property delivered to owners, or persons authorized to receive it, amounted to \$96,296.16, leaving a balance of property in the hands of the department of the estimated value of \$11,044.08. As there were no claimants for this property, it is presumed it was brought from other places—a startling disclosure as to the insecurity of property.

During 1882, *telephonic communication* was effected with the various station houses; complaints against the police force for violations of the rules, neglect of duty or misconduct, 618, of which 395 were sustained, 223 dismissed; 19 officers dismissed, 4 of whom appealed by *certiorari* from the decision of dismissal; inspection revealed 1,413 defective steam-boilers.

This year was submitted the first report of the *Matron* connected with the department. The employment of a *Matron* was then a new project; and much doubt had been felt as to its utility. But at the end of Mrs. H. F. Crocker’s first term, Police Justices F. B. Fisher, Andrew Walsh and Garrett Bergen, in letters addressed to the Mayor and to the *Matron*, expressed their unqualified approbation of the office and the acts of its incumbent. The *Matron*’s duty is to care for those females who are brought to court, either under arrest or sentence. Mrs. Crocker thankfully acknowledged the efforts of the *Woman’s Christian Temperance Union*, on “the Hill,” in aid of her work.

Department of Excise.—The report of Commissioners LAUER and EVANS, for the year ending November 30, 1882, shows that on that day there were 2,635 licensed places in the city, divided thus: First class—hotels, 1,522; second class—storekeepers, 192; third class—ale or beer, 921; total, 2,635. Licenses were issued (December 1, 1881, to December 1,

1882): First class, 1,622; second class, 195; third class, 959; total, 2,776. Amount of fees received for the same, \$220,000. Licenses issued from December 1, 1880, to November 30, 1881: First class, 1,461; second class, 172; third class, 1,018; total, 2,651. Fees received for same, \$206,800. Excess of receipts of 1882 over 1881, \$13,400.

This board assumed charge of their part of this department by the appointment of the Mayor, under the new charter, on the 7th day of February, 1882.

"One of the most serious and lamentable difficulties with which we had to contend," said the Commissioners, "was the discovery by us that in this fair city there were, and had existed for many years, on the most prominent streets, *houses of assignation and prostitution, which held licenses to sell liquor*. We have, with steadiness, refused to renew these licenses, nor have any of these been re-licensed by us. In doing so, we have engendered bitter hate and abuse, and run the risk of personal violence; but we have been sustained by the official and moral support of the Mayor, and have had the sympathy of the law-abiding portion of the community.

Fire Department.—Under the present charter, fire and buildings formed one department, known as the *Department of Fire and Buildings*. This continued until about 1879, when they were divided and operated under separate departments. The expenditure of the Department of Fire and Buildings, from January 1 to December 1, 1878, was \$319,487.25. Among the items making up this account, \$269,887.57 was for salaries; \$1,825.65 was for shoeing horses; \$3,530 made up the "horse account;" \$5,897.16 for feed; \$1,309.15 for telegraphing; \$1,339.45, gas account; \$1,905.60, coal and wood account.

The force in the city on December 1, 1882, comprised 284 men; in addition to these, 39 employees—a total of 323.

Financial.—The amount audited to this department for salaries and maintenance, including balance from 1881, and amounts received from the sale of old apparatus and horses, was \$394,762.32; of this \$355,165.54 had been already expended. It required, to meet liabilities on outstanding contracts, \$4,832.54; \$34,764.24 was estimated as the expense of erecting the engine-house in the 22d Ward, and to purchase supplies and pay salaries for the month of December.

Bureau of Combustibles.—"The work of this bureau," says JOHN N. PARTRIDGE, Esq., Commissioner of the Fire Department, in his report for the year ending November 30, 1882, "has been conducted in a different manner than in former years. There was formerly a superintendent, book-keepers, clerks, inspectors and testers, numbering last year 15. Since about the 1st of March the bureau has been managed by the superintendent, Mr. Charles E. Mills, assisted by four firemen, detailed from the different companies, who have done all the inspecting and testing. In this way the working force has been reduced to about one-third of that of last year, with an annual saving in salaries of \$11,150. For many reasons, an experienced fireman makes the best inspector and tester. During the last session of the legislature, an act was passed, prohibiting the sale of *kerosene oil* which flashes at a temperature below 100° Fahrenheit, and prescribing a different instrument for making tests formerly used. The enforcement of this law has already produced incalculable benefits."

Losses by Fires.—Of the losses by fire this year in Brooklyn, \$1,028,461, or about four-fifths of the whole amount, was incurred at four fires: Havemeyer Sugar Refinery, \$775,736; Pond's Extract Factory, \$109,825; Locust Hill Oil Refinery, \$70,000; Brooklyn Oil Refinery, \$72,000.

During the year, 51 firemen were tried on various charges, of which 8 were dismissed, 7 reprimanded; 8 cases were dis-

missed; in the remaining cases, fines imposed amounting to \$388.73, which sum was placed in the city treasury to the credit of the Firemen's Insurance Fund. (See page 582.)

While Brooklyn has a larger population than Chicago or Boston, it had at this time (1882) only half as much apparatus as either of them, while it spends on its fire department from \$116,000 to \$185,000 less per annum; while New York, with nearly double the population, has about four times as much apparatus and spends four times as much money.

Department of Health.—Inspection revealed 8,000 people in the city who had never been vaccinated. The vaccinators visited 7,000 houses, and offered vaccination to 15,000 families, and 12,000 persons were vaccinated. In 1881, the vaccinators visited 41,068 families and vaccinated 16,936 persons. During the past year, there were 3,200 complaints made, by citizens, of nuisances. The Board of Health of Brooklyn were the first to recommend that the construction of the drainage works of dwellings should be made by statute the subject of a proper official supervision and inspection, and there are strict laws regulating the size and thickness of walls, the thickness of beams, etc., etc. The law also provides that no building shall be erected until their plans have been submitted to, and approved by, the Board of Health.

About the year 1877, the attention of the Health Department was called to the pumps in the city (about 311) and the water therein. This was originated by an examination of thirteen cases of typhoid fever, eight of which were attributed to the use of pump water. While the relation between the disease and the well water was not absolutely demonstrated, the conclusion seemed irresistible that some such relation existed, and the wells were closed. (See, also, page 568.)

Impure and adulterated milk, diseased and tainted meats, have been the constant objects of watchfulness on the part of the inspectors of the Board of Health.

New Plumbing Law (referred to on page 568).—In 1881, the legislature passed an act entitled "An act to secure the Registration of Plumbers and the Supervision of Plumbing and Drainage in the cities of New York and Brooklyn." In April, 1882, the Common Council of Brooklyn made an appropriation of \$2,500 for the enforcement of this law, and it is now being carried out by plumbers generally. "This," says Commissioner Raymond, "is one of the most important acts ever passed for the preservation of health in a populous city. Previous to its enforcement, there was no restriction in the manner in which plumbing should be done, and the builder or plumber had no difficulty in palming off upon the public work which was constructed without the least regard to anything except a quick sale and a speedy return of the money invested. Some of the most recently constructed houses were found, for want of proper plumbing, a constant invitation for disease to enter and do its destructive work. Under the provisions of this act, all the plumbing and drainage of new buildings must be done in accordance with plans previously approved by the Department of Health, and the work must be left uncovered until approved by an inspector.

Ambulance Service.—(See page 567.)

Department of Buildings.—This Department was formerly connected, as we have seen (page 580), with the Fire Department. Perhaps no department under the present city charter more thoroughly exhibits the growth and prosperity of the city than this. Every building in the municipality is erected under a permit issued by the Commissioner of Buildings. The following is the number of permits issued during the year ending November 30, 1881, with the estimated costs of the buildings, their character and the material of which they are constructed. Cost, total, of all buildings erected, \$9,115,232.

Character of Buildings.—Private dwellings, 895; dwellings for from two to four families, 339; stores and dwellings, 133, tenement houses, 47; carpenter and work shops, 73; stables, 148; factories, 59; stores, 24; billiard room, 1; store-houses, 6; foundries, 7; office buildings, 12; club-houses, 2; boiler-houses, 14; brewery, 1; smoke-house, 1; coal pocket, 1; ice-house, 1; green-houses, 8; engine-rooms, 2; churches, 4; slaughter-houses, 2; pump-room, 1; hospital 1; storage-sheds, 71; theatre, 1; elevators, 2; house, 1; asylum, 1; public school, 1; moulding mill, 1; ferry-house, 1; railroad depots, 4; convent, 1. kiln, 1.

Material of buildings erected in each ward, during the year.

WARDS.	BRICK.	FRAME.	TOTAL.
First.....	25	2	27
Second.....	8	2	10
Third.....	14	..	14
Fourth.....	11	..	11
Fifth.....	1	1	2
Sixth.....	24	..	24
Seventh.....	68	17	85
Eighth.....	21	63	84
Ninth.....	15	7	22
Tenth.....	70	13	83
Eleventh.....	11	..	11
Twelfth.....	21	20	41
Thirteenth.....	13	..	13
Fourteenth.....	17	23	40
Fifteenth.....	15	20	35
Sixteenth.....	14	30	44
Seventeenth.....	13	69	82
Eighteenth.....	24	182	206
Nineteenth.....	99	17	116
Twentieth.....	23	..	23
Twenty-first.....	69	121	190
Twenty-second.....	206	37	243
Twenty-third.....	248	..	248
Twenty-fourth.....	20	51	71
Twenty-fifth.....	107	35	142
Totals.....	1 157	710	1,867

BUILDINGS.	HOW OCCUPIED.	1 story.	2 stories.	2 stories and basement.	3 stories.	3 stories and basement.	4 stories.	4 stories and basement.	5 stories.	6 stories.
Dwellings.....		38	196	391	106	321	17	..	..	..
Stores & dwell'gs		..	26	..	71	..	30	..	..	..
Tenements.....		33	..	3	..	..	..
Flats.....		..	3	..	55	..	102	..	1	..

Of the above number of buildings, 579 were brown-stone fronts.

Number of applications made, and permits granted for use of party walls, 236; for moving buildings, alterations, etc., 1,035. There were, during this year, 98 buildings provided with fire escapes.

Permits for new buildings from Dec. 1, 1881, to Dec. 1, 1882, 2,376; permits for new buildings from Dec. 1, 1880, to Dec. 1, 1881, 1,939; increase over last year, 437; estimated cost of new buildings from Dec. 1, 1881, to Dec. 1, 1882, \$10,386,263; estimated cost of new buildings from Dec. 1, 1880, to Dec. 1, 1881, \$9,498,347; increase over last year, \$887,916.

Character of the Buildings.—Private dwellings, 1,096; dwellings containing from four to two families, 454; stores and dwellings, 164; tenement houses, 158; carpenter and work shops, 96; stables, 148; storage sheds, 61; factories, 78; foundries, 6; ice houses, 3; office buildings, 21; stores, 19; store houses, 15; school houses, 5; packing houses, 1; churches, 9; boiler houses, 10; convent, 1; railroad depots, 3; club house, 1; hotel, 1; buildings for manufacturing gas, 5; halls, 4; engine rooms, 4; green houses, 3; homes, 2; billiard room, 1; breweries, 2; hospitals, 4; mills, 1.

BUILDINGS.	HOW OCCUPIED.	1 Story.	2 Stories.	3 Stories & Basement.	3 Stories.	3 Stories & Basement.	4 Stories.	4 Stories & Basement.	5 Stories.	5 Stories & Basement.	6 Stories.	8 Stories.	10 Stories.
Dwellings.....		67	417	435	213	248	3	24	..	..	..	..	..
Stores and dwellings		..	13	1	88	..	27	24	..	..	..	..	..
Tenement houses.....		3	..	..	..	..
Flats.....		..	3	..	88	..	1	60	..	..	..	..	..
Stores and flats.....		83	..	1	60	..	..	..	..	..
Factories.....		18	19	..	19	1	10	..	7	..	1	1	1

It is a singular fact that most of the buildings erected since 1874 are in seven wards in the city, and we give below these wards as follows:

WARDS.	1874	1875	1876	1877	1878	1879	1880	1881	11 mos of 1882	
Seventh.....	109	118	135	135	106	123	127	97	98	1,048
Eighteenth.....	49	116	125	129	145	176	189	235	418	1,572
Nineteenth.....	122	141	102	129	104	103	125	119	93	1,038
Twenty-first.....	126	234	145	132	162	137	173	233	200	1,542
Twenty-second.....	81	155	185	164	200	199	209	251	237	1,681
Twenty-third.....	184	123	154	147	160	65	111	256	191	1,311
Twenty-fifth.....	99	148	200	131	175	145	99	155	233	1,385

From January 1, 1874, to December 1, 1882, permits for new buildings were granted as follows: 1874, 1,344; 1875, 1,648; 1876, 1,743; 1877, 1,708; 1878, 1,748; 1879, 1,703; 1880, 1,705; 1881, 2,005; 1882, 2,238. During the year ending December 1, 1882, 167 buildings were provided with fire escapes; 26 unsafe buildings removed; 177 unsafe buildings repaired; 1,840 new buildings completed; cost of new buildings completed was \$8,169,471; number of buildings in course of erection, 660.

The biography and portrait of Mr. WILLIAM H. GAYLOR, the present efficient and popular Commissioner of Buildings, will be found on page 580. Previous to the organization of this department, there were *Fire Wardens* and *Fire Marshals*, whose functions (analogous to those of the present Commissioner of Buildings) are stated on page 580, together with a list of such officers.

Department of Parks.—As the various parks in the city of Brooklyn have already been referred to (page 595), we shall give simply a brief statistical history. There are 582.57 acres, or thereabouts, devoted to parks in the municipality of Brooklyn, divided as follows: Prospect Park, 521.87; Washington Park, 30.16; City Hall Park, 1.61; City Park, 7.39; Carroll Park, 1.86; Zindle Park, number of acres not given; Tompkins Park, 7.82; Park on Heights, 0.86; Cumberland Street Park, number of acres not given; Reservoir property at Prospect Park, 11; total, 582.57.

1881.—Expended for the maintenance of these parks, during year ending November 30, 1881, \$97,123.84, to wit: Prospect Park, \$87,038.07; Washington Park, \$4,752.82; Carroll Park, \$4,567.07; City Park, \$1,825.92; City Hall Park, \$1,657.39; Tompkins Park, \$1,658.39; Cumberland Street Park, \$71.37; Zindel Park, \$7.25.

Revenue derived from the public parks of the city during the year ending November 30, 1881: From boats and skating, \$1,000; rents, \$3,659; sale of water, \$1,882.34; care of wagons, baby-carriages, &c., \$27.75; sale of ice, \$117.30; royalty on Carousal, \$385.15; camera obscura, \$31.50; stray animals, \$7; labor, \$2; total, \$7,112.04.

There was paid for music in Prospect Park during 1881 the sum of \$1,500. *Park Police* salaries amounted to \$1,502.66. *Salaries* of park officers and employees during 1881, \$8,500.20. Arrests (1881), 112; lost children found and returned to parents, 15. There were 3,000 permits issued for the use of portions of the pic-nic woods and for the parade grounds for base-ball, cricket, foot-ball, lacrosse and other field sports.

HON. J. S. T. STRANAHAN, *President of the Park Commission*, in his report for 1881, remarks of the force employed in the parks: "It may safely be said that 80 per cent. of the force then engaged had been in the employ of the Commissioners for over five years, the majority of them for over ten years. This force, which at present contains (including the officers) about 42 men, is scarcely adequate for the wide range of service which our necessities demand of it. With this small force, we are required to provide police surveillance, night and day, for Prospect Park and Washington Park (these two being the most important and exacting in their requirements), Carroll Park, Tompkins Park, the City Park, the Parade Ground, the Parkway and Coney Island." He also especially notes the storm of January 21, 1881, "consisting of rain and sleet, followed by a very low temperature, which, within the space of ten hours, effected great destruction upon the trees and beautiful shrubs in the park. These were so weighted down with ice upon every branch and twig, as to seriously damage many valuable plants. Fifty wagon loads of broken limbs and other *debris*, resulting from the effects of the storm, were gathered in the Park."

1882.—A new Board of Park Commissioners was appointed June 17, 1882. The Hon. J. S. T. STRANAHAN retired from the office of President of the Commission at that time, after twenty-two years' gratuitous service to the city. And when, subsequently, December 12, 1882, the City Comptroller, Hon. Ludwig Semler, informed Mr. Stranahan that an examination of the account of the Commission, up to the 17th day of June, then last, showed that there was a deficiency in the account to the credit to the city of \$10,605.42, Mr. Stranahan replied on the same day, stating that "acting upon the principles by which I have been guided during twenty-two years' gratuitous service to the city, I hand to you my check for \$10,605.42, to cover such deficiency, so that the books and accounts of the Park Commission can be correctly balanced."*

It is proper to say that these deficiencies were distributed over transactions extending through twenty-two years, and many of them only apparent deficiencies. That there should be inaccuracies in transactions running through so long a period, and in which some eight millions of dollars were involved, is natural, and forms an interesting and instructive incident in the financial history of the Department of Parks. The matter being thus satisfactorily and happily adjusted, the new Commissioners proceeded to discharge their duties under most favorable and prosperous circumstances.

Maintenance of the Parks. This, for the year 1882, was \$108,482.42. There was appropriated by the Common Council for the benefit of the parks during the year, \$100,000. Paid into the City Treasury, from the Park revenue, as follows: balance received from former board, \$2,859.08; received present board, \$5,623.36; total, \$108,482.44. Received from the Park Commissioners, from January 1, 1865, to June 17, 1882, \$8,438,799.56; deposited in addition to this, amounts not entered in cash-book in 1868, 67 cents; 1870, \$75; 1872, \$1,100.60; Total, \$1,176.27; increasing the general receipts to, \$8,439,975.83; amounts paid and cash drawn, \$8,402,212.44; balance, \$37,763.39. Total amount of deposits, \$8,413,184.42; total amount of checks drawn, \$8,386,025.45; balance, \$27,158.97; deficiency, \$10,605.42.

The above statistical statement is important, as explaining in a most satisfactory manner, the deficiency of \$10,605.42,

found on the 17th of June, 1882, and for which Mr. Stranahan gave his check. It also shows the financial condition of the parks of the city, June, 7, 1882, 18 years ending.

License Bureau.—On April 5, 1882, the ordinance regulating the issuing of licenses was amended by the Common Council; and certain classes of business and vehicles, which were required to be licensed in former years, were omitted, reducing the classes of license to one-third. Those occupations, etc., subject to license during the years 1881–1882, were as follows: Public carts, dirt carts, trucks and express wagons, peddlers and hawkers, junk dealers, public hacks and cabs, railroad cars, billiard tables, hack and stage drivers, pawn brokers, auctioneers, intelligence offices, stages, bowling alleys, shooting galleries, slaughter houses, ticket speculators, theaters, circuses, shows, fireworks, (wholesale and retail,) dogs, exhibitions, hand carts, fish mongers, meat dealers, chimney sweeps, undertakers, real estate agents, charcoal venders, public porters, fish and fruits.

Total fees received for licenses during 1881, \$44,733.10; for 1882, \$51,914.40; showing an increase of \$7,181.30 over 1881.

The Truant Home.—This institution was established by an act of the Legislature passed April 12, 1853, entitled "an act to provide for the care and instruction of idle and truant children." This act gives the corporate authorities of every city and incorporated village the right to "restrain, take care of, and properly educate all idle and truant children, between the ages of five and fourteen, within their limits." Very soon after the passage of this act (1853), the Truant Home (then known as the *Juvenile Home of Industry*), was established in the city of Brooklyn. It was soon apparent that the institution was to be both successful and useful. In 1857, it was removed to the Old Penitentiary, on Clove road, Flatbush, where it remained until the corporation purchased the J. J. Sneiderker Hotel property, on the Gowanus road (eleven acres, costing \$25,000), to which the institution was removed.

The Home has continued to meet the full expectation of its founders, and has proved an excellent auxiliary to the city's system of compulsory education. It is, also, a school where these children are educated in those primary branches designed to prepare them for future usefulness.

The boys are taught salutary habits of industry in working on the small farm and garden belonging to it. The course of study pursued in the institution embraces the same studies as those pursued in the graded schools in the city.

Their religious education is not neglected. On the Sabbath, there is a Sunday-school for the Protestant boys, and another for the Catholic boys, conducted by lay teachers of their respective denominations, not otherwise connected with the institution.

The duties of the teachers are not merely to give the scholar instruction, but also to see that his behavior is made such as can be approved of by all; and to inculcate, by kindness, habits of truthfulness, cleanliness, industry, and many other traits of character heretofore unknown to the majority of boys received into institutions of this description. On the whole, the Truant Home is, and has been for many years, one of the institutions of the municipality of Brooklyn, of which, as a reformatory, as a place of education, and a home for unfortunate children, it may justly be proud.

The officers of the Home are a Superintendent and Matron, teachers, and a farmer, seamstress, watchman, etc. The Superintendents of the Home, since the inception, have been: Messrs. Gerry; A. C. Van Epps; Charles Demarest; John A. Galvin; Wm. A. McTammany. The average number of boys under instruction is 60. The expenses of maintenance were, in 1881, \$12,565.86 (including a balance of \$1,043.36 from previous year); 1882, \$11,522.

*It was never supposed that this deficiency was in any manner attributable to Mr. Stranahan. When on investigating the books, and learning that it did exist, he gave his check for the amount, for the purpose of having the books balanced at the close of his administration, expecting, of course, to be properly reimbursed after a full investigation of the deficiency and its nature.

The Inebriates' Home. *Statistics.*—During year ending October 31, 1881, 511 cases were treated, including 123 patients remaining in the Home November 1, 1880, of which 99 were males, 24 females. Of the 511, 72 were re-admissions. Whole number of patients treated, 439; males, 375; females, 64; 165 males were married; females, 31. The oldest patient was 65 years, the youngest 19.

During the year ending October 31, 1881, the Home received from the City Comptroller, \$27,435, and from the towns in the county of Kings, \$1,766.96, amounting in all to \$29,201.96.

A marked increase of "boarders" indicated that the institution was appreciated and constantly widening its sphere and usefulness.

The average time of a patient's residence in the Home is estimated at about five months. There was received from

boarder patients during the year, \$19,784.43, as against \$12,274.27 the year previous.

1882.—This year was advanced to the Home, from the Comptroller of the city, the sum of \$34,147.50; and, from the towns in the county of Kings, \$1,752.29; making a total of \$35,899.79. There was received from boarder patients during the year, \$32,372.14, an excess of \$19,734.43 of the year previous.

There were remaining in the Home, November 1, 1881, 117 patients; 365 were discharged during the year; 4 deaths; 3 transferred to other institutions; total, 372. Remaining in the Home November 1, 1883, 133; males, 118; females, 15. The total number treated during the year was 505; of these, 117 were married males; 31 married females. Total, males, 442; females, 63. The oldest patient 65, the youngest, 19 years.

A LIST OF THE
MAYORS, PRESIDENTS OF COMMON COUNCIL, AND CITY OFFICERS
OF THE
CITY OF BROOKLYN,
SINCE THE CONSOLIDATION OF BROOKLYN, WILLIAMSBURGH AND BUSHWICK.

1855. *Mayor, George Hall; President of Common Council, D. P. Barnard; Comptroller, W. B. Lewis; Corporation Council, N. F. Waring; Auditor, D. L. Northrup, Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1857. *Mayor, Samuel S. Powell; President Common Council, Edward B. Pierson; Comptroller, W. B. Lewis; Counselor, R. C. Barnard; Auditor, D. L. Northrup; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1858. *Mayor, S. S. Powell; President Common Council, E. B. Pierson; Comptroller, W. B. Lewis; Counselor, Samuel E. Johnson; Auditor, D. L. Northrup; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1859. *Mayor, S. S. Powell; President Common Council, Martin Kalbfleisch; Comptroller, Charles H. Collins; Counselor, Alex. McCue; Auditor, John Doherty; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1860. *Mayor, S. S. Powell; President Common Council, Martin Kalbfleisch; Comptroller, Charles H. Collins; Counselor, Alex. McCue; Auditor, John Doherty; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1861. *Mayor, Martin Kalbfleisch; President Common Council, Alfred M. Wood; Comptroller, Charles H. Collins; Counselor, Alex. McCue; Auditor, John Doherty; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1862. *Mayor, Martin Kalbfleisch; President Common Council, Alfred M. Wood; Comptroller, Charles H. Collins; Counselor, Alex. McCue; Auditor, John Doherty; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1863. *Mayor, Martin Kalbfleisch; President Common Council, Dennis O'Keefe; Comptroller, Thomas H. Faron; Counselor, John G. Schumaker; Auditor, John Doherty; Clerk, Henry McCloskey.*

1864. *Mayor, Alfred M. Wood; President Common Council, T. V. P. Talmadge; Comptroller, Thomas H. Faron; Counselor, John G. Schumaker; Auditor, John Doherty; Clerk, Henry McCloskey.*

1865. *Mayor, Alfred M. Wood; President Common Council, Daniel D. Whitney; Comptroller, Thomas H. Faron; Counselor, John G. Schumaker; Auditor, James Lynch; Clerk, Henry McCloskey.*

1866. *Mayor, Samuel Booth; President Common Council, A. M. Bliss; Comptroller, Thomas H. Faron; Counselor, John J. Schumaker; Auditor, James Lynch; Clerk, Henry McCloskey.*

1867. *Mayor, Samuel Booth; President Common Council, George H. Fisher; Comptroller, Thomas H. Faron; Counselor, John J. Schumaker; Auditor, James McLeer; Clerk, Henry McCloskey.*

1868. *Mayor, Martin Kalbfleisch; President Common Council, Jacob I. Bergen; Comptroller, Thomas H. Faron; Counselor, Alex. McCue; Auditor, James McLeer; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1869. *Mayor, Martin Kalbfleisch; President Common Council, Jacob I. Bergen; Comptroller, E. M. Johnson; Counselor, Wm. C. DeWitt; Auditor, James O'Brien; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1870. *Mayor, Martin Kalbfleisch; President Common Council, Jacob I. Bergen; Comptroller, E. M. Johnson; Counselor, Wm. C. DeWitt; Auditor, James O'Brien; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1871. *Mayor, Martin Kalbfleisch; President Common Council, Jacob I. Bergen; Comptroller, E. M. Johnson; Counselor, Wm. C. DeWitt; Auditor, James O'Brien; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1872. *Mayor, Samuel S. Powell; President Common Council, Jacob I. Bergen; Comptroller, F. A. Schroeder; Counselor, Wm. C. DeWitt; Auditor, N. Shaurman; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1873. *Mayor, S. S. Powell; President Common Council, John Clancy; Comptroller, F. A. Schroeder; Counselor, Wm. C. DeWitt; Auditor, N. Shaurman; Clerk, Wm. H. Bishop.*

1874. *Mayor*, John W. Hunter; *President Common Council*, Jacob I. Bergen; *Comptroller*, F. Schroeder; *Counselor*, Wm. C. DeWitt; *Auditor*, N. Shaurman; *Clerk*, Wm. H. Bishop.

1875. *Mayor*, John H. Hunter; *President Common Council*, Jacob I. Bergen; *Comptroller*, S. S. Powell; *Counselor*, Wm. C. DeWitt; *Auditor*, Wm. H. Searing; *Clerk*, W. H. Bishop.

1876. *Mayor*, Fred. A. Schroeder; *President Common Council*, John French; *Comptroller*, S. S. Powell; *Counselor*, Wm. C. DeWitt; *Auditor*, Wm. H. Searing; *Clerk*, Wm. H. Bishop.

1877. *Mayor*, Fred. A. Schroeder; *President Common Council*,* Francis B. Fisher; *Comptroller*, William Burrell; *Counselor*, Wm. C. DeWitt; *Auditor*, Wm. H. Searing; *Clerk*, Wm. H. Bishop.

1878. *Mayor*, James Howell; *President Common Council*, Francis B. Fisher; *Comptroller*, William Burrell; *Counselor*, William C. DeWitt; *Auditor*, F. E. Howard (deputy and acting); *Clerk*, Wm. H. Bishop.

1879. *Mayor*, James Howell; *President Common Council*, Wm. H. Ray; *Comptroller*, William L. Steinmetz; *Counselor*, Wm. C. DeWitt; *Auditor*, A. Ammerman; *Clerk*, Dennis McNamara.

1880. *Mayor*, James Howell; *President Common Council*, Robert Black; *Comptroller*, Wm. L. Steinmetz; *Counselor*, Wm. C. DeWitt; *Auditor*, A. Ammerman; *Clerk*, Dennis McNamara.

1881. *Mayor*, James Howell; *President Common Council*, Robert Black; *Comptroller*, Ludwig Semler; *Counselor*, Wm. C. DeWitt; *Auditor*, Z. Voorheis; *Clerk*, Dennis McNamara.

* There was a severe contest in the Common Council this year over the election of President. Many ballots were taken without any result, when Wm. H. Ray was elected temporary Chairman for one day, and the Board adjourned till the 18th of February, when Francis B. Fisher was elected President.

1882. *Mayor*, Seth Low; *President Common Council*, Theodore D. Dimon; *Comptroller*, Ludwig Semler; *Counselor*, John Taylor; *Auditor*, Z. Voorheis; *Clerk*, William J. Tate.

1883. *Mayor*, Seth Low; *President Common Council*, James Weir, Jr.; *Comptroller*, Aaron Brinkerhoff; *Counselor*, John A. Taylor; *Auditor*, August Boege; *Clerk*, Wm. J. Tate.

1884. *Mayor*, Seth Low; *President Common Council*, Theophilus O'Lena; *Comptroller*, Aaron Brinkerhoff; *Counselor*, John A. Taylor; *Auditor*, August Boege; *Clerk*, John Shanley.

We have now given a condensed history of the municipality of Brooklyn, tracing its well sustained progress through a period of nearly seventy years. One of the gratifying incidents in its history is the uniform facility with which the municipal government, both village and city, has been operated; especially when we remember that a municipality is essentially a State, combining every element of good government necessary for the protection of its people, whose complicated powers must be distributed with the most delicate skill, and the utmost reverence for principle, rectitude and patriotism. Amid the large number of officers, and the immense patronage in the hands of those entrusted with its executive and legislative departments; amid the friction of self-interest, the struggle for places of honor and profit; amid the most heated political contests, all the vicissitudes of financial prosperity and depression, the city government has moved along to its present acknowledged supremacy, showing that at all times, under all circumstances, it has been administered by men who subordinated every ulterior consideration to the welfare and prosperity of the city.



THE DEPARTMENT OF POLICE AND EXCISE.

BY THE EDITOR.

Early Village Constabulary.—When Brooklyn was young, the protection of its peace, and the execution of village ordinances, was safely entrusted to the energy of Justice Nichols (see page 117) and its one constable, Rike Reid, who was for many years literally “a terror to evil-doers,” whom a doggerel rhymster once addressed (in the columns of the *Star*) in the following fashion :

“Do you not fear the terrors of the law,
The direful energy of Justice Nichols?
Or lest *Rike Reid* let fall his mighty paw,
And put you all in very pretty pickle?”

The constabulary system, though it was enlarged as the village grew to the dimensions of a city, possessed no such completeness of organization as would now be deemed essential to civic dignity.

Prior to 1850, there was no regularly organized police department in Brooklyn, though more or less imperfect organizations for the protection of life and property, and the preservation of the public peace, had existed; and a system of patrol had been adopted which, for a time, met the requirements of the city.

First Regular City Police.—In 1850, a department was organized, with Mr. John S. Folk as chief of police. Mr. Folk held the position until the organization of **The Metropolitan Board of Police**, in 1857 (see page 486), when he was appointed inspector of that department in and for Brooklyn.

The Metropolitan Police Board headquarters were then at No. 300 Mulberry street, New York, whence orders emanated from four Commissioners and a General Superintendent. To Brooklyn was assigned one Inspector and ten Captains; and the city was divided into ten precincts, numbered (in continuation of the number of New York city precincts) from 41 to 50 inclusive; with sub-stations for the 43d and 49th precincts. In addition to the force of 368 employed in these precincts, there was the “Atlantic Dock Squad,” of 14, detailed to the protection of that important interest, and paid by the Atlantic Dock Co.; and a “Sanitary Squad” of seven, with a sergeant, detailed to execute the orders of the Health Board in Brooklyn.

The Metropolitan system of Police (as well as of Health and of Excise), which was found to be somewhat cumbersome, and which was an invasion and overshadowing of local governments, came to an end in 1870.

The Board of Police of the City of Brooklyn.—

An act to establish a police department in and for the city of Brooklyn, and to define its powers and duties, was passed April 5th, 1870, which declared that the city of Brooklyn should thereafter constitute a separate police district; and a police department was thereby created therein, the management and control of which was vested in a board of commissioners, to be known and designated as “The Board of Police of the City of Brooklyn.” The Board was to be composed of the Mayor and two suitable persons, to be nominated by him, and appointed by the Board of Aldermen, who should be known and act as Commissioners of Police, and who should each receive a salary of \$3,000 per annum. The Commissioners were empowered to divide the city into precincts, not exceeding, in the aggregate, one precinct to each fifty of the patrolmen authorized to be appointed; to appoint a chief of police, captains, sergeants and patrolmen; and to pass such rules, regulations and orders for the government of the police force, as they might deem proper to be promulgated by the chief of police; the police force to be subordinate to the mayor, and under his orders, so far as he might think necessary. One of the Commissioners was chosen president of the board, and the other treasurer; and a secretary, or chief clerk, a deputy clerk, a treasurer’s book-keeper, two surgeons, a drill captain, two doormen for each station, a property clerk, a stenographic clerk, and a clerk to the chief of police were appointed. The act provided for the payment of the following annual salaries :

Commissioners, \$3,000; Chief of Police, \$3,500; Captains, \$1,500; Sergeants, \$1,200; Patrolmen, \$1,000; Chief Clerk (also serving as clerk of the Board), \$2,500; Deputy Clerks, \$1,500; Property Clerk, \$1,200; Stenographic Clerk, \$1,500; Treasurer’s Book-keeper, \$1,500; Clerk of the Chief of Police, \$1,000; Drill Captain, \$1,200; Doormen, \$800.

By the terms of this act, all the property, station-houses and effects within the city of Brooklyn, belonging to, or used by, the Metropolitan Police, at the time of the passage of this act, were vested in the City of Brooklyn, for the use and purposes of the police department by this act established; the Common Council were to provide such office and business accommodations as should be requisite for the transaction of the business of the new commissioners and its officers, and provide such new station-houses and furniture therefor, as, from time to time, should be required.

The Mayor and joint board of members of the Com-

non Council of the city, and of the Supervisors were to determine the amount to be raised in the annual taxes for the expenses of the police department; and the Board of Supervisors, of the county of Kings, were annually to raise the amount, so fixed and determined, in the taxes levied for the purposes of the city. The unexpended balance of money paid by the city of Brooklyn and the Supervisors towards the expenses of the Metropolitan Police District, were to be paid into the State Treasury; and by the State Treasurer were to be transmitted to the Treasurer of the city of Brooklyn, by whom they were to be expended, first, in the liquidation of the expenses incurred and remaining unpaid, of the Metropolitan Police of the city of Brooklyn, and then to the expenses of the new city Police Department.

The patrolmen and doormen of the Metropolitan Board of Police on duty in the City of Brooklyn, at the time of the passage of this act, were continued in the new organization. All other members of the Metropolitan Police force of Brooklyn were to be appointed by the New Board of Police. The assistant *Fire Marshal*, appointed in pursuance of the Act passed May 4th, 1868, creating the office of Metropolitan Fire Marshal, and prescribing its powers and duties, was continued in office during the pleasure of the new Board, with the same powers and duties, and with a salary of \$2,000 a year.

The act invested the Mayor with the powers granted to mayors of cities, under the General Laws of the State, in respect to requiring the services of the military in aid of the civil authorities to quell riots, suppress insurrections, protect property and preserve public tranquility; and provided that no Police Board should exercise such powers within such city.

In pursuance of this act, the Common Council of the city, on the 28th day of April, 1870, on nomination of his Honor the Mayor (a member of the Board of Police by the act above referred to), duly appointed DANIEL D. BRIGGS and ISAAC VAN ANDEN as Police Commissioners. On the first day of May following, a meeting of the Board of Police was held, when Commissioner BRIGGS was chosen *President*, and Commissioner VAN ANDEN, *Treasurer*, of the Board. June 1st, following, *John S. Folk*, formerly Inspector under the Metropolitan Police System, was superseded by the appointment of PATRICK CAMPBELL, ex-Sheriff of Kings County, as Chief of Police. The majority of the police force was composed of men who had been appointed by, and served under, the Metropolitan Police Commission, while several of the old Captains and Sergeants were retained by the Board regardless of political sentiment.

A building at the corner of Johnson and Washington streets was leased for one year as an office for the Inspector of Police and Detective force; and in that building, though it was inadequate for the purpose,

the headquarters of the Police Commissioners were established. The lease having expired on the first of May, 1871, more commodious headquarters, at the corner of Court and Livingston streets, were secured.

A "Telegraph Squad," composed of three experienced operators, was organized, and placed under the direction of Superintendent of Telegraph, George H. Flanley. The Central Department was thus placed in constant communication with all Police Stations in Brooklyn, all engine houses in the Western District, the office of Fire Commissioners, the Central Office of the New York Police Department, the Water Department and the Ridgewood Engine House and Reservoir.*

At the rendering of the first annual report in 1871, the force (in twelve precincts, exclusive of the Central and the Detective squads), comprised 10 Captains, 49 Sergeants, 22 Roundsmen, 39 Patrolmen assigned to

* The Telegraph Bureau is, in many respects, the most important branch of the Police Department; and, for many years, its management under Mr. George H. Flanley, the Superintendent, has been acknowledged to be above criticism. While, for a long time, the police force numerically has been almost at a standstill, police telegraph lines have been continually extended, until at the present time they would, in one straight line, cover a distance of over 100 miles, not including the telephone wires. Communication between the various station houses and Police Headquarters is seldom interrupted, no matter what the violence of the storm may be. The Police Telegraph Bureau of Brooklyn may be said in its various stages to mark distinctly the history of the art. When Mr. Flanley came here from the New York Police Department, in 1858, the dials were first put up. The system was then in its most crude state, the stop movement and signal calls being only in use. The dial system has been ever since retained, as the most useful for Police purposes. The signal system is now seldom employed. Telephones were introduced as an adjunct to the telegraph system about two years ago; and, at present, every station house in the city has both telephonic and telegraphic communication with Police Headquarters. The latter are used for all general alarms and the former for individual messages. With both systems in thorough working order, the immense business of the office is smoothly transacted. The day on which the bureau is most severely taxed is on Election Day, but the rule has been that the figures sent in on election night are recorded quicker than they can be furnished to the police by the canvassers.

During 1883, Mr. Flanley, with the consent of the Commissioner, introduced a new feature in the shape of a POLICE SIGNAL BOOTH, in which an instrument has been placed by which calls for the Fire Department, ambulances, patrolmen, or for extra assistance may be transmitted to headquarters. This is done automatically by special signals. In addition to this, it possesses the mechanical and electrical appliances necessary to make it a *fire and police alarm box*. There are clever telephonic devices in the booth which enable both the police and firemen to converse with their respective headquarters. The booth is located at the corner of Fulton street and Franklin avenue, that being the dividing line of the Fourth, Ninth, Tenth and Twelfth Precincts. The officers covering the adjoining posts have to make regular trips to the box and communicate with headquarters. The booth has now had a fair trial of several months, and its usefulness has frequently been demonstrated. In a few years it is expected that many such booths will be placed in different parts of the city. The system has been in operation in Chicago for two years, and there are now over 300 stations in that city. Mr. Flanley has recommended that signal boxes be placed at the various ferries, as they could be used there to good purpose in the reporting of fires, accidents, calls for ambulances or other business pertaining to the department, such as detecting criminals passing to and from New York.

The business of the Telegraph Bureau shows a steady increase. Over its wires much of the business of the City Works Department, Board of Health and the Coroner's office is transacted, and citizens use it for various purposes. Last year 174,114 messages of the most varied description were sent from and received at Headquarters. Matters the most trivial as well as the most important are transmitted from the station houses, and the location of a dead dog, the robbery of a coat, a railroad accident, a murder, a highway robbery, the announcement of a lost child, follow each other over the wires in rapid succession.—(Condensed from *Brooklyn Eagle*, Dec. 1883).

special duty, 303 Patrolmen assigned to patrol duty, 26 Doormen; total, 449.

In pursuance of "An act to amend an act of the Legislature of the State of New York," entitled "An act to establish a Police Department in and for the city of Brooklyn, and define its powers and duties," passed April 25, 1872, on the 21st of May following, the Mayor (*ex officio* Commissioner) appointed DANIEL D. BRIGGS, and the Comptroller and Auditor appointed JAMES JOURDAN and SIGISMUND KAUFMANN as Police Commissioners. The Board was organized on the above date, by the election of James Jourdan, *President*, and Daniel D. Briggs, *Treasurer* (Sigismund Kaufmann resigned on the 31st of December, 1872). May 27th, PATRICK CAMPBELL was reappointed *Chief of Police*, and John S. Folk, *Inspector*.

The Department of Police and Excise, to consist of a President and two Commissioners, was created under the charter of 1873, of which the President of the Board of Police, and the Commissioners in office on May 1st, 1873, together with a Commissioner to be appointed under the provisions of existing laws, were members. The act provided that the President and Commissioners of the said Board should serve out their terms of office; on the expiration of which, and every two years thereafter, the President and Commissioners should be appointed by the Mayor, with the consent of the Board of Aldermen; and that all appointments to fill vacancies (which might, from time to time, exist) in the Board of Police and Excise, should be made in like manner; stipulating that the President should receive a salary of \$7,000, inclusive and in lieu of his salary as a member of the Board of Health of the City of Brooklyn; and each of the Commissioners an annual salary of \$5,000.

The Department was given the management and control of all matters relating to the police and excise; subject, however, to the ordinances of the Common Council and the laws of the State; all monies collected for licenses to be for the benefit of the city, except such part thereof as was then, or might thereafter be, provided by law, to be paid to the Inebriate Home of the County of Kings. The terms of office of the two Commissioners of Excise of the city of Brooklyn terminated on the passage of the act. From and after the qualification of the President of the new Board of Police and Excise, the old Boards of Police and Excise of the city of Brooklyn (two separate organizations) were abolished; and the terms of all officers (except those of the patrolmen and doormen in the Police Department and employees thereof) ceased and terminated. The new Board of Police and Excise was empowered to divide the city into precincts, not exceeding one precinct to each thirty-six of the patrolmen authorized to be appointed; to establish sub-precincts, and assign to each not more than three sergeants, two doormen, two roundsmen, and a sufficient number of

patrolmen; to appoint a telegraph superintendent, three telegraph operators, and one assistant operator; to appoint as many captains of police as there should be precincts, and assign sufficient officers and men to each precinct; and to appoint a counsel and fix his compensation, not to exceed \$2,500, and not more than five surgeons, and as many mounted sergeants, roundsmen, and patrolmen as the Common Council might authorize.

The act provided for the composition of the police force as follows: "The police force shall consist of a superintendent, inspector, captains, sergeants, roundsmen, patrolmen, doormen, and one drill captain. The number of sergeants shall not exceed four for each precinct, three for each sub-precinct, and one for each special squad; the number of roundsmen shall not exceed two for each precinct or sub-precinct, and two for headquarters and one for each special squad; and the number of patrolmen shall not exceed the number authorized by law, unless the Common Council of the City of Brooklyn shall, by resolution, upon the application of the Board, authorize a greater number."

The members of the force, and the officers, received the following rate of compensation, annually, for their services: Superintendent, \$4,000; Inspector, \$3,000; Captains, \$2,000; Sergeants, \$1,500; Roundsmen, \$1,100; Patrolmen, \$1,100; Police Surgeons, \$1,500; Drill Captain, \$1,800; Doormen, \$800.

The Police Life Insurance Fund was created, to be composed of all fines imposed by the Board upon members of the police force, by way of discipline, and collected from pay or salary; and all rewards, fees, proceeds of gifts and emoluments that may be paid and given for account of extraordinary services of any member of the police force (except when allowed to be retained by said member); and all monies remaining for the space of one year in the hands of the Board, or arising from the sale of unclaimed goods; and all proceeds of suits and penalties. The President of the Department and the Commissioners of the Sinking Fund were to be the trustees of this fund, and invest the same, in whole or in part, as they may deem most advantageous for the objects of such fund. Any member of the police force who shall, while in the actual performance of duty, and by reason of such performance of duty, and without fault or misconduct on his part, become permanently disabled, physically or mentally, so as to be unfit to perform police duty; or any such member who shall, after ten years of membership, become superannuated by age, or rendered incapable of performing police duty by disease contracted without misconduct on his part, may be placed on the pension roll of this fund, and granted and paid a pension of not exceeding \$300 per year from the fund. If any member of the police force, while in the actual discharge of police duty, shall be killed, or shall die from the effect of any injury received by him under such circumstances, or shall die after ten years continuous service

in the force (his death not being due to any misconduct on his part), leaving a widow, her name may be placed on the pension roll, and a like pension be paid to her from the fund so long as she may continue unmarried. If any member, dying as aforesaid, shall leave any minor child or children, but no widow (or if a widow, then after her death), the name or names of such child or children under the age of 18 years, may be placed on the pension roll, and such pension paid to each child or children (if the latter, to be divided between them equally), until such pensioner or pensioners shall arrive at the age of eighteen, or until the payment of the same be discontinued by the Board. At its discretion, the Board may at any time order any pension, or portion thereof, to cease; and its payment is not obligatory upon the Board, or the trustees, or chargeable, as a matter of legal right, upon the Police Life Insurance Fund.

The act creating the department provided that its expenses were to be paid in the same manner as those of the other departments. In case of an addition to the number, or compensation of the police force or department, the Comptroller of the city has power, and it is his duty, to issue certificates, bearing interest, for any sum not already raised for payment of the force or department accordingly; and a sum sufficient for the payment of the certificates so issued shall be inserted in the succeeding tax levy of the city of Brooklyn, and, upon the collection thereof, said certificates shall be paid.

The Mayor of Brooklyn is invested with the powers common to mayors of cities in the State of New York, to quell riots, suppress insurrections, protect property, and preserve the public peace; and the Police Board has no authority to exercise such powers. Whenever expedient, the Board may, upon the application of any person or corporation, detail regular patrolmen of the police force, or appoint and swear any additional number of special patrolmen of the police force to do special duty within the city, such special policemen to be paid as other policemen are paid, and the individuals or corporations in whose service they are detailed to pay, for the use of the city, a sum sufficient to reimburse the salaries so paid to special policemen. The persons so appointed may be removed at any time by the Board without any cause being assigned therefor, upon notice to the person or persons who applied for their appointment. Special patrolmen may be appointed in case of riot. All criminal processes issued from any court, or any justice, or judge, in the City of Brooklyn, are to be served by a member of the police force, and not otherwise. The members of the force, furthermore, possess the common law and statutory powers of constables in every part of the State (except for the service of civil process), and any warrant of search or arrest issued by any magistrate of the State may be executed in any part thereof by any member of the force.

On the 4th of August, 1873, the organization of the consolidated Department of Police and Excise was perfected by the appointment of JAMES JOURDAN, who was the President of the Board of Police, on the 1st day of May, 1873, to be *President of the Board of Police and Excise*, with DANIEL D. BRIGGS, the *Police Commissioner* then in office, and JAMES L. JENSEN, who was appointed by the Comptroller and Auditor, under the provisions of the charter, as Commissioners. The Commissioners then appointed Samuel Richards, *Clerk*, and Benjamin D. Midgeley, *Deputy Clerk* of the department. October 6th, 1873, JOHN S. FOLK was appointed *Superintendent*, to take the place of Patrick Campbell, whose office as Chief of Police was abolished by the terms of the charter. GEORGE A. WADDY, on the same day, was appointed *Inspector*, in place of John S. Folk, promoted. In 1875, PATRICK CAMPBELL was again appointed *Superintendent*, and has since held the office. The Board, as organized that year, was composed of Commissioners DANIEL D. BRIGGS, *President*, and JOHN PYBURN and WILLIAM D. HURD. Daniel D. Briggs, the President, died July 3d, 1876. His funeral took place July 10th. The various city departments were closed, police headquarters were draped in mourning, and the entire reserves of the force attended the obsequies. On the 17th day of July, 1876, General JAMES JOURDAN was appointed *President* of the Board by Mayor Schroeder, and unanimously confirmed by the Common Council, to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Mr. Briggs; and, on Wednesday, July 19th, 1876, the Board was duly organized, with President Jourdan in the chair. On the 1st day of November, 1877, RONNEY C. WARD and THOMAS F. WHITE were nominated for the office of *Police and Excise Commissioners* by Mayor Schroeder, and confirmed by the Common Council on the same day, to fill the places of John Pyburn and William B. Hurd, whose terms of office had expired. In 1879, Messrs. Ward and White were succeeded, as Commissioners of Police and Excise, by JOHN PYBURN and O. B. LEICH.

By an act passed May 25th, 1880, the office of President of the Board of Police and Excise was abolished and superseded by that of

Commissioner of Police and Excise, the salary remaining unchanged. Under the act, two Excise Commissioners were appointed to act on all matters relating to excise, with the Commissioner of Police and Excise; and, in respect to all matters of excise (but not of police), to possess the same power as the said Commissioner, who, nevertheless, should be President and head of the Commissioners of Excise, the salary of the Commissioners to be \$2,500 per annum, each.

The Commissioner of Police and Excise has discretionary powers, on conviction of a member of the force, for any criminal offense, or neglect of duty, or violation of rules, or neglect or disobedience of orders, or incapacity or absence without leave, or any conduct

injurious to the public peace or welfare, or immoral conduct, or conduct unbecoming an officer, or other breach of discipline, to punish the offending party by reprimand, forfeiture and withholding pay for a specified time, or dismissal from the force; or, if he be a detective, or officer other than doorman or patrolman, by reducing him to any grade below that in which he was acting, after which his pay shall be the same allowed to officers of the grade to which he is reduced. In case of punishment by forfeiture and withholding pay, no more than ten days shall be forfeited and withheld for any offense. A writ of *certiorari* to reverse a determination by the Commissioner of Police and Excise, or the Commissioner of the Fire Department of the city of Brooklyn, to remove a person employed on the police or fire department forces of said city, for cause, must be granted and served within thirty days after notice to him of such removal.

Under this act, JAMES JOURDAN, who had been President of the Board of Police and Excise since 1877, was appointed Commissioner of Police and Excise; and, with RICHARD LAUER and THOMAS F. EVANS, Commissioners of Excise, constituted the Board, which, since then, has been organized as follows:

1881. James Jourdan, Commissioner of Police and Excise, and William L. B. Stears and Herman Cobell, Commissioners of Excise.

1882-'83. James Jourdan, Commissioner of Police and Excise, and Richard Lauer and Thomas F. White, Commissioners of Excise.

December 1, 1883, the business of the Department was in the hands of James Jourdan, *Commissioner of Police and Excise*; Edward L. Langford, *Deputy Commissioner of Police and Excise*; Richard Lauer and Thomas F. Evans, *Excise Commissioners*; Patrick Campbell, *Superintendent of Police*; Henry L. Jewett, *Inspector*; William J. McKelvey, *Drill Captain*; George H. Flanley, *Superintendent Telegraph*; John C. Perry, *Counsel*.

In Police and Excise Commissioner Jourdan's report for the year ending November 30th, 1883, to Mayor Low, the police force is stated to consist of:

One superintendent, one inspector, one drill captain, thirteen precinct captains, sixty-six sergeants, twenty-five detectives, thirty-four roundsmen, four hundred and eighty-nine patrolmen, and thirty-five doormen; total, 665.

The number of patrolmen detailed for duty at the courts and other places, requiring the services of police officers, is fifty-four, or about one-ninth of the whole patrol force. Notwithstanding the fact that the Board of Estimate has

provided for the payment of nineteen additional patrolmen, which increases the number to 500 for the ensuing year, the necessity for increasing the force still exists, and grows more and more urgent each year. There are 546 miles of streets within the limits of the city, the residents of which need the protecting arm of this department for the prevention of crime and the preservation of the public peace.

The various precincts are divided into day and night posts. One-quarter of the available patrol force, which is about 100 men, is used to cover the day posts, and about one-half of said force is used to cover the night posts, which is about 200 men; therefore, each patrolman on day duty is required to patrol about five and one-half miles of streets, and each one on night duty is required to patrol about two and three-quarter miles of streets. In this connection I would state that *police telegraph boxes*, properly placed throughout the city, would be a most valuable auxiliary to the patrol force.

Under title 11, section 36 of the charter, the Commissioner of Police and Excise is required to detail on each day of election in the city of Brooklyn at least two patrolmen to each election poll. For this service the Commissioner states that he has not a sufficient force to spare. And, as it is estimated, by a member of the Board of Elections, that there will be at least 240 polling places in this city next year, 480 patrolmen will be required for duty at said polling places; and the Commissioner also recommends the establishment of a RIVER AND HARBOR POLICE, with two steam launches, as an increase of the number of posts along the water-front is not warranted by the present insufficient force.

The number of arrests during the year was 27,011; unlighted street lamps, 15,505; persons provided with lodgings in station houses, 19,707; lost children taken charge of, 1,919; vacant houses reported for special attention during the summer months, 2,086; fumigation of infected premises, 967; smallpox cases removed to hospital, 10; wells disinfected, 9; sanitary inspection, 137; complaints made and notices served, 53.

Estimated value of stolen and unclaimed property in custody of department December 1, 1882, \$924.72; property received during the year, \$104,250.90. Total, \$105,181.62.

Property delivered to persons.....	\$103,804.56
Balance on hand December 1, 1883	1,377.06

The telegraph lines and instruments are in good working order, and during the year 179,818 messages passed through the office. Complaints against policemen were made to the number of 467, of which 310 were sustained, 157 dismissed; 11 patrolmen were dismissed during the year. The police surgeons attended 760 cases of sickness, and made 3,852 professional visits. 558 fires were reported. Six arrests were made of persons suspected of having set fire to the premises. One was convicted and sent to the Penitentiary for two years. 2,735 steam boilers were examined, 29 condemned. 1,463 engineers were examined, of whom 1,196 received certificates.

Abstracts of Police Statistics will also be found, under the head of the separate years, since 1855, in the *History of the Consolidated City*, pages 484 to 520.

HON. WM. H. MURTHA is, in every sense, a representative of the business interests and business men of Brooklyn; of the latter it is no affectation to say that in public spirit they are unrivaled by those of any other city.

He was born in Brooklyn, January 3, 1841, in that part of the city known as the Fourth Ward—in Concord street, near Jay. His father was James Murtha, born in Ireland. He came to America in 1834, and settled in the city of New York, from whence he removed to Brooklyn in 1837. His mother was also a native of Ireland. Both his parents were characterized by good sense, morality and industry. They were communicants of the Roman Catholic Church, in which faith Mr. Murtha was reared.

When he was nine years old his father died, leaving six children, of which he was the fourth. The early developments of young Murtha's character were intelligence, love of books and a desire for education. These were enlarged and rendered practical in the public schools of Brooklyn to such an extent that he attracted the attention of that illustrious lawyer, the late Grenville T. Jenks, who invited Murtha, young as he was, to enter his office as a student. The invitation was accepted, and the young man, under the instructions of Mr. Jenks, continued the education begun at school. With his other studies he pursued a limited course of law reading, as it was then his determination—prompted by the advice of Mr. Jenks—to become a lawyer. He remained with Mr. J. until he was seventeen years of age. In order to pursue the study of certain branches in classics, under a very competent teacher then in Brooklyn, he left the office of Mr. Jenks, as he then thought, temporarily. He remained at school until 1859, when he received a very advantageous offer to enter into mercantile business, which he accepted. Abandoning his intention of entering the legal profession, he commenced business with the eminent firm of Davidson & Co., New York city, a leading house engaged in the West India and South American trade. He remained with this firm, under the most confidential relations, until the breaking out of the Rebellion. The business of the firm, being mostly confined to localities affected by the War, was such that it discontinued for a time. Mr. Murtha, receiving the appointment of mustering officer at the Brooklyn Navy Yard, entered the service of the Government very soon after the breaking out of the War. He continued to discharge the duties of this office until 1865. His labors while here were incessant; his duties imposing upon him the highest responsibilities. He had the care of at least 2,000 men, keeping daily details of their work; preparing and superintending the entire pay-roll of all the employees in the Navy Yard. The amount of money monthly disbursed to them averaged \$450,000 to \$600,000, and this sum for labor alone. The satisfactory manner in which Mr. Murtha discharged these duties sufficiently shows his capacity for administration, and the facility with which he conducts business. At the termination of the War he left the Government service and commenced business with his brother-in-law, organizing the well-known and highly respectable firm of Murtha & Boyle, wholesale and retail dealers in coal; and, by the death of Mr. Boyle, in 1881, the firm was changed to W. H. Murtha & Son.

Mr. Murtha has always been an active and influential Democrat—influential, not as a politician, in the common acceptation of the word, dealing in the platitudes of partisan management for the sake of office, but, for his high standing as a business man, his general intelligence, public spirit and undoubted integrity. His fealty to the Democratic party is a

matter of principle; he loves it for its traditions, for its Jeffersonian precepts, because he honestly believes its doctrines tend to the great advantage of the masses—the greatest good to the many. In regard to upholding a man for office, he adopts the maxim of the great Father of Democracy involved in these questions, "Is he honest? Is he capable? Is he deserving?"

In 1869, he was appointed a member of the Board of Education of Brooklyn, and served until 1872. He was elected an Alderman of the 9th Ward, in 1876, serving by re-elections until 1878. In the fall of 1879, he was elected State Senator from the 2d Senatorial District of the State, which embraces nine wards of the city of Brooklyn, and the three towns of Flatbush, New Utrecht and Gravesend, in the county of Kings. He entered upon his Senatorial duties January 1st, 1880, where he took a prominent and influential position as a legislator. The Democratic party was largely in the minority in the Senate. Mr. Hoskins, then Lieutenant-Governor and its presiding officer, in recognition of Mr. Murtha's high standing as a man, placed him upon several of the most important standing committees in the Senate:—on the Insurance Committee, on that of State Prisons, on Public Buildings, Poor Laws, Public Health, and on the special committee to investigate the affairs of the Binghamton Insane Asylum, and those of the Elmira Reformatory. Few members of that Senate discharged more laborious duties than Mr. Murtha. Though he did not very frequently occupy its attention as a speaker, when he did enter into the discussion of any subject, he was always listened to with the most profound respect and attention.

The important legislation of 1881-2 has passed into history. Among the important matters before that Senate was the revision of the Tax Laws, and a proposition to make the canals free high-ways, and to remove American Shipping property from local taxation. Mr. Murtha's district was so decidedly interested in the matter of making the Erie Canal free from tolls, that he was compelled to be aggressive in his advocacy of that measure. It was believed, and justly, that the measure would largely increase the tonnage of grain and other merchandise, which finds storage in the capacious warehouses along the water front of Brooklyn, where all the grain storage of the Port of New York, aggregating 40,000,000 of bushels yearly, is located; aggregating in the investment of capital on the amount of property stored nearly \$400,000,000. It will therefore be seen, of what vital importance the question of free canals was, to the city of Brooklyn. To the ability, zeal and untiring exertions of Senator Murtha, Brooklyn is largely indebted for the success of the measure. This is fully appreciated by its citizens, and the citizens of Kings county, and he is, therefore, by one accord, assigned a conspicuous place in this history.

In private life, Senator Murtha is, as we have said, highly esteemed for his courteous bearing, his honorable dealing, his purity of character, for his ardent support of religious and educational interests, as well as of all measures tending to the advancement of the city of Brooklyn. He is a leading member of St. Charles Borromeo (Catholic) Church in Sidney Place. In 1869, he was united in marriage to Mrs. Mary E. Rice, of Brooklyn, a lady whose temperament accords happily with that of her husband in the love of the domestic circle; for there are few men who have stronger attachment for home life than Senator Murtha. To make it happy, to embellish it with everything refining and elevating, is his ambition; and all his business cares, relations and labors are subservient to the welfare and comfort of his family.



W. H. Murtha,

THE DEPARTMENT OF HEALTH.

BY THE EDITOR.

Brooklyn's Earlier Sanitary Provision, prior to 1854.—Brooklyn, in its earlier village days, was not without its nuisances "prejudicial to the public health;" but they were, for the most part, such as were easily controlled by the powers vested in the village trustees. In 1804, however, there was a slight epidemic of yellow fever in the Wallabout neighborhood; and, after the epidemic in New York, in 1805, foreign shipping, from infected ports, were no longer allowed to land at (or within three hundred yards of) the wharves of that city. Thenceforth, the Brooklyn shores were usually resorted to by such vessels; as a consequence of which, the village was visited (in 1809, and again in 1823) with two similar epidemics, while New York remained totally exempt. (See *History of the Medical Profession of Kings County*, Part II). As the village grew to be a city, the duties of a Health Board were fulfilled, after a fashion, by the Mayor and Board of Aldermen.

From FURMAN'S *Notes* (p. 72), we learn that "As early as 1809, during the prevalence of the yellow fever in this town, the inhabitants met together in consequence of repeated solicitations from the Common Council of New York, and after stating in their proceedings that reports prevailed that disease exists to an alarming extent in the town of Brooklyn, they appointed the following gentlemen a committee for the purpose of inquiring into the state of the health of the inhabitants of said town, and to act as the case, in their opinion, may require, viz.: William Furman, John Garrison, Burdet Stryker, Henry Stanton, and Andrew Mercein." A sum of money was raised by subscription to meet the expenses of this committee.

In the year 1819, the trustees, although not strictly invested with power, yet feeling the necessity of acting with some degree of energy, in order to quell the fears of the inhabitants, arising from reports of the existence of a pestilential disease in New York, published an address, in which they state, that "during this season of alarm, they have not been unmindful of that part of their duty incumbent on them as a Board of Health for the village," and that "measures have been taken to obtain, from time to time, a report of the state of health throughout the village, that the inhabitants may be early apprised of any change affecting their welfare."

The Village Board of Health, created 1824.—March 4, 1824, in the Senate of the State of New York, John Lefferts, Esq., brought in a bill to estab-

lish a *Board of Health* in the village of Brooklyn, and also an act, to amend an act, to incorporate the said village, both of which bills were passed by the Legislature on the 9th of April following.

By this act, the trustees of the village were constituted a *Board of Health*, the President and Clerk being (*ex-officio*) President and Clerk of the *Board of Health*. The President's salary was \$150; and a health physician, appointed by the Board, received \$200 per annum. The duties of the Board related to the general conservation of the health of the village.

The Health Board Organization of 1854. By the provisions of the charter of 1854, the Board of Health of the City of Brooklyn was constituted of the aldermen of the city, or such a number of them as the Common Council might designate, and were invested with powers and functions, similar to those of the Board of Health of the City of New York. It was ordained that the Mayor, or, in his absence, or in case of his inability to act, the President of the Board of Aldermen, should be president of the Board of Health, and that the city clerk should be its clerk, and keep a journal of its proceedings. It was defined to be the duty of the President of the Board of Aldermen, at all meetings of said board, when he should be informed of any matter requiring the attention of the Board of Health, to lay such matter before them, whereupon they should proceed to consider and act upon it. It was provided that the Board of Health might be convened at any time by notice from the clerk, under direction of the president, or any two of its members, and that the Board should designate a place to be called the Office of the Board of Health, where the president or one or more of the members should attend daily, Sunday excepted, from the first day of June to the first day of October in each year, and that they might so attend on Sunday, if necessary; a faithful record of all transactions to be kept for the convenience of the Board and the inspection of the public.

The provisions of this act were ample and sufficient for the enforcement of the new ordinances, quarantine regulations, &c., for the sanitary welfare of a growing city.

February 26th, 1866, an act was passed creating a "**Metropolitan Sanitary District and Board of Health** therein, for the preservation of life and health, and to prevent the spread of disease." The district, thus created, comprised the same territory as that embraced within the Metropolitan Police District, created the

same year, viz. : the City and County of New York, the County of Kings, and City of Brooklyn, Westchester and Richmond Counties, and the towns of Newtown, Flushing and Jamaica, in Queens. The Board of Health was constituted of four members, nominated by the Governor, and confirmed by the Senate, all of whom were to be residents of the said Metropolitan District ; three of whom were to be physicians ; and one of whom was to be a resident of the city of Brooklyn. These three, together with the Health Officer of the Port of New York, for the time being, were to be the Sanitary Commissioners of the said Metropolitan District ; and, together with the Metropolitan Police Commissioners, they formed "the Metropolitan Board of Health." These Sanitary Commissioners were to hold office respectively, for one, two, three and four years, but their respective successors were to hold office for four years each.

An executive officer was created by the act to carry out the orders of this board, who was to be an experienced and skilful physician, and who was to be designated as "Sanitary Superintendent ;" under him were two assistant sanitary superintendents, "one of whom was to be the acting chief officer of the Brooklyn Bureau of Sanitary Inspection ;" and a corps of sanitary inspectors, of whom a large proportion were to be "physicians of practical skill and professional experience."

It was also made the duty of the Metropolitan Board of Police, not only to execute the orders of the Metropolitan Board of Health ; but to "promptly advise said Metropolitan Board of Health of all threatened danger to human life or health, all matters demanding its attention, and all violations of its rules or ordinances."

The two Boards co-operated in all things, so far as was practicable, the Police doing their utmost to enforce the rules and ordinances of the Board of Health.

The act abolished the City Inspector's Department, and other officers who had hitherto performed some of the duties then delegated to the Board of Health, and created a "Board of Estimate," composed of the Mayor and Comptroller of the city of Brooklyn, together with the members of the board created by the act, to convene "annually, on or before the first day of August, make up a financial estimate and statement of the sums required for the year next ensuing, for the expenses and proper support, and for the discharge of the duties of said board ; the sum raised for the expenses of any one year, however, not to exceed \$100,000," independently of such sums as may have been expended "in the presence of great and imminent peril to the public health from impending pestilence," &c. This act, so far as it related to the appointment of Sanitary Commissioners, took effect immediately, and in other respects went into effect March 1st, 1866.

In 1867, three acts (known respectively as chapters 687, 700 and 908 of the Session Laws of that year) were passed, abating certain nuisances in Brooklyn

deemed to be derogatory to the public health, regulating certain other matters of interest in this connection, and providing for the improvement of tenement houses and other dwellings of the poorer classes in Brooklyn and New York. Brooklyn was represented in the composition of this Board by JAMES CRANE, M. D., as Health Commissioner, and by JOHN G. BERGEN, as Police Commissioner.

On the 10th of March, JOHN T. CONKLING, M. D., was appointed Assistant Sanitary Superintendent, and RICHARD CRESSON STILES, Deputy Registrar of Vital Statistics for Brooklyn, which was divided into five inspection districts, and six Sanitary Inspectors assigned to duty therein. The cholera epidemic of that year, which first appeared on the 8th of July, devolved no small responsibility on the Brooklyn Bureau, which was promptly met. Cholera hospitals were erected in the 12th Ward, at the corner of Hamilton avenue and Van Brunt street, and (by permission of the Common Council) in the City Park. (See p. 502.)

On the 2d day of January, 1868, GEORGE B. LINCOLN, Esq., of Brooklyn, having been appointed a Sanitary Commissioner by the Governor (*vice* President Jackson S. Schultz, resigned), took his seat on the Board ; and, on the 9th, Dr. James Crane was elected its President, for the unexpired term of the late President. Commissioner John G. Bergen died in February, and March 3d, Mr. Lincoln was elected President of the Board, in place of Dr. Crane, who declined a reelection. July 1, 1868, Henry S. Fellows, Esq., was appointed Assistant Attorney of the Board for the County of Kings.

In 1869, Dr. Conkling resigned as Assistant Sanitary Superintendent, and was succeeded by Dr. R. CRESSON STILES, who held office until the abolition of the Metropolitan Health Police system in 1870.

A City Board of Health again in 1870.—But in 1870 the Metropolitan system was laid aside, and matters of health, police, and excise were relegated to the local authorities of the several cities and counties heretofore comprising the Metropolitan District. The disbursements, expenses, and legal business of the Board were to be managed by the City Comptroller and Council, in the same manner as other expenses for general city purposes. The Common Council were empowered to confer upon the Police Board such powers in regard to public health as should be necessary to give effect to the provisions of the Health Act. All monies standing to the credit of the city were to revert to the city, etc.

By a law passed in 1870, it was ordained that the Board of Health, created by the charter of 1854, "shall, in addition to the powers therein conferred upon said Board, possess the same powers, rights and privileges, except as to compensation, as were conferred by the said acts of February 26, 1866, and the several acts

amendatory thereof, and by chapters 687, 700 and 908 of the laws of 1867, upon the Metropolitan Board of Health within the city of Brooklyn, except the power to appoint officers and to incur expenses otherwise than is herein provided." All officers required to be appointed for the purpose of carrying out such powers were appointed by the Common Council of said city, on the nominations of the Mayor.

Under this act, Dr. GEORGE COCHRANE assumed the position of head of the Department in 1870. He was succeeded by Dr. ANDREW OTTERSON in 1872.

Department of Health Created by Act of 1873.

—Section 1 of title XII. of the charter of 1873 declared: "There shall be a department of health, which shall be known as the Board of Health of the City of Brooklyn, which shall have jurisdiction over said city." The management and control of this Department was vested in a Board of Health, to be composed of the president of the Board of Aldermen, the president of the Board of Police, and one physician, who should have been ten years in active practice of his profession, and a resident of Brooklyn for five years immediately prior to his appointment. It was ordained that, within five days after that of the passage of the act (June 28, 1873), and on "the first Monday in May, 1877, and every two years thereafter, the Mayor shall nominate, and, with the consent of the Board of Aldermen, appoint one physician, who is eligible to the office, as a member of the said Board of Health, who shall be President thereof, and shall hold office until his successor shall have been duly qualified, together with the President of the Board of Police and the President of the Board of Aldermen, shall constitute the Board of Health of the city of Brooklyn." In case of death, resignation, removal from office, or other inability to serve of the physician so appointed, the vacancy shall be filled for the remainder of the unexpired term by the Mayor and Common Council in the manner herein provided, for appointment under this act. The salary of said physician shall be \$5,000 per annum. The Board of Health, thus constituted, was empowered to act as a legislative board in regard to all matters pertaining to public health, and to the registration of vital statistics of the city, and to make such rules and regulations regarding the appointment of officers and employees as might be deemed expedient for the purposes for which the Board was organized; to prepare ordinances and secure the registration of births and deaths; to appoint a secretary, sanitary superintendent, registrar of records, inspectors, and other necessary officers and employees, and fix their compensation, with the proviso "that the whole expense of administering such Department shall not exceed the sum appropriated therefor by the Board of Estimate, and all expenditures, so incurred, for whatever purpose, shall be made and met in such manner as is provided for in other departments of the city government." It was made the

duty of the Board of Police to execute the orders of the Board of Health when so requested by authority of the Board. In the presence of great and imminent peril to the public health of the city of Brooklyn, the act required the Board of Health "to take such measures, to do, and order to be done, such acts, and to make such expenditures," beyond those duly estimated for, in accordance with the provision above stated, for the preservation of the public health from such impending pestilence as the Board might declare the public safety and health to demand; and the Mayor of Brooklyn and the President of the Medical Society of Kings County should approve in writing. It was further stipulated that such peril should not be deemed to exist, "except when and for such period of time as the Mayor, President of the Medical Society and Board of Health" should declare by proclamation.

The charter defined the manner of procedure to be adopted by the Board of Health against individuals or corporations whose business, conduct or property should be deemed detrimental to the public health, and provided for the right of appeal on the part of the latter to the City Court of Brooklyn, including the proviso that no established business, or the rights to property, of any person, should be interfered with until the offender or offenders therewith charged should have been duly summoned by not less than five days' notice to appear before the Board and show cause why such declaration or order of prohibition should not be enforced against him, her or them.

In conjunction with the Department of City Works, the charter gave the Board of Health power to contract for the removal of offal, dead animals, garbage, night soil and other refuse matter; all contracts to be signed by the Presidents of the two Boards, and no contract to be made or terminated except by the affirmative vote of a majority of the members of the Board of Health and the Department of City Works, acting conjointly; all contracts to be carried out by the Department of City Works, partially under control of the Board of Health, to whom all complaints of neglect of duty on the part of a contractor were ordered to be made; the President of the Board of Health having power to convene a joint meeting of the two Boards whenever, in the opinion of the Board of Health, any contract entered into by the two Boards should be improperly or imperfectly executed by the Department of City Works.

The ordinances passed by the Board of Health were numerous, and of such an import and range as to provide for the preservation of the public health so far as is possible, in view of the present developments of science; and no means to the proper carrying out of the purposes of the health department have been overlooked in framing them. Every known precaution against infection and contagion was adopted.

The Board of Health acts in conjunction with the

Health Officer of the port of New York and his deputies, for the protection of the city against disease brought to the port by foreign and other vessels; the Health Officer keeping the Board of Health informed by weekly reports of the number of vessels in quarantine, of the number of persons sick in the floating or other hospitals, and of the diseases with which each of them is afflicted. The Health Officer of New York, or his assistants and deputies, receive into the floating hospital all cases of yellow fever found in Brooklyn; and do not allow the return to the vicinity of the city, without permit of the Sanitary Superintendent, any person, vessel or article which the Board of Health has ordered to quarantine.

The supervision of the Board of Health of the construction of residences, business and public buildings on sanitary principles, and in the healthful reconstruction of old and dangerous buildings, has done much toward rendering the city healthy and ameliorating the condition of many thousands of its inhabitants. Every means to prevent the quartering of people in unhealthy domiciles has been made available; and the school buildings, churches, halls, theatres, and other public buildings of Brooklyn, are as well ventilated and as healthful as those of any city in the Union.

Under the provisions of the charter, the Board of Health, in 1873, was composed of General James Jourdan, Dr. Joseph C. Hutchison, and John T. Conkling, M. D.

In 1874, the organization of the Board of Health was changed by the addition to its constituency of the President of the Board of City Works; and it was composed as follows: General James Jourdan, Dr. Joseph C. Hutchison, Dr. John T. Conkling, Lorin Palmer, and Jacob I. Bergen.

In June, 1875, another reorganization of the Board of Health took place, by which a physician must be its President, and it was constituted of Dr. Andrew Otterson, *President*; Jacob I. Bergen, President of the Board of Aldermen; and Daniel D. Briggs, President of the Board of Police. January 1st, 1876, John French succeeded Mr. Bergen. In the winter of that year Mr. Briggs died, and was succeeded by General James Jourdan. January 1st, 1877, Mr. French was succeeded by William H. Ray. In June, 1877, Dr. Otterson was replaced by Dr. James Crane. Mr. Ray was succeeded by Francis B. Fisher, January 1st, 1878, and in turn succeeded the latter January 1st, 1879. Mr. Ray was succeeded, January 1st, 1880, by Robert Black. In September, 1879, Dr. Crane was succeeded by Dr. Otterson. Otherwise the composition of the Board was unchanged till 1880.

Office of Health Commissioner Created.—By an Act in relation to the Government of the City of Brooklyn, passed May 5th, 1880, the organization of the Board of Health was changed, and the office of *Health Commissioner* was created; it being enacted

that “within thirty days after the passage of this act, the Mayor and Comptroller shall meet at the Mayor’s office and * * * designate * * * proper person who shall be the head of the Department of Health and designated as the Commissioner of said department; and the President of the Department of Police and Excise and the President of the Board of Aldermen shall thereupon cease to be members of the Board of Health.”

Dr. JAMES CRANE was appointed *Health Commissioner*, June 17th, 1880, and served as such until succeeded by Dr. JOSEPH H. RAYMOND, who was appointed February 1st, 1882.

The work of the Department of Health is now carried on by Commissioner Raymond and the following corps of subordinates and assistants:

R. M. Wyckoff, M. D., *Secretary and Registrar*; G. F. Elliott, Esq., *Counsel*; E. F. Page, M. Farrell, G. Iremonger, S. R. Tuomy, W. R. Kerr, W. Hughes, J. Lewis, *Clerks*; W. E. Griffiths, M. D., S. N. Fisk, M. D., J. Corbin, M. D., *Sanitary Inspectors*; E. Pendleton, M. D., J. J. Gleavy, M. D., J. B. Mattison, M. D., A. M. Burns, M. D., G. Wieber, M. D., R. N. Dennison, M. D., Ernest Palmer, M. D., G. McNaughton, M. D., W. A. De Long, M. D., H. A. Archer, M. D., N. Tittemore, M. D., W. J. Cruikshank, M. D., W. E. Beardsley, M. D., T. J. Wheeden, M. D., *Assistant Sanitary Inspectors*; E. H. Bartley, M. D., *Assistant Inspector and Chemist*; W. J. Hobday, *Inspector of Meat*; J. J. Powers, P. M. Moffatt, W. J. Roche, J. F. Williams, S. Bower, *Inspectors of Plumbing*; L. McLean, *Veterinary Surgeon*; L. T. Bell, *Consulting Veterinarian*.

AMBULANCE SURGEONS.—E. F. Pearce, M. D., J. Merzbach, M. D., A. A. Reid, M. D., *Western District*, located at L. I. College Hospital; C. P. Peterman, M. D., J. N. Dimon, M. D., *Eastern District*, Hospital and Dispensary; C. F. Drake, M. D., D. P. Maddux, M. D., *Central District*, Homœopathic Hospital; J. B. Hammill, M. D., L. E. Tieste, M. D., *St. Mary’s Hospital*.

Report of the Health Department for 1883.—Health Commissioner Raymond’s annual report to the Mayor, for the year ending Nov. 30, 1883, states:

The total deaths in the city within twelve months, ending November 30, 1883, were 13,833, or 1,180 less than the actual mortality during the calendar year, 1882. Assuming that this total, 13,833, fairly represents the mortality of 1883, and estimating the population to be 624,118, we fix the death rate at 22.16 in each thousand of persons living.

This rate is lower than that of 1882, when there died 24.84 in each thousand, the population at that time being held to be 604,356. In other words, there has been a saving of life this year, as compared with 1882, amounting to more than 1,600 lives.

He congratulates his fellow citizens on the fact that there seems to be a permanent improvement in the sanitary condition of Brooklyn, and fortifies his opinion by the following:

COMPARATIVE TABLE OF MORTALITY BY PROMINENT CAUSES OF DEATH IN RECENT YEARS.

	1881.	1883.	1883.
Total from all.....	14,533	15,013	13,833
Zymotic class.....	4,952	4,880	2,700
Smallpox.....	35	12	2
Measles.....	56	168	54
Scarlet Fever.....	151	892	542
Diphtheria.....	1,169	632	426
Croup.....	458	334	322
Whooping Cough.....	118	248	131
Typhoid Fever.....	99	83	96
Malarial Fevers.....	306	289	266
Cholera Infantum.....	1,028	1,007	992
Diarrhoeal diseases, all ages.....	1,707	1,893	1,595
Diarrhoeal diseases, under 5.....	1,493	1,600	1,340
Consumption.....	1,754	1,806	1,840
Bronchitis.....	471	684	597
Violence.....	402	433	319
Under 5 years.....	6,865	7,136	5,907
Under 1 year.....	3,633	3,816	3,556
Death rate per 1,000.....	24.83	24.84	22.16

The saving of life was most remarkable among children under 5 years of age—the decrease amounting to 1,229. The decline in deaths of zymotic diseases was over 2,000, and is very significant of a better tone of the public health.

Diseases of the zymotic class flourish when the community is broken down in its health, and they are expelled or reduced when the city's pulse and circulation come back to the normal. In last year's report to your Honor, I referred to the exceptionally cleanly condition of our street sewers and the probable good effect thereof upon the health rate. I have no reason to abate anything that I then said, but am impelled to state my conviction that the efficient operations of the Department of City Works have vastly improved our sewer system, and, for some months, at least, have given us purer air to breathe, by giving us relatively cleaner streets under the new contract; and have thus, indirectly, come to the aid of the sanitary authority in its fight against zymotic disease. It will also be seen by the above table that at no time since 1875 has the zymotic mortality fallen below 3,000 until the present year; while, in 1881, it rose to nearly 5,000. This low zymotic ebb is extremely gratifying to all who watch the progress of the city's health, for there can scarcely be a question that our city is destined to make advance in this direction and make a name for herself as a wholesome home city. A further examination of the parallel columns in the table shows that the only diseases cited therein that have a higher total this year than last, are consumption and typhoid fever, and in respect to both of these, the increase is significant.

He reports as to

THE AMBULANCE SERVICE, organized in May, 1873, by resolution of the Common Council, and placed by that body for management in the Board of Health, was, for the first time, established on a permanent basis by the charter amendment passed June 4, 1880 (chap. 545), which reads: "Said Board of Health, as thus constituted, and its successors, shall have power to act as a legislative body in regard to, and shall have and exercise exclusive power in said city over all matters pertaining to public health, the removal and burial of the dead, the maintenance and operating of an ambulance service for the speedy removal of sick and injured persons, etc." The ambulance districts are four in number, each under the charge of a surgeon and an assistant. The surgeon of the Western District is located at the Long Island College

Hospital, Henry street, corner Pacific; that of the Eastern District, at the Eastern District Hospital, 108, 110 and 112 South Third street, and that of the Central District at the Homeopathic Hospital, on Cumberland street. This latter district is one which has been in existence since January, 1881, and the ambulance used is the property of the hospital, although it is under the management and control of the Department of Health. During the present month, an additional ambulance has been provided by St. Mary's Hospital, on St. Marks avenue, near Rochester, and its services have been placed at the disposal of the city by the authorities of that institution; the expenses of its maintenance, however, being paid by them. The rooms of the surgeons are connected by telephone with Police Headquarters, and also with the stables where the ambulances are located, so that promptness characterizes this service equally with that of the Fire Department. The cost of maintaining this service is \$5,200 annually; \$1,200 of this amount is raised by the Board of Estimate specifically for the services of the ambulance of the Homeopathic Hospital. The city owns four ambulances, two of which are always on duty, the others acting as reserves. It was deemed wise at the inception of this service in 1873, to make contracts with livery-stable keepers to furnish horses and drivers, rather than for the city to assume the work; this plan has worked so satisfactorily that it has not been changed. The amount paid for each district is \$1,000 annually, the city furnishing the ambulances and apparatus and keeping the same in repair.

In order that this service may be of the greatest possible value, the city is divided into districts, and the duties of the surgeons distinctly defined.

Since the organization of this service, in August, 1873, there have been 15,785 calls for assistance answered by the ambulances, divided by years as follows:

1873, 159; 1874, 601; 1875, 821; 1876, 911; 1877, 884; 1878, 1,340; 1879, 1,572; 1880, 2,014; 1881, 2,282; 1882, 2,498; 11 months of 1883, 2,703. Total, 15,785. The surgeons serve without compensation.

NIGHT MEDICAL SERVICE. — In the year 1880, the Legislature of the State of New York passed an act, chapter 588 of the session laws, entitled "An Act to organize a night medical service in the City of New York, and to provide medical assistance in cases of sudden sickness, or accident, during the night time." It was urged, at the time this act was introduced, that there were many cases of sudden sickness occurring during the night, and that it was very often difficult to obtain the services of a physician. This measure was designed to overcome the difficulty.

In the following year a similar act was passed, chapter 221 of the Laws of 1881, making the same provision for the city of Brooklyn.

It is mandatory upon the Board of Estimate to apportion and insert in their estimate of the expenses of said city, in each year, an amount necessary for the support of the aforesaid night medical service. The Board of Estimate of 1881 had adjourned *sine die* before the act was signed by the Governor, consequently no provision was made for the support of the service for 1882. In 1882, however, \$1,000 were appropriated for its maintenance during the year 1883. On the 1st of January of the present year, the service was organized, and 86 physicians have registered their names for duty.

During the eleven months ending November 30, there have been eighty-nine calls, for which the city has paid \$267. In addition to this amount, \$95 have been expended for forms and the necessary books of record.

I am satisfied that, in one instance at least, a human life

has been saved by a physician of the service, and that, in many cases, pain and suffering have been alleviated.

For the coming year, \$600 have been appropriated—a sum which will undoubtedly be sufficient to meet all demands.

THE PLUMBING LAW.—This law, which practically went into effect May 1, 1882, has been enforced since that date, and has undoubtedly contributed a large share to the improvement noticeable in the public health. During the past eleven months, 2,223 new houses have been plumbed in conformity with this law, which requires the work to be done under the supervision of this department; making in all 3,451 buildings in the city, which have the benefit of improved sanitary plumbing, and are occupied, probably, by not less than 20,000 persons.

INSPECTION OF FOOD.—This work has been continued with the zeal and vigor which its importance demands, and has

resulted in giving to the citizens of Brooklyn a supply of meat and milk second to no city in the State.

PUMPS AND WELLS.—The examination of pump water, which was commenced last year, has been continued during the year 1883; and, at the present time, we have the result of the analysis of the water from every pump in the city. It will be seen by reference to the table hereto appended that when this work was begun, there were 296 pumps. Of these, 230 have been condemned as furnishing water which was unfit for human consumption, and 17 were found to be so unobjectionable as not to warrant condemnation. The Common Council have given the necessary authority to close 172, and these have all been filled, and are, therefore, no longer in existence. There still remain in the city 124, of which number 106 have been condemned; and 18 have not been condemned."

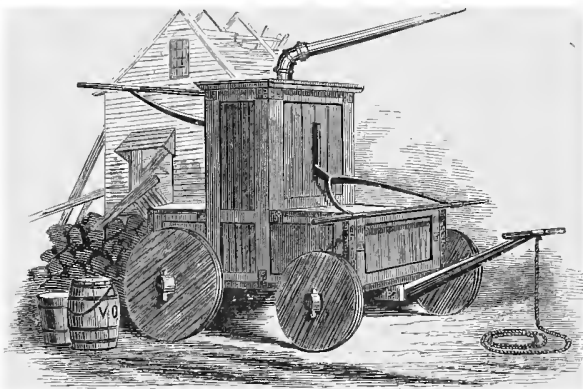
THE DEPARTMENT OF FIRE AND BUILDINGS.

BY THE EDITOR.

WESTERN DISTRICT.

The First Fire Company of Brooklyn, 1785.—

The first fire company within the present city of Brooklyn was organized on the 30th of April, 1785, at a meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants, held at the dwelling of the Widow Margaret Moser, who kept a house of entertainment in what is now Fulton street, near the ferry. The following persons were appointed members of the company, viz.: Henry Stanton, *captain*, Abraham Stoothoof, John Doughty, Jr., Thomas



BROOKLYN'S FIRST FIRE-ENGINE.

Havens, J. Van Cott and Martin Woodward, all of whom were commissioned for one year. The meeting also resolved to raise the sum of £150 by tax, for the purpose of procuring a fire-engine. This engine, the first ever used in Brooklyn, was built by Mr. Jacob Roome of New York, the first fire-engine builder of

that city, who had at that time just commenced the business, all former engines having been imported from England. It was about eight feet in length, three feet in width, two feet six inches deep, and stood about three feet high. The box was square, heavy, without ornament, and made for service, being well bolted and ironed together. The condensing case, enclosing the works, was placed in the centre of the machine, and stood three feet high, with an elbow or "goose neck" on the top, to which, when the engine was at work, a pipe was attached, through which the stream of water was directed upon the flames, the use of hose and suction being at that time unknown. The wood-work was of ash, the air cylinder of copper, and the chambers of brass, five inches in diameter, having a twelve inch stroke, and with puppet valves sheathed with leather. She was what is termed "a long stroke," and worked quite easily, throwing a stream of water at a distance of sixty feet, through a pipe six feet long, with a three-quarter inch nozzle. As she had no suctions, she was supplied by means of buckets, the water being drawn from neighboring wells, and carried to, and emptied into the engine, by the firemen, through an aperture in the side of the box, so placed as not to interfere with the working of the machine. The capacity of this box was about one hundred and eighty gallons. The arms were placed fore and aft, working lengthwise of the box, the levers striking on the ends; and, when full manned, but four men could work on each arm, making eight in all. The drag-rope was a single one, without

a reel, the engine being guided by the tongue. Such was the engine used here a hundred years ago, and upon its reception from the builder's hands, it was christened the *Washington No. 1*, which name and number has been retained by its successors down to the present day.

It was further enacted at said meeting, that the firemen should regularly play, clean and inspect the engine, on the first Saturday in each month; and that, in case of the non-attendance of any of the said firemen, upon due notice given them by their captain, they should be fined eight shillings, and that the captain for any neglect of duty in notifying the members, should himself be fined sixteen shillings.

The firemen were chosen annually at town meeting, and the office, although at that time it conferred no peculiar privileges or immunities upon its incumbents, was much sought after and valued as a position of respectability and honor in the community. Indeed, the name of *fireman* in those days was a passport into the best society. They were regarded, not only as a safeguard against fire, but as the protectors, advisers and patriarchs of the town. No citizen made any alterations in his domicile or other buildings, without first consulting the firemen, and their expressed opinion was rarely disregarded, or deviated from. At a town meeting held on the 14th of April, 1786, the following persons were elected firemen: Henry Stanton, *captain*, John Doughty, Jr., Abraham Stoothoof, Anthony Remsen, John Garrison, John Van Nostrand and Jas. Leverich. At a town meeting, held on the 3d of April, 1787, the following firemen were appointed, the meeting having previously resolved to increase the number to *nine*: Henry Stanton, *captain*, John Doughty, Jr., Joseph Carwood, George Stanton, Thomas Havens, James Leverich, John Van Nostrand, Thomas Bowers and John Garrison. It was also resolved that each fireman should take out a license, for which he should pay four shillings, the avails of these fees being applied to the current expenses of the company. No records of the payments of these licenses were kept until 1821, after which they were regularly entered upon the accounts of the trustees, and receipts issued for the same.

First Organization of a Fire Department.—

In 1788, a special meeting was held by the inhabitants, at which it was resolved to petition the legislature for a public enactment, whereby the fire department of Brooklyn should be organized on a more extended basis, and endowed with privileges similar to those enjoyed by the city of New York. In compliance with their petition, the legislature granted an "Act for the better extinguishing fires in the town of Brooklyn in Kings county," passed March 15th, 1788, and which authorized "the freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Brooklyn, in Kings county, residing near the ferry, within a line to begin at the East river,

opposite to, and to be drawn up the road that leads from the still house, late the property of Philip Livingston,* deceased, and including said still house and other buildings on the south side of same road, to and across the road leading from Bedford to the ferry, † south of of the house of Matthew Gleaves, and from thence north-westerly, including all the houses on the east side of the road last mentioned, and east of the powder magazine of Comfort and Joshua Sands, to the East river aforesaid, and from thence down the East river to the place of beginning," at an annual town meeting on the first Tuesday in April in every year, to appoint eight able and sober men residing within the limits aforesaid, to have the custody, care and management of the fire engine or engines, and other tools or instruments; and who were to be called the firemen of Brooklyn, and to be ready at all times, as well by night as day, to manage, work and exercise the same fire engine or engines, &c., and to be subject to such rules, orders and regulations as the freeholders and inhabitants of the town should impose. Each *fireman* was to be exempted and privileged from serving in the office of overseer of the highways, or constable, and from being empaneled upon any jury or inquest, and from militia duty, except in cases of invasion or other imminent danger. All moneys necessary for the expenses of this fire department were to be raised by the town at the same time, and in the same manner as those for the support of the poor.

In accordance with the provisions of this act, the citizens, April 1st, 1788, appointed the following persons firemen: Stephen Baldwin, *captain*, Benjamin Baldwin, Silas Betts, Thomas Havens, Joseph Stevens, Gilbert Van Mater, John Doughty, Jr., and John Van Cott, all of whom held their office by annual re-election, for three successive years.

In consequence of the daily increase of fires, arising from the foulness of chimneys, and in accordance with the ample provisions of the act of 1788, the freeholders at their annual town meeting, April 1st, 1789, created the office of *fire or chimney-inspectors*. ‡ John Van Nostrand and Jacob Sharpe were appointed *inspectors*, and the following persons firemen: John Van Nostrand, *captain*, Theodorus Hunt, Nehemiah Allen, John Doughty, Jr., John Dean, Daniel Hathaway and Joseph Carwood. At this meeting, it was also "*resolved*, that the firemen shall meet on the first Monday in every month, at an hour before sunrise, under the fine of four shillings for every neglect." This salutary regulation

* Now Joralemon street. † Now Fulton street.

‡ These inspectors, two in number, annually elected, were to inspect the insufficiency and foulness of the chimneys within the fire district, once in every six weeks, giving notice when necessary to the proprietors of faulty chimneys to have them swept or cemented properly within six days, under penalty of ten shillings for any neglect of such order; and the owner or occupant of any house whose chimneys should take fire and blaze out at the top, should be fined twenty shillings, with costs of suit. The captain of the fire company was authorized to ask, prosecute for, and receive all such fines, the avails of which were to be appropriated to the use of the engine.

probably had reference to the fact that, previously to this time the firemen had not been in the habit of holding any regular company meeting, and seldom visited the engine house, except in case of a fire, a matter of so infrequent occurrence, that the engine was liable to be neglected and unfit for use in any sudden emergency. The new rule was then a gentle reminder to the careless firemen that they had under their care a costly machine, which they, as guardians of the public safety, were bound to keep at all times ready for instant use. Regular meetings were also justly considered as affording convenient opportunities of social intercourse among the firemen, of conference as to the proper methods of performing their duties, and of encouraging and maintaining that *esprit d' corps* so necessary to their efficiency as a body.

On the first Tuesday in April, 1790, the following persons were elected firemen: John Van Nostrand, *Captain*; Thomas Everitt, David Dick, Burdett Stryker, Nicholas Allen, Peter Cannon, Abiel Titus, and John Garrison. Inspectors of chimneys the same as before, and though they were vigilant in the performance of their duty, no person seems to have been fined for foul chimneys.

On the first Tuesday in April, 1791, at town meeting, the following persons were elected firemen: John Van Nostrand, *Captain*; Thomas Everitt, John Garrison, William Furman, John Doughty, Jr., David Dick, Thomas Place, and Nicholas Allen. A fine of two shillings was also imposed on any fireman who should be absent whenever ordered on duty by the captain.

On the 3d of April, 1792, the following persons were elected firemen: John Van Nostrand, *Captain*; John Garrison, Nicholas Allen, Burdett Stryker, John Doughty, Thomas Everitt, Abiel Titus, and Benjamin Dick, all of whom were reelected the next year. It was at this time customary for the citizens to help at fires by passing buckets, twenty-four of which belonged to the town, and were kept in the engine house, which then stood in a lane in Front street, near the Old Ferry road, now Fulton street.

In 1793, the settled portion of the fire district, extending from what is now Henry street to the ferry, contained some seventy-five buildings, and about fifty families, the entire population, inclusive of one hundred slaves, numbering about three hundred and fifty souls. The remainder of this district, more than three-fourths of the town, was open *country*. Fires, as may be imagined, were of exceedingly rare occurrence, and the solitary engine, possessed by the town, had grown rusty and unserviceable rather from *disuse* than from use. In view of this fact, it was unanimously resolved in town meeting, on the first Tuesday in April, 1794, that a subscription should be raised for the purpose of procuring a *new* engine, and in the course of six or seven months the sum of £188 19s. 10d. was subscribed and collected in sums varying from one shilling to two

pounds. Joshua Sands, Esq., then president of the Board of trustees, immediately contracted with Mr. Hardenbrook, of New York city, to construct a new and more powerful machine, which was finished in about four months, and delivered to the trustees, who called a special meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants, at which the new engine was exhibited, tried, approved and accepted. At the same meeting the office of clerk and treasurer of the fire department was created, and Mr. John Hicks unanimously chosen as its incumbent.

The firemen this year were: John Van Nostrand, *Captain*; John Garrison, Nehemiah Allen, Burdett Stryker, John Doughty, Thomas Everitt, Abiel Titus, and Theodorus Hunt.

Enlargement of Village Fire District, 1795.—

On the 24th of March, 1795, at the special request of the people of Brooklyn, the act of the Legislature of 1788 was amended so as to enlarge the limits of the fire district, and authorizing an increase of the number of firemen to thirty; also confirming the office of clerk and treasurer of the fire department, created by the town during the previous year; and, furthermore, requiring each inhabitant and house owner to furnish himself with a suitable number of fire buckets, under penalty of proper fines, the avails of which should be applied to the expenses of the fire engine. At the next ensuing town meeting, the inhabitants elected thirty firemen, and ordered that each householder or owner should provide such house with not less than two fire buckets, at their own expense, under penalty of ten shillings for each default, after due notification. By this arrangement, about one hundred and twenty-five buckets were provided, one-half of which were required for the immediate use of the engine, while the remainder were employed in the hands of the citizens directly upon the fire.

The First Fire Bell of the Village, 1795.—

About this time the project of setting up a fire alarm bell was warmly discussed, and met with much opposition from some economically disposed persons; in spite of which, however, it was resolved, at the annual town meeting of 1796, to authorize a subscription for its purchase. In the course of three months, the sum of £49 4s. was subscribed, collected and placed in the hands of the clerk of the department, with instructions to obtain *as large a bell as he could procure for the money*. When purchased, a new difficulty arose in finding a place to hang it. Several persons, to whom application was made, declined, apparently from a dread of having their nerves startled and their slumbers disturbed by its tones, for be it known that in those days all Brooklyn went to bed early. Finally, however, the awful bell found a resting place on the ancient stone house of Mr. Jacob Remsen, situated at the corner of Old Ferry road (now Fulton street) and a lane now known as Front street. At that time, this house was the last one

on the road approaching the ferry, and within twenty feet of the tide of the East River. The trustees, also, agreed with Mr. Remsen that he should ring the bell for fire alarms, in consideration of which duty he was to enjoy all the privileges and exemptions, with which other firemen were endowed by the act of 1788. This building was pulled down about forty years ago, 1816, and the bell was removed to Middagh street, near Henry, where it remained until 1827, when, on the petition of a large number of citizens, it was set up on an unoccupied lot of ground, bounded by Bridge, Gold, Sands and Prospect streets. Upon the erection of the Eastern Market in that vicinity, the bell was placed in the cupola, where, we believe, it still remains, although the building itself has been converted into a place for religious worship.

In 1797, the inhabitants of Brooklyn resolved, in consequence of the inefficiency of previous legislative acts, especially the clause relating to the occurrence of fires from burning out chimneys, to apply to the Legislature for a more stringent and effective enactment. And on the 21st of March, 1797, the Legislature passed another "Act for the better prevention of fires in the town of Brooklyn." By its provisions the inhabitants and freeholders were empowered to appoint not less than three, or more than five discreet freeholders, who should have authority to make such protective rules and regulations, as they should judge necessary for the prevention of fires by the burning of chimneys, and for the sweeping and otherwise cleaning them, under such penalties as they should deem fit, not exceeding the sum of \$5, said fines to be applied to lighting the streets of the town. Accordingly, at a meeting on the second Tuesday in May, 1797, the following persons were appointed to that duty: Henry Stanton, John Doughty, Martin Boerum, John Van Nostrand, and John Stryker. These gentlemen shortly thereafter met, and enacted, that from and after the 11th day of July, 1797, a fine of ten shillings should be imposed on every person whose chimney should take fire from carelessness, or be set on fire for the purpose of cleansing, all such penalties to be paid to the clerk of the fire company, who was also directed to keep a book wherein should be entered the names and residences of all persons owning chimneys, together with the date and hour of burning, etc. This book was called the *Chimney Register*, and the whole amount of moneys received for the chimneys, during the succeeding nine years, was £20 7s., which was duly appropriated to lighting the streets. The whole force of the department at this time was one engine, thirty men, and about one hundred and fifty buckets. By this act five men were added, enjoying the same privileges as the other firemen, but not attached to the engine, whose sole duty consisted in a faithful general supervision over the inhabitants in regard to chimneys, etc.

Meanwhile, another engine had been procured and

named the *Neptune No. 2*; and, about the year 1810, a third one was purchased at the town's expense, which was called the *Franklin No. 3*.

No other material change occurred in the department, except a gradual augmentation of men and apparatus, until the passage of the act of incorporation of Brooklyn as a village, April 12, 1816. By the 17th section of this act the trustees were empowered to appoint as many firemen as they might from time to time deem necessary, and they promptly availed themselves of this authority by organizing two new fire companies of thirty men each, thus swelling the total force of the department to ninety-five members. This measure, which was imperatively demanded by the growing population of the village, now amounting to about 5,000, with a proportionate increase of dwellings, gave universal satisfaction.

Creation of Office of Chief Engineer, 1816.—During the same year the office of *chief engineer* was created, at the suggestion of the firemen themselves, who were allowed to nominate a candidate for the place. Their unanimous choice fell on Mr. John Doughty, who was forthwith accepted and confirmed by the trustees, as the first *chief engineer* of the Brooklyn fire department. This year, also, the system of regular annual appropriations for the maintenance of the department was initiated by the resolution to raise \$300 by tax for that purpose. No member of the corps, at that time, received a salary, and the usual deficiency which had occurred between the expenses and receipts of the department, in former years, had been defrayed by the voluntary contributions of the members. From 1794 to 1816, the department had received from chimney fines, penalties imposed upon firemen, etc., the sum of £899 0s. 1d., while the expenses during the same period amounted to £964 3s. 3d., leaving an excess of £65 3s. 2d., which had been liquidated by the firemen themselves. Thus it will be seen that for 22 years the department had been maintained at an average of \$240 per annum. The appropriation of \$300, made in 1816, was so economically managed, that at the end of the year an unexpended balance remained in the treasury.

During the year 1817, certain improvements were introduced in the fire engines, enabling them to be supplied with water from the back instead of the side, and shifting the levers so as to strike on the side of the ends, by which means a larger number of men were admitted to work them, with a corresponding increase of ease and power in the action of the machines.

Fire Wardens Appointed, 1817.—In June of the same year, the trustees, under the provisions of the act of 1816, appointed John Doughty, Isaac Moser, John Harmer and John Moon, as *fire wardens*, for the purpose of inspection and supervision of all buildings that should be erected within the village.

Organization of the First Hook and Ladder Company, 1817.—About this time, also, measures

were taken for the organization of a hook and ladder company. A most serious difficulty hitherto experienced by the firemen had been a want of ladders to assist in conveying the hose to an extraordinary distance from the engine, and they were frequently obliged to leave walls and ruins standing in a very dangerous manner, simply from the need of suitable means with which to pull them down. Two recent cases, where the falling of walls after the firemen had left the ground, had nearly proved fatal to the spectators, tended to alarm the public mind and call general attention to the subject. The plan of such a company was not altogether new or untried in Brooklyn. As early as 1812, a company had been formed, purely voluntary in its nature and independent of the department, its members claiming no exemptions or privileges, and being bound merely to aid those of their own number who might be in danger from fire. This association, seeing the state of the public mind in regard to the subject, reorganized under new officers and with a new code of regulations. The inhabitants, however, were desirous of having a hook and ladder company regularly organized by the trustees, and attached to the fire department. This popular feeling found unanimous expression in a petition from the citizens and firemen, and presented to the trustees, who signified their approval by offering, in case a company should be formed, to supply them with the necessary apparatus. This being deemed rather indefinite, the trustees, on the 13th of October, 1817, further resolved to establish a hook and ladder company consisting of fifteen men. At the next meeting of the board, the following nominations were received from the firemen and confirmed as members of the new company: Samnel S. Birdsall, *foreman*, Cornelius Van Cleef, John S. Doughty, Egbert K. Van Buren, William R. Dean, Robert W. Doughty, Stephen Schenck, Elias Doughty, Erastus Worthington, Isaac Denyse, Walter Nichols, William Phillips, Samuel Watts, Robert S. Dykman and Elias M. Stillwell. These gentlemen were all shortly equipped for service, but nearly two months elapsed before the proper apparatus was furnished to them, and then, only the hooks and ladders, which they were obliged to carry by hand. This extremely laborious work did not dampen their zeal, but its onerousness soon compelled them to petition the board of trustees for an increase of men, and a carriage. On the 1st of December, 1817, the trustees voted to increase the hook and ladder company to twenty-five members. This failed, however, to satisfy the company, who shortly after renewed their application for more men and a carriage. The trustees, June 22, 1818, increased the number of men to thirty, but *did not grant the carriage*. Nothing daunted, the company now addressed a petition to the trustees in language too strong to be disregarded, and finally, on the 27th of June, their wishes were gratified by the appropriation of \$125 for the purchase of the

long asked for, and much needed, carriage. At the same meeting the trustees voted to raise \$200, by taxation, for the rent of a lot, and the erection of a temporary building for the use and shelter of the Hook and Ladder company's apparatus; which, it seems, had hitherto been kept in an open lot.

The firemen next turned their attention to a better supply of water; for the engines of that day, not having any suction, were supplied by fire buckets which in the case of a large fire were quite inadequate to the demand. The trustees, therefore, in compliance with the wishes of the firemen, passed, on the 6th of October, 1817, the following act; "And be it further ordained that the owner or occupant of every house in the village, having less than three fire-places, shall provide and keep one leather bucket; and having three fire-places and less than five, two leather buckets; and having six fire-places and less than nine, four leather buckets; and having nine fire-places and upwards, six leather buckets to be marked with the name or initials of the name of the owner, and the street where they belong; and owners or occupants of every brew-house, distillery, sugar-house, soap and candle manufactory, and other ship chandlery store shall provide and keep six leather buckets, and every bake-house and air furnace four leather buckets, besides the necessary buckets for dwelling houses aforesaid, each such bucket to contain two and one-half gallons, and to be suspended in some convenient place ready to be used in extinguishing fires, and shall be brought to and delivered for use at a fire whenever an alarm is given." This was to be done on penalty of one dollar fine per month for each neglect; and persons who should "wilfully take and keep from the owner for twenty-four hours any bucket," which had been used at a fire, were to be mulcted in the sum of five dollars. Engineers and firewardens also directed to wear hats, having black brims, and white crowns, with the name of their respective offices painted thereon in black letters; and were to carry speaking trumpets. The members of the Hook and Ladder company were to wear white hats, the foreman having office distinctly painted on his.

The inhabitants promptly complied with this order, and soon the buckets were hung up in the entry way of each house, and on the alarm of fire, were either carried to the scene of conflagration by the inmates, or thrown out into the streets, to be picked up and used by any of the citizens who were going to the fire to be returned afterwards.

October 13th, 1817, Mr. William Furman was appointed chief engineer, and served until 1821, when Mr. Doughty was re-elected in his stead.*

* John Doughty served this second term, for fourteen years; Jeremiah Wells succeeded from 1827 to 1836; then J. F. Dufon served to 1839; Burdett Stryker, ten years, to 1849; Peter B. Anderson in 1853; Israel D. Velsor, thence to 1861; Wm. A. Furey, thence to 1863; John Cunningham, thence to 1869. The chief was nominated by the foremen until the time of Burdett Stryker, who was chosen by the firemen at large. The first annual report was by Chief Wells, in 1823, the total expenses were only \$114.40.

On the 21st of August, 1822, there occurred a large fire among some buildings under the Heights, in which naval stores and cotton were stored, destroying property to the amount of \$85,000. At this fire occurred the first accidental death in the fire department. Mr. Walter McCann, a member of the Hook and Ladder company, received fatal injuries by the slipping of his hook, which he survived but twenty six hours.

Incorporation of the Village Fire Department, 1823.—On the 16th of April, 1823, an act was passed incorporating *The Fire Department of the Village of Brooklyn*. The growth of the town, and the corresponding increase of fires, now demanded another engine located further up town. Accordingly, in 1825, the people in the neighborhood of Military garden met at the house of John F. Duflon and organized a new company which was called the *Lafayette No. 5*. The following were its first enrolled members: John F. Duflon, *foreman*; Ralph Malbone, *assistant*; Thomas Taylor, *secretary*; Jasper Duflon, *assistant secretary*; John B. Johnson, *treasurer*; John Pease, *steward*; Charles Hunt, Henry Heins, N. M. Hudson, John Montgomery, Warren Crocker, James Dobbins, Lyman R. Bass and William Bennett. They secured accommodations for their engine in an addition to a house owned by Rev. E. M. Johnson, and located near the corner of Fulton and Washington streets. A somewhat amusing instance is preserved illustrative of their zealous pride in, and care of their machine. Shortly after he had granted them the use of this building, Mr. Johnson was notified by the tenants of the dwelling house that they were about to leave the premises. On being inquired of as to the reason, they complained that the firemen visited them every day, got the engine out upon the sidewalk, scrubbed, cleaned, and walked around and looked at it as if they had never seen an engine before; and furthermore declared that they feared the firemen would *set the house on fire for the purpose of trying the new machine*. It is needless to say that Mr. J. succeeded in pacifying their fears, and no further difficulty ensued from the labors of love in which the firemen so heartily indulged.

No. 5, being at a considerable distance from most of the fires which occurred, soon found that it was pretty severe labor to drag their engine down to the village. They therefore petitioned the board of trustees to furnish them with a reel, which although in general use by the New York engines, had not as yet been introduced in the Brooklyn Fire Department. This was granted January 2d, 1827, and this improvement was speedily adopted by the other companies.

The fourth of July, 1826, was the first departmental parade. The Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company presented a banner to the Department on the occasion. *Clinton Hook and Ladder No. 2* was organized as late as 1840, and took 206 Pearl street for its location. *Protector No. 6* in 1825. This company located on Con-

cord street, near Adams; thence, in 1838, it removed to Pearl street. *Constitution No. 7* was organized in 1828. This company presents a long record of politically distinguished members and officers, and of hospitable entertainments given to and received from the firemen of other cities. Among its annals is a story of its members having played two hundred and eight feet on Christmas day, 1859, with its double-decked hand engine. This feat, however, was not performed in Brooklyn. *Columbia No. 7* dates from its reorganization in 1854, and has done good service in mid-Brooklyn. *Pacific No. 14* dates from 1846. This is considered by the others to have been the Trojan horse of the Department. It bought its own engines; the first for \$1,000, and a better one for double the money, in 1851. This company's quarters have always been in the fashionable vicinity of the Heights.

Brooklyn No. 17 was organized in 1848. In 1850, at a fire at Thorne's stores, Furman street, its apparatus was blown into the river by an explosion of saltpetre. This company could boast a strong exempt association, as well as a full roll of active members; started in Washington street, near Johnson, thence removed to Lawrence street, thence to Jay street, near Willoughby; and had the first steam engine in Brooklyn, an Amoskeag, in 1861.

Hose Companies.—*Atlantic No. 1* was organized in 1835. An old painter's cart was the first apparatus of the first hose company. They began life in a shed, until they moved into Fireman's Hall. *Hose No. 6* was organized in 1853. It was located first in a shed on Adelphi street, and thence removed to Carlton avenue.

The Fire Department of the City of Brooklyn, 1855.—On the 28th of March, 1855, was enacted a law changing the name of the corporation to that of *The Fire Department of the City of Brooklyn*, and empowering a Board of Trustees of one from each company to manage its affairs and dispose of its funds. A board of representatives of two members from each company was constituted, with power to make and prescribe such by-laws, ordinances and regulations touching the management and disposition of the funds, and the general business and purposes for which the corporation was instituted, as should not conflict with the laws of the State and ordinances of the city. The fund, after deducting necessary expenses, was to be appropriated for the relief of indigent or disabled firemen or their families, as should be entitled to it under the rules of the corporation, or who might be deemed worthy of assistance.

On the 17th of February, 1857, was passed "An Act for the better regulation of the Firemen of Brooklyn," providing for the election, by a convention of two delegates from each fire company, and one delegate from the Board of Engineers, of a commission of five, to be denominated:

Commissioners of the Fire Department of the Western District of the City of Brooklyn.—This commission continued in force until 1869, when the law was passed creating the *Metropolitan Paid Fire Department*.

The force of the Western District Fire Department

at this time consisted of twenty-two engines (of which nine were steamers), seventeen hose companies, and six hook and ladder companies, under *Chief Engineer* John Cunningham, and *Assistant Engineers* William Down, James Gaffney, Charles B. Farley, Peter Fagan, James O'Connor, Thomas Regan and James W. Dean.

EASTERN DISTRICT.

The records of the Williamsburg Fire Department, previous to the consolidation of that city with Brooklyn in 1855, are so meagre and incomplete that it is with difficulty that anything like a connected history of the same can be prepared. We have, therefore, availed ourselves largely of a sketch by MR. DEMAS STRONG, well known for years as one of the most prominent and efficient members of the Williamsburg Department. Previous to 1834, the necessity of some efficient means of extinguishing fires was more extensively canvassed among the more public spirited citizens of the then growing village, and the result was that, in January of that year, the Board of Trustees were petitioned by John Luther and others to purchase two engines, and organize companies to work them. The petition received the favorable action of the Board, and a committee was appointed to locate the engines, one to be in North Second, and the other in South Second street. The population of the village at that time was mainly centered in, and around, the Grand street ferry. The work of organizing the department was now rapidly progressed with, and by the end of January the engines had been ordered, the lots purchased, and the erection of the houses authorized. In March the firemen were appointed, and the two companies fully organized; and thus were constituted, almost simultaneously, the first two fire companies of Williamsburg. No. 1 adopted the name of *Washington Company*, and No. 2 that of *Protection Company*, which they retain at the present time. No. 1 retains its original location, as did No. 2, until a few years ago.

The records of this period do not show what was the number of the men allowed to each company, the duties required to be performed by them, or the manner of their appointment. It is supposed, however, that twenty-five was the number of men allowed, inasmuch as, some years after, a proposition was adopted to increase the strength of the companies from that number to forty. Doubtless the manner of appointment was very much the same as at present, though there were instances where the individual himself applied directly to the Common Council, and where the Chief Engineer sent in names for confirmation, inde-

pendent of the action of the companies to whom they were assigned by the trustees.

In December, 1835, John Luther was appointed Chief Engineer, being the first time the office was known in the department. In September, 1836, the Trustees authorized the construction of a public cistern in front of the Reformed Dutch Church, corner of South Second and Fourth streets, at a cost of \$500. The necessity for a hook and ladder company was soon made apparent, and in June, 1836, a company, known as *Mutual Truck Company No. 1* was organized and located in the house adjoining Engine Company No. 1, in North Second street. The total number of actual members of the three companies then in existence was sixty-three, twenty-five men being allotted to each engine company, and thirteen to the truck company, though in fact every citizen was supposed to constitute himself a fireman in an emergency, and there were no restrictions against any one assisting in going to or working at a fire in any capacity one might choose, as at the present time. The younger male villagers were in reality divided off into two parties, termed North and South-siders; and, while the first named favored and took part for Engine Company No. 1, the boys of the South side were equally exercised for No. 2, and fights between the two sections were of daily occurrence and varied in result.

On the 12th of October, 1836, the office of Chief Engineer was rendered vacant by the removal of Mr. Luther from the village. A contest arose between the department and the Board of Trustees as to who should be appointed to fill the vacancy, which resulted in an arrangement that the firemen should nominate, and the Trustees confirm. Peter Powell, on the 26th of October, received the nomination on the part of the firemen, and their action was unanimously confirmed by the Trustees. This course was strictly pursued thereafter, except in a single case, when the firemen, from a lack of interest in the candidates, failed to make a nomination.

In February, 1837, the office of *Fire Warden* was first instituted, Henry Cook being appointed to discharge the duties thereof. This is, however, the only

reference made to this office for four years, when the Chief Engineer complained to the Trustees of the hose being cut at fires, and recommended the appointment of wardens, whose duty it should be to protect hose, procure water for engines, and protect property at fires. The Trustees authorized the fire companies to nominate their own wardens, and under this provision several wardens were from year to year appointed.

In 1838, Mr. David Garritt was elected Chief, and was re-elected in May, 1839; and, declining to run for office the year following, was succeeded by A. B. Hodges, afterwards member of Assembly for the Eighth District, who held the office five years.

In 1839, and for several years thereafter, the engines were the property of Mr. Abraham Meserole, who purchased them at a Sheriff's sale, where they were sold under a judgment against the village,* and who hired them out to the authorities at a rent of \$150 per annum, which arrangement continued six years.

In 1841, the department was organized as a charitable association. A board of representatives was constituted, a fund established, and trustees appointed to take charge thereof. Its first meeting was held in the old North American Hotel, on North Second street. Subsequently the office of the Citizens' Fire Insurance Company was placed at its service gratuitously, and the meetings were held there for several years.

In 1842, the number of men attached to the Hook and Ladder Company was authorized to be increased from twelve and a captain to twenty-three. In May of this year, the office of Assistant Engineer was first instituted, Mr. Barnet B. Boerum being chosen to fill that position. In March, an amendment to the laws relating to Williamsburg was prepared by the department and presented to the authorities for their approval. The Trustees approved of it, with the exception of a provision which reduced the term of service from ten to seven years, and directed the draft of the act to be forwarded to the Legislature, to be passed into a law. The Legislature enacted it as agreed upon by the firemen, and very soon afterwards the department began to feel its effect in the increased number of men and organization of new companies.

In June, 1843, the people in Town Meeting, on the petition of the firemen, voted an appropriation for the building of reservoirs for securing a supply of water for the extinguishment of fires. In July of the same year, the Trustees took the initiative in the matter of procuring a large fire bell. These measures, however, were not carried into effect without strenuous opposition. There are many residents of the then village of Williamsburg who recollect how many, and how stormy and boisterous, were the meetings held to consider mat-

ters pertaining to the fire department, what contention there were over the appropriations for public cisterns, and what an uproar the new bell created.

In 1843, at the election for Chief Engineer, it was decided that three assistants should also be voted for at the same time, and the engineers so elected were B. B. Boerum, William H. Guischart and A. L. Remsen. The firemen up to this time had relied for information of a fire upon some person running at the top of his speed to the house of the nearest apparatus, or going about the street of the village in the character of a town crier, yelling out "Fire," which would be caught up and repeated by any one who might be out and feel disposed to assist in passing the word around.

Up to 1844, the department consisted but of three companies. In that year *Engine Company No. 3* was organized, and others rapidly followed. The records either before or since that period, furnish little of interest; in fact, there are no proper records in existence. So little care was taken to note matters, that the authorities themselves were obliged to call on the firemen, from time to time, to furnish full and complete lists of their members. In those early days, among other expenses of the fire department defrayed by the authorities, was, in several instances, for refreshment furnished to firemen at fires. The payment of the last bill of this kind, was coupled with the admonition that it was all illegal, and would be the last time.

Williamsburg Fire Department, incorporated 1843-44.—An act of incorporation was passed by the Legislature of 1843 and 1844, under the operation of which Mr. Daniel D. Winant was elected *President*; Mr. Demas Strong, *Secretary*; and Mr. George Joy, *Treasurer*. The Chief Engineers elected in town since that time were William H. Guischart, Andrew Marshall, Benjamin Dubois, R. H. Harding (served the unexpired term of Mr. Dubois), Charles C. Talbot, Hamilton Allen, F. W. Jennings, Thomas M. Doyle, and John W. Smith. Up to the year 1840, and during the five years preceding, six new companies were organized, comprising Engines Nos. 3, 4, 5, 6 and 7, and Hose company No. 1; and at the time the act was amended by the Legislature, January 15th, 1857, the government of the department passed into the hands of a commission, a further increase of the force had been made, and a total of twenty-two companies were in existence. But little change took place until 1865, when, in consequence of the fund allowed by law being insufficient, and it being apparent that a less number of companies were adequate to the duty required, about one-third of the apparatus were dispensed with.

By the act of consolidation, the Williamsburg Fire Department became the *Fire Department of the Eastern District of Brooklyn*.

On the 7th of April, 1857, an act was passed, entitled "An Act to incorporate the Fire Department of the

* To levy on the machines, the Sheriff found, was no easy task, the firemen holding watch and ward over them day and night. The officer was indefatigable, and at last, after a long and tedious watch, the chance occurred. A fire broke out, and seizing the opportunity, he levied upon the engines as they were being dragged to the fire.

Eastern District of the city of Brooklyn," constituting all the legally-organized firemen in the present Eastern District, a body corporate to be known as the Brooklyn Eastern District Fire Department. It provided a board of representatives, composed of one or more delegates from each organized fire company, and one from the board of engineers, with power to choose their own officers and establish their own rules and regulations for the transaction of their business. It provided, also, for a board of trustees, to consist of one member from each company, to be nominated by their respective companies and confirmed by the board of representatives, whose duty it was to care for, manage and direct the investment and disbursement of the firemen's benevolent fund. The business and purposes of the department, which the act incorporated, was declared to be to raise, accumulate, invest, superintend, apply, dispose of and expend a fund for the relief of firemen and the widows and orphans of firemen. The act also conferred upon the board of representatives the power and duty of canvassing the votes cast at all elections for chief and assistant engineers, and to return the result thereof to the Common Council for confirmation, and the exclusive right to issue certificates to firemen; as, also, to nominate the fire wardens of the Eastern District, subject to the confirmation or rejection of the Common Council.

It also provided for the election, by a convention of two delegates from each company, and one from the board of engineers, five commissioners, to be denominated *The Commissioners of the Fire Department of the Eastern District*. These were duly chosen on the second Tuesday of May, 1857, their duties being in every respect similar to those of the commissioners of the Western District. The first President of the Board was Mr. R. H. Harding, who filled the position acceptably for a period of ten years, and on retiring from the Board was succeeded by Mr. R. Van Valkenburgh for the three ensuing years. This gentleman resigned from the Board in the spring of 1868, since which time Mr. Daniel Donevan has been the presiding officer. The remaining members of the Board were Messrs. Robert Murphy, George W. Williams, William Johnson and Patrick F. Morris.

In 1869, this department, together with that of the Western District, was consolidated in the new paid organization, at which time the force of the Eastern District consisted of seventeen companies, divided into four engine companies, ten hose and three truck companies.

The *personelle* of the Brooklyn Volunteer Fire Department when superseded in 1869, was as follows:

BOARD OF REPRESENTATIVES: A. J. Michaels, *President*; P. Fitzpatrick, *Vice-President*; R. Wingham, *Secretary*; F. S. Massey, *Treasurer*. TRUSTEES: D. H. Roche, *President*; S. Bowden, *Secretary*; W. D. Veeder, *Council*. CHIEF ENGINEER: John Cunningham. FIRE COMMISSIONERS: W. M.

Boerum, *President*; A. B. Thorne, W. Barre, Jr., R. G. Bergen, E. A. Kollmeyer. BOARD OF APPEALS: J. Naylor, *President*; C. F. Elwell, W. L. Boyd S. Kidder, F. Ward. EX-EMPT FIREMEN'S ASSOCIATION: J. T. Finn, *President*; J. McCarthy, *Vice-President*; J. McColgan, *Recording Secretary*; M. F. Connor, *Financial Secretary*; S. Avila, *Treasurer*.

The volunteer companies in 1869 were as follows:

Washington Engine Co., No. 1, located at 5 Prospect street, P. Lahey, *foreman*; 74 men. Neptune Engine Co., No. 2, Hicks street, near Degraw, P. Murphy, *foreman*; 75 men. Franklin Engine Co., No. 3, Henry street, W. N. Bell, *foreman*; 58 men. Goodwill Engine Co., No. 4, Underhill avenue, near Bergen, J. S. Dooley, *foreman*; 66 men. Union Engine Co., No. 5, Canton street, near Bolivar, T. Morris, *foreman*; — men. Protector Engine Co., No. 6, 217 Pearl street, J. Chadrick, *foreman*; 80 men. Constitution Engine Co., No. 7, 167 Front street, J. S. Shevelin, *foreman*; 78 men. Hope Engine Co., No. 8, J. McDermott, *foreman*; 75 men. Continental Engine Co., No. 9, 184 Carlton avenue, 54 men. Columbia Engine Co., No. 10, 87 Kent avenue, 72 men. Jackson Engine Co., No. 11, Fulton, near Schenectady, A. Stewart, *foreman*; — men. Phoenix Engine Co., No. 12, Graham avenue, near Myrtle, 66 men. Eagle Engine Co., No. 13, Fifth avenue, near Union street, 51 men. Pacific Engine Co., No. 14, Pierrepont street, near Fulton, S. C. Baylis, *foreman*; 75 men. Hibernia Engine Co., No. 16, 16 Cole street, J. Curran, *foreman*; 75 men. Brooklyn Engine Co., No. 17, Jay street, near Willoughby, W. Burrell, *foreman*; 75 men. Empire Engine Co., No. 19, 188 Pacific street, 71 men. Putnam Engine Co., No. 21, Fourth avenue, near 19th street, P. Wilson, Jr., *foreman*; 53 men. Montauk Engine Co., No. 22, 293 Degraw street, C. E. Swain, *foreman*; 71 men. Atlantic Hose Co., No. 1, 12 High street, T. F. Jones, *foreman*; 28 men. Mechanic Hose No. 2, 202 Jay street, H. McCullough, *foreman*; 27 men. Alert Hose, No. 3, 9 Hoyt street, R. Harper, *foreman*; 27 men. Crystal Hose, No. 4, No. 1 Love lane, J. McMurray, *foreman*; 28 men. Frontier Hose, No. 5, 83 Hudson avenue, J. Kelley, *foreman*; 30 men. Americus Hose, No. 7, Tillary, near Bridge street, 30 men. Water-witch Hose, No. 8, Bergen street, near Court, 32 men. Mt. Vernon Hose, No. 10, 304 Carlton avenue, J. Wright, *foreman*; 30 men. Bedford Hose, No. 11, Bergen street, near Classon avenue, 30 men. Eureka Hose, No. 14, Ninth street, near Third avenue, 25 men. Myrtle Hose, No. 17, J. Kenny, *foreman*; 29 men. Montross Hook and Ladder Co., No. 1, Firemen's Hall, Henry street, W. Day, *foreman*; 31 men. Clinton Hook and Ladder Co., No. 2, 196 Gold street, 34 men. Empire Hook and Ladder Co., No. 3, Bedford avenue, near Myrtle, 32 men. Degraw Hook and Ladder Co., No. 4, 19th street and Fourth avenue, C. H. Foley, *foreman*; 25 men. Rescue Hook and Ladder Co., No. 5, DeKalb avenue, near Fort Greene place, 46 men.

Commissioners of the Fire Department appointed by Act of 1869.—By the act of May 4, 1869, the Mayor, Street Commissioner, the President of the Board of Aldermen, the City Treasurer, and the Comptroller, were empowered and directed to appoint four citizens to be Fire Commissioners, and to form a Fire Department of the city of Brooklyn, which should have control of all real estate, engines, and property of all kinds, to employ officers, firemen, engineers, and others. Under this act, the first commissioners appointed were Frederick S. Massey, *Presi-*

dent; Hugh McLaughlin, William A. Brown, and A. F. Campbell. The term of office was first fixed at eight years, and afterwards at six. The Commissioners have been as follows: Frederick S. Massey, 1869-77, *President*; Hugh McLaughlin, 1869-77; William A. Brown, 1869-73; A. F. Campbell, 1869-73; R. M. Phraner, 1873-75; E. A. Kollmeyer, 1873-75; James Rodwell, 1875-77; David Williams, 1877-79; Bernard Gallagher, 1878-80; James Ryan, 1879-80; Moses J. Wafer, 1879-80; P. F. Brennan, 1879-80.

"Single-Head" Commissioners appointed over the Department of Fire and Building, 1880.—In an act of the Legislature, passed May 25, 1880, are the following provisions:

"Within thirty days after the passage of this act, the Mayor and Comptroller shall appoint a proper person, who shall be the head of the Fire Department, and shall be designated as the Commissioner of said department; they shall also appoint a proper person who shall be the head of the Department of Buildings, to be designated as the Commissioner of said department, and upon the said appointment, the term of office of the present head of departments respectively shall cease and determine. All the powers and duties of the present department of Fire and Buildings, in relation to extinguishing fires, shall be vested in said Commissioner of the Fire Department; and all the powers and duties of said department of Fire and Buildings, relating to the erection or repair of buildings, shall vest exclusively in the Commissioner of Buildings to be appointed, who shall organize and constitute a Department of Buildings. After January 1, 1882, the Mayor shall have the sole power of appointing successors to the commissioners. No fireman shall be removed without cause, and then only after public trial by the head of this department."

Under this act, Jacob Worth was appointed Commissioner of the Fire Department, and served in 1880-1. Henry Dawson, Jr., was Deputy for the same time. John N. Partridge was appointed Commissioner in 1881, and is still in that position (1884); Richard H. Poillon, Deputy, 1881-4; Thomas F. Nevins, Chief Engineer, 1881-4; John W. Smith, Assistant.

After the disbanding of the volunteer force, the old engine houses and property were turned over to the new commissioners, and the new Fire Department was organized. Frederick S. Massey was chosen *President*; Hugh McLaughlin *Treasurer*. The other Commissioners were William A. Brown and A. F. Campbell.

In the re-organization of the department, some excellent men were appointed, but generally they were not selected on account of any special fitness for their work, but because of political affiliations. In looking over the record of the first appointments, we find bar-keepers, billiard-markers, clerks, watch-makers, and the like—occupations which in no way fit a man to become a good fireman, while engineers, machinists, carpenters and horsemen were in the minority. Promotions and dismissals were made mostly for political reasons, and, while the Fire Department was no worse than other departments, it was by no means what it should

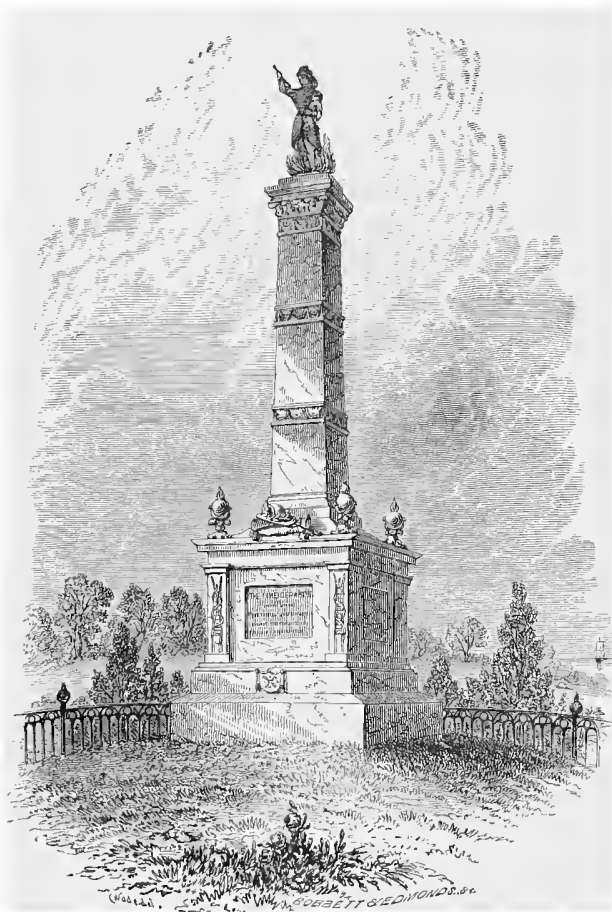
have been. Under the new era of civil service reform, inaugurated by Mayor Low, Col. John N. Partridge was appointed Fire Commissioner, and, under his energetic management, the service has been greatly improved.

COL. J. N. PARTRIDGE.—Essentially military in his methods, and, at the same time, a thorough man of business, Col. Partridge is well adapted to the work of re-organizing a large body of men, and maintaining the discipline necessary for the prompt discharge of their duties. A native of Worcester county, Mass., his early life was passed in and near Boston. In 1861, he went to the war with the famous Massachusetts 24th, as 1st Lieutenant; he was soon after made Captain, which office he held throughout his service. He was wounded at Petersburg, and came back in the fall of 1864, greatly reduced in health. In the spring of 1865, he came to Brooklyn and engaged in business. In February, 1869, he joined Company H, of the 23d Regiment, as 1st Lieutenant. Soon after, Companies H and K were consolidated, and he was made Captain. A strict disciplinarian, Col. Partridge has always been one of the popular men of the Regiment, and he was in the organization but a comparatively short time before he was promoted, first to the rank of Major, and then of Lient.-Colonel. During the strike, in 1877, he went to Hornellsville with the first detachment. When Col. Ward resigned, in 1880, Col. Partridge was elected in his place. This position he held until Mayor Low selected him for the head of the Fire Department. He then resigned his Colonelcy and devoted himself entirely to the re-organization of his department.

Col. Partridge introduced a system of competitive examinations for promotions when vacancies were to be filled. The candidate's experience in the department, his knowledge of the engine, the care of the horses and hose, are considered; and results show that the method works well. When he entered his office, he found that many of the houses needed considerable repairs; this work has all been done by members of the force, who are mechanics, under the immediate supervision of Fireman Charles Goodman, of Truck No. 3. The men have all worked diligently and cheerfully. This plan has effected a great saving to the city, and has enabled the Commissioner to accomplish much more than could have been done had the work been performed by contract. These men are always working within sound of the gong, and are, at all times, ready to respond to alarms of fire. Proper time is allowed for rest before they resume their mechanical labors. In the practical workings of the force in extinguishing fires, the main point aimed at is rapidity in getting to the scene of a conflagration. And it would seem that hardly any improvement could be made in that direction. An alarm sent from an alarm-box, police station, telegraph office, telephone call, or engine house, will at once be sent to the head-quarters in Jay street.

Here the number of the district, or alarm box, is registered by an arrangement not unlike a hotel annunciator. The operator in charge sees the number and sends out the first alarm by means of a machine, which, to the outsider, is a marvel of ingenious mechanism. This signal reaches the engine-houses, and, at the first stroke of the ponderous gong, the fireman on duty springs to the head of the tongue. He touches an electric knob, if the alarm comes at night, which lights gas-jets in a sleeping-room up stairs, and in the engine-room where he is. The same current of electricity which rings the gong, sets the horses free, and they dash, as if mad, to their places beside the tongue of the engine, and between the shafts of the hose-cart. The swinging harness drops on their backs, and is snapped in place; and strangest

of all, a number of men drop through a hole in the ceiling, sliding down on a light brass rod; for the ordinary method of coming down stairs is far too slow for our modern firemen. They spring to their places on the engine and truck. The steam pipes, which come up from the boiler in the cellar, and by means of which a head of about five pounds of steam is always kept up in the boiler of the engine, are cast off by means of an automatic coupling, and fall to the floor with a clatter. The fire, consisting of light kindlings and cannel



FIREMAN'S MONUMENT IN GREENWOOD CEMETERY.

coal, is then lighted, the doors are flung open, and the horses dash off as if pursued by a legion of demons, the whole operation occupying less than *twenty seconds*. The engine brings up at the nearest hydrant to the fire, the hose is coupled and unreel, the firemen dash into the building, and work begins. On the first alarm, three or four engines are dispatched, together with a hook and ladder truck; on the second, three more follow, and on the third, three or four additional ones. When we remember that a fire-engine

usually weighs about 7,500 pounds, and the hook and ladder truck the same, the rapidity with which the horses dash up and down hills and around corners with them, seems marvellous.

But the horses appear to enjoy it; for, the moment the gong taps, they spring to their places and tremble with eagerness while the few lines are being snapped on. One would hardly recognize them on their return from a fire, ambling along at "staid, respectable gait." The horses belonging to the department seem to have more than an average share of "horse sense," and they are made pets of by the men, who take great pride in their teams and their engines. The greater number of the engines are of the most approved pattern, and are capable of throwing a stream of water about 265 feet, at the rate of 240 gallons per minute. Under the hook and ladder trucks are four cylinders, in appearance not unlike the Babcock Fire Extinguishers. These are calcium lights, which are used to illuminate the scene of a conflagration after the actual fire has been extinguished. The hook and ladder company do the cleaning up after a fire; test the walls, to be certain that they will not topple over and do damage to adjacent property; and examine the ruins to see that there are no smouldering embers to again burst out into flames. To this end, they are provided with crow-bars, pick-axes, pitchforks, axes, an immense beam of wood and iron, which is used for a battering-ram, and the calcium lights, for use at night.*

There are now twenty steam fire-engines in service, and three in reserve. There are also twenty hose-tenders and five hook and ladder trucks in service, with nine trucks in reserve. The numbers and locations of the companies, and names of the foremen, are as follows, viz.:

NAME.	LOCATION.	FOREMAN.
Engine No. 1.	Fourth ave., near 19th st	M. Quinn.
" 2.	Van Brunt st., near Seabring	J. Doyle.
" 3.	Hick st., near Degraw	S. Duff.
" 4.	Degraw st., near Court	Jas. F. Murray.
" 5.	Pierrepont st., near Fulton	S. G. Huestis.
" 6.	High st., near Fulton	P. Lahey.
" 7.	Pearl st., near Concord	W. Hogan.
" 8.	Front st., near Bridge	J. Walsh.
" 9.	Graham ave., near Myrtle	C. McDonough.
" 10.	Carlton ave., near Myrtle	W. A. Beardall.
" 11.	Clymer ave., near Bedford	Jas. Maguire.
" 12.	Second st., near N. 8th st	M. Kelly.
" 13.	Powers st., near Graham ave	P. Van Cott.
" 14.	Herkimer st., near Brooklyn ave	D. McGroarty.
" 15.	India st., near Franklin	J. J. Fanning.
" 16.	Scholes st., near Union ave	F. Nolan.
" 17.	DeKalb ave., near Lewis ave	J. Connor.
" 18.	Seigel st., near Union ave	T. Whitford.
" 19.	Dean st., near Underhill ave	J. F. Dobson.
" 20.	Eleventh st., bet. 7th and 8th aves	P. Larney.
Truck No. 1.	Van Brunt st., near Seabring	D. J. Garrity.
" 2.	Bedford ave., near Myrtle	D. Kirkpatrick.
" 3.	Concord st., near Duffield	P. Campbell.
" 4.	S. Third st., near Fifth	H. Keighler.
" 6.	Greenpoint ave., near Franklin st	W. H. Wilkeyson.

* For the above description, we are indebted to Mr. ALLAN FORMAN, of the *Brooklyn Advance*.

For much, especially of the earlier history of the Western District Department, we are indebted to a manuscript sketch, by Mr. WILLIAM E. SPRAGUE, a portion of which was published in the *Brooklyn Corporation Manual for 1863*.—EDITOR.



WILLIAM E. SPRAGUE.

WILLIAM E. SPRAGUE is the son of the late Joseph Sprague, once prominent in the business, manufacturing and political history of Brooklyn, who was president of the Village in 1828, '29, '30 and '31, and mayor of the City in 1843 and 1844. He was born at the corner of Fulton street and Sprague alley, April 2d, 1831, and, when old enough, became a student in public school No. 1; and, later, attended the High School, on Washington street, near Concord, kept by Putnam & Eames.

When of a suitable age, he learned the trade of a carder in his father's cotton and wool card factory, at the corner of Liberty street and Sprague alley; and, for some years, worked in the establishment. Later, he was, for a considerable period, a clerk in the office of the Long Island Insurance Company, of which his father was at the time president, until he resigned the position to accept another as shipping clerk in Meeker & Herbert's wholesale boot and shoe store, at No. 92 Pearl street, New York.

In 1854, his father died, and Mr. Sprague took charge of his estate, and has since lived retired, his residence at this time being at No. 156 Adelphi street, next door to a house now owned by him, but built by his father in 1848, at the time of the latter's removal from Sprague alley. In 1835, Mr. Sprague became a member of *Water Witch Fire Engine Company No. 5*, located in Washington street, near Johnson, and continued his connection therewith until 1842, when he joined *Clinton Hook and Ladder Company No. 2*, with headquarters in Pearl street, near Concord, from which he withdrew in 1856; and, in the following year, he was elected one of the

Fire Commissioners of the city of Brooklyn, and served as such for five years. In 1869, he was appointed a member of the Board of Education, by Mayor Kalbfleisch, and was re-appointed and served during the administration of each successive mayor, until 1881. In 1837, Mr. Sprague joined the once famous Nassau Guards (now company B, 13th Regiment), then commanded by his brother, Hollis A. Sprague, and at this time is a member of the Veteran Corps of that regiment. Though frequently solicited to do so, he has resolutely refused any rank above that of private. The roll of the Society of Old Brooklynites, shows that Mr. Sprague was one of the constituent members of that organization. He is also a member of Old Lexington Lodge, F. and A. M., and of Nassau Chapter, R. A. M., having "passed the chairs" of both of these organizations.

Since attaining to manhood, Mr. Sprague has taken a lively interest in all questions touching the welfare and prosperity of his city, county, State and country, and every project looking to public enlightenment, and the education of the masses has had his warm and liberal support. He is a most genial gentleman, and no doubt enjoys a more extensive local acquaintance than any other man in Brooklyn, with whose advancement and prosperity his long residence within its borders has thoroughly identified him. He was married June 9th, 1863, to Phebe M., daughter of Samuel Stelle, of Plainfield, New Jersey, and has a daughter, his only child since the decease of an only son. Mr. Sprague and his family are attendants at the North Reformed Dutch Church, located in Clermont avenue.

DEPARTMENT OF BUILDINGS.

Fire Wardens and Fire Marshals.—At an early day it was found necessary to exercise some control over the manner of building and the materials used, in order to guard against danger from fire and insecure buildings, as far as possible. In June, 1817, the trustees of the village of Brooklyn appointed John Doughty, Isaac Moser, John Harmer, and John Moon, as *Fire Wardens*, to inspect and supervise all buildings in course of erection. In Williamsburg (now the *Eastern District*), the office of Fire Warden was first instituted in February, 1837, when Henry Cook was appointed to discharge the duties of the position. These officers first served without pay; in after years they received a small stipend from the insurance companies.

They served a term of three years. It was their duty to oversee buildings in process of erection, and prevent violations of the building laws within the fire limits, their functions being, in fact, similar to those of the present Department of Buildings. The first city charter conferred this power upon the Fire Department, where it remained many years. Fire limits were laid down, within which brick and stone were the only building materials permitted. A proper thickness of walls, sufficient foundations, safe chimneys, adequate support for floors, suitable fire escapes, and other similar requisites were prescribed; and it was made the duty of the Fire Department to prevent infractions of the law, by builders, to examine all buildings in course of erection, alteration, or repair, at least once each week. They were also authorized and ordered to inspect all buildings every six months, and report those that were defective or unsafe. The names and dates of election of these fire wardens, after the consolidation of the two cities, are as follows: April 20, 1855, W. S. Wright, A. F. Campbell, Robert Barr, S. Roof, S. A. Mann; July 9, 1856, A. F. Campbell, W. S. Wright; July 3, 1857, S. A. Mann, J. Acker; July 2, 1858, W. S. Wright, A. F. Campbell, A. Brown; July 1, 1859, Robert Barr, William Wallace; July 6, 1860, A. Brown, T. A. Kerrigan; July 5, 1861, Robert Barr, S. A. Avila, J. Campbell; July 11, 1862, S. C. Phillips, T. A. Kerrigan; July 3, 1863, Robert Barr, Richard A. Williams; July 1, 1864, E. L. Coor, Wm. Brown, J. Wright; July 7, 1865, R. A. Williams, D. Slattery; July 6, 1866, W. Brown, J. Wright; July 5, 1867, R. A. Williams, D. Slattery, J. O'Connor.

This was the system which obtained until 1868. An act passed in that year created a separate department for the survey and inspection of buildings. J. Pryor Rorke was appointed Superintendent, and James Wright, M. Kennedy, Jas. O'Connor, Patrick Burns

and John McIntyre, Inspectors. The act of 1870 abolished the department, and vested their powers and duties in the Fire Department again.

The Fire Marshals were, at first, self-appointed, and were paid by the insurance companies to investigate the causes of fires and protect the interests of the insurers. Rufus R. Belknap was the first, serving from 1857 for several years, when William G. Lawrence succeeded, and served until 1869, when the paid Fire Department came in. Under the State law creating the office, the Fire Marshals have been as follows: Patrick Keady, 1869—August 7, 1873; A. B. Thorn, 1873—July 6, 1875; Patrick Keady, 1875—December 1, 1877; A. B. Thorn, 1877—Feb. 16, 1880; Benjamin Lewis, 1880—August 3, 1880; A. B. Thorn, 1880-'4.

By the act of May 25, 1880, already mentioned, all the powers and duties of the Department of Fire and Buildings, relating to the erection, repair, or supervision of buildings, were vested in the Commission of Buildings, to be appointed by the Mayor and Comptroller within thirty days after the passage of the act. Under this amendment, Mayor Howell appointed William M. Thomas, Commissioner of Buildings, June 17, 1880. He was succeeded, February 7, 1882, by the present Commissioner, William H. Gaylor. David Acker is the Deputy. The Department is at present located in the basement of the City Hall.

WM. H. GAYLOR, a prominent architect and builder, was born at Stamford, Conn., March 8th, 1821. His parents were well known and highly respectable residents of that town.

As soon as he was old enough, he commenced attending the common school of the village, where he continued until he attained his ninth year.

Being a favorite of a maternal uncle, John Schofield, an intelligent farmer of Stamford, young Gaylor became a resident in his family, and lived with him until he was fifteen years of age, working on the farm and gaining a practical knowledge of agriculture. But, as farming was not exactly to his taste, William began to turn his attention to a calling more congenial to his nature and talents, that of a carpenter and builder. To this end he entered the service of Edwin Bishop, a successful carpenter and architect. He remained with Mr. Bishop about three years, perfecting himself in the knowledge of the business he had assumed for his future occupation; then he removed to Williamsburg, N. Y., where he entered the service of Messrs. Golder and Folk, Master Builders. Mr. Gaylor remained with these gentlemen until he attained the age of 21 years. Having fully perfected himself in a practical knowledge of his calling, he began business for himself.

His industry and skill, the honorable record of his past life, probity and honor, formed a rich capital, and a valuable basis with which to commence his career in life—a career which has been eminently successful.



W. A. Gaylon

About the year 1863, Mr. Gaylor entered on the business of Master Builder, in Brooklyn, which business, combined with that of designing architect, he has conducted with great success down to the present time.

The skill, industry and ability of Mr. Gaylor as an architect is exhibited in the many imposing public edifices, in the many private dwellings that adorn and beautify the city of Brooklyn; indeed, it may well be said that there are monuments of his enterprise, taste, and skill as an architect and builder, in very many parts of the city of Brooklyn.

Among these we may mention the elegant six-story iron-front building of Messrs. Smith, Gray & Co., clothiers, erected on the site of the old Washington Hall, corner of Broadway and Fourth street, E. D.

To use the language of one of the Brooklyn dailies: "Mr. Gaylor, the architect, is one of the most popular of the citizens of the Eastern District. The plans for nearly every important building in the 13th, 14th, 15th, 16th, 17th and 19th Wards were prepared by him. Mr. Gaylor is a whole-souled worker."

So highly has the ability of Mr. Gaylor in his calling, and his standing as a citizen, been appreciated, that, in January, 1882, he was appointed by the Mayor of Brooklyn Commissioner of the Department of Buildings, for the city. This appointment gave general satisfaction. Speaking of this appointment, a leading Democratic daily, of the city, used this language:

"We need hardly say that we are more than satisfied with the appointment of Mr. Wm. H. Gaylor as Commissioner of Buildings. He stands in the highest rank in his profession—a gentleman of unblemished personal character and fine executive abilities. Our citizens may be well assured that his Republicanism will never be permitted to interfere, in any way, with the discharge of his duties in his new and important trust."

Thus it will be seen how fully and usefully Mr. Gaylor has been, and still is, identified with the history, embellishment and growth of the city of Brooklyn.

In the year 1849, Mr. Gaylor was united by marriage to Miss Matilda Cocks, of Brooklyn, a lady in every sense qualified to make his home happy; but, in the year 1861, he suffered an almost irreparable loss in her death. In 1865, his second marriage took place. The estimable lady, who became his second wife, was Miss Lizzie Burr, of Brooklyn. A happy union with this lady, of fourteen years, was, in 1879, terminated by her death. Since then Mr. Gaylor has remained a widower.

Mr. Gaylor is the father of seven children—three by his first marriage and four by the last.

The oldest, a son, Mr. John W. Gaylor, is well and favorably known in the business circles of Brooklyn, as an enterprising and successful dealer in bricks, lime, and building materials of all kinds. Another son, Edward F. Gaylor, Esq., adopted the calling of his father, and is now a well-established and highly appreciated architect of Brooklyn.

Mr. Gaylor, in early life, allied himself to the old Whig party; when that became a thing of the past, he became a Republican, from principle, though he was never what might be termed an active politician. Though he is firmly attached to his political principles, he recognizes the rights of others to exercise and enjoy whatever political sentiment they desire, even though differing with his, as fully, as freely and as fairly as they please.

Though so long identified with the Republican party, sustaining its principles with unobtrusive firmness, he has never been, in the least degree, an office-seeker; and it may, with truth, be said that the honorable position he now occupies in the city, sought him, instead of his seeking it; in

fact, the office was tendered him in recognition of his superior claims to it by long experience and rare qualifications, and for his honorable and exemplary record as a citizen.

Mr. Gaylor is a member of the Universalist Church; his connection with that organization having begun many years ago. His religious views are the result of a candid, conscientious consideration and reflection, and are maintained by that candid firmness and with those liberal views which are among his prominent characteristics.

WILLIAM M. THOMAS.—It has been a subject of remark that men of foreign birth, who come to this country in early life, find here the fullest scope for the development of their abilities, and attain an eminence which they could not reach under the repressive conditions of older civilizations. Especially is this true of our English-speaking cousins, so many of whom have transferred their allegiance and transplanted their talents to our fertile soil, where they have taken root, flourishing abundantly, both to our benefit and their own advantage.

Among the good examples in this city is William M. Thomas, a native of Swansea, Glamorganshire, South Wales, where he was born December 12, 1812. He comes of good family; his parents were John and Elizabeth Thomas, who lived to rejoice in their son's success. His maternal grandfather was an officer of prominence in the British army at the Battle of Waterloo.

Our subject passed his boyhood in Swansea, receiving a fair education, as schools went in those days.

Inclining to follow his father's occupation, who was a builder, he served his apprenticeship at home. At the age of nineteen he sailed for America, arriving in New York in June, 1832, resolved to make the Republic his future home. Ambitious to succeed, he at once sought opportunities to engage in his calling. After a year spent in Jamaica, he located in this city, in Bridge street, near Prospect. At that time Brooklyn contained but eighteen thousand inhabitants, and did not extend much above Sands street. Soon after, in 1834, he married Miss Rhoda Frazier, a niece of Rev. Dr. Nott, who was for many years President of Union College.

In business matters Mr. Thomas developed constructive talents of high order, coupled with executive ability, inasmuch that he soon became a contractor and builder. Faithful and conscientious in his work, he gained a reputation for honesty, thoroughness and reliability; in consequence his services were widely sought, particularly in connection with first-class dwellings, of which he built many on the Heights and other good localities. As occasion offered, he invested in real estate, with good judgment. His superior qualifications enabled him to engage in large undertakings with such success, that he acquired an ample fortune, and retired in 1860 upon his income.

But his activity by no means ceased; it merely changed direction; thenceforth he wrought with money instead of materials. He was elected President of the State Street Glass Works, and served for eighteen months, when the establishment was sold. He became a stockholder in the *City Bank*, and is now its Vice-President; he is also a trustee of the *Brooklyn Savings Bank*; he acquired an interest in the *Brooklyn City Railroad*, of which he is the present Vice-President; he is a trustee of both the *Phoenix and Montauk Insurance Companies*; likewise trustee and treasurer of the *Kings County Home for Inebriates*. For fourteen years he was an influential member of the Brooklyn Board of Education; his practical knowledge and ability were sought in the



Wm Thomas

Department of Buildings, of which he was appointed Commissioner in 1881, which position he has since held. These various offices of trust are proofs of the confidence and esteem with which Mr. Thomas is regarded by his fellow citizens.

Though he has never made a business of politics, yet he has always taken a deep interest in the affairs of the country, and he has thrown the weight of his influence on the side which he believed to be right.

In former years he voted with the Whigs; when the Republican party was formed, he joined it, and has since supported its principles. In 1861 he represented the Third Brooklyn District in the Assembly; he proved himself there, as elsewhere, worthy of the trust reposed in him, being noted

for his uncompromising opposition to all jobbery, corruption and venality.

He and his family are attendants upon Plymouth Church, of which Rev. Henry Ward Beecher is pastor.

Fond of travel, Mr. Thomas has twice visited the Old World, the last time in 1869, when he remained a year, and, with his family, visited the various points of interest. He has a taste for art, which his abundant means have enabled him to gratify; he is a liberal patron of artists, and has adorned his walls with many choice pictures.

Mr. Thomas is a man of robust physique, on which his active life has made little impression; he bids fair to live for many years, to enjoy his home and friends, and to retain his influence in business circles.

The Widows' and Orphans' Fund was a legacy of the Old Volunteer Fire Department, and is continued under the management of two Boards of Trustees, separate and distinct from the present paid Fire Department; under the laws of the State, passed in 1869 (Chap. 566, Secs. 8 and 10, &c.), and subsequent acts amending the same. It was originally made up of fines and penalties, the sale of certificates, the pro-

ceeds of an annual ball (the first having been given in 1838), and of theatrical benefits, and received an annual appropriation from the city of \$900 for the Eastern District fund, and \$1,100 for that in the Western District.

The Act of May 4, 1869, consolidating the Eastern and the Western District Fire Departments, expressly excepted from such union the Widows' and Orphans'

Fund, whose Trustees were continued in each District as a separate corporation, with regularly appointed officers. The trustees of the respective funds were given entire control and management of these trusts, which now aggregate more than \$100,000 in both Districts.

The Annual Report of the Western District Fund, January 9, 1884, gives the amount of the Fund as \$47,732.13. There are on the pension list 171 widows and 38 orphans, who receive pensions of from \$5 to \$20 per quarter each, making an aggregate of \$5,172 for 1883; \$840 were paid for firemen's funeral expenses. The officers of the Widows' and Orphans' Fund for 1883-'4 are John Courtney, *President*; S. Bowden, *Secretary*; W. Burrell, *Treasurer*; James Ridgway, *Counsel*.

The present Board of Trustees of the Eastern District consists of nine members and a treasurer, having monthly meetings, and reporting annually to the Board of Aldermen. Officers for 1882-3: William E. Horwill, *President*; Wm. Young, *Secretary*; Geo. W. Williams, *Treasurer*.

The report for 1884 shows: Invested in bond and mortgage, \$12,300; real estate owned, \$6,700; interest due on bonds and mortgages, \$163.50; cash on hand, May 1, 1883, \$45.99; total, \$19,209.49. Fifty-seven

widows, and as many children under twelve years, are on the pension rolls.

The Exempt Firemen's Association of the City of Brooklyn (*Western District*), organized on the 9th of Jan., 1852, incorporated June 19, 1874, was composed only of members of the Brooklyn Fire Department who had received an honorable discharge, having served the full term (in that department), required by law to entitle them to an exemption forever from fire, military, and navy duty. It was established for the purpose of promoting the interest and efficiency of, and cherishing kindly feelings in the fire department generally, and whenever requisite, advancing their claims as exempt firemen; it rendered pecuniary aid to indigent and disabled members, and the families of deceased members, when in need.

The officers for 1882-3 are John T. Finn, *President*; M. F. Connor, *Vice-President*; T. A. Drake, *Recording Secretary*; J. McColgan, *Financial Secretary*; Wm. Burrell, *Treasurer*. TRUSTEES: Wm. H. Kent, W. Brown T. A. Drake, A. V. W. Tandy, W. H. Noe.

A similar organization was formed in the *Eastern District*, incorporated 1882, whose officers are as follows: J. T. Savage, *Pres.*; Jas. Potter, *Vice-Pres.*; Chas. T. Dower, *Sec.*; Alfred Wallet, *Treas.*

For information in regard to the W. and O. Fund and Exempt Firemen's Association, we are indebted to Messrs. A. B. THORNE, WILLIAM E. HORWILL, JOHN T. FINN, and SAMUEL BOWDEN.—EDITOR.



THE DEPARTMENT OF CITY WORKS.

WATER AND SEWERAGE.

COMPILED BY VAN BRUNT BERGEN, C. E.

On March 24, 1834, the year in which the village of Brooklyn was incorporated as a city, the Water Committee of the City Council, consisting of Mr. Gabriel Furman and James Walters, made a report recommending the sinking of wells at the foot of the hill on which Fort Greene was built, and the pumping of the water by steam power into a reservoir to be constructed on the hill; the cost of the work, including eleven miles of ten and four inch pipe, was estimated at \$100,000, and the yearly expense of running the works, \$10,000. The report was not acted on. This was the first movement, mentioned on the village records, on the part of the city government for a supply of water. The population of Brooklyn at this time was 23,000 souls.

Prior to this, the water question had been discussed, as we find in the *Star* of February 1, 1832, a letter from a Mr. G. B. White of 100 Fulton street, to Mayor Sprague, in which he proposes the formation of a company, to be called the Brooklyn Water Company, with a capital of \$25,000 in 1000 shares of \$25 each, for which sum he agrees to unite a sufficient number of springs on the East River shore and, by tide power, raise the water to an elevation above the highest point on Clover Hill, at the end of Cranberry street, and to construct a reservoir of a capacity of 1,000,000 gallons.

During the period from 1834 to 1847, although the water question was frequently discussed, no formal action was taken by the Common Council till the latter year, when Messrs. D. A. Bokee, John Stansbury and J. W. Cochran were appointed a Special Committee, and submitted, December 20, 1847, the plans of Major D. B. Douglass as their report.

This distinguished engineer, who first projected the Croton works for New York, after discussing the different methods of supply, proposed the sinking of wells south of the hills and the raising of the water by steam engines to a reservoir at an elevation of forty or fifty feet above the highest houses on the heights along the river. No surveys or estimates were made and the water question was not again brought up till 1849.

In May of that year Mayor Copeland, in his address to the Common Council, called attention to the necessity of a water supply, and favored the well system. Messrs. Geo. B. Fisk, Arthur W. Benson, Geo. Hall, William McDonald, and J. W. Cochran, a Water Committee of the Common Council, made a brief report, dated Jan-

uary 8, 1849, in which the well system was again recommended. The estimate of the cost of the works was \$830,000. The committee express obligations to Messrs. William Burden, John Gracen, and others, for plans, suggestions and information.

Mr. William Burden, prior to this, had prepared plans for a supply of water to be obtained from Jamaica Creek, the first stream east of the city of any importance and included in the present supply. He proposed to erect engines and stand-pipes at the streams, and to send the water in iron pipes to Flatbush; and, from there, with another engine, to raise it to a distributing reservoir on the hills. This is the first suggestion of using the streams on the island for a water supply; so to William Burden is due the credit of first pointing out what has proved to be "the true and unfailing source of a water supply for Brooklyn."

On Dec. 20, 1851, another Water Committee, consisting of Messrs. Charles R. Marvin, I. H. Smith, Edward Pell, Henry A. Kent and E. B. Litchfield presented the most detailed and important report so far prepared. By means of an appropriation made to defray the expenses of a preliminary survey, this committee was enabled to employ the distinguished engineers, Wm. J. McAlpine and John B. Jervis, who had respectively had charge of the construction of the Albany and New York Water Works. Mr. McAlpine, after an examination of the different proposed methods of supply, considered the Island streams as the only one of permanent value. By means of gaugings taken of twelve of the streams on the south side of the Island (from Baiseley's stream near Jamaica to J. Smart's at Merrick), in the fall of the year when the water was unusually low, he determined the minimum supply that could be depended upon.

He proposed to place dams on the four streams nearest to the city, from which the gaugings showed he could obtain a supply of 10,000,000 gallons a day; and, by means of a conduit, collect their waters in Baiseley's pond (now Jamaica reservoir), at an elevation of 11' 6" above tide.

Thence the water was to flow in a conduit, nine miles long, to a pump well, from which it was to be raised by Cornish pumping engines to a reservoir on Mt. Prospect, of a capacity of 60,000,000 gallons. This reservoir was to be at an elevation of 191' above tide.

He estimated that seventy-five miles of distributing pipe would be required for immediate use. The cost

of the whole work he estimated at \$3,500,000, and that works supplying 6,000,000 gallons, with capacities for 15,000,000, could be built for \$2,500,000.

Mr. John B. Jervis made a short report to the committee, recommending a supply from the streams, with perhaps recourse to wells.

The Hon. Conklin Brush, who was Mayor of the city in 1851, and deeply interested in the water question, in his address to the Common Council, January 5, 1852, advised a careful examination of the subject. The committee, in its report, recommended that an election should be held, and in case a majority of the citizens should be in favor of the plan of Mr. McAlpine, a law should be obtained from the Legislature empowering the city to build the works. In accordance with this recommendation, it was determined to submit the question to a popular vote on January 27, 1852; but, on the 19th of that month, the Special Committee on Water for that year asked for time for a more careful consideration of the subject, and recommended that the resolutions directing an election be rescinded. All this was done, and more detailed surveys were made.

On April 15, 1852, Mr. McAlpine submitted to the Water Committee—Messrs. Chas. R. Marvin, Abraham B. Baylis, Montgomery Queen, Geo. W. Stillwell and Lemuel B. Hawxhurst—a full report together with estimates and detailed drawings. All the hitherto proposed sources of supply were carefully considered, viz.: the Croton or Bronx river of Westchester Co., the lakes on Long Island, wells in the vicinity of the city, and the running streams on the south side of the Island. He recommended the latter source as the most advantageous to the city; and a full description, together with estimates varying from \$2,600,000 to \$7,800,000 for a supply from 5,000,000 to 30,000,000 gallons daily, was given.

This report of Mr. McAlpine was not published till the close of the year 1852.

The standing Committee on Water for 1853 consisted of Messrs. Chas. R. Marvin, A. B. Baylis, John A. Dayton, Lemuel B. Hawxhurst and John Rice.

The mayor, Hon. Ed. A. Lambert, in his address of Jan. 3, 1853, called the attention of the Common Council to the subject of a water supply, and urged the adoption of the plan submitted by the Committee of 1852.

On June 3, 1853, a bill was passed by the Legislature, authorizing the Common Council to determine the method of a water supply to the city, and directing the holding of a special election, in order to submit the plans last mentioned to the vote of the citizens.

By an Act of the Legislature of April 16, 1852, a company, under the name of the *Williamsburgh Water Company*, obtained a charter, empowering it to expend a sum not exceeding \$500,000 in constructing works for the supply of Williamsburg alone. This company at once purchased several of the streams on the south side of the Island; which action, as the reports of the engineers had shown these streams to be

the only proper source of supply, greatly embarrassed the city authorities. By an amended act, which passed the Legislature June 8, 1853, it changed its name to the *Long Island Water Company*, increased its capital to \$3,000,000, and was authorized to supply Brooklyn also with water. This amended charter was obtained, although the mayor and Common Council had sent to the Assembly an earnest remonstrance against increasing the stock and extending the privileges of the private company.

This company employed as engineer, Gen. Ward B. Burnett, who made a report in September, 1852, and a fuller one with plans and estimates for a larger supply in January, 1853. His report recommended the construction of a distributing reservoir, where the Ridgewood Reservoir is located, and a conduit and open canal from the furthest stream to an engine house near East New York.

The election authorized by the law of June 3, 1853, was held on July 11. The population of the city at this time was about 116,000, containing probably 17,000 voters. Only 7,693 votes were cast, of which 2,639 were in favor of the proposal, and 5,054 adverse. This indifference of the citizens to the water question arrested for the time all attempts, on the part of the city authorities, to obtain a water supply.

A new Water Committee was appointed in 1854, consisting of Messrs. John A. Dayton, R. C. Brainard, D. P. Barnard, F. G. Quevedo and Samuel Booth. Gen. Ward B. Burnett, the Engineer of the Long Island Water Company which had been created by the bill of June 8, 1852, was employed, and made a report, dated March 13, 1854, and published at the close of the year. The plan presented was the same, except a few changes in location of conduit, canal and distributing reservoir, as the one submitted to the vote of the citizens on July 11, 1853, and was based on his previous surveys and the reports of McAlpine to the Water Committees. An act amending the act of 1853 was passed by the Legislature April 7, 1854, under which, on June 1, this plan was submitted to the vote of the people. Again the general indifference of the citizens, and the strenuous opposition of a few interested ones, defeated the efforts of the public authorities to procure the much needed water supply. Of 9,105 votes cast, 6,402 were unfavorable to the plan.

About this time a pamphlet was published by Mr. James Walters, one of the Water Committee of 1834, advocating the well system.

In May, 1854, Mr. Dayton, Chairman of the Water Committee, obtained from Mr. John S. Stoddard, a graduate of West Point, and who had laid out the streets of a large portion of the city of Brooklyn, in 1835 to 1839, a very able and carefully prepared report adverse to the well system. This report showed clearly the evils of this method of supply, and ended all discussion on the subject.

On March 16, 1854, Messrs. Henry S. Welles & Co., contractors, presented a proposal to the Water Committee, offering to build the works, according to the plans of Gen. Burnett, including the furnishing of land for the ponds, conduits, reservoirs, engine houses, &c. and guaranteeing a daily supply of 20,000,000 galls., with works of a capacity of 40,000,000 galls., for \$4,175,000. This proposal was not entertained by the Water Committee, as it included several ponds and also land already purchased by the Long Island Water Works Company.

Another proposal, presented by Messrs. Joseph Battin, Silas Ford, and Henry Ruggles, was to construct water works on a plan embracing the main features of the one designed by Mr. McAlpine. They agreed to supply 10,000,000 gallons daily, to build an open canal from Baiseley's pond, so arranged as to intercept all the fresh water from the upland, and conduct it to a pump well, and furnish all the necessary works, including eight miles of distributing mains, for about \$4,000,000. They proposed to form an association, with a capital of \$4,000,000, and obtain a charter, authorizing the city to subscribe \$1,000,000 of the stock, and appoint one-fourth of the directors. This proposal was not favorably considered, but the associates obtained a charter, April 12, 1855, under the name of the *Nassau Water Company*, empowering them to construct works for the city, and authorizing the city authorities to subscribe for \$1,300,000 of the stock.

The directors of the company, to hold their charter, subscribed for a few shares of stock, and then proposed that the city should subscribe for the full amount it was authorized to take. This offer was not received with favor by the Common Council, and no report was made by the Water Committee on the subject till September, 1855. The Water Committee of 1855, consisted of Messrs. B. F. Wardwell, George L. Bennett, J. V. Bergen, E. S. Blank and C. C. Fowler. The Hon. Geo. Hall, Mayor of the city for the second time, referred in his address of January 1, to the obstacles in the way of adopting a suitable plan for a water supply, and recommended that an entirely independent commission be appointed to carry out this work of vital importance.

In 1854 the city had obtained a new charter, which went into effect on January 1, 1855. The village of Williamsburg and the town of Bushwick were incorporated as part of the city of Brooklyn, very much increasing the population and adding to the taxable property. The population of the extended city amounted to about 200,000 souls, and its taxable property, in 1854, was valued at \$88,923,000. The water from the wells in the denser populated portions of the city was becoming impure, and large fires could not be subdued by the small supply contained in the public cisterns.

The memorial of the Nassau Water Company was favorably reported on by the Water Committee in September, 1855, but nothing was done till November 15,

when the Common Council, at a special meeting, decided to subscribe for \$1,000,000 of the capital stock, under the condition that amendments should be obtained to the charter, giving the city a proper representation in the Board of Directors, and \$2,000,000 should be subscribed and partly paid in by the stockholders. The resolution was approved by the Mayor, but the Company did not comply with the requirements of the city.

In his annual message in January, 1856, His Honor George Hall, the Mayor, again called attention to the urgent need of a supply of water; but nothing could be done by the Water Committee as long as the Nassau Water Company held its charter. The committee consisted of Messrs. George L. Bennett, E. T. Lowber, George M. Troutman, R. H. Huntley, and John V. Bergen.

However, a number of public spirited citizens, wearied with the technical difficulties and unnecessary delays which were continually brought in the way of the city obtaining a water supply, having satisfied themselves that the plans recommended by the previous Committees were the only proper ones, sent to the Common Council on April 14, a communication asking for a conference on the subject. The Water Committee, anxious to settle the water question, held the proposed conference with the citizens, among whom were the following: Messrs. Fisher Howe, Conklin Brush, John H. Baker, Abm. B. Baylis, John H. Prentice, Wm. Wall, G. H. Howland, Roswell Graves, etc. The question was thoroughly discussed and a report agreed on, which was submitted to the Common Council on the 5th of May. It recommended that the Common Council immediately subscribe \$1,300,000 to the stock of the Nassau Water Company; and stated that both the Water and Citizens' Committees were satisfied, after a careful examination and consultation with eminent engineers, that the plan for water works had been carefully matured by the Nassau Water Company, and that a contract could be entered into with H. S. Welles & Co. for the construction of the work at a cost not to exceed \$4,200,000. For this sum the contractors stood ready to guarantee a minimum supply of 10,000,000 gallons daily, within two years, and an additional 10,000,000 gallons per day within one year thereafter; and to deliver the works complete, in perfect order, discharged of all claims for land, water, and other damages; in short, to invest the Company with the works unincumbered, and without any cost or charge of any description beyond the sum stipulated. The committees expressed their conviction that the plan and contract proposed between the Nassau Water Company and Welles & Co. were as advantageous to the public as any likely to be proposed, and more advantageous than any ever before submitted to the Common Council and the citizens. As security for the faithful expenditure of the money, in case the city should subscribe the amount recommended, the direc-

tors of the Nassau Water Company, with commendable public spirit, expressed their willingness to retire from the direction, and to have their places filled with seven citizens of known character and probity, in whose hands the citizens of Brooklyn would be willing to repose so great a trust; and in proof of their sincerity, their resignation was made, and their places filled by the election of the following gentlemen: John H. Prentice, William Wall, Daniel Van Voorhis, J. Carson Brevoort, Nicholas Wyckoff, Thomas Sullivan, and Nathaniel Briggs, whose names had been submitted to and approved by the Joint Committee.

At a meeting of the Common Council, held on 4th of June, the report of the Committee was adopted, and on the 9th of the same month the resolutions were approved by His Honor, the Mayor, George Hall.

So at last, after a delay of some seven years—for in 1849 the question was first seriously examined—the obstacles that had stood in the way of obtaining a water supply for Brooklyn were removed.

The new Board of Directors of the Nassau Water Company met on the 20th of May, and organized by appointing John H. Prentice, President, and J. Carson Brevoort, Secretary. On the 10th of June their chief engineer, Samuel McElroy, resigned, and a committee was appointed to select a chief engineer. James P. Kirkwood, an eminent engineer of great experience, was recommended by the committee and appointed on the 24th. On the 27th the chief engineer was directed to organize a staff of assistants, and commence the necessary surveys. On July 3, the Water Committee of the Common Council, in answer to a communication of the Board of Directors, recommended that the contractors be directed to commence the construction of the works.

On July 31 an inaugural celebration of the work was held on the site of the Ridgewood Reservoir. A large gathering of citizens and strangers were present, and addresses were made by His Honor, Mayor Hall, the Rev. Dr. George W. Bethune, and others. The contractors, Welles & Co., actively proceeded with the work during the remainder of the year 1856.

On February 11, 1857, a law was passed by the Legislature vesting the city absolutely in all the contracts, property and rights of the Nassau Water Company. Under this law the seven directors became a Board of Commissioners to construct the works, and organized as such Board on July 9th. The same officers and engineers were chosen.

By the fall of 1858, the pump well at East New York and the conduit to Baiseley's Pond had been completed, and the Ridgewood Reservoir was ready to receive water. A great part of the pipe distribution had been laid in the city, and the contractors, by using a small pumping engine, raised water into the reservoir. On the 4th of December the water was let into the mains, and first used on December 16, in extinguishing a fire

at corner of Myrtle avenue and Schenck street. The work east of Baiseley's Pond had been delayed, the chief engineer recommending the building of a brick conduit in place of the open canal provided for in the contract. The Board, recommending this change, sent a communication to the Common Council, with estimates of the additional cost, but no attention was paid to it. By a law of April 16, 1859, the Water Commissioners were empowered to expend \$500,000 more on the work. This was rendered necessary in order to extend the pipe distribution, and to build a brick conduit instead of the open canal. On April 21, Daniel Van Voorhis resigned his position in the Board, and was succeeded by the Hon. Conklin Brush. On May 21, the Board accepted a proposal of Welles & Co. to change the open canal east of Baiseley's pond into a closed conduit at an additional expense of \$450,000.

The law of April 16th also provided for the appointment of a Board of Permanent Water Commissioners to take charge of the works after completion.

On July 1st the constructing Board appointed William B. Lewis and Daniel L. Northrup as Permanent Water Commissioners, and the Mayor, and Common Council, shortly afterwards appointed Gamaliel King, and John H. Funk, thus completing the new Board according to the provisions of the law.

On November 10th, the transfer of all the works in use, with reservation of the right of access to the same for their completion under the contract, was made by the Board of Construction to the Permanent Board. The works were virtually completed by May 26, 1862, but the Constructing Board remained in existence till the passage of the act of May 11, 1865, one portion of the work—the extension of distribution—remaining under their control till that time. The work on distribution was performed by the engineers of the new Board, though it was necessary to have the extensions authorized by the old one. Mr. Kirkwood, the chief engineer, closed his connection with the Constructing Board on January 2, 1862. To his great energy, ability and integrity, the success of the Brooklyn Water Works is, to a great extent, due. To the Constructing Board the city of Brooklyn owes a debt which can never be paid. Without pay they devoted their time and energies, for several years of their lives, to the successful carrying out of this great undertaking. At times they worked under conditions of great embarrassment and perplexity.

The Common Councils of 1858 and 1859 did not seem to be disposed to favor the completion of the works. That of 1859 ordered an investigation, causing much annoyance to the chief engineer, but resulting in satisfying the public, if not itself, that the work was being carried on in a proper manner.

The total expenditures by the Board of Water Commissioners for Construction was \$5,284,626.71.

The Permanent Board of Water Commissioners organized with Gamaliel King, President, and D. L.

Northrup, Secretary, and appointed John S. Stoddard chief engineer. He held the position till 1862, and was succeeded by Moses Lane, who was first assistant engineer on construction, under J. P. Kirkwood.

Mr. W. B. Lewis was succeeded in 1862 by Peter G. Taylor, as Commissioner; and John H. Funk in 1864 by W. A. Fowler.

The Common Council, at its last meeting in 1865, authorized the Water Board to lay a new distributing main. As far back as July, 1862, James P. Kirkwood, chief engineer of the Constructing Board, sent a communication recommending the laying of this main, in order to insure a full head in the city, with the increasing consumption of water. A communication was sent by the Board to the Common Council, but no action was taken. The necessity of laying this main was urged by the Permanent Board in its annual reports to the Common Council, but the work was not commenced till 1866, and completed in 1869. It is 48 inches in diameter, and extends from the Ridgewood Reservoir to Court street, a distance of a little more than 6½ miles. The cost was about \$1,000,000.

From 1864 to the passage of the act of April 2, 1869, reorganizing the Board of Water and Sewerage Commissioners, and placing under their charge the repaving, repairing and cleaning of streets, the Board consisted of Gamaliel King, *President*; D. L. Northrup, *Secretary*; Peter G. Taylor, and William A. Fowler. Under the new law, Messrs. W. A. Fowler, D. L. Northrup, Thomas Kinsella, and A. M. Bliss, were appointed Commissioners. On resignation of Thomas Kinsella, E. G. Lowber became Commissioner. In 1869, Moses Lane resigned the position of chief engineer, and was succeeded by Col. J. W. Adams.

The act of April 2, 1869, was amended in 1870, providing for three, instead of four, Commissioners, and Messrs. Fowler, Lowber and Bliss held over till the passage of the act of April 28, 1872, creating the Board of City Works.

In December, 1867, authority was given to the Water Commissioners to contract for, and erect, a new pumping engine at the Ridgewood Engine House. The contract was given to Messrs. Hubbard & Whitaker, of the Burden Iron Works, April 13th, 1867, for the sum of \$129,750. The engine to be furnished with 5 boilers, and to have the same capacity (15,000,000 gallons in 24 hours), as the engines Nos. 1 and 2, at the engine house. The engine was completed, and in operation in the fall of 1869, and has given perfect satisfaction.

In May, 1869, a communication was sent to the Commissioners by Col. J. W. Adams, Chief Engineer, calling attention to the increasing consumption of water, and the necessity of immediate action to obtain a larger supply by extending the works. James P. Kirkwood was employed as consulting engineer, and surveys were made in the fall of 1869. The engineers

reported, January 1st, 1870, recommending the construction of a storage reservoir in the valley of the Hempstead Stream, of an area of 231 acres, and a capacity of 1,055,000,000 gallons.

The plans were sent to the Common Council, and approved by resolution of December 12th, 1870. On February 18th, 1871, an act was passed by the Legislature, directing the Permanent Board of Water and Sewerage Commissioners, to construct the storage reservoir, at an expense not to exceed \$1,400,000. The contract was given to the firm of Kingsley & Keeney, work was commenced in 1872, and the reservoir sufficiently near completion to furnish water to the city in 1874.

From its inception, great opposition was shown on the part of many citizens to the building of the storage reservoir. Charges of fraud were freely made against the commissioners, engineers, and contractors. Public meetings were held, investigating committees of the Common Council appointed, consulting engineers employed, and charges preferred against W. A. Fowler, President of the Water Board, who was suspended, tried by the Common Council, and reinstated in his position.

Final payment for work done was refused the contractors, who commenced an action against the city, and by the decision of the referees, Hon. John A. Lott, Thos. H. Rodman, and George H. Fisher, August 4th, 1877, recovered the full amount due under their contract. Some \$168,000 of the sum awarded could not be paid the contractors, except by an act of the Legislature, as the fund, \$1,400,000, authorized to be expended by the city, had been exhausted. This amount has not been paid to Kingsley & Keeney to the present day.

Under the act of April 28th, 1872—already mentioned—creating the Board of City Works and the amended charter of 1873, by which the name of this branch of the city government was changed to the Department of City Works, Messrs. Lorin Palmer, R. M. Whiting and W. A. Fowler became Commissioners. Lorin Palmer remained commissioner till July 2d, 1875, and was succeeded by Gen. J. B. Woodward. R. M. Whiting was succeeded by Thomas W. Adams, May 12th, 1875; and W. A. Fowler by John W. Flaherty, May, 1877. Gen. Woodward resigned December 3rd, 1875, and Gen. H. W. Slocum was appointed in January, 1876. Thomas W. Adams held the position till November 3rd, 1877, when George C. Bennett was appointed. Gen. Slocum resigned January 30th, 1878, and was succeeded by F. S. Massey.

Messrs. Flaherty and Bennett were charged with malfeasance in office, tried, found guilty and removed May 16th, 1878, and succeeded by W. H. Hazzard and Jacob Worth. The decision under which Messrs. Flaherty and Bennett were removed from office was afterwards reversed by the Supreme Court.

On June 16th, 1880, an act was passed, creating "single heads" to most of the departments of the City Government, under which John French was appointed commissioner, and was succeeded, Feb. 8, 1882, by Ripley Ropes, who holds the position at the present time.

Col. J. W. Adams, who succeeded Moses Lane as Chief Engineer in 1869, held the position till 1877, when he resigned, and Robert Van Buren was appointed in his place. Robert Van Buren resigned in 1879, and Col. J. W. Adams was re-appointed, holding the position till 1880, when Mr. Van Buren again succeeded him. This important office, with its manifold and arduous duties, is ably filled by Mr. Van Buren at the present date.

In 1880, it was found that, owing to the extreme drought, great danger of a scarcity of water was to be apprehended. To protect the city, it was determined to sink wells, 50 feet in diameter, with a depth of water of about 20 feet, at Springfield and Watts ponds, and to remove the muck and vegetation from these ponds. Watts pond is situated near the village of Valley Stream; and Springfield pond, a short distance from the village of Springfield. The ponds were purchased and thoroughly cleaned, wells sunk, and engine houses, engines, boilers, &c., erected in the Fall of the year. The water was pumped through a force-main into the conduit, increasing the daily supply to the city some 5,000,000 gallons. These works, deriving their water from a drainage area never before utilized by the city, have proved of very great value. The cost of this addition was about \$100,000.

In 1872, pumping machinery was erected at Smith's pond, near the village of Rockville Centre, for the purpose of saving to the city a portion of the water which was necessarily allowed to run to waste on account of the construction of the storage reservoir. Early in 1878, Smith's pond was thoroughly cleaned, a very large amount of muck and vegetable matter being removed. In 1881, a well, 50 feet in diameter, was sunk at this place. A minimum daily supply of about 4,000,000 gallons is now obtained from this pond.

On August 2d, 1882, a contract was entered into with the Davidson Steam Pump Company of Brooklyn, for two pairs of compound condensing engines, to be in operation at the Ridgewood Engine House by August 1, 1883, and to deliver 15,000,000 gallons of water into the Ridgewood Reservoir each 24 hours. The erection of these engines had been rendered necessary by the greatly increased consumption of water. During the months of maximum consumption (the winter and summer), it has become necessary to run the three engines at the Ridgewood Engine House almost continually. This can only be done with great danger to the city; for a serious accident to one of the engines would necessitate a short supply of water. The contract also includes a new engine-house, chimney, and eight boilers. The work is far advanced.

Between the Ridgewood Engine House and Baisley's pond, a distance of about $4\frac{3}{16}$ miles, is located a large extent of drainage area, from which the city, in the past, has obtained no water. In 1882, proposals of plans were advertised for, to furnish water from this section. Several parties presented plans, and a contract was entered into with Andrews & Co. to erect works of a capacity of 5,000,000 gallons per day, which amount of water they have guaranteed to furnish the city daily for one year.

The works are now completed and in successful operation, but have not been accepted by the city, as the time of probation has not passed. They have located two stations north of, and close to, the main conduit, one at Spring Creek, about one mile north of the Ridgewood Engine House, and the other at a point about half a mile west of Jamaica Creek. They have erected at each of these stations an engine house, two engines, each of a capacity of 2,500,000 gallons pumped into the conduit in 24 hours, boilers, chimney, &c. They have driven at each station a gang of "driven wells," consisting of 100 2-inch iron tubes, from 40 to 100 feet into the ground, through the water-bearing strata. These tubes are in two parallel rows, about 15 feet apart; and each tube is connected at its top, by a cross pipe, with a 12-inch pipe, which runs between and parallel with the rows. Midway between the ends of the rows of wells the engines are connected by a suction pipe with the 12-inch pipe, and when in operation draw water from all the wells at once. This novel and ingenious way of obtaining water from the earth must prove of very great value in furnishing a water supply to cities and towns, in many sections of the country, where the geological formation is of a proper character.

For a number of years, great difficulty has been found in furnishing a sufficient supply of water to the Eastern District of the city. This has been owing to the main pipe not being large enough to carry the needed quantity of water. This year, pipe has been purchased and a contract entered into with Mr. J. P. Cranford, to lay a 36-inch main. The work will be completed this fall, or possibly next spring.

The minimum daily supply of water furnished the city by the works, as built by the Constructing Board, was 20,000,000 gallons; the additions which have since been made, including the contract of Andrews & Co., have increased the supply to 38,000,000 gallons; still the great growth of the city in population and manufactures, demands that much more water shall be obtained. On several occasions, during the past four years, the City has been on the verge of a water-famine; and it has only been by collecting the water on such portions of the drainage area, within the lines of the original works, as had not already been utilized, that such a calamity has been avoided. To obtain the increased supply which the city requires, necessitates the extension of the conduit to the eastward and the taking

in of more streams. For this extension, a party is now in the field making surveys and preparing plans.

Summary of Statistics of Brooklyn's Water Supply.—The *total cost* of the Brooklyn Water Works up to May 30, 1883, has been \$11,743,393 22.

The *original* works, as built by the Constructing Board, were as follows:

SUPPLY PONDS.	Water Area.	Capacity of delivery per day at the lowest stage of their waters.
	Acres.	Gallons.
Baiseley's Pond	40	3,275,898
Simonson's Pond.....	8.75	2,000,763
Clear Stream Pond.....	1.07	784,750
Valley Stream Pond.....	7.78	2,541,355
Pine's Pond.....	8	2,760,847
Hempstead Pond.....	23.52	8,239,947
		19,603,539

The Main Conduit.—Length, 12.39 miles; capacity with 5 feet depth of water near Jamaica Creek, 47,000,000 gallons in 24 hours.

The Branch Conduits.—Length, 2.23 miles.

The Ridgewood Engine House, and two pumping engines (Nos. 1 and 2) and 36-inch force mains; capacity of each engine, 15,000,000 gallons into the Ridgewood Reservoir every 24 hours.

The Ridgewood Reservoir.—Water area, 25.58 acres; capacity, 161,000,000 gallons.

The Prospect Hill Engine House.—1 engine; capacity of engine, 3,750,000 gallons into the Prospect Hill Reservoir every 24 hours.

The Prospect Hill Reservoir.—Water area, 8 acres; capacity, 20,000,000 gallons.

The 36-inch Pipe Main and Distribution Pipe in the City.—Total length, 126.916 miles, with 800 fire hydrants. The works that have since been added are:

The Storage Reservoir.—Water area, 258 acres; capacity, 1,000,000,000 gallons (constructed to supply the city with 10,000,000 gallons per diem for 100 days.

Smith's Pond, Pumping Station and Well.—Area of pond, 24 acres; capacity of two engines, 6,000,000 gallons into conduit in 24 hours; diameter of well, 50 feet; supply, 4,000,000 gallons in 24 hours.

Watts' Pond, Pumping Station and Well.—Area of pond, 8 acres; capacity of two engines, 4,000,000 gallons into conduit in 24 hours; diameter of well, 50 feet; supply, 2,000,000 gallons in 24 hours.

Springfield Pond, Pumping Station and Well.—Area of pond, 12 acres; capacity of two engines, 7,000,000 gallons into Reservoir in 24 hours; diameter of well, 50 feet; supply, 3,000,000 gallons in 24 hours.

Baiseley's Pumping Station.—100 driven wells; capacity of two engines, 5,000,000 gallons into conduit in 24 hours; supply, 2,500,000 gallons in 24 hours.

Spring Creek Pumping Station.—100 driven wells; capacity of two engines, 5,000,000 gallons into conduit in 24 hours; supply, 2,500,000 gallons in 24 hours.

Two Pumping Engines (Nos. 3 and 4), with 36-inch Force Mains at the Ridgewood Engine House; capacity of each engine, 15,000,000 gallons into the Ridgewood Reservoir every 24 hours.

The 48-inch Pipe Main and Distributing Pipe in the City.—Total length, 231.106 miles, with 2,170 hydrants.

YEARS.	Average daily consumption of water in gallons.	Total No. of miles of water-pipe laid.	Average No. of Taps in use.	Annual Receipts from Water Rates.
1859.....		123.916		\$133,733.33
1860.....	3,292,890	136.598	9,302	256,400.49
1861.....	4,064,123	145.552	12,856	239,355.52
1862.....	5,021,250	157.482	15,105	303,295.93
1863.....	6,490,750	165.622	17,145	362,749.80
1864.....	7,933,850	171.742	18,935	386,416.08
1865.....	9,233,350	176.794	20,382	419,106.32
1866.....	10,905,450	183.798	22,244	462,619.04
1867.....	12,348,100	199.583	24,888	528,537.83
1868.....	15,710,700	213.929	28,183	617,986.32
1869.....	17,630,400	237.729	32,097	582,656.05
1870.....	18,682,219	258.489	35,930	642,769.36
1871.....	19,353,689	277.854	39,760	884,580.14
1872.....	22,711,751	290.765	42,906	971,414.98
1873.....	24,895,955	308.764	45,876	931,821.56
1874.....	24,772,467	322.800	49,791	910,884.07
1875.....	27,170,949	327.535	51,102	895,202.71
1876.....	28,104,514	332.035	53,083	887,333.43
1877.....	30,342,912	338.324	54,879	900,967.31
1878.....	30,500,871	343.391	56,685	995,205.27
1879.....	32,912,149	347.735	58,293	940,631.09
1880.....	30,744,591	351.723	59,880	977,703.30
1881.....	32,731,499	354.960	60,568	814,256.56
1882.....	34,616,831	358.022	62,286	951,189.30

VAN BRUNT BERGEN, C. E., (compiler of the preceding History of the Water and Sewerage System of Brooklyn), son of the late Hon. Tunis G. Bergen; born at Bay Ridge, L. I., in 1841; graduated at the Brooklyn Collegiate and Polytechnic Institute in 1859; in 1860, entered the Renesslaer Polytechnic Institute at Troy, N. Y., graduating in 1863, with the degree of Civil Engineer; in 1864, was appointed rodman on the Brooklyn Water Works; in 1865, was made Assistant Engineer in charge of constructing a district of sewers; in 1866, '67 and '68, Assistant Engineer in charge of laying the 48-inch water main from the Ridgewood Reservoir to the corner of Clinton and Atlantic streets; also in 1868, made surveys and estimates for the enlargement of the Ridgewood Reservoir; in the early part of 1869, Assistant Engineer in charge of laying 36-inch force main from Ridgewood Engine House

to Ridgewood Reservoir; in the latter part of 1869, and in 1870, in charge of surveys for increasing the daily supply of water to the city from 20 to 30,000,000 gallons, (made surveys and estimates for the Storage Reservoir in the valley of the Hempstead stream, and for an extension of the conduit from Rockville Center to East Meadow Brook, near Freeport); in 1871 and '72, in charge of the Water Purveyor's Department of the City of Brooklyn; from 1873 to the latter part of 1883, First Assistant Engineer in charge of the construction and maintainance of all works connected with the supply of water to the city, and also of the repavement of streets; and at present, First Assistant Engineer in charge of all work in the Engineers' Bureau of the Department of City Works. Mr. Bergen is a member of the American Society of Civil Engineers.



Wm H. Hartzard

WILLIAM H. HAZZARD.—It is interesting to study the life of a man who has become prominent in any honorable calling, and to trace the growth of his natural bent, from its first appearance, on through the varying phases of his career, until it has surmounted all obstacles and brought him to success.

William H. Hazzard was, by nature, an artificer, manifesting a taste for building in his early years, though surrounded by circumstances unfavorable to his favorite pursuit. Born April 8, 1823, the son of Stephen H. and Mary, on a farm six miles from Lewis, in Sussex county, Delaware, he was one of a large family, and orphaned when eight years of age by the death of his father. He continued to live on a farm until he was thirteen, acquiring a stock of health and strength which has been of greatest service in his later life; while his observation and judgment broadened under his boyhood's experiences. He then removed to Philadelphia, where there was opportunity to gratify his taste for a mechanical calling; he, therefore, apprenticed himself to learn the builder's trade. A proficient at twenty-one, he sought the larger opportunities that New York afforded; and in February, 1847, he became a resident of Brooklyn. In those days the city limits on the east did not extend much beyond the old City Hall, whose foundations were then rising, and Holy Trinity Church was in course of erection. Mr. Hazzard soon entered upon his career as builder, which proved to be long, busy, and prosperous. He early obtained a reputation for unflinching integrity, energy, enterprise, and fair dealing, that made him a favorite and successful contractor. He built many of the large stores along the East River, among them the Fulton, Watson and Harbeck's, Columbia, Ward's, the New York Warehousing Company's, the German American, and others. His greatest achievement in this line, which alone would place him in the front rank of builders, was the erection, in 1880, of Dow's Stores, the largest grain stores in this country or the world, having a capacity of two and a half million bushels. The buildings cover a space of one hundred feet front by twelve hundred in depth, with a height of eighty-five feet, and are surmounted by three great towers as much higher. This immense work presented a number of difficult problems in its construction, which the builder's skill wrought out satisfactorily. But Mr. Hazzard's

reputation does not rest upon these large works alone. His services have been in demand for the erection of some of the finest dwellings in the city, notably that of Mr. H. B. Claffin, in Pierrepont street, besides others on the Heights and on the Hill; also an elegant house in New York at Fifth avenue and Sixty-ninth street. Another of his large works was the erection of the Brighton Beach Hotel in 1878, in the space of eighty-eight days, and the large addition subsequently made in sixty-six days.

With the lapse of years, the increase of his business demanded the assistance of his son, whom he associated as his partner, and the firm of William Hazzard & Son is one of the heaviest in their line. His last work in the way of building was in connection with the New York Produce Exchange; the building committee invited him to superintend the laying of the foundations for that immense edifice, which he placed, after his own plans, with excellent results and entire satisfaction.

In his busy life he has found no time for the pursuit of politics, even had his liking been in that direction; but, in 1862, was prevailed on to accept the nomination for Supervisor by those who knew his ability, worth, and integrity; was elected and held the office two terms. In 1879, without his knowledge, he was nominated to the Board of Public Works, and confirmed; his appointment gave to that body a well qualified, efficient, trustworthy member. Soon after, the Board was legislated out of existence, with pay for the unexpired term; which Mr. Hazzard, with characteristic honesty and sense of justice as rare as praiseworthy, turned over to the city sinking fund. In 1882 he was elected President of the Brooklyn City Railroad Company, taking the position July 1st, since which time he has continued to discharge the exacting duties that devolve upon the executive head of Brooklyn's largest railroad corporation.

In domestic relations Mr. Hazzard has been greatly blessed. In 1849, he married Rhoda T., daughter of John L. Ward, formerly a resident of Brooklyn. Of their family, five children only are living; six lie buried in Greenwood.

Although Mr. Hazzard lacked a father's guiding hand in his youth, his mother was spared to him longer; to her excellent precepts and examples, he freely acknowledges that he owes his success in life.

SEWERAGE SYSTEM OF BROOKLYN.

BY VAN BRUNT BERGEN, C. E.

By an Act of the Legislature, passed April 15, 1857, the Constructing Board of Commissioners of the Brooklyn Water Works, was directed to prepare plans for a system of sewerage for the city, and proceed to construct the sewers wherever needed.

The building of the water works, insuring a liberal supply of water to the city, made apparent to the authorities the necessity of at once providing a system of sewerage to carry off the waste water.

As long as the inhabitants of a city obtain water from wells, with all the labor of pumping or raising it

in buckets from a considerable depth, a very small supply is considered sufficient for domestic purposes and cleanliness; this, after use, is generally discharged into the cesspool in the back yard, and passes off into the soil.

The percolation of waste water from cesspools, and especially from privy vaults, spreading over a greater area each year, and eventually finding its way to the water-bearing strata beneath, from which the wells derive their supply, poisons the drinking water of the locality, and sows the germs of many deadly diseases,

long before the contamination becomes perceptible or offensive to the taste.

Such has been the case in Brooklyn, where, from a mistaken policy, caused by the fear that in some way the supply furnished by the water works might fail, the old wells in many instances have been allowed to remain, and have been kept in repair. From year to year, the analysis of the Board of Health has proved the dangerous character of the water, and the city authorities have been called upon to close the wells; but the inhabitants, who, from daily use, have become accustomed to the changed character of the water, which is cool and sparkling, protest, and, sometimes, successfully. (On January 1, 1883, there were remaining in use in the city of Brooklyn, 275 wells. Most of them have been declared dangerous to health by the Board of Health, and will be filled in before January 1, 1884).

The Constructing Board appointed James P. Kirkwood, the chief engineer of the water works, their engineer to prepare plans for a system of sewerage, in accordance with the provisions of the Act; but, as Mr. Kirkwood's duties in connection with the construction of the water works fully occupied his time, he was authorized by the Board to employ Julius W. Adams, Civil Engineer, to prepare the necessary plans. Shortly after, Mr. Kirkwood resigned the position of Engineer of Sewerage, and Mr. Adams was appointed in his stead.

On September 10, 1857, plans for the drainage of the First, Third, and Sixth Wards of the city, were presented by Mr. Adams, and on March 19, 1859, a report on the general drainage of the city was sent to, and adopted by the Commissioners.

The total length of sewers built in Brooklyn, previous to 1857, was $5\frac{5}{10}$ miles. Most of them were large enough to permit men to enter, and clean out any accumulations that caused stoppages or became offensive. They had been built, not for house drainage, which at that time passed into the cesspools, or was thrown out into the gutters, but for the purpose of draining ponds which accumulated with heavy rains in certain low-lying sections of the city. In the plan proposed by Mr. Adams, these drains, where possible, were utilized as main sewers. In determining upon a sewerage system for Brooklyn, the practice and experience of English cities were closely studied. Sewers, as first built, were intended to carry off the rainfall and sewage of the streets, not the house drainage, or the contents of water-closets and privies. Previous to 1850, or thereabouts, this system had been changed in many English cities, and sewers had been constructed to take all house sewage as well as the rainfall. At this time the water supply of these cities was not sufficient to carry off the heavy matter, so accumulations of the most offensive character resulted. These were sometimes removed by manual labor, sometimes by heavy rains, but frequently remained till they became

putrescent, and exceedingly dangerous to the health of the community. All of these sewers were built sufficiently large for men to enter and remove the deposits. It was not till an increased supply of water for domestic purposes had been obtained—the water, after use, forming a “water carriage” of sufficient force to remove the dangerous matter—that the cities got rid of these poisonous, “elongated cesspools,” which in some cases had caused terrible pestilences. Many of the engineers of that day, discovering the fallacy of the large sewers, introduced the smaller ones, calculating the sizes simply from the amount of sewage and rainfall to be carried off. Experience has proved the correctness of this system; but, at the time Mr. Adams presented his plan for the sewers of Brooklyn, the controversy was at its height, many English engineers advocating the old methods, and insisting upon the necessity of the sewers being sufficiently large for entrance by men and wheelbarrows, and the cleaning out of accumulations by manual labor.

The plan, as adopted by the Commissioners, divided the city into four large divisions, the northern, comprising all that drains into the East River north of Wallabout Bay; the middle, or eastern, comprising all that drains into the Wallabout Bay; the southern, comprising all that drains into Gowanus Creek, or bay; and the western, comprising all that drains into the East River between the Wallabout Bay and Red Hook. These divisions have been divided up into some eighteen districts, distinguished by the letters from “A” to “R,” and designated as Map “A,” etc. Each of these districts, except a few of the smaller near the river front, has its one main sewer discharging into the river, largest at its outlet, and gradually diminishing as it extends within the city, branching through the different streets, until at last it ends in 12-inch pipe sewers, these being the smallest used, and comprising by far the greatest length.

In 1858, when the Sewerage plans for the city were prepared, very little was known in this country of the question of city drainage; no data could be obtained from the experience of our larger cities, for no system had been adopted, and the size and character of the sewers built depended principally upon the petitions of property owners to the city authorities, and the amount of money they were willing to expend. Under these circumstances, it became necessary to look abroad for the requisite data, which was obtained from English engineers and reports, especially the Metropolitan Drainage Reports. The advantage of removing the house sewage from the vicinity of the dwellings on the day of its production; and the fact which had been established in certain English cities, that the waste water from domestic use was sufficient for such purpose, providing the sectional area of the sewers was small enough to concentrate the volume of water, led at once to the adoption of the small sewers and the

water-carriage system. But it was necessary that the sewers should also carry the surface drainage, for the city was not prepared to go to the expense of an extra system for storm water, so they had to be enlarged for this purpose. The record of the rainfall had been kept in several places in the vicinity of the city for many years, but in very few cases had the volume and duration of individual storms been taken. In no case did these observations show a rainfall of one inch in an hour. The annual rainfall was of little value in determining the size of the sewers. The heavy storms of short duration were to be considered, and although it was supposed that, at long intervals, rainfalls of short duration, at the rate of two or more inches an hour, did occur, the great expense of constructing sewers of sufficient capacity to carry off such rainfall was not considered advisable; besides, it was believed such an increase in size would materially interfere with their usefulness under the conditions of the ordinary flow of sewage.

It was, therefore, decided to make the sewers sufficiently large to carry off a rainfall of one inch per hour. Accordingly, the dimensions have been calculated and the sewers built to do this amount of work, for which experience has proved they have ample capacity. With the introduction of self-registering rain gauges, giving the volume and duration of storms, it has been found that rainfalls of short duration, at the rate of two inches, or even three or four inches per hour, are not so infrequent as had been formerly supposed. In fact, they seem to occur every year, and sometimes more than once during the year. With such storms in some portions of the city, and especially the low lying sections near tide water, the sewers become surcharged, the water backing up through the connections, flooding cellars, and sometimes forcing its way through the manholes into the streets. There are, however, but few places where such floods occur, and to relieve them a system of drains to take storm water has been devised, and in some cases built.

In the plan proposed by Col. Adams, the main sewers are in all cases discharged into tide water. If the location permits, they are carried out either by wooden trunks or iron pipe to the end of the piers, where the current is sufficiently strong to carry away the sewage and prevent deposits. Nevertheless, the heavy matter must sink in the waters of the bay, and with the large and constantly increasing population of New York, Brooklyn and neighboring cities, the immense amount of daily deposit must eventually seriously effect the character of the harbor. The time will probably come when it will be found necessary to build intercepting sewers, as has been done within a few years for the city of London, and discharge the sewage into the waters of the ocean.

The elevation of the bottom of the sewers at their outlets has been established at about one foot above low water. As the average tide is nearly five feet, at high

tide, the water of the bay has a depth in the mouth of the larger sewers of about four feet.

Some of the larger mains, passing through the low-lying sections of the city, to reach their points of discharge, have necessarily a very small fall; in some cases not more than one-half or three-fourths of an inch to the 100 feet. In these sewers the tide water backs up for a considerable distance, and retards the velocity of the discharge; deposits form, and the accumulations of earth and sewage matter have to be removed by manual labor.

The greater portion of Brooklyn, sloping from the hills which pass near its southern boundary, to the waters of the bay and the East river, has been not difficult to sewer; but other sections, bordering upon the creeks, and filled over the salt marsh and mill-ponds, have presented problems not so easy of solution. The Red Hook district of the city presents an instance of the kind. There the land is made mostly by filling in the salt marsh and mill ponds, and generally raised but a few feet above the waters of the bay. The bottom of the cellars is at, or below, the elevation of high water, and the streets have but slight inclination. The cellars cannot be drained, and the sewers must necessarily be laid but little below the surface of the streets, and with such small fall as to be always in danger of stoppages from accumulation of sewage matter.

No plan has as yet been proposed to sewer the small portion of the city which slopes from the hills toward the towns of Flatbush and New Utrecht. Here either long and expensive mains will have to be built, emptying into Jamaica and Gravesend bays, or the sewage utilized to enrich the agricultural lands of Kings county.

By the Act of April 15th, 1857, and the amendatory Act of 1859, the method of sewerage the city and paying the cost of the same was determined. As already stated, the city was divided into separate drainage districts or maps, each having its own main discharging into tide water, and its system of laterals. Each of these districts was liable only for the cost of the sewers draining its own area. The amount of the expenses of constructing main sewers, as in the judgment of the Commissioners, exceeded the cost of constructing a proper lateral sewer in the street where the main was laid, was assessed upon all the property in the district to be benefitted. The cost of building the lateral sewers was assessed upon the property fronting on the street where the lateral was laid. To meet the necessary cost of the work, the city issued bonds, and, after the completion of the sewers, collected the assessments.

The intent of these laws has been to equalize, as near as possible, the cost of the construction of the sewers on all the property in a drainage district.

The total cost of the construction of sewers by the city (exclusive of sewers built prior to the organization of the departments), to January 1st, 1883, aggregates \$7,136,997.27.

NUMBER OF MILES OF SEWERS COMPLETED FROM JAN-
UARY 10, 1858, TO JANUARY 1, 1883.

SIZE.	MILES.	SIZE.	MILES.
12-inch pipe.....	161.16	66-inch brick.....	1.10
15 ".....	53.22	72 ".....	4.15
18 ".....	32.80	78 ".....	1.64
24 ".....	0.52	84 ".....	0.77
24-inch brick.....	10.72	90 ".....	0.99
30 ".....	12.42	94 ".....	0.19
36 ".....	9.79	96 ".....	0.16
42 ".....	2.07	102 ".....	0.69
48 ".....	5.95	108 ".....	0.24
54 ".....	1.07	120 ".....	0.03
60 ".....	1.94		
		Total	301.26
<i>Built under Private Contract.</i>			
12-inch pipe.....			4.31
15 ".....			0.56
18 ".....			0.06
30-inch brick.....			0.04
<i>Built by Department.</i>			
12-inch pipe.....			0.20
Total			306.79

NUMBER OF CONNECTIONS MADE WITH SEWERS FROM
1859 TO 1883.

YR.		No.	YR.		No.
1859	Con'ctions m'de	422	1872	Con'ctions m'de	2,845
1860	"	1,695	1873	"	5,276
1861	"	4,896	1874	"	3,648
1862	"	3,168	1875	"	2,786
1863	"	1,984	1876	"	2,237
1864	"	1,301	1877	"	2,110
1865	"	1,519	1878	"	1,999
1866	"	3,605	1879	"	1,908
1867	"	2,923	1880	"	1,664
1868	"	3,286	1881	"	1,872
1869	"	3,501	1882	"	2,061
1870	"	2,972			
1871	"	2,861	Total.....		62,538

ROBERT VAN BUREN, C. E.—The subject of this sketch is Chief Engineer of the Department of City Works of Brooklyn. In the marvelous marches of material progress for which our times have no parallels in the history of the past, the civil engineer, or managing superintendent, somewhat resembles the Lieutenant-General. He plans each campaign, and marshals each division, regiment and company of skilled or unskilled workers, on whose labor victory or defeat depend. His only superiors are the money kings or corporations who indicate the desired courses and results, and furnish the sinews of war. Of the details and consecutive approaches by which the proposed ends are to be attained, his employers can not furnish any suggestions. The *modus operandi* is the science of which he must be a master. Unlike

the Military General, his successes are never the result of accident or chance.

Originating, perfecting and executive abilities are indispensable. The fact that a man holds such a position in this city is significant. It has come to be regarded as a certainty, that no man stands at the head of a Department under the administration of the young Corsican Mayor of Brooklyn, who has not been measured by the Napoleonic test of fitness. The Chief Engineer, of the Department of City Works, is a native of New York City, where he was born in 1843. His father, Hon. John A. Van Buren, is a worthy descendant of this old historic family. After a liberal range of preliminary study, he entered the Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute of Troy, from which he graduated in 1864, with the degree of Civil Engineer. After a few months, he accepted a position as Mining Engineer; and proceeded, in 1865, to the copper regions of Lake Superior. In less than a year, he returned, and secured employment as assistant engineer in the Brooklyn Water Works, where he has remained to the present time. After successive promotions, he received, in 1877, the appointment he now holds. Few persons know the difficult, responsible, and arduous duties of the Chief Engineer. Besides the construction and maintainance of the vast and intricate system of water works and of sewers; the repaving and repairs of streets, the construction and maintainance of docks, bridges and piers, are all under his supervision. There are few engineering positions that include so much detail and so many branches of work. To the demands of all these diversified and exacting duties he has been found prompt and competent. His success in securing, at different times, additional water supply has been marked. During the year 1881, the city received from two immense wells, 50 feet in diameter, 5,000,000 gallons daily. In 1883, he established a system of driven-wells under contract with Messrs. Andrews & Co., from which 8,000,000 gallons daily are realized.

This last plan was a new resort for water that no other city ever attempted; a bold experiment, the large success of which has brought Mr. Van Buren's engineering resources largely into public notice. He has also completed important plans for an extension of the Brooklyn water works, that will cost between three and four million of dollars. His work upon the sewerage has been signally important and successful. The system of intercepting sewers, for the purpose of relieving surcharged sewers during heavy storms, has been perfected under his directions, including enlarged plans, to complete which will cost, probably, \$1,500,000. Mr. Van Buren served under James P. Kirkwood, Moses Lane, and Col. Julius W. Adams, receiving the confidence of all these distinguished engineers. During all these years he has given himself wholly to his official duties, refusing to associate himself with any other engineering work, content that Brooklyn should receive the entire powers of his body and brain. By this devotion, Mr. Van Buren has won a reputation for honor, ability and integrity, forming a character against which no word of reproach or question has ever been raised. Ripe in experience and wise in action, he is yet, in years and in buoyant spirits, comparatively a young man, with the best years of life still before him. If constant overwork does not destroy his physical and mental endurance, the public may expect greater benefits from his labors in the future than in the past.

THE DEPARTMENT OF PARKS.

BY THE EDITOR.

Sanctioned by JOHN Y. CULYER, Chief Engineer of the Department.

Few cities in the Union were more highly favored by nature, with superior sites and advantages for the creation of fine public parks and squares, than Brooklyn. When it was merely a suburban village, its cedar-crowned and wave-kissed Clover Hill, the "Iphetonga" of the aborigines, and the "Heights" of the present day, was the favored resorts of the beaux and belles; while its magnificent capabilities, as a public promenade, had attracted the attention of Brooklyn's far-sighted citizens. Its owners liberally offered to dedicate a promenade, one hundred and fifty feet wide, on the edge of the hill, for a noble public walk; the trustees of the village approved the project, and the chairman of the Street Committee, Mr. H. B. Pierrepont, in 1825, caused a plan and map to be made by Mr. Silas Ludlam, of the proposed improvement. The opposition of one (otherwise excellent) man, through whose small premises the promenade would have passed, caused the defeat of this beneficent enterprise, and left Mr. Pierrepont to pay the expenses incurred, and to lay away the map in hope that the project would be carried out at a later day. In 1834, the village of Brooklyn, which was then bounded by District (now Atlantic) street, was incorporated as a city, and its limits extended to the bounds of Williamsburg, Flatbush and New Utrecht. A commission having been authorized by the legislature, on the 23rd of April, 1835, the governor appointed three commissioners, with large discretionary powers, "to lay out streets, avenues and squares in the city of Brooklyn," who designated on their map the avenues and streets, which a Citizens' Committee had proposed, including the plot for Greenwood Cemetery, and stopped all streets at its boundary, except Hammond avenue, which crossed it diagonally in the direction of New Utrecht.

After the cemetery was opened, this avenue was closed by act of legislature. The other diagonal avenue, suggested in the citizens' plan, extending from the corner of Fulton and Sands street, to Bedford, was not adopted by the Commissioners. They designated in their plan eleven squares, as follows: *City park, Washington park, Johnson square, Lafayette green, Bedford green, Marcy square, Prospect square, Reid square, Tompkins square, Fulton square and Mount Prospect square*; of these but three are now in existence. The Commissioners' map was filed in the County Clerk's office, January 1st, 1839.

Washington Park, as originally located by the commissioners, lay between Atlantic street, Flatbush avenue, Raymond street, Fulton avenue, and Canton street, but by act of the legislature, passed April 25th, 1845, this site reverted to its original owners, and the name was given to a park, to be laid out on Fort Green, between Canton and Cumberland streets, and Myrtle and De Kalb avenues. This commanding and attractive locality, was consecrated by the thrilling scenes of the Revolution, and at a later period (1812), by the patriotic labors of Columbia's sons and daughters (for women assisted in throwing up the fortifications), when threatened by foreign invasion, but it was barely saved from the leveling pick and shovel. Difficulties had arisen in reference to fixing the district to be assessed for the proposed improvement, and conflicting interests had well nigh defeated it entirely, but the legislature listened favorably to the petition of five thousand tax paying citizens of Brooklyn, and passed a law April 27th, 1847, authorizing the Common Council to acquire title to the ground, and fence "Washington park, on Fort Greene, in the city of Brooklyn." From that period, the work of improvement progressed, and at a cost of less than \$200,000, the park was made one of the most central, delightful and healthful places for recreation, of which any city can boast. Brooklyn is indebted to the following gentlemen for this beautiful park, viz.: Hon. Henry C. Murphy, Seth Low, Esq., John Greenwood, Esq., A. G. Hammond, William Rockwell, N. B. Morse, Henry E. Pierrepont, J. C. Taylor, Jonathan Trotter, S. E. Johnson and C. R. Smith.

In 1868, it, with the other parks, was placed under the control and management of the Prospect Park Commissioners. It now covers thirty acres; a large plaza between Myrtle avenue and Canton street is paved with concrete; beyond this, rise three grassy terraces to the summit of the hill, with two broad flights of stone steps leading up the slope. On the second terrace, between these steps, is the vault which contains the remains of the prison ship martyrs. The level plateau on the high ground is laid out in greensward, with broad walks, and a covered trellis, while the eastern slope is devoted to the childrens' play grounds, and grass plots with trees and shrubs. The entire park is surrounded by a heavy rubble masonry wall, with granite coping, and its area is thirty and one-sixth acres.

The City Park, an area of seven acres, in the Seventh Ward (bounded by Park and Flushing avenues, and Navy and Park streets), cost, inclusive of fencing, grading, etc., about \$65,000, and possesses no extraordinary beauty, either natural or artistic, to distinguish it from other similar public squares. This is remembered by many of the older residents of Brooklyn as a great spread of two hundred or three hundred acres of black mud ooze, water and strong smelling creeks, where school boys were wont to fish for *killy-fish*, with bent pins and pieces of twine. It has always been a desolate, unattractive spot, and its reputation as a resort of abandoned characters, etc., was, a few years since, still more darkened by the Otero murder. By legislative enactment of May 9, 1868, it was placed under the control of the Commissioners of Prospect Park, who pronounced it unsuitable for a public park; and, in view of its capacious and convenient sewerage, its nearness to the East River, and its consequent easy communication with all parts of the surrounding country, recommended that its site be used for that great desideratum of Brooklyn, a public market.

Considerable sums of money have been expended by the Commissioners in grading and surfacing, resoiling and seeding, repairing walks, replacing old and dead trees with young, thrifty stock, and maintaining the enclosing fence; but, beyond affording convenience as a thoroughfare, to and fro, for the workmen of the vicinity, its best use is limited to providing for the children of the neighboring schools an ample play-ground.

Parks on Columbia Heights.—After the foreground of Brooklyn Heights had been covered by dwellings, leaving, as open spaces for air and the view of the Bay, and the city of New York, only the openings opposite the streets, the public, who had long enjoyed it, feared that the owners of the dwellings adjoining would build upon these spaces, as they had the right to do, and petitioned the Legislature to lay out as parks the openings opposite Clark, Pineapple, Cranberry and Middagh streets, the cost to be assessed on the city.

These four little parks were accordingly laid out and put in charge of commissioners, with authority to fence them and lease them to such adjoining owners who would improve them at their own expense. The city was to raise annually \$500 to enable the Commissioners to improve and maintain these parks, but has never done so. They have been maintained by rents received for some buildings on Furman street on the property.

The private owner adjoining Pineapple street built up stores to support the hill, and improved that park at large expense, under a long lease from the Commissioners. The stores, at the end of the lease, are to become the property of the city.

The opening at the foot of Pierpont street was declined to be included, as the private owner had improved it and left it open, giving the public an unobstructed

view, so that the cost of its purchase for that purpose was unnecessary.

The surface of these parks was below the grade of Columbia Heights, and high warehouses on the west side of Furman street cut off all view. As their occupation by the public would destroy the grass, plants and flowers which embellish them, and such occupation would be a nuisance to the neighborhood, the Commissioners were authorized to fence them in and exclude the public.

Carroll Park is the small public square, containing one and four-fifths acres, bounded by Court, Carroll, Smith and President streets, which the Park Commissioners, in 1867, laid out tastefully in lawn and concrete walks, and planted with trees and shrubs; its drainage was entirely revised, and a play-ground appropriated to the children's use.

Tompkins Park occupies the two blocks between Greene, Lafayette, Tompkins and Marcy avenues, with an area of seven and three-quarters acres. Though laid out in 1839, it was not improved until 1870. The surface, originally below the surrounding streets, was raised to grade and devoted to lawn and walks, and ornamented with trees and shrubbery, although the grounds are too small to admit of extended treatment.

City Hall Park.—The plot of one and a half acres between Fulton, Court and Joralemon streets, where the City Hall stands, was a part of the old Remsen estate, and purchased by the city in 1837. For many years it was surrounded by a fence, turfed and planted with trees; but, under the directions of the Common Council, these were all removed and the entire surface flagged.

Of the eleven public squares and greens projected on the Commissioners' map of 1839, only three (Washington Park, City Park and Tompkins Park) now exist. But, with improved public taste, which years have brought, a new era has dawned upon the city in regard to its parks and places of public recreation. The success of New York's Central Park suggested a similar undertaking to Brooklyn; and, the matter being earnestly agitated by several of our foremost citizens, the first step was taken, April 18, 1859, by the passage of an act by the Legislature, appointing Messrs. John Greenwood, J. Carson Brevoort, William Wall, James Humphrey, John A. Cross, Nathaniel Burgs, Abraham J. Berry, Samuel S. Powell, Thomas H. Rodman, Nathan B. Morse, Thomas G. Talmadge, Jesse C. Smith, Daniel Maujer, William H. Peck, and Luther B. Wyman, as Commissioners to select ground suitable for the purpose of a great public park and parade ground. The Commissioners, ten months after the passage of the act, reported a plan for eight considerable public grounds. Three of these were to be of large size, and were intended for the benefit, respectively, of the Eastern, Central, and Southern Districts of the city, while five others, more nearly of the class of Fort

Greene, were designed for still more limited local resort. Of the larger grounds, one was to be connected with each of the great city reservoirs; the third was to be at Bay Ridge. Although the city acquired some of the land, the "eight park scheme" soon came to be considered unwieldy and impracticable, and was abandoned. The Legislature, April 17, 1860, passed an "Act to lay out a public park and a parade ground for the city of Brooklyn, and to alter the Commissioner's map of the said city." This act provided for the laying out of *Prospect Park*, at the expense of the first twelve wards of the city; the project for a park in the Eastern District not being pressed. The parade ground was located at East New York. The Board of Commissioners appointed were Messrs. J. S. T. Stranahan (from the outset the leading advocate, and most earnest, for this improvement), Thomas H. Rodman, E. W. Fiske, R. H. Thompson, Thomas G. Talmadge, Stephen Haynes, and Cornelius J. Sprague. On the passage of this law the Common Council of the city passed a resolution endorsing the action of the Legislature as being in accordance with the generally expressed wishes of the citizens, and the Commissioners promptly entered upon their duties, selecting Mr. Egbert L. Viele as chief engineer of the proposed work.

Prospect Park.—Its site, as originally laid down in 1860, embraced all the land between Ninth avenue, Douglass street, Washington avenue and the Coney Island road. By the acts of 1861, '65, '66 and '68, its outlines were changed and its bounds enlarged, on the south and west, to their present location. In 1861, four new Commissioners, Messrs. *Thomas McElrath*, *Joseph A. Perry*, *Abraham B. Baylis* and *Conklin Brush*, were added to the seven previously appointed; while, in 1864, the number was again supplemented by appointment of *Walter S. Griffith*, *Seymour L. Husted* and *Tunis A. Bergen*. From 1861 to 1865, during the war, little was done by the Commissioners beyond perfecting the city's title to the land required. In the latter year, a general plan was adopted for laying out and improving the grounds, according to the designs of Messrs. Olmstead & Vaux, which has since been adhered to, with slight modifications. The park now comprises the extensive tract bounded by Ninth, Flatbush, Ocean and Franklin avenues, Coney Island road and Fifteenth street, which contains about 550 acres of land. The proposed parade ground at East New York was abandoned for a tract of forty acres adjoining the park on the south, and admirably adapted for military displays. In regard to the boundaries of the park, Mr. James S. T. Stranahan, President of the Commission, says:

"The boundaries established by the Legislature differ from those recommended by the Commission of 1859; it was in part owing to my advice that the change was made, and I advocated it because we could and did obtain, at the same expense, more than twice as much land in Flatbush as the

Commission had proposed to take in South Brooklyn, where the lots were more valuable. An area of 228 acres was taken from the town of Flatbush at a cost of \$543,000; the upper portion, taken from Brooklyn, contains 350 acres and cost \$2,710,000. That is to say, for each dollar spent the city has obtained between three and four times as much land on the Flatbush side as on the Brooklyn side. It was, therefore, true economy to elongate and narrow the park toward the city, and to spread it out on the cheaper land on the Flatbush side. Then, of the 128 acres on the east side of Flatbush avenue, we propose to reserve the Reservoir, with lands adjacent, and about 28 acres for public use, and to sell the remainder for strictly first-class dwelling houses. Under an act of the Legislature of 1865, the city obtained the fee of these lands by paying the residuary interests of the owners, as valued by Commissioners of the Supreme Court."

Prospect hill is the finest site that could have been chosen for a public park. It is a portion of the elevated range selected by General Washington, in 1776, for the erection of earthworks to defend New York against the attacks of the British; from its height is obtained a commanding view of Brooklyn and New York, the Jersey shore, the upper and lower bay, Long Island and the Atlantic stretching away in the distance. A succession of beautiful wooded hills and broad, green meadows, interspersed with natural ponds of water, offer the greatest facilities to the landscape architect, and, in fact, require small aid from art.

In addition to the park's interesting topographical features, the grounds are consecrated by historic associations. In the very heart of the park there is a quiet dell that was once the scene of a desperate and bloody conflict, and of the display of valor by the American army during the struggle for independence. Four hundred men of the Maryland and Delaware battalions, under General Sullivan, forming the center of the little army which had been stationed on the heights to prevent the passage of the British upon New York, defended this pass, under a galling fire of artillery, from sunrise till 12 o'clock on the memorable 27th of August, 1776, when they were surrounded and attacked in the rear and forced to retire. The little bluff on the east, commanding the Flatbush and old Post roads at their junction in the Valley Grove, was the site of a small two-gun battery which enfiladed the former road, up which the Hessians marched to assault Sullivan's lines on that day.

A few rods in front of this battery, and almost in the center of the Flatbush road, stood the Dongan oak, a famous landmark, which was felled that morning to obstruct the passage of the enemy between the hills. The battle-pass, with the site of the redoubt, are preserved and marked for the veneration of future generations.

Under the judicious management of the Commission, the park has developed resources of beauty and enjoyment which minister to the wants and pleasures of the citizens of Brooklyn and vicinity. The entrances to the park are placed at such points as to best accommo-

date every section of the city, the principal one being at the corner of Vanderbilt and Flatbush avenues, and known as the Grand Plaza, in the center of which is a handsome fountain and a colossal bronze statue of Abraham Lincoln, executed by H. K. Brown, and presented to the city by the War Fund Committee of Kings County. From the entrance, the carriage road to the right leads to the place formerly well known as the Hicks Post tavern, and passes through the woods, with the "Long Meadow" on the left, to the "lake district" on the Flatbush side.

Here is a chain of three lakes, a mile in length, the largest of which covers an area of more than fifty acres. Midway, between the lake region and the "Long Meadow," is a series of hills of various sizes, adorned by terraces and arcades, with drives and walks leading to the plateau at the summit. On the Flatbush avenue side is the "Deer Paddock," and just beyond, the "Battle Pass." These are the main features of the plan, but pages might be written of the details which comprise every species of adornment known to modern landscape architects, such as gardens with rare flowers and exotics, shady dells, labyrinthine mazes and winding walks. The Commissioners have treated the park in a broad and judicious manner, with large meadows, stretches of woodland and water, concealing art in the improved natural appearance. The beautiful turf and wooded areas, as well as the walks and roadways, have been thrown open to the public, with the least restriction. The people at large make the freest use of the grounds, and the lovers of boating, base-ball, cricket, lacrosse, croquet, archery or skating, throng the park on all occasions, when the weather is propitious for these respective pleasures. Excellent music is also provided every Saturday afternoon during the Summer.

The Park Commissioners were selected from all parts of the city, as a non-partisan board, and have discharged their responsibilities gratuitously, and in such a manner as to deserve and receive the gratitude of the citizens of Brooklyn. Their names and years of service are as follows:

James S. T. Stranahan, 1861-'82; Thomas H. Rodman, 1861-'2; Edwards W. Fiske, 1861-'72; Richard H. Thompson, 1861-'2; Thomas G. Talmage, 1861-'2; Stephen Haynes, 1861-'79; Cornelius J. Sprague, 1861-'8; Thomas McElrath, 1862-'8; Conklin Brush, 1862-'7; Abraham B. Baylis, 1862-'82; Joseph A. Perry, 1862; Abiel A. Low, 1865-'72; Seymour L. Husted, 1865-'72; Tunis G. Bergen, 1865-'8; John H. Prentice, 1865-'79; Walter S. Griffith, 1865-'70; William Marshall, 1869-'82; Isaac Van Anden, 1869-'72; Darwin R. James, 1879-'82; Alfred S. Barnes, 1880-'2; Isaac S. Catlin, 1879; Christian C. Christien-sent, 1880-'2; Stephen V. White, 1880-'2; Raphael C. Stearns, 1880-'2; Samuel S. Powell, 1879; and the following mayors, *ex-officio*: Hon. Martin Kalbfleisch, Hon. Samuel S. Powell, Hon. John W. Hunter, Hon.

Frederick H. Schroeder, Hon. James Howell and Hon. Seth Low.

The officers of the Board have been as follows: *President*, James S. T. Stranahan, 1861-'82; William B. Kendall, 1882-'4. *Secretary*, Richard H. Thompson, 1861-'2; W. S. Griffith, 1865-'9; John H. Prentice, 1870-'2; Francis G. Quevedo, 1879-'82; George W. Chauncy, 1882-'4. *Chief Engineer*, C. C. Martin, 1867-'70; John Bogart, 1871; John Y. Culyer, 1872-'84. *Assistant Engineer*, John Bogart, 1866-'70; John Y. Culyer, 1866-'71.

The expense of creating and maintaining the park has been large—about nine millions; but a glance at the work done, and the good results therefrom, will show that the money was well used. "The park has proved itself a vast, healthful, vitalizing force to the people of this city, and its worth can not be estimated pecuniarily; its uses stimulate the energies, and quicken the pulses of thousands; its pervasive influence elevates the moral tone of the community, and its great mission is only just begun." Its necessity is proved by the tables which show that the number of visitors in 1879 reached 4,090,271, and this has been largely exceeded in the subsequent years.

HON. J. S. T. STRANAHAN.—The early American colonies, which subsequently crystallized into the United States, never received a greater accession of strength than from the emigration which, commencing about 1684, from the north of Ireland, had, by the middle of the last century, increased at the rate of twelve thousand per year—all Protestants, and generally Presbyterians. The New England colonies, and Pennsylvania, New York, New Jersey, Maryland and the Carolinas especially profited by this influx. The new-comers were the descendants of Scotchmen who were first induced by King James I. to repopulate the northern counties of Ireland. Their numbers were largely increased by the religious persecutions of the Stuart dynasty, and by the rebellions of 1715 and 1745. But, by their thrift, enterprise and success in manufactures, they attracted the cupidity of an avaricious government, whose exactions and rigorous regulations compelled them to seek beyond the sea a freer verge for their religions and industrial life. To these Scotch-Irish emigrants and their descendants, as the student of American history well knows, the United States owe much of their glory, wealth and enterprise. One of these emigrants was James Stranahan (Strachan, or Strahan, derived from the parish of Strahan, Kincardineshire, Scotland), born 1699, who, in 1725, settled at Scituate, R. I. He was a prosperous and intelligent farmer, and died at Plainfield, Conn., in 1792, aged 93 years. James, the eldest of his three sons, a thrifty farmer and Revolutionary soldier, also lived and died at Plainfield, and his fifth son, Samuel, born 1772, married Lynda Josselyn, and became one of the first settlers of Peterboro, Madison



J. S. J. Stranahan

County, N. Y. His son, James S. T. Stranahan, the subject of this sketch, was born at Peterboro, N. Y., April 25, 1808. Amid the hills of central New York, on the farm, and among his father's mills, he passed most happily the precious season of boyhood, until that father's death, in 1816, awoke him to the responsibilities and the sterner outlook of approaching manhood.

His widowed mother soon married again, and, alternating his winters and summers in attending school and aiding his stepfather in the operations of farming and stock-raising, he passed his time until, at the age of seventeen, he assumed the responsibility of his own support. Further education in the academies of the country, to which he added the discipline of one season of teaching, fitted him for the duties of civil engineer; but abandoning this in a larger view of opening trade with the Indians, he visited, in 1827-'8, the region of the upper lakes. But, after several interviews with General Lewis Cass (then Governor of the Territory of Michigan), and several journeys of exploration in the then Western wilderness, he abandoned the project and formed a partnership with some gentlemen of Albany for dealing in wool. In 1832, however, Gerrit Smith, a prominent capitalist, as well as philanthropist, who had known him from his earliest years, induced him to found a manufacturing village in a township owned by him in Oneida County. *To build a town* was a work that gave full scope to Mr. Stranahan's powers, which had as yet, however, the development of only twenty-four years' experience. But he made it a success, so that the town (Florence) increased from a population of a few hundred to that of two or three thousands. From Florence he was sent to the Assembly in 1838, elected on the Whig ticket from a Democratic county; and, though comparatively young, he was judged a fitting compeer for men of ability, an unusual number of whom were gathered in that Assembly, owing to the political struggle connected with the suspension of specie payments, and the agitation of the Sub-Treasury act urged upon Congress by the then President, Martin Van Buren. In 1840, he removed to Newark, New Jersey, and became largely interested in the construction of railroads. He was among the first who, by taking stock in payment for construction, became owners and hence controllers of the roads they built. In 1848, Mr. Stranahan was elected Alderman of Brooklyn, to which city he had removed in 1844; was nominated, but defeated in the election for Mayor in 1850. In 1854, during the tremendous excitement growing out of the repeal of the Missouri compromise, and when the North was aflame over the anti-slavery agitation, Mr. Stranahan was nominated for Congress; and, although he ran in a strong Democratic district, he was triumphantly elected after a vigorous contest. In the House of Representatives his course was marked by a rigid attention to his duties, and he served his

constituents with the utmost fidelity during the stormy period which he passed in Washington.

In 1857, when the first Metropolitan Police Commission was organized, Mr. Stranahan was appointed a member, and was active in that board during the struggle between the new force and the old New York municipal police, who revolted under the leadership of Fernando Wood, then Mayor. During this time Mr. Stranahan was an earnest Republican, although never allowing his party animosities to influence his personal relations. In 1864 he was made one of the Presidential electors on the Lincoln and Johnson ticket; a fitting consummation of his previous action as a delegate from the State of New York to the Republican National Conventions of 1860 and 1864, in both of which he voted for the nomination of Lincoln for the Presidency.

During the war, Mr. Stranahan was President of the War Fund Committee, an organization of over one hundred leading men of Brooklyn, and whose generous patriotism originated, in the sessions of this organization, the *Brooklyn Union*, that there might be one journal of that city in full accord with the Government. Its purpose was to encourage enlistments, raise money for the soldiers, and further the efforts of Government in the prosecution of the war by every means. Mr. Stranahan's vigorous qualities, his great executive ability and his confident view of the future were of untold service in promoting the efficiency of the Committee, so that it did not flag in its efforts till the country's need ceased in the subduing of the rebellion. In the sanitary aid it rendered it was allied with the *Woman's Relief Association*, of which Mrs. Stranahan was President, and through the combined efforts of the two organizations culminating in the great sanitary fair, four hundred thousand dollars in money was paid into the sanitary fund at one time. Since the war, Mr. Stranahan, though true to the principles of the Republican party, has not participated in politics.

For many years he has been closely identified with many of the most important Brooklyn enterprises. His extended services at the head of the Park Commission have written his name imperishably upon the pages of Brooklyn's history. Becoming President of the Commission under the legislative act of 1860, he remained in office until 1882. Under his direction, the plans for Prospect Park were matured and carried into execution, and this magnificent city pleasure ground will ever remain a monument to the ability and intelligence with which he gratuitously served the community. He was also the father of the splendid system of boulevards, the Ocean parkway and Eastern parkway, which give to Brooklyn a system of drives unsurpassed by any in the world. The Concourse at Coney Island also grew out of his instrumentality, and but for the niggardly appropriations by the county authorities, would have been even a greater boon to the public than it is.

The *Brooklyn Eagle*, a paper opposed to Mr. Stranahan in politics, although generally just in its criticisms of even political opponents, in commenting upon his retiring from a service in which he had been so long engaged, said:

"Prospect Park is pre-eminently his work. But for his foresight and perseverance we should not now be in possession of that noble resort; or, if possessed of it, the purchase money would have been double the amount paid under Mr. Stranahan. Coney Island may also be pointed to as bearing the mark of his wise activity. Before any railroad or hotel man thought of discounting its future, the Park Commissioner saw the possibilities of the place. To his mind the natural boundary of Brooklyn on the southwestern side was the Atlantic Ocean, and he took steps to secure to the city the advantage of an attractive path from the beach to the center of population. By projecting the boulevard and the concourse, he may be said to have called the Coney Island of to-day into existence, an existence which has already been worth a great deal more to Brooklyn than the cost of all the public works in which he has had a hand, and which must go on increasing in value. The truth is, that Mr. Stranahan is one of the very few men who have creative genius. In the not remote future, the question will be asked by intelligent writers, who were the real architects of Brooklyn? who were the men who lifted her out of the cow-paths of village advance and put her on the broad track of Metropolitan importance? When that question is answered, the name named with greatest honor will be that of James S. T. Stranahan."

Criticism that would be adverse to him, testifies unwittingly to his merit. Said a daily paper opposing him: "Mr. Stranahan is the Baron Haussman of Brooklyn." And again, speaking of that renovator of the old-time city: "Baron Haussman is the Stranahan of Paris." Said Mayor Kalbfleisch, in an opposing speech: "This increased taxation, etc., I attribute to the Park Commission, and by the Park Commission I mean James S. T. Stranahan, for *he* is the Park Commission."

The Union Ferry Company for more than thirty years has had the advantage of his counsel and association; and under his direction was developed the great Atlantic Dock improvement, of which full mention will be found in our *Chapter on Commerce*.

Mr. Stranahan has been connected with the great East River Bridge from the outset. He was one of the first subscribers to the stock; was a member of the Board of Directors of the New York Bridge Company, and has served continuously as a trustee since the work came under the control of the two cities. In the Board Mr. Stranahan has exerted a deep and far-reaching influence. He has served continuously as a member of the Executive Committee, and upon nearly all the important special committees appointed during the construction. His audacity and originality often led him to inaugurate many progressive movements. By those familiar with Bridge affairs, he is accredited with the responsibility for the change made in the plans for the superstructure, by which the four middle trusses in the main span were raised so as to permit the passage across the railway of a Pullman car of the ordinary

height. This change, which involved an additional weight of about 200 tons, excited much adverse criticism at the time, but future experience will, no doubt, justify the wisdom of the step taken.

Next, perhaps, to Mr. Stranahan's foresight, his most remarkable quality is his patient waiting for results, after once adopting his best judgment. He understands and is patient with the views of those of less experience, knowing that further opportunities of observation on their part will enlighten them as to the truth. His management of the Park employees, during the twenty-two years of his control of the Department, was a practical exemplification of the civil service reform.

In their ignorance of his methods in this matter, the public sadly misjudged him, and clamored for changes, whereas actual knowledge would have led them to approve his course. The practical proof that he carried out in these affairs the principles of civil service reform, is the fact that at the time that he left the Park Commission, the foreman and clerks had been in the Department for the whole of Mr. Stranahan's term, and even the laborers averaged five years' service each. In his private business, also (the Atlantic Docks), the terms of service of his employees range from ten to thirty years. Quoting the *Brooklyn Eagle*:

"Like all other men who are active in the community in which they live, and who do more than their share toward developing and enlarging its material interests, Mr. Stranahan has always challenged the enmity and opposition of a class of men who do their share of the world's work by contributing to its inertia; by retarding a progress which might otherwise be dangerous."

A perception of the course of progress, as well as his public spirit, always leads him to acquiesce in it, even when in opposition to his own interests. Although one of the most active of the promoters of the Brooklyn Bridge, its completion was directly opposed to his interests as an owner in the ferries and proprietor of the Atlantic Docks. Yet he never faltered in his earnest support of this measure, so necessary to the prosperity of the city. Mr. Stranahan has never abused the confidence placed in him in any of the numerous trusts he has enjoyed, nor has his integrity ever for a moment been questioned. Whatever complaints have been made apply to his judgment, and in no degree to his good faith. No better instance could be given of his uprightness in the management of public funds, of his incisive methods of business, or of his anxiety to protect the interests confided to him, than his action in turning over the affairs of the Park Commission to his successors in the Board. Said the *Eagle*:

"With the displacement of Mr. Stranahan and his associates, and the incoming of the new Board of Park Commissioners, expert accountants were employed by the city to examine the books and vouchers of the Park Department, running over a period of two and twenty years. The ac-

countants found that nearly eight millions and a half of dollars had been expended by the Park Commission, and that the books failed to balance, there being an apparent discrepancy of \$10,604. The Controller notified Mr. Stranahan on the 12th inst. of the result of the labors of the expert accountants. On the same day, and on the mere statement of the facts, Mr. Stranahan drew his individual check for the full amount of the apparent deficit, and balanced the books. The letter accompanying the check is characteristic. In it no attempt is made to place the blame on anybody, to evade responsibility, or to divide it with others. Mr. Stranahan was the Park Commission, and he accepts the same responsibility for the conduct of his Department as if, in its direction, nobody except himself ever had any part. How the deficit was brought about is not known. That it runs through many years seems certain. No attempt was made to carry it over by false book-keeping from year to year, and no effort was made to cover it up. That there has been an actual loss to the city is not even clear. The books, the accountants say, were carelessly kept. That this is so is made apparent by the fact that fourteen checks are found to have been drawn by the Department, which have never been presented for payment. These checks enter into the deficit, and their payment is provided for in the money paid over by Mr. Stranahan. If these checks be deducted, the actual deficit is but little in excess of eight thousand dollars."

Mr. Stranahan has, in daily life, a genial appreciation of others, a sympathetic manner, and a keen sense of humor. He has a wit, based in his clear picturing of thought, which enables him easily to shift some feature of it and turn the whole into comedy; or, when not humorous, to make his conversation striking and picturesque. It has been said of him by a previous writer: "Looking at his face, you see that he is a man having a far-reaching intellect, and viewing his work, you become aware that he has not less resources of energy. A wise legislator, a promoter of great public works, a comprehensive man of business, a philanthropist, and a Christian, he has in each of these stations done an able part, which will adorn coming history, as well as the record of his own times." In appearance, Mr. Stranahan has the bearing of a dignified gentleman, wearing his years with courtly grace, and showing no diminution of his wonderful intellectual powers. Personally, he is one of the most agreeable men to be met with in Brooklyn, and is well liked by all who come in contact with him.

Mr. Stranahan has been twice married. His first wife, Mariamne Fitch, was a native of Westmoreland, Oneida county, N. Y., and was a daughter of Ebenezer R. Fitch. They were married in 1837, and resided for three years at Florence, in the above county, when they removed to Newark, N. J., where their two children

were born; and, in 1845, came to Brooklyn. She was a most excellent wife and mother, and a conscientious Christian woman, and was admirably fitted to adorn the high social position which she filled. Active in every good work, and of rare executive ability, she was unanimously chosen to preside over the "Woman's Relief Association," organized in Brooklyn in 1862, as an auxiliary to the United States Sanitary Commission. Her exertions in the organization and conduct of the great Brooklyn Fair (which raised half a million dollars for the benefit of the Union soldiers) were so assiduous that her health became undermined, and, though she lived some three years afterward, this was, no doubt, the cause of her death, which occurred in August, 1866, at Manchester, Vermont.

His second wife, Miss Clara C. Harrison, is a native of Massachusetts. Before her marriage, she was well known in the best educational circles in Brooklyn, where, for several years, she and another lady were associated as principals of a private seminary for the higher education of young ladies, which numbered in its catalogue two hundred pupils and fourteen teachers and professors of the various departments. She is a lady of marked literary ability and attainment, her education having had the directing influence of both those great educators, Mary Lyon and Emma Willard. She was graduated from Mrs. Willard's far-famed Female Seminary at Troy; the school where mathematics, as high as mathematical astronomy, and trigonometry, as the introduction thereto, were pursued by young ladies, and where Mrs. Willard maintained, in the face of much opposition, the study, on the part of her graduates, of the five volumes of Dugald Stuart's *Mental Philosophy*. She also took an active part in the great Sanitary Fair as a member of both the Committee on Art and the Committee on the Post Office and *Drum Beat*, a paper issued daily during the continuance of the Fair, and of which Dr. Storrs was editor-in-chief. From the Post Office many hundred letters were dispensed of greatly varied character. A volume of autograph letters, chiefly from statesmen conspicuous at the time, collected and bound by her agency, brought some hundreds of dollars into the treasury of the Fair. Since her marriage, she has thrown her influence into the charities of the city, and has been for ten years president of the Kings County Visiting Committee of the State Charities Aid Society; and, for eleven, corresponding secretary of the Society for the Aid of Friendless Women and Children.

THE CEMETERIES OF BROOKLYN.*

BY THE EDITOR.



NORTHERN ENTRANCE TO GREENWOOD (FROM WITHIN).

Greenwood Cemetery.—In 1831, Mount Auburn Cemetery, near Boston, was established; and, probably, its success inspired the idea of a similar enterprise for New York and Brooklyn.

The bills of mortality showed an annual interment of nearly ten thousand; with the prospect that, in fifty years, the aggregate would amount to millions. New York presented no eligible spot for a cemetery, and attention was turned to the large unoccupied tracts near Gowanus bay. These wooded heights attracted the attention of Mr. Henry E. Pierrepont as a favorable site, as early as 1832, in which year he visited Mount Auburn; and his favorable impression was strengthened by his visits to the most celebrated European cemeteries during the following years.

The matter was first presented to the public in the autumn of 1835, by Major David B. Douglass, in a public lecture, at the suggestion of Mr. Pierrepont. In 1837, steps were taken toward the establishment of a cemetery. The commercial and financial disasters of that year, and the change that had come over the prospects of dealers in real estate, favored the project; and large owners of real estate, who had become interested in the cemetery, were found willing to negotiate. Informal preliminary steps were taken by Mr. Pierrepont and by Major Douglass, and a petition to the Legislature, in the winter of 1838, was followed by an act of incorporation, passed on the 18th of April, in that year. It created a joint stock corporation, under the name of *The Greenwood Cemetery*, with a capital of \$300,000, and the right to hold two hundred acres of land. The gentlemen named in this act were Samuel Ward, John P. Staggs, Charles King, David B.

* Although cemeteries do not properly form a *department* of the municipal government, they are for convenience, and, by a certain law of association, presented here in connection with parks.—EDITOR.



ENTRANCE TO GREENWOOD CEMETERY, 1845.



GARDENER'S LODGE (BATTLE HILL), GREENWOOD CEMETERY.

Douglass, Russell Stebbins, Joseph A. Perry, Henry E. Pierrepont and Pliny Freeman. The ground finally selected by Messrs. Pierrepont and Douglass, with the approval of their associates, comprised one hundred and seventy-eight acres, situated a little back of Gowanus bay, and extending, as marked on the city map, from Twenty-first street to Thirty-fourth street, and from Fifth avenue to the Brooklyn city line. The owners of this property, valued at \$134,675.50, agreed to receive their pay in cemetery bonds. The land thus purchased had belonged for several generations to the Bennet, Bergen, Wyckoff and Schermerhorn families, and had stood in their names from the first settlement of the country by their Dutch progenitors. The purchase was not effected without considerable difficulty; for, while most of the owners were found willing to enter into some reasonable arrangement, there were others among the old Dutch farmers of Gowanus who could neither understand, or be made to understand, why Mr. Pierrepont and his associates should need two hundred acres for a graveyard. An acre or two, at the most, had been the extent of all burial places which they had ever seen; and, when they found these gentlemen anxious to secure the collect, or pond, which now forms the beautiful Sylvan Water, they seriously suspected them of having discovered the whereabouts of hidden treasure.

The Common Council of the city recognized and confirmed the powers and privileges conferred on the association, and, by proper action, secured it against invasion and disturbance by stopping all streets at its boundary.

The subscription books were opened on November 3d, 1838; the first meeting of the stockholders was held on the 24th of the same month, and the Board of Directors, appointed thereat, held its first regular meeting on the 15th of December.

On the 11th of April, 1839, the charter was amended so as to convert the cemetery from a joint stock company to a public institution, unconnected with any purposes of profit or gain to any individual whatever. Its whole surplus income is forever to be devoted to the embellishment and preservation of the cemetery.

The professional work of surveying and laying out the ground was begun in the winter of 1838; that of construction dates from May, 1839. In October of this year lots were first advertised for sale.

On the 5th of September, 1840, John Hanna was buried near the base of Ocean Hill, being the first person interred in Greenwood Cemetery.

Many embarrassments were experienced during the year 1841, and fears were even entertained of the extinction of the institution; but, in 1842, Mr. Joseph A. Perry accepted the management, and, thereafter abandoning his private business, devoted the rest of his life to the establishment and completion of this most beautiful cemetery. Mr. Perry died 26th August,

1881. The Trustees of Greenwood, in acknowledgment of his services and taste in the management and success of the cemetery, erected a memorial monument to his memory near the Northern entrance gate. All impediments were finally surmounted, and the grounds opened for interments; and, at the close of the year, twenty tombs had been constructed, and there had been, including removals, one hundred and sixty-two interments.

One hundred and seventy-five acres were enclosed; but it soon became evident that the two hundred acres originally intended would be insufficient for the growing wants of two large cities. Measures were taken to improve and beautify the ground; and, in 1847, another tract of about sixty-five acres, on the southwestern side of the cemetery, and reaching from the Fifth avenue to the Brooklyn city line, was purchased from the heirs of Garret Bergen. In 1852, Greenwood was extended into the town of Flatbush, by the annexation of eighty-five acres of the fine forest ground to the eastern side; and in 1859, a piece of land, which cut into the south-eastern angle of the grounds, and which contained about twenty-three acres, was brought into the cemetery, by which addition, its outline in that part is made square and complete. In addition to these larger accessions, many small parcels of ground, deemed essential to the convenience and symmetry of Greenwood, have been purchased from time to time, until the cemetery now embraces four hundred and fifty acres of available ground, lying in one compact body, and having a well-defined, and, for the most part, regular boundary. The entire cost of this land, exclusive of interest and assessments on property without the cemetery, and cost of opening and grading the Fifth avenue, has been \$281,684.82, being \$682.04 the acre.

Much labor and expense were required to redeem these grounds from a state of nature to the uses of affection and taste. To this labor the Trustees addressed themselves with an energy and discretion most admirable, and a taste most faultless.

A receiving tomb was also constructed, in 1853, as a place of temporary reception for bodies, and particular attention was directed to the improvement of several little ponds or lakes, with which the cemetery was dotted. They were cleared out and deepened, their borders graded, shaped, covered with verdure, and appropriately shaded. And when it was found that they were liable to changes which marred their beauty, or even made them offensive, such as being rendered turbid by heavy rains, or dried up by summer heats, the trustees wisely determined to construct an artificial current, worked by steam pump force, by which the hitherto stagnant waters became a healthy circulating stream, furnishing a sure supply for all the ponds within the grounds.

An indexed register of interments was commenced in September, 1840, forming a vast catalogue of names,



Engr. by A. H. Faxon.

D. A. Perry



WESTERN ENTRANCE TO GREEN-WOOD CEMETERY.



• MONUMENT TO MISS CHARLOTTE CANDA (GREEN-WOOD CEMETERY).

any one of which can be found almost instantly, and the place of burial shown at once, a matter of great convenience when the immense number of interments is considered.

The clearing up, and subsequent grading of the grounds; the construction of roads and paths, the labor on ponds and water works, excavation for tombs, and the digging of graves, the culture, manuring and sodding of large tracts, the frequent mowing and raking of more than three hundred acres of grass, and the constant care and toil required to keep so large a domain in complete order and repair, forms an immense aggregate of labor and expense.

The numerous, tasteful, and splendid monuments of this cemetery, its wealth of memorial marble and exquisite sculpture, cannot be described within the scope of this volume.

Thus briefly have we endeavored to trace the history of this noble enterprise, whose name and whose fame is so intimately associated with that of Brooklyn. The idea of this cemetery originated with men only one of whom (its President) now survives, 1883. To their wise, able and liberal-minded supervision, the cemetery owes no small portion of its unexampled growth and success. Amid indifference and discouragement, by private advances of money and credit, by untiring personal exertions, with diligence and devotion, skill and efficiency, with unremitting care and nursing, they have watched over its gradual but harmonious development, and "their works do praise them."

The latest statistics of the cemetery will be found on page 520.

The history of Brooklyn would be incomplete without mention of one who for more than forty years was closely connected with its enterprise and progress.

MR. JOSEPH A. PERRY was the worthy descendant of a family whose character from the first has been marked by rare integrity and honor. From the records of Woodbury, Conn., for the past two hundred years, we find its representatives recognized leaders in every movement for the public good. They were professional men, and in the records of the clergymen, lawyers and physicians of the early times, no names are more honorably mentioned. "Among these leading spirits was Dr. Joseph Perry, who for nearly half a century adorned the profession of medicine. He was conspicuous in aiding the soldiers in the Revolutionary struggle, and in curbing the impetuosity of the rampant Tories in our town. He died an honored citizen, at a good old age, leaving his son, Dr. Nathaniel Perry, fit representative of his father's virtues, to follow with reverence in his footsteps in every great and good work. Well did he bear up his father's reputation, as the kind and skillful physician, the firm, considerate and effective friend, the Mason's champion, the friend

of charity and all good works, and that noblest of God's works, an honest man." (Centennial Address). It is interesting to note how this family likeness has marked each succeeding generation, father passing on to son that best of all legacies, a pure character and an honored name.

JOSEPH ALFRED PERRY was born in Delhi, N. Y., May 19, 1807. His father, the Rev. Joseph Perry, was a clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church, as were several of his ancestors, and a man of broad sympathies and no ordinary piety. At the age of eleven, Mr. Perry left home and entered a store in New Haven, after which he went to Albany, where he was for several years a clerk in his uncle's store. About the year 1824, he came to New York and entered the office of his uncle, J. D. Beers. The house of J. D. Beers & Co. was then, perhaps, the largest banking establishment in the city, and it was here that Mr. Perry acquired those business qualities that made him so successful in after life.

Some years later, he began business for himself, and subsequently entered into partnership with Mr. Jacob R. LeRoy, as brokers in Wall street. His marriage, in 1834, with a daughter of Mr. H. B. Pierrepont, brought him into a family connection largely identified with all the growing interests of Brooklyn. It was about this time that the Green-Wood Cemetery was proposed. Mr. Perry was, from the first, one of its most interested friends and supporters. He is spoken of in its history as "one of the pioneers of the enterprise, and one of those men who, amid indifference and discouragement, by private advances of money and credit, and by untiring personal exertions, had come to the relief of the embarrassed institution and helped to place it on a solid basis."

In 1842, a combination of circumstances occurred which resulted in the closing of his former business relations, and his accepting a proposition from the Trustees to assume the management of Green-Wood Cemetery. From this time till the day of his death, Mr. Perry gave himself to this great work with all the earnestness and enthusiasm of his nature. Relinquishing all thought of private business, he cheerfully devoted the forty remaining years of his life to making Green-Wood what it is to-day.

We find two names given special prominence in the History of Green-Wood Cemetery. "Henry E. Pierrepont, to whose suggestion the Cemetery owes its origin, and from whom it received its first impulse, and Joseph A. Perry, to whose judicious oversight, cultivated taste, constant vigilance and unremitting care, it is mainly indebted for its completed beauty."

Mr. Perry's connection with the Brooklyn Ferry Company is well known. He was one of the original incorporators and directors of the South Ferry, in 1835, which was afterwards united to Fulton and other ferries under the title of the Union Ferry Company. With regard to his course in this connection, we cannot

do better than to give the action of the Board after his death :

Resolved, That the Directors of the Union Ferry Company desire to record on their minutes an expression of their profound sorrow for the death of their cherished friend and associate, Joseph A. Perry, Esq., who departed this life on the 26th of August, 1881.

Mr. Perry has given his invaluable services in the management of the ferries between New York and Brooklyn for more than forty years, and during all that long period has been a Director of the Union Ferry Company under its different organizations. For thirty years he has been its Treasurer and Secretary, and for the last four years one of its two Managing Directors. He has been ever faithful, constant, indefatigable and most efficient in the performance of the various and onerous duties which have devolved on him. He combined very rare qualities, and in very rare degree. He had great executive ability, practical good sense and excellent judgment. The accounts and statistics of the company, of its business and affairs, were prepared and regularly kept by him with masterly system, fullness, skill and accuracy, and in the various proceedings respecting the ferries which at different times have been had before committees of the Legislature and other public bodies, his exhibits have been always ready, full, exact and unanswerable.

In the conduct of the great trust which has been so long administered by this Board, Mr. Perry has been at all times a wise, firm and upright counsellor and actor. While judicious and cautious, he was also bold and straightforward, because he was absolutely honest.

He had large intellectual culture; his personal bearing was invariably courteous, modest, cordial and refined. He was a warm and faithful friend, was generous in private charities, and earnest in promoting the religious and benevolent institutions with which he was connected. The members of this Board deplore his death and honor his memory.

It was not only in connection with these two enterprises of Brooklyn that Mr. Perry was known. His active interest and strong personality made him influential, also, in the religious interests of the city. He was at first associated with St. Ann's Church. Later, he identified himself with the establishment of Christ Church, South Brooklyn, of which church, while he remained in Brooklyn, he was an active and liberal member.

On his removal to Bay Ridge, in 1851, he immediately took measures for the establishment of the parish of Christ Church in that neighborhood. The record of the thirty years of his connection is well summed up in the following extract from the resolutions of the vestry after his death:

"Identified with this church from its commencement in 1853, being the original mover in the effort for its erection, a large contributor, and the principal person in superintending its construction and organization, he continued his work and labors as its Senior Warden until called away. To him, also, is due the establishment and care of the Sunday School, being for seventeen years its Superintendent and having, of his own bounty, erected the first building used for that purpose. Untiring in his devotion to the interests of the Church, Sunday School, Missions, both foreign and domestic; self-sacrificing in matters connected with the improvement and pro-

gress of the community, he embodied in the highest degree the character of the model citizen and true Christian."

Mr. Perry continued his active labors in all the varied relations of life till within a few days of his death, which occurred at his residence in Bay Ridge, August 26, 1881. He was buried on Lawn-Girt Hill, Green-Wood Cemetery. A public monument has been erected to his memory, directly in front of the Northern Entrance, which bears the following inscription:

"The Trustees of the Green-Wood Cemetery have erected this monument in recognition of the eminent services of Joseph Alfred Perry, who, for more than forty years, and until his death, was its faithful and efficient Comptroller. To Mr. Perry's untiring energy, sound judgment, and personal care, the proprietors of Green-Wood Cemetery are chiefly indebted for the development of this sacred City of the Dead."

"Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth; yea, saith the Spirit, for they rest from their labors, and their works do follow them." Rev. 14: 13.

Cypress Hills Cemetery was organized under the law of 1847. One hundred and twenty-five acres of land, on an elevated ridge east of Brooklyn, between the Jamaica Plank road and Ridgewood reservoir, partly in Kings County and partly in Queens, was purchased for \$25,000, and dedicated to the burial of the dead, November 21st, 1848. The boundaries have since been extended to include 500 acres, yet the cemetery retains its rural and secluded characteristics unimpaired. Though situated one mile east of the city line, it is easy of access by the Jamaica turnpike. "Cypress Hills has an historic fame. At the battle of Long Island, it was selected as a place admirably adapted for defense, and strategical movements; and was under command of Gen. Woodhull. In digging up the ground several British cannon balls were exhumed." Much of the cemetery occupies high ground, the highest point being two hundred and nineteen feet above tide water. The grounds have been greatly beautified by large expenditures, directed by refined taste. Several churches have purchased a large number of lots for the burial of their members. Some fourteen thousand bodies were removed from the grave-yard at the corner of First and Second avenues, New York. The Association, with praiseworthy generosity, donated a commodious tract of land for the reception of the remains that had been buried from the Forsyth, Allen, Willett, Seventh and Second street Methodist Churches, and had become a detriment to the living. A handsome marble monument, erected by the five churches, appropriately commemorates the spot. Four thousand soldiers lie in the *Soldiers' Plot*, shoulder to shoulder, as once they stood in the ranks. A large number of veterans of the war of 1812 are buried here. In the plot owned by the *American Dramatic Fund Association*, are the graves of Lysander Thompson, Charles D. S. Howard, George Skeritt, and others. Francis Courtney Weymiss, the founder of the Dramatic Fund Association, is buried in

an adjoining lot. Nearly one hundred thousand persons have been buried amid the pleasant scenes of Cypress Hills.

JOHN T. RUNCIE.—Among the few survivors of the earlier citizens of Williamsburg who contributed substantially to the development of its material interests, John T. Runcie deserves honorable mention. He came to Williamsburg in 1834, at the age of twenty-two years, with the spirit of enterprise characterising many of the youth of that day, wrought by the hard discipline of New England life.

As a clerk to a druggist and tobacconist, he became familiar with the manufacture of tobacco, in all its branches, but more particularly in the line of segars. He started this business in Williamsburg, and continued it for about a year; the chief market for segars being then found in the city of New York, he removed his business to 67 Pearl street, in that city. He had scarcely got his business well started, when the great fire of 1835 occurred. Though the building was not burned, his place was thrown open to the depredations of the mob, who appropriated and destroyed almost his entire stock. With business depressed, he continued in New York till the panic of 1837, about which time he returned to Williamsburg, and has resided here ever since. He continued in the segar business up to 1849.

He then commenced dealing in real estate for himself, and as a broker. In this business he continued with marked success till 1860, realizing a reasonable competence for the rest of his life.

In competition with the Congressional slate that determined most of the Federal appointments of that day, he was appointed postmaster of Williamsburg in 1853, which office he had previously held in 1847, for a brief time. He continued under this last appointment to hold the office for about a year, when President Pierce gave the naming of the postmaster at Williamsburg to William M. Tweed, then member of Congress, in consideration, it is said, of Tweed's support of the Kansas and Nebraska Bill. It is alleged that J. W. Forney, then a democrat, negotiated the bargain.

In 1859, the Grand street and Newtown Railroad charter became a subject of public interest. During that year, Mr. Runcie, with a few associates, applied to the Legislature for a charter for this road, but was unsuccessful. In 1860, Mr. Runcie, in association with Hon. Ira Buckman, renewed this application for the charter of a horse railroad, from the East river to the village of Newtown. A competing organization, promoted by Martin Kalbfleisch, Daniel Maujer, James M. Waterbury and others, was brought forward at the same time. The Common Council opposed Runcie and Buckman's application, and granted the franchise to the New York and Flushing Railroad Company. The Board of Aldermen were then enjoined from carrying out their resolution. But before a hearing was had on the injunction, the Legislative grant of the charter to Messrs. Runcie and Buckman was carried, and the bill approved by the Governor. They then entered on the construction of the road, and completed it in a short time to Calvary Cemetery.

Upon the organization of the company, Mr. Runcie was chosen its president, and continued to manage the road till 1868, when, in consequence of ill health, he resigned, and sold out his interest in the road then, or shortly after.

Some ten years ago, the lease of the Grand street ferry expired, and was not renewed in consequence of a dispute between the Dock Commissioners and the Comptroller of the City of New York, as to what fund the rent should belong to; and hence that ferry ceased to run for over two years, to

the great injury of property in Williamsburg. In the interest of the people, Mr. Runcie again tried his hand with the Legislature. He drafted a bill to compel the Comptroller to sell the franchise at public auction for the term of ten years. By the aid of Hon. Charles L. Lyon, a member of Assembly for Brooklyn, this bill became a law. The franchise was sold, and the ferry is still run under the lease so obtained.

In 1875, Mr. Runcie was elected a trustee of Cypress Hills Cemetery, and shortly after became managing trustee, and then its comptroller.

His strict order in business, at first, created some dissatisfaction; but in the course of experience it has come to be commended by those who at first complained. He has brought order out of confusion; and solvency and the payment of ready cash, out of a seeming bankruptcy; a large floating debt has been largely reduced, and the future prosperity of the institution has been assured.

His capacity in the management of men had been well assessed while he was president of the Grand street railroad, and this prestige has not forsaken him in his present position.

Mr. Runcie is a widower, having lost his wife many years ago. He has one son, William J. Runcie, Esq., who is settled in a prosperous business in the city of Buffalo, New York.

The "Evergreens" Cemetery was incorporated October 3d, 1849, and was opened for burial purposes in 1851. It lies partly in the eastern portion of Kings County and partly in Queens. Originally containing 112 acres, its area has since been increased to 270 acres. In 1872 it passed into the control of a new company, whose Trustees have expended over \$50,000 since 1877, in grading and improving the grounds, under the supervision of Supt. W. T. Bullard, and O. C. Bullard, landscape architect. The natural features of the *Evergreens* have been enhanced by art, and trees and shrubs and flowers have been planted out in profusion. From the main entrance on Bushwick avenue the ground rises gradually to the southeast, until it culminates in Beacon Hill, whence is obtained a magnificent view of the surrounding cities, country and ocean. On this height the United States Government has erected a monument to the sailors of every nationality who have died in its service, while a section is reserved for their burial places.

The cemetery contains a beautiful office of stone, and other buildings. It has also many examples of fine mortuary sculpture and design. Two receiving vaults are already constructed, and numerous private vaults. The association is strictly unsectarian, and inters those of every nationality and belief.

The Citizens' Union Cemetery Association, organized November 8, 1851, more particularly as a burial place for the *colored people*, who were at that time debarred from most of the other cemeteries. The Association secured twenty-nine and one-half acres, of which twelve were to be devoted to burial purposes. It was located between Butler and Sackett streets, and Rochester and Ralph avenues, in the Ninth Ward. After the opening of Prospect Park, the avenues leading to it were laid out through the cemetery grounds, and the land was sold for building purposes.

Union Cemetery is located between Irving and Knickerbocker avenues, and Palmetto and Jacob streets, near Myrtle avenue, and was opened in June, 1851. The grounds are some ten acres in extent, and are the property of the Grand Street First Protestant Methodist Church. There are no restrictions of race or religion against burials, and the number of interments is nearly seven thousand. The grounds are pleasantly diversified with small elevations, and shade trees are abundant.

Cemetery of the Holy Cross, in the town of Flatbush, is intended for the interment of those who die in the Roman Catholic faith. It was established in 1849, when Father McDonough, of St. James' Church, in Jay street, purchased seventeen acres for a burial ground, to which twenty acres have since been added. Instead of the undulating succession of hills and valleys, which make Greenwood so picturesque, Flatbush Cemetery presents a surface as level as a prairie. From the main entrance a broad carriage-way leads to the mortuary chapel, where funeral services are held. The chapel is surrounded by monuments of the most beautiful and costly character. Close by is the grave of Rev. Father McDonough, the founder of the cemetery, who died in 1853; it is marked by a plain marble slab. Two similar slabs cover the last resting places of Father Schueller, of St. Paul's Church, and Father Curran, of the church in Astoria. (See, also, *History of Flatbush*, in this volume, p. 248.)

At Flatbush, also, is the *Potter's Field*, connected with the County institutions.

Washington Cemetery, Gravesend (see also page 183), comprises 100 acres of level land, beautifully located, about two miles from the Prospect Park, or about half way between the said park and Coney Island. It is regularly incorporated by law, and is free from all incumbrance. It is governed by a board of trustees of six members. At present more than half of the improved portion of the Cemetery is owned by societies, lodges, congregations and individuals. A large majority of the interments are Hebrews, but the Cemetery is not denominational in character or management. *Officers:* Isaac Marx, *President*; Samuel B. Hamburger, *Secretary*; Adolphus E. Karsen, *Treasurer*.

The Friends' Cemetery. The extension of Prospect Park to the south surrounded a retired cemetery of about 20 acres, which had been purchased, many years before, and set apart for the use of the Society of Friends. It occupies a beautiful location on a gentle slope, which is thinly covered with forest trees; but, in accordance with the principles of the sect, no ornamental monuments are allowed to be erected. The act which extended the boundaries of Prospect Park reserved the cemetery to the use of its owners, and a roadway leading thereto from 15th street and 10th avenue.

THE DEPARTMENT OF PUBLIC EDUCATION.

By  Esq.

President of the Board of Education.

The city of Brooklyn vies with her sister city of New York in claiming the honor of having established the first free public schools within the limits of the United States of America.

The Dutch colonists of Breucklyn and New Amsterdam brought with them from the Fatherland the two great ideas which became the mainspring and support of the American Republic—the ideas of religious liberty and free public schools. Although they were not fugitives from their own land, but were inspired by the genius of commerce and enterprise, the Dutch landed a schoolmaster for a free public school on these shores, as naturally as they unloaded their ships. Free tuition to every child in the Dutch colonies was regarded as such an axiom that its introduction was unheralded and long remained unknown to the other colonies in America.

The little settlement of Breucklyn proper did not con-

tain enough homes to bear a separate school tax, until the time of the administration of Governor Stuyvesant. Then the sum of one hundred and fifty guilders was levied as a school tax upon the little hamlet. The government deemed this amount insufficient and added fifty guilders out of its own treasury. The names of the earliest settlers of Breucklyn who were assessed to establish public education are still to be found in the archives of the city.

As though to lend additional importance in American annals to the Fourth of July, it was on that day, in the year 1661, that the first schoolmaster for the settlement of Breucklyn, as distinct from the adjacent settlements of earlier origin, was appointed. His name was CARL DEBEVOISE. His salary was fixed at the whole amount levied for school purposes, and he was furnished with a dwelling-house.

The *first* school was organized in a little church edifice of octagon form, which stood on the highway, not far from the present junction of Fulton and Bridge streets, and not more than a hundred yards from the ancient structure on Red Hook lane, which serves as the hall and depot of the Board of Education.

The *second* public school, established within the limits of the present city, was organized in the church edifice at Bushwick, which stood on the same site now occupied by its successor of the same name, near the junction of North Second street and Bushwick lane. This was in the year 1662, but a few months only after the colony of Bushwick was founded, and when it scarcely contained twenty homes.

It is an interesting, and, perhaps, to most of the people of Brooklyn, an astonishing fact, that when, about two centuries later, the Board of Education assumed jurisdiction of the public schools of Bushwick, at the time of the consolidation of that town with the city of Brooklyn, in the year 1855, it found the district school still kept on the same site on which it was founded in 1662, and surrounded by the same walls of houses which had guarded it for two centuries.

The schoolmaster of this school was BODWYN MANOUT. He took charge on December 28th, 1662, and received as salary four hundred guilders per annum, payable in Indian wampum, with house-rent and firewood free of cost.

This primitive school, soon after the consolidation of Brooklyn with Bushwick, under the energy and ability of James Hall, Esq., subsequently and for many years a useful member of the Board of Education, developed into Public School No. 23.

The *third* public school was organized in Bedford Village, at the junction of the Clove, Cripplebush and Jamaica lanes, in the year 1663. This afterward became the present Public School No. 3. This school is memorable for many incidents connected with the history of Brooklyn. Here John Vandervoort taught for sixty years. In front of the school-house was a triangular green, whereon the scholars of that day were allowed to play during the recess; while in the rear were the house and grounds of Mr. Rem Lefferts. The mother of the late Gen. Jeremiah Johnson, who was born in 1845, was educated here, and often spoke of one Kabbelier as teacher there. This old school-house is set down on Ratzer's accurate map of Brooklyn, in 1766-'67. On the green in front, the mother of the late Nicholas Wyckoff, Esq., of the City Bank, Williamsburg, remembered to have seen Hessian soldiers whipped, as a military punishment, during the Revolutionary War. During the whole of the British occupation of the town, from 1776 to 1783, this neighborhood was the scene of much martial display; the Lefferts house, on the corner of the Jamaica turnpike and the Clove road, being occupied as the headquarters of the English General Gray, and a large Hessian encampment was

located on grounds now crossed by Franklin and Clason avenues, and Bergen, Wyckoff, Warren, Baltic, and Butler streets. John Vandervoort took charge of this school about 1748 or '50, and is supposed to have been its second teacher. His long service of sixty years was uninterrupted, except for a while during the Revolution, when he was imprisoned by the British. The old school-house had two rooms, with a large chimney between; one room being the school room proper, the other used as a residence for the teacher; and, about 1775, an addition was made, some fourteen feet square, which the teacher was permitted to use as a grocery store, by means of which he eked out his slender salary. About 1783 a garden was made and inclosed at the west end of the building. Some time between 1810 and '15 a new school-house was erected, Herman Kellogg being teacher; and, in 1815, Abraham Remsen, Cornelius Van Brunt and Abraham De Bevoise were school commissioners. The building had also been used, from time immemorial, for Sabbath school purposes. About the year 1830, a new building was erected, on the north corner of Fulton and Bedford avenues, by a neighborhood subscription—small, one story, having two rooms, one for older and one for younger scholars. This, in 1846, was enlarged, and in 1851 was leased for other purposes, being occupied for several years as the police station of the 49th precinct. During 1852 a building was erected on the corner of Bedford avenue and Jefferson street, and was extended in 1854, and again in 1859; and an additional school building was erected in 1882.

Some time previous to the Revolution, a school had been organized in the Gowanus District, on one of the Bergen farms, and was chiefly supported by the family of that name. At first the school was conducted in the different dwelling houses. About the time of the Revolution, a school-house was erected, and is mentioned in old documents as standing, in about 1790, on the Bergen Farm lane, near the present Third avenue and Fortieth street. In the year 1797, the old structure, of log-cabin style of architecture, was replaced by a frame building. In the year 1810, the district elected trustees under the State law of 1805, and thus made the school the *first one organized in Brooklyn*, but it was named Public School No. 2, under the present system of laws. Its first trustees were *Garret Bergen, Stephen Hendrickson and Cornelius Van Brunt*.

Its teacher was Michael Hogan, an Irishman, who served for \$200 per annum; and who, finally, cut his throat in consequence of the refusal of one of his female scholars, for whom he had conceived a violent passion, to accede to his proposals of marriage.

In 1820 the old school-house became insufficient and dilapidated, and a new one was erected on land leased from Simon Bergen (for the term of twenty-five years, at \$112 per annum), near the junction of Thirty-sixth street and Tenth avenue, and on Martense's lane, as it

was called, which led from Gowanus to Flatbush along the southern border of the present Greenwood Cemetery. Upon the expiration of the lease, in 1846, the building was sold and removed, and is now used as a grocery store. Previous to 1842 this district comprised the present Eighth Ward, but in that year it was divided, all south of Twenty-seventh street retaining the designation of District No. 2, while all north of that line became No. 10. In 1846, a building was erected on Forty-seventh street, near Third avenue.

In the year 1875 a handsome new structure, with every modern improvement, and capable of accommodating nearly 1,500 scholars, replaced the old building.

Since the organization of this school, the Bergen family has never been without a representative of its name in the Board of Education. One of the family is now President of the Board. Mr. Jacob Sand has been in charge of this school for about thirty years.

Some time previous to the year 1775, a *fourth* school was organized on the north side of the Wallabout creek on land belonging to General Johnson, the free use of which was given by him for twenty-one years. A number of years after, it was removed on the land of Mr. Garret Nostrand (intersection of Bedford and Flushing avenues), on the same terms as those given by General Johnson; and there it remained until the opening of Bedford avenue, when it was taken down and made into a hen-coop by Mr. Nostrand, thus becoming a training-school for youthful feathered bipeds. Previously to the erection of this school, in 1775, the children of this district were divided between the Bedford and Bushwick schools. This became the present Public School No. 4. Some of the oldest citizens received their early education at this Wallabout school, such as Barnet Johnson, John and Jacob Ryerson, John and Jeremiah Spader, Peter V. and Abraham Remsen, Charles, Tunis, Joseph, John, and Jeremiah Rapelye, John and Cornelius Nostrand, and John Skillman. James Roach was teacher for a few years, about 1802; then Patrick Gannon, Alvin Fox, and M. Menomy, taught about a year each, followed by Messrs. Whitteley, Foster, Miller, Thomas Potter, and, in 1834, Samuel E. Barnes. The building, at this time, was a small, one-story affair, painted red, a school-room twenty-five feet square, heated by a Franklin wood stove in the centre of the room, with its pipe thrust through the roof. Its trustees were B. Johnson, Jeremiah V. Spader, and Charles Lott. The school had run down, and the new teacher, Mr. Barnes, on the first day of his charge, made a tour of the neighborhood, accompanied by Messrs. Spader and Johnson, and collected ten girls and six boys for his school. From that small beginning, at the end of the first year the school was full to overflowing. Among his first scholars he numbered Jeremiah Johnson, Jr., J. V. Spader, John Ryerson, Philip Hart, James Lott, Frank Lott, F. O. Vandervoort, R. Boerum, and others, who

subsequently became well-known and useful citizens. In 1838, the building occupied by No. 4, on Classon, near Flushing avenue, was erected, and was enlarged in 1842, and again in 1846; and a branch school-house was added subsequently.

In all the schools mentioned above, the Dutch language was at first the only one used. But, from about the year 1758 to the year 1800, both the Dutch and English languages were taught. In the Bushwick and Gowanus schools, the use of the Dutch tongue was continued much later, and even down to the Revolution. In the Bushwick school studies in Dutch were not abandoned until about fifty years ago.

After the close of the Revolutionary war, the subject of public instruction was much agitated in the pulpit and the public prints. In 1789, an Act was passed providing for the sale and disposition of public lands for the support in part of schools for each township, and about 40,000 acres were reserved for the benefit of schools. At this time there was still no public school system for the State, and Brooklyn continued the use of the schools she had herself established. In 1795, an Act was passed "for the encouragement of schools," and appropriations made from the State Treasury. In 1805, a law was enacted "to raise a fund for the encouragement of common schools," and distribution directed. It was under this law that Public School No. 2 was re-organized, and trustees appointed, as the first established public school in Brooklyn.

In the year 1816, the sum of \$2,000 was levied upon the property of District No. 1, then including the village of Brooklyn, to establish a school. On May 6th, of that year, the Public School No. 1 was duly opened on the lower floor of Kirk's printing office, in Adams street, near Sands. Within the limit of the village of Brooklyn, at that time, were found 552 children who were not in attendance upon the private schools. The first principal of this school was Judge John Dikeman. Mr. White was principal from September, 1834, to October, 1869, and subsequently acted as one of the clerks of the Board of Education, up to the time of his death, in the year 1881. Mr. John W. Hunter, subsequently Mayor of the city, was one of the district trustees long before the organization of the Board, of which, for many years, he was an honored member.

The late Mr. E. S. Whitlock also served as member of the committee of this school, until his election as President, in the year 1870, which office he continued to fill up to the time of his death, in the year 1881.

Schools of the Town of Bushwick and Village of Williamsburg.—[BY THE EDITOR.]—The educational advantages of Bushwick in the olden time were, from its peculiarly isolated position and the smaller admixture of the Yankee element in its population, even more limited than those of Brooklyn and Flat-

bush. There was, indeed, the old school, at Bushwick Corners, already referred to, and the Wallabout school; and some of the children in the Wallabout district availed themselves of the tuition furnished at the Bedford school, in Brooklyn. But Bushwick, although farther removed from New York city, was not altogether overlooked by the traveling Yankee pedagogues, who went roaming around in Dutchland, and who manifested a wonderfully keen appreciation of the home comforts of the quiet old Dutch farm-houses, an appreciation which not infrequently took the shape of a permanent attachment to the daughter of the household, and a consequent retirement from the ranks of instructors into the more pleasant walks of domestic life. Of such, perhaps, was Peter Witherspoon, who "notifies the public," through the columns of *Rivington's Gazette*, in 1778, "that he intends to teach a small number of Greek and Latin scholars, not exceeding six or eight, at Bushwick, with due attention to education and morals." From Gaine's newspaper, in 1779, we learn that an equally adventurous teacher, the "Rev. Mr. Foley, has opened an academy at Aram, in Bushwick, for the reception of young gentlemen, to be instructed in Greek, Latin and the English tongue, grammatically. Would be willing to accommodate a few young gentlemen with board."

Coming down to a more recent period, we find that, in 1826, Mr. David Dunham, a gentleman of foresight and liberality, and largely interested in the advancement of all the material interests of the place, donated a plot of ground, 30 by 100 feet, near the present North First street, as a site for a district school-house. The building erected on the plot (the same which was afterward occupied by the colored school) was then known as District School No. 3, of the town of Bushwick. The district then included all that portion of the city south of Fourteenth street and west of Union avenue, and the whole number of children within its limits did not exceed forty. By act of Legislature, April 14, 1827, the village of Williamsburg was incorporated, and as its population increased, public attention was more strongly called to the subject of education, and several unsuccessful attempts were made by private individuals to obtain assistance from the State, by which the schools might be placed upon an equal pecuniary footing with those of New York city. Owing, however, to the prejudice then existing against public schools, this one dragged out a miserable existence, doing and receiving but very little good. In 1835 another legislative act extended the village to Bushwick avenue, taking in part of another school district; and, in 1838, Messrs. Edwin Ferry, David Garret and James Ainslie, newly elected trustees of the school district, set themselves vigorously at work to improve the character and promote the efficiency of the school. Discharging the teacher previously employed, they engaged Mr. William H. Butler (afterwards city clerk

of the 'Burgh after it became a municipality), who found, upon commencing his duties, an attendance of only 30 children. This increased within a year to 150, being nearly one-half of all the children in the district (306), and three-fourths of all fit to attend school. The school-house, a small one-story edifice, 19 by 25 feet, on Grand street, between Third and Fourth, was quite insufficient for the accommodation of the scholars, and, in 1839, a meeting was called for the purpose of raising funds wherewith to enlarge it. Six gentlemen attended the meeting, and voted for this specific purpose the sum of \$125, which was appropriated to the addition of a second story. Mr. Butler gradually made headway against the obstacles which beset him, such as the lack of accommodations, books, and of the proper sympathy and encouragement from those whose duty it was to promote the cause. In a few months the school increased to 236 scholars, 156 of whom were boys, another teacher was engaged, and its course thenceforth was onward. By an act of Legislature, in 1840, the village of Williamsburg was separated from the town of Bushwick, and incorporated as a town. The census of that year gave the population of the village as 5,094, of whom 1,018 were children, and for all these only the one small school-house already mentioned. In all previous legislative acts relative to Williamsburg no reference was made to school districts, the General School Act having left them untouched until changed by the commissioners of schools of one or both towns; and, for several years, the annual election of trustees took place in School District No. 3, without reference to the village extension of 1835. Apparently, no one imagined that the acts of 1835 and 1840 had changed the status of the school districts, until a proposal having been made to erect a new school-house in District No. 3, the opponents of the plan argued that the school districts having been changed by these aforesaid acts, there were no boundaries, and therefore no base upon which the commissioners could act. The plan first suggested for meeting the wants of the district was the erection, in some central and convenient place, of a high school for advanced scholars, and primary school-houses in different parts of the village. This would have admirably suited the wants of the village, but no provision having been made by the school act for schools of different grades, it was concluded to erect a building that might eventually become a high school for the village. At a meeting of the citizens, convened by the trustees (James D. Sparkman and Samuel Cox), December 3d, 1841, for the purpose of raising money, by tax on the district, to purchase lots and erect a school-house, a motion to raise \$800 for the lots and \$4,500 for building was unanimously carried, by 37 yeas. The project met with much opposition, even from the board of village trustees; but the trustees of the school, sustained, in spite of several appeals, by the decision of the State Superin-

tendent of Public Instruction, went bravely on with their work. Their attempt to collect the tax was strenuously resisted by some, prominent among whom was the president of the village, who sued the trustees for seizure of his goods, and obtained a jury verdict reversing the decision of the State Superintendent. The trustees appealed to the higher courts, and during the temporary suspension of the collection of the tax, the population of Williamsburg increased rapidly, and in less than a year, the necessities of education had become more pressing, there being now more advocates for three new school-houses than there were for a less number. In June, 1843, the trustees of District No. 3, availing themselves of an amendment to the school act, by which a town superintendent took the place of commissioners, agreed to omit the annual election; and the people, in district school meeting assembled, voted to divide the village into three districts. Mr. Richard Berry was elected Superintendent of Schools, and shortly after the three school districts were thus apportioned: No. 1 comprised all that portion of the town south of Grand street and west of Union avenue; No. 2 the upper village, and No. 3 the village west of Grand street.

The first Board of Trustees, under this arrangement, were: (District 1) Thomas J. Fenwick, James Noble, Timothy Coffin; (District 2) Lemuel Richardson, Charles S. Booth, Jacob Zimmer; and (District 3) Graham Polley, William Lake and James Ainslie. The suit which had been commenced was amicably adjusted, the expenses of the school trustees being assumed by the village; and all remaining opposition was soon terminated by a decision of the State Superintendent (rendered August 7, 1843), as to the legal validity of the action of the Trustees and Town Superintendent. A new brick building, adequate to the wants of the increasing population, was erected in each district; and, about 1850, a large and elegant building was added to the First District, while in the Second District the old building was exchanged for a larger and more suitable one. In 1851 Bushwick was united to Williamsburg, and the city of Williamsburg was created, the number of its public school scholars in 1852 being 6,700. At the time of the consolidation of Bushwick and Williamsburg and Brooklyn, District No. 1 became the present Public School No. 23.

Primary Schools.—The honor of first establishing separate primary schools in Brooklyn is due to the late Graham H. Polley. To his liberality and generosity (for he paid the rents out of his own pocket), the organization of old Primary Schools Nos. 1, 2, 3 and 4, in various rented apartments, was indebted. Mr. Polley, while a member of the Board of Education of Williamsburg, was constantly urging the establishment of primary schools; and through his aid, and that of the Rev. Mr. Demorest, the Intermediate schools Nos. 20 and 21, were erected in the year 1852. It was the con-

solidation of Brooklyn with Williamsburg that started the organization of separate primary schools in the former city.

It is not until the year 1827 that we find documentary evidence of the existence of another school, at the junction of Red Hook and Cornell's lanes, near the present corner of Court and Degraw streets. This was taught by Nathan Jackson. He was followed by Benjamin Brown, and he, about 1830, by Mr. L. E. White, who left the school after a service of over four years. The school, which was situated in a very sparsely settled neighborhood, had then about sixty scholars, and Mr. White was followed by one Clark, who remained but a short time. About 1831, Mr. McKinley, a talented Irishman, took charge, and under him the school increased, until, in 1835, a new brick building, of some considerable architectural pretensions, was erected on Baltic, near Court street, and was subsequently occupied by the Catholics as a seminary. Under a succession of good teachers the school prospered, and, in 1853, was removed to a fine new building in Warren, near Smith street, and which was much improved in 1862. It is now known as No. 6.

Up to 1827, out of the five schools, the beginnings of which have been narrated above, only one (that is, No. 1), was located in the *village* of Brooklyn. And the subject being agitated about this time (1827) of starting another district school for the accommodation of the present Second and Fifth wards, Messrs. Dr. J. S. Thorne, James H. Clark, and Alexander Newman were chosen trustees of the new district. These gentlemen rented, for the purpose, a two-story framed building on the northwest corner of Adams and Prospect streets, which had been used by the Methodists as a sabbath school, and employed as its principal a Methodist preacher, named Latimer, who taught on the Lancasterian plan for a period of seven years. This school, then No. 2 of the *village*, is now No. 7 of the present public schools of the city, having been moved, in 1838, to Bridge street near Plymouth, and from thence, in 1840, to York street, near Bridge.

On this site has just been completed one of the best buildings ever erected for school purposes in this country—a structure to which the City can point with justifiable pride.

Dr. J. Sullivan Thorne continued in charge of this school, as member or chairman of its local committees until his death a few years ago. For more than forty years he devoted much of his fortune and leisure to the promotion of public education in Brooklyn, and was President of the Board of Education for two years.

Mr. Henry Dean became Principal of No. 7 in 1836, and continued in charge until 1849, and thereafter acted as one of the clerks of the Board of Education until his death.

During the next year, 1830, the present public school No. 8 was established, the district having been laid out

some time before. It was the legitimate successor of a select academy which had been kept, under the auspices of the Reformed Dutch Church of the village, from about 1812. This select school was first taught by John Mann, then (from 1814 to 1816) by William Clare, then by a Scotchman named Laird, then, 1818 to 1823, by the excellent John Laidlaw. About 1830, the trustees leased the building, which belonged to the Dutch church and stood on the Middagh estate, on nearly the site of the present edifice of No. 8, on Middagh between Henry and Hicks streets. It was a two-story wooden affair, with a portico over the main entrance, and a small bell tower and bell on top, the whole painted of a dingy yellow color. Adrian Hegeman was the first teacher of this school, which was accommodated with a new building in 1846, which was enlarged again in 1860.

From an early period of its organization, until his retirement from the Board of Education, Mr. Cyrus P. Smith was associated with the direction of this school. Mr. Smith had seen the city, of which he was afterward chief magistrate, attain its great population and wealth, from the germ of a country village. During his official relationship to the city, every structure occupied by a public school had been erected or reconstructed. No other citizen of Brooklyn, probably, exercised a more potent influence in promoting its various educational enterprises. For a period of more than the average age of man he was an active member of the Board of Education, over which for twenty years he presided. It would be difficult to name any enterprise connected with the material or intellectual progress of Brooklyn with whose origin and progress he was not associated. But, amid all the honors and successes with which his life was crowned, there is nothing for which his memory deserves to be held in more grateful remembrance than his services in the cause of popular education. Mr. J. Reeves, an esteemed teacher, became principal of this school in 1848, where he remained until his death in 1862.

The next school established in Brooklyn was that now known as No. 9. The first building was erected on the ground now occupied by the eastern section of Prospect Park. Its period of organization is so uncertain that we can only state it to be subsequently to 1830, and prior to 1836.

The new building, on the plaza of Prospect Park, was erected in 1868, at a cost, including the land, of \$99,920.64, which at the time was the largest amount which had been expended by the Board for a public school.

This school was organized on September 18th, 1868, by the appointment of Mrs. Jane Dunkley, as Principal. She was the first woman appointed in Brooklyn to preside over a large grammar school. This precedent was followed in two or three instances more recently. Mr. Edward Rowe, one of the most honored

members of the present Board of Education, has been for many years at the head of the Committee of this school.

A school had been in existence, prior to 1835, near the junction of the Gowanus and Port roads, in the neighborhood of the present Fourth avenue and Macomb street. In about the year 1847, it was organized as Public School No. 10, on 15th street, between Third and Fourth avenues, under the trusteeship of members of the Bergen family. In 1870, a large building of three stories was erected on Seventh avenue, at a cost for building and land of \$103,000, and called No. 10. The old building was used as a Primary and Intermediate school, and is now known as No. 40. A large additional structure, with every modern improvement, has just been completed on part of the old site, to accommodate the increasing population. Mr. Peter Rouget was appointed Principal of No. 10, on September 29, 1847, and still remains in charge. The late Peter G. Bergen was for nearly thirty years a member of the local committee, and was succeeded by his son, Garret Bergen, and thereafter by his nephew, Tunis G. Bergen.

Organization of the Board of Education.—In 1835, the first special law was enacted for public education in the City of Brooklyn. Under this law the Trustees were to report to the Common Council. In the year 1843, an Act was passed creating a Board of Education, which, together with the Mayor and the Superintendent, should consist of twenty-eight members. But, in 1850, another special law was passed, which made the Board of Education to consist of thirty-three members, to be nominated and elected by the Common Council alone. This law may be regarded as the foundation of our local law relative to the public schools. Although it has been subjected to many modifications and amendments, this law has never been repealed in terms.

In the year 1854, under the act which consolidated the cities of Brooklyn and Williamsburg and the town of Bushwick, a further change was made in the structure of the Board. The Common Council was authorized to increase the number of members of the Board in proportion to the increase of population. The number of members was for that year fixed at forty-five, of whom thirteen should reside in the new territory, called the Eastern District. By the Act of 1862, the number of members was definitely fixed at forty-five, who were to be nominated by the Mayor and confirmed by the Aldermen. This number, in spite of the extraordinary growth of the city in population, and of many public discussions as to the propriety of an increase or of a decrease, has remained ever since the same. Since 1881, the members have been appointed solely by the Mayor.

Mr. Cyrus P. Smith was President of the Board for twenty-one successive years; Dr. J. Sullivan Thorne

for two years, and Mr. E. S. Whitlock from 1870, up to the time of his death, in 1881. Mr. Daniel Maujer was President from July, 1881, to the 1st of January, 1882, when he retired from the Board, full of years and honors, and died that same year. In January, 1882, the Board was reorganized, and Tunis G. Bergen, the present incumbent, was elected President.

From the year 1867 to July, 1881, the Secretary of the Board was George A. W. Stuart. Repeatedly re-elected to that office, and enjoying the confidence of the Board, the discovery, in June, 1881, of a most ingenious and far-reaching system of embezzlements on his part of some of the funds of the Board, extending over a period of ten or a dozen years, followed by his flight and complete disappearance, fell like a thunder-clap upon the community, and dumb-founded the old members of the Board, who had placed implicit faith in him for so many years.

In July, 1881, Mr. D. W. Tallmadge was elected Secretary, and still fulfills the duties of the office with great energy of mind and honesty of purpose.

On the first organization of the Board, in 1855, Mr. J. W. Bulkley was elected Superintendent of Public Instruction, or, as he was then called, City Superintendent, and held the office for a score of years. Although succeeded by others, he still remains Associate Superintendent. Mr. Bulkley was succeeded as Superintendent by the late Mr. Thomas W. Field, formerly a member of the Board, and well known in historical and literary circles. Soon after Mr. Field's death, in 1881, Mr. Calvin Patterson, Principal of P. S. No. 13, was elected Superintendent, and still holds that position. In 1882, Mr. W. H. Maxwell was elected as Second Associate Superintendent.

Board of Education Hall.—As late as 1830, Fulton street and Red Hook lane remained the principal thoroughfares of the village of Brooklyn. The corporate limits of the village on the east was the lane, and upon it, just outside of the embryo city, James E. Underhill, a successful builder, erected the pretentious and, what was then considered, splendid structure now occupied by the Board of Education. Red Hook lane was then a thronged and busy thoroughfare, affording, the only means of access to the numerous mills and farms of South Brooklyn and the Hook. The farm of Tunis Johnson, covering nearly one hundred acres, was bounded by the lane, and was the nearest estate to the little corporation of the village of Brooklyn. On this prominent corner Mr. Underhill built his residence, and only a few of the citizens of Brooklyn remember that this narrow, secluded lane was, not many years ago, one of the busiest of her streets. It was not until 1850 that the Board of Education occupied it, having for several years next subsequent to its organization held its sessions in the Common Council chamber; and, later still, for a number of years in Public School No. 1. The building has been much enlarged within recent years,

but its capacity is too small to furnish sufficient room for the proper transaction of the vast and intricate business of administering to the public education of a city of seven hundred thousand people.

Since the organization of the present Board and the consolidation of the city with Williamsburg and Bushwick, Brooklyn has increased in population to such an enormous extent, that the number of grammar school districts has been continually increased, until thirty-five *grammar school* buildings have been erected, seven *intermediate* schools, twelve *primary* schools, and three *schools for colored children*. In addition to these, a building is used for the Central Grammar School, which was intended to unite in one building the various so-called academic classes in the grammar schools; and two buildings are used for the *Attendance Schools*. This makes a total of *sixty-three* buildings at the present time used for public school purposes in the city.

A new feature of the present system was the establishment, about five years ago, of the so-called "*Attendance Schools*," for the accommodation of truant and delinquent boys, where they might still receive instruction or bear the alternative of confinement in the Truant Home, an institution belonging to the city, but the management of which, happily, is not under the control of the Board. The enforcement of the Compulsory School Act is in the hands of a special committee of the Board, with a Superintendent of Attendance and seven agents, who watch over the entire city, examine the various manufactories and stores where boys are employed, and report such boys, under fourteen years of age, who do not attend school, as fit subjects for the Attendance Schools, or, as a last resort, of the Truant Home. The Brooklyn system has been adopted, in its main features, by the city of New York and many other cities of the Union.

A Public High School has not yet been established in Brooklyn. The extraordinary increase of population has called for so much additional outlay for primary pupils, that funds have not been furnished for a school of the higher branches of education.

Scholarships in Colleges.—But the Board is able, by the munificence of some of our greater institutions of learning, to offer to the pupils of the public schools still larger privileges of study.

More than eight years since, the venerable Chancellor of the New York University, Dr. Ferris, placed at the disposal of the Board fifty free scholarships in that college; in which the fees for tuition are nearly \$100 per annum. In Columbia College, the Board has for many years possessed the privilege of sending six students free of cost. In Cornell University, the public schools can claim nine free scholarships, and in the State Normal Schools, eleven.

For the privileges granted so liberally by the first University, only one scholarship has been demanded in eight years. To Columbia College, the public schools

have sent but one student in fifteen years, and to Cornell University, but six.

The trustees of Packer Institute have, with equal liberality, permitted the Board to offer one free scholarship in that institution as the prize for excellence in each grammar school. Of the thirty-four free scholarships thus offered to the public, only *eighteen* had been filled, a short time ago, and the omission is caused solely by the indifference of the public to the privilege.

The number of free scholarships in colleges and seminaries at the disposal of the Board, for the acceptance of public school pupils, is ninety-nine, of which only twenty-six at present are filled.

The average value of these scholarships is not less than \$100 per annum.

Yet the people of the city are apparently oblivious of these facts.

Sources of Income for the Support of Public Schools in Brooklyn.—1. *Pro rata* share of State tax of one-eighth of one per cent. on assessed valuation of the real and personal property in the city.

2. *Pro rata* share of interest of United States Deposit fund.

3. *Pro rata* share of interest of common school fund.

4. Amount annually directed to be raised by Board of Aldermen after the approval of the Board of Estimate.

1. *State tax.*—In each year the taxes levied on the city include one item of one-eighth of one per cent. This is paid into the State treasury to the credit of the common school fund. It is then re-distributed to the several counties. In 1882, the amount received from the State was \$288,666.90, based on the census of 1880.

2. *From the United States deposit fund.*—In 1832, so large a surplus of money had accumulated in the treasury of the Federal Government, that it was determined by a law of Congress to distribute it to the several States in proportion to their population. The State of New York appropriated the income of her quota to the support of public schools, and district libraries.

3. *The income of the common school fund*, which consists of moneys which have, from time to time, been appropriated by the State, to be invested so that the income shall be used for the support of common schools.

The money arising from these six sources is distributed as follows:

1. The city is entitled to five hundred dollars for each member of Assembly.

2. To its proportionate share of one-third of the remainder (after some stipulated deductions for State expenses and Indian schools), according to the number of qualified teachers who have taught during a term of not less than six months.

3. To its proportionate share of the remaining two-thirds, according to population,

From all these sources, however, the Board of Education receives only about one-fourth of the amount paid for salaries to teachers. The balance is raised by special tax on the city.

In 1882, the Board received:

From the City.....	\$885,816.44
From the State.....	288,666.90
From sale of books, &c.....	54,890.10
From all other sources.....	12,068.27

Total.... \$1,241,441.71

In August, 1881, the method of keeping the records and accounts, and the general management of the financial affairs of the Board, were entirely re-organized.

Monthly financial reports are now made by the Finance Committee in detail, covering every item of expenditure, and showing the balance to the credit of each account, the aggregate of which must balance with the money remaining to the credit of the Board in the hands of the City Treasurer. These reports are printed and laid upon the desks of the members for examination before being presented for adoption, and they also appear in the printed minutes.

The City Treasurer, as *ex-officio* Treasurer of this Board, also keeps the accounts of the Board in detail, and it is pleasant to be able to say that since the adoption of the present system, the monthly balances have been exact, never differing from the Treasurer's reports.

The monthly financial reports as made by the Finance Committee, are simple, comprehensive, and complete, and any person, at all familiar with accounts, may inform himself from them, without asking a question, of the entire financial transactions of the year, and of the condition of the funds at any time during the year.

The following table will show the appropriations, by the city of Brooklyn alone, for school purposes for the several years respectively named:

YEAR.	For School Purposes.	New Buildings.
1876.....	\$805,196.95	
1877.....	881,792.45	\$200,500.00
1878.....	711,000.00	64,400.00
1879.....	793,565.35	
1880.....	825,383.87	56,873.30
1881.....	885,816.44	110,000.00
1882.....	977,925.10	150,000.00
1883.....	1,248,137.09	280,000.00

There are now sixty-three school buildings under the charge of the Board. In 1882, the schools were in session forty weeks and one day.

The whole number of different pupils instructed in that year was 100,079. The average attendance for the year was 54,184.

The total number of pupils on register on the 31st of October, 1882, was 65,490.

The entire number of regular sittings in all our school buildings is but 64,232. (1882).

The increase population of Brooklyn probably equals 20,000 yearly ; more than 12 per cent. of such increase clamor at the doors of our public schools for admission, and there is no room for them.

Our present population requires additional and improved school accommodation equal to eight or ten large new buildings in excess of those now being erected or ordered, and we must keep in mind the fact that the annual increase of school population is a steady and continued demand for accommodation equal to three new school buildings each year.

Many of the schools were crowded three years ago ; during the past three years additional accommodation, as shown by the reports, has been provided to the extent of 1,550 sittings.

In the same time the natural increase of school children who would attend public schools, if they could be accommodated, is about 7,000.

Difficulties are multiplied in every direction, involving the questions of health, comfort and study, when the accommodation is so out of proportion with present and growing necessities ; and if the small increase of the past few years should, from any cause, be continued for a few years more, it would be impossible to estimate the confusion that would ensue, and the just complaints that would follow from every part of the city.

Teachers.—The number now employed by the Board is 1,334. Of this number 55 are men, and the remainder women.

At present a woman is at the head of schools Nos. 8, 21, 28, 29, 39, 40, 41 and 42 respectively. The other schools are presided over by men, with the exception of primary school buildings, which are connected in discipline with grammar schools.

There are 9 music teachers, of whom 8 are men. There are 8 drawing teachers, of whom one is a man. The two Attendance Schools are managed by men.

Evening Schools have been established and conducted during the autumn and winter of each year, almost ever since the organization of the Board. Since the autumn of 1882, they have been permanently organized, with fixed rules for their government, and a permanent corps of teachers.

The schools are better conducted, the classes more fully attended, with better results than heretofore.

The rules adopted call for a term of sixteen weeks, but the duration of the term is dependent upon the appropriation allowed for their support.

The expense is about \$2,250 each week, or \$36,000 for a full term.

In 1882 there were 13 evening schools, two of which were high schools, with a total number of pupils on register of 4,948, which included 2 colored schools. The number of teachers was 200. The present year finds a

large increase in the number of pupils in evening schools.

For the past two years the work of the Board of Education has been more thoroughly systematized than ever before. Stricter rules have been adopted for the licensing of teachers. Only those applicants for teachers' positions who have received either a certificate "A" or "B" from the Superintendent, after an examination, can now be appointed as teachers.

Special certificates of qualification are also required from applicants for heads of departments, and also for principals.

The course of study is now under revision, and the tendency seems to be to lighten the work required of the pupils, and to remedy the evils of the so-called "cramming system."

In 1882, examinations in etymology, astronomy and philosophy were dispensed with before graduation in the public grammar schools.

In 1882, special committees of the Board were engaged in re-arranging the school districts, and many changes were made. Nos. 8, 28 and 29 were made branch schools of grammar schools, and six other schools, viz., Nos. 7, 36, 38, 40, 41 and 42, were reduced or confined to primary and intermediate pupils.

Within the present year *seven* new school buildings have been erected, and wings added to another. This was by far the greatest number of buildings for school purposes ever erected in the city of Brooklyn in a single year.

One of these was for colored pupils, and took the place of an old building. Plans are now being made for the erection of *four* more school buildings, and *five* wings or additions to the present buildings.

The salaries of teachers for the primary classes range from \$300 (for first year), to \$482 per annum ; teachers of the grammar classes receive from \$487 to \$900 per annum ; heads of departments, \$930 per annum ; principals of branch schools, \$1,500 per annum ; principals of full grammar schools, \$2,700 per annum.

The cost of the public schools of Brooklyn was but \$16.07 for each pupil for the year 1882. This amount is based upon the average attendance, and is much lower than that of any other large city in the United States.

Free School-Book System.—On the first of January, 1884, the new *free book system* for the public schools of this city went into effect. Its operations will be watched with interest, not only by the residents of Brooklyn, but by the advocates of education generally throughout the Union. The Board of Estimate appropriated for the purpose \$75,000, the full amount asked for by the Board of Education. It is hoped that there will be eventually a great saving to the parents of scholars, which of course will be an advantage to the community at large. The majority of the books, it is calculated, will be returned after the scholars have got

through with them, to the schools from which they were received. They can then be utilized by other scholars without any additional expense either to parents or schools.

Asylums and Industrial Schools.—By the provisions of an act relative to the orphan asylums in the city, the Board takes under its care, for the purpose mentioned in the act, the following: *Brooklyn Orphan Asylum School*, Atlantic, near Brooklyn avenue; *R. C. Orphan Asylum School for Boys*, St. Marks, near Albany avenue; *R. C. Orphan Asylum School for Girls*, Willoughby, near Yates avenue; *Church Charity Foundation Orphanage School*, Herkimer street, near Albany avenue; *Howard Colored Orphan Asylum School*, Troy avenue, corner of Dean street; *E. D. Industrial School*, South Third, near Fifth street; *School of the Home for Destitute Children*, Butler street, near Flatbush avenue; *School for the German Orphan Home*, Graham, corner of Montrose avenue, and the *Industrial School of Sisters of Mercy*, Willoughby, corner of Classon avenue. These sustain the same relation to the Board of Education as the public schools of the city. Their pupils are taught the same number of hours, use the same kinds of books, are taught by approved teachers, receive a distributive share of the school money on the same basis, and are subject to similar supervision. It is with reference to the educational features of the asylums that the courts have decided that they are entitled to a share of the General School Fund of the State. In view of these decisions, and by complying with school law, and the rules and regulations of the Board for the government, instruction and support of the public schools of the city, the asylums receive a distributive share of the General School Fund.

The children connected with these institutions, receive instruction in the elements of reading, spelling, writing, arithmetic, and geography. Out of the school hours they are instructed in various arts by which habits of order and industry are promoted, and they are thus made to be helpful in the asylum. They also receive careful and regular moral religious instruction daily.

The present members and officers of the Board of Education and the standing and local committees, together with the numbers and locations of the schools and the principals in charge respectively, are given in the following list:—

Officers of the Board of Education, 1883-4.—Tunis G. Bergen, *Pres.*; Charles R. Doane, *Vice-Pres.*; Daniel W. Talmadge, *Sec.*; Thos. H. Wilson, *Ass't Sec.*; Calvin Patterson, *Supt. of Public Instruction*; John W. Bulkley, William H. Maxwell, *Associate Supts.*; Frederick D. Clark, Iles E. Byrnes, Ephraim J. Whitlock, Henry O. Dyer, *Clerks*; Jas. W. Naughton, *Supt. of Buildings*; Wm. F. Cunningham, *Engineer*; Joseph B. Jones, M. D., *Supt. of Attendance*; Dehart Bergen, John Thomson, Henry Schultz, John J. Glynn, William Fischer, Robt. J. Reynolds, *Attendance Agents*; Albert S. Caswell, *Director of Music*; David P. Horton, Francis K. Mitchell, Ellsworth C. Phelps, Carl Wagner, Linden L.

Parr, Alla M. Russell, James J. McCabe, Alice M. Judge, Edward E. Hand, *Music Teachers*; Peter Winter, Z. B. Sweeny, Julia A. Reid, Susan B. Orr, Catharine B. Snyder, Carrie W. Conklin, Mary A. Wood, Emma Jones, *Drawing Teachers*.

Members of the Board.—Tunis G. Bergen, Eugene D. Berri, Henry Bristow, Charles A. Buttrick, E. Dwight Church, John J. Clancy, Francis Dallon, Francis E. Dana, Charles R. Doane, Horace E. Dresser, Ernest W. Fischer, John Flynn, Robert B. Gardner, Horace Graves, John Griffin, Edgar E. Griffiths, Abijah Haviland, William Harkness, Robt. Henderson, Jr., Jos. C. Hendrix, Fred. W. Hinrichs, John Hope, Thos. F. Houghton, Charles A. Hull, Joseph Liebmman, Geo. W. Logan, J. Henry Martin, Geo. W. Mead, Eben Miller, John McNamee, George E. Moulton, William A. Nash, Louis E. Nicot, Robert Payne, Jas. L. Robinson, Edward Rowe, Wm. Cary Sanger, H. B. Scharmann, J. A. S. Simonson, Charles E. Teale, Robert Thomas, Hayden W. Wheeler, P. A. White, Chris. W. Wilson, Chas. F. Wrecks

Primary Schools.—No. 3 (branch of No. 17), North 1st, near 4th st.; Branch Principal, Evelina L. Petty. No. 4, 10th, near N. 2d st.; Principal, Sarah S. Hunt. Branch of No. 4, Classon, near Flushing ave.; Branch Principal, Alzina C. Richardson. Branch No. 13, Union, near Henry st.; Branch Principal, Caledonia V. Dix. Branch of No. 15, Schermerhorn st., near 3d ave.; Principal, the Principal of P. S. No. 15. Branch of No. 19, S. 4th, near 7th st.; Branch Principal, Elizabeth R. Duyckinck. Branch of No. 25, Walworth st., near Myrtle ave.; Branch Principal, Emily Henderson. Branch of No. 26, Bushwick ave., corner Ivy st.; Branch Principal, Minnie H. Ellis. Branch of No. 34, Leonard st., near Nassau ave.; Principal, Thomas D. Murphy.

Colored Schools.—No. 1, N. Elliott Place, near Park ave.; Principal, C. A. Dorsey. No. 2, Troy ave., near Bergen st.; Principal, J. Q. Allen. No. 3, Union ave., near S. 3d st.; Principal, Catharine T. Clow.

Attendance Schools.—No. 1, 93 Wyckoff st.; Principal, Martin J. Fitzgerald. No. 2, corner of 5th and S. 3d Sts.; Principal, Richard B. McKenna.

Grammar Schools.—Central Grammar School, Court, corner of Livingston st.; Principal, Robert F. Leighton. No. 1, Adams, corner of Concord st.; Principal, C. R. Abbott. No. 2, 46th street, near 3d ave.; Principal, J. Sands. No. 3, Bedford ave., corner of Jefferson st.; Principal, B. Y. Conklin. No. 4, Ryerson st., near Myrtle ave.; Principal, W. M. Jelliffe. No. 5, Duffield, corner of Johnson st.; Principal, John Gallagher. No. 6, Warren, near Smith st.; Principal, A. E. Ives, Jr. No. 7, York, near Bridge st.; Principal, C. P. Cunningham. No. 8, Middagh, near Henry st.; Principal, Esther A. Brooks. No. 9, Butler st., corner of Vanderbilt ave.; Principal, A. S. Higgins. No. 10, 7th ave., near 11th st.; Principal, P. Rouget. No. 11, Washington, near Greene ave.; Principal, L. F. Lewis. No. 12, Adelphi st., near Myrtle ave.; Principal, J. Cruikshank. No. 13, Degraw, near Hicks st.; Principal, Seth T. Stewart. No. 14, Navy, corner of Concord st.; Principal, B. Edson. No. 15, 3d ave., corner of State st.; Principal, T. Jacobson. No. 16, Wilson st., near Bedford ave.; Principal, L. Dunkley. No. 17, N. 5th, corner of 5th st.; Principal, Charles A. O'Reilly. No. 18, Maujer, near Ewen st.; Principal, E. Bush. No. 19, S. 2d, corner of 19th st.; Principal, E. G. Ward. No. 21, McKibben, near Ewen st.; Principal, Kate E. McWilliams. No. 22, Java st., near Union ave.; Principal, L. B. Hannaford. No. 23, Conselyea, near Smith st.; Principal, S. S. Martin. No. 24, corner of Wall and Beaver sts.; Principal, A. G. Merwin. No. 25, Lafayette, near Throop ave.; Principal, C. E. Tuthill. No. 26, Gates, near Ralph ave.; Principal, J. E. Ryan. No. 27, Nelson, near Hicks st.; Principal, M. A. Weed. No. 28, Herkimer st., near Ralph ave.; Principal, Ella Folger. No. 29, corner of Columbia and Amity sts.; Principal, Kate J. McCloskey. No. 30, Walcott, near Van Brunt street; Principal, Charles McLaughlin. No. 31, Dupont st., near Union ave.; Principal, M. F. Vallette. No. 32, Hoyt, corner of President st.; Principal, S. M. Sprole. No. 33, Heyward st., near Broadway; Principal, J. Priddy. No. 34, Norman ave., near Eckford st.; Principal, Frank R. Moore. No. 35, Lewis ave., corner of Decatur st.; Principal, W. A. Welsh. No. 36, Stagg st., near Bushwick ave.; Principal, Jacob S. Woodworth. No. 37, S. 4th, near 3d st.; Principal, Geo. L. A. Martin. No. 38, N. 7th, near 3d st.; Principal, N. Upham. No. 39, 6th ave., corner of 8th st.; Principal, Harriet N. Morris. No. 40, 16th st., near 4th ave.; Principal, Eliza Ford. No. 41, New York ave., corner of Dean st.; Principal, Mary C. Lawrence. No. 42, St. Mark's, near Classon ave.; Principal, Ellen M. Warren.

BANKING AND INSURANCE.

BANKS OF DEPOSIT, SAVINGS BANKS, AND TRUST COMPANIES. INSURANCE AND SAFE DEPOSIT COMPANIES.

BANKS AND TRUST COMPANIES.

BY THE EDITOR.

ON the 31st of January, 1824, William Furman, Esq., member of Assembly from Kings County, presented to the Legislature a petition for a charter for the *Long Island Bank*, to be located in the village of Brooklyn. On the 5th of February following, the standing committee on Banks and Insurance Companies, reported on the petition that, "having duly examined the merits of the application, and having learned from different sources that the incorporated part of the town of Brooklyn contains rising of 7,000 inhabitants; that the extensive commercial, manufacturing and mechanical business transacted there, render it fully capable of sustaining a bank, and being the third town in point of population in this State, and being destitute of an incorporation, either for banking or insurance," they had prepared and begged leave to introduce a bill for the incorporation of said bank. "At a large and respectable meeting of the citizens of the town of Brooklyn," continues the report, "it was declared, without a dissenting voice, that they need a bank. Such is the expression of the county, and it is presumed no one will doubt their ability to sustain it. Brooklyn is situated opposite New York, separated by a river nearly a mile in width. By far the largest number of the business men of Brooklyn, meriting and requiring temporary loans and a place of deposit, are wholly unknown to the banks of New York. To become so, requires an account with some bank, and frequent deposits, and an endorser in New York, which, in most cases, is impracticable and wholly inconvenient. Brooklyn is now the *third* town in the State, and the *sixteenth* in the United States, and it is fair to conclude that in less than five years it will be the *second*."

This able presentation of the claims of Brooklyn was not thrown away upon the Assembly, who passed the required act of incorporation on the 23d of March by a vote of ninety-one to twenty-two, it being the largest vote, considering the state of the House, that had been given to any bank incorporation bill during the season. The successful passage of the bill was largely due to the

energetic and persistent effort of Joseph Sprague, Esq., of Brooklyn, who spent some time in Albany, exerting his influence in behalf of legislation beneficial to his town. On the 1st of April following, the bill passed the Senate by a vote of twenty-six to four, and the same day received the Governor's sanction. The capital of the bank was to be \$300,000 in shares of \$50 each, and the institution was not to go into operation until twelve and a half per cent. of the capital was paid. Of the thirteen Directors, two-thirds were to be residents of Brooklyn. Should they refuse, at any time during regular bank hours, to redeem their notes in specie, the charter was to be forfeited. The following persons were named in the bill as Directors, viz.: Lefert Lefferts, Jehiel Jagger, John C. Freecke, John C. Vanderveer, Jordan Coles, Silas Butler, Fanning C. Tucker, Jacob Hicks, Henry Waring, Nehemiah Denton, Elkanah Doolittle, Thomas Everit, Jr., and George Little. At the first meeting of this board, April 6, 1824, Lefert Lefferts, Esq., was unanimously elected President of the bank, and a committee was appointed to attend to its concerns. Subscription books were opened on the 3d of May at the banking house, No. 5 Front street, and a surplus of about one million and a half was subscribed for. The capital stock, \$300,000; \$10 required to be paid on each share taken at the time of subscribing. On the 3d of August following, the notes of the bank were first put into circulation.

Gabriel Furman, Esq., subsequently speaking of the Long Island Bank, says: "An error will not be committed in saying that the growth and prosperity of Brooklyn have been largely promoted by this bank. It has been in fact, as its name imports, a *Long Island* bank, and has always been an institution prized and cherished by the inhabitants of the island counties. It has been invariably conducted with liberality, impartiality and integrity. It is well known that, during the various periods of financial pressure and embarrassments, its aid has always been uniformly and amply extended to the mechanics, manufacturers and trades-

men who compose the business population of Brooklyn, and it is the depository, to a large extent, of the funds of the farmers and others of the island. The petitioners for the renewal of its charter in January, 1839, earnestly request the same, and state that they would regard an omission to do so, and the consequent withdrawal of its means from the industry of the place, as a serious calamity to the city of Brooklyn, and as injurious to the business of the island generally. It is further noticeable that on the Queens County petition for its renewal were fifty-two names, viz.: Merchants, fourteen; farmers, thirteen; mechanics, twenty; Justices of the Peace, Town Clerks and attorneys, five."

Brooklyn Savings Bank.—Chapter 177 of the laws of 1827, passed April 7, enacts that *Robert Snow, Andrew Mercein, Robert Nichols* and their associates shall constitute a body corporate known as the *Brooklyn Savings Bank*, with perpetual succession, to "receive as deposits from tradesmen, mechanics, laborers, minors, servants and others, all sums of money offered for investment." The act further names the following managers: David Anderson, Robert Bache, James B. Clark, Andrew Demarest, Charles I. Doughty, Thomas Everitt, Jr., James Engle, Augustus Graham, Andrew Mercein, Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, Peter W. Radcliff, Eliakim Raymond, Robert Snow, Joshua Sands, Clarence D. Sackett, Jeffrey Smith, Alden Spooner, Fanning C. Tucker, Adam Tredwell, Peter Turner, Abraham Vanderveer, Losee Van Nostrand, Adrian Van Sinderin, Henry Waring and Richard Wells.

The first officers were: Adrian Van Sinderin, *President*; Hezekiah B. Pierrepont and Adam Tredwell, *Vice-Presidents*; Abraham Vanderveer, *Treasurer*; James S. Clark, *Secretary*; Robert Nichols, *Accountant*, all of whom served without compensation. The first place of business was in the basement of the Apprentices' Library, where the books were opened.

The first depositor in this, the oldest savings bank in Brooklyn, was John Bigelow, a bookbinder, who intrusted the institution with five dollars.

The business transacted by the bank in the early years was large in proportion to the volume of trade in those days; the conservative policy of the managers inspired confidence, and the number of depositors has steadily increased, until at present it reaches 50,000.

In 1847, the corporation erected a fine brown-stone building, fifty by one hundred and ten feet, on the corner of Fulton and Concord streets. Its exterior, in the Grecian style of architecture, is chaste and elegant, while the interior decorations and fittings are equally handsome. Mr. Van Sinderin was succeeded in the presidency by Mr. David Stanford, and he in 1847 by Mr. Hosea Webster, who occupied the position until his death, June 1, 1883, aged 93 years. When he assumed the management of the bank, the deposits amounted to \$191,000, with a surplus of \$8,000. At

his death, the deposits were over \$20,000,000, and a surplus of nearly \$4,000,000. After Mr. Webster's death, Mr. Henry P. Morgan, who had been acting President for a number of years, was elected to the Presidency, which office he still retains. The *Vice-Presidents* are Edward D. White and Edmund W. Corlies; *Cashier*, John A. Latimer; *Comptroller*, Felix E. Flandreau.

The *Atlantic State Bank* is the successor of the Atlantic Bank, which last-named institution was chartered May 10, 1836, to continue thirty years, with a capital stock of \$500,000 in \$50 shares. John Lawrence, Stephen Haynes, William Hunter, Jr., Richard Cornwell and Nathan B. Morse, of Kings County, Henry T. Haynes of Queens, and Gilbert Carll of Suffolk, were named in the act of incorporation as Commissioners to receive subscriptions and distribute stock. Hon. Jonathan Trotter was the first *President* and John S. Doughty, *Cashier*. A brick building, with granite basement and trimmings, was erected in 1836, at 49 Fulton street, which the Atlantic State Bank now occupies. Mr. Trotter was succeeded as President by John Schenck, and he by Daniel Embury. The Atlantic Bank was changed September 15, 1865, to the Atlantic National Bank, and continued as such until December, 1872, when its affairs were closed up, and it was succeeded by the *Atlantic State Bank*, with a capital of \$200,000 newly subscribed. The articles of association named the first directors as follows, viz.: Seymour L. Husted, P. C. Cornell, H. K. Sheldon, Wm. Hunter, Jr., George I. Seney, W. B. Leonard, Henry C. Murphy, John A. Lott, Cyrus P. Smith, George S. Puffer, John French, George W. Bergen and John C. Whitney. Its officers for 1883-4 are Mr. Geo. S. Puffer, *President*, and O. M. Denton, *Cashier*.

The *Bank of Williamsburgh*, organized February 9th, 1839, soon existed only in the records of its organization, though its charter was to continue until 1940. "This bank charter," says a legal friend, "was a curiosity in its way. The capital stock was to be \$100,000, with power to increase it to \$500,000. All its powers were irrevocably vested in its Board of Directors, the first being named as follows, viz.: Nicholas Haight, William Powers, John S. McKibbin, John Morrell and Lemuel Richardson. The Directors were each to hold twenty or more shares, to have authority to determine what number shall be a quorum to transact business, to make by-laws, etc. The stock was to be invested one half in bonds and mortgages, and the other in the public debt of the United States, or in the stock of any incorporated bank or insurance company in New York State. No director or shareholder was to be liable, in his individual capacity, for any contract, debt or engagement of the said association."

"It will readily be seen how a few speculators could manipulate such a concern, without a cash basis, and without liability. Real estate mortgages could be as-

signed at their face when really worth much less, and the stock of weak or bogus banks or insurance companies would answer the charter's requirements. The bank went begging for some months for a monied president with ready cash to start the machinery. Lemuel Richardson, worthiest among the second founders of Williamsburgh, and the only person among them who (by reason of his modesty in his aspiration for public honors) had escaped bankruptcy, also escaped the snare of this presidency; and, in consequence, enjoyed a worldly competence for the remainder of his days. Whether the bank ever found a president or not we are not informed; but its banking house was established at the corner of First and Grand streets, and a large gilt sign, lettered 'Bank of Williamsburgh' was displayed for a few days, and then disappeared. Plates for bills were engraved, a few notes were printed, and it is even said that *one* was signed, but *quien sabe?* It is one of the mysteries of our history."

The South Brooklyn Savings Bank.—In the early part of 1850, a circular was sent to prominent citizens in the southern part of the city, inviting them to a conference for the purpose of forming a bank for savings in South Brooklyn. An organization was perfected, a charter obtained from the Legislature April 10, 1850, naming the following gentlemen, and their successors, a body corporate, viz.: David B. Baylis, Ira Smith, Gassaway B. Lamar, Nicholas Luqueer, Edward Dunham, Isaac H. Storms, William Spencer, John D. Cocks, James W. Pinckney, George A. Jarvis, Edmund Fish, Peter R. Anderson, John C. Riker, Francis B. Stryker, Tunis G. Bergen, George Fletcher, Richard Whipple, Edward A. Lambert, Jno. W. Taylor, Arthur W. Benson, J. S. T. Stranahan, Rollin Sanford, William Powers, John Skillman, John C. Smith, Anthony F. Ostrom. The first board of officers chosen was as follows: Ira Smith, *President*; David B. Baylis, *First Vice-President*; William Spencer, *Second Vice-President*; George W. Ward, *Secretary*; James Robinson, *Teller*; John M. Taylor, *Counsel*.

The institution opened for business June 1st, 1850, at 186 Atlantic street. About four years later it was removed to the Athenæum building; and, soon after, the ground on the opposite corner of Clinton and Atlantic streets was purchased, and an imposing marble building erected, 40 by 90 feet, the finest in the city.

The first depositors with the bank were the Misses Julia, Anna and Catherine Taylor, daughters of John M. Taylor, of 71 State street, who left \$50 each as soon as the doors were opened for business, June 1st, 1850. The oldest account now standing open on the books is No. 9, that of Amasa Wright Sanford.

The board of officers for 1883-4 is as follows: Joseph W. Greene, *President*; Geo. A. Jarvis, *First Vice-President*; J. S. T. Stranahan, *Second Vice-President*; Czar Dunning, *Secretary*; David B. Baylis, *Comptroller*; F. H. Trowbridge, *Assistant Secretary*.

National City Bank.—This financial institution was organized November 16th, 1850, as the *City Bank of Brooklyn*. It began operations at No. 126 Atlantic Avenue, with a capital stock of \$300,000, and with the following officers and directors: John Skillman, *President*; Isaac Otis, *Vice-President*; R. P. Perrin, *Cashier*.

Directors.—John Skillman, James Van Nostrand, Gassaway B. Lamar, John D. Cocks, John Greenwood, William Spencer, Dennis Perkins, Isaac Otis, Charles Stanton, James S. T. Stranahan, John N. Taylor, William B. Kitching, Charles Christmas, Henry Boerum, Czar Dunning. In 1862 the bank was removed to 357 Fulton street, where it has since been located. In 1864, when the National Banking Act went into effect, this institution was one of the first to comply with its regulations and issue the national currency. Its present officers are as follows: John J. Studwell, *President*; William M. Thomas, *Vice-President*; A. A. Rowe, *Cashier*.

Williamsburgh Savings Bank.—The need of an institution to receive deposits for investment led to the formation of the Williamsburgh Savings Bank, which was incorporated April 9, 1851. The original Board of Trustees comprised the following named gentlemen, viz.: Timothy Coffin, George Ricard, William Wall, Edmund Driggs, John B. Wells, Jonathan I. Burr,



WILLIAMSBURGH SAVINGS BANK.

Henry P. Freeman, Nathaniel Briggs, John S. Trott, Jr., Richard Lake, Henry Oltmans, Gerhardus L. Demorest, Richard Ten Eyck, Chas. W. Houghton, Isaac Henderson, Samuel M. Meeker, Downing W. Graves and William McCutchen.

The first Board of Officers elected April 27th, 1851, was: Wm. Wall, *President*; George Ricard, *First*

Vice-President; Nathaniel Briggs, *Second Vice-President*; Isaac Henderson, *Secretary*.

The bank opened for business in the basement of the Universalist Church, corner of Fourth and South Third streets, on the ninth of June, 1851. The first depositor was Richard C. De Mott, who gave his age as 33, and his business that of clerk. He entrusted twenty dollars, all in silver, to the institution. There were forty-two deposits made on the first day, amounting to \$1,882. The bank prospered, and soon was enabled to remove to a fine building on the opposite side of the street. In years the surplus warranted the erection of a still finer building on Broadway, at Fifth street, which is probably the handsomest banking house in the United States. Its granite exterior is massive and imposing, and is surmounted by a great dome. Within, the materials and workmanship are of the very best. The cost of the structure was \$540,000. The first depositor, when the new bank was opened for business, June 1, 1875, was Henry H. Hall, aged one year, son of Henry Hall, Esq., and the amount was \$25. The trustees and officers for 1883-4 are as follows:

Trustees.—Jonathan S. Burr, Edmund Driggs, Henry Oltmans, Samuel M. Meeker, Franklin Whiting, Joseph H. Adams, Horace M. Warren, William E. Horwill, Lucius N. Palmer, C. William Cooper, Ezra B. Tuttle, William Lamb, Jeremiah V. Meserole, Mitchell N. Packard, Abram Cooke.

Officers.—Samuel M. Meeker, *President*; Jonathan S. Burr, Franklin Whiting, *Vice-Presidents*; William E. Horwill, *Secretary*; John Broach, *Cashier*; Oliver P. Miller, *Assistant Cashier*; S. M. & D. E. Meeker, *Counsel*.

The Farmers' and Citizens' Bank of Long Island, now extinct, had an eventful history. Originally started some six months after the Williamsburg City Bank, and, as a rival to the latter, its charter bore date June 21, 1852, and its capital was \$200,000. It was located on the northwest corner of Broadway and First street. Charles W. Houghton was the first President, followed successively by S. W. Lowere and Griffin W. Griffith. The cashier was O. M. Beach, a man of some experience in banking. The bank loaned some \$90,000 to the Long Island Navigation Company, and lost it. In the embarrassment that followed, the corporation undertook to liquidate by assignment to the Williamsburg City Bank, but the proceedings were set aside, and O. M. Beach was elected President. An assignment was then made to Fred. A. Platt; an attempt was made to retain the charter; but, through expensive mismanagement and litigation, the effort was vain, and its affairs were wound up in 1868, even then depositors receiving 95 per cent. of their deposits. Under the Platt receivership, the question arose whether a person owing to the Bank notes not yet matured could set off deposits to his credit in the Bank at the time of its failure, in liquidation of the notes. The

Special Term decided in the negative, but the General Term reversed the decision. Compromise and settlement prevented further litigation on this point.

The Manufacturers' National Bank of New York was organized Feb. 4, 1853, by some of the business men of the Fourteenth Ward, for their accommodation; and opened for business April 19, 1853, at No. 18 Grand street, under the name of the *Mechanics' Bank of Brooklyn*, with a capital stock of \$250,000. Ex-Mayor Martin Kalbfleisch was its first President, and was afterwards succeeded by Grahams Polley, James D. Sparkman, Charles H. Fellows, George Mahon and John M. Furman. The original board of directors contained Andrew B. Hodges, Aaron C. Underhill, Martin Kalbfleisch, John Debevoise, Edwin A. Johnson, Mills P. Baker, Grahams Polley and Minor H. Keith. In 1865, by act of Legislature, the bank was removed to New York, at the instance of Mr. Sparkman, who was then president; and was reorganized as a National Bank, under its present title, the *Manufacturers' National Bank of New York*. It was first located at the corner of Front and Pine streets, and afterwards in Brown Bros'. building, on Wall street. Business failures in 1867 caused the bank to pay off its depositors, and return to its former location at 64 Broadway, Brooklyn, having procured an act of Congress for its removal. Its present capital is \$252,000. The present officers are John M. Furman, *President*; John Loughran, *Vice-President*; T. C. Disbrow, *Cashier*; James T. Fountain, *Assistant Cashier*.

The Brooklyn Bank was reorganized in 1859, with a capital stock of \$300,000, and the following directors: John Blunt, Sidney Cornell, R. B. Duyckinck, John Laidlaw, John Sneden, E. D. White, P. S. Henderson, Thomas Messenger, H. P. Morgan, Daniel A. Robbins, James How, G. A. Thorn, and Thomas Clark. The first *President* was Thomas Messenger, with E. D. White, *Vice-President*, and Henry E. Henderson, *Cashier*. It occupies a two-story, iron-front building, at the corner of Fulton and Front streets, in the oldest business centre in the city. Its officers for 1883-4 are as follows: Elias Lewis, Jr., *President*, and H. E. Hutchinson, *Cashier*.

Nassau National Bank.—The charter of the Nassau Bank bears date February 1st, 1859. Its capital stock was \$300,000; its location at No. 8 Court street, in the building owned by A. A. Low. I. H. Frothingham was the first President, and Crawford C. Smith the first Cashier. The board of directors was as follows: Wm. H. Cary, E. H. R. Lyman, John T. Martin, John Dimon, A. M. White, I. H. Frothingham, Moses F. Odell. The institution was made a National Bank, December 1, 1864. The officers for 1883-84 are as follows: Crawford C. Smith, *President*; Edgar T. Jones, *Cashier*.

The Kings County Savings Institution was chartered April 10, 1860. The act recites that William

Marshall, William A. Cobb, John Loughran, John M. Furman, Jonathan H. Stanton, Andrew B. Hodges, Fred. Scholes, Henry E. Ripley, Thomas C. Moore, Thomas W. Field, Charles H. Fellows, George C. Bennett, Jacob Zimmer, John Schneider, George B. Magrath, Jeremiah Johnson, Jr., and their successors, shall be a body corporate under the above title. Business was carried on for the first seven years in the east part of Washington Hall, when a lot was bought on the corner of Broadway and Fourth street, and a fine building, of freestone, 45 feet front, and 82 in depth, was erected at a cost of \$100,000. The first board



KINGS COUNTY SAVINGS INSTITUTION.

of directors was composed as follows, viz.: Thomas C. Moore, James Hall, Jacob Zimmer, James S. Bearns, Andrew B. Hodges, Wm. A. Cobb, John Loughran, George B. Magrath, George C. Bennett, Peter Murray, Henry M. Bearns, Henry E. Ripley, Fred. Scholes, Charles Schneider, Wm. Christal, and John T. Williams. The first officers were Thomas C. Moore, *President*; James S. Bearns, *Secretary*. The officers for 1883-4 are as follows: James S. Bearns, *President*; George L. Fox, *First Vice-President*; Geo. C. Bennett, *Second Vice-President*; Richard G. Godman, *Secretary*; Jacob Hentz, *Cashier*.

The Dime Savings Bank of Williamsburg.—This institution began operations June 1st, 1864, in the basement of the First National Bank Building, at the foot of Broadway. A few years later it removed to the north side of Broadway, at Nos. 3 and 5, where it remained until April 29, 1873, when it removed to its own building, of handsome stone, at Broadway and Second street. Its first trustees were Messrs. Geo. B. Smith, Jas. Boughton, Wm. Marshall, Silas W. Brainard, Peter M. Dingee, Wm. M. Raymond, Jos. R. Thomas, Geo. Nichols, Jas. Forster, Edward Burcham, Isaac Bamber, Fred. Nishwitz, Adam Craig, John R. Jurgens, Solomon L. Hull, Adolphus E. Jacobson, Henry Hannon, Robert Butcher, Sigismund Kauf-

mann. The first officers were Wm. W. Armfield, *President*; Geo. W. Kelsey and C. E. Bertrand, *Vice-Presidents*; Wm. Grandy, *Secretary*. The officers for 1884 are Geo. W. Kelsey, *President*; Gilson I. Totten, James Boughton, *Vice-Presidents*; William Grandy, *Secretary*.

The German Savings Bank was chartered April 20, 1866, and organized on the 30th of the following June. It was intended more especially for the accommodation of the Germans, who as a class are noted for thrifty habits. Its first place of business was at 92 Montrose avenue. The original officers were Jacob Rosengarden, *President*; John Raber and F. W. Kalbfleisch, *Vice-Presidents*, and Geo. S. Bishop, *Cashier*; the first board of trustees comprised the following: Joseph Wilde, Geo. H. Fisher, Thomas Cotrell, Wm. Broistedt, John Wills, John Raber, J. A. G. Comstock, Francis Swift, Geo. Distler, Carl Wittmann, Frederick Fries, Edward Roehr, L. Zechiel, Jacob Fint, F. W. Kalbfleisch, Edward H. Jones, J. Rosengarden, Herman Thieme, J. Wygand, J. J. Hallenbeck. The bank soon outgrew its old quarters, and a fine brick building, with free-stone trimmings, was erected on the corner of Broadway and Boerum street; the main room is large, handsomely finished, and lighted by seven immense plate glass windows. The new building was occupied on Sept. 17, 1875. The bank's successive presidents since Jacob Rosengarden have been John Raber, William Dick, and the present incumbent, Charles Naehrer. For 1883-4, John Wills and William Dick are *Vice-Presidents*, George S. Bishop, *Cashier*, and Geo. H. Fisher, *Counsel*. The deposits are \$1,500,000, securely invested, in accordance with the stringent laws of New York State.

The Germania Savings Bank.—An act of incorporation, passed April 19, 1867, begins thus:

SECTION 1. Eduard Unkart, Hermann Ackermann, John G. A. Vagt, Theodore Happel, Richard Forstmann, Oscar Strasburger, Carl C. Recknagel, W. G. Taaks, F. A. Schroeder, D. Westfall, U. Palmedo, August Siburg, Friedr. Hitzelberger, John Ruck, Wm. D. Veeder, Aug. Kurth, Richard Barthelmeß, Geo. Tiemann, J. Von Auw, F. A. Stoblmann, J. E. Stohlmann, J. K. Limburger, Emil Magnus, S. Zollinger, P. W. Weitzel, Henry Schütte, Theodore Jünke, S. W. Boden, C. G. Giebel, Martin von Hagen, Francis Kayser, and associates, and their successors, shall be and they are hereby constituted a body corporate and politic, by the name of "Germania Savings Bank, Kings County," and by that name shall have perpetual succession, and may sue and be sued in any courts of this State.

Frederick A. Schroeder was the first President, and has continued to fill the position since. The bank opened for business at 375 and 377 Fulton street, on City Hall Square. The Board of officers for 1883-4 is here given, viz.: Frederick A. Schroeder, *President*; Charles Garlichs, *First Vice-President*; Ludwig Semler, *Second Vice-President*; Julius Lehrenkrauss, *Treasurer*; Herman Geiling, *Secretary*; F. Koch,

Cashier: Counsel, William D. Veeder; *Trustees*, E. W. Fischer, Charles Garlichs, Augustus Kurth, R. Lauer, Julius Lehrenkrauss, Herman Lins, H. C. Mangels, Dr. H. J. Menninger, E. Muldener, J. W. Rasch, P. H. Repenhagen, H. E. Sackmann, Fred'k A. Schroeder, Ludwig Semler, William D. Veeder, Otto Witte, G. A. Jahn.

The Greenpoint Savings Bank.—This institution, the oldest in Greenpoint, was incorporated in 1868, largely through the efforts of Messrs. A. K. Meserole, T. F. Rowland, T. C. Smith, and T. D. Jones; it commenced business January 11, 1869, at number 94 Franklin street. Its first Board of Officers was as follows: A. K. Meserole, *President*; W. M. Meserole, N. P. Bailey, *Vice-Presidents*; Robert J. Whittemore, *Secretary*. The trustees were: A. K. Meserole, Nezhiah Bliss, W. M. Meserole, A. M. Bliss, D. D. Boyce, Geo. S. Barton, C. Von Bergen, N. S. Bailey, S. S. Free, Carl Feitzinger, A. J. Hennion, T. D. Jones, P. C. Ingersoll, C. H. Koch, J. Moore, A. Metz, C. Olandt, W. H. Peer, T. F. Rowland, F. S. Street, G. H. Stone, T. C. Smith, E. F. Williams, G. W. Watts, J. W. Valentine. The first depositor was the President, A. K. Meserole, who placed \$100 in care of the bank. The line of deposits has steadily increased, until, at the close of 1883, the aggregate is \$1,250,000, left by 5,500 depositors. The first President was succeeded, in 1870, by Wm. M. Meserole, who died in 1873; E. F. Williams was elected in his place, but resigned in 1880, and was followed by Timothy Perry, the present incumbent. The other officers for 1883-4 are: H. E. Talmage and E. A. Walker, *Vice-Presidents*, and Robert J. Whittemore, *Secretary*.

Commercial Bank.—In 1868, the business men of the eastern part of Brooklyn felt the need of a bank in that locality. Prominent among the movers to establish such an institution were: Thomas D. Hudson, James Binns, Job Johnson, Hermon Phillips, Alexander Underhill, Rufus Resseguie, George Wilson, George Kelsey, Giles P. Glass, William Boger, Joseph Butler, E. B. Cooper, John Ward. An organization was perfected, and a charter obtained July 13, 1868, for a bank to be known as the *Commercial*, and the above-named gentlemen were chosen to be the first directors, with Thomas D. Hudson, *President*, Giles P. Glass, *Vice-President*, and John J. Vail, *Cashier*.

The capital stock was \$180,000; the banking house was located at the corner of Bedford and Myrtle Avenues. After a few years, owing to business changes, the bank was removed, May 20, 1874, to 16 and 18 Court Street, and again May 11, 1876, to its present location, No. 363 Fulton. Its capital is now \$108,000, and its directors and officers for 1883, as follows: *Directors*: Thomas D. Hudson, D. W. Binns, Job Johnson, Rufus Resseguie, James Lock, George Wilson, Seth L. Keeney, William Boger, Hermon Phillips, Robinson Gill, George Malcom, Elbert Sne-

deker, Benjamin Linikin. Thomas D. Hudson, *President*; J. J. Vail, *Cashier*.

The East Brooklyn Savings Bank is largely due to the efforts of Samuel C. Barnes, Esq., an old resident of the Wallabout; he was a public school teacher from 1835 till 1869. He interested others in providing a place of deposit where the working classes might invest their earnings, and be encouraged in thrift and economy. Accordingly, the East Brooklyn Bank was incorporated April 17th, 1860, and opened for business the following year, on Myrtle avenue, near Franklin. The first President, Stephen Crowell, served from 1861 to 1879, when Hon. Darwin R. James succeeded, and still retains the office. Samuel C. Barnes was the first treasurer, serving from 1861 till his death in 1873, at which time his son Eugene F. Barnes, Esq., was elected to the position, which he still retains. The first directors were as follows: William A. Brush, John Clark, James W. Hutchens, Hosea O. Pearce, Edward T. Backhouse, Joseph Oliver, James E. Phelps, John M. Phelps, James M. Green, James Lock, Stephen Crowell, Richard Olmstead, Edwin H. Mead, Elisha S. Young, Samuel C. Barnes, Henry Tinken, Thomas D. Hudson. The first depositor was Samuel C. Barnes, who showed his faith by his works, and left \$500 with the new institution.

The bank has a fine brick building at the corner of Myrtle and Franklin avenues. The officers and trustees for 1883-4 are as follows: Darwin R. James, *President*; Thomas D. Hudson and Hosea O. Pearce, *Vice-Presidents*; Alexander Hutchins, *Secretary*; Eugene F. Barnes, *Treasurer*. *Trustees*: Darwin R. James, Hosea O. Pearce, James Lock, Robert Porterfield, P. F. O'Brien, Jno N. Loughi, E. J. Jennings, Thomas D. Hudson, Daniel A. Eldridge, Wm. Charters, Alexander Hutchins, Charles A. Peck, Thomas J. Atkins, George J. Collins, Lester W. Beasley, and R. J. Owens.

The Fulton Bank of Brooklyn.—This bank started January 1st, 1870, at the corner of Fulton and Oxford streets, with a capital stock of \$200,000, but within a year, moved down to its present location at 361 Fulton street. The first officers were Alexander G. Johns, *President*; and John A. Nexsen, *Cashier*; the *Directors* were Julian Allen, James Carey, John E. Eitel, Edward Hawey, Alexander G. Johns, Thomas Kinsella, Daniel McCabe, Jos. J. O'Donohue, Stephen M. Reeve, John Wilson, and Stewart L. Woodford.

In December 1876, John Williams was chosen *President*; Wm. H. Hazzard, *Vice-President*, and John A. Nexsen was continued at the cashier's desk.

These officers and the following directors have been reelected annually since 1876. *Directors*: John Williams, Wm. H. Hazzard, John N. Eitel, Thomas McCann, William Mumford, William Howard, William I. Preston, Foster Pettit, Abner C. Keeney, David S. Arnott, William H. H. Childs.



John Williams

JOHN WILLIAMS, President of the Fulton Bank of Brooklyn, was born in North Hempstead, Queens County, New York, September 29th, 1818. His ancestry on his father's side were of Quaker stock. His father, grandfather, and great-grandfather were all born in Queens County, N. Y., and all were farmers.

Mr. Williams remained on his father's farm until he was seventeen years of age, and received a common district school education. He then went to Brooklyn, and engaged as a clerk in the grocery store of Allen Lippincott, where he remained four years, during which he saved a few hundred dollars, and, by his honesty, enterprise and patient industry, established a credit which enabled him to embark in trade on his own account in the same line. His venture was a success from the start; and, with an interruption of only two years, he continued in business until 1862.

In 1862, he was appointed United States Assessor for the Second Congressional District of Brooklyn and Kings County by President Lincoln, and enjoys the distinction of having been the first United States Assessor appointed. He held the office to the great satisfaction of all classes for six years and ten months; during which period, with the aid of fifteen assistant assessors and four clerks, he assessed in his district \$15,000,000 in taxes, which was collected.

In 1851, Mr. Williams was elected Alderman of the Tenth Ward of the city of Brooklyn for two years. He has filled several other public positions, among them that of Supervisor of the Tenth Ward for two years, and was for twelve years a member of the Brooklyn Board of Education. As a Republican, he has long been prominent and influential.

By his connection with various prominent enterprises, Mr. Williams has long been one of the best known men in Brooklyn in financial and commercial circles. From 1869 to 1881, he was a Director of the National City Bank of Brooklyn, and for the past seven years he has been President of the Fulton Bank of Brooklyn. He is now a Director of the Montauk and Lafayette Fire Insurance Companies, and of the Coney Island and Brooklyn Horse Railroad Company, a Trustee of the Brooklyn Athenæum and Reading Room, and for the past ten years has been President of the Metropolitan Gas Light Company.

Mr. Williams is one of the most conspicuous examples of the self-made men of our times, and a detailed account of his career from a poor boy to his present high position, socially and commercially, would be reading both entertaining and instructive to the rising generation. His sympathy is ever with those who, as he did, are struggling manfully against many difficulties along the road to fortune. He is liberal in his contributions to all worthy objects, and is universally regarded as one of the most useful men of the Brooklyn of to-day. He owned a pew in the South Brooklyn Presbyterian Church, and for twenty-eight years sat under the ministry of Rev. Dr. Samuel T. Spear, its honored pastor. He now attends the Second Presbyterian Church of Brooklyn, of which Rev. Dr. Van Dyke is pastor, and of the Board of Trustees of which Mr. Williams is President.

The Bushwick Savings Bank.—This institution, now located at 466 Grand street, was organized June 16, 1873, and opened for business at 823 Broadway, where it remained until 1878.

The business of the bank has kept increasing until its resources amount to more than \$200,000. The officers and trustees for 1883 and 84 are as follows: Joseph Liebmann, *President*; Peter Wyckoff, *1st Vice-President*;

Moses May, *2d Vice-President*; C. D. Burrows, Jr., *Secretary*; John Davies, *Cashier*; W. A. Schmitthenner, *Ass't Cashier*; Rufus L. Scott, *Counsel*. *Trustees*: Joseph Liebmann, A. M. Suydam, Fred'k Herr, John L. Nostrand, Rufus L. Scott, E. E. Bunce, W. A. Schmitthenner, Henry Loewenstein, M. D., Moses May, Peter Wickoff, John G. Jenkins, Geo. H. Smith, M. D., R. G. Phelps, Otto Huber, Chester D. Burrows, Jr., Charles H. Reynolds, Daniel Canty, Luman Ray, John Davies, A. C. Hallam, M. D.

The Mechanics' Bank was chartered August 5th, 1852, and opened for business five days later, at No. 9 Court street. The first Board of Directors was as follows: Wm. F. Bulkley, Conklin Brush, John J. Stedwell, Daniel Chauncey, S. W. Slocum, Abraham B. Baylis, Loomis Ballard, G. B. Lamar, Stephen Haynes, Jos. C. Johnson, Samuel Sloan, Isaac Carhart, George W. Bergen. The first *President* was Hon. Conklin Brush; he was succeeded June 1st, 1869, by Daniel Chauncey, and he by the present incumbent, Geo. W. White, February 1st, 1883. The first *Cashier* was Alvah S. Mulford, who held the position until May 1st, 1857, when Geo. W. White was chosen, and remained until his election to the presidency, when George McMillan was chosen *Cashier*.

DANIEL CHAUNCEY was the second of three brothers, who came to Brooklyn about forty years ago, and who were always regarded, and justly so, as being among the most active and useful of the representative citizens of Brooklyn. They all began life in their father's calling, that of a builder, and in it they added much to the material wealth of the city. Nearly a quarter of a century ago Daniel Chauncey was one of the founders of the *Mercantile Insurance Company*, of which he was elected President; and, shortly afterward, he succeeded ex-Mayor Brush as President of the *Mechanics' Bank*, serving it as such for nearly a quarter of a century. As President of the Bank, Mr. Chauncey was always willing to lend a helping hand to any of its customers whom he deemed trustworthy, and many of the business men of Brooklyn who are in good circumstances to-day can trace their prosperity to the accommodation extended to them in the hour of their need by Daniel Chauncey. In politics a Democrat, through good report and evil report, in the storm and in the sunshine, he stood by his party, giving to it the aid of his influence, and also liberal pecuniary assistance. He, however, never sought, and would not accept office. In every relation of life he was one of that class of men to whom their fellows instinctively turn in an emergency. He could always be relied on. Of his strict honor and his dislike of anything that bore even the appearance of indirectness, his action in regard to the affairs of the Trust Company furnishes a good example. When that institution got into trouble, a full investigation was demanded by Mr. Chauncey, and so persistent was he on that point that he threatened, in case of refusal, to apply to the courts for an order that would have compelled an investigation. Upon the death of the President of the Trust Company, Mr. Chauncey was made receiver, and devoted his whole time to unraveling its affairs. As receiver he was entitled to receive nearly \$30,000 in fees; he refused to take any compensation for his labor, but turned that large

sum over for the benefit of the stockholders. He died suddenly, at the Bank, January 28th, 1883; he left a grown up family of two daughters and three sons, who are already numbered among the active and influential citizens of Brooklyn.

The First National Bank was organized in the Winter of 1851-2, and commenced business April 13th, 1852, at the Williamsburg City Bank. Its original incorporators were Noah Waterbury, James M. Waterbury, Nathaniel Briggs, Levi W. Ufford, Abraham Vandervoort, Minor H. Keith, Samuel Sneden, Jabez Williams, William Wall, Richard Bury, Daniel Maujer, John J. Van Alst, James D. Sparkman and S. M. Meeker. The capital, originally \$200,000, was increased to \$500,000, and in 1857, reduced to \$300,000, at which figure it remains. Noah Waterbury was the first *President*, and resigned in January, 1861. He was succeeded by Nicholas Wyckoff, who held the office until his death in June, 1883, when the present incumbent, John G. Jenkins was appointed. George Field was *Cashier* from 1852 until 1866. George D. Betts now holds the position. July 1st, 1865, the bank was changed to the First National Bank of Brooklyn, under the Banking Act. It has for a number of years been located at the foot of Broadway in a handsome brick building, that has recently been enlarged and improved.

Its present Board of Directors is as follows: John W. Furman, Wm. Marshall, Eckford Webb, Edwin Beers, George F. Kitching, Moses May, J. M. Waterbury, E. Frank Coe and John G. Jenkins.

The Mechanics' and Traders' Bank at Greenpoint avenue and Franklin street, was organized in 1867, with a capital of \$100,000. It has been of service to the 17th Ward of Brooklyn, as a matter of convenience to the people in supplying the demands of business, and increasing the trade of that part of the city. Archibald K. Meserole has been its *President* since 1870; Timothy Perry, *Vice-President*, and H. J. Olding, jr., *Cashier* since 1871.

The Dime Savings Bank was chartered April 12th, 1859, and commenced business June 1st, 1859, in a small room on Montague street, and soon moved to *Hamilton Buildings*, and thence to the Halsey Building in 1865, and expect to remove to the new building, during the Summer of 1884. The first Board of Directors was as follows: C. P. Smith, D. Embury, H. Dollner, J. O. Low, M. S. Beach, I. H. Frothingham, E. Walter, M. F. Odell, Geo. Hall, W. W. Edwards, T. H. Sandford, H. Rowland, A. Trask, J. A. Cross, D. Farley, W. Ellsworth, S. S. Powell, P. O'Hara, R. Field, E. W. Fiske, J. Halsey, S. H. Stirling, A. Koop, C. J. Lowrey, C. Brush, I. Carhart, J. H. Baker, J. H. Sackman, D. Chauncey, S. Haynes, and A. H. Osborn.

The following were the first officers: John A. Cross, *President*, W. W. Edwards, *Secretary*. After a few

years the bank was removed to the Halsey Building, 367-9 Fulton street. For some time the directors had been looking for an eligible site for a new building, and in 1882 purchased the Hooley Opera House, on the corner of Court and Remsen streets, which was torn down, and October, 13th, 1883, the corner stone of the new building was laid. The structure occupies two lots, 25 by 100 feet each; is 76 feet high, and fireproof in every respect. The material is richly ornamented free-stone, and the facade shows two stories surmounted by a massive cornice. The banking room on the first floor is 30 feet high, with tiled floor, paneled ceiling, and mahogany woodwork and furniture. The cost of site and building was \$250,000. M. Thomas was the architect. The bank has about 40,000 depositors, with about 12 millions of deposits, and a large surplus.

Present officers: Seymour L. Husted, *President*; Harold Dollner and A. J. Beekman, *Vice-Presidents*; John W. Hunter, *Treasurer*; B. H. Huntington *Secretary*. *Trustees*: Seymour L. Husted, Harold Dollner, Henry Rowland, Alanson Trask, Edward Merritt, John W. Hunter, A. J. Beekman, Alfred S. Barnes, Walter T. Hatch, George W. Bergen, Crawford C. Smith, J. Pierpont Lord, Edwin Beers, A. H. W. Van Sichen, John L. Marcellus, Benj. S. Huntington, Charles Pratt, James Hall, Charles M. Field, Jeremiah P. Robinson, James E. Dean, James H. Armington, Gardiner S. Hutchinson.

ABRAHAM J. BEEKMAN, son of John A. and Joanna (Nevins) Beekman, was born at Griggstown, Somerset County, New Jersey, September 8th, 1810. He received a common school education in his native place.

At the age of twelve years he removed to New York with his father, and was placed as a clerk in the dry goods business, which he followed, as clerk and proprietor, for thirty years, the last twelve years of his clerkship having been passed in the service of the well-known firm of Halstead, Haines & Co., after which he was for seven years a member of the firm of Vincent, Beekman & Titus. In the winter of 1851 and 1852 his health failed, and he was compelled to retire in the country.

In August, 1852, he was chosen Secretary of the Nassau Fire Insurance Company, of Brooklyn, which office he filled until February, 1866, when he was elected Cashier of the Long Island Bank. In 1877 he was compelled to resign this position in consequence of failing health. He is at present one of the Vice-Presidents of the Dime Savings Bank, and a Director of the Long Island Bank, of the Nassau Fire Insurance Company, and of the Long Island Safe Deposit Company.

Mr. Beekman has been connected with the First Reformed Dutch Church of Brooklyn since 1828; has been often a ruling elder, and has been a Director of most of the benevolent institutions of that denomination.

He is of the sixth generation in a direct line from Wilhelmus Beekman, who came from Holland as one of the early settlers of New Amsterdam.



Abraham J. Beckwith

The Long Island Savings Bank, of Brooklyn, was incorporated by Act of Legislature, April 15, 1865. It was not organized till the Spring of 1866, when James M. Seabury was elected *President*; Philip S. Crooke and Samuel B. Stewart, *Vice-Presidents*; John S. Mackay, *Treasurer and Secretary*; and John C. Perry, *Attorney and Counsel*, with a board of twenty trustees. Its place of business was in the Jones Building, on Fulton street, till the completion of its banking-house, corner of Fulton street and Boerum place, in 1870. This building was begun in 1869, and cost, with the lot, \$214,000, and was placed in its list of assets at \$230,000. During the general decline of real estate values that followed the reverses of 1873, the Bank Department unfairly rated its value as low as \$100,000, and reported the Bank as insolvent.

A depositor at once brought suit, and asked to have a receiver appointed. The Court, Judge Pratt presiding, appointed M. C. Ogden, receiver, September 14, 1877, who was immediately enjoined from acting by the Bank Department, which wished to select a receiver in its own interests. Mr. Ogden, in connection with the trustees, made a thorough inspection of the bank's affairs, and submitted to the depositors two propositions, either to accept 80 per cent. of their deposits in cash, or the full amount in six, twelve, eighteen and twenty-four months. The total amount of deposits was \$857,478. Depositors representing \$489,000 elected to take 80 per cent; others having claims for \$385,000, elected to be paid in full, in four installments; and those holding the balance of \$34,000, made no terms or choice. These acceptances were taken to the Judge who granted the injunction, who, in consideration of so large a proportion of those interested accepting the proposed basis of settlement, dissolved the injunction, and directed the trustees under their bond, to proceed to settlement according to the plan submitted. Mr. Ogden then turned the property back to the hands of the trustees, who made him Vice-President of the Bank, and Chairman of the Executive Committee, with power to realize from the assets, pay the depositors, and close the institution.

All parties concerned have been greatly indebted to the discretion, ability and prompt action of Mr. Ogden and John C. Perry, the attorney; as the Bank Department opposed each movement with obstacles, that, in one or two instances, were only a few hours too late to have caused serious losses and delays.

At this date, December 31, 1883, those depositors who did not settle at 80 per cent., have received 93 $\frac{3}{4}$ per cent., and the remainder will be paid promptly next November.

This record is without a single parallel in the history of the settlement of disabled savings banks. No other has ever paid anywhere near 100 cents on the dollar. It shows that its affairs were in the hands of able, wise, and honest men, who, if their management

had not been interrupted by a bank department, that, at that time, was corrupt and designing, would have made the Long Island Savings Bank a safe, permanent, and honored institution.

The Brooklyn Trust Company was incorporated April 14, 1866. The incorporators were Henry E. Pierrepont, Jasper W. Gilbert, James Weaver, Alfred M. Wood, John T. Runcie, William Wall, Alexander McCue, William B. Lewis, Daniel Chauncey, Daniel F. Fernald, J. Carson Brevoort, Cornelius J. Sprague, John H. Prentice, Henry J. Cullen, and William M. Harris.

They are authorized by the charter to receive moneys in trust; to accept and execute trusts committed to them by any person or persons whatsoever; to act as agents for real estate, for married women in respect to their separate property; and may be appointed guardians to any infant. Their capital was \$125,000, to be invested in bonds and mortgages on real estate.

The Board of Trustees, fifteen in number, shall exercise the corporate powers of the company, and the first Board of Trustees consisted of those whose names are given above.

Their first location was at the corner of Court and Joralemon streets. In 1874 they removed to their present quarters, at 177 Montague street. The first officers were Ethelbert S. Mills, *President*, and M. T. Rodman, *Secretary* (succeeded by Ripley Ropes), and William E. Bunker, *Vice-President*, who each served ten years. Henry M. Brush was comptroller for four years. Mr. Bunker was succeeded by Charles R. Marvin, and he in turn by the present incumbent, Edmund W. Corlies. William H. Male is *Secretary*, and J. R. Curran, *Assistant*. The capital has been increased to \$600,000, which is invested in U. S. 4 per cents. The accumulated reserve is fully \$300,000.

The Sprague National Bank.—In the Spring of 1883, Hon. Nathan T. Sprague proposed to a few capitalists of this city to establish a National Bank at a new business center, viz., at the junction of Atlantic, Flatbush and Fourth avenues, near the railway terminus. His proposition was favorably received. A charter was obtained June 13th, 1883, and capital stock subscribed to the amount of \$200,000. The bank was located in the elegant brown stone block at Atlantic and Fourth avenues. Its Board of Directors is composed as follows: N. T. Sprague, Geo. F. Baker, Stewart L. Woodford, William Harkness, D. A. Boody, T. C. Christenson, James Matthews, Zacheus Bergen, William Spence, John S. Loomis, Jacob Berg, John Condon, H. C. Copeland, James Sharkey, Edwin Gates. The officers are as follows: Hon. N. T. Sprague, *President*; William Harkness, *Vice-President*; H. C. Copeland, *Cashier*.

The Long Island Loan and Trust Company was chartered May 29, 1883, with the following incorporators, viz.: William Marshall, Henry W. Slocum,

Nicholas Wyckoff, Edwin Beers, C. Delano Wood, Theodore A. Havemeyer, William M. Ingraham, Mark Hoyt, Robert Early, S. D. Hallowell, John A. King, John G. Jenkins, Samuel M. Meeker, Watson B. Dickerman, William H. Husted, William Dick, Charles M. Field, and Lowell M. Palmer.

The capital stock was \$500,000. The affairs of the company are managed by a Board of Trustees, the above-named gentlemen constituting the first. They

began business January 2, 1884, at 38 Court street, which is a branch of the main office, at the corner of Third street and Broadway. The Company receives deposits of money, acts as fiscal or transfer agent, accepts and executes legal trusts, is authorized by charter to act as administrator, guardian or executor, and as a depository of money paid into court. Its officers are Seymour L. Husted, *President*; Charles M. Field, *Vice-President*; Samuel F. Phelps, Jr., *Secretary*.

INSURANCE AND SAFE DEPOSIT COMPANIES.

By C. H. DUTCHER, Esq.

Among the institutions which have contributed most effectively and beneficently to the material prosperity of Brooklyn must be classed incorporations for indemnifying its citizens against loss and damage by fire.

The security furnished by fire insurance companies is made so readily available, and is so universally enjoyed, that the preservation of the individual estates and of the social order which they afford, is perhaps as little appreciated by society at large as are the common blessings of life.

When we consider the extent of its territory, and the vastness of its population, Brooklyn has experienced remarkable freedom from those widely devastating conflagrations which have befallen other cities less exposed than itself.

The great fire of 1848—in which many buildings (occupying eight blocks in that section near the Fulton Ferry) were consumed, and which threatened the destruction of the larger part of the then existing city—is the only one of such vast proportions that has occurred in its history. The value of the property consumed by that fire is estimated at nearly one million dollars, a sum sufficient to render it conspicuous among the events which mark the city's history.

Of that sum the larger part was re-imbursed to our citizens by the insurance companies involved in the loss.

It will probably appear an astounding statement—though true—that the sum of the inconspicuous losses which have occurred since that event—and which has been made good to property owners by the institutions under consideration—exceeds that of “the great fire” by \$14,000,000.

The destruction of a dwelling, with its household goods, or of a store, with its merchandise; a great warehouse, with its wealth of property from the four quarters of the earth, valued at hundreds of thousands of

dollars; or a manufactory, with its machinery and stock, is an occurrence which (though by no means infrequent) is rendered so comparatively harmless by the interposition of insurance indemnity, that the ruin to individual capitalists, and the paralysis to useful industry—which would otherwise be its inevitable effects—are almost completely obviated.

However interesting to our readers might be an elaborate presentation of the facts and arguments which go to prove the correctness and propriety of our initial proposition, that fire insurance companies justly rank among the most beneficent and indispensable institutions of our city—our space does not admit of more than this brief reference to them; a reference, however, which is full of salutary suggestion to all who feel proud of our rapidly increasing wealth, and who find satisfaction in the stability of that prosperity which enterprising employment of our wealth ensures.

FIRE INSURANCE COMPANIES.

The Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company.—On the 20th of March, 1824, a petition was presented to the State Senate, from Henry Stanton and others, for “an act to incorporate a Fire Insurance Company with a capital of \$150,000, in shares of \$25 each, to be located in the village of Brooklyn.” The act was passed, and a company was incorporated April 3d as *The Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company*, and commenced business May 21st, 1824, in an office on the north-west corner of Front and Dock streets, with William Furman, *President*; and Freeman Hopkins, *Secretary*. The Board of Directors was composed of many of the best known and respected men of the community.

In 1848, in consequence of the great fire of that year, the company suspended operations, after paying its

liabilities in full. In the following year it was reorganized by prominent business men, with William Ellsworth as *President*, who held that position until his retirement in 1862. Francis P. Fernald was then elected to the vacancy, and served for ten years. In 1872 Tunis G. Bergen was chosen *President*, and continued to fill that office until his death. The present officers of the company are: Francis P. Fernald, *President*; George K. Brand, *Secretary*.

Long Island Insurance Company.—This Company enjoys the distinction of being the oldest living Fire Insurance Company, continuously in business from date of its organization, in Kings County, having been organized April 26th, 1833, with a capital of \$200,000. This sum has since been increased to \$300,000. Its first officers were Henry Waring, *President*, and Joseph Sprague, *Secretary*. Benjamin W. Delamater afterward held the presidency thirty-five consecutive years. The Company commenced business in its own building, corner of Fulton and Front streets, which it sold in 1867 to the Long Island Safe Deposit Company, and removed its offices to Montague street. Its present officers are: Jonathan Ogden, *President*, and Henry Blatchford, *Secretary*. Its reputation has been that of a conservative institution as regards the character of its business. It has also an office in New York, and agencies in the principal cities of the country.

The Williamsburgh City Fire Insurance Company.—The rapid growth of the city of Williamsburgh—now known as the Eastern District of the city of Brooklyn—led a number of her prominent citizens to organize a home insurance company, in December, 1852; but its incorporation was not effected until March, 1853. At that time, with a capital of \$150,000 in shares of \$20 each, the company commenced business over the rooms now occupied by the First National Bank, on the corner of Broadway and First street.

The first officers were Edmund Driggs, *President*; and J. D. Burtnett, *Secretary*. The Board of Directors was composed of prominent men of the city.

Though it suffered severely in the great fires which, from time to time, have visited the country, its prosperity has been continuous. It has increased its capital to \$250,000, has erected the handsome building it now occupies on the northeast corner of Broadway and First streets, and has accumulated a net surplus of over half a million dollars. Its agencies are established throughout a large portion of the country.

Edmund Driggs is still its *President*; N. W. Meserole, *Secretary*; and W. H. Brown and F. H. Way, *Assistant Secretaries*. Of the first Board of Directors, five are still active members, viz.: Edmund Driggs, Richard Berry, Daniel Maujer, William Marshall and Nicholas Wyckoff.

Nassau Fire Insurance Company.—This company was incorporated February 3d, 1852, with a cap-

ital of \$150,000 in shares of \$50 each. Since that time the capital stock has been increased to \$200,000.

Its list of the first Board of Directors was composed of many names of men who have had much to do in shaping the character of our city, and in aiding to establish and maintain the good name of Brooklyn institutions. Among them are Mayors S. S. Powell, Samuel Smith and H. C. Murphy.

Its first officers were: William M. Harris, *President*; and A. J. Beekman, *Secretary*. In 1869 Mr. Harris died, and Thomas B. Jones was elected *President*, and William T. Lane chosen as *Secretary*.

The Nassau has been conservative in its methods, choosing to confine its business chiefly to local risks. This policy has placed it on a solid footing. Its charter, which expired by limitation February 3d, 1883, has been extended by the State Insurance Department for another term of thirty years. Its present offices are located at the corner of Court and Remsen streets.

The Phenix Insurance Company.—In February, 1853, it was decided to organize a fire insurance company with the above name, with a capital of \$200,000, in shares of \$50 each. The organization was completed September 10th, 1853.

Stephen Crowell was elected the first *President*, and he has since been re-elected to that position every year. Philander Shaw was the first *Secretary*, and has since continued to hold that office. In 1875 he was chosen *Vice-President*.

The first certificate of stock was issued to Henry Holt for 10 shares. The first policy was issued to Rev. Evan M. Johnson for "\$2,000—on each of the two four-story, brick, tin roof, coped dwelling-houses situate on the east side of Adams street, commencing 120 feet south of Johnson street, Brooklyn."

The company began business at 345 Fulton street. In May, 1862, it removed to the corner of Court and Montague streets. In October, 1867, it purchased and removed to Montague Hall, on Court street. The old building was removed, and the present large and imposing "Phenix" building erected on its site.

Its capital is now \$1,000,000.

Its officers are: Stephen Crowell, *President*; Philander Shaw, *Vice-President* and *Secretary*; William Charters, *Assistant Secretary*; and Edward Hazelhurst, *Secretary of Brooklyn Department*.

The company has a large agency business throughout the country.

Lafayette Fire Insurance Company.—This company was organized in 1856, and was named in honor of the Marquis de Lafayette. Its capital was placed at \$150,000, in shares of \$50 each. Its Board of Directors comprised many of the best known business men of that time. The first officers were: Alden S. Crowell, *President*; and Anson S. Palmer, *Secretary*.

The company's place of business has been on Fulton street, opposite the City Hall; except temporarily, dur-

ing the erection of the Phenix building, in which it now has elegant offices.

Its business has always been conducted with caution, its managers preferring security and solidity to a widely extended business with increased hazard.

The company, for a time had only a local office, but has since established agencies in some of the larger cities. Its present officers are: Herbert Giroux, *President*; George W. Hunt, *Secretary*; E. S. Terhune, *Assistant Secretary*.

Montauk Fire Insurance Company.—This company was incorporated in 1857, with a capital of \$150,000, in shares of \$50 each, which was, in 1874, increased to \$200,000. Its office was originally in the building on Court street, where the "Garfield" now stands. John J. Studwell was the first *President*, and Edwin Beers the first *Secretary*.

The Montauk has consistently followed the plan of its original founders in confining its business almost entirely to the locality of its birth; and has, under prudent management, been successful.

Its present officers are: Daniel F. Fernald, *President*; William Ellsworth, *Vice-President*; George F. Malby, *Secretary*; George Gill, *Assistant Secretary*.

Mechanics' Fire Insurance Company.—The organization of this company was perfected May 7th, 1857, with Daniel Chauncey, *President*; Walter Nichols, *Secretary*; and Walter K. Page, *Assistant Secretary*.

Its first Board of Directors, which was large, was composed of the leading mechanics, builders, merchants and business men of Brooklyn.

It is worthy of note that of the original forty-one directors twelve are now living, and seven of these are still members of the Board.

The company commenced with a cash capital of \$150,000, but in 1881 its capital was increased to \$250,000, its field of operations extended, and agencies established in the large cities, and to a considerable extent in the Middle and New England States.

At first its office was temporarily located where the building of the Continental Insurance Company now stands, until its rooms in the Mechanics' Bank building were ready for occupancy, when it removed to its present quarters on Montague street. In April, 1866, Daniel Chauncey resigned the presidency, and John H. Baker was elected to that office, Mr. Chauncey consenting to remain as Vice-President, which position he held until his death in January, 1883. In December, 1881, John K. Oakley was elected President, in place of Mr. Baker, deceased. The present officers of the company are: John K. Oakley, *President*; Henry N. Brush, *Vice-President*; Walter Nichols, *Secretary*; Merrit Tuttle, *Assistant Secretary*.

Kings County Fire Insurance Company.—Oct. 18, 1858, was the date of the organization of this Company, with a capital of \$150,000—in shares of \$20 each. Its first officers were A. S. Crowell, *President*, and O.

R. Ingersoll, *Secretary*. Its business is mostly local, having agencies in a few of the larger cities only. Its first offices were under the Mariners' and Citizens' Bank, until, in 1870, it erected the fine building now occupied for its offices at No. 87 Broadway, E. D., at a cost of \$90,000.

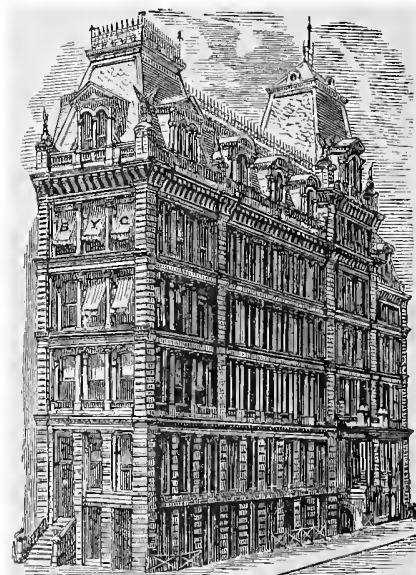
No better proof of the ability of the Company's management is needed than the statement showing a net surplus considerably larger than its capital. Its present officers are E. T. Backhouse, *President*; Henry Pope, *Secretary*; William E. Horwill, *Assistant Secretary*.

Fireman's Trust Insurance Company.—This Company was organized March 15, 1859, with a capital of \$150,000—in shares of \$10 each.

Its first *President* was George Hall, and its first *Secretary*, William Burrell. The Company commenced business at No. 9 Court street, whence it removed some years later to No. 201 Montague street. It confines its business to this locality strictly, with offices in New York and Brooklyn.

The present officers are Dwight Johnson, *President*; E. B. Wood, *Secretary*; B. F. Van Voorhis, *Assistant Secretary*.

It is evident, when we take into consideration the immense and constantly increasing insurable wealth of Brooklyn, that the resources of the local companies are entirely inadequate for the proper protection of the city against loss and damage by fire, as is seen by the following figures: Of dwellings and furniture there are over two hundred millions of dollars in value; of



CONTINENTAL. BROOKLYN BUILDING.

manufacturing interests, having in value of plant and machinery, more than two hundred million dollars, and in amount of annual product, over two hundred and fifty million dollars; and to these must be added

churches, halls, theatres and public buildings of immense cost, aggregating several millions dollars in value.

A city of such wealth has naturally proved an attractive and profitable field for the operation of fire insurance corporations, other than those to which special attention has been directed.

Among the earliest to establish departmental offices here were the GERMANIA, HOME, and CONTINENTAL Companies of New York. In 1868, the Continental established itself in Montague street; and a few years later, in response to the encouragement given by the large and constantly increasing business coming to it, erected for its own use the elegant building on the corner of Court and Montague streets. Other companies soon followed, so that at the present time there are represented here, either by offices or agencies, more than fifty in number, having over \$100,000,000 of assets.

LIFE INSURANCE COMPANIES.

These institutions are justly ranked as among the most useful of civilized society, as the benefits therefrom are available for all classes of the community. But two life insurance companies have their home in Brooklyn. A brief sketch of each is given below.

The Brooklyn Life Insurance Company was organized in 1864, and commenced business in July of that year. Its organization was due principally to the efforts of Mr. Christian W. Bouck, who was elected as President, and served in that capacity up to 1877, when he was succeeded by the present incumbent, Mr. William M. Cole, of this city.

The original board of officers comprised Mr. Christian W. Bouck, *President*; Mr. Abram D. Polhemus, *Vice-President*; Mr. Richard H. Harding, *Secretary*; Daniel Ayres, M. D., LL. D., *Medical Director*; and Augustus Ford, *Counsel*, all residents of this city.

In 1867, the Secretary, Mr. Harding, died, and in the same year was succeeded by Mr. Wm. M. Cole, who remained as Secretary until he succeeded Mr. C. W. Bouck as President in 1877; and Mr. Cole, in turn, was succeeded as Secretary, upon his elevation to the Presidency, by William Dutcher, who had been with the company almost from its organization in various clerical capacities.

The first Vice-President, Mr. Abram D. Polemus, resigned in 1870, and was succeeded by Mr. William H. Wallace, the present official. These have been all the changes in the board of officers during the history of the Company.

The board of directors has, from time to time, comprised, and now comprises, gentlemen whose business undertakings and social standing have been largely interwoven with the history of Brooklyn; whose names are known throughout the breadth of the city; and whose efforts have ever been in the direction of the

welfare and good repute of Brooklyn. Isaac Van Anden, Hosea Birdsall, Amos F. Hatfield, Augustus E. Masters, Christian W. Bouck, Curtis Noble, Abram D. Polhemus, Samuel S. Powell, David M. Chauncey, Daniel Maujer, Harry Messenger and Edward Anthony, are names which every resident of Brooklyn remembers with respect and interest. The Company has always been essentially a Brooklyn institution.

This Company was originally organized with \$125,000 capital, but now has over one million and a half of dollars of assets, and is distinguished as one of the most conservative and carefully managed institutions in the country. At the official examination of the Company it was specially and officially noted that the "investments couldn't be improved. No better class of securities could be found anywhere. They are uniformly first-class, and could not be reduced a dollar, because of the prudence displayed in making them." The Company has always had an excellent reputation for those points of careful and prudent management which commend such institutions to intelligent public favor.

Its offices are located at 20 Nassau street, New York City.

The Home Life Insurance Company.—In 1860, a movement was made for the establishment of a Life Insurance Company, which was successfully carried out, and an organization effected April 28, 1860. The company was named the HOME. Its capital was \$125,000, in \$100 shares. The following were chosen *Directors*: P. C. Cornell, John Sueden, E. A. Lambert, T. Messenger, James How, J. W. Greene, G. S. Stephenson, J. S. T. Stranahan, J. E. Southworth, C. A. Townsend, C. J. Sprague, H. E. Pierrepont, J. P. Martin, S. E. Howard, L. B. Wyman, W. S. Griffith, G. A. Jarvis, J. G. Bergen, John Halsey, T. Polhemus, Jr., A. P. Capwell, H. B. Claffin, A. B. Baylis, John D. Cocks, H. Dollner, S. B. Chittenden, A. A. Low, Czar Dunning, Wm. H. Cary, Samuel Smith, T. Carlton, M. F. Odell, L. Roberts, Nehemiah Knight, J. Milton Smith, Isaac H. Frothingham.

The first *President* was Walter S. Griffith; *Secretary*, Geo. C. Ripley; *Treasurer*, Isaac H. Frothingham; *Counsel*, Albert B. Capwell.

William J. Coffin, who entered the Company's employ at its organization, and afterwards became its Secretary and Actuary, died suddenly in its New York office Sept. 10, 1877, leaving a record of "singular ability and faithfulness." The Company commenced business on the corner of Court and Joralemon streets, and subsequently removed to its present location, 179 Montague street. It has an office at 254 Broadway, New York.

Its officers for 1882-'83 are George C. Ripley, *President*; Chas. A. Townsend, *Vice-President*; I. H. Frothingham, *Treasurer*; Joseph P. Holbrook, *Secretary*; Wm. G. Low, *Counsel*.

SAFE DEPOSIT COMPANIES.

The Long Island Safe Deposit Company.—

Of late years a demand has grown up for institutions established expressly for the safe keeping of valuables. The first was chartered in New York city, in 1861. In 1869, the Long Island Safe Deposit Company was incorporated, and erected a fire-proof building on the northwest corner of Fulton and Front streets, in the



THE LONG ISLAND SAFE DEPOSIT COMPANY.

city of Brooklyn. The safes are very large and thick, built entirely above the first floor, on a granite foundation, and fitted with the most approved burglar-proof combination and time locks. Within the vault are placed the private safes, several hundred in number, fitted with combination locks, not one of which can be opened without the use of two keys, one kept by the

individual, and one by the Company. Storage is also provided for pictures, statuary, silverware, and other valuables of bulk. Private rooms are provided where depositors, at any time, may examine papers and securities in seclusion. *Directors:* John Lefferts, *President*; Edward D. White, *Vice-Pres.*; Charles E. Bill; Abraham J. Beekman; Peter C. Cornell; Sidney Cornell; Abraham Lott; Henry E. Pierrepont; William Sinclair; James L. Moore; George A. Thorne; James How; Henry P. Morgan; Garret Bergen; Edward Whitehouse; John French; John D. Prince; Daniel D. Whitney; Ezra L. Bushnell; George W. Bergen; John B. Woodward; Stephen Taber; Thomas H. Messenger; Henry K. Sheldon; William M. Van Anden; John Ditmas, Jr.; Thomas H. Messenger, *Treasurer*; Abraham I. Ditmas, *Secretary*.

The Brooklyn City Safe Deposit Company was incorporated, in 1872, with the following *Directors:* Abraham B. Baylis, George N. Curtis, Jacob Cole, John P. Rolfe, William Marshall, Daniel Chauncey, William P. Libby, Samuel Sloan, Jacob I. Bergen, John Halsey, James S. Rockwell.

A large and convenient building was erected on the corner of Clinton and Montague streets, in June, 1873, and the company commenced business. The vaults are constructed in the most thorough and massive manner, are fire and burglar-proof, and the safes are provided with the double key escutcheon; constant communication with police headquarters, and continual watching day and night make deposits absolutely safe.

The present officers are: H. N. Brush, *President*; S. H. Herriman, *Vice-President*; Leffert L. Bergen, *Secretary*. *Directors:* Daniel Chauncey, John P. Rolfe, William Marshall, Jacob I. Bergen, Wm. P. Libby, Jacob Cole, Daniel Ayres, M.D., Isaac Carhart.

HENRY D. POLHEMUS, the youngest son of Theodorus and Rebecca Polhemus, was born at the old Polhemus homestead, on Gowanus Lane (now Fifth avenue and Carroll street), Brooklyn. In early life, he entered the store of Fox & Polhemus, in New York, in which his brother was a partner, and which has been continued to the present time, and is known as the firm of Brinkerhoff, Turner & Co., in which Mr. Polhemus is interested.

Mr. Polhemus is the last of the male descendants of the Rev. Johannes Theodorus Polhemus, the first preacher in Kings county, who settled in Flatbush, 1654. (See chapter on *Ecclesiastical History of Kings County*, pages 327 and 328). He is now connected with several prominent financial interests of Brooklyn, being a director of the Long Island Bank, the Nassau Fire Insurance Company, the American District Telegraph Company, and other institutions.



H. J. Polhemus

